

# RESURRECTION AND IMMORTALITY

**Subtitled: The Resurrection, Our Only Hope Of Life After Death**

William Robert West

Author of "The Rapture And Israel"

**Is  
"The Wages Of Sin Death"  
Or Is  
"The Wages Of Sin Eternal Life  
With Torment In Hell"**

**An Immortal Soul And The Doctrine Of Hell  
Is There A Soul In You That Will Live After You Are Dead?**

Updated 8/17/2013  
Over 705,000 downloads

# RESURRECTION AND IMMORTALITY

William Robert West

## Foreword

What do you believe about souls? There are many very different doctrines taught in the world today concerning the souls that are believed to be in human.

1. At the death of the person it is in the bodiless, deathless soul that was in a saved person will fly immediately to Heaven to the very presents of Jesus and God. Many believe souls of the dead are looking down on us, they watch over their loved ones on earth and can sometimes be seen by living persons.

2. At the death of a lost person, the soul that was in him or her will immediately be carried to Hell where it will forever be alive, suffering and screaming, while it is being eternally tormented by God with no hope that God will ever stop tormenting it.

3. At the death of most persons that are Catholic, the souls that were in them goes immediately to Purgatory where the souls will suffer unto the souls have suffered enough to pay for the sins the persons they were in. Then these souls will be saved by their own suffering.

4. In the Abraham's bosom version the souls that were in the saved to immediately at death to be rewarded in Abraham's bosom, the good side of hades, unto the coming of Christ while the souls that were in the lost are tormented in the bad side of hades unto the coming of Christ when they will be endlessly tormented by God in an endless burning Hell.

5. A view of the soul now believe by some Protestants, called Rephaim, is that after the death of the person, the soul leaves the person and is a shadowy something that has no substance, it is nothing more than mental thoughts without any kind of substance or body.

6. Spiritualism. After the death of the person, the spirit becomes a ghost that haunt the house it was in, is a ghastly spook that can sometimes be seen at night among the graves and tombstones in a cemetery. According to Spiritualism, these ghost or spooks roam the earth and can and are seen by people, and even live in the house with people. The ghost that have left the persons they were dwelling in can come back and these ghost can do both good and evil to other persons that still have ghosts (souls) dwelling in them. Many who do not think of themselves as being a Spiritualist and even deny that they are a Spiritualist believe much of the Spiritualist belief; in most funerals that I have I have attended the preacher had the soul that had been dwelling in the dead person dwelling in Heaven and it was looking down on the funeral of the dead person it had been freed from.

7. The person, not a soul that had been in a person, sleeps from death unto the resurrection, the person is resurrected and judged, the person is given endless life or eternal punishment of death.

8. There are many other beliefs about what a soul is and what a soul can and cannot do, far too many to list here.

Two of the views that are commonly believed about what will happen to the souls that leave mankind after death are the subject of this book.

**VIEW ONE:** The belief that all have a "soul" that W. E. Vine says is nothing but "*the immaterial, invisible part of man,*" ("Vine's Complete Expository Dictionary Of Old And New Testament Words," page 588) and Robert A. Morey says, that after the death of the body the soul will be nothing but "*mental thoughts*" ("Death And The Afterlife,"

page 79). According to those that believe as he does, this nothing but thoughts is the only part of a person that will have eternal life in Heaven. This immaterial something that is nothing but mental thoughts is all of you that will be in Heaven or Hell; will the person (you) be gone and nothing but thoughts will be all that is left, then all of the “you” that you know anything about will be forever be gone. Most that believe all are born with an immortal “soul” have only a vague unclear understanding or even no idea of what they believe this unknown immaterial something they believe to be in them really is, but “it” (not themselves) is what they believe must be saved, and only “it” will be in Heaven if they save “it,” or in Hell if they do not. The belief that everyone has an immaterial something in them and this something, whatever this nothing but “mental thoughts” could be, will live forever and cannot die makes it not possible for death to be the wages of sin. If a person has something in them that is deathless, it would not be subject to the wages of sin, which is death, and this deathless nothing could not ever be destroyed; **this, whatever it is would be, is born with eternal life, and it could never die; therefore, it could not be resurrected from the dead.**

This view has two major divisions.

1. That all mankind has a "soul" that cannot ever die or be destroyed, but for most of mankind God will forever torment this something (this nothing but mental thoughts) that is in a person, the immaterial something called "soul." It is strange to me that I can find no one that believes there is a soul that is in a person that knows what a soul is. They tell me what a soul is not, but not what they believe a soul to be; in the many books I have read, the nearest anyone has come is to say that after the soul departs from the person it was in will be nothing but thoughts without any kind of substance.
2. Universalism: that all mankind has a "soul" that cannot ever die or be destroyed, everyone has this something in them that will live forever, but it will be saved. If it (the immaterial something that has no substance) is not saved in this lifetime it will be saved after death.

**VIEW TWO:** The belief that the person you now are will put on immortality at the resurrection, and it is you (not just some immaterial something in you) that will live forever in Heaven; **we**, not an immaterial soul, is now in the image of Adam, **we**, not an immaterial soul, will have the image of Christ (1 Corinthians 15:49). The wages of sin is death, and the lost will die the second death, they do not now have immortality and never will be immortal; those who do not belong to Christ will forever be destroyed after their judgment.

### **Protestant Premillennialists**

Most Protestant Premillennialists believe the lost will be totally destroyed, but there are three Premillennial views that are common in Protestant churches on how or where the lost will be destroyed.

1. A common Protestant Premillennialists belief is that the destruction of the lost will be on this earth and the saved will forever live on this earth; no person will ever be in Heaven. Many believe the Valley of Gehenna will be restored and the lost will literally be burn to ashes in it.
2. Some Protestant Premillennialists believe that the saved will be with Christ in Heaven, not on earth after the thousand years, the second death will be the end of the lost, but they are not literally burned to ashes on this earth in the restored Valley of Gehenna.

3. Some Protestant Premillennialists believe the wages of sin is eternal life with torment for the soul that cannot die, which puts them in the camp of those that believe eternal life with torment, death is not the wages of sin.

If we have either a soul or a spirit that is now immortal and can never die or be dead, how could there be a resurrection of the dead? Do you believe in the resurrection of the dead? If yes, what do you believe will be resurrected; will your dead body be raised from the dead, or do you believe as many that only a soul that they do not believe can ever be dead, but it is the only part of a person that will be raised from the dead? When I first begin this study I was surprised and made to tremble at how few believed in the resurrection, and how many there are that do not really know what they believe about it, or even what they believed would be resurrected. Many believe some deathless something that they believe to be in themselves will instantly be transited from this world to Heaven or Hell at death without a resurrection, before the resurrection, before the Judgment Day, and before the second coming of Christ, but when they are asked what is the reason for the resurrection, they not only do not know, but have never really thought about it. Death is looked at as being a doorway to life in another form, that death is not really death, and there is nowhere in their thoughts or in their faith for a resurrection for their theology says no one is really dead. The resurrection has been removed from the faith of many by today's theology that says some immortal something that is believed to be in a person will go to Heaven at the moment of death. **But is there any life after death before the second coming of Christ and the resurrection of the dead?** Paul said it will be at the resurrection when, *"This mortal must put on immortality,"* but if we have a soul that is now immortal, then what is it that is now mortal that will put on immortality at the resurrection?

**What does the Bible say about an immortal soul and/or spirit?** Together soul and spirit are used about 1,600 times in the Bible, but not one time is immortal ever used in the same verse with either one, "immortality soul or spirit," "deathless or never dying soul or spirit" is not in the Bible, not even in the King James Version. Immortal and immortality is not in the Old Testament, the promise of immortality is given to no one. In the New Testament, immortal is used only one time in the New Testament, immortality is used five times, all five by Paul. What does he say?

1. *"Now unto the King eternal, immortal"* (1 Timothy 1:17).
2. Only God has immortality (1 Timothy 6:16).
3. Christ *"abolished death and brought life and immortality to light through the gospel"* (2 Timothy 1:10).
4. *"To them (Christians) that...seek for glory and honor and immortality"* (Romans 2:7).
5. *"This mortal must put on immortality"* (1 Corinthians 15:53) at the resurrection.
6. *"This mortal shall have put on immortality"* (1 Corinthians 15:54) after the resurrection. This mortal person must put on immortality, not this soul that is already immortal must put on immortality.

Why are we to *"seek for immortality"* if we are born immortal? Why will we *"put on immortality"* if the only part of us that will ever be immortal has been immortal from birth (or before birth)? **The fact that a person must "seek for...immortality" and immortality must be "put on" at the resurrection is conclusive proof that a person does not now have immortality, nor does a person have some immaterial, immortal**

**something in them that cannot die.** If Romans 2:7 and 1 Corinthians 15:53 teaches nothing more, it teaches that no part of a person now possess immortality. **Not one passage in the Bible says anyone is now immortal; if no one is now immortal, no one can now have a soul that is now immortal.** The immortal soul theology is from pagan philosophy, if all have a deathless soul, and we are told that this deathless soul is the only part of a person that will ever be immortal, and it is already immortal, the resurrection is made to be useless.

---

## Table of Contents

### **AN IMMORTAL SOUL OR RESURRECTION OF THE DEAD**

The Resurrection, Our Only Hope Of Life After Death

By William West

**Chapter one:** The nature of man - what is man?

**Chapter two:** Life or Death

**Chapter three:** The reinterpretations of the great doctrines of the Bible

**Chapter four:** From where came Hell, from man or God?

- Unquenchable fire
- Old Testament history of Gehenna
- Gehenna used by Christ on four occasions
- The vanishing Hell
- Twenty-six plus version of Hell
  - Fourteen plus Protestant versions of Hell
  - Eight other versions of Hell
  - Three Catholic versions of Hell

**Chapter five:** Sheol, Hades, and Tartarus

**Chapter six:** The thirty-one Hell passages

**Chapter seven:** A strange and unexplainable silence of the Old Testament on punishment and life after death, life, death, torment, destruction, destroy, perish, die, and end

**Chapter eight:** Figurative language, metaphors, and symbolical passage

- Part one: The rich man
- Part two: The destruction of Israel, Matthew 24
  - A. D. 70 doctrine
  - Day of the Lord
- Part three: The symbolic pictures in Revelation
- Part four: The forever and ever of the King James Version

**Chapter nine:** Universalist: The "age lasting" Hell

**Chapter ten:** The results of attributing evil Pagan teachings to God

**Chapter eleven:** Historical proof of the changing of the teaching of the Bible

**Appendix one**

---

## CHAPTER ONE

### What Is Man?

What is a man? Are all persons born with immortal souls, or do only the saved put on immortality at the resurrection? Is a person a three part being, an animal body with both a soul and a spirit that will live without the body? This is one of the most important

questions of all time. It has more influence on our conception of our nature, our view of life in this world, and our view of life after death than any other question.

**Soul in the Old Testament is translated from nehphesh**, Strong's Hebrew word #5315—"a breathing creature" A study of the way it is translated in the King James and how other translation differ greatly from the King James reveals facts that are far different that the belief of most about what the soul is, and facts that most will find upsetting. Nehphesh is used in the Old Testament about 870 times and is translated soul only about 473 times in the King James, but in the New International Version (2010 updated version) only 72 out about 870 times it is used.

Of the 870 times Nehphesh is in the Bible, in the New International Version:

- Nehphesh is translated soul only 72 times.
- Nehphesh is not translated soul 798 times.
  - Of the 473 times nehphesh is translated "soul" in the King James Version, it was removed 401 times in the New International Version.

**Nehphesh is translated in the King James Version into about 40 words; one Hebrew word is translated (or mistranslated) into nouns, pronouns, verbs, adjectives, adverbs, etc.** Nehphesh is used about 870 times and was changed into many words by the translators as they chose to with the translators of the many version of the Bible all choosing many times to translate it difference. By today's meaning of "soul" and "life" they means two completely difference things, they are not synonymous.

In the King James Version Nehphesh is translated:

1. **Soul** about 473 times
2. **Life** about 122 times
3. **Person** about 26 times
4. **Mind** about 15 times
5. **Heart** about 15 times
6. **Personal pronouns** 44 + times - yourselves, themselves, her, me, he, his, himself
7. **All others**, about 200 times - man, creature, living being, fish, own, any, living thing, living creatures, lives, the dead, dead body, kills, slays, slay him, mortally, discontented, ghost, breath, will, appetite, hearty desire, desire, pleasure, lust, deadly

**In all 870 times this word is used it is associated with the activity of a living being, including dying, and it never implies anything about life after the death of the living being.** None of the 870 times are an immortal, immaterial, inter something in a person that has no substance; souls (nehpheshs) are the living being (persons, animals, or any living thing) that can die, be killed, or is already be dead; **although its use is often hid from the English readers by the way it was translated or mistranslated.**

#### **Soul (nehphesh) as it is used in the Bible**

(1) Genesis 1:20 *"The moving creature that has **life**"* (nehpheshs-mortal beings, used referring to **animals**, Strong's Hebrew word #5315—"a breathing creature"). Footnote in the King James Version—"The moving creature that has **soul**." American Standard Version—"Let the waters swarm with swarms of **living creatures**" (nehpheshs-mortal beings).

If "**soul**" were an immortal *"immaterial, invisible part of man"* (W. E. Vine, Expository Dictionary Of Old And New Testament Words), why is this Hebrew word that is translated soul also translated *"living creature"* when it is speaking of

animals in Genesis 1:21; 1:24; 2:19; 9:10; 9:12; 9:15; 9:16 when the same Hebrew word (nehphesh) is translated "living soul" in Genesis 2:7 when it is speaking of a person? "Living Creature" and "living soul" are completely different beings. If this Hebrew word (nehphesh) were an immaterial, immortal part of a person, it would also be an immaterial, immortal part of animals.

(2) Genesis 1:21 "**living creature**" (nehpheshs-mortal beings, used referring to **all life in the water**), "*And God created the great sea-monsters, and every living creature (nehpheshs-mortal beings) that moves wherewith the water swarmed.*"

(3) Genesis 1:24 "**living creature**" (nehpheshs-mortal beings), used referring to **animals, all life on the land**), "*And God said, Let the earth bring forth living creatures (soul-nehphesh) after their kind, cattle, and creeping things, and beasts of the earth.*" In Genesis 1:21-24 every living thing on earth, whether in the water or on land, every thing that has life is a nehphesh, a living being; all sea life, all land life, and mankind are a nehphesh, a living being, not inherent indestructible immortality beings, not an immortal deathless "soul."

(4) Genesis 1:30 "**life**" (nehpheshs-mortal beings, used referring to **animals**), "*And to every beast of the earth, and to every bird of the heavens, and to everything that creeps upon the earth, wherein there is life*" (nehpheshs-mortal beings); animals are "a living soul."

**ALL FOUR TIMES THAT SOUL (nehphesh) IS USED IN GENESIS ONE IT IS USED REFERRING TO ANIMALS** Strong's Hebrew word #5315—"a breathing creature, i.e. animal." **NOT TO A PERSON. ANIMALS WERE SOULS, LIVING BEINGS, BEFORE ANY MAN EXISTED; WHY DID THE TRANSLATORS DELIBERATELY HIDE THE FACT THAT IT IS THE SAME WORD THAT THEY SOMETIMES TRANSLATED SOUL?**

- **TRANSLATED SOULS WHEN IT IS SPEAKING OF PEOPLE.**
- **TRANSLATED LIVING CREATURES WHEN THE SAME WORD IS SPEAKING OF ANIMALS.** How could the translators possibly know when the same word is speaking of mortal being and when it is speaking of immortal being? Just as "up" cannot mean "down," "Mortal" cannot mean "Immortal"

*"Then God said, 'Let the waters teem with swarms of living souls (nehpheshs-mortal beings), and let birds fly above the earth in the open expanse of the heavens.' And God created the great sea monsters, and every living soul (nehphesh-mortal beings) that moves, with which the waters swarmed after their kind, and every winged bird after its kind; and God saw that it was good. And God blessed them, saying, 'Be fruitful and multiply, and fill the waters in the seas, and let birds multiply on the earth.' And there was evening and there was morning, a fifth day. Then God said, 'Let the earth bring forth living souls (nehpheshs-mortal beings) after their kind: cattle and creeping thing and beasts of the earth after their kind'; and it was so...and to every beast of the earth, and to every fowl of the air, and to everything that creeps upon the earth, wherein there is life (nehpheshs-mortal beings) I have given every green herb for meat" (Genesis 1:20-30). "**Living creatures**" (nehpheshs-mortal beings) is used to describe all living things on earth, people, animals, birds, and fish, not eternal life or some immaterial invisible something that is in a person that is now eternal. If a person being a soul (nehphesh—a living being) makes that person be either immortal or in the image of God, then it makes animals, birds, and fish have a immortal soul in them and be in the image of God.*

(5) Genesis 2:7 "**A living soul**" (nehphesh—a living being, used referring to a person, Strong's Hebrew word #5315—"a breathing creature") **The first time the King James Version translated nehphesh into "soul," most other translations did not agree with it, not even the New King James Version. "Man became a living being" New King James Version.**

- "A **living creature**" (nehphesh-a mortal being) Genesis 1:20
- "A **living creature**" (nehphesh-a mortal being) Genesis 1:21
- "A **living creature**" (nehphesh-a mortal being) Genesis 1:24
- "Wherein there is **life**" (nehphesh-mortal being) Genesis 1:30
- "A **living soul**" (nehphesh) Genesis 2:7 "**Man became a living being**" New King James Version
  - It is obvious that the translators of the King James Version translated according to a preconceived opinion in an attempt make persons have immortality but keep animals from having souls; they made a distinction in animals and men, a distinction that dose not exist in the Hebrew Bible.
  - Genesis 2:7 Man became:
    - "**A living soul**" King James Version
    - "**A living being**" New King James Version, American Standard Version, New American Standard Version, Revised Standard Version, New Revised Standard Version, New International Version, Amplified Version, The New American Bible.
    - "**A living person**" New Century Version, The Living Bible, New Living Translation
    - "**A living creature**" The Revised English Bible, Young's Literal Translation.
    - "**Life**" Contemporary English Version

### **THREE THINGS IN GENESIS 2:7**

**(1) MAN AND ANIMALS ARE MADE OF THE DUST OF THE EARTH.** *"In the day that YOU eat from it YOU shall surely die"* (Genesis 2:17). Some say Adam could not die; an immortal, immaterial, deathless soul could not die. In Genesis 3:19 a clear statement on what dies, *"By the sweat of YOUR face YOU shall eat bread, till YOU return to the ground, because from it YOU were taken; for YOU are dust, and to dust YOU shall return,"*(Also Genesis 18:27; Psalms103:14; Job10:9). *"It is appointed for MEN to die once and after this comes judgment"* (Hebrews 9:27). It is the PERSON that will die and be resurrected from the dead, not a soul that cannot die; therefore, it could not be resurrected from the dead.

Paul quoted Genesis 2:7 showing that the "*natural body*" of Genesis 2:7 that was given to Adam and all mankind is not the "*spiritual body*" that will be given to the saved by Christ at the resurrection. *"Howbeit that is not first which is spiritual, but that which is natural; THEN that which is spiritual. The first man is of the earth, earthy: the second man is of heaven. As is the earthy, such are they also that are earthy: and as is the heavenly, such are they also that are heavenly. As we have born the image of the earthy, we SHALL also bear the image of the heavenly"* (1 Corinthians 15:46-49).

Dr. Bert Thompson, Ph. D. says Genesis 2:7 is teaching that Adam was given "*physical life.*" Then said it is not teaching that Adam had instilled in him "*an immortal nature.*" "The Origin, Nature, and Destiny of the Soul," page 19, Apologetics Press, Inc. 2001, church of Christ.

Mike Willis said expositors have generally appealed to Genesis 2:7 to prove that all men are born with and now have immortal spirits. However, in 1 Corinthians 15:45, Paul has clearly expounded the meaning of the Hebrew words nehphesh, chayyah. "*The living soul*" of Genesis 2:7 is the natural body of this passage. He said this corresponds with the book of Genesis itself because the same construction is used in Genesis 1:24 to describe animals. When Moses



recorded that God breathed into man's nostrils the breath of life and he became a living soul, what the writer of Genesis was saying was that the dust of the earth began to have animal life and does not prove that a person has an immortal spirit (soul); rather it states that a person has animal life. All men possess animal life through Adam. A Commentary On Paul's First Epistle To the Corinthians, page 578, 1979. For one who knows the Bible as he does, and believes a person now has an immortal soul, yet says, the living soul of Genesis 2:7 is the natural body, proves beyond doubt that a living soul is not an immortal inter part of a person. "The first man Adam became a living soul...the first man is of the earth, earthy" (1 Corinthians 15:45-49).

Guy N. Woods said the first time the word soul is used in Genesis 1:20 it is from the Hebrew *nephesh* where it is assigned to fish, birds, and creeping things. He said it is clear that the soul in these passages does not refer to anything peculiar to the constitution of man, but it signifies, as its usage denotes, and the lexicons affirm, any creature that breathes. "What Is The Soul Of Man," Gospel Advocate, 1985, Number 21.

John T. Willis: "The last two lines of verse 7 affirm that man's life is God Given. God enables man to breathe, and thus to be alive, as he does all other creatures (see Gen. 7:22). Some have tried to justify a threefold division of man into flesh (or body), soul, and spirit from Genesis 2:7. They equate **dust** with flesh or body, **breath** with spirit, and insist that the last phrase of the verse must be translated as 'a living soul.' However, this understanding reads much more into the biblical text than it really says. (1) The Hebrew words for 'flesh' or 'body' and 'spirit' do not occur in this passage. (2) The Hebrew expression *nephesh chayyah*, which some insist on translating 'a living soul,' is used of fish and marine life in Genesis 1:20, 21; land animals in 1:24; beasts, birds, and reptiles in 1:30; and beasts and birds in 2:19. If 'soul' means the eternal part of man or the sum total of man's 'body' and 'spirit' in Genesis 2:7, it must mean the eternal part of a fish or the sum total of a fish's 'body' and 'spirit' in Genesis 1:20, 21; etc. (3) The flow of the context in Genesis 2:7 indicates that the word translated **being** in the RSV (*nephesh*) means the whole person. The author's emphasis is on the gift of life." The Living Word Commentary, "Genesis," page 103-104, 1979, Sweet Publishing Company.

Adam Clarke: "*Nephesh clayyah*; a general term to express all creatures endued with animal life, in any of its infinitely varied gradations, from the half reasoning elephant down to the stupid pottle, or lower still, to the polype, which seems equally to share the vegetable and animal life."

## (2) MAN AND ANIMALS HAD THE BREATH OF LIFE (NESHAMAH) BREATHED INTO THEM.

- "Breathed into his nostrils the **breath of life** (nshahmah)" man (Genesis 2:7).
- "All in whose nostrils was the **breath of life** (nshahmah)" both man and animals have the same "**breath of life** (nshahmah)" (Genesis 7:22).
- "Saved alive nothing that **breaths** (nshahmah-breath of life)" both men and animals (Deuteronomy 20:16). "Breath of life" and "breaths" are the same in the Hebrew, both are translated from "nshahmah," but who knows why the translators choose to make them different in the English Bible.
- "Utterly destroyed all that **breaths** (nshahmah-breath of life)" both men and animals (Joshua 10:40).
- "There was not any left to **breaths** (nshahmah-breath of life)" both men and animals (Joshua 11:11).
- "Neither left they any to **breaths** (nshahmah-breath of life)" both men and animals (Joshua 11:14).
  - Does an immortal immaterial deathless soul or spirit breathe, or die when breathing stops?
- "And the breath (*nehphesh*) of the Almighty gives me life" (Job 33:4).
- "And breathed into his nostrils the breath (*nehphesh*) of life" (Genesis 2:7).
  - It is the breath (*nehphesh*) that God puts into the body that gives the body life, *nehphesh* is not an immortal deathless soul that has a life of it's own.

Question: What effect did the “*breath of life*” in the nostrils of animals have on them? Most all would answer that it made them a living being, not an immortal deathless soul that will live after the death of the animals. Then what effect did the same “*breath of life*” have on mankind? It made them a living being just as it did animals, not an immortal deathless something that animals do not have.

**THE BREATH OF LIFE:** Some have switched from the soul being the immortal part of a person to the spirit being the immortal part of a person that animals do not have. “*Then the Lord God formed man of dust from the ground, and breathe into his nostrils the **breath of life**; and man became a living being.*” The phrase “*breath of life*” that was breathed into man in Genesis 2:7 is the same Hebrew “*breath of life*” in Genesis 7:21-22 that is in the nostrils of birds, cattle, men and beasts; the “*breath of life*” in animals it is the same “*breath of life*” that is in persons. The “*breath of life*” (1) is not a immortal spirit, (2) is not a immortal soul that men **now** have but animals do not have; it does not say that the “*breath of life*” God breathed into Adam was an immortal deathless spirit or soul, and his immortality was passed on to all mankind; the breathless body that God made from the earth is what became a living breathing being when the “*breath of life*” was breathed into the breathless body. God did not tell Adam he had a body that was made from the earth, but the real Adam was made of something not from the earth.

**(3) MAN AND ANIMALS BECAME “A LIVING BEING.”** The body of dust + the breath of life = a living being-soul (a living being-nehphesh), Genesis 2:7. **Although this passage is repeatedly used to prove that an immortal, deathless soul that was put in a person that was not put in animals, most translations, other than the King James, apply it to the living breathing being or person, not to an invisible, deathless, immaterial something that was put in a person. Adam being spoken of as a “*living being*” (nehphesh Strong’s Hebrew word #5315—“a breathing creature”) proves he was mortal, not immortal, just as all “*living beings*” (nehphesh) fish, birds, animals, are mortal, not immortal. How can this be one of the most used proof texts used to prove Adam was made with an immortal soul? If it proves Adam had an immortal soul, then it proves that fish have an immortal soul that cannot die.**

It is importance to understand that it is being said that both animals and mankind **are a soul** (are living beings), not that animals or mankind **have a soul**, have a part, an immortal, invisible, no substitute something in them that cannot die; there is a world of different in being a soul and an immortal soul being in you. Many assume, with much help from the translators and theology that Genesis is saying only mankind has souls, but animals do not. Because of what most have been taught, without realizing it they read into this that only mankind has a soul that is an immortal, invisible, no substitutes something that cannot die. This causes them to believe that only this immortal part of them self will be saved (more on this at the end of this chapter).

(6) Genesis 2:19 “*living creature*” (nehpheshs-mortal beings, used referring to **animals**), “*Every beast...every bird...whatsoever the man called every **living creature*** (nehpheshs-mortal beings), *that was the name thereof*”

(7) Genesis 9:4 “*life*” (nehpheshs-mortal beings, used referring to **animals**)

(8) Genesis 9:5 “*lives*” (nehpheshs-mortal beings, used referring to man)

(9) Genesis 9:5 “*life*” (nehpheshs-mortal beings, used referring to man)

(10) Genesis 9:10 “*living creature*” (nehpheshs-mortal beings, used referring to **animals**)

- (11) Genesis 9:12 "**living creature**" (nehpheshs-mortal beings, used referring to **animals**)  
 (12) Genesis 9:15 "**living creature**" (nehpheshs-mortal beings, used referring to man and **animals**)  
 (13) Genesis 9:16 "**living creature**" (nehpheshs-mortal beings, used referring to man and **animals**)

-----  
 A bird's eye view of the translation of nehphesh in the first nine chapters.

1. "**Moving creature that has life**" (nehphesh) Genesis 1:20 – **animals**
2. "**A living creature**" (nehphesh) Genesis 1:21– **animals**
3. "**A living creature**" (nehphesh) Genesis 1:24 – **animals**
4. "Wherein there is **life**" (nehphesh) Genesis 1:30 – **animals**
5. "**A living soul**" (nehphesh) Genesis 2:7 – man
6. "**A living creature**" (nehphesh) Genesis 2:19 – **animals**
7. "**Life**" (nehphesh) Genesis 9:4 – **animals**
8. "**Lives**" (nehphesh) Genesis 9:5 – man
9. "**Life**" (nehphesh) Genesis 9:5 – man
10. "**Living creature**" (nehphesh) Genesis 9:10 – **animals**
11. "**Living creature**" (nehphesh) Genesis 9:12 – **animals**
12. "**Living creature**" (nehphesh) Genesis 9:15 – man and **animals**
13. "**Living creature**" (nehphesh) Genesis 9:16 – man and **animals**

This is an example of men attempting to cover up the truth when it is contradictory to their theology. It takes a lot of preconceived theology to make nehphesh be an immaterial invisible no substance part of a man that is now immortal that is not in animals when it is not deliberately hid as it is in the King James Version.

-----  
**In Genesis 9:4-16 the same word is used for both man and animals seven times in the same passage.**

To animals five times, to man four times.

- **Three times to animals alone**, translated (1) life, (2) creature, (3) creature
- **Two times to animals and man together**, translated (1) creature, (2) creature
- **Two times to man alone**, translated (1) lives, (2) life

*"But flesh with the **LIFE** (#1. **Nehphesh**, used referring to **animals**) thereof, which is the blood thereof, shall you not eat. And surely your blood, the blood of your **LIVES** (#2. **nehphesh**, used referring to man), will I require; at the hand of every beast will I require it: and at the hand of men, even at the hand of every man's brother, will I require the **LIFE** (#3. **nehphesh**, used referring to man) of man. Whoso sheds man's blood, by man shall his blood be shed, for in the image of God made He men. And you, be you fruitful, and multiply; bring forth abundantly in the earth, and multiply therein. And God spoke unto Noah, and to his sons with him, saying, and I, behold, I establish my covenant with you and with your seed after you; and every **LIVING CREATURE** (#4. **nehphesh**, used referring to **animals**) that is with you, of the fowl, and the cattle, and of every beast of the earth with you; from all that go out of the ark, to every beast of the earth. And I will establish my covenant with you; neither shall the waters of a flood cut off all flesh be any more; neither shall there any more be a flood to destroy the earth. And God said, This is the token of the covenant which I make between me and you and every **LIVING CREATURE** (#5. **nehphesh**, used referring to **animals**) that is with you, for perpetual generation: I do set my bow in the cloud, and it shall be a token of a covenant between*

*me and the earth. And it shall come to pass, when I bring a cloud over the earth, that the bow shall be seen in the cloud: and I will remember my covenant, which is between me and you and every **LIVING CREATURE** (#6. **nehphesh**, used referring to man and **animals**) of all flesh; and the waters shall no more become a flood to destroy all flesh. And the bow shall be in the cloud; and I will look upon it, that I may remember the everlasting covenant between God and every **LIVING CREATURE** (#7. **nehphesh**, used referring to man and **animals**) of all flesh that is upon the earth."*

**All four times that soul (nehphesh) is used in Genesis 1; it is referring to animals, not to a person. IN TEN OF THE FIRST THIRTEEN TIMES SOUL (NEHPHESH) IS USED IT IS USED REFERRING TO ANIMALS, but the King James Version hides this by using different words, and most who read the King James Version never know it.** Nehphesh is translated "soul" only one time of the first thirteen times it is used in the King James Version, but it is not translated "soul" in any of the first thirteen times it is used in the New King James Version, New American Standard Version, New Revised Standard Version, or New International Version. **Mankind is the same soul (life–nehphesh) as the other "living creatures." He does not differ from other living creatures (soul–nehphesh) by having a soul (nehphesh) that cannot die.** His dominion over other living creatures (other nehpheshs–souls) is not his nehphesh.

**In the first nine chapters of Genesis soul (nehphesh—Strong's Hebrew word #5315—"a breathing creature") is used more often with reference to animals than it is with reference to persons; it is the animal life, which both a person and animals have in common.** How did the translators know when it changed to an invisible immortal part of a person, which animals do not have?

**Note: both man and animals are souls, living beings. We are a soul, not have a soul.** If we have a soul, have a living being in us, then we are one living being with another living being living in us. According to the doctrine that we have a soul living in us, a living being living in another living being, and it is only this immortal deathless being that is us that will be saved or tormented forever is the foundation of many of the errors that have divided the churches. That *we are a soul* (we are a living being), not *we have a soul* (not have a living being living in us) is one of the most fundamental and most misunderstood teaching in the Bible.

(14) Genesis 12:5 "*And the **people** (nehphesh—"living beings") whom they had acquired*" New King James Version ("soul" in King James Version.) Why were this translated people and not souls? They did not believe souls could be bought but people could be bought.

(15) Genesis 12:13 "*That **I** (nehphesh—a "living being") may live because of you*" New King James Version ("soul" in King James Version.) Do you wonder why this was translated, "*That **I** may live*" and not "*That my **soul** may live?*"

(16) Genesis 14:21 "*Give me the **persons** (nehphesh—"living beings") and take the goods*" King James Version. Can anyone give immortal souls to another person? Is there anyone that cannot see why nehphesh could not be translated "soul" in this passage?

(17) Genesis 17:14 "*That **person** (nehphesh—a "living being") shall be cut off*" New King James Version.

(18) Genesis 19:17 "*Escape for your **life***" (nehphesh—a "living being") King James Version.

(19) Genesis 19:19 "*Saving my **life***" (nehphesh—a "living being") King James Version.

**In the first nineteen times nehpesh is used it is translated “soul.”**

- Only three times in the King James Version
- None in the New King James Version
- None in the New American Standard Version
- None in the New Revised Standard Version
- None in the New International Version

(20) Genesis 19:20 *"That my **life** (nehphesh—a "living being") may be saved"* New American Standard Version (Translated soul for the fourth time in the King James Version, but only for the first time in the New King James Version). Do you wonder how did the translators of the New King James Version did not think this word means “soul” in the nineteen times it was used before this, but changed their minds this time?

(21) Genesis 23:8 *"If it be your **mind**"* (nehphesh—a "living being") King James Version.

(22) Genesis 27:4 *"So that **I** (nehphesh—a "living being") may bless you before I die"* New Revised Standard Version.

- *"So that I (nehphesh—a "living being") may bless you before I die"* Revised Standard Version, New Revised Standard Version.
- *"So that I (nehphesh—a "living being") may give you my blessing before I die"* New International Version.
- *"So that I (nehphesh—a "living being") may give you my blessing before I die"* Revised English Bible.
- *"To give you **my** (nehphesh—a "living being") blessing before I die"* Amplified Bible.
- *"That I (nehphesh—a "living being") may give you my special blessing before I die"* New American Bible.
- *"Then I (nehphesh—a "living being") will bless you before I die"* New Century Version.
- *"Then I (nehphesh—a "living being") will pronounce the blessing that belongs to you, my firstborn son, before I die"* New Living Translation.
- *"I (nehphesh—a "living being") want to eat it once more and give you by blessing before I die"* Contemporary English Version.
- *"That I (nehphesh—a "living being") may eat of it, (preparatory) to giving you (as my first-born) my blessing before I die"* Amplified Bible.
- *"That my **soul** (nehphesh—a "living being") may bless thee before I die"* King James Version. How would Isaac's son know if he were blessed by an "immaterial invisible" no substance something that he could not see? By this time, hundreds of years after Genesis 1:1, the King James translators must have been desperate to be able to put "soul" into the Bible.

**Up to Genesis 27:4 for hundreds of years nehpesh is translated soul**

- Only four times out of twenty-two in the King James Version.
- Only one time out of twenty-two in the New King James Version.
- None in The New International Version and most others translations.

Nehphesh has been used 21 times before the New King James Version translated it "soul" for the first time, but even then the translators of many versions have chosen not to translate it "soul." **In Genesis "nehphesh" is not an immortal "immaterial, invisible part of man," but it is the life, living creature, living being, any living thing, whether animals, fish, or man, all mortal beings are a nehpesh. If the translators had continued to translate nehpesh as life, living creature, living being, or person, as they did in the first twenty-one times it is used, there may not be the divisions there are today. Why did they not translate nehpesh into soul in the first part of the Bible that covers hundreds of years? Maybe because they thought it would have**

**made animals have souls, and they did not believe animals could have souls.** I find it difficult to see how anyone could not call their honesty into question for it is undeniable that they put their belief over the word of God, and they deliberately hid the truth from their readers; they deliberately hid the truth from you.

(23) Genesis 32:30 *"My **life** (nehphesh--"living beings") is preserved"* King James Version. Most translations use "life" in this passage for an immortal soul could not perish and would not need to be preserved.

(24) Genesis 34:3

- *"His **heart** (nehphesh) was drawn to Dinah"* New International Version.
- *"He was deeply **attracted** (nehphesh) to Dinah"* New American Standard Version.
- *"His **soul** (nehphesh) clave unto Dinah"* King James Version. If this translation is not saying an immaterial immortal soul clave unto a material mortal being, then what is it saying?

(25) Genesis 34:8

- *"My son Shechem has his **heart** (nehphesh) on your daughter"* New International Version.
- *"My son Shechem is in **love** (nehphesh) with this girl"* Revised English Bible.
- *"The **heart** (nehphesh) of my son Shechem longs for your daughter"* New Revised Standard Version.
- *"The **soul** (nehphesh) of my son Shechem longeth for your daughter"* King James Version. How did the translators think the father could know what an invisible, immaterial something that was in his son was longing for? Did they think an immortal no substance soul was in love with a mortal person?

(26) Genesis 35:18

- *"As she **breathed** (nehphesh) her last-for she was dying"* New International Version.
- *"Then with her last **breath**, (nehphesh) as she was dying"* Revised English Bible.
- *"As her **soul** (nehphesh) was departing (for she died)"* King James Version.

(27) Genesis 36:6 *"All the **persons** (nehpheshs-mortal beings) of his house"* King James Version.

(28) Genesis 37:21 *"Let us not kill **him** (nehpheshs-mortal beings)"* King James Version. It was observe to the translators that they could not translate this nehphesh into soul, after all an immortal soul could not be killed.

(29) Job 12:10 *"In whose hand is the **soul** (nehpheshs-mortal beings, used referring to **animals**) of every living thing, and the breath of all mankind." "The **life** of every living thing"* New American Standard Bible.

(30) Job 41:21 *"His **breath**"* (nehpheshs-mortal beings, used referring to an **animal**, possibly a crocodile).

(31) Isaiah 19:10 *"All that make sluices and ponds for **fish** (nehpheshs-mortal beings, used referring to **animals, fish**)"* King James Version. Although nehphesh is in the Hebrew, many translations seems not to know what to do with it, and just took it out, or completely changed it for they did not want a soul to be in a pond.

(32) Jeremiah 2:24 *"A wild ass used to the wilderness, that snuffed up the wind in **her** (nehpheshs-mortal beings, used referring to an **animal**) desire."*

(33) Proverbs 27:7 *"The full **soul** (nehpheshs-mortal being) loathes an honeycomb; but to the hungry **soul** (nehpheshs-mortal being) ever bitter thing is sweet."* How could the translators think an immaterial something could be full or could be hungry for honey?

- *"A sated **man** (nehphesh) loathes honey, but to a famished **man** (nehphesh) any bitter thing is sweet"* New American Standard Bible.

- **“He** (nehphesh) *who is full loathes honey, but to the hungry even what is bitter tastes sweet*” New International Version. “Nehphesh” is in the Hebrew two times, but one of the two it was left out in the New International Version.

(34) Numbers 31:28 *“And levy a tribute unto the Lord of the men of war which went out to battle: one **soul** (nehpheshs-mortal beings—used referring to man and **animals**) of five hundred, both of the persons, and of the beeves, and of the asses and of the sheep.”* Of about 870 times “nehphesh” is in the Old Testament this and Job 12:10 are the only passages where the King James translators translated “nehphesh” as “soul” when it has reference to animals, and is maybe that the only reason they did this time is that it has equal reference to people as it does to animals and they had no choice.

“So carefully has the translation of nehphesh been guarded in relation to animals as 'souls,' that we can't help but wonder if it were not done intentionally to conceal the fact that animals are souls as well as men.” David J. Heinizman, “Man Became A Living Soul.”

(35 to 870) It would be too long to quote all the 870 times the Hebrew word nehphesh is in the Old Testament with just over one-half being translated “soul,” about 473 times in King James Version. Not once do any of them imply anything about life beyond the grave or about the soul being immortal. Nehphesh in the New International Version Old Testament is translated soul only 72 times out of the 870 times it is used, according to the this translation, 798 times nehphesh was not a “soul.”

A nehphesh could be:

- Saved (Genesis 19:19; 1 Samuel 19:11; 2 Samuel 19:5)
- Killed (Numbers 35:11; 35:15; 35:30)
- Ransomed (Exodus 21:30)
- Destroyed (Leviticus 23:30; Joshua 11:11)
- Delivered (Joshua 2:13)
- Sought to be killed (Judges 18:25)
- Taken (Deuteronomy 19:21)
- Forfeited (Joshua 2:14)
- Risked (Judges 12:3; 1 Samuel 28:21)
- Lost (Judges 1:25)
- Jeopardized (Judges 5:18; 1 Samuel 19:50)

**All 870 times have one thing in common, they are all associated with the activity of a living being including dying, and nehphesh never implies anything about life after the death of the living being, all the 870 are all speaking of living beings that will die, not of an immortal deathless something that is in a living being that is not deathless.** None of the 870 times are an immortal inter part of a person; they are a mortal living being that can die, be killed, or be dead, (whether the living being is a person, animal or fish). **Nehphesh is always associated with the activity of earthly breathing beings, both of person(s) and animal(s). It never implies anything about life beyond the grave. IT IS NEVER TRANSLATED “SPIRIT”**

Although **nehphesh**—Strong’s Hebrew word #5315—“a breathing creature” is translated into about thirty-five words, thirty-four all have reference to a mortal being, animal, or person that is not deathless, none to an “immaterial invisible part of a person” that is deathless.

1. **How could nehphesh be a mortal breathing creature that will die in thirty-four of the words into which it is translated?**

2. **And it is an immortal something that does not breath and that will not die in only one of the thirty-five words.** Is it because this is the only word that they could use to put the Pagan immortal soul into the Bible, but were not able to translate it into an immortal invisible deathless something most of the times it was used?

Can one word be rightly translated this way? How could the translators know when to translate this word as a mortal being that will die, and when the same word was to be changed to an immortal being that cannot die? **No one reading some of the English translations of the Bible would have any way of knowing that all these words are translations (or mistranslations) of only one word.** Did the translators do so because they wanted to make a person be an "immortal being," and more than a "living creatures?" In almost one half of the times *nehphesh* is used in the Old Testament, even the King James translators could not translate it "soul." When the all-knowing God used just one word, why did the translators use many words and change it as they wished to from a noun to pronouns, verbs, adjectives, adverbs, etc.? Did they think that for all the years from Adam unto Christ? God people could understand the one word God used, but now about forty words are needed to translate that one word? If one word were all that was needed from Adam unto the translation of the King James Version, why would God's one word not be enough today? Do the translators think they have improved the Hebrew Old Testament by changing the one word that God used into about thirty-five words, and changing this noun into about all parts of speech? The use of many words came when the Catholic Church brought in unconditional immortality, and they had to get it into the Bible. The Hebrew manuscripts still have just one word—*nehphesh*, which was the one word God inspired. Were the translators inspired to change it to many words? And changed from one part of speech into many parts of speech?

*Nehphesh* is translated *soul* far fewer times in the New American Standard Version, and in most other translations, including the New King James Version, than it is in the King James Version. Were they going as far as they dared to in correcting the King James Version?

The way *soul* is understood and used today in English (an inter undying **part** of a person) makes putting the word *soul* in a translation for the English people today be a false and deliberately misleading translation, for it makes it where **today's English reader cannot know what God said, and will understand only what the prejudiced outlook the translators wanted their readers to understand when they know that most that read it would understand the word *soul* only as it is used today.** Without much study of Bible words, which most Bible reader will never do, they cannot know what God said to them when they read the word *soul*, and they will think that the somewhat prejudice outlook of the translator is the word of God. God's word has been deliberately replaced with the teaching of man (Matthew 15:9) in a way that will have more influence on our conception of what our nature is and the nature of all living beings than any other question.

#### **THE "SOUL" AND "EATING OF BLOOD"**

**Is the immortal "*soul*" (*nehphesh*) in the blood?** Is a part of a person that many say it lives after the death of the body in the blood of both men and animals? (Leviticus 17:10-15) In only six verses *nehphesh* is used ten times but the translators concealed this from their reads by translating *nehphesh* as both life and soul, always life the four times it



was speaking of animals, and soul the six times it was speaking of a person; does this not show their reluctance to let us see what God said to us?

The same word (nehphesh) is translated soul six times and life four times in the King James Version in Leviticus 17:10-15.

- Used referring to animals four times—nehphesh translated (1) life, (2) life, (3) life, (4) life.
- Used referring to man six times—nehphesh translated (1) soul, (2) soul, (3) soul, (4) soul, (5) soul, (6) soul.

Leviticus 17:10-15 in New Revised Standard Version

- Used referring to animals four times—nehphesh translated (1) life, (2) life, (3) life, (4) life.
- Used referring to man six times—nehphesh translated (1) person, (2) person, (3) lives, (4) life, (5) person, (6) persons.

Leviticus 17:10-15 in New International Version

- Used referring to animals four times—nehphesh translated (1) life, (2) life, (3) life, (4) life.
- Used referring to man six times—nehphesh translated (1) person, (2) person, (3) lives, (4) person, (5) life, (6) anyone.

**Leviticus 17:10-15 King James Version**, *"I will even set my face against that **SOUL** (person—nehphesh, used referring to man) that eats blood, and will cut him off from among his people. For the **LIFE** (soul—nehphesh, used referring to animals) of the flesh is in the blood: and I have given it to you upon the altar to make an atonement for your **SOULS**: (nehphesh, used referring to man) for it is the blood that makes an atonement for the **SOUL** (nehphesh, used referring to man). Therefore I said unto the children of Israel, no **SOUL** (nehphesh, used referring to man) of you shall eat blood...For it is the **LIFE** (soul—nehphesh, used referring to animals) of all flesh; the blood of it is for the **LIFE** (soul—nehphesh, used referring to animals) thereof; therefore I said unto the children of Israel, no **SOUL** (nehphesh, used referring to man) shall eat the blood of no manner of flesh: for the **LIFE** (soul—nehphesh, used referring to animals) of all flesh is the blood thereof: whosoever eats it shall be cut off. And every **SOUL** (nehphesh, used referring to man) that eats that which died of itself...he shall wash his clothes, and bath himself in water"* In this passage, the King James Version translated the same word "soul" all six times when it used referring to man, and "life" all four times when it used referring to animals. Can anyone not see how the translators picked when they wanted "nehphesh" to be "soul," and when they wanted "nehphesh" to be "life"? They could not let an immortal soul be in the blood, nor could they let animals have an immortal soul. Their theology said a man had to have a soul, but an animal could not, and they were not willing that their reader see that the word "nehphesh" is used referring to both, and that both do not have a soul but are a soul.

The vanishing use of soul in Leviticus 17:10-15.

- In the King James Version nehphesh is translated "soul" six of the ten times it is used.
- The New King James Version used "soul" only two of the ten times.
- "Soul" is not used in the New Revised Standard Version, New International Version, The New American Bible, and others.

**Leviticus 17:10-15 New Revised Standard Version**, *"If anyone of the house of Israel or of the aliens who reside among them eats any blood, I will set my face against that **PERSON** (nehphesh) who eats blood, and will cut that **PERSON** (nehphesh) off from the people. For the **LIFE** (nehphesh) of the flesh is in the blood; and I have given it to you for making atonement for your **LIVES** (nehphesh) on the altar, for, as **LIFE**, (nehphesh) it is the blood that makes atonement. Therefore I have said to the people of Israel: No*

***PERSON** (nehphesh) among you shall eat blood...For the **LIFE** (nehphesh) of every creature-its blood is its **LIFE**; (nehphesh) therefore I have said to the people of Israel: You shall not eat the blood of any creature, for the **LIFE** (nehphesh) of every creature is its blood; whoever eats it shall be cut off. All **PERSONS**, (nehphesh) citizens or aliens, who eat what dies of itself...shall wash their clothes, and bathe themselves in water"*

**Leviticus 17:10-15 New International Version**, "Any Israelite or any alien living among them who eats any blood-I will set my face against that **PERSON** (nehphesh) who eats blood and will cut **HIM** (nehphesh) off from his people. For the **LIFE** (nehphesh) of a creature is in the blood, and I have given it to you to make atonement for **YOURSELVES** (nehphesh) on the altar; it is the blood that makes atonements for one's **LIFE** (nehphesh). Therefore I say to the Israelites, 'None of **YOU** (nehphesh) may eat blood, nor may an alien living among you eat blood'...because the **LIFE** (nehphesh) of every creature is its blood. That is why I have said to the Israelites, You must not eat the blood of any creature, because the **LIFE** (nehphesh) of every creature is its blood; anyone who eats it must be cut off. **ANYONE** (nehphesh), whether native-born or alien, who eats anything found dead or torn by wild animals must wash his clothes and bathe with water'."

- "No **soul** (nehphesh) shall eat blood" Leviticus 17:12. No person—an immortal soul eating blood?
- "The **life** (soul-nehphesh) of all flesh is the blood" Leviticus 17:11. They would not translate it to say, "The soul of all flesh is the blood."
- "No **dead body** (soul-nehphesh)" A dead immortal soul? The same word that is translated **soul** and **life** is translated **dead body** (Numbers 6:6, also Numbers 5:2; 6:11; 9:6; 9:10). These passages would make no sense if nehphesh were a no substance immortal something in a person that cannot be dead. It would also make animals have the same no substance immortal deathless something in them. It is life that is in the blood, not an immortal, immaterial, invisible soul in the blood as the word "soul" is used today.

-----

### **THE DYING USE OF "SOUL"**

**IN THE OLD TESTAMENT:** In translations that were made by those who believe a person has an immortal soul, why is the use of the word "soul" becoming used less? Nehphesh is used in the Old Testament 870 times.

#### **TRANSLATED SOUL ONLY**

- 473 times out of 870 times – King James Version in 1611.
- 289 times out of 870 times– New King James Version in 1982. **Soul is used 184 times less in the Old Testament than it is in the King James Version.**
- 118 times out of 870 times – Amplified Bible in 1954.
- 142 times out of 870 times – The Message in 1993.
- 254 times out of 870 times – New American Standard Bible in 1960.
- 115 times out of 870 times – New International Version in 1973.
- 136 times out of 870 times – New International Version in 1984 update.
- 95 times out of 870 times – New International Version in 2010 update.
- 96 times out of 870 times – New International Reader's Version in 1996.
- 73 times out of 870 times – Today's New International Version in 2001.
- 44 times out of 870 times – New Living Translation in 1996.
- 48 times out of 870 times – Holman Christian Standard Bible in 1999.
- 26 times out of 870 times – Contemporary English Version in 1995.
- 0 times out of 878 times – Common English Bible in 2011.

- Most of the times that nehphesh was not translated "soul" it was translated "life," "person," "heart," or the noun was changed to a pronoun (he, him, she, her, etc.) that is related to a person, and has no reference to an immortal part of a person.

**IN THE NEW TESTAMENT:** The Greek word translated soul (psukee) is used 106 times.

#### **TRANSLATED SOUL ONLY**

- 55 times out of 106 times in the King James Version in 1611.
- 27 times out of 106 times in the New King James Version in 1982. **Soul is used 28 times less in the New King James Version than it is in the King James Version.**
- 39 times out of 106 times – Amplified Bible in 1954.
- 43 times out of 106 times – New American Standard Bible in 1960.
- 23 times out of 106 times – New International Version in 1984 and 2010 update.
- 23 times out of 106 times – Today's New International Version in 2001.
- 29 times out of 106 times – New Living Translation in 1996.
- 20 times out of 106 times – New International Reader's Version in 1996.
- 23 times out of 106 times – Holman Christian Standard Bible in 1999.
- 22 times out of 106 times – Contemporary English Version in 1995.
- 7 times out of 106 times – Common English Bible in 2011.
- 0 times out of 106 times – Christian Bible in 1991.

**IN BOTH THE OLD AND NEW TESTAMENT:** The Hebrew word translated soul (nehphesh) is used over 870 times in the Old Testament, and the Greek word translated soul (psukee) is used 106 times, both together about 976 times.

#### **TRANSLATED SOUL ONLY**

- 530 times out of 976 times – King James Version in 1611.
- 341 times out of 976 times–New King James Version in 1982. **Soul is used 189 times less in the New King James Version than it is in the King James Version.**
- 200 times out of 976 times– Amplified Bible in 1954.
- 301 times out of 976 times – New American Standard Bible in 1960.
- 140 times out of 976 times – New International Version in 1973.
- 136 times out of 976 times – New International Version in 1984 update.
- 95 times out of 976 times – New International Version in 2010 update.
- 96 times out of 976 times – Today's New International Version in 2001.
- 39 times out of 976 times – New International reader's Version in 1996.
- 177 times out of 976 times – The Message in 1993.
- 73 times out of 976 times – New Living Translation in 1996.
- 58 times out of 976 times – Holman Christian Standard Bible in 1999.
- 58 times out of 976 times – Contemporary English Version in 1995.
- 7 times out of 976 times – Common English Bible in 2011.

Most, if not all these translators believe in an immortal soul, but have been reducing the times these words are translated "soul" and replacing it with "life," "person," "heart," or changed it to pronouns that are related to a person. The way soul has been mostly removed in most translations, and replaced with life or person, the translators are saying the English word soul is not a true translation of the Hebrew.

#### **WHY THE USE OF SOUL IS DYING**

**In many passages the psukee does thing that only this earthly body can do, things that an immortal soul that has no substance could not do.** *“And He told them a parable, saying, ‘The land of a rich man was very productive. And he began reasoning to himself, saying, ‘What shall I do, since I have no place to store my crops?’ Then he said, ‘This is what I will do: I will tear down my barns and build larger ones, and there I will*

*store all my grain and my goods. And I will say to my soul (psukee), Soul (psukee), you have many goods laid up for many years to come; take your ease, eat, drink and be merry.' But God said to him, 'You fool! This very night your soul (psukee) is required of you'" Luke 12:19-21.*

The New International Version removed "soul." "*And I'll say to myself (Greek psukee-life), 'you (Greek psukee-life) have plenty of good things laid up for many years. Take life easy; eat drink and be merry.'* But, God said to him, '*You fool! This very night your life (Greek-psukee) will be demanded from you.*'"

It is obvious that an immaterial, invisible, no substance soul would have no use for the things the rich man stored in his barns, it would not be able to eat and drink the thing stored in barns, that this was not speaking of an immaterial soul with without any substance, but was speaking of an earthly person that can eat and drink of the substance was stored and would be able to use the things stored, and it was life that would be required of the earthly person, not life from an immortal soul that could not die; when a persons life was required who would use the things he had stored? Translators put Plato's "immortal soul" into the Bible by mistranslating, but many translations are taking much of their mistranslating out.

**The Hebrew noun, nehphesh has been changed to many different pronouns, but all the pronouns have a reference to an earthly being, not to a no substance inter part of a person.** Most of the 473 times nehphesh was translated soul in the King James Version it has been translated life or person, or changed to many different pronouns in many translations. Nehphesh did not mean an immaterial invisible something in a person in the Old Testament; how could the translators think it was right to change one noun into many pronouns?

The Hebrew people in the Old Testament that were reading their Scriptures would have had no way to make a distinction in the life (soul-nehphesh) of animals or men. Even today in the Hebrew Old Testament there is no distinction between a person and or an animal being a soul-a living creature, but translators have changed this. Only in the English translations is there a distinction, **and this distinction is because man has changed God's word.** God used the same word to describe both persons and animals. If this one word proves one is now immortal, it proves both are. Man says animals do not have a soul but people do. God says both people and animals are a soul.

**Summary: About one third of the words translated soul, nehphesh in the Old Testament, and psukee in the New Testament are associated with the destruction and death of the soul (life, nehphesh). This is an insoluble problem for those that believe today's theology, which says the soul cannot die.**

Since the word "soul" has a meaning in English that is not in the Hebrew word "nehphesh" or the Greek word "psuche" the question is, "Is soul a true translation," or was it the translators putting their Platonic and Hellenized philosophy into the Bible? The doctrine of an immortal soul did not exist when the Old Testament was written and nehphesh would not be understood to be a "soul" not until the Greek doctrine was brought into the church by the so called "church fathers," and by the dark age Catholic Church. The translators of the King James Version still believed this doctrine and changed the word of God in this and many places, but think goodness most translations have now partly corrected this change.

INTERNATIONAL STANDARD BIBLE ENCYCLOPEDIA: **"Not, however, to dwell on the fact that many peoples have no clear conception of an immaterial 'soul' in the modern sense** (the Egyptians, e. g. distinguished several parts, the Ka, the Ba, etc., which survived death; often the surviving self is simply a ghostly resemblance of the earthly self, nourished with food, offerings, etc.), there is the more serious consideration that the state into which the surviving part is supposed to enter as death is anything but a state which can be described as 'life,' or worthy to be dignified with the name 'immortality.' It is a state peculiar to 'death,' in most cases, shadowy, inert, feeble, dependent, joyless; a state to be dreaded and shrunk from, not one to be hoped for. If, on the other hand, as in the hope of immortality among the nobler heathen, it is conceived of, as for some, a state of happiness-the clog of the body being shaken off-this yields the idea, which has passed into so much of our modern thinking, of an 'immortality of the soul,' of an imperishableness of the spiritual part, sometimes supposed to extend backward as well as forward; an inherent indestructibility." From the article "Immortal; Immortality." Also from the International Standard Bible Encyclopedia, **"We are influenced always more or less by the Greek, Platonic idea that the body dies, yet the soul is immortal. Such an idea is utterly contrary to the Israelite consciousness and is nowhere found in the Old Testament"** From the article "Death," page 812. Also from the International Standard Bible Encyclopedia, "Soul, like spirit, has various shades of meaning in the O.T., which may be summarized as follows: 'Soul,' 'living being,' 'life,' 'self,' 'person,' 'desire,' 'appetite,' 'emotion' and 'passion'...**NEHPHESH OR SOUL, CAN ONLY DENOTE THE INDIVIDUAL LIFE WITH A MATERIAL ORGANIZATION OR BODY.**" page 2837. "For the Hebrews a person was a unity, not to be divided into body, soul, and spirit as the Greeks did," page 592.

JEWISH ENCYCLOPEDIA: **"The belief that the soul continues its existence after the dissolution of the body is a matter of philosophical or theological speculation rather than of simple faith, AND IS ACCORDINGLY, NOWHERE TAUGHT IN THE HOLY SCRIPTURE...The belief in the immortality of the soul came to the Jews from contact with Greek thought and chiefly through the philosophy of Plato, its principal exponent, who was led to it through Orphic and Dleusinian mysteries in which Babylonian and Egyptian views were strangely blended,"** "Immortality of the Soul," 1925. The concept of punishment after death is not in the Old Testament. The Law given through Moses deals only with punishment in this life and has no provisions for punishment after death. From their contact with pagan philosophy, the pagan immortal soul teaching had made some inroads with some Jews by the time of Christ. Paul warned about this Philosophy (Colossians 2:8).

C. R. GRESHAM: Commenting on 1 Corinthians 15:51-52 said, **"Paul is pointing out that the resurrection truth which he is revealing was partially, if not wholly, hidden to past generations. We must take this seriously and not read New Testament revelation back into the Old Testament accounts...It is generally conceived that there is little about resurrection or after-life in what the Jews called the Torah...and the Former Prophets...Death is seen as the end, the destruction of human existence,"** page 25. "Man's soul is primarily his vitality, his life, not some separate part of a person that has independent existence and an immortal nature, God's spirit (His breath, His power) creates and sustains all living things (Ps 33:6; 104:29-30), even the human spirit (Zech 12:1), **but never is man's soul or spirit seen as an immortal part of man surviving death,"** page 40. "The widespread misunderstanding that the New Testament teaches the immortality of the soul...If one recognizes that death and eternal life in the New Testament are always bound up the Christ-event, then it becomes clear that for the first Christians the soul is not intrinsically immortal, but rather became so only through the resurrection of Jesus Christ," page 275. "What The Bible Says About Resurrection" The College Press, 1983, (Christian Church).

INTERPRETER'S DICTIONARY OF THE BIBLE: "No biblical text authorizes the statement that the soul is separated from the body at the moment of death" Volume one, Article "Death," page 802, 1960. "The word 'soul' in English...coming from philosophical Greek (Platonism)...**In the OT it**

**never means the immortal soul, but it is essentially the life principle, or the living being, or the self as the subject of appetite, and emotion.”** Volume 4, Article “Soul,” 1960.

The belief of Socrates and Plato was that when the soul is freed from the person it was in that it would live forever in a better place without the person that it had been in. This Greek philosophy was what most of the church fathers had been taught and believed, the background from which they came. Tertullian, one of the first of the church fathers to teach this philosophy was truthful about from where he had learned it. He said, "For some things are known even by nature: the immortality of the soul, for instance, is held by many...I may use, therefore, the opinion of a Plato, when he declares, 'Every soul is immortal'" Ante-Nicene Fathers, Volume 3, page 1916. By the time of the translation of the King James Version this heathen doctrine was believed by the Roman Catholic Church and most Protestants, but had been changed from believing that all souls are freed and go on to a much better place to a few souls go to a better place, but most souls, after being freed from the person it was in by the death of the person, will go to eternal torment in Hell; the “Hell” part had to be added to what was believed by Plato, or the Catholic Church with it’s priest would not have been needed, after the death of the persons the souls was trapped in all souls would have gone to the same better place without there help.

The Hebrew word “nehphesh” and the Greek word “psuche” were the only words the translators could use to put the immortal soul they believed in into the Bible; but they found only 530 times out of 976 times these two words were used that was suitable to use to add this philosophy. Later translations have been little by little removing it.

Neither “nehphesh” nor “psuche” are used with the qualifying words immoral, undying, endless, or everlasting, but in today’s preaching these words are continually added to “soul.”

The Egyptians might have been the first to believe in the dual nature of a person. They believed that death was a door to a new form of life, which may be higher or lower, depending on how good or bad a person was. They believed the body was evil and a prison to the soul. They built the pyramids and other tombs and put the things in them they thought would be needed in the next life. Death was a friend to them that freed the soul of the evil body; but it was the Greeks (Pythagoras, Socrates, Plato) who adopted this Egyptian belief of the dual nature of a person and developed the philosophy of the immortal soul. Many church fathers were schooled in and believed in this Greek philosophy, and were only partly converted. They, after greatly expanding on the teaching of Plato, brought the Greek philosophy into the church in the apostasy. Unconditional immortality is the foundation of the doctrine of Hell. If a person had an unseen immortal soul in them that would not die when they died, there had to be a place to put the "souls" which were evil but could not die. The "souls" that were in the saved had to be put somewhere; therefore, the doctrine of a soul going to Heaven or Hell immediately after the person died without a resurrection or a judgment came into being, and the New Testament teaching of the resurrection of the dead became unneeded and of little or no importance.

In the Greek philosophy a soul never dies; only the body dies, freeing the soul to a higher life. Christ taught the resurrection of man, not the Greek *"immaterial, invisible part of man"* (W. E. Vine) that never dies. The Greeks did not believe in or need a resurrection, or a savior, or redeemer; these would not fit into their belief. They believed in an immortal soul; therefore, there could be no death. **The Greek philosophy of an immortal soul was opposed and opposite to the teaching of Christ on the**

resurrection. The immortal soul doctrine was believed by most pagan religions in the time of Paul, and when he was before Agrippa, he asked, *"Why is it considered incredible among you people if God does raise the dead?"* (Acts 26:8 New American Standard Version). To Plato and Agrippa, the resurrection of the dead would have been a step backward. It would put the soul that was freed from its prison of a body back into the prison it had been freed from.

- The Greek and heathen belief that the immortal soul is indestructible, demands that the soul cannot die, but must be alive forever somewhere.
- The resurrection as taught by Christ demands that a person be dead, if not, there cannot be a resurrection.

The resurrection is a calling back to life the whole person God created, not a calling back to life, as Plato taught, a deathless something that is difference than the whole person that it had been in, an immaterial living soul that had been in a dead person when the person was alive, but has gone on to wherever it is believed souls go after it leave the person it was once in. If the Greek doctrine of an immortal soul that cannot die, which is believed by many today were true, then the resurrection of Christ and our resurrection would be pointless even if it were possible to raise from the dead a soul that is not dead.

**PLATO and SOCRATES -- versus -- CHRIST**

Immortality -----	versus -	A resurrection to life
Death a friend -----	versus -	Death is <i>"the last enemy"</i>
Plato: The soul is		If there is no resurrection
Immortal, therefore only		death is the end of
<i>"It" is alive after death</i>		all life 1 Corinthians 15:14-23
Plato: Only the body dies		<i>"Then they also that are</i>
Freeing soul to a higher		<i>fallen asleep in Christ</i>
Life without a body		<i>have perished"</i>
Only some inter part of		A person (who in Christ) will be
A person is immortal		immortal, not just part of a person
All the dead are alive		Christ is <i>"the first born from the dead"</i>

**Plato's immortal soul and Christ's resurrection are not compatible, both cannot be. One can be true, but not both; they are alien and complete opposite to each other. THE IMMORTAL SOUL DOCTRINE OF PLATO IS A TOTAL REJECTION OF THE TEACHING OF CHRIST ON THE RESURRECTION OF A PERSON TO LIFE. TO BELIEVE PLATO IS TO REJECT CHRIST.**

- Plato argued for an immortal, immaterial soul that was better off after the death of the person it was in.
- Paul taught the resurrection of the dead person.
  - **THE TWO ARE COMPLETED INCOMPATIBLE; IT IS DIFFICULT TO UNDERSTAND WHY MANY THAT SAY THEY BELIEVE THE BIBLE CHOOSE PLATO'S PAGAN PHILOSOPHY OVER THE BIBLE.**

Paul and Plato used the same Greek words, but not in the same way. Immortal, immortality, indestructible, never dying was used by Plato, and are used by many today to describe the soul that lives after the death of the person it once was in, but in the Old or New Testament these words are never used referring to any lost person, or to any part of a person after the person is dead. The expression "immortal soul" is very common in the writing of the pagan philosophers and today's preachers, but is not found in the Bible.

<u>PAUL USED</u>		<u>PLATO AND MANY TODAY SAY THE SOUL</u>
Die		cannot die
Death		no death

Destroyed |cannot be destroyed  
Corruption |is incorruptible  
Mortal |is immortal  
Perish |cannot perish

HENRY CONSTABLE: "In the very terms in which the punishment of the wicked is asserted in the New Testament. Where the latter says the soul shall die, Plato says it shall not die; where the latter says it shall be destroyed, Plato says it shall not be destroyed; where the latter says it shall perish and suffer corruption, Plato says it shall not perish and is incorruptible. The phrases are the very same, only that what Plato denies of all souls alike, the New Testament asserts of some of the souls of men. But the discussion of the question was not confined to the school of Plato or to his times. Every school of philosophy took it up, whether to confirm Plato's view, or to deny it, or to heap ridicule upon it. All the phrases we have been discussing from the New Testament had been explained, turned over and over, handled with all the power of the masters of language, presented in every phase, so that of their sense there could be no doubt, nor could there be any one ignorant of their sense before Jesus spoke, or an Evangelist or Apostle wrote. The subject had not died out before the days of Christ. It never could and never will die out. In every city of the Roman world were schools of Grecian taught in the days of the Apostles. In every school the question before us was discussed in the phrases and language of the New Testament" "Duration and Nature of Future Punishment," 1871.

CATHOLIC ENCYCLOPEDIA: "**Plato established the basic Western tradition on this topic by defining the soul as the spiritual part of the human that survived death**" 1991.

Some believe that in the afterlife we will be nothing more than a collection of disembodied spirits or souls that will be just as alive and just the same from the day of birth of the birth of the persons they were in as these souls will ever be. Death and the resurrection are out of step with the belief of Plato.

That there is something in a person and that something being deathless is a philosophy of man that Paul warned about (Colossians 2:8). An immortal soul was copied from heathen philosophy and superstition. Those who believe we now have "an immortal soul" get their belief from Greek philosophy, but are inconstant and self-contradicting; they say the soul cannot die, but it needs a Savior anyway. If we were born with an immortal soul, it would have no need for Christ to save it from the death it cannot die. **Christianity did not destroy the pagan doctrine of Egypt and Greece; by the Dark Age it had adopted it.**

Death is the enemy (1 Corinthians 15:26). It is the destruction of the life given by God. It is not the liberator of an immortal soul, as Plato believed it to be. It is death, which must be conquered by the resurrection. **When we understand that death is really death, not another kind of life for an immortal something that is in a person, something that has no substance, the resurrection is all-important. Without a resurrection we can do what we want for this life is all there is (1 Corinthians 15:32). Our only hope is the resurrection, and without it there will be no life of any kind for us after death. Plato's immortal, deathless soul needs no resurrection, IT CANNOT BE RESURRECTED.** "*Set your hope perfectly on the grace that is to be brought unto you at the revelation of Jesus Christ*" (1 Peter 1:12). It is at the resurrection that we "*shall receive the crown of glory that fades not away*" (1 Peter 5:4).

1. "*Be patient; therefore, brethren, until the coming of the Lord*" (James 4:7-8). As the farmer is patient unto the harvest to receive his reward, the believers are to be patient unto the coming of Christ to receive their reward.
2. "*It is sown a natural body; it is raised a spiritual body*" (1 Corinthians 15:43). It is not the spiritual body living in the natural body that will go to Heaven at the death of the natural body. **"We** (not a



- soul) shall all be changed, in a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump: for the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible" (1 Corinthians 15:52).
3. "Beloved, now are **we** children of God, and it is not yet made manifest what **we** shall be. We know that, if he shall be manifested, **we** shall be like him; for **we** shall see him even as he is" (1 John 3:2).
  4. **The wrath of God will be "in the day of wrath and revelation of the righteous judgment of God" (Romans 2:5), not wrath at death before the Judgment Day, and not eternal wrath after the Judgment Day is over.** On that day, it will be rendered "to them that by patience in well doing seek for glory and honor and incorruption, eternal life" (Romans 2:8), not to the souls that are believed to be in all on the day of the death of the person. The judgment will be "in the day when God shall judge the secrets of men" (Romans 2:16), not at death. It is the Judgment Day when "**we** (not souls) shall all stand before the judgment-seat of God" (Romans 14:10). It is the day that the Lord will judge all, "Wherefore judge nothing before the time, until the Lord comes who will both bring to light the hidden things of darkness, and make manifest the counsels of the hearts" (1 Corinthians 4:5; also, Ephesians 4:30).
  5. "And to wait for his Son from heaven" (1 Thessalonians 1:10). Death will not take anyone to Heaven without waiting for the second coming of Jesus.
  6. When the Lord shall descend from Heaven, them that have fallen asleep in Jesus, "the dead in Christ shall rise first; then **we** that are alive, that are left, shall together **with them** be caught up in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the air: and so shall **we** ever be with the Lord" (1 Thessalonians 4:17). Their hope is to be raised from their sleep at the coming of Christ, not come back from living in Heaven or Abraham's bosom.
  7. Paul says he will receive a "crown of righteousness, which the Lord, the righteous judge, shall give to **me** at that day; and not to me only, but also to **all them** that have loved his appearing." (2 Timothy 4:8).
    - **The Bible speaks of "us," "we," and "you" that shall be with the Lord after the judgment day, the person will be resurrected, not a soul that once was in us, but it has gone on to be with the Lord without us.**

The Bible teaching, "*The wages of sin is death*" leaves no lost souls alive after the judgment and second death to be put anywhere. **The teaching of Christ, that life (everlasting life or immortality) will be given only to those who obey Him, makes Hell impossible. Unless Christ gives eternal life (immortality) to the lost, they cannot live forever anywhere.** The Greek teaching of an immortal soul must be made to stand, and the teaching of Christ that He will give life only to those who come to Him must be removed, or there cannot be a Hell.

Socrates drinks hemlock and died with a smile on his face because he thought he was freeing his soul to leave his body and live with the gods, to live free of being in him. Christ "*sweats as it was great drops of blood*" (Luke 22:44). Death is the enemy of man. It destroys him, and only the resurrection frees us from death, and gives us back the life death takes. In death there is no life in Heaven or life in any other place for us before the resurrection. The resurrection is not just a coming back from Heaven to be judged and then going back to Heaven, it is our only hope of life after our death. Without the resurrection "*then they also that are fallen asleep in Christ have perished*" (1 Corinthians 15:18). The Greek philosophy that found its way into the Church says the souls that have left the persons they were in have not perished, but are freed to live with God in Heaven, that souls are alive without the need of a resurrection. As the results of the pagan immortal soul doctrine came Hellfire, Purgatory, worship of Mary and saints, etc. The Protestant Reformation was largely a reaction to medieval superstitious beliefs and Purgatory, an intermediate state of temporal punishment where souls that were not good

enough to go to Heaven, and not bad enough to go to Hell; in the Church in the Dark Age, this was almost all the souls that had left the dead persons they were in. The priests would have the loved ones pay for souls to shorten the time the souls of the dead persons were in Purgatory. Selling indulgences and paying to reduce the time the deathless souls that had left the dead loved ones would spend in Purgatory was rejected by the Reformation, as was many other superstitious beliefs of the Roman Catholic Church; but the Greek dual nature of a person and the doctrine of Hell were retained. Calvin believed the soul did not sleep, but went to Heaven or Hell as soon as it left the person.

The Westminster Confession says, "The souls of the righteous...are received unto the highest heavens...the soul of the wicked are cast into Hell."

**Unconditional immortality is the pagan transmigration of souls. Augustine and other partly converted "church fathers" that knew more of the teaching of Plato than they did of Christ and they rewrote reincarnation to fit Christianity.** The doctrine of an immortal soul that is not dead replaced the resurrection, and made it both useless and impossible.

Transmigration of souls:

- Transmigration of souls: Souls live somewhere after the death of the body. Where it is believed that a soul goes to after it leaves the person that it was in varies from country to country and age to age.
- Unconditional immortality: Souls live somewhere after the death of the body. The place where a soul goes after it leaves the dead body varies from one group to another. Heaven, Hell, Purgatory, or Abraham's bosom; but, wherever it goes it is as alive as it will ever be and that without the resurrection of the person it had at one time been in.

Reincarnation:

- Reincarnation: Souls that are living somewhere come back to an earthly body.
- Unconditional immortality: At the second coming of Christ souls that are now alive in Heaven or Hell come back to the earthly bodies they once were in.
- Resurrection: The dead persons are raised from the dead for the judgment

Ancient Egyptian belief was that the soul had a gloomy existence in the underworld (transmigration). The Greeks and Romans believed about the same with some changes. Oriental and Pythagorean philosophy, Buddhists, Hindus, and Grand Lama all believed in some form of reincarnation. All believed the "soul" of the evil had some punishment, but not all believed the soul had the same punishment. With most the punishment of the soul after it had left the person it had been in was only some kind of gloomy existence in the underworld that would end when it was reincarnated, not endless torment as it is taught today. With most, the more evil a person was the lower his soul would have the capability to reincarnate. Some would come back as a person, the more evil as a plant or insect. This punishment was believed to be under or down in the earth by most. Hell was and is still believed by some to be under the earth. This is the nearest thing to today's Hell in heathen philosophy, and in any writing unto after the New Testament. The "church fathers" borrowed from the heathens (mostly Greek and Romans), and invented unto by the time of the Dark Age they had invented Hell, Limbo, Purgatory, worship of Mary and saints, the Pope declared to be God in the flesh, and much more. God was made into a cruel and sadistic being. Those who worshiped him truly became like the god they invented. Millions who believed the world was round, or in any way did not believe all the Church taught, were put to death as heretics. It put some to death for having the Bible in their

own language-not in Latin. It was one of the bloodiest times of history, and continued into the Protestant Reformation (The Crusades, bloody Mary, witch-hunts, and much more). Some of the cruelest ways of torment the world has ever known were invented and used, and all in the name of their god; after Calvin burned Servetus to death he wrote a book with a long title, "A Faithful Account Of The Errors Of Servetus, In Which It Is Proved That Heretics Ought To Be Restrained By The Sword." It would take many books to tell of all the bloody deeds of the Dark Age by the so-called "church." The reasons for them are summed up in the words of bloody Mary. "As the souls of heretics are hereafter to be eternally burning in Hell, there can be nothing more proper than for me to imitate the divine vengeance by burning them on earth." In the Dark Age, the "church" was a mixture of Christianity, Judaism, Paganism, and their own inventions, but mostly the last two. Before the Protestant Reformation there was more heathen philosophy in the Dark Age Church than true Christian teaching. It had apostatized into a satanic cult.

Different characteristics of a person, not different parts of a person that can live without each other, but a person looked at from different points of view.

1. BODY: Flesh and blood.
2. SOUL: A living being: the body + the breath of life.
3. SPIRIT: The body of dust + the breath of life (spirit-ruch) = a living being-soul.
4. MIND: If the intellectual part of a person is his mind, does the "soul" as it is used in today's theology have its own mind? Does the soul have any thoughts that our mind does not have? If not, according to today's theology, the only part of a person that will be in Heaven will have no thoughts.
5. HEART: The most commonly used characteristic of a person. (Genesis 6:5; Judges; 16:15, 17, 18, 20; Matthew 5:8; Luke 12:34; Romans 10:10; Hebrews 3:10). The heart is used in the place of the mind for the thing that the mind does, the seat of consciousness, intellect, affection, understanding and will, not the part of the body that pumps blood. (Matthew 13:15; 15:19; Mark 7:19; Luke 6:45; 9:47; Acts 8:21; 8:37; 28:27; Romans 10:9; 10:10; 1 Corinthians 2:9; 7:37; Hebrews 3:10; 4:12; 1 John 3:20-21). Has not the things said about the heart been transferred to the soul by those who believe the soul is immortal?

Ashley S. Johnson, founder and president of the Johnson Bible College: "Generally the world 'soul' in the ordinary version should be life," "The Resurrection And The Future Life," page 336, 1913, Knoxville Lithographing Company.

**"MAN BECAME A LIVING BEING"** Genesis 1:26 *"Then God said, 'Let Us make MAN in Our image,'" not "Let Us make a soul in Our Image and put this soul in MAN unto the death of the MAN it is in."* Genesis 2:7 *"Then the Lord formed MAN of dust from the ground and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; (not breathed into the body an immortal undying no substance soul, but breathed into "man" the breath of life, which both men and animals have), and MAN became a living being."* Not a body + an immortal soul, but *"a living being."* Not two beings, a body being (a person) with an invisible soul being living in the person. How can the breath of life in your nose (breathing) be an immortal something that dose not breathe? The same "man" that was created *"in the image of God"* is the same "man" that was created *"male and female."* It is "man" that was created *"male and female,"* man that is in the *"image of God,"* not only an immaterial something in "man" that is in the image of God.

**The body of dust + the breath of life = a living soul** (a living being-nehphesh), Genesis 2:7. The breath of life without the body would not be a person or animal. The breath of life without the body would not be an immortal living being, not a nehphesh.

**ALL** living creatures, whether they are animals or sea-dwelling creatures are souls (nehpheshs—living beings).

**DEATH OF MANKIND—CREATION IN REVERSE**

*Creation*—body made of dust—breath of life from God = a living person (Genesis 2:7).

*Death*—breath of life returns to God—body returns to dust = a dead person (Ecclesiastes 12:7).

God formed **MAN**, not merely the body of man; it was **MAN** that was formed from the dust of the ground. **MAN** is in the image of God; it is **MAN**, not an invisible something that was put in the **MAN** but is not the **MAN**, not something that has no substance that is in the image of God. After Adam was put out of the garden he was still in the image of God, mankind is still in the image of God. If Adam was created innate immortal, then what was the purpose of the tree of life? If Adam had an immortal soul that was created not subject to death, then the tree of life could have had no purpose; an immortal soul would live forever with or without it; if Adam had a deathless soul, his deathless soul would not have died if he did or did not eat of the tree of life; it was Adam that could and did die for eating of the tree, not a deathless soul that could not die, therefore; could not be what was to die for eating of the forbidden fruit.

Summary: The Bible says, “*Man **BECAME** a living soul*” is changed to, “*Man **WAS GIVEN** a soul,*” or “*Man had a soul put in him.*” There is a world of difference in a person **BEING** a living soul and a person **HAVING** a soul. Both man and animals **ARE** a living soul, neither one **HAVE** a soul. If the breath of life in his nostrils in Genesis 2:7 makes a person have an immortal part (spirit) living in him or her that cannot die, then “*all in whose nostrils was the breath of the spirit of life*” in Genesis 7:22 would also prove all beasts, birds, and fish have an immortal part (soul) living in them that cannot die.

**GOD IS A LIVING BEING** (Not God has a soul in Him)

1. “*Moreover, I will make My dwelling among you, and My soul (nehphesh) will not reject you*” (Leviticus 26:11).
2. “*I then will destroy your high places, and cut down your incense altars, and heap your remains on the remains of your idols; for My soul (nehphesh) shall abhor you*” (Leviticus 26:30).
  - I know of no one that believes God has “an invisible, no substance” something in Him that can exist apart from Him. His soul (nehphesh) is His person, His being—life, not an immortal soul living in the immortal God, just as the soul of a person or animal is the life (the living being) of the person or animal, not an immortal being in them.

**ANIMALS ARE “SOULS”** nehphesh— a living creature

**Animals ARE souls**—a living being, **not animals HAVE souls**—an immaterial, invisible, no substance, deathless something. In Genesis 1:20; 1:21; 1:24; 1:30, most translations try to hide this. WHY? Why is it translated “*living creature*” when used referring to animals, and the same word is changed and translated “*soul*” when used referring to a person? There is no excuse or defense for it; it is a deliberate attempt by the translators, who did not believe God's word as it is, to mislead their readers; all Bible teachers should point this out to all they teach (James 3:1). If “*the living soul*” (nehphesh) is the immortal part of a person, then bugs, all sea creatures, all birds, and all animals

have an immortal soul. In Genesis "*Living soul*" is used more of these creatures than it is of man.

Passages in which soul (nehphesh) is speaking of animals being souls but is deliberately hid from the English readers that the word nehphesh—souls is used.

1. Genesis 1:20 "*Then God said, Let the waters swarm with swarms of living **souls** (soul–nehphesh, used referring to **animals**).*"
2. Genesis 1:21 "*And God created the great sea-monsters, and every living **soul** (soul–nehphesh, used referring to **animals**) that moves wherewith the waters swarmed.*"
3. Genesis 1:24 "*And God said, Let the earth bring forth living **souls** (soul–nehphesh, used referring to **animals**) after their kind, cattle, and creeping things, and beasts of the earth after their kind.*"
4. Genesis 2:19 "*And out of the ground the Lord God formed every beast of the field and every bird of the sky, and brought them to the man to see what he would call them; and whatever the man called a **living creature** (soul–nehphesh, used referring to **animals**), that was its name.*"
5. Genesis 1:30 "*And to every beast of the earth and to every bird of the sky and to every thing that moves on the earth which has **life** (soul–nehphesh, used referring to **animals**).*"
6. Genesis 9:10 "*And with ever **living creature** (soul–nehphesh, used referring to **animals**) that is with you, of the fowl, of the cattle, and of every beast of the earth with you.*"
7. Genesis 9:12 "*This is the covenant which I am making between Me and you and ever **living creature** (soul–nehphesh, used referring to **animals**) that is with you.*"
8. Genesis 9:15 "*And I will remember My covenant, which is between Me and you and ever **living creature** (soul–nehphesh, used referring to **animals**) of all flesh.*"
9. Genesis 9:16 "*When the bow is in the cloud, then I will look upon it, to remember the everlasting covenant between God and ever **living creature** (soul–nehphesh, used referring to **animals**) of all flesh that is on the earth.*"
10. Leviticus 11:10 "*But whatever is in the seas and in the rivers, that do not have fins and scales among all the teeming life of the water, and among all the **living creatures** (soul–nehphesh, used referring to **animals**) that are in the water, they are detestable things to you.*"
11. Leviticus 11:46 "*This is the law regarding the animal, and the bird, and every **living thing** (soul–nehphesh, used referring to **animals**) that swarms on the earth.*"
12. Leviticus 17:11 "*For the **life** (soul–nehphesh, used referring to **animals**) of the flesh is in the blood, and I have given it to you on the altar to make atonement for your **souls** (lives–soul–nehphesh, used referring to **men**); for it is the blood by reason of the **life** (soul–nehphesh, used referring to **animals**) that makes atonement.*" The exact same word in the same sentence in the Hebrew (nehphesh) is translated **life** when referring to animals and is translated **soul** when referring to mankind!
13. Leviticus 22:11 "*But if the priest buy any **souls** (soul–nehphesh, used referring to **animals** that are to be used as food) with his money, he shall eat of it, and he that is born in his house: they shall eat of his meat" King James Version.*
14. Leviticus 24:18 "*And the one who takes the **life** (soul–nehphesh, used referring to **animals**) of an animal shall make it good, **life** (soul–nehphesh, used referring to **animals**) for **life** (soul–nehphesh, used referring to **animals**)." "And he that killest a **beast** (soul–nehphesh) shall make it good, **beast** (soul–nehphesh) for **beast** (soul–nehphesh)" King James Version.*
15. Numbers 31:28 "*One **soul** (nehphesh life, used referring to both man and **animals**) of five hundred, of the persons and of the beeves, and of the asses, and of the sheep.*"
16. Job 41:1 The "**leviathan**," used six times in the Bible, probably a crocodile, has a **soul** (soul–nehphesh, used referring to **animals**) (Job 41:21). From over 870 times nehphesh is used, this is the only time it is translated **breath** in the Kings James Version. After all, they could not have a crocodile, a sea monster, or whatever it was having an "immortal soul" for then they would have to put it in Heaven or Hell for an immortal crocodile could never die and would have to be somewhere for all eternity.

17. Ezekiel 47:9 "And it will come about that every **living creature** (soul–nehphesh, used referring to **animals**) which swarms in every place where the river goes."
18. "For the **life** (soul–nehphesh, used referring to man and to **animals**) of every creature is the blood of it" Leviticus 17:14, Genesis 9:4.
19. Deuteronomy 12:23 "Only be sure not to eat the blood, for the blood is the **life** (soul–nehphesh, used referring to **animals**), and you shall not eat the **life** (soul–nehphesh, used referring to **animals**) with the flesh."
20. Job 12:10 "In whose hand is the **life** (soul–nehphesh, used referring to man and to **animals**) of every living thing, and the breath of all mankind?"
21. Proverbs 12:10 "A righteous man has regard for the **life** (soul–nehphesh, used referring to **animals**) of his beast."
22. And many more, but if this does not convict anyone that all living being are a soul nothing will. Note how the translators tried to hid this from their readers.

Many believe, "*The living soul*" in Genesis 2:7 is the one distinctive thing that makes a person different from an animal, but if this makes a person have an immortal soul in them, there is no way around all living things having immortal souls in them. **In these passages bugs, birds, fish, persons, are all a nehphesh, a "living beings," not a deathless, immaterial something.**

John T. Willis: "The last two lines of verse 7 affirm that a person's life is God-given. God enables a person to breathe, and thus, to be alive, as he does other creatures (see Genesis 7:22). Some have tried to justify a threefold division of man into flesh (or body), soul, and spirit from Genesis 2:7. They equate **dust** with flesh or body, **breath** with spirit, and insist that the last phrase of the verse must be translated as 'a living soul.' However, this understanding reads more into the biblical text than it really says. (1) The Hebrew words for 'flesh' or 'body' and 'spirit' do not occur in this passage. (2) The Hebrew expression nehphesh chayyah, which some insist on translating 'a living soul,' is used of fish and marine life in Genesis 1:30; and beasts and birds in 2:19. **If 'soul' means the eternal part of a person or the sum total of man's 'body' and 'spirit' in Genesis 2:7, it must mean the eternal part of a fish or the sum total of a fish's 'body' and 'spirit' in Genesis 1:20, 21; etc.** (3) The flow of the context in Genesis 2:7 indicates that **the word translated being in RSV (nehphesh) means the whole person. The author's emphasis is on the gift of life**" "The Living Word Commentary On the Old Testament – Genesis," page 103-104, Sweet Publishing Company, 1979, church of Christ.

Erdmann Dictionary of the Bible: "Far from referring simply to one aspect of a person, 'soul' refers to the whole person" page 1245.

Holman Bible Dictionary: "A human being is a totality of being, not a combination of various parts and impulses. **According to the Old Testament understanding, a person is not a body, which happens to possess a soul. Instead, a person is a living soul...**Because of God's breath of life; the man became 'a living being' (Gen. 2:7). A person thus is a complete totality, made up of human flesh, spirit (best understood as "the life-force"), and nehphesh (best understood as "the total self" but often translated as 'soul')" page 61.

International Standard Bible Encyclopedia: "There is not dualism in the sense of separation, as though there could be full man either as body alone or as soul alone...together they make up the one man" Volume 1, page 134.

Hastings Bible Dictionary: "Soul is throughout the great part of the Bible simply the equivalent of 'life' embodied in living creature."

T. Pierce Brown: "A consideration of EVERY passage in which these terms are used leads us to the consideration that the term **'soul' is a term that was applied in the Bible to every being that normally has sensory capacities (life)**, whether or not they have that capacity when the term is used referring to them. For example, one might see a body of a dead person and say, 'That poor soul is dead.' The Bible uses the term that way, even as we do, and it has nothing at all to do with

the immortality or mortality of the soul. It simply means that the PERSON (the one who HAD life-soul-sensory capacity) is dead." "Soul and Spirit" Gospel Advocate, June 14, 1979, church of Christ.

(1) *Nehphesh (soul)*: When *nehphesh* is used referring only to **animals**, it is translated nine different ways in the King James Version.

1. **Creature** (soul-nehphesh) Genesis 1:21; 1:24; 2:19; 9:10; 2:12; Leviticus 11:46
2. **Thing** (soul-nehphesh) Leviticus 11:10. Ezekiel 47:9
3. **Life** (soul-nehphesh) Genesis 1:20; 1:30; Leviticus 17:10-14 - 2 times
4. **The life** (soul-nehphesh) Genesis 9:4; Deuteronomy 12:23; Proverbs 12:10
5. **Beast** (soul-nehphesh) Leviticus 24:18
6. **The soul** (soul-nehphesh) Job 12:10
7. **Breath** (soul-nehphesh) Job 41:21
8. **Fish** (soul-nehphesh) Isaiah 19:10
9. **Her** (soul-nehphesh) Jeremiah 2:24

(2) *Nehphesh (soul)*: When it is used referring to BOTH **Animals** and **Man**, it is translated in three different ways.

1. **Creature** (soul-nehphesh) Genesis 9:15; 9:16
2. **The life** (soul-nehphesh) Leviticus 17:11; 17:14
3. **Soul** (soul-nehphesh) Numbers 31:28

(3) *Nehphesh (soul)*: When it has the animal appetites and desires of **Man**, it is translated in five different ways, (1) pleasure, (2) lust, (3) appetite, (3) and greedy (5) Soul.

1. Translated **pleasure** (soul-nehphesh) Deuteronomy 23:24
2. Translated **lust** (soul-nehphesh) Psalm 78:18
3. Translated **appetite** (soul-nehphesh) Proverbs 23:2. Ecclesiastes 6:7
4. Translated **greedy** (soul-nehphesh) Isaiah 56:11
5. Translated **soul** (*Nehphesh*) 13 things the "soul" (person) does
  1. The soul **dried away**, Numbers 11:6
  2. The soul **lusts**, Deuteronomy 12:15; 12:21; 14:26
  3. The soul **longs to eat flesh**, Deuteronomy 12:20
  4. The soul **lusts after**, Deuteronomy 12:20
  5. The soul **desires**, Deuteronomy 14:26; 1 Samuel 2:16
  6. The soul **loathes**, Deuteronomy 21:5
  7. The soul **refused**, Job 6:7
  8. The soul **abhorred**, Job 33:20; Psalm 107:18
  9. The soul **hunger**, Proverbs 6:30
  10. The soul **satisfying**, Proverbs 13:25
  11. The soul **empty**, Isaiah 29:8
  12. The soul **has appetite**, Isaiah 29:8
  13. The soul **desired figs**, Micah 7:1

#### **THE SOUL (PERSON-NEHPHESH) CAN BE HUNGRY, HAVE AN APPETITE, BE THIRSTY, EAT MEAT**

*"Men do not despise a thief if he steals to satisfy himself (nehphesh—living being) when he is hungry"* (Proverbs 6:30). An example of how well the translators hid the fact that this is the same word that they translated soul in other places when they did not want you to see it.

*"I will set my face against that soul (nehphesh—living being) that eats blood, and will cut him off from among his people"* (Leviticus 17:10).

*"And you shall say, I will eat flesh, because your soul (nehphesh—living being) desires to eat flesh; you may eat flesh, after all the desire of your soul (nehphesh—living being)"* (Deuteronomy 12:20). An immaterial something eating material flesh!

*"And it shall be as when a hungry man dreams and, behold, he eats; but he awakes, and his **soul** (nehphesh—living being) is empty; or as when a thirsty man dreams, and behold, he drinks; but he awakes, and, behold, he is faint, and his **soul** (nehphesh—living being) has appetite" (Isaiah 29:8).*

### **SOUL IS THE LIFE, NOT AN IMMORTAL SOMETHING**

*"You shall not eat flesh with its **life** (nehphesh—living being)" (Genesis 9:4).*

*"For the **life** (nehphesh—living being) of the flesh" (Leviticus 17:11; 17:14).*

*"Those who seek my **life** (nehphesh—living being)" (Psalm 38:12).*

*"For those who sought the Child's **life** (soul-psukee) are dead" (Matthew 2:20).*

Many more passage that show that both nehphesh and psukee are the life of the person or animal, not in immortal something that has it's own life and lives after the person is dead.

### **IF A SOUL CAN DIE IT CANNOT BE IMMORTAL**

**Can whatever is intended by the Hebrew word "nehphesh" die? The Bible says over 320 times that the nehphesh (soul):**

- 1. Can die**
- 2. Can be killed by man**
- 3. Or that it is already dead**

If it can die, then whatever "nehphesh" is translated into **IS** something that can die. **If the many words that "nehphesh" is translated into is something that can die, then the soul cannot be immortal, and it can die.** To say that "nehphesh" (soul) is immortal and cannot die makes the Bible be wrong repeatedly. If the soul (nehphesh) is immortal and cannot die, the writers of the Bible did not know it.

### **SOULS CAN DIE, CAN BE DEAD**

(1). **Souls** (nehpheshs) **can die** Numbers 23:10, Ezekiel 18:4, 20, Joshua 11:11. *"They smote (killed) all the **souls** (nehphesh)" King James Version. "And they struck every **person** (nehpheshs) who was in it with the edge of the sword, utterly destroying them; there was no one left who breathed" New American Standard Bible. Can an immortal soul can die or be utterly destroy? **Not only does the Bible not say the soul is immortal, it denies it by saying often that the soul can die or be killed or is already dead.***

(2). **Souls** (nehpheshs) **can be murdered.** Deuteronomy 12:23; Numbers 35:11-15.

(3). **Souls** (nehpheshs) **can be killed** Leviticus 24:17. An immortal soul can be killed? *"Kills any **person**" (soul-nehphesh) Numbers 35:11, 15, 30, 31.*

(4) *"Let us not take his **life**" (soul-nehphesh) Genesis 37:21.*

(5). **Souls** (nehpheshs) **can be smote with the sword and utterly destroyed** Joshua 11:11.

(6). **Souls** (nehpheshs) **can be slain.** An immortal soul can be slain? Deuteronomy 27:25.

(7). **Souls** (nehpheshs) **can be destroyed.** An immortal soul can be destroyed? Leviticus 23:30.

(8). **Souls** (nehpheshs) **can be taken away** 1 Kings 19:4.

(9). **Souls** (nehpheshs) **can be sought to kill it** Jeremiah 44:30.

(10). **Souls** (nehpheshs) **cannot be kept alive.** An immortal soul that cannot die but it cannot be kept alive? Psalm 22:29.

(11). **Souls** (nehpheshs) **have blood and can bleed.** "The blood of the souls of the poor" Jeremiah 2:34.

(12). *"Let us not **take** his **life** (soul-nehphesh)" Genesis 37:21.*

(13). *"**Life** (soul-nehphesh) for **life** (soul-nehphesh) Immortal soul for immortal soul?" Exodus 21:23.*

(14). *"Any **dead body** (soul-nehphesh)" Leviticus 21:11.*

(15). *"That **person** (soul-nehphesh) will I **destroy**" Leviticus 23:30.*

(16). *"And if a man **takes** the **life** (soul-nehphesh) of any human being" Leviticus 24:17. Does anyone believe a person can take an immortal soul of any human being?*



- (17). "And he that smites any man mortally shall be put to death. And he that smites a beast mortally shall make it good, **life** (soul–nehphesh) for **life** (soul nehphesh) (soul for soul?)" Leviticus 24:18.
- (18). "Because of a **dead person** (soul–nehphesh)" Numbers 5:2.
- (19). "He shall not go near to a **dead person** (soul–nehphesh)" Numbers 6:6.
- (20). "Because of a **dead person** (soul–nehphesh)" Numbers 6:11.
- (21). "Unclean because of the **dead person** (soul–nehphesh)" Numbers 9:6, 7.
- (23). "Because of a **dead person** (soul–nehphesh)" Numbers 9:10.
- (23). "The one who touches the **corpse** of any **person** (soul–nehphesh)" Numbers 19:11.
- (24). "Anyone who touches a **corpse, the body** (soul–nehphesh) of a man who has died" Numbers 19:13. How could anyone touch the corpse of something that has no substance and cannot die? "And the **soul** (nehphesh) that touches it" (Numbers 19:22). By today's definition of soul, (1) an immaterial something is dead and touched by man (2) and an immaterial soul touches a dead person.
- (25). "Whosoever has **killed any person** (soul–nehphesh)" Numbers 31:19.
- (26). "**The manslayer who has killed any person** (soul–nehphesh)" Numbers 35:11.
- (27). "Anyone who **kills a person** (soul–nehphesh) unintentionally may flee there" Numbers 35:15.
- (28). "If anyone **kills a person** (soul–nehphesh)" Numbers 35:30.
- (29). "And **take his life** (soul–nehphesh)" Deuteronomy 19:6.
- (30). "And strikes him so that **he** (soul–nehphesh) **dies**" Deuteronomy 19:11.
- (31). "**Life** (soul–nehphesh) for **life** (soul–nehphesh), eye for eye, tooth for tooth" Deuteronomy 19:21.
- (32). "A man rises against his neighbor and **murders him** (soul–nehphesh)" Deuteronomy 22:26.
- (33). "Cursed be he who takes a bride to **slay an innocent person** (soul–nehphesh)" Deuteronomy 27:25.
- (34). "And **deliver our lives** (souls–nehpheshes) **from death**" Joshua 2:13.
- (35). "Our **life** (soul–nehphesh) for yours" Joshua 2:13. Not, "Our immortal souls for your immortal souls."
- (36). "And they smote all the **souls** (souls–nehpheshes) that were therein with the edge of the sword, **utterly destroying them; there were none left that breathed**" Joshua 11:11.
- (37). "He **utterly destroyed them and all the souls** (souls–nehpheshes) that were therein; he left none remaining" Joshua 10:28.
- (38). "And he smote it with the edge of the sword, and all the **souls** (souls–nehpheshes) that were therein; he left none remaining in it" Joshua 10:30.
- (39). "And all the **souls** (souls–nehpheshes) that were therein" Joshua 10:32.
- (40). "And all the **souls** (souls–nehpheshes) that were therein **he utterly destroyed that day**" Joshua 10:35.
- (41). "But he **utterly destroyed it, and all the souls** (souls–nehpheshes) that were therein" Joshua 10:37.
- (42). "And he captured it and its king and all its cities, and they smote them with the edge of the sword, and **utterly destroyed all the souls** (souls–nehpheshes) that were therein" Joshua 10:39. Can immortal souls be utterly destroyed with the sword?
- (43). "Who **kills any person** (soul–nehphesh)" Joshua 20:9. Not, "Who kills any immortal soul that cannot be killed."
- (44). "That **kills any person** (soul–nehphesh)" Joshua 20:3.
- (45). "That his **soul** (soul–nehphesh) was **vexed to death**" Judges 16:16 "**annoyed to death**" New American Standard Version. We say, "He worried me to dead."
- (46). "Let **me** (soul–nehphesh) **die**" Judges 16:30. "Let my soul that cannot die, die anyway?"
- (47). "And you **lose your life** (soul–nehphesh), with the **lives** (souls–nehphesh) of your household" Judges 18:25.
- (48). "If you do **not save your life** (soul–nehphesh) tonight" 1 Samuel 19:11.
- (49). "The **death of all the persons** (souls–nehpheshes) of your father's house" 1 Samuel 22:22.
- (50). "He that **seeks my life** (soul–nehphesh) seeks your **life** (soul–nehphesh)" 1 Samuel 22:23.
- (51). "He is **seeking my life** (soul–nehphesh)" 1 Samuel 20:1.
- (52). "And David saw that Saul was come out to **seek his life** (soul–nehphesh)" 1 Samuel 23:15.
- (53). "You are **lying in wait for my soul** (soul–nehphesh) to take it" 1 Samuel 24:11.

(54). "To pursue you and to **seek your soul** (soul–nehphesh 1 Samuel 25:29 also (55) 2 Samuel 4:8, (56) 2 Samuel 16:11, (57) 1. Kings 19:10, (58) 1 Kings 19:14, (59) Psalm 35:4, (60) Psalm 38:12, (61) Psalm 35:13, (62) Psalm 40:14, (63) Psalm 40:15, (64) Jeremiah 40:14, (65) Jeremiah 40:15.

(66). "Deliver him that smote his brother, **that we may kill him for the life** (soul–nehphesh) of his brother whom he slew" 2 Samuel 14:7.

(67). "Who today have **saved your life** (soul–nehphesh) and the **lives** (souls–nehpheshes) of your sons and daughter, the **lives** (soul–nehphesh) of your wives, and the **lives** (souls–nehpheshes) of your concubines" 2 Samuel 19:5.

(68). "Have you **asked for the life** (soul–nehphesh) of your enemies" 1 Kings 3:11.

(69). "Prolong my **life** (soul–nehphesh)" Job 6:11. Prolong the life of an immortal soul?

(70). "For himself that he might **die**, and said, It is enough; now, O Lord, **take my life** (soul–nehphesh)" 1 Kings 19:4.

(71). "A man that is laden with the **blood of any person** (soul–nehphesh) shall flee unto the pit; let no man stay him" Proverbs 28:17.

(72). "The **blood of the souls** (souls–nehpheshes) of the innocent poor" Jeremiah 2:34. An immaterial, invisible, part of a person that has no substance had blood!

(73). "Ammon has sent Ishmael the son of Nethaniah to **take your life** (soul–nehphesh)...wherefore should he **take your life** (soul–nehphesh)" Jeremiah 40:14-15.

(74). "**To slay the souls** (souls–nehpheshes) that should not die and to save the **souls** (souls–nehpheshes) alive **that should not live**" Ezekiel 13:19. If the soul were something that is immortal and cannot die, this passage is completely nonsense.

(75). "The **soul** (soul–nehphesh) who sins **will die**" Ezekiel 18:4.

(76). Ezekiel 18:20

1. "The **SOUL** (nehphesh) that sins, it **SHALL DIE**" King James Version.
2. "The **PERSON** (soul–nehphesh) who sins **SHALL DIE**" New Revised Standard Version.
3. "The **PERSON** (soul–nehphesh) who sins **WILL DIE**" New American Standard Version, and New Revised English Bible.
4. "It is the **PERSON** (soul–nehphesh) who sins that **WILL DIE**" The Revised English Bible.
5. "The **PERSON** (soul–nehphesh) who sins is the one who **WILL DIE**" New Century Version, Holman, and Christian Standard Bible.
6. "It is for a **MAN'S** (soul–nehphesh) own sins that he **WILL DIE**" The Living Bible.
7. "The **PERSON** (soul–nehphesh) who sins will be the one who **DIES**" New Living Translation.
8. "Only **THOSE** (soul–nehphesh) who sin will be **PUT TO DEATH**" Contemporary English Version.
9. "Only **THE ONE** (soul–nehphesh) who sins **SHALL DIE**" The New American Bible (Catholic), and Today's New International Version.
10. "The **PERSON** (soul–nehphesh) who sins **WILL DIE**" God Word Translation.
11. "**PEOPLE** (soul–nehphesh) **WILL DIE** because of their own sins" New International Reader's Version.

This is a person dying (being put to death) for a sin under the Old Testament law, but is almost always used referring to a part of a person that cannot die by those who believe a soul cannot die. **When this is misapply to some inter part of a person, as is often is, then this is an undeniable statement that their immortal inter part of a person that they say cannot die will die if it sins, and that the soul will not have everlasting life with torment.** This is definitely not what they wanted, but what they made in their attempt to make the soul immortal. If "soul" means "an immortal inter part of a person that cannot die," then James said, "Shall save an immortal inter part of man, which cannot die, from death" James 5:20. This theology makes nonsense of the Bible.

The divine sentence, "The soul that sins, it shall die" has been revised to say, "The soul that sins, it shall live eternally in torment." Not only must this be changed from "die"

to "eternal life" but after making the change then torment must be added; "the soul that sins, it shall live forever being eternally torment by God." To make it teach what many want it to teach, first, God's word must be changed and then added to.

"*Shall die*" in verse four is in contrast to "*shall surely live*" in verse nine. It is life or death of a living person under the Law that is being spoken of, not two kinds of life after death.

(77). "*By shedding blood and **destroying lives** (nehphesh—living being)"* Ezekiel 22:27.

(78). "*Like a roaring lion ravening the prey: they have **devoured souls** (nehphesh—living being)"* Ezekiel 22:25.

(79) "*In whose hand is the **life** (nehphesh—living being) of every living thing"* (Job 12:10). "*The **soul** of every **living thing**"* King James Version.

(80). "*He did not spare their **soul** (nehphesh—living being) from death, but gave over their life to the plague, and smote all the firstborn in Egypt"* (Psalm 78:50).

(81). **IN OVER 320 (over one third) OF THE ABOUT 870 TIMES THAT SOUL (nehphesh) IS USED:**

- **The soul is already dead.**
- **The soul can die, and can be killed.**
- **The soul can be sought to be killed.**
- **The soul can be affected.**
- **The soul can be smote (killed).**
- **The soul can be cut off.**
- **The soul can be murdered.**
- **The soul can be delivered from death.**
- **The soul can be buried.**

**In most of these passages the translators of the King James and other translations have hidden from the readers that the very thing they believe to be immortal and cannot die does die by picking when they translated nehphesh into soul and when the picked when to translate "nehphesh" into "life," "person" and many other words, but even in the King James Version there are many passages which say souls (nehpheshs) can and do die.**

#### **SOULS CAN BE KILLED BY OTHERS**

- "*We feared greatly for our **soul** (nehphesh—living being) because of you"* (Joshua 9:24).
- "*All the men who were seeking your **soul** (nehphesh—living being) are dead"* (Exodus 4:19).
- "*Saul had come out to seek his **life** (nehphesh—living being) while David was in the wilderness"* (1 Samuel 23:15).
- They had to flee to save their **souls** (nehphesh—living being) (2 King 7:7), or their **souls** (nehphesh—living being) would be utterly destroyed "*with the edge of the sword*" or other weapons (Joshua 10:27; 10:30; 10:32; 10:35, 10:37; 10:39).
- "*And deliver our **lives** (nehphesh—living being) from death"* (Joshua 2:13).

#### **SOULS CAN DIE FOR LACK OF FOOD**

- Not only could their souls (nehphesh—living beings) be killed by their enemies, but their souls (nehphesh—living beings) could also die for lack of food (Lamentations 1:11; Numbers 11:6).

## SOULS CAN EAT FOOD

- Leviticus 7:18; 7:20; 7:25; 7:27 and others.
- Also, Genesis 9:4; 9:5; 12:13; 17:14; 19:17; 19:19; 19:20; 32:30; 32:31; 35:18; 37:21; Exodus 21:23; 30:12; 30:15; 31:14; Leviticus 7:21; 17:11; 17:12; 17:14; 19:8; 21:1; 21:11; 22:3; 24:17; 24:18; Numbers 5:2; 6:6; 9:6; 9:7; 9:10; 9:18; 19:11; 19:13; 19:20; 23:10; 31:19; 35:11; 35:15; 35:30; 35:31; Deuteronomy 12:23; Joshua 11:11; 20:3; 20:9; Judges 5:28; 12:3; 16:16; 18:25; Ruth; 4:15; 1 Samuel 1:19; 1:20; 1:23; 23:15; 23:20; 25:29; 28:9; 28:21; 2 Samuel 4:8; 14:7; 16:11; 19:5; 19:6; 1 Kings 1:12; 1:29; 3:11; 17:21; 17:22; 19:10; 19:14; 20:32; 2 Kings 1:13; 19:24; 1 Chronicles 11:19; 2 Chronicles 11:11; Esther 7:7; Job 13:14; 30:16; 33:18; 33:22; 36:14; Psalm 7:2; 17:13; 22:20; 22:21; 22:29; 22:30; 31:13; 33:19; 35:4; 35:17; 38:12; 38:13; 70:2; 70:3; 71:10; Proverbs 1:19; 7:23; 12:10; 13:3; 23:14; Isaiah 10:18; 43:4; Jeremiah 2:34; 4:30; 34:20-21; 38:2; 38:16; 39:18; 40:15; 44:30; 45:5; 49:37; Ezekiel 17:17; 18:4; 18:20; 18:27; 22:25; 22:27; Jonah 4:3; 4:6.

Summary: **The "nehphesh (soul)" of the Old Testament is an earthly being, man, animal, or sea creature, both living or dead. It can die, it can be dead, be killed, be sought to kill, be smote, die from a lack of food or water, be cut off, be murdered, be delivered from death, be born, live, sorrow, eat, drink water, desire, be discontented, be grieved, be bound with a bond, be affected, loathes, lust, have anguish, etc. Not one of the about 870 times that nehphesh is used does it have reference to an invisible, immaterial something in a person that has no substance and cannot die. Nehphesh in the Old Testament and psukee in the New Testament are together used about 967 times with over one-third being associated with the death of the soul (person). Some (nehpheshs–souls) are dead. Some are dying. Some are in fear of death. Some have those who are trying to kill them. Some are saved from death, etc. **On the other hand, in the 976 times soul is used, not one time is the soul said to be deathless or immortal.****

**In about thirty-two passages souls (nehpheshs) are spoken of as being killed by man** “*And he that kills any man (nehphesh) shall surely be put to death. And he that kills a beast (nehphesh) shall make it good; beast (nehphesh) for beast (nehphesh)*” Leviticus 25:17-18. Nehphesh–soul is used four times in the Hebrew, but because of the bias of the translators not one time is it translated soul in the King James Version. They changed soul into beast to deliberately hide from their readers that animals, the same as men, are souls—living beings that can and do die. (See Joshua 10:28; 30; 32; 35; 37; 39; Deuteronomy 27:25; Leviticus 24:17-18).

**In about thirteen passages souls (nehpheshs) of men are said to be actually dead** (see Numbers 6:6; Leviticus 21:11). In many of these passages, the King James Version and others translated nehphesh as life or body; and the English reader cannot see that animals are **souls** (are living beings), and that man kills souls of both men and animals, and sometimes souls are actually dead. Under the Law anyone that touched a dead body was unclean. “*Dead body*” (nehphesh) Leviticus 21:11 “*Dead body*” (nehphesh) Numbers 6:6. Corpses are dead souls, and anyone who came in contact with a dead soul was unclean.

**Most of the times when it is translated “soul,” even those who believe in a part of a person that lives after death and before the resurrection admits it is not used to**

**mean a deathless immortal something that is in a person, something that will live without the person after the person is dead.** The whole person dies unto the resurrection (Ezekiel 18:20; Psalm 22:29; 33:18-19; Matthew 10:28; Matthew 16:26; James 5:20). Not just the person's body.

This clearly shows that the meaning of the Hebrew word nehphesh is something that is not immortal, and that it can die, or that it can be already is dead. There is no other word in the Bible which could be translated into Plato's immortal soul; therefore, the translators had to use this word and hide, the best they could, the fact that nehphesh can and does die.

Of the hundreds of times Nehphesh is used in the Old Testament only five are used in the same passage as sheol. Of these five the Kings James Version sheol is translated Hell three times (Psalm 16:10; 86:13; Proverbs 23:14). The other two they had to translate grave (Psalm 30:3; 89:48). In all five the nehphesh (soul-life) is delivered from or brought up from sheol (grave). What is said in all five is as far from today's teaching on Hell as it is possible to be. The New International Version translates sheol into grave in all five passages, and translates nehphesh into, (1) me, (2) himself, (3) me, (4) me, (5) and soul.

The only way for the translators to hide that the nehphesh of the Old Testament can die, bleed, be dead was by rightly translating it as something mortal as it is. In most translations nehphesh is sometimes translated to be immortal, sometime as mortal, often in the same passages. How could it be known when it was mortal and when it was immortal? The only answer is that the translators were trying to put Plato's immortal soul in the Bible by mistranslating when they could, but found nehphesh many times would not make sense if translated into something immortal and deathless.

Not one time is nehphesh an immortal something, but it is translated mortally in the King James Version. "*And smite him mortally (nehphesh)*" (Deuteronomy 19:11).

=====

The Companion Bible, Appendix 13 says nehphesh (life-soul) is used:

- Of the lower animals (nehphesh-soul) in 22 passages
- Of the lower animals and man (nehphesh-soul) in 7 passages
- Of man (nehphesh-soul) as an individual person in 53 passages
- Of man (nehphesh-soul) as exercising certain powers or performing certain acts in 96 passages
- Of man (nehphesh-soul) as possessing animal appetites and desires in 92 passages
- Of man (nehphesh-soul) as exercising mental faculties and manifesting certain feelings, affection and passions in 231 passages
- Of man (nehphesh-soul) being cut off by God and as being killed or slain by man in 54 passages
- Of man (nehphesh-soul) as being mortal, subject to death of various kinds, from which it can be saved and delivered and life prolonged in 243 passages
- Of man (nehphesh-soul) as actually dead in 13 passages

=====

Just one of the many examples of the absurdity of the translations of nehphesh in the King James Version with the meaning of "soul" as it is used today, an invisible, no substance something in a person that no one has ever seen or can see that is immortal and cannot die. "*For mine enemies speak against me; and they that lay wait for my soul (nehphesh) take counsel together*" (Psalm 70:10). How could anyone lay in wait (ambush) for an undying invisible something that is now in a person that no one can see? How could anyone kill something that cannot die even if they could see it?

*"Deliver my soul"* (nehphesh) Psalm 17:13 in today's English would be *"Save my life"* (nehphesh).

- *"They also that seek after my life"* (soul-nehphesh). Psalm 38:12. *"That seeks after my soul"* (nehphesh). Psalm 40:14. Both soul and life are from the same word (nehphesh). Why were the translators so inconsistent; life and soul, according to the theology they believed, are two completely different things, yet they translated both from the same Hebrew word many times.
- *"They smote all the souls"* (nehphesh) Joshua 11:11 in today's English would be, "They killed all the people." "Whosoever kills any **person**" (soul-nehphesh) Joshua 20:9. Again, both soul and person are translated from the same Hebrew word; they could smite (kill) all the persons, but to smite (kill) all the deathless souls would be completely impossible, but the King James Version says they did the impossible.
- *"They that lay wait for my soul"* (nehphesh) in today's English would be, "They that are waiting in ambush for my **life**" Psalm 70:10.

Many more times *"soul"* (nehphesh) would only make sense if translated *"life."* To apply today's meaning, *"an undying invisible something that is now in a person"* makes many passages be total nonsense. Today's meaning of *"soul"* is very different from the meaning of nehphesh in Biblical times, which makes *"soul"* be a mistranslation. When anyone reads the Bible, and reads *"soul,"* and knows only what the word *"soul"* means today, they cannot understand what God said. Many English translations use *"soul"* and *"person"* interchangeable. The Revised Standard uses *"person"* frequently where the King James used *"soul."* The problem is that most English readers would not know that when the translators said a *"person"* died, that the translators are hiding the fact that *"person"* (soul-nehphesh) is the same word that is translated *"soul"* in many places. Why did some translators do this? Was it because they did not believe an immortal *"soul"* can die, but a person can die? If the *"soul"* (nehphesh) dies, it would not be immortal; therefore, they were forced to use *"person"* or *"life"* in many places to hide the fact from you that the nehphesh can die. **The truth is that they were trying to put "soul" with today's meaning in the Bible despite the fact that it is not.** If they had been consistent in translating, they would not have been able to add the doctrine of an undying soul in the Bible.

*"The Lord of hosts has sworn by Himself"* (soul-nehphesh) (Jeremiah 51:14). By His own being or person. God *"could swear by no one greater, He swore by Himself"* (psukee-soul) (Hebrews 6:13). Not even the King James translators wanted God to have an invisible inter part that would live after the rest of Him was dead. God's nehphesh and man's nehphesh are their being, person, not an invisible something that is in God or in a person.

**All the Old Testament words, which are translated life, spirit, breath, or soul, are all used referring to both persons and animals. Every word that is used to prove a person has an immortal soul or an immortal spirit would also prove all breathing creatures have an in immortal soul or spirit if they proved a person does.**

(1) Nehphesh/soul-life-living being is used to describe all living beings.

- **Animal, birds, reptiles, and insects** have this same nehphesh (soul-life) that a person has. Sea creatures, birds (Genesis 1:20), every living creature that moves

in water or on land are a living soul (Genesis 1:21). Every beast, bird, and insect is a soul-life (nehphesh—a living being).

- *"Man became a living being"* Genesis 2:7. See Genesis 2:19; 9:4; 9:10; 9:12; 9:15-16. Note: The word "soul" as it is used in today's English (an immortal no substance being that can never die that is in a person) is not the meaning of nehphesh.

**(2) Nshahmah/breath** is also used to describe all living being/breath of life; all living things that breathes (Used 24 times).

- **Used to describe man, "Breathed into his nostrils the BREATH of life"** Genesis 2:7; 1 Kings 17:17; Job 27:3.
- **Used to describe man and animals**, both man and animals have the same nshahmah (breath of life-spirit).
  - *"All in whose nostrils was the BREATH (nshahmah) of the spirit of life, of all that was on the dry land, died"* Genesis 7:22. All living being, man, and animals.
  - *"But of the cities of these peoples, that Jehovah your God gives you for an inheritance, you shall save alive nothing that BREATHS (nshahmah)"* Deuteronomy 20:16. All living being, both man and animals.
  - *"So Joshua smote all the land, the hill-country, and the South, and the lowland, and the slopes, and all their kings: he left none remaining, but he utterly destroyed all that BREATHED (nshahmah)"* Joshua 10:40. All living being, both man and animals that had life, that breathed (nshahmah) were killed.
  - *"And they smote all the souls that were therein with the edge of the sword, utterly destroying them; there were none left that BREATHED (nshahmah)"* Joshua 11:11. All living being, both man and animals that breathed were killed.
  - Also, Joshua 11:14; 1 Kings 15:29; Job 34:14; Psalm 150:6.

Not one of the 24 times nshahmah is used says anything about a part of a person that is immortal. As nahahmah is translated in the New International Version.

1. Genesis 2:7 *"Breathed into his nostrils the **breath** (nshahmuh) of life."*
2. Genesis 7:22 *"Everything on dry land that had the **breath of life** (nshahmuh) in its nostrils died."*
3. Deuteronomy 20:16 *"Do not leave alive anything that **breathes** (nshahmuh)."*
4. Joshua 10:40 *"He totally destroyed all who **breathed** (nshahmuh)."*
5. Joshua 11:11 *"They totally destroyed them, not sparing anything that **breathed** (nshahmuh)."*
6. Joshua 11:14 *"But all the people they put to the sword until they completely destroyed them, not sparing anyone that **breathed** (nshahmuh)."*
7. 2 Samuel 22:16 *"At the blast of **breath** (nshahmuh) from his nostrils."*
8. 1 Kings 15:29 *"He did not leave Jeroboam anyone that **breathed** (nshahmuh), but destroyed them all."*
9. 1 Kings 17:17 *"He grew worse and worse, and finally stopped **breathing** (nshahmuh)."*
10. Job 4:9 (Hebrew dualism in Job—the same thing said in two different ways).
  - a. *"At the **breath** (ruach) of God they are destroyed:*
  - b. *At the **blast** (nshahmuh) of his anger they perish."*
11. Job 26:4
  - a. *"Who has helped you utter these words?*
  - b. *And whose **spirit** (nshahmuh) spoke from your mouth?"*
12. Job 27:3
  - a. *"As long as I have life (ruach) within me,*
  - b. *The **breath** (nshahmuh) of God in my nostrils."*
13. Job 32:8
  - a. *"But it is the spirit (ruach) in a man,*

- b. *The **breath** (nshahmuh) of the Almighty.*"
- 14. Job 33:4
  - a. *"The Spirit of God made me;*
  - b. *The **breath** (nshahmuh) of the Almighty gives me life."*
- 15. Job 34:14-15 *"If it was his intention and he withdrew his spirit and **breath** (nshahmuh).*
  - *All mankind would perish together,*
  - *And man would return to the dust."*
- 16. Job 37:10
  - a. *"The tempest comes out from its chamber, the cold from the driving winds.*
  - b. *The **breath** (nshahmuh) of God produces ice, and the broad waters become frozen."*
- 17. Psalm 18:15 *"O Lord, at the **blast** (nshahmuh) of breath from your nostrils."*
- 18. Psalm 150:6 *"Let everything that has **breath** (nshahmuh) praise the Lord."*
- 19. Proverbs 20:27 *"The lamp of the Lord searches the **spirit** (nshahmuh) of a man; it searches out his inmost being."*
- 20. Isaiah 2:22 *"Stop trusting in man, who has but a **breath** (nshahmuh) in his nostrils."*
- 21. Isaiah 30:33 *"The **breath** (nshahmuh) of the Lord, like a stream of burning sulfur, sets it ablaze."*
- 22. Isaiah 42:5 *"Who gives **breath** (nshahmuh) to its people, and life to those who walk on it."*
- 23. Isaiah 57:16 *"The **breath** (nshahmuh) of man that I have created." "Spirit" in King James Version.*
- 24. Daniel 10:17 *"My strength is gone and I can hardly **breathe** (nshahmuh)."*
  - Of the twenty-four times nshahmuh is in the Hebrew, it is translated soul only three times in the King James Version, Job 26:4, Proverbs 20:27; Isaiah 57:16.

**(3) Ruach/spirit-breath:** Is used of:

- **God** (Exodus 15:8; 2 Samuel 22:16; Isaiah 4:4)
- **Spirit of the Lord** (Zephaniah 4:6)
- **Heavenly being** (Psalm 104:4)

**(4) Ruach/spirit-breath:** Is also used to describe all earthly living beings.

- **All flesh, birds, cattle, beasts, and every creeping thing** - all have the same spirit (ruach) as man (Genesis 7:22).
- **Man and beasts, "I am bringing the flood of water upon the earth, to destroy all flesh in which is the BREATH (ruach) of life, from under heaven; everything that is on the earth shall perish"** (Genesis 6:17). Also Ecclesiastes 3:19
- **Man** (Ecclesiastes 12:5-7; Psalm 104:29) See Genesis 6:17; 7:15; 54:27; Job 4:9

Ruach and nshahmuh have very near if not the same meaning.

- *"All in whose nostrils was the **breath** (nshahmuh) of the spirit of life, died"* (Genesis 7:22).
- *"To destroy all flesh in which is the **breath** (ruach) of life"* (Genesis 6:17).

Both are used in Hebrew dualism in Job three times as two ways of saying the same thing (Job 4:9; 27:3; 32:8).

- Job 4:9:
  - *"By the breath (ruach) of God they perish,*
  - *And by the blast (nshahmuh) of His anger they come to an end"*
- Job 27:3:
  - *"All the while my breath (nshahmuh) is in me,*
  - *And the spirit (ruach) of God is in my nostrils."*
- Job 32:8:
  - *"But it is a spirit (ruach) in man,*
  - *And the breath (nshahmuh) of the Almighty gives them understanding."*

The above is an example of the many times the two seem to be used interchangeable and they are both the breath or life of a living being that is being spoken of. Nshahmuh is limited to the air or breath of the mouth of any breathing being; ruach also means any



breathing being but has a much broader use in that it is used of wind and any air movement. Neither the breath (nshahmuh) of a person, or the breath (ruach) of a person is not an immortal entity added to the person that has life in itself apart from the life of the person any more than the breath (nshahmuh) of God, or the breath (ruach) of God is an entity that has life in itself apart from God.

**Ruach is translated sixteen different ways  
In the King James Version**

Of about 389 times ruach is used in the Old Testament it is translated wind about 90 times, breath 28 times, blast 4 times, air, windy, tempest, whirlwind, tempest, and breath. Both ruach and nshahmuh are basically translated with the same words, both have something to do with the breath or air without which there would be no life; in Genesis 2:7 it was when God breathed into Adam's nostrils the breath of life (nshahmah) that Adam became a living being.

There is no suggestion in any one of the many times ruach is used referring both to mankind and to animals that ruach is an immaterial, immortal something that has its own life and will live after the death of the person or animal that it is in.

- BREATH (ruach-spirit)
  - "All in whose nostrils was the BREATH (ruach) of life" (Genesis 6:17; 7:15).
  - "By the BREATH (ruach) of his mouth" (Genesis 6:17; Psalm 104:29, Job 15:30).
  - "By the BREATH (ruach-spirit) of his mouth" (Job 15:30).
  - "All in whose nostrils was the BREATH (ruach-spirit) of life" (Genesis 7:22).
  - "To destroy all flesh in which is the BREATH (ruach-spirit) of life" (Genesis 6:17).
  - "So they went into the ark to Noah, by twos of all flesh in which was the BREATH (ruach-spirit) of life" (Genesis 7:15).
  - "No BREATH (ruach-spirit) in them" (Jeremiah 10:14). Why not, "No SPIRIT (ruach-spirit) in them" or "Takes away their SPIRIT (ruach-spirit)" (Psalm 104:29)? How did the translators know when the same word was wind, breath, spirit, blast, air, mind, courage, cool, or anger? **How are those who read their translation to know that these are all the same word in the Hebrew?** Idols are described as not having breath (ruach) (Habakkuk 2:19) which means idols have no life just as a person without breath has no life.
  - "Every goldsmith...his molten images are deceitful, and there is no BREATH (ruach-spirit) in them" (Jeremiah 51:17).
  - "Takes away their BREATH (ruach-spirit)" (Psalm 104:29).
  - "As one dies so dies the other; indeed, they all have the same BREATH (ruach-spirit) and there is no advantage for man over beast" (Ecclesiastes 3:19).
- WIND (ruach-spirit)
  - "God made a WIND (ruach-spirit) to pass over" (Genesis 8:1).
  - "Like the chaff, which the WIND (ruach-spirit) drives" (Psalm 1:4).
  - "You did blow with your WIND (ruach-spirit)" (Exodus 15:10).
  - "Clouds and WIND (ruach-spirit) without rain" (Proverbs 25:14).
  - "My escape from the WINDY (ruach-spirit) storm" (Psalm 55:8).
  - "A WHIRLWIND (ruach-spirit) came out of the north" (Ezekiel 1:4).
  - "A destroying WIND (ruach-spirit)" (Jeremiah 51:1).
  - "A strong WIND (ruach-spirit)" (Job 8:2).
  - "An horrible TEMPEST (ruach-spirit)" (Psalm 11:6).
  - "You shall scatter in the WIND (ruach-spirit)" (Ezekiel 5:2).
  - "An east WIND (ruach-spirit)" (Exodus 10:13).
  - "A mighty strong west WIND (ruach-spirit)" (Exodus 10:19).

- Psalm 1:4, Exodus 15:10
- WINDY “*My escape from the WINDY (ruach) storm*” (Psalm 55:8).
- WHIRLWIND “*A WHIRLWIND (ruach) came out of the north*” (Ezekiel 1:4).
- TEMPEST “*An horrible TEMPEST (ruach)*” (Psalm 116).
- SPIRIT (ruach-spirit). Why was the same word translated  
     “*By the **BREATH** (ruach) of his mouth*” (Job 15:30), and then  
     “*And the **SPIRIT** (ruach) of God in my nostrils*”(Job 27:3)?

Were they saying God has an “immaterial invisible” (Vine) something in Him that can exist after His death, as we are told that mankind has? There is no possible way that the translators could have known when the same word (ruach) was breath of any mortal being, and when it was an immortal deathless something that does not breath air; the two meaning are nothing alike. “*You take away their **breath (ruach)**, they die, and return to their dust. You send forth your **spirit (ruach)**, they are created: and you renew the face of the earth*” (Psalm 105:29-30). The spirit as it is used today cannot die; therefore, this ruach could not be translated spirit, but when the earth is renewed by new life, the translated give this new life a spirit (ruach), not just breath (ruach).

- Holman Christian Standard Bible “*When You hide Your face, they are terrified; when You take away their **breath (ruach)**, they die and return to the dust. When You send Your **breath (ruach)**, they are created, and You renew the face of the earth.*”
- Amplified Bible “*When You hide Your face, they are troubled and dismayed; when You take away their **breath (ruach)**, they die and return to their dust. When You send forth Your Spirit and give them **breath (ruach)**, they are created, and You replenish the face of the ground.*”
- Common English Bible “*But when you hide your face, they are terrified; when you take away their **breath (ruach)**, they die and return to dust. When you let loose your **breath (ruach)**, they are created, and you make the surface of the ground brand-new again.*”
- New Century Version “*When you turn away from them, they become frightened. When you take away their **breath (ruach)**, they die and turn to dust. When you **breathe (ruach)** on them, they are created, and you make the land new again.*”
- Holman Christian Standard Bible “*When You hide Your face, they are terrified; when You take away their **breath (ruach)**, they die and return to the dust. When You send Your **breath (ruach)**, they are created, and You renew the face of the earth.*”

Does the number of times “Spirit” is used in the difference translations show the scholars that translated them were easing away from the King James Version?

- 236 times in King James Version
- 221 times in New American Standard Bible
- 193 times in New International Version
- 167 times in New Living Translation
- 79 times in Contemporary English Version
- 131 times in The Message
  - “*And the **SPIRIT** (ruach) of God in my nostrils*” (Job 27:3)
  - “***SPIRIT** (ruach) of God*” (Genesis 1:2)
  - “*And the **SPIRIT** (ruach) shall return unto God*” (Ecclesiastes 12:7)
  - “*And the **SPIRIT** (ruach) of the beast that goes downward*” (Ecclesiastes 3:21)

SPIRIT (ruach-spirit) in passages that has reference to attitude, behavior, thinking, disposition, mood, or temperament. As “A happy disposition,” “good attitude” or “bad mood.” Now of these passages are speaking of in immortal, no substance something that has it own life, and will live even after the person it is in is dead; that will live before and

without the resurrection; the teaching of Plato says a soul will live without a resurrection, it will live freed from the person it was trapped in.

- "A lying SPIRIT (ruach)" (1 Kings 22:23)
- "The SPIRIT (ruach) of jealousy came" (Genesis 1:2; 41:8, Numbers 5:14; 5:30)
- "The SPIRIT (ruach) of heaviness" (Isaiah 61:3)
- "The SPIRIT (ruach) of jealousy came" (Numbers 5:30)
- "Because he had another SPIRIT (ruach)" (Numbers 14:24)
- "The SPIRIT (ruach) entered into me" (Ezekiel 2:2; 3:24)
- "Neither was there SPIRIT (ruach) in them" (Joshua 5:1)
- "And a new SPIRIT (ruach) will I put within you" (Ezekiel 36:26)
- "God hardened his SPIRIT (ruach)" (Deuteronomy 2:30)
- "Anguish of SPIRIT (ruach)" (Exodus 6:9)
- "SPIRIT (ruach) of wisdom" (Exodus 28:3)
- "Joshua...was filled with the SPIRIT (ruach) of wisdom" (Deuteronomy 34:9)
- "Sorrowful SPIRIT (ruach)" (2 Samuel 1:15)
- "Why is your SPIRIT (ruach) so sad" (1 Kings 21:5)
- "SPIRIT (ruach) was troubled" (Genesis 41:8)
- "The sacrifices of God are a broken SPIRIT (ruach)" (Psalm 51:7)
- "Hasty of SPIRIT (ruach)" (Proverbs 14:29)
- "By sorrow of the heart the SPIRIT (ruach) is broken" (Proverbs 15:13)
- "An haughty SPIRIT (ruach)" (Proverbs 16:18)
- "An humble SPIRIT (Proverbs 16:19)

W. E. Vine, "Vine's Complete Expository Dictionary," pages 240-241 gives nine ways spirit-ruach is used in the Old Testament.

1. First, this word means "breath."
2. Second, this word can be used with emphasis on the invisible, intangible, fleeting quality of air.
3. Third, ruach can mean, "wind."
4. Fourth, the wind represents direction.
5. Fifth, ruach frequently represents the element of life in a man, his natural "spirit": "*And all flesh died that moved upon the earth...All in whose nostrils was the breath of life.*" (Gen. 7:21-22). In these verses the animals have a "spirit" (cf. Ps. 104:29)...All the ways of a man are clean in his own eyes; but the Lord weigheth the spirits (NASB, "motives").
6. Sixth, ruach is often used of:
  - **A man's mind-set, disposition, or "temper":** "*Blessed is the man unto whom the Lord imputeth not iniquity, and in whose spirit there is no guile*" (Ps. 32:2). In Ezek. 13:3 the word is used of one's mind or thinking: "*Woe unto the foolish prophets, that follow their own spirit, and have seen nothing*" (cf. Prov. 29:11).
  - **Ruach can represent particular dispositions**, as it does in Josh. 2:11: "*And as soon as we had heard this things, out hearts did melt, neither did there remain any more courage in any man, because of you...*" (cf. Josh. 5:1; Job 15:12).
  - **Another disposition represented by this word is "temper":** "*If the spirit (temper) of the ruler rise up against thee, leave not thy place...*" (Eccl. 10:4). David prayed that God would "*restore unto me the joy of thy salvation; and uphold me with the free Spirit*" (Ps. 51:12). In this verse "*joy of salvation*" and "*free Spirit*" are parallel and; therefore, synonymous terms. Therefore, "*spirit*" refers to one's inner disposition, just as "*joy*" refers to an inner emotion.
7. Seventh, the Bible often speaks of God's "*Spirit.*"
8. Eight, the non-material beings (angels) in heaven are sometimes called "*spirits.*"
9. Nine, the "*spirit*" may also be used of that which enables a man to do a particular job of that which represents the essence of a quality of man...

- Just as in the New Testament, when spirit is used in reference to a person, it is the disposition of the persons mind or thinking.
- BLAST "*And at the blast (ruach) of Thy (God) nostrils the waters were piled up*" (Exodus 15:8). "*BLASH (ruach-spirit) of your nostrils*" (2 Kings 19:7). Also 2 Samuel 22:6.
- AIR "*That no AIR (ruach-spirit) can come between them*" (Job 41:16; 41:8).
- MIND "A fool *utters* all his *MIND* (ruach-spirit)" (Genesis 26:35, Proverbs 29:11).
- COURAGE "*Neither did there remain any more COURAGE (ruach-spirit) in them*" (Joshua 5:1).
- COOL "*Walking in the garden in the COOL (ruach-spirit) of the day*" (Genesis 3:8).
- ANGER "*Their ANGER (ruach-spirit) was abated*" (Judges 8:3).
- SIDE (Jeremiah 52:23; Ezekiel 42:16; 42:17; 42:18; 42:19; "side wind" in footnote).
- QUARTERS (ruach-spirit) (1 Chronicles 9:24).
- SPIRITUAL (ruach-spirit) (Hosea 9:7).
- VAIN (ruach-spirit) (Job 15:2; 16:3).

Why did the translators translate the word "*ruach*" into "*spirit*" in one place, and "*blast*" or "*wind*" in others? **The meaning of "*spirit*" as it was used in 1611 and as it is used today, an immortality no substance something in a person is not a thirty-first cousin to "*wind*" or "*breath*," etc., yet the translators, at will, translated the same word into many words, into things that have meaning that are worlds apart. If the same word has two completely different meanings:**

1. **One meaning that had reference to the mortal person or animal.**
2. **And another meaning of the same word that would have had reference to the immortal something that is in a person that animals do not have.**
  - **"Ruach," is it mortal or immortal? If ruach is something that is in a person that is immortal, then ruach is also something that is in an animal that is immortal.**

**How could the Hebrew people know that when was speaking of a person, it was speaking on something in the person that is immortal, but when it was speaking of an animal, it was speaking of something in the animal that was not immortal? How could the translators know? They could not.** They had to put their theology into the Bible, even if they could not be consistent. How could anyone read the Kings James Version and know that anger, cool, courage, air, mind, breath, wind, blast, and spirit are the same thing? Most English reader today would not know that "*wind*" and "*spirit*" are all indiscriminately translated from the same word, and that almost without exception today's reader would understand "*spirit*" to be an immortal soul, but would never understand "*wind*" to be an immortal soul. Those who do not read Hebrew are misled by such indiscriminately translations.

Summary: **Nehphesh, nshahmah, and ruach are something that both a person and an animal have in common, and are something that can and does die.** Both an animal and a man **are** a soul, a living being of this earth. Animals or people do not **have** a soul, an immortal inter part that cannot die, and that it will live after the death of the animal or person it is in; they are a soul—they are both a living being. Without the resurrection there would be no life for anyone after death.

How nehphesh and psukee are translated in seven different versions and in different verses.

	K.J.V.	N.K.J.V.	N.A.S.V.	R.S.V.
Gen 1:20	creatures	creatures	creatures	creatures
Gen 2:7	soul	living being	living being	living being
Gen 9:5	life	life	life	life
Mt 16:25-26	life & soul	life & soul	life & soul	life 4 times
Acts 3:23	soul	soul	soul	soul
1 Cor15:45	soul	living being	soul	living being
1 Pet 3:20	souls	soul	persons	persons
Rev 16:3	soul	creature	living thing	living thing

---

	N.R.S.V.	N.I.V.	Robert Young
Gen 1:20	creatures	creatures	creature
Gen 2:7	living being	living being	living being-creature
Gen 9:5	life	life	life
Mt 16:25-26	life 4 times	life & soul	soul
Acts 3:23	everyone	anyone	soul
1 Cor15:45	living being	living being	creature
1 Pet 3:20	persons	people	soul
Rev 16:3	living thing	living thing	soul

**Nephesh and psukee are used over 976 times. The King James Version translated them soul about half of the time, other translations much less.**

King James Version	(1611)	498 of 976 times
New King James Version	(1982)	341 of 976 times

The New King James Version has soul 157 times less than the King James Version.

New American Standard Version	(1960)	289 of 976 times
New International Version	(1987)	136 of 976 times
New International Version Updated	(2010)	95 of 976 times

The New International Version 2010 Update took soul out of the New International Version 41 times. It used soul only 95 out of over 976 times.

Today's New International Version	(1996)	41 of 976 times
English Standard Version	(2001)	296 of 976 times
Amplified Bible	(1987)	190 of 976 times
Holman Christian Standard Bible	(1999)	58 of 976 times
New Century Version	(1987)	35 of 976 times
Contemporary Revised English Bible	(1995)	26 of 976 times
God's Word Translation	(1995)	110 of 976 times
Worldwide English New Testament	(1995)	12 of 976 times
Christian Bible New Testament	(1995)	0 of 976 times

**IN THE NEW TESTAMENT: Is the use of the English word "soul" as a translation of psukee dying? Of the 106 times psukee is used it is translated soul only:**

King James Version	(1611)	<b>58 of 106 times</b>
American Standard Version	(1901)	<b>56 of 106 times</b>
New American Standard Version	(1960)	<b>47 of 106 times</b>
New Revised Standard	(1946)	<b>33 of 106 times</b>
New International Version	(1978)	<b>25 of 106 times</b>
New International Version Updated	(2010)	<b>22 of 106 times</b>
36 times less than the King James Version		
The Christian Bible	(1991)	<b>0 of 106 times</b>
Contemporary English Version	(1995)	<b>13 of 106 times</b>
Holman Christian Standard Bible	(1999)	<b>23 of 106 times</b>
Worldwide English Version	(2006)	<b>8 of 106 times</b>

It is those who are members of churches that believe a person has an immortal soul that are little by little taking the word "soul" out of the Bible. **Why is soul being used less in the newer translations? These translators knew "soul" is an English word that did not then exist as the word is used today, and that soul is not a translation of nehphesh or psukee; at the time the Bible was written neither nehphesh nor psukee had the meaning that the English word "soul" has today.**

A few of the many examples that show why the numbers above are difficult in difficult translations.

Numbers 29:7

- "Ye shall afflict your **souls** (nehphesh)" King James Version.
- "You shall humble **yourselves** (nehphesh)" New American Standard.

Joshua 11:11

- "They smote all the **souls** (nehphesh)" King James Version.
- "Not sparing anything that **breathed** (nehphesh)" New International Version.

Judges 16:16

- "His **soul** (nehphesh) was vexed unto death" King James Version.
- "Unto **he** (nehphesh) was tired to death" New International Version.

Numbers 30:2

- "To bind his **soul** (nehphesh) with a bond" King James Version.
- "To bind **himself** (nehphesh) with a binding obligation" New American Standard Version.

Numbers 15:30

- "That **soul** (nehphesh) shall be cut off" King James Version.
- "That **person** (nehphesh) shall be cut off" New American Standard Version.

Acts 15:24-26 is an example of how the translation of psukee was changed even in the same passage by the translators when it would not fit in with their belief about an immortal soul. "Since we have heard that some of our number to whom we gave no instruction have disturbed you with their words, unsettling your **souls (psukee)**, it seemed good to us, having become of one mind, to select men to send to you with our beloved Barnabas and Paul, men who have risked their **lives (psukee)** for the name of our Lord Jesus Christ." The psukee - life they risked was their earthly life, not a deathless soul.

- "Certain persons who have gone out from us, though with no instruction from us, have said things to disturb you and have unsettled your **minds (psukee)**...who has risked their **lives (psukee)**" New revised Standard Version.
- "And disturbed you, troubling your **minds (psukee)** by what they said...men who have risked their **lives (psukee)** for the name of our Lord Jesus Christ" New International Version.
- "We have heard that some of our group have come to you and said things that **trouble (psukee)**... and upset you **(psukee)**" New Century Version.

A bird's eye view (below) of the way psukee is translated in four versions shows that it is a living being, not an immortal no substance something. The translators wanted to put their immortal soul in the Bible, but they had a problem for if they had uniformly translated psukee into "soul," in some passages their immortal soul would have been subject to death and in other passages it would be dead.

(1) King James (2) New Revised Standard (3) American Standard (4) New International

	(1)	(2)	(3)	(4)
Matthew 2:20	LIFE	LIFE	LIFE	LIFE
Matthew 6:25	LIFE	LIFE	LIFE	LIFE
Matthew 6:25	LIFE	LIFE	LIFE	LIFE
Matthew 10:28	soul	soul	soul	soul
Matthew 10:28	soul	soul	soul	soul
Matthew 10:39	LIFE	LIFE	LIFE	LIFE
Matthew 10:39	LIFE	LIFE	LIFE	LIFE
Matthew 11:29	souls	souls	souls	souls
Matthew 12:18	soul	soul	soul	I
Matthew 16:25	LIFE	LIFE	LIFE	LIFE
Matthew 16:25	LIFE	LIFE	LIFE	LIFE
Matthew 16:26	soul	LIFE	LIFE	soul
Matthew 16:26	soul	LIFE	LIFE	soul
Matthew 20:28	LIFE	LIFE	LIFE	LIFE
Matthew 22:37	soul	soul	soul	soul
Matthew 26:38	soul	I	soul	soul

Mark 3:4		LIFE		LIFE		LIFE		LIFE
Mark 8:35		LIFE		LIFE		LIFE		LIFE
Mark 8:35		LIFE		LIFE		LIFE		LIFE
Mark 8:36		soul		LIFE		LIFE		soul
Mark 8:37		soul		LIFE		LIFE		soul
Mark 10:45		LIFE		LIFE		LIFE		LIFE
Mark 12:30		soul		soul		soul		soul
Mark 12:33		soul		HEART		HEART		HEART
Mark 14:34		soul		I		soul		soul
Luke 1:46		soul		soul		soul		soul
Luke 2:35		soul		soul		soul		soul
Luke 6:9		LIFE		LIFE		LIFE		LIFE
Luke 9:24		LIFE		LIFE		LIFE		LIFE
Luke 9:24		LIFE		LIFE		LIFE		LIFE
Luke 9:56		LIVES						LIFE
Luke 10:27		soul		soul		soul		soul
Luke 12:19		soul		soul		soul		MYSELF
Luke 12:19		soul		soul		soul		LIFE
Luke 12:20		soul		LIFE		soul		LIFE
Luke 12:22		LIFE		LIFE		LIFE		LIFE
Luke 12:23		LIFE		LIFE		LIFE		LIFE
Luke 14:26		LIFE		LIFE		LIFE		LIFE
Luke 17:33		LIFE		LIFE		LIFE		LIFE
Luke 21:19		soul		souls		souls		YOURSELVES
John 10:11		LIFE		LIFE		LIFE		LIFE
John 10:15		LIFE		LIFE		LIFE		LIFE
John 10:17		LIFE		LIFE		LIFE		LIFE
John 10:24		US		US		US		US
John 12:25		LIFE		LIFE		LIFE		LIFE
John 12"25		LIFE		LIFE		LIFE		LIFE
John 12:27		soul		soul		soul		HEART
John 13:37		LIFE		LIFE		LIFE		LIFE
John 13:38		LIFE		LIFE		LIFE		LIFE
John 15:13		LIFE		LIFE		LIFE		LIFE
Acts 2:27		soul		soul		soul		ME
Acts 2:31		soul		FLESH		FLESH		BODY
Acts 2:41		souls		PERSONS		souls		
Acts 2:43		soul		EVERYONE		soul		EVERYONE
Acts 3:23		soul		EVERYONE		soul		ANYONE
Acts 4:32		soul		soul		soul		MIND
Acts 7:14		souls		ALL		souls		ALL
Acts 14:2		MINDS		MINDS		souls		MINDS
Acts 14:22		souls		souls		souls		DISCIPLES
Acts 15:24		souls		MINDS		souls		MINDS
Acts 15:26		LIVES		LIVES		LIVES		LIVES
Acts 20:10		LIFE		LIFE		LIFE		ALIVE
Acts 20:24		LIFE		LIFE		LIFE		LIFE
Acts 27:10		LIVES		LIVES		LIVES		LIVES
Acts 27:22		LIFE		LIFE		LIFE		YOU
Acts 27:37		souls		PERSONS		souls		US
Romans 2:9		soul		EVERYONE		soul		BEING
Romans 11:3		LIFE		LIFE		LIFE		ME
Romans 13:1		soul		PERSON		soul		EVERYONE
Romans 16:4		LIFE		LIFE		LIFE		LIVES
1 Cor. 15:45		soul		BEING		soul		BEING
2 Cor. 1:23		soul		ME		soul		
2 Cor. 12:15		YOU		YOU		souls		YOU
Ephesians 6:6		HEART		HEAT		HEART		HEART
Philippians 1:27		MIND		MIND		soul		MEN
Philippians 2:30		LIFE		LIFE		LIFE		LIFE
Colossians 3:23		HEARTILY		YOURSELVES		HEARTILY		HEART
1 Thess. 2:8		souls		SELVES		souls		LIVES
1 Thess. 5:23		soul		soul		soul		soul
Hebrews 4 12		soul		soul		soul		soul
Hebrews 6:19		soul		soul		soul		soul
Hebrews 10:38		soul		soul		soul		I
Hebrews 10:39		soul		SAVED		soul		SAVED
Hebrews 12:3		MINDS		HEART		souls		HEART
Hebrews 13:17		souls		souls		souls		YOU
James 1:21		souls		souls		souls		YOU
James 5:20		soul		soul		soul		HIM
1 Peter 1:9		souls		souls		souls		souls
1 Peter 1:22		souls		souls		souls		YOURSELVES
1 Peter 2:11		soul		soul		soul		soul
1 Peter 2:25		souls		souls		souls		souls

1 Peter 3:20		souls		PERSONS		souls		PEOPLE
1 Peter 4:19		souls		THEMSELVES		souls		THEMSELVES
2 Peter 2:8		soul		soul		soul		soul
2 Peter 2:14		souls		souls		souls		UNSTABLE
1 John 3:16		LIFE		LIFE		LIFE		LIFE
1 John 3:16		LIVES		LIVES		LIVES		LIVES
3 John 2		soul		soul		soul		soul
Revelation 6:9		souls		souls		souls		souls
Revelation 8:9		LIFE		CREATURES		LIFE		CREATURES
Revelation 12:11		LIVES		LIFE		LIFE		LIFE
Revelation 16:3		soul		THING		soul		THING
Revelation 18:13		souls		HUMAN LIVES		souls		souls
Revelation 18:14		soul		soul		soul		YOU
Revelation 20:4		souls		souls		souls		souls

All the words used in the four translations (life, lives, yourself, yourselves, us, mind, minds, you, I, him, heart, heartily, everyone, persons, disciples, creatures, all, me, flesh, being, anyone, alive, and man), **all have a reference to the human person, not to a no substance immaterial something that is in a person.**

### SOUL (PSUKEE) IN THE NEW TESTAMENT

Psukee is used 106 times, and it is the only word translated soul in the New Testament (translated soul only 58 of the 106 times in the King James Version), and psukee is the same word in Greek as nehphesh is in Hebrew. Both can and do die.

- "Lose his **life**" Matthew 10:39.
- "Save a **soul** from death" James 5:20.
- "Will save **him** from death" New International Version, salvation is from death for the person, not from Hell for a soul.
- "To save **life** or to destroy it" James 4:12.

In Old English, soul, like ghost and charity, might have been a good translation then, but not today. Most of the times nehphesh and psukee are translated "*soul*," even those who believe a person is two beings in one have to admit it is referring only to the earthly person, earthly life, or earthly being; but today the English word "*soul*" has come to mean an inter unseen deathless something that is in a person, something that will live after the person is dead. **Therefore, when those who do not know this read the Bible, they are misled when psukee is translated "*soul*."**

- "For those who **sought** the Child's **life** (soul-psukee)" Matthew 2:20.
- "But rather fear Him who is able to **destroy** both **soul** (soul-psukee) and body" Matthew 10:28.
- "And he who has **lost** his **life** (soul-psukee) for My sake shall find it" Matthew 10:39, also Matthew 16:25, Mark 8:35. "Lost his soul for My sake" in King James Version. In today's theology the only way to lose your soul is by sinning; does this translation not make Christ be saying that if we sin and lose our soul for Him we will save our soul? This translation is both false and unacceptable.
- "And to **give** His **life** (soul-psukee) a ransom for many" Matthew 20:28.
- "To save a **life** (soul-psukee), or destroy it" Luke 6:9.
- "And I **lay down** my **life** (soul-psukee) for the sheep" John 10:15.
- "Men who have **risked** their **lives** (soul-psukee) for the name of our Lord Jesus Christ" Acts 15:26.
- "And they are **seeking** my **life** (soul-psukee)" Romans 11:3.
- "Will **save** his **soul** (soul-psukee) **from death**" James 5:20.

Which one is it, a mortal being that will die, or an immortal being that cannot die? If there were a part of a person called "immortal soul" that could not die, it is strange that both the Old Testament and the New Testament repeatedly speak of the death of this deathless soul that cannot die.

Psukee is translated "*soul*" and "*life*" interchangeably, and sometimes in the same verse; Matthew 16:25-26 where the same word is inconsistently translated two times "*soul*," and two times "*life*" in the King James Version; but corrected in the American



Standard Version and most other versions where all four times the same word is translated "life."

- "In exchange for his **life**." The parallel passage in Luke 9:25 says, "and lose or forfeit **his own self**" American Standard Version. "Yet lose...**his very self**" New International Version. "Lose...**themselves**" New Revised Standard Version.

Human language could not be any clearer that Christ is speaking of the whole of a person, and not just some internal unseen part of a person. If the immortal soul doctrine were true, a person could not lose a soul that can never die; the person will die but the soul will live on; it is the soul that will lose the person it is in.

If YOU had a soul and lost it, YOU would not have the soul you lost.

- If you have money and lose it, you do not have the money you did have.
  - If both you and the money still existed, it would not be your money.
- If you have a house and lose it, you do not have the house you did have.
  - If the house still existed, it would not be your house.
- If you have life and lose it, you do not have the life you did have.
- If you have anything and lose it, you do not have whatever you lost.
  - If whatever you lost still existed, it would not be yours.
- If you have a soul and lose it, you do not have the soul you did have.
  - If the soul you lost still existed, it would not be your soul.

This passage is about losing life and not having life, either this life or life after the resurrection. It is not about losing a soul (soul with the meaning it has today, an immortal something in you; meaning psukee did not have when the New Testament was written).

In the King James Version in the same sentence the same word (psukee) is translated two words that have completely different meaning (Matthew 16:25-26).

- Life (psukee) the animal life of a person **that will die**.
- Soul (psukee) with the Platonic beliefs of the translators that an immortal soul **that cannot die**.

Also in Luke 12:19-23 the same word, psukee, is translated both (1) something that cannot die and (2) something that cannot keep from dying.

- Three times something that cannot die.
- Two times something that cannot keep from dying.

How could the translators know the same word in the same sentence has two completely different and opposing meaning? It was nothing more than a determination at any cost to put their Platonic theology into the Bible where it was not. In Mark 3:4 Jesus asked the Pharisees, "Is it lawful...to save a psukee, or to kill?" The *psukee* is something that can be saved from death or can be killed, not an immortal something that is deathless and cannot be killed; they did not dare translate it soul in this passage.

The immortality doctrine makes the Bible contradict itself, for the Bible says repeatedly that the nehphesh (Old Testament) psukee (New Testament) can die, and never says a person has a part that is called "soul" that is immortal, that cannot die. Christ "laid down His LIFE (psukee-life or soul) for us, and we ought to lay down our LIVES (psukee-life not soul) for the brethren" 1 John 3:16. "To give His LIFE (psukee-life not soul) a ransom for many" Matthew 20:28.

1. If the SOUL (psukee) cannot die, Christ could not have "laid down His LIFE" (psukee) or "give His LIFE" (psukee), and we could not "lay down our LIVES" (soul-psukee).
2. If the psukee were something that cannot die, Christ did not die. He could not have been raised from the dead for He was never dead.

3. If the psukee were something that cannot die, God would be telling us to do that which we cannot do "lay down our soul-psukee for the brethren." There would be no possible way to "lay down our immortal soul for the brethren." To put a soul, an immaterial, immortal; therefore deathless, something in a person, in this passage makes it nonsense.
  - James 5:20 "Shall save a SOUL (psukee-life not a soul) FROM DEATH" King James Version. If a person has a "SOUL" that cannot die, how can it be saved from death?
  - James 5:20 "Will save HIM (psukee-life not a soul) FROM DEATH" New International Version.

**PSUKEE: A MORTAL BEING OR AN IMMORTAL BEING?** Psukee is translated life, strength, us, he, heart, heartily, you, and mind. These all have a reference to this life, and not to a soul that has no substance. How could the same word mean a mortal being some of the time, and an immortal inter part of a mortal being some of the time? How would the translators know when it was one and when it was the other, know when the psukee-soul could die, and when the psukee-soul could not die?

**Psukee (life) is the natural life from Adam.** It is the physical life common to all living creatures and is it is never said to be eternal. All living creatures (animals, fish, man) by natural birth have psukee (life) from birth to death. It is never coupled with the adjective eternal or everlasting. **The only word that is translated soul in the New Testament is translated soul only about one-half of the times it is used.** Psukee is applied to the life of animals two times in the New Testament.

1. "And there died the third part of the creatures which were in the sea, even they that had **life** (psukee)" (Revelation 8:9).
2. "And the second poured out his bowl into the sea; and it became blood as of a dead man; and every **living soul** (psukee) died, even the things that were in the sea" (Revelation 16:3).
  - In one passage psukee is translated life, in the other psukee is translated soul. In both the "soul" dies.

**Zoe (life)** (Strong's word 2227, "Zoopoico...make alive, give life, quicken") **is a gift of life from Christ to those that believe, the life He gives only to those who are His. No one is born with it and the lost never have it.** It refers the life given by Christ only to believes in all but about ten of about one hundred thirty times it is used. "The first man Adam become a living soul (psukee-living being), the last Adam became a life-giving spirit" (1 Corinthians 15:45). All living being have psukee life, only those who are born again have zoe (life) in Christ. See Zoe life in chapter two, Life or Death.

#### **PASSAGES IN THE NEW TESTAMENT THAT HAS "PSUKEE" IN THEN**

The many words the translators used to translate "psukee" are both nouns and pronouns, it refer to (1) God (2) to a person (3) or to an animal, not to an immortal no subject part of God, a person or an animal. The person or animal is sometimes dying, and is sometimes dead. This one word, which is a common noun, but it is translated into many nouns, it is changed into a proper noun, and often is changed to a pronoun, then translated by many pronouns just as "nehphesh" is in the Old Testament. The different translations do not agree on when it should be changed from a common or proper noun or to a pronoun.

#### **(1) IN FIFTY-ONE OF THE ONE-HUNDARD SIX TIMES IN WHICH PSUKEE (soul) IS USED IT MEANS LIFE AND IT CAN DIE, BE KILLED, PERISH, OR BE DESTROYED**

**(1)** Matthew 2:20 "Arise and take the young child and his mother, and go into the land of Israel: for they are dead that sought the young child's **LIFE** (life- psukee, not a deathless

soul)." There is no doubt that they wanted to kill the child's body, not some inter part of him. No immortal "soul" in this passage.

**(2-3)** Matthew 6:25 *"Therefore, I say unto you, be not anxious for your **LIFE** (life-psukee), what you shall eat, or what you shall drink; nor yet for your body, what you shall put on. Is not the **LIFE** (life-psukee) more than the food, and the body than the raiment?"* It is the earthly person in the image of Adam that eats and drinks, not an immortal soul that is in a person that is in the image of Adam. A person's life is more than what he or she has to put on the body.

- *"Be not anxious for your **LIFE** (life-psukee), what you shall eat."* It is the body that eats, not an immaterial soul.
- *"Is not the **LIFE** (life-psukee) more than the food, and the body than the raiment?"* It is the body that puts on clothing, not an immaterial soul.
  - It is our lives that need food, our bodies that need cloths to be warm; an immortal soul could not use either one.

**(4-5)** Matthew 10:28 *"And be not afraid of them that kill the body, but are not able to kill the **soul** (life-psukee): but rather fear him who is able to destroy both **soul** (life-psukee) and body in hell (Gehenna)." See notes on this in chapter four. If psukee were an immortal soul, then God can destroy this immortal soul. **There is no stronger way in which to say God can and will destroy it.** He is to be feared by those of the world because He will. There would be no reason to fear Him if He could not, or if He will not destroy life-Psukee. **I find it strange that one of the most used passages, as it is translated in the King James Version, is used to prove the soul cannot be destroyed says God can destroy it.** See **"Matthew 10:28, Luke 12:5** God is able to destroy (Apollumi) both life-psukee and body in Gehenna" in chapter four, and **"proves more than they want"** also in chapter four. Not even God could destroy the soul if it were an immortal thing that could never die, for if He did destroy this something that is in a person that cannot be destroyed, then it would not be immortal and it could die.*

If, as many affirm, that the soul is indestructible, where is even one scripture that teaches it is indestructible or deathless; that the soul will be alive in Heaven or anyplace before the Resurrection? Is not this saying God is not able to reduce something He created back to it original state of non-existences, or that God was able to create a soul, but God is not able to destroy a soul, not able to uncrate that which He created; if He cannot, then He is not omnipotent, not all powerful.

**(6-7-8-9)** Matthew 10:39 *"For whosoever would save his **LIFE** (psukee) shall lose it: and whosoever shall lose his **LIFE** (psukee) for my sake shall find it. 26 For what shall a man be profited, if he shall gain the whole world, and forfeit his **LIFE** (psukee)? Or what shall a man give in exchange for his **LIFE** (soul-psukee)?"* **The King James Version has the same word (psukee) translated "life" two times, and "soul" two times. What made them think Christ used the same word in the same passage with two completed different meaning? In today's English, the meaning of "soul" and "life" are not even close to being the same, yet they were translated from the same Hebrew word in the same sentence.**

In Matthew 10:39 **Lose his life** (Greek—psukee) **must be changed to lose the reward for a deathless soul.** **Lose his life** (Greek—psukee) **must be changed to mean an everlasting life of torment for a life that can never be lost, can never end** (Matthew 10:39).

WHAT DOSE THIS PASSAGE SAY?

1. *"He who finds his life—shall lose it."*
2. *"He who loses his life—shall find it."* Life is translated from psukee, the same Greek word that is translated "soul" in Matthew 10:28.

The person who saves his life by denying Christ will lose life at the judgment. The person that loses his life because he is a Christian and will not deny Christ will find life at the judgment. There is no way Christ could have said it any clearer or plainer. It is **THE "LIFE"** of a person that is being spoken of, not some deathless something in a person that has life and cannot lose it. There is not a word said about eternal life with torment for a deathless soul in this passage.

**"He who finds his life (psukee—not find his soul) shall lose it."** The person who saves his **life** (psukee) by denying Christ will lose his **life** (psukee) at the judgment. He who finds his life is one who puts this life ahead of Christ, but he will *"lose it"* at the judgment, not have an everlasting life with torment. (1) *"The wages of sin is death"* (Romans 6:23) (2) *"A certain fearful expectation of judgment, and a fierceness of fire which shall devour the adversaries"* (Hebrews 10:27). (3) *"The day of judgment and destruction of ungodly men"* (2 Peter 3:7). *"And forfeit his life"* (psukee) (Mark 8:36). *"And lose himself"* (Luke 9:25) **Luke used the pronoun "himself" in the place of "psukee—life" that Matthew used making (1) "life" (psukee) and (2) "himself" both be the same thing. It is the "life" of the person or "himself" that will be lost or saved,** not just an inter invisible part of the person that has no substance, not just something inside of a person that no one can tell us what it really is. The teaching today is that this no substance soul that is in a person cannot be lost, but will just change its address to Heaven to Hell when death makes the person it is now in no longer exist. An immortal soul had to be put in the Bible, but to do so, the translators had to throw away the whole person we now are to make only an immaterial, invisible something in of a person be immortal, and only this *"invisible part of man"* will have eternal life in Heaven. **Those who do not obey Christ shall lose the very thing that is saved by those who do obey Him-life; the lost shall die and the saved shall live. "But the righteous shall go into eternal life"** (Matthew 25:46), **it is LIFE that is lost or found.** Many are saying, "Not so Lord, they 'shall not lose it,' for the 'immaterial, invisible part of a man' shall have eternal life in Hell"; if this is not what they say, than what are they saying? It is **life** that is being spoken of as being saved or lost, nothing more, not an immortal soul that can never lose its life being saved from eternal torment by God. There is not a word said about Hell, torment, or an immortal, immaterial, invisible part of a person.

**"He who loses his life (psukee) shall find it."** How could Christ have said it any clearer that the person that loses his **life** (psukee), his earthly life because he is a Christian and will not deny Christ will find **life** at the judgment? If *"lose his life"* (psukee) is to lose his **life** (psukee) for being a Christian, them *"lose his life (psukee)"* cannot be to have an everlasting life with torment that cannot be lost.

The same thing that is saved is the same thing that will be lost.

- The person who saves his life by denying Christ.
- Will lose the same thing, his life at the judgment.
  - It is not a soul that is saved by denying Christ, but life on earth.
  - It is not a soul that will be lost at the judgment, but life in Heaven.

- John 12:25 say the same, "*He that loves his **life** (psukee—not he that loves his soul) shall lose it; and he that hates his **life** (psukee—not he that hates his soul) in this world, shall keep it unto life eternal.*"

**When save and lose in Matthew 10:39 are applied to an immaterial soul that cannot die as it is used in today's theology it makes nonsense.**

- To save ones soul means to save it from Hell—according to today's theology.
- To lose ones soul means to go to Hell forever according to today's theology. When "*shall lose it*" is made mean going to Hell then "*lose his life* (psukee)" for Christ mean gong to Hell for Christ.
- "***He that finds his soul*** (psukee— saves his soul from Hell according to today's theology) ***shall lose it*** (shall lose his soul in Hell—losing one's soul in today's theology is to go to Hell) ***and he that loses his soul for my sake*** (he that goes to Hell for my sake) ***shall find it*** (shall save his soul from Hell)." Today's theology makes utter nonsense of the Bible.

**Finding life and losing life** are not an everlasting life of torment separated from God. (1) "*He that finds his life shall lose it,*" by some kind of magic charm losing life has been turns into eternal life in Hell that can never be lost. "*Shall lose it* (his life)" is made to mean an **eternal life** of torment in Hell, not torment for the person that loses it but torment for a soul. How could anyone know this? (2) "*He that loses his life for my sake shall find it.*" Losing the life of the body - being put to death for believing in Christ, also by some kind of magic has been turned into eternal life for an "immaterial, invisible something that is in a person" at the death of the person it was in even though we are repeatedly told this deathless something already had eternal life even when the person it was in was alive. Their magic makes the resurrection useless for they say eternal life is given to all at birth and a soul can lose it, can never not have life; therefore, Christ could not give life to a soul that is already alive at His second coming. He can only give it a reward if the person it was in was good and can only punish it if the person it was in was bad. **To make psukee be an "*immaterial invisible, immortal part of man*" that cannot die makes it be nonsense. No doctrine of the Bible is more plain than the loss of life in this passage is the lost of our earthly life because of being faithful to Christ,** (it is not speaking of eternal life with torment for sinner); **finding life is to find eternal life at the judgment, and it is just as plain that the person that saves his earthly life (psukee) by denying Christ will lose his life at the judgment.**

- Matthew 16:25-26: "*For whosoever would save his **life** (psukee) shall lose it: and whosoever shall lose his **life** (psukee) for my sake shall find it. For what shall a man be profited, if he shall gain the whole world (become very rich in this life), and forfeit his **life** (psukee)? Or what shall a man give in exchange for his life (psukee)?" (American Standard Version).*
- Mark 8:35-36: "*For whosoever would save his **life** (psukee) shall lose it; and whosoever shall lose his **life** (psukee) for my sake and the gospel's shall save it. For what do it profit a man, to gain the whole world, and forfeit his **life** (psukee)? For what should a man give in exchange for his life (psukee)?"*
- Luke 9:24-25: "*For whosoever would save his **life** (psukee) shall lose it; but whosoever shall lose his **life** (psukee) for my sake, the same shall save it. For what is a man profited, if he gain the whole world, and lost of forfeit **his own self**?"*

- Matthew 19:39: "*He that finds his **life** (psukee) shall lose it; and he that loses his **life** (psukee) for my sake shall find it.*"
- Luke 17:33: "*Whosoever shall seek to gain his **life** (psukee) shall lose it: but whosoever shall lose his **life** (psukee) shall preserve it.*"
- John 12:25: "*He that loves his **life** (psukee) loses it; and he that hates his **life** (psukee) in this world shall keep it unto **life** eternal.*"

**(10-11-12-13)** Mark 8:35 "*For whosoever would save his **LIFE** (psukee—not save and lose his soul) shall lose it; and whosoever shall lose his **LIFE** (psukee) for my sake and the gospel's shall save it. 36 For what does it profit a man, to gain the whole world, and forfeit his **LIFE** (psukee)? 37 For what should a man give in exchange for his **LIFE**" (psukee)? The life that is prolonged for a little while by denying Christ will be lost, but the life that is loss by being faithful to Christ will be saved at the judgment.*

**(14-15)** Luke 9:24-25 "*For whosoever would save his **LIFE** (psukee) shall lose it; but whosoever shall lose his **LIFE** (psukee) for my sake, the same shall save it. For what is a man profited, if he gain the whole world, and **lose or forfeit his own self**?" Psukee is translated "soul" and "life" interchangeably in the Bible, and sometimes in the same verse. In the King James Version the same word is inconsistently translated two times "soul," and two times "life," but corrected in the American Standard Version and most others where all four times the same word is translated "life." "*In exchange for his life.*"*

- "*And lose or forfeit **his own self***" American Standard Version
- "*Yet lose...**his very self***" New International Version
- "*Lose...**themselves**?"* New Revised Standard Version

Human language could not be any clearer that Christ is speaking of the whole person, and not just some unseen something that is in a person. Luke avoids using the word psukee (soul) in Luke 12:4-5. Why? His Gentile readers might have understood the word the way it was used by the Greeks of that time; therefore, he used a word that means the whole person, and not the Greek soul that the Greeks believe would be reincarnated.

**(16)** Matthew 20:28 "*Even as the Son of man came not to be ministered unto, but to minister, and to give his **LIFE** (psukee—not His deathless soul) a ransom for many.*"

Mark 10:45 "*For the Son of man also came not to be ministered unto, but to minister, and to give his **LIFE** (psukee) a ransom for many.*"

**(17)** Mark 3:4 "*And he said unto them, is it lawful on the Sabbath day to do good, or to do harm? To save a **LIFE** (psukee), or to kill? But they held their peace.*"

**(18)** Luke 6:9 "*And Jesus said unto them, I ask you, Is it lawful on the Sabbath to do good, or to do harm? To save a **LIFE** (psukee), or to destroy it?" "Kill" and "destroy" are used interchangeably. The translators would not translate psukee into "soul" in this passage for it would then say the soul could be killed.*

**(19)** Luke 9:56 "*For the Son of man is not come to destroy men's **LIVES** (psukee), but to save them. And they went to another village*" King James Version. This is not in the American Standard Version, and not in most others translations for it is not in many of the Greek Manuscripts, but there is nothing about an immortal part of a person in it.

**(20-21-22-23)** Luke 12:19-23 "*And I will say to my **soul** (psukee), **Soul** (psukee), you have much goods laid up for many years; take your ease, eat, drink, be merry. 20 But God said unto him, You foolish one, this night is your **soul** (psukee) required of you; and the things which you have prepared, whose shall they be? 21 So is he that lays up treasure for himself, and is not rich toward God. 22 And he said unto his disciples, therefore, I say unto you, be not anxious for your **LIFE** (psukee), what you shall eat; nor*

yet for your body, what you shall put on. 23 For the **LIFE** (psukee) is more than the food, and the body than the raiment." In this passage they found it necessary to translate psukee into both soul and life, for the soul cannot eat or use a raiment. "You fool! This very night your **LIFE** (psukee) is being demanded of you" New Revised Standard Version. His **life** (psukee) was demanded. "So it is with those who store up treasures for themselves but are not rich toward God." It will be their **life** (psukee) that will be demanded of them. Nothing is said about an immortal part of a person that will be forever tormented. In this passage psukee does the things that only this earthly body can do, things that an immortal no substance soul could not do. "And I will say to my **soul** (psukee), **Soul** (psukee), you have much goods laid up for many years; take your ease, eat, drink" (Luke 12:19). An immortal no substance soul could not use the much earthly goods laid up for many years. Can anyone not see how foolish this passage would be if it were speaking of an immortal soul that has no body and no substance, but that no substance soul was using the earthly goods it has lain up? Can a soul that has no earthly body eat, drink, or use any earthly goods?

- "And I'll say to **myself** (psukee), **You** (psukee) have plenty of good things laid up for many years" New International Version.
- "I will say to **myself** (psukee), **You** (psukee) have plenty of good things laid by" The Revised English Bible.
- Then I can say to **myself** (psukee), **I** (psukee) have enough good things stored" New Century Version.

(24) Luke 14:26 "If any man comes unto me, and hate not his own father, and mother, and wife, and children, and brethren, and sisters, yea, and his own **LIFE** (psukee) also, he cannot be my disciple."

(25-26) Luke 17:33 "Whosoever shall seek to gain his **LIFE** (psukee—not his soul) shall lose it: but whosoever shall lose his **LIFE** (psukee) shall preserve it."

(27-28-29) John 10:11-17 "I am the good shepherd: the good shepherd **lays down his LIFE** (psukee) for the sheep. 12 He that is a hireling, and not a shepherd, whose own the sheep are not, beholds the wolf coming, and leaves the sheep, and flees, and the wolf snatches them, and scatters (them): 13 (he flees) because he is a hireling, and cares not for the sheep. 14 I am the good shepherd; and I know mine own, and mine own know me, 15 even as the Father knows me, and I know the Father; and **I lay down my LIFE** (psukee) for the sheep. 16 And other sheep I have, which are not of this fold: them also I must bring, and they shall hear my voice: and they shall become one flock, one shepherd. 17 Therefore, the Father loves me, because **I lay down my LIFE** (psukee), that I may take it again." An immortal soul, as taught today, cannot die; therefore, the translators could not say Christ gave up His immortal soul; He gives His life, not an immortal soul.

- Jesus gives His LIFE (psukee) "for the sheep" John 10:11-17.
- Jesus gives His LIFE (psukee) as "a ransom for many" Matthew 20:28.
- Jesus "lay down his **LIFE** (psukee) for his friends" John 15:13.
  - It was not a deathless soul that died for us; it was Jesus that gave His LIFE for us.

(30-31) John 12:25 "He that loves his **LIFE** (psukee) shall lose it; and he that hates his **LIFE** (life-soul-psukee) in this world shall keep it unto life eternal." Who ever puts this life first shall lose his life, but who ever put God first shall live after the judgment. Those who do not put God first will lose their psukee (life). If psukee is an immortal soul that can never die, it could not be lost.

(32) John 15:13 *"Greater love has no man than this, that a man lay down his **LIFE** (psukee) for his friends."* Not even those who believe a person has an immortal soul believe Christ lay down his immortal soul, they do not believe an immortal soul can be dead. He did lay down His life for us.

(33-34) John 13:37 *"Peter said unto him, Lord, why cannot I follow you even now? I will lay down my **LIFE** (psukee) for you. 38 Jesus answered, will you lay down your **LIFE** (psukee) for me? Verily, verily, I say unto you, the cock shall not crow, till you have denied me thrice."* "Lay down" means "to give up," "to die." It was Peter that was to give up his life (psukee) for Christ. If psukee is an immortal soul that can never die, Peter could not have given it up.

(35) Acts 3:23 *"And it shall be, that every **soul** (psukee-person) that shall not hearken to that prophet, shall be utterly destroyed from among the people." An immortal soul utterly destroyed! How could God say any stronger that whatever the psukee is (life-soul-person) it can and will be "utterly destroyed"? If destroyed did mean torment then it would be saying, "Every soul (psukee-person) would be utterly tormented from among the people."*

- *"And it will be that **everyone** (psukee)"* New Revised Standard Version.
- *"**Anyone** (psukee) who does not listen to him"* New International Version.
- *"For **anyone** (psukee) who refuses to listen to that prophet"* The Revised English Bible.

(36) Acts 15:24 *"Forasmuch as we have heard that certain who went out from us have troubled you with words, subverting your **souls** (life-psukee)."*

- *"Your **minds** (lives-psukee)"* New Revised Standard Version.
- *"Troubling your **minds** (lives-psukee)"* New International Version.
- *"Unsettled your **minds** (lives-psukee)"* The Revised English Bible.

(37) Acts 15:26 *"Men that have hazarded their **LIVES** (psukee) for the name of our Lord Jesus Christ."* An immortal part of a person that could not die could not be hazarded.

(38) Acts 20:9-10 *"And there sat in the window a certain young man named Eutychus, borne down with deep sleep; and as Paul discoursed yet longer, being borne down by his sleep he fell down from the third story, and was taken up **DEAD**. And Paul went down, and fell on him, and embracing him said, Make you no ado; for his **LIFE** (life-psukee) is in him."* He was dead, but Paul restored his earthly life that was dead from the fall, not an immortal soul that the fall could not have killed.

(39) Acts 20:24 *"But I hold not my **LIFE** (psukee) of any account as dear unto myself."* The translators would not say he held his immortal soul to be of no account. To use soul in this passage would not teach what they believed; therefore, they did not use it.

(40) Acts 27:10 *"And said unto them, Sirs, I perceive that the voyage will be with injury and much loss, not only of the cargo and the ship, but also of our **LIVES** (psukee)."* No one will lose an immortal soul in a shipwreck. It can be seen how the translators picked when they wanted psukee to be a soul, and when they wanted it to be life.

(41) Acts 27:22 *"And now I exhort you to be of good cheer; for there shall be no loss of **LIFE** (psukee) among you, but only of the ship."* This could not be translated souls for then souls would have been lost just as the ship was lost by a storm, and we are told by those who believe we have an immortal soul that souls are lost by sin, and they cannot be lost by a storm. Both their life and the ship could have been lost in this storm, but not an immortal soul.

- *"But also of our **lives**"* (Greek—psukee) Acts 27:10).
- *"There shall be no lost of **life**"* (Greek—psukee) Acts 27:22).



- “And we were in the ship two hundred threescore and sixteen **souls**” (Greek—psukee) Acts 27:37). “Two hundred and seventy-six persons” New American Standard Bible and most others.
  - Why was the same word translated “life” and “soul” when nether the translators nor those that believe we now have and immortal soul do not believe “life” and “soul” to be the same?

(42) Romans 16:4 *"Who for my **LIFE** (psukee) laid down their own necks."*

(43) Romans 11:3 *"Lord, they have killed your prophets, they have dug down your altars; and I am left alone, and they seek my **LIFE** (psukee)." They were seeking his earthly life to kill, just as they had the prophets, not something that did not have any substance, not something that they could not see or kill.*

(44) Philippians 1:27 *"With one **MIND** (psukee) striving together for the faith."*

Philippians 2:30 *"Because for the work of Christ he came nigh unto death, hazarding his **LIFE** (psukee) to supply that which was lacking in your service toward me." Did he hazard his immortal soul; and his soul, which cannot die came nigh unto death even if it could not die?*

1 Thessalonians 2:8 *"We were well pleased to impart unto you, not the gospel of God only, but also our own **souls** (life-psukee)." They were pleased to impart the gospel to them even at the cost of their own lives, not impart the gospel to them even at the cost of their immortal souls.*

- *"But also our own **selves** (psukee)"* New Revised Standard Version.
- *"But our **lives** (psukee) as well"* New International Version.
- *"Our very **lives** (psukee)"* The New American Bible.
- *"Our very **selves** (psukee)"* The Revised English Bible.
- *"Our own **lives** (psukee)"* New Century Version.

1 Peter 2:11 *"Beloved, I beseech you as sojourners and pilgrims, to abstain from fleshly lust, which war against the **soul** (life-psukee)."*

Hebrews 10:39 *"But we are not of them that shrink back unto perdition; but of them that have faith unto the saving of the **soul** (your life-psukee)."*

- *"We have the faith to preserve our **life** (psukee)"* The Revised English Bible.
- *"But among those who have faith and so are saved"* New Revised Standard Version.
- *"But of those who believe and are saved"* New International Version.

James 5:19-20 *"My brethren, if any among you err from the truth, and one converts him; 20 let him know, that he who converts a sinner from the error of his way shall save a **soul** (life-psukee) from death, and shall cover a multitude of sins." If the sinner is not converted, his life (psukee), not a soul will not be saved from death. Many read "Hell" ("shall save a soul from Hell") into this in the place of "death." The only way to get "save a soul from Hell" into the Bible is by reading Hell in where it is not is.*

- *"Will save **him** (psukee) from death"* New International Version. The whole person will be saved from death, not an immortal something that is in person that could not be dead, but it will be saved from death even if it could not be dead.

(45-46) 1 John 3:16 *"Hereby know we love, because he laid down his **LIFE** (psukee) for us: and we should lay down our **LIVES** (psukee) for the brethren." Can we lay down our immortal souls for the brethren? Christ lay down His life for us, and we should be willing to lay down our life for our brethren. If this were an immortal part of a person, we would be told to do something that it would not be possible for us to do.*

(47) Revelation 6:9 *"Souls (lives -psukee)...slain."*

(48) Revelation 8:9 *"And there **died** the third part...that had **LIFE**" (psukee).*

(49) Revelation 12:11 *"Loved not their **LIFE** (psukee) even unto **death**."*

(50) Revelation 16:3 *"Every living **soul** (living being-psukee) **died**"* (In the sea, all fish died). Can anyone tell me why the translators, who believed the soul could not die and do not believe fish have a soul, put *"ever living soul died"* in this passage? *"And every **living thing** (psukee) **in the sea died**"* New American Standard Bible.

(51) Revelation 20:4 *"The **souls** (lives-psukee) of them that had **been beheaded**"*

**(2) PASSAGES WITH PSUKEE USED  
REFERRING TO PARTS OF THE HUMAN BODY,  
THAT IN SOME WAY CONNECT  
THE SPIRIT (pneuma) TO THE HUMAN MIND**

1. Acts 14:2 *"And made their **minds** (psukee) **evil affected**"* King James Version. The Gentiles were turned against the brothers in this life, not against immortal inter parts of the brothers.
  - o *"And poisoned their **minds** (psukee) against the brothers"* New International Version.
2. *"But my **mind** (pneuma) could not rest because I did not find my brother Titus there"* (2 Corinthians 2:13) New Revised Standard Version.
3. Hebrews 12:3 *"Lest ye be wearied and faint in your **minds** (life-psukee)"* King James Version.
4. *"Because his **spirit** (pneuma) has been refreshed by you all"* (2 Corinthians 7:13).
  - o *"Because his **mind** (pneuma) has been set at rest by all of you"* New Revised Standard Version.
  - o *"You have all helped to set his **mind** (pneuma) completely at rest"* Revised English Bible.
5. *"And that you be renewed in the **spirit** (pneuma) of your mind"* (Ephesians 4:23). Even in the theology of today, if the spirit is an immortal something, what is *"the spirit of you mind"* in which they were to be renewed?
  - o *"To be made new in the **attitude** (pneuma) of your mind"* New International Version.
6. Matthew 22:37 *"And he said unto him, you shall love the Lord your God with all your heart, and with all your **soul** (life-soul-psukee), and with all your mind."* Mark 12:30 *"And you shall love the Lord your God with all your heart, and with all your **soul** (life-soul-psukee), and with all your mind, and with all your strength."*
7. *"Blessed are the poor in **spirit** (pneuma)"* (Matthew 5:3). Poor in a no substance immortal spirit?
8. Mark 12:33 *"And to love him with all the heart, and with all the understanding, and with all the **strength** (psukee) (soul in King James Version), and to love his neighbor as himself, is more than all whole burnt-offerings and sacrifices."* Luke 10:27 *"And he answering said, You shall love the Lord your God with all your heart, and with all your **soul** (life-psukee), and with all your strength, and with all your mind; and your neighbor as thyself."*
  - o In the parallel passages in Mark and Luke, the same word (psukee) is translated "strength" in one and "soul" in the other.
9. 2 Corinthians 12:15 *"Will most gladly spend and be spent for **you** (psukee)"* King James Version.

*"For though absent in body, I am present in **spirit** (pneuma)"* (Colossians 2:5). Was his immortal spirit in one place, and his body was in another while he was alive? If so, then the immortal spirit can leave the body when it wants to, and the body can live without the spirit, but James tells us that the body without the spirit is dead (James 2:26). Was Paul's body dead for a time while his spirit was gone to be at Colossae? No, he was saying he

was with them in his thoughts and heart, not that an immortal spirit had left his body, and it went to Colossae without his body, and returned to his body.

10. Colossians 3: 23 "*Whatsoever you do, work **heartily** (psukee), as unto the Lord.*"  
Whatsoever you do, work soul (pneuma), as unto the Lord?
11. "*Walked we not in the same **spirit** (pneuma)? Walked we not in the same steps?*" (2 Corinthians 12:18). Did they all have only one immortal soul or spirit?
12. "*Restore such a one in a **spirit** (pneuma) of gentleness*" (Galatians 6:1).
13. "*May give unto you a **spirit** (pneuma) of wisdom and revelation in the knowledge of him*" (Ephesians 1:17). Would they not have already had an immortal soul; if another one were given to them would they have two?
14. Ephesians 6:6 "*Not in the way of eye service, as men pleasers; but as servants of Christ, doing the will of God from the **heart** (psukee).*" "Doing the will of God from an immortal soul"?
15. "*That you stand fast in one **spirit** (pneuma)*" (Philippians 1:27).
16. "*A meek and quiet **spirit** (pneuma)*" (1 Peter 3:4).

### (3) PASSAGES WITH PSUKEE USED REFERRING A NUMBER OF PEOPLE

In Old English, and even today souls is used to mean persons or life. A newspaper reporting a shipwreck in which fifty people drown would say, "Fifty souls were lost." People were called "souls" about twenty-eight times in the King James.

1. Acts 2:41-43 "*They then that received his word were baptized: and there were added (unto them) in that day about three thousand **souls** (psukee-persons). And they continued steadfastly in the apostles' teaching and fellowship, in the breaking of bread and the prayers. And fear came upon **every soul** (psukee-every person): and many wonders and signs were done through the apostles.*"
  - "About three thousand **persons** (psukee)" New Revised Standard Version.
  - "About three thousand **people** (psukee)" Today's English Version.
  - "About three thousand were added to their number" New International Version.
  - "Three thousand were added to the number of believers" Revised English Bible.
  - "About three thousand **people** (psukee) were added to the number of believers" New Century Version.
  - "Three thousand were added that day" New American Bible.
  - "About 3,000 in all" The Living Bible.
  - "About 3,000 **people** (psukee) were added" Simple English Bible.
  - "About three thousand **people** (psukee) were added" Good News For Modern Man.
    - Some translations leave psukee out, just as we would say, "Three thousand persons were saved," or "Three thousand were saved."
  - "And fear came upon **every soul** (person-psukee)." (Acts 2:43 King James Version). "**Everyone**" New American Standard Version, New Revised Standard Version, New International Version.
2. Acts 7:14 "*And Joseph sent, and called to him Jacob his father, and all his kindred, threescore and fifteen **souls** (persons-psukee).*"
  - "And all his relatives to come to him, seventy-five in all" New Revised Standard Version.
  - "And his whole family, seventy-five in all" New International Version.
  - "Seventy-five **persons** in all (psukee)" New American Bible.
  - "Seventy-five **persons** in all (psukee)" Revised English Bible.
3. Acts 27:37 "*And we were in all in the ship two hundred threescore and sixteen **souls** (persons-psukee).*" Also Acts 27:10; 27:22.

- "Two hundred seventy-six **persons** (psukee)" New Revised Standard Version.
  - "Two hundred and seventy-six of **us** (psukee)" Revised English Bible.
4. 1 Peter 3:19-20 *"In which also he went and preached unto the spirits in prison, that aforetime were disobedient, when the long suffering of God waited in the days of Noah, while the ark was a preparing, wherein few, that is, eight **souls** (persons-psukee), were saved through water."*
    - "Eight **persons** (psukee) were brought safely through the water" New American Standard Bible.
    - "Eight **persons** (psukee) were saved through water" New Revised Standard Version.
    - "In it only a few **people** (psukee), eight in all" New International Version.
    - "A few **persons** (psukee), eight in all" New American Bible.
  5. Matthew 11:29 *"You shall find rest unto your **souls** (lives-psukee)."*
    - "You will find rest for your **lives** (psukee)." New Century Version.
  6. Luke 1:46 *"And Mary said, my **soul** (life-psukee) does magnify the Lord."*
  7. Luke 2:35 *"Yea and a sword shall pierce through your own **soul** (life-heart-psukee)."*
    - "And **you** (psukee) too will be pierced to the heart" Revised English Bible.
  8. Luke 21:19 *"In your patience you shall win your **souls** (lives-psukee)."*
    - "By standing firm you will save **yourselves** (psukee)" New International Version.
    - "By patient endurance you will save your **lives** (psukee)" New American Bible.
    - "By standing firm you will win yourselves **life** (psukee)" Revised English Bible.
  9. John 10:24 *"The Jews therefore came round about him, and said unto him, how long do you hold **us** (psukee) in suspense?"* This has a reference to suspense in this life, not to suspense in life after death; they were being held in suspense at that time, not after their death.
  10. Acts 4:32 *"And the multitude of them that believed were of one heart and **soul** (life-psukee)...they had all things common."* They were all united, but were not all one immortal being, not one immortal soul with many bodies.
    - "All the believers were one in heart and **mind** (psukee)" New International Version.
  11. Acts 14:22 *"Confirming the **souls** (lives-psukee) of the disciples, exhorting them to continue in the faith, and that through many tribulations we must enter into the kingdom of God."*
  12. Romans 2:9 *"Tribulation and anguish, upon every **soul** (person-psukee) of man that works evil."*
    - "There will be anguish and distress for **everyone**" (psukee) New Revised Standard Version.
    - "There will be trouble and distress for **every human being** (psukee)" New International Version.
    - "Anguish will come upon **every man** (psukee)" New American Bible.
    - "For every **human being** (psukee)" Revised English Bible.
  13. Romans 13:1 *"Let every **soul** (person-psukee) be in subjection to the higher powers."* Every immortal soul subject to world governments?
    - "Let every **person** (psukee)" New Revised Standard Version.
    - "Let **everyone** (psukee)" New American Bible.
    - "Every **person** (psukee)" Revised English Bible.
  14. 1 Corinthians 15:45 *"So also it is written, the first man Adam became a living **soul** (a living being-psukee). The last Adam (became) a life-giving spirit."*
    - "The first man, Adam, became a **living being** (psukee)" New Revised Standard Version.
    - "The first man Adam became a **living being** (psukee)" New International Version.
    - "Adam, became a **living creature** (psukee)" Revised English Bible.

15. 2 Corinthians 1:23 *"But I call God for a witness upon my **soul** (life-psukee), that to spare you I come no more unto Corinth."*
  - *"But I call on God as witness against **me** (psukee)"* New Revised Standard Version.
16. 1 Thessalonians 5:23 *"And the God of peace himself sanctify you wholly; and may your spirit and **soul** (life-psukee) and body be preserved entire, without blame at the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ."*
17. Hebrews 4:12 *"For the word of God is living, and active, and sharper than any two-edged sword, and piercing even to the dividing of **soul** (life-psukee) and spirit."*
18. Hebrews 6:19 *"Which we have as an anchor of the **soul** (life-psukee)."*
  - *"We have that hope as an anchor for our **lives**" (psukee)"* Revised English Bible.
19. Hebrews 13:17 *"For they watch in behalf of your **souls** (lives-psukee)."*
  - *"They keep watch over **you** (psukee)"* New International Version.
20. James 1:21 *"Receive with meekness the implanted word, which is able to save your **souls** (life-psukee)."*
  - *"Which can save **you** (psukee)"* New International Version.
  - *"With its power to save **you** (psukee)"* Revised English Bible.
21. 1 Peter 1:9 *"Receiving the end of your faith, (even) the salvation of (your) **souls** (life-soul-psukee)."*
  - *"**Your** (psukee) salvation"* New American Bible.
22. 1 Peter 1:22 *"Seeing you have purified your **souls** (lives-psukee) in your obedience to the truth."*
  - *"Now that you have purified **yourselves** (psukee)"* New International Version.
  - *"You have purified **yourselves** (psukee)"* New American Bible.
23. 1 Peter 2:25 *"For you were going astray like sheep; but are now returned unto the Shepherd and Bishop of your **souls** (lives-psukee)."*
24. 1 Peter 4:19 *"Wherefore let them also that suffer according to the will of God commit their **souls** (lives-psukee) in well-doing unto a faithful Creator."*
  - *"Trust **themselves** (psukee) to a faithful Creator"* New Revised Standard Version.
  - *"Entrust their **lives** (psukee) to a faithful Creator"* New American Bible.
25. 2 Peter 2:8 *"For that righteous man dwelling among them, in seeing and hearing, vexed (his) righteous **soul** (life-psukee) from day to day with (their) lawless deeds."*
  - *"Felt **himself** (psukee) tormented by seeing and hearing about the lawless deeds."* New American Bible.
26. 2 Peter 2:14 *"Enticing un-steadfast **souls** (persons-psukee) having a heart exercised in covetousness; children of cursing."*
  - *"They seduce the unstable"* New International Version.
27. 26. 3 John 2 *"Beloved, I pray that in all things you may prosper and be in health, even as your **soul** (life-psukee) prospers."*

#### (4) PASSAGES WITH PSUKEE APPLIED TO GOD OR CHRIST

1. Matthew 12:18 *"Behold, my servant whom I have chosen; my beloved in whom my **soul** (I am will pleased-psukee, not God's soul) is well pleased."*
  - *"My loved one in whom **I** (psukee) delight"* New American Bible.
  - *"My beloved, in whom **I** (psukee) take delight"* Revised English Bible.
2. Matthew 26:38 *"Then said he unto them, My **soul** (heart-psukee, does God have an immortal something in Him?) is exceeding sorrowful, even unto **death**: abide you*

here, and watch with me." Mark 14:34 "And he said unto them, My **soul** (heart-psukee) is exceeding sorrowful even unto **death**: abide you here, and watch."

- "Then he said to them, **I** (psukee) am deeply grieved, even to death" Matthew 26:38 New Revised Standard Version.
  - "My **heart** (psukee) is nearly broken with sorrow" New American Bible.
  - "My **heart** (psukee) is ready to break with grief" Revised English Bible.
3. Matthew 20:28 "Even as the Son of man came not to be ministered unto, but to minister, and **to give his LIFE** (psukee) a ransom for many." Mark 10:45 "For the Son of man also came not to be ministered unto, but to minister, and **to give his LIFE** (life-soul-psukee) a ransom for many."
  4. John 10:11-17 "I am the good shepherd: the good shepherd **lays down his LIFE** (psukee) for the sheep. He that is a hireling, and not a shepherd, whose own the sheep are not, beholds the wolf coming, and leaves the sheep, and flees, and the wolf snatches them, and scatters (them): (he flees) because he is a hireling, and cares not for the sheep. I am the good shepherd; and I know mine own, and mine own know me, even as the Father knows me, and I know the Father; and **I lay down my LIFE** (psukee) for the sheep. And other sheep I have, which are not of this fold: them also I must bring, and they shall hear my voice: and they shall become one flock, one shepherd. Therefore, the Father loves me, because **I lay down my LIFE** (psukee), that I may take it again." An immortal soul, as taught today, cannot die; therefore, the translators could not say Christ gave up His immortal soul. He gives His life, not an immortal soul. He died our death.
  5. John 12:27 "Now is my **soul** (psukee-now I am troubled) troubled; and what shall I say? Father, save me from this hour."
    - "Now my **heart** is troubled" New International Version.
  6. Acts 2:27 "Because you will not leave my **soul** (me-psukee) unto Hades, neither will you give your Holy One to see corruption."
    - "You will not abandon **me** (psukee) **to the grave**" New International Version.
    - "You will not abandon **me** (psukee) **to death**" Revised English Bible.
      - Both replaced "my soul" with "me" as a translation of psukee. It was Christ that was in the grave, not just a part of Him.
  7. Acts 2:31 "He foreseeing (this) spoke of the resurrection of the Christ, that neither was **HE** (psukee) left unto Hades, nor did his flesh see corruption."
    - "For you will not abandon my **soul** (psukee) to Hades" (Acts 2:27).
    - "**He** (psukee) was not abandoned to Hades" (Acts 2:29) New Revised Standard Version.
  8. Hebrews 10:38 "But my righteous one shall live by faith: And if he shrink back, my **soul** (I-psukee) has no pleasure in him."
    - "And if he shrinks back, **I** (psukee) will not be pleased with him" New International Version.
    - "And if he draws back **I** (psukee) take no pleasure in him" New American Bible.
    - "But if anyone shrinks back, **I** (psukee) take no pleasure in him" Revised English Bible.

In these passages psukee, which is translate both life and soul from the same word, refers to God or Christ, not to an invisible something that is in Christ and God.

#### **(5) PASSAGES WITH PSUKEE (soul) USED IN SYMBOLIC LANGUAGE**

For notes on these see chapter eight. Those who believe in the Pagan doctrine of an immortal soul from birth, and believe in Hell have no plain easily understood non-figurative statement. **That figurative language, metaphors and symbolic passages**

**must be made into literal statements SHOWS THE WEAKNESS OF THEIR BELIEF**, that it is from man and not from God. Figurative language and parables are made to be superior over plain statements, and clear language must be made to agree with what is thought to be said in the symbolic language.

1. Revelation 6:9 *"And when he opened the fifth seal, I saw underneath the altar the **souls** (lives-psukee) of them that had **been slain** for the word of God."* See chapter eight - the fifth seal - souls under the altar in heaven - a symbolic picture.
2. Revelation 8:9 *"And there **died** the third part of the creatures which were in the sea, (even) they that had **LIFE** (psukee); and the third part of the ships were destroyed."* A third of the immortal undying souls died? Are immortal souls, as the word is used today, in the sea? Do fish have an immortal soul?
3. Revelation 12:11 *"And they overcame him because of the blood of the Lamb, and because of the word of their testimony; and they loved not their **LIFE** (psukee) **even unto death**."* If this symbolic passage were made literal, it would say the soul (psukee) does die.
4. Revelation 16:3 *"And the second poured out his bowl into the sea; and it became blood as of a dead man; **and every living soul** (living creature-psukee) **died**, (even) the things that were in the sea."* If made literal, this symbolic passage says living souls are the things that are in the sea. Every *"living creature"* fish in the sea are **"souls (psukee)"** that died. When will all the fish in the sea literally die?
  - *"And every **living thing** (psukee) in the sea died"* New International Version.
  - *"And every **creature** (psukee) living in the sea died"* New American Bible.
  - *"And every **living thing** (psukee) in it died"* Revised English Bible.
5. Revelation 18:13-14 *"And cinnamon, and spice, and incense, and ointment, and frankincense, and wine, and oil, and fine flour, and wheat, and cattle, and sheep; and (merchandise) of horses and chariots and slaves; and **souls** (lives-psukee) of men. And the fruits which your **soul** (life-psukee) lusted after are gone from thee."* If there were an immaterial something that is in a person, could whatever this "soul" is lust after material things, if it can, then will it still lust after the person is dead? Will immortals soul be slaves in Heaven or any other place? Could an immaterial soul be bought and sold as is *"cinnamon, and spice, and incense, and ointment, and frankincense, and wine, and oil, and fine flour, and wheat, and cattle, and sheep; and (merchandise) of horses and chariots and slaves"*?
  - *"**Slaves, and human lives** (psukee)"* Revised English Bible.
6. Revelation 20:4 *"And I saw thrones, and they sat upon them, and judgment was given unto them: and (I saw) the **souls** (life-psukee) of them that had **been beheaded** for the testimony of Jesus, and for the word of God, and such as worshiped not the beast, neither his image, and received not the mark upon their forehead and upon their hand; and they lived ("came to life" New American Standard Version, New Revised Standard Version), and reigned with Christ a thousand years." "The rest of the dead lived not until" ("The rest of the dead did not come to life until" New American Standard Version, New Revised Standard Version) Revelation 20:5. Some immortal souls "came to life" and some "lived not." If the soul cannot die, it cannot come to life, and if it cannot die, then all souls live and none can "lived not." This passage is a real problem when taken literal.*
- Five of the six times psukee is used in Revelation, is something that can and does die.
  1. Revelation 6:9 **"Souls** (lives-psukee)...**slain**."

2. Revelation 8:9 "And there **died** the third part...that had **life**" (psukee).
3. Revelation 12:11 "Loved not their **life** (psukee) even unto **death**."
4. Revelation 16:3 "Every living **soul** (living being psukee) **died**" (In the sea, all fish died). Can anyone tell me why the translators, who believed the soul could not die and do not believe fish have a soul, put "ever living soul died" in this passage?
5. Revelation 20:4 "The **souls** (lives-psukee) of them that had **been beheaded**"

**THE SOUL IS THE EARTHLY IMAGE OF ADAM  
A "LIVING SOUL" IS THE "NATURAL BODY"**

Psukikos: natural (earthly).

- "The **NATURAL** (psukikos) **man**" (1 Corinthians 2:14).
- It is buried "a **NATURAL** (psukikos) **body**," it is resurrected "a **spiritual body**" (1 Corinthians 15:44).
  - It is the earthly **NATURAL** body that is buried and the same body that is resurrected but changed to a **SPIRITUAL** body, not a natural "soul" that is buried and resurrected a spiritual "soul."
- "If there is a **NATURAL** (psukikos) **body**, there is also a **spiritual body**" (1 Corinthians 15:44).
- "That which is **NATURAL** (psukikos)" (1 Corinthians 15:46).

**Neither soul nor spirit is the spiritual body that we will have after the resurrection. The spiritual body is the natural earthly body we now have changed from the image of Adam to the image of Christ; it is us changed, not an immaterial something in us changed to another immortal something after it is not in us. But those that believe either the soul or the spirit is now immortal do not believe either one will be changed to another immortal being, or changed in any way after it leaves us.**

**WE ARE NOW A LIVING SOUL THAT IS IN THE IMAGE OF ADAM**

1 Corinthians 15	(1) <b>NATURAL BODY</b>	verse 44,46		<b>WE NOW HAVE</b>
<b>ADAM</b>	(2) <b>A LIVING SOUL</b>	verse 45		<b>ADAM'S</b>
	(3) <b>EARTHLY</b>	verse 47		<b>IMAGE</b> verse 49

**WE WILL BE A SPIRITUAL BODY THAT WILL BE IN THE IMAGE OF CHRIST**

	(1) <b>SPIRITUAL BODY</b>	verse 45		<b>WE WILL HAVE</b>
<b>CHRIST</b>	(2) <b>LIFE GIVING SPIRIT</b>	verse 46		<b>CHRIST'S IMAGE</b>
	(3) <b>HEAVENLY</b>	verse 48		verse 49

"**NATURAL**" in verse 46 is used in place of "**A LIVING SOUL**" in verse 45, and ARE THE SAME THING. **We now have Adam's image (a living soul—a living being, a natural being of this earth), but we will have the image of Christ (a spiritual body).**

"For **our** citizenship is in heaven; whence also **we** wait for a Savior, the Lord Jesus Christ: who shall **fashion anew the body of our humiliation**, that **it** may be conformed to the body of His glory" (Philippians 2:20-21 American Standard Version), "**change**" King James Version, "**transform**" New American Standard Version. Version, "**transform**" New American Standard Version.

- "**The body of our humiliation**" is the body we now have that will be fashioned anew, not an immortal soul that will be refashioned.
- "**That it** may be conformed to the body of His glory," The "**it**" is the body we now have "**that will be conformed to the body of His glory.**" It is "**our citizenship**" that is in Heaven, not something that has no substance.
- It is **us** that will be "**fashion anew**" or "**changed**" or "**transform**" by putting on immortality.

"**Beloved**, now are we children of God, and **it is not yet made manifest what we shall be** (what a spiritual body is composed of). **We know that, if he shall be manifested, we shall be like him;** (have a spiritual body, be of the same substance) **for we shall see him even as he is**" (1 John 3:2).



*"For in the resurrection they neither marry, nor are given in marriage, but **are as angels in Heaven**" (Matthew 22:30). "For when they shall rise from the dead, they neither marry, nor are given in marriage; but are as angels in heaven" (Mark 12:26).*

The image of Christ, the spiritual bodies we will have after the resurrection is not an earthly body in the image of Adam. **We are now a soul (living being) in the image of Adam, but we will not be a soul (living being) in the image of Adam after the resurrection;** it is a body in the image of Christ that will be raised from the dead. All animals are souls (living beings-Hebrew nehphesh-Greek psukee), but animals will never have a spiritual body.

In commenting on *"the natural man"* in 1 Corinthians 2:14, Guy N. Woods said, "...the soulish man, since the adjective 'natural' translates a form of the Greek word for soul, which may be expressed in English as psychical. Thus, this usage is supported by etymology and required by the context. See, especially, Paul's teaching in 1 Corinthians 1:18-28 and 2:6-16." Gospel Advocate, 1985, November 21.

*"Natural"* is translated from "psuchikos." Psuchikos is the adjective form of psukee, and it is used six times in the New Testament.

1. *"But the **natural** (psuchikos-soulish) man received not"* (1 Corinthians 2:14).
2. *"It is sown a **natural** (psuchikos-soulish) body, it is raised a spiritual body"* (1 Corinthians 15:44).
3. *"There is a **natural** (psuchikos-soulish) body, there is also a spiritual body"* (1 Corinthians 15:44).
4. *"Howbeit that is not first which is spiritual, but that which is **natural** (psuchikos-soulish); than that which is spiritual"* (1 Corinthians 15:46). Now we are a natural being, then we will be a heavenly being.
5. *"These are they who made separations, **sensual** (psuchikos-soulish), having not the Spirit"* (Jude 19). *"These are the men who divide you, who follow mere **natural** (psuchikos-soulish) instincts and do not have the Spirit"* New International Version.
6. James 3:15
  - *"But it is earthly, **sensual** (psuchikos-soulish), devilish"* (James 3:15). **"Natural"** in the New American Standard Bible, **"earthly"** in the Living Bible.
  - Amplified Bible *"This (superficial) wisdom is not such as comes down from above, but is earthly, **unspiritual (animal)** (psuchikos-soulish), even devilish (demoniacal)."*
  - Contemporary English Version *"That kind of wisdom doesn't come from above. It is earthly and **selfish** (psuchikos-soulish), and comes from the devil himself."*
  - GOD'S WORD Translation *"That kind of wisdom doesn't come from above. It belongs to this world. It is **self-centered** (psuchikos-soulish), and demonic."*
  - Good News Translation *"Such wisdom does not come down from heaven; it belongs to the world, it is **unspiritual** (psuchikos-soulish), and demonic."*
  - Holman Christian Standard Bible *"Such wisdom does not come down from above, but is earthly, **sensual** (psuchikos-soulish), demonic."*
  - New Century Version *"That kind of 'wisdom' does not come from God but from the world. It is **not spiritual** (psuchikos-soulish): it is from the devil."*
  - New International Version *Such "Wisdom does not come down from heaven but is earthly, **unspiritual** (psuchikos-soulish), of the devil."*
  - New Living Translation *"For jealousy and selfishness are not God's kind of wisdom. Such things are earthly, **unspiritual** (psuchikos-soulish), and motivated by the Devil."*
  - Worldwide English (New Testament) *"God did not give you wisdom like that. But it comes from this world. **It comes from people** (psuchikos-soulish). It comes from bad spirits."*
  - Young's Literal Translation *"This wisdom is not descending from above, but earthly, **physical** (psuchikos-soulish), demon-like."*
  - Wycliffe Bible *"For this wisdom is not from above coming down, but earthly, and **bestly***

(psuchikos-soulish), and fiendly.”

From the above it is clear that psuchikos means something of this earth, and not something immaterial and immortal. The adjective form of a noun never has a meaning that is totally different from the meaning of the noun. Both the noun (psukee) and the adjective (psuchikos) are the earthly, natural (soulish) person, the image of Adam. If I believed the psukee (soul) was an immaterial invisible for the time being is now in a person, then I would hope no one would ever see its adjective form in the above six passages.

**A living soul, the earthly being in the image of Adam, will be changed to a spiritual body in the image of Christ at the resurrection.**

- Sown in corruption—raised in incorruption (1 Corinthians 15:42).
- This mortal—must put on immortality (1 Corinthians 15:53).
- Sown in dishonor—raised in glory (1 Corinthians 15:42).
- Sown in weakness—raised in power (1 Corinthians 15:43).
- Sown a natural body (flesh and blood)—raised a spiritual body (1 Corinthians 15:44).
- First (now) the natural—then that which is spiritual (1 Corinthians 15:44-49).
- The first Adam a living soul—the last Adam (Christ) a life giving spirit (1 Corinthians 15:45).
- As we bare the image of the earthy (Adam)—we shall bare the image of the heavenly (Christ) (1 Corinthians 15:49).
- Image of Adam is the earthy soul (psukee—body). Image of heavenly - Christ, the spiritual body (1 Corinthians 15:49).

This change from the image of Adam's natural soul body to the spiritual body in the image of Christ, from mortal to immortal, will occur at the Resurrection, **not at death**. No one now has the spiritual body, not anyone that is now alive, or anyone that is now asleep in Christ.

If a person has a soul that is now immortal, it cannot be mortal; therefore, it cannot put on immortality. What do some think is now mortal and will put on immortality? If a person has a soul that is now immortal, it could only be the body that will put on immortality. It is the person that will put on immortality at the resurrection, not a part of a person that was immortal from birth that could never be mortal. *"And just as we have borne the image of the earthy, we shall also bear the image of the heavenly"* (1 Corinthians 15:49). *"There shall be a resurrection both of the just and unjust"* (Acts 24:14). When Paul said this many believers had died, but their resurrection was still a thing to come, not something that had already come at their death.

Summary: A **"living soul"** is the earthly body of flesh and blood in the image of Adam, not the **"spiritual body"** that will be in the image of Christ. There is a difference in *"a living soul"* that we now are; and a *"spiritual body"* that we will be after the resurrection, but we are not at this time. **It is clear that this says after the resurrection, we will not be a "living soul," but changed to a "spiritual body"; therefore, a "living soul" and the "spiritual body" are different things. One ("the living soul") belongs to this life; the other (a "spiritual body") will belong to life after the resurrection. They are opposite to each other; a person cannot be both simultaneously. Many preachers today say, "Save your soul," which is saying, "Save your 'image of Adam,'" or, "Save your earthly flesh and blood body." While we are a "living soul," we cannot be a "spiritual body." After the resurrection, when we shall have been changed to a "spiritual body," we will no longer be a "living soul," no longer be an earthly creature in the image of Adam. If the "living soul" were an immortal**

**part of a person that would live forever, that part of a person would always have the image of Adam, not the image of Christ. Can anyone have the image of Adam in Heaven? No. We are now a "living soul" only while we are alive in this world, but in Heaven we will have a "spiritual body," and we will not be a soul.** Adam was, and we now are "a living soul-being"; but Adam did not, and we do not now have an immortal "spiritual body" (not unto the resurrection 1 Corinthians 15:53).

- *"It is sown a natural body: ("Greek physical" body: Footnote in American Standard Version) it is raised a spiritual body".*
- *"It is sown a physical body" (1 Corinthians 15:44). "The dead shall be raised incorruptible" (1 Corinthians 15:52).*

**Paul could not have said any stronger that we will be raised "a spiritual body" (1 Corinthians 15:44), "incorruptible" (1 Corinthians 15:52), not raised with the physical body we now have. The physical body is the "living soul" body we now have, and it is not the body that will be raised.** If we are raised with a body that is a spiritual body and is incorruptible, we could not at the same time be raised with an earthly body that is a corruptible body. McCord's translation, printed by Freed-Hardeman College says, *"And the dead shall be raised immortal"* (1 Corinthians 15:53). Paul said that at the time those who are asleep in Christ will be raised incorruptible, that all Christians who are not asleep shall *"be changed"* (1 Corinthians 15:51). All will be raised from the dead at the resurrection, and those in Christ will have a new body not of flesh. **We will not be a "living soul" after the resurrection. The "soul" (the image of Adam) will not exist then; that which will not exist after the resurrection is what many say we must save for they think that whatever the something they believe to be in us that it will be the only part of us that will be in Heaven. It is not a part of us that will be in Heaven, it is our whole self that we must save, not whatever this "immaterial invisible" deathless soul that is now in us is believed to be that we must save; it is us that we must save, not "it." We will not have the image of Adam, the earthly "living soul," in Heaven. We will not be a soul in the image of Adam as we are now, but we will be the same person we now are. How is it that many cannot see that when they say, "save your soul" they are saying, "keep the image of Adam" (the earthly body)? Do you want to be raised with an earthy body in the image of Adam, the body that you now have, or do you want to be raised with a spiritual body in the image of Christ? "And as we have borne the image of the earthy (now in this life time we are a psukikos—a living being in the image of the earthy Adam) we SHALL also bear the image of the heavenly" (1 Corinthians 15:49).** We are born a soul—a living being, but the saved will be resurrected a spiritual being in the image of Christ, and will not have the earthly image of Adam after the resurrection.

There are many Premillennialists and others that believe the earthly body, the image of Adam, will be raised, and believe that all the saved will live on this earth forever, not in Heaven, that the earthly body will restored to be like Adam before he sinned. I know of no passage that says Adam's body was different before and after he sinned, but if his body was different, the rest of mankind never had the body Adam had before he sinned; therefore, all but Adam would have to be raised with a body different from this body we now have. Many believe the say body we now have will be raised; there are many volumes of writing on how God will be able to restore the same body with the same particles of matter it now has. All the particles of matter in our bodies are completely

changed every few years; all the matter that has been in the body of a person that lives to be old would be enough to make many bodies, it would be a mountain of matter.

T. P. Connelly, in *The Connelly Field Debate* says, "The resurrection is, therefore, a reunion of spirit and matter, and this being true, the same particles of matter in the same body are no more necessary in order to a reunion, than that the same particles should remain at all times the same here to perpetuate the union."

According to him it would be a soul coming back from Heaven or Hell and a new earthly body is created for that soul that will be a new body made of all new particles, not a resurrection of the body a person had when he or she was living, not a resurrection of anything, not a resurrection of the body we now have but a newly created body, and not a resurrection of a soul, for a soul that is believed to be deathless could not be dead. Because the natural body, the image of Adam, will not be raised, this volume of writing is about nothing. I can understand why those in the Church Of God are concerned about what particles of matter the earthly body will be raised with for they and many Premillennialists believe that after the resurrection the soul of the saved will live on this earth and have the same bodies be now have, but Connelly is an evangelist in the Christian Church, and I cannot understand why he thinks a soul that he thinks has no substance, and that it will live forever in Heaven without this body, must come back to earth and be put into a newly created earthly body, Many who say they do not believe this body will ever be in Heaven think that at the resurrection the earthy body we now have must be resurrected even though the earthly body will never be in Heaven.

Synonyms for "soul" that are used in 1 Corinthians 15: earth, earthly (dust), corruption, natural body, mortal, image of Adam, flesh and blood.

How can death be a separation of body and soul if:

- The soul is the body, which is in the image of Adam?
- It is the soul, which is the earthly body in the image of Adam that dies. It would be a separation of the soul from the soul (the image of Adam from the image of Adam).

Mike Willis said a spiritual body is not an ethereal body any more than Christ's was a shadowy, ghostly, ethereal body. But rather, a spiritual body is a body that is suited for the spiritual world, which God has planned for mankind. He said just as certainly as there is a natural body, there will also be a spiritual body; and one is no more uncertain than the other, **and just as certainly as we have a body adapted to life in the world we now live in, so also shall we have a body that will be adapted to life in the world to come.** *A Commentary On Paul's First Epistle To the Corinthians*, Monroe County Press, 1979. He has clearly said the "soul" he thinks we now have is not the "spiritual body," which we shall have in Heaven. The "soul" could then only be a shadowy, ghostly, ethereal body, which he said Christ does not have. A spiritual body is not just a thin air, no substance, ghostly something, but we know not what. **The soul is the natural body, the image of Adam, a living being; it is the earthy body that will die and cannot inherit the Kingdom of Heaven.**

B. W. Johnson, Author of "People's New Testament With Notes" 1898: "*So also in the resurrection of the dead.*' On earth there was a body adapted to earthly condition. At death that earthly body was 'sown' or planted in the earth. *'It is sown in corruption,' or subject, to corruption. 'It is raised in incorruption...It is sown a natural body; it is raised a spiritual body.'* Our earthly bodies, like that of the earthly Adam, are of earth; the new body, *'the house not made with hands,'* is in the image of the heavenly man, the glorified body of Jesus Christ, for *'as we have borne the image of*

*the earthly, (a living soul-living being) so shall we also bear the image of the heavenly.'* Then, to silence forever those who expect a sensual heaven in which they shall abide in the flesh eternally, he exclaims, *'Now, this I say, brethren, that flesh and blood cannot inherit the kingdom of God; neither does corruption inherit incorruption.'* This, in its connection, can only have one meaning. Flesh and blood bodies, bodies made of corruptible earthly materials, are not compatible with a home in the world of redeemed and glorified spirits. The soul's tenement, if it has one, must be adapted to the new conditions of being. Are we then denied a body in the future state? By no means. I may not be able to understand the nature of that body, because I have never seen such an existence, but I can accept the statements of the word of God and believe that it is exactly fitted to the happy sphere of glorified existence. It *'is a building of God,'* it is made *'as it has pleased him,'* it is *'a spiritual body,'* it is *'incorruptible,'* it is *'immortal,'* it is after the image of the heavenly man, and *'our vile bodies (a living soul-living being) are changed into the likeness of his glorified body,'*" page 413, 1891, "Christ and the Future Life" at:

<http://www.mun.ca/rels/restmov/texts/bjohnson/etc/CATFL.HTM>

B. W. Johnson: *"The first man, Adam, was made a living soul. Gen. 2:7. From him came our natural life. The last Adam, Christ, of whom Adam was a type. A quickening spirit. By giving life to the dead, and imparting spiritual existence. Howbeit that is not first which is spiritual. The first Adam came before the second Adam. The natural body, which proceeds from the first Adam, is our tabernacle first, after this life comes the 'spiritual body,' which the second Adam gives. The first man is of the earth. Was fashioned out of the earth, Genesis 2:7. The second man is the Lord who came from heaven. As is the earthy. All have earthly bodies, like that of Adam. As is the heavenly. When we are raised to heaven we shall have spiritual bodies like Christ's."* "People's New Testament With Notes" pages 124-125.

Carl Holladay: "To the first Adam, God gave the first physical body: Adam became a living being (Gen. 2:7). To the second Adam, or the last Adam, Christ, God gave the first spiritual body. Their essential difference (and the Greek makes this clear) is that the former was essentially life-receiving, whereas the latter was life-giving. It is this that renders one physical and the other spiritual. It was the last Adam upon whom, and within whom the Spirit of God dwelt by raising him from the dead. God breathed into history a second breath of life, and vividly confirmed another mode of existence, which wholly transcended physical life: spiritual life. But, it succeeds the physical instead of replacing the physical: it is not the spiritual, which is first but the physical, and then the spiritual. Spiritual life is the hope which the resurrection of the last Adam confirmed and will eventually provide; it is inaccessible to those who are still in the physical body" "The First Letter of Paul to The Corinthians," page 209, Abilene Christian University Press, 1979.

J. W. McGarvey: "The life principle of Adam is soul, and he was formed of the earth: the life principle of Christ is spiritual. He was in heaven (John 1:10 and from thence entered the world and became flesh (John 1:14; 3:13, 21; Phil. 2:6-8; John 1:1-3; Luke 1:35). Now, as the two heads differ, so do the two families, and each resembles it's head; the earthly progeny of Adam having earthly natures, and the spiritual progeny of Christ having spiritual and heavenly natures. But in both families the earthly nature come first, and the **spiritual children wait for their manifestation**, which is the very thing about which the apostle has been talking, for **it comes when they are raised from the dead** (Rom. 8:29; 1 John 3:2; Rom. 8:22, 23; 2 Cor. 5:1-10)" Standard Bible Commentary, page 158, 1916, Standard Publishing Company.

Dr. Lange: "The expression living soul, as used in Genesis, is often taken to indicate an order of being superior to the brute, and is the text of many an argument to prove the immortality of the soul. The incorrectness of this assumption will be readily seen by referring to Genesis 1:20, 21, 24, and elsewhere, in which passages the words translated 'living soul' are used referring to the entire lower creation. They are used indifferently of man and beast to express animal life in general; and it is in this light the apostle uses them as the very course of his argument shows. **Adam is spoken of as a living soul, not to prove his immortality, but rather his mortality**" Commentary on 1 Corinthians 15:45.

**TEN DEFINITIONS OF "SOUL"  
AND EIGHTEEN DEFINITIONS OF "SPIRIT"  
AS GIVEN BY W. E. VINE**

"Vine's Complete Expository Dictionary Of Old And New Testament Words" by W. E. Vine is one of, if not the best and most used and accepted Lexicon in use. Therefore, I will use his definitions of "soul" and "spirit" as a standard work that is used to uphold the doctrine of an immortal soul.

**Of the 106 times psukee is used, he used only 4 of the 106 in (see b and c below) to prove a person has an immortal soul.** The 4 passages he used: (1) Matthew 10:28; (2) Acts 2:27; (3) 2 Corinthians 5:3-4; (4) Revelation 6:9.

**Of the 288 times spirit-pnuma is used, he used only 8 of the 288 in (see c and d below) to prove a person has an immortal spirit** (1) Luke 8:55; (2) Acts 7:59; (3) 1 Corinthians 5:5; (4) James 2:26; (5) 2 Corinthians 5:3-4; (6) Luke 24:37-39; (7) Hebrews 12:23; (8) 1 Peter 4:6.

According to his definitions, soul and spirit are not the same thing, but he says both soul and spirit are both an *"immaterial, invisible part of man."* In only 12 times of the 394 times that both soul and spirit are used, (really 11 as he used 2 Corinthians 5:3-4 in both to prove both soul and spirit are immortal even though he says soul and spirit are two entirely difference things); therefore, according to Vine the other 382 are speaking of man as an mortal earthly being, not an immortal soul or an immortal spirit. Matthew 10:28 says God can destroy the soul-psukee. In Acts 2:27 the soul (psukee-person) is in the grave un-resurrected. Neither says anything about an *"immaterial, invisible part of man."*

(1) W. E. Vine on psukee (SOUL), page 588.

**THE FOUR PASSAGES VINE USED  
TO PROVE A PERSON NOW HAS AN IMMORTAL SOUL**

He gives ten definitions of soul. He applies only two (b) and (c) of his definitions to what he thinks is an immortal soul. All the others of his definitions (a, d, e, f, g, h, i, and j) are used referring to men and animals, not to an inter being that lives after the death of the person or animal.

According to Vine, soul means both:

**(a) *"The natural life of the body."***

**(b) *"The immaterial, invisible part of man."***

In the first two of his ten definitions of soul, he makes the soul be **both** the natural mortal body in the image of Adam, and the *"the immaterial, invisible part of man."* How could both be right? If the word that is translated "soul" is the natural life of the mortal body, it could not be an immaterial, invisible something in man; that would be the same as saying black is white.

According to Vine, soul means both:

**(j) *"An animate creature, human or other."***

**(c) *"The disembodied or "unclothed" or "naked" man."***

Again he makes the word "soul" be **both** (1) Soul is the mortal being of humans and animals, even of dead mortal humans and animals, and at the same time (even while the mortal person is alive), (2) soul is the immortal part of a person that can never be dead.

1). *Psukee*—soul: **to mortal man.** W. E. Vine lists eight ways that he says "soul" applies to mortal man and animals, not to an immortal soul.

1. (a) **“The natural life of the body”** (a living being).
  2. (d) *“The seat of personality...explained as = “own self,”...the seat of the sentient element in man, that by which he perceives, reflects, feels, desires.”*
  3. (e) *“The seat of the sentient element in man, that by which he perceives, reflects, feels, desires.”*
  4. (f) *“The seat of will and purpose.”*
  5. (g) *“The seat of appetite.”*
  6. (h) *“Persons, individuals...“persons”...“anyone”...of dead bodies...“dead soul” and of animals.*
    - *The equivalent of the personal pronoun, used for emphasis and effect: 1st person, 2nd person, 3rd person.”*
  7. (j) **“An animate creature, human or other.”**
  8. (k) *“The inward man,’ the seat of the new life.”*
- 2). Psukee—soul: to man. W. E. Vine lists two ways that "soul" applies to something that is now immortal in a person.

1. (b) **“The immaterial, invisible part of man”** *Matthew 10:28; Acts 2:27.* In the first two of his ten definitions of soul, he makes the soul be **both** (1) the natural body in the image of Adam, (2) and *“the immaterial, invisible part of man,”* both mortal and immortal at the same time. This is the common way of most that believe we have a part that is now immortal.
2. (c) **“The disembodied or ‘unclothed’ or ‘naked’ man”** *2 Corinthians 5:3-4 and Revelation 6:9.* "Disembodied" is not in 2 Corinthians 5:3-4, he added it. He clearly says soul and spirit are two different things, yet he applied "naked" to both the soul (psukee) and the spirit (pneuma), even though he made a distinction in the two. He says, *“The language of Heb. 4:12 suggests the extreme difficulty of distinguishing between the soul and the spirit, alike in their nature and in their activities. Generally speaking, the spirit may be recognized as the life principle bestowed on man by God, the soul as the resulting life constituted in the individual, the body being the material organism animated by soul and spirit.”*
  1. *“The spirit may be recognized as the life principle bestowed on man from God”-W. E. Vine.*
  2. *“The body being the material organism”-W. E. Vine.*
  3. *“The soul as the resulting life” “(a) The natural life of the body” - W. E. Vine.*

Body + breath of life, spirit = a living being, a soul. This is true of both man and animals. The spirit–life principle came from God and returns to God (Ecclesiastes 12:7). The soul is the breathing creature whether a person or animal. What does he think is the immortal **part** of a person? The soul or spirit? He seems to say one (soul) at one time and the other (spirit) at another time.

If the soul (psukee) is, *“An animate creature, human or other”* how is it that he thinks people have souls but animals do not?

- **He used four passages to prove the “soul” is now immortal.**
- **About forty to prove that the “soul” is now mortal, “the natural life of the body,” an “animate creature, human or other.” How could he know when psukee is something that is now immortal, and when the same word, psukee, is something that is now mortal?**

**The four passages Vine used**

**To prove we have an immortal, immaterial soul.**

All the other passages where soul-psukee refers to a person he applied to the earthly person, not to an *“immaterial, invisible part of a man.”*

(1). Matthew 10:28: See Gehenna in chapter four, second occasion.

- (2). Acts 2:27: See hades in the New Testament in chapter six.
- (3). 2 Corinthian 5:3-4: See number five below on his eight passages on spirit, *“Longing to be clothed upon with our habitation which is from heaven.”* He used this passage to prove we have both a soul and a spirit, and both are an *“immaterial, invisible part of a person,”* but he said the soul and spirit are not the same immortal being.
- (4). Revelation 6:9: Souls under the altar See chapter eight, part three.
- Not one of his four passages has immortal or immortality in them.
  - Not one of the four says there is a soul that cannot die.
  - Not one of the four says there is a soul that will live after the death of the body.
  - Not one of the four says only a "part" of a person; only the no substance *“immaterial, invisible part of man”* will be in Heaven, and not the whole person in Heaven.

**W. E. VINE ON PNEUMA (SPIRIT)  
THE EIGHT PASSAGES VINE USED TO  
PROVE A PERSON NOW HAS AN IMMORTAL SPIRIT**

*“Pneuma primarily denotes ‘the wind’ (‘to breathe, blow’); also ‘breath.’”* W. E. Vine, Vine's Complete Expository Dictionary Of Old and New Testament Words, page 593.

(Note: While they are men who have learned more than most on Bible words, and we can learn from them, they are still just as human, just as uninspired as other men are, just as subject to err and be wrong, they are still men and hold to such things as Calvinism: Vine says, *“Adam died on the day he disobeyed God. Genesis 2:17, and hence all mankind are born in the same spiritual condition”* W. E. Vine, page 149, New Testament; and like the men who have made translations of the Bible, their views sometime show up in their work, intentional or unintentional; and we must not believe there can be no error in even the best lexicon or translations. They all have some, and no lexicon can be taken as law. McCord said Lexicons can be and are sometimes wrong. See *“Lexicons Can Be Wrong”* McCord, Guardian of Truth, page 448, 1996). In the early translations, one Greek word would be translated into many English words (an example-apollumi was translated into eight English words in the King James Version). A Lexicon wrote later would give all eight English words as the meaning of the one Greek word. Lexicons sometimes define a Greek word more by the way that word is used in the English translations than that by the way it was used in the Greek New Testament, if the English translations translate one Greek word 8 or 10 different English words, the lexicons give 8 or 10 different meanings of the one Greek word. The question is why did the early translations use many words to translate one word? By being able to translate one Greek word into many English words gives them the ability to make any verse not say something they did not want it to say. One word, nephesh, is rendered with about forty-four different words in the King James Old Testament.

**W. E. VINE'S EIGHTEEN WAYS "SPIRIT" IS USED**

They are almost the same as the ways he says “soul” is used - see above. **Of the eighteen ways Vine says the Greek word “pneuma” that is translated “spirit” is used in the Bible,**

- **Sixteen of the eighteen ways he says spirit is used in the New Testament are not used with reference to an undying *“immaterial, invisible part of man.”***
- **Only two - C and D** are the only two of the eighteen different ways he says spirit is used, which he used to prove a person is a two-fold being, and they do not do it.
- **Pneuma is used in the Greek New Testament 288 times. Of the 288 times pneuma is used, Vine says only 8 are speaking of an immortal spirit in persons.**

None of the eight passages he used say anything about an immortality soul. Those eight do not prove we have either a spirit or a soul in us that is now immortal.

“Vine’s Complete Expository Dictionary,” page 593, he says when “spirit” is used in regard to a person it has reference to attitude, behavior, thinking, disposition, mood, courage, or temperament. As “a happy disposition,” “good attitude” or “bad mood.” These are all attitudes of a living person, not of an immortal something in a person.

He says spirit-pneuma when it used in regard to man:



1). *Pneuma*—spirit: to being not of this earth, God, Christ, Holy Spirit, angels, and other spirits both clean and unclean.

1. (k) The Holy Spirit
2. (m) Unclean spirits, demons
3. (n) Angels

2). *Pneuma*—spirit: **to mortal man**. W. E. Vine lists thirteen definition of “spirit” that makes "spirit" apply to mortal man.

1. (a) *“The wind”*
2. (b) *“The breath”*
3. (e) *“The resurrection body”*
4. (f) ***“The sentient element in man, that by which he perceives, reflect, feels, desires”***
5. (g) *“Purpose, aim”*
6. (h) *“The equivalent of the personal pronoun, used for emphasis and effect”*
7. (i) *“Character”*
8. (j) *“Moral qualities and activities”*
  - *“Bad: As of bondage, As of a slave, Stupor, and Timidity”*
  - *“Stupor”*
  - *“Timidity”*
  - *“Good: As of adoption, liberty as of a son, Faith, Quietness”*
    - i. *“Liberty as of a son”*
    - ii. *“Meekness”*
    - iii. *“Faith”*
  - *“Quietness”*
9. (l) *“The inward man, ' an expression used only of the believer, The new life”*
10. (o) *“Divine gift for service”*
11. (p) *“By metonymy, those who claim to be depositories of these gifts”*
12. (q) *“The significance, as contrasted with the form, of words, or of a rite”*
13. (r) *“A vision”*

None of these says a person is a spirit being, but they all have reference to attitude or behavior of the person. Question: How does he know when the one word that is used in the Greek, “pneuma” has all these different meaning? Why does pneuma means “purposes” in 2 Corinthians 12:18 and “meekness in 1 Corinthians 4:21. Purposes and meekness are not 31<sup>st</sup> cousins, they are completely difference in meaning; how did he get both from pneuma? “Character” is nothing like purposes or meekness, yet he translates all three from the same Greek word.

3). *Pneuma*—spirit: to man. Vine lists two definition of "spirit" that is something immortal in man.

1. (c) *“The immaterial, invisible part of man, Luke 8:55; Acts 7:59; 1 Corinthians 5:5; James 2:26”*
2. (d) *“The disembodied, or unclothed, or naked, 2 Corinthians 5:3, 4; Luke 24:37-39; Hebrews 12:23; 1 Peter 4:6”*

“What is immateriality? Strictly speaking it is, not material - not matter. In other words - it is not substance. What is that which has no substance? - What kind of creation is it? If the Creator formed "all things out of nothing," it would seem that man's soul has taken the form of its original, and is nothing still; for it is not matter, we are told. If it is said - "It is a spiritual substance" - I ask, What kind of substance is that, if it is not matter?” George Storrs, “Is There Immortality In Sin and Suffering?” 1885.

Vine's gives eight passages in (c) and (d) to prove a person now has in immortal “spirit.” (1) Luke 8:55; (2) Acts 7:59; (3) 1 Corinthians 5:5; (4) James 2:26; (5) 2 Corinthians 5:3-4; (6) Luke 24:37-39; (7) Hebrews 12:23; (8) 1 Peter 4:6, but he used about sixty-two passages where he says the same Greek word is something that is now mortal.

Passages which speak of mood, an attitude, frame of mind, behavior, thinking, disposition, courage, or temperament of a mortal person(s) in this life time, feeling that we can and do know about, not an immortal separate conscious entity that we have no way of knowing if it was troubled, stirred, fervent, or no way of knowing anything about it feeling or even if it has feeling.

- “He was troubled in SPIRIT (pnuma)” (John 13:21)
  - “Jesus was deeply troubled” New International Version
- “The wisdom and the SPIRIT (pnuma) by which...” (Acts 6:10)
- “His SPIRIT (pnuma) was stirred in him” (Acts 17:16)
  - “He was greatly distressed” New International Version
- “Paul was pressed in the SPIRIT (pnuma)” (Acts 18:5)
- “Being fervent in the SPIRIT (pnuma)” (Acts 18:25)
  - “He spoke with great fervor” New International Version
- “Paul purposed in the SPIRIT (pnuma)” (Acts 19:21)
  - “Paul made up his mind” Today’s English Version
- “Whom I serve with my SPIRIT (pnuma)” (Romans 1:9)
  - “Whom I serve with my whole heart” New International Version
- “But to be SPIRITUALLY (pnuma) minded is life and peace” (Romans 8:6)
- “The SPIRIT (pnuma) of bondage...the SPIRIT (pnuma) of adoption” (Romans 8:15)
- “God gave them a SPIRIT (pnuma) of stupor” (Romans 11:8)
- “Fervent in SPIRIT (pnuma)” (Romans 12:11)
- “Not the SPIRIT (pnuma) of the world” (1 Corinthians 2:12)
- “In the SPIRIT (pnuma) of meekness” (1 Corinthians 4:21)
  - “With a gentle spirit” New International Version
  - “A heart of love and gentleness” Today’s English Version
- “Being absent in body but present in SPIRIT (pnuma)” (1 Corinthians 5:3)
- “They have refreshed my SPIRIT (pnuma)” (1 Corinthians 16:18)
- “I had no rest in my SPIRIT (pnuma)” (2 Corinthians 2:13)
  - “I still had no peace of mind” New International Version
- “We having the same SPIRIT (pnuma) of faith” (2 Corinthians 4:13)
- “Because his SPIRIT (pnuma) was refreshed” (2 Corinthians 7:13)
  - “By all this we are encouraged” New International Version
- “Walked we not in the same SPIRIT (pnuma)?” (Corinthians 12:18)
- “Give unto you the SPIRIT of wisdom” (Ephesians 1:17)
- “Be renewed in the SPIRIT (pnuma) of your mind” (Ephesians 4:23)
  - “To be made new in the attitude of your minds” New International Version
- “That you stand fast in one SPIRIT (pnuma)” (Philippians 1:27)
- “God has not given us the SPIRIT (pnuma) of fear” (2 Timothy 1:7)
- “Of a meek and quiet SPIRIT (pnuma)” (1 Peter 3:4)
- “For the SPIRIT of glory (pnuma)” (1 Peter 4:14)
- “The SPIRIT (pnuma) of truth, and the SPIRIT (pnuma) of error” (1 John 4:6)

How spirit-ruach is used in the Old Testament. “Vine’s Complete Expository Dictionary,” pages 240-241 Just as in the New Testament, when spirit is used in reference to a person, it is the disposition of the persons mind or thinking.

- **A man’s mind-set, disposition, or “temper”:** “Blessed is the man unto whom the Lord imputeth not iniquity, and in whose spirit there is no guile” (Ps. 32:2). In Ezek. 13:3 the word is used of one’s mind or thinking: “Woe unto the foolish prophets, that follow their own spirit, and have seen nothing” (cf. Prov. 29:11).

- **Ruach can represent particular dispositions**, as it does in Josh. 2:11: *“And as soon as we had heard this things, out hearts did melt, neither did there remain any more courage in any man, because of you...”* (cf. Josh. 5:1; Job 15:12).
- **Another disposition represented by this word is “temper”**: *“If the spirit (temper) of the ruler rise up against thee, leave not thy place...”* (Eccl. 10:4). David prayed that God would *“restore unto me the joy of thy salvation; and uphold me with the free Spirit”* (Ps. 51:12). In this verse “joy of salvation” and “free Spirit” are parallel and; therefore, synonymous terms. Therefore, “spirit” refers to one’s inner disposition, just as “joy” refers to an inner emotion.

**(1). W. E. VINE’S FIRST PASSAGE OF HIS EIGHT**

**To prove there is a SPIRIT in a person that is now immortal**

***“And her spirit returned” Luke 8:55***

W. E. Vine says pneuma (soul) is *“the natural life of the body,”* page 588. In Luke 8:55 it means her life returned. Vine said, *“The spirit may be recognized as the life principle bestowed on man by God, the soul as the resulting life constituted in the individual, the body being the material organism animated by soul and spirit,”* page 589. He points out that man, as he is now, can have no life without the body. After the resurrection the saved will have a new body. The lost are not said to put on a new glorious spiritual body (2 Thessalonians 4:23ff, 1 Corinthians 15:43), or to have immortality, which they must have if they will live forever in torment. Pneuma-spirit is also translated “life” in Revelation 13:15. **Vine makes a clear distinction between soul and spirit, but says both are an “immaterial, invisible part of man.”** On page 588 soul is *“the immaterial, invisible part of man;”* on page 593 spirit is *“the immaterial, invisible part of man.”* Does he think people have two *“immaterial, invisible part(s)”*? Is this proof that, as McCord says, *“Lexicons Can Be Wrong”*? **Vine also applied, “A building from God, a house not made with hands, eternal, in the heavens” (2 Corinthians 5:3-4) to both the soul and the spirit, but he and many others believes the soul and the spirit are not the same thing, yet say both are “a house not made with hands.” Do we have two buildings from God for the two “immaterial, invisible parts” of a person, (1) one building “not made with hands” for the spirit, (2) and another building “not made with hands” for the soul? According to Vine we do; do you believe him?**

**(2). W. E. VINE’S SECOND PASSAGE OF HIS EIGHT**

**To prove there is a SPIRIT in a person that is now immortal**

***“Receive my spirit” Acts 7:59***

If Stephen were asking for his spirit to be received at the resurrection, for this is when we will be received in Heaven, then where is his spirit before the resurrection? For this to prove Stephen had a spirit that would be alive from death unto the Resurrection, his spirit would have to be received by God at death, both (1) received before the resurrection, (2) and received without the resurrection. Stephen was asking God to receive him at the judgment, not at death. Those who teach we go to Abraham's bosom do not believe we are caught up to Heaven immediately at death so why are they using this to prove what happens to us at death when they do not believe God receives us into Heaven at the time of our death? To make this teach we have an immortal soul, which does not die when the body dies, (1) soul and spirit must be made to be the same thing, his spirit that he was asking to be received would be his soul, (2) then contrary to their belief about Abraham's bosom that no one will be in Heaven before the resurrection; they send Stephen’s soul to Heaven at his death. Is it because there is no real proof, and scripture must be misused to make it sound as though there is proof, and even misuse them in a way that is

contradictory to their own belief. We are not told that Stephen's soul or spirit went to Heaven, or that he went to Abraham's bosom, but we are clearly told that Stephen, not his soul, "*fell asleep*" (Acts 7:60), not that he has "gone to be with the Lord," not told that he is now in Heaven "looking down on us" as is often preached today. Maybe they think Stephen's soul is asleep in Heaven or Abraham's bosom. If the real Stephen were the spirit, then what was the "*he*" that "*fell asleep*" (Acts 7:60)? The "*he*" that fell asleep was Stephen (the whole person), not just an earthly body that will never be in Heaven that is now asleep while the real Stephen is now awake in Heaven. Either "the real Stephen" "*fell asleep*" or he is awake, one or the other but not both.

Stephen said, "*Lay not this sin to their charge*" (Acts 7:60). The book of Job was inspired, but the speeches of his three friends were not inspired, and much in their speeches is not true (Job 42:7; Job 42:8). See "Job" By Homer Hailey and "Guide to Bible Study" by J. W. McGarvey. Was Stephen speaking by inspiration, or was Luke only inspired to write what Stephen said, just as the writer of Job was inspired to write the uninspired speeches of Job's friends even when it is said that they spoke not the truth? The question is, "what did Stephen ask God to do, and when was he asking God to do it?" "*Lord, lay not this sin to their charge?*" (Acts 7:60). This shows he had love even to those who were doing him harm as he should, but what he was asking could not be unless they believed, repented, and were baptized. There is no other way that God could not lay this sin to their charge, or the death of Christ would not have been needed. Therefore, God could not do what Stephen was asking. Stephen was not speaking by inspiration when he said this, for if he were, he would not have been inspired to ask God to do something God could not do. Christ said, "*Father, into your hands I commit My spirit: and having said this, He breathed His last*" (Luke 23:46). Isaiah 53:12 in the King James Version "*because he has poured out his soul unto death,*" is "*because he poured out Himself to death*" in the New American Standard Version, and "*because He poured out his life unto death*" in the New International Version. Christ gave his life for us, not a no substance something that according to today's theology could not die, and Christ's soul was alive in "Hell" in the three days that his body was in the grave. If Christ did not really give up His life, if He were as much alive as He was before He came to earth there was no resurrection. He did not die for us. We are still in our sins with no hope. "*For you will not abandon my soul to sheol*" (Psalm 16:10). "*Because you will not abandon me to the grave*" New International Version is quoted in the New Testament, "*Because you will not leave My soul unto hades*" (Acts 2:27 and 31). "*In hell*" in the King James Version. Christ gave His life for our sins. Sheol is the grave. He died our death, and went to the grave, and was raised from the grave by the Father. He was not abandon to the grave.

(1). "*Christ died for our sins*" (1 Corinthians 15:3).

(2). "*He was buried*" (1 Corinthians 15:4).

(3). "*He has been raised on the third day*" (1 Corinthians 15:4).

- If He went to Heaven at the moment of death, He could not have been buried for He would have been alive in Heaven.
- He could not have been raised on the third day, for He would have been alive in Heaven, not dead and buried in the grave.
- If He were alive in Heaven there was no resurrection, for He would not have been dead on the third day.

Unconditional immortality completely destroys the resurrection.

### (3). W. E. VINE'S THIRD PASSAGE OF HIS EIGHT

#### To prove the SPIRIT is now immortal: I Corinthians 5:5

*"To deliver such a one unto Satan for the destruction of the flesh, that the spirit may be saved in the day of the Lord Jesus."* The day of the Lord Jesus is the day of His second coming and the day of the resurrection. Is Vine saying salvation will be given to any one after the resurrection?

The context of this passage is disfellowship of the person committing fornication with his father's wife. *"To deliver such a one unto Satan"* is to disfellowship him in hope that he will repent; it is not to literally deliver him to Satan; there would be no way that the Corinthians are any one could literally take any living person to Satan. *"For the destruction of the flesh"* is the destruction of the things in his or her life for which they wee to deliver him or her to Satan, not to literally destroy their flesh (body). Paul was not telling them to literally destroy the body of another living person, *"That the spirit may be saved in the day of the Lord Jesus."* This is one of Paul's *"things hard to be understood"* (1 Peter 3:16). *"The day of the Lord Jesus"* is the day of His second coming, the resurrection, and judgment. Even most of those who believe we have an immortal soul or an immortal spirit that is different than the person does not believe either one can be saved at any time after death, not even on *"The day of the Lord Jesus."* It most likely means that he if the person disfellowshipped will be saved from the second death after the Judgment (Revelation 21:8) if being disfellowshipped makes him repent before his death.

### (4). W. E. VINE'S FORTH PASSAGE

#### To prove there is a SPIRIT in a person that is now immortal

#### **"For as the body apart from the spirit is dead" James 2:26**

What does this passage teach us about the spirit? Only that the body is dead without it. Nothing more. To teach anything more than this from this passage it must be read into it. WHAT THIS PASSAGE DOES NOT SAY.

- It does not say the spirit is alive after death without the body, **but this is what it is used to proved.**
- It does not say the spirit is an *"immaterial, invisible part of man"* that will live without the body after the body is dead.
- It does not say the spirit and the soul are both the same thing, but this passage is used repeatedly to prove the "soul" is immortal. There could not be a better example of adding to God's word then this passage when it is used to teach mankind has an immortal soul, for it says nothing about a soul, Hell, torment, Heaven, or eternal life, but all these are read into it.
- **How is this passage used? It is changed from saying *"the body apart from the spirit is dead"* to *"the spirit apart from God is separated from God but not dead,* (changed to being "spiritual dead" often while the body is still alive).**Death is removed from this passage and replaced with eternal life separated from God. It is changed to teach the "soul" is never dead, which is not even close to what it says.****

### (5). W. E. VINE'S FIFTH PASSAGE OF HIS EIGHT

#### To prove there is a SPIRIT in a person that is now immortal

#### ***"Longing to be clothed upon with our habitation which is from heaven"***

**2 Corinthians 5:3-4**

He used 2 Corinthians 5:3-4 to prove a person has an *"immaterial, invisible part of man"* that will live after the person is dead, will live without the person it is now in.

- In this passage there is nothing about an immortal soul or an immortal spirit.
- Nothing about a person being a dual being while in the earthly house.
- Nothing is said about an intermediate state from death unto the resurrection.

**If it were as Vine says, that this clothing is "a never-dying spirit" it would not be possible to be unclothed. If this clothing were our spirit or our soul, then to be "unclothed" or "naked" would be not to have either a spirit or a soul. He added, "disembodied" to get his immaterial soul, but adds it to both soul and spirit, which he said are not the same. If all have an immortal soul from birth, not even the lost could ever be "naked" or "unclothed." If all have an immortal soul and if the "house not made with hands" were, as he says, both a soul and a spirit, even the lost would have both of these houses that are "not made with hands," and no one, saved or lost could ever not have two houses "not made with hands," not now in this life time, or not at any time after death.**

2 Corinthians 5:1-2: *"For we know that if the earthly tent, which is our house is torn down, we have a building from God, a house not made with hands, eternal in the heavens. For indeed in this house we groan, (now while we are in this life) **longing to be clothed with our dwelling from heaven**, inasmuch as we, having put it on, will not be found naked (not have the life Christ gives to them that obey Him). For indeed **while we are in this tent, we groan, being burdened, because we do not want to be unclothed but to be clothed**, (the groaning and not wanting to be unclothed but clothed is now while we are in this tent, clothed while we are still in this body living on this earth) so that what is mortal will be swallowed up by life. Now He who prepared us for this very purpose is God, who gave to us the Spirit as a pledge. Therefore, being always of good courage, and knowing that while we are at home in the body we are absent from the Lord—for we walk by faith, not by sight—we are of good courage, I say, and prefer rather to be absent from the body and to be at home with the Lord."* While we are alive in this body—tent we see the Lord by faith, not by sight; when we are at home with the Lord we shall see Him as He is, this mortal body will be swallowed by immortality.

OUR HOUSE, WHICH IS **FROM** GOD

Or

OUR HOUSE, WHICH IS **OF** GOD?

- *"We have a building **of** (ek) God"* 2 Corinthians 5:1
- *"Our house which is **from** (ek) heaven"* 2 Corinthians 5:2
- *"Rather to be absent **from** (ek) the body"* 2 Corinthians 5:8

Ek in the Greek is translated **of, from, out of, by**, etc.

- *"As **of** (ek) sincerity, but as **of** (ek) God"* 2 Corinthians 2:17
- *"Think any thing as **of** (ek) ourselves"* 2 Corinthians 3:5
- *"The light to shine **our of** (ek) darkness"* 2 Corinthians 4:6
- *"And all things are **of** (ek) God"* 2 Corinthians 5:18

Most of the times ek is used it makes sense if it is translated **of** or **from**, but in 2 Corinthians 5:2 *"A house which is **from** heaven"* makes the house we will have after *"the earthly house of this tabernacle were dissolved"* be **"from Heaven,"** not in or **"of Heaven."** In this passage whether it is translated **"from heaven"** or **"of heaven"** makes a big difference in where our dwelling will be, it changes our dwelling from being in Heaven

to being from Heaven but not in Heaven. The “*building*” of 5:1 and the “*house*” of 5:2 are the same building or house, Both times ek should have been translated “**of**,” Both the “*building*” and the “*house*” are **of** Heaven, not **from** Heaven.

2 Corinthians 5:1-10 is used to show the “*house not made with hands*” is the spirit, and that the spirit is now conscious and will continue to be conscious before the resurrection without the person. This “*longing to be clothed upon with our habitation that is from Heaven,*” is longing for our habitation that will be received at “*the judgment seat*” (5:10), not in this life, or not at our death. **If, as those who use this passage to teach, that this “*house not made with hands*” is an immortal soul, we would now have an immortal soul living in us if we are saved or living in us even if we were lost, then why would we be “*longing to be clothed*” with our “*house not made with hands*” when we would already be clothed with it if it were an immortal soul that is already in all, and all, both the saved and the lost, even those not in Christ would already be clothed with the “*house not made with hands*” from the day of their birth, BUT THE HOUSE WE ARE LONGING TO BE CLOTHED WITH IS NOT A SOUL THAT EVERONE WOULD BE ARE ALREDY CLOTHED WITH.** Paul is made to say we are longing to be clothed with a soul that we are already clothed with and have been clothed with a soul from birth. There is nothing about a “soul” in this passage. “Spirit” has to be read into this for Paul said nothing about “spirit” in 2 Corinthians 5:1-10.

- (1) It is about **us** now in this life.
- (2) And **us** at the judgment seat.
- (3) And then **us** at home in Heaven.

It is about our whole person changing our earth house for our house in Heaven.

OUR MORTAL NATURE NOW ON EARTH 2 Cor. 5:1-11	OUR IMMORTAL NATURE AFTER THE RESURRECTION IN HEAVEN, after second coming
"The earthly house"	"A building from God-eternal in the heavens"
"Longing to be clothed upon"	"With our habitation that is of (ek) Heaven"
"At home in the body"	"At home with the Lord"
"That what is mortal"	"May be swallowed up of life"
"This mortal"	"Must put on immortality" 1 Corinthians 15:53

Paul says nothing about any kind of existence from death to the resurrection. “*That what is mortal may be swallowed up of life*” (2 Corinthians 5:4). When will this be? It will be at the resurrection, not instantly at death (1 Corinthians 15:54).

The lost do not now and will never have “*a building from God, a house not made with hands, eternal in the heavens.*” According to the immortal soul teaching of today that the soul is now immortal, then what is “*mortal that is swallowed up of life?*” (2 Corinthians 5:4).

- At death, the body that is mortal dies and goes to the grave. The dead body has no life and is not swallowed up of life.
- They believe the soul is now as immortal as it will be after the death of the body, that the soul is now as immortal as it will ever be. Is there any swallowing of mortality by life here? No. According to this view the body will be dead, the soul will have the same life after death that it now has, and it could not be no more immortal than we are told that it now is. Nothing will be swallowed up by life.

According to this view, there is no way to make any sense from what Paul said.

The mortal person is swallowed up by life at the resurrection of the dead at the second coming when immortality will be put on. “*He who has prepared us for this very thing is God, who has given us the Spirit as a guarantee*” (2 Corinthians 5:5 New Revised Standard Version).

We need to take care that we do not put an interpretation on any passage that will make it clash with other passages. It is evident that Paul did not expect the dead in Christ,

those who have fallen asleep (1 Corinthians 15:1-28), to be with Christ before the resurrection.

Paul is speaking of the person, the mortal person "*while we are in this tent,*" and the immortal person after "*what is mortal will be swallowed up by life.*" He says nothing about something that is now immortal, but will be a naked immortal something between death and the resurrection.

1. The "*earthly house of our tabernacle*" is the earthly body that we are now in.
2. "*A building from (Greek-ek-of) God, a house not made with hands, eternal in the heavens.*"

If it is only something in us that has no substance as Vine says, or something that is thoughts only as Peterson says, then this no substance, thoughts only, nothing could not live in a building of any kind.

**Those who believe the soul is something that is now in a person, that is now alive, and it will always be alive after the death of the person:**

- **Believe the same soul that is now in a person.**
  - **Is the same soul we that will leave the person after the death of the person.**
  - **And is the same soul that will be in Heaven or Hell; for they believe "*the immaterial, invisible part of man*" is just as immortal now as it will be after the resurrection and judgment; they believe it is just as immortal now while it is now in a person on earth as it will be after it leaves the person and is in Heaven or Hell.**

**A soul that can never not have life, being naked after death is not possible for it, and it makes no sense if you believe a person now has the same immortal soul that a person will always have; and that it is only this "*immaterial, invisible part of man*" that will live forever in Heaven or Hell.** A soul being "*disembodied*" is not in the Bible, and therefore is a doctrine of man. Vine added, "*disembodied,*" and makes disembodied mean the same thing as "*unclothed,*" or "*naked,*" therefore, all souls are naked (disembodied) because, according to Vine, no soul does not have a body. Paul's words have to be changed to get an immaterial immortal soul. Most Protestants believe the soul goes immediately to Heaven or Hell at death; therefore, Vine's teaching of a soul being in a *disembodied--naked* state after death does not fit with what most Protestants believe, it is a total contradiction to it. The Catholic or the Protestant views do not have any room for an intermediate "*disembodied*" state from death to the resurrection. **Vine's disembodied--naked soul from death to the resurrection is saying they are both wrong, for most in the mainstream Protestants or Catholics do not believe there is a "disembodied" state for the soul from death to the resurrection, but believe that the soul goes instantly to Heaven or Hell at death with no disembodied state in between death and Heaven.** This passage is just another of the many passages that are an unexplainable passage to anyone with the Protestant view, but Vine did the best he could even if he has to be both unorthodox and change the Bible. To be naked or unclothed is to be without Christ, both in this life and at the resurrection.

The passage says nothing about a "soul." Paul used "*we*" not "our soul." "***But that WE would be clothed upon that what is mortal may be swallowed up of life.***"

**WHEN WILL WE BE PRESENT WITH THE LORD?**



- "For the Lord himself shall descend from heaven, with a shout, with the voice of the archangel, and with the trump of God: **and the dead in Christ shall rise first**; (all the dead in Christ shall rise at the same time at the coming of Christ) *them that are alive, that are left, shall together with them be caught up in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the air: and so shall we ever be with the Lord*" (1 Thessalonians 4:16-17). Both (1) believers that are dead in Christ and (2) believers that will be alive at His coming will **both together** be caught up and ever be with the Lord; this clearly shows that the dead in Christ are not now in Heaven with the Lord before and without being resurrected from the dead. If they were now alive in Heaven they would not be "dead in Christ," they could not "rise first," be resurrected from the dead before those who are alive are "changed." It is (1) dead Christians (persons) that will be resurrected (2) and living Christians (persons) that will be changed from mortal to immortal, not (1) dead souls resurrected (2) and living souls changed.
- "We all shall not sleep but we shall all be changed, in a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, **at the last trump**: for the trumpet shall sound and **the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we** (those who are alive when Christ comes) **shall be changed**. For this corruptible must put on incorruption, and **this mortal must put on immortality**" (1 Corinthians 15:51-53). Paul is clearly speaking of this mortal person putting on immortality, not a soul that is already immortal putting on immortality. An immortal soul is read into this passage when nothing is said about a soul in it.
- At our gathering together unto Him at "the coming of the Lord" (2 Thessalonians 2:1).
- When the Lord shall descend from Heaven with a shout (1 Thessalonians 4:13-17).
- When Christ who is our life shall be manifest (Colossians 3:4).
- "In the future there is laid up for me the crown of righteousness, which the Lord, the righteous Judge, will award to me **on that day**; and not only to me, but also to all who have loved His appearing" (2 Timothy 4:8). If it is "on that day" it is not possible to be at death.
- "In My Father's house are many dwelling places; if it were not so, I would have told you; for I go to prepare a place for you. And if I go and prepare a place for you, **I will come again, and RECEIVE YOU to Myself, that where I am, there you may be also**" (John 14:2-3). Christ has not yet come to receive Paul or any one; therefore, Christ has not received any one to be in the prepared place. He did not say to those in Heaven with Him, "I will come again, and **receive your body**, that where we are, there **your body** may be also be with us." Did Jesus say, "And if I go your death shall soon bring you to me?" No. He said, "**I will come again and receive YOU to Myself.**"
- "For this is the will of my Father that everyone that beholds the Son, and believes on him, should have eternal life; **and I will raise him up at the last day**" (John 6:40, 44, 54). Is He going to rise up "everyone that beholds the Son, and believes on him" by bringing them from Heaven, or by raising them from the dead? Also 1 Thessalonians 4:16-17; John 11:24; 1 John 3:2, and many other passages.

Even though Paul know his death was near he anticipated receiving "the crown of righteousness" to be given to him by the Lord "on that day," not at his death if he should die before the coming of the Lord, and that this crown of life would also be given to "all them that have loved his appearing" "on that day" (2 Timothy 4:6-8), both to all the saved that are asleep in Christ and to all the saved that will be alive when He comes.

In the above passages it is said when we will go to Heaven in such a simple and clear way that I cannot understand how anyone cannot understand them, or how they could say, "Not true Lord, we are not going to wait unto You come again." If an immaterial no substance soul were alive with the Lord immediately after death then that soul that is alive could not be resurrected from the dead at His coming; an immortal soul could not "put on immortality" at the coming of Christ. In 2 Corinthians 5:1-10 Paul says nothing about a "soul," he is speaking of the whole person.

- According to both the Catholic and Protestant versions, the body is now mortal and the soul is now immortal. At the death of the body, the soul is already immortal and is not changed, and nothing of this

mortal is swallowed up of life; at death the body goes back to the earth, and nothing of the body will put on immortality, and nothing is swallowed up of life.

- According to the Bible version, this mortal is changed and puts on immortality at the resurrection, will put on immortality that this mortal does not now have, that will be put on at the resurrection (1 Corinthians 15:50-55; 1 Thessalonians 4:13-17). This mortal is swallowed up of life (2 Corinthians 5:4). The Bible says this mortal person will put on immortality; it never says an immortal soul will put on immortality.

Paul says the same thing in Romans 8:23-24 and 2 "Corinthians 5:1-2. “ *Waiting for our adoption, to wit, the redemption of our body,*” and “*longing to be clothed upon with our habitation which is from heaven*” is the same thing and will be at the resurrection, not at death; neither of these two passages say anything about an immortal part of a person that will be alive before the resurrection.

Romans 8:23-24		2 Corinthians 5:1-2
But ourselves also, who have the		Who give unto us the earnest of the
first-fruits of the Spirit		Spirit" See Eph 1:13-14; Rom 8:11
Even we ourselves groan		In this we groan,
within ourselves		.
waiting for our adoption, to		longing to be clothed upon with our
wit, the redemption of our body		habitation which is from heaven

It is our bodies changed body that will be redeemed, clothed with our habitation from Heaven, not a soul.

Scott P. Wiley in "Eternal Torment or Annihilation" makes the grave be the place where man puts bodies, but he says sheol is not the grave, but sheol is a place under the earth where God puts the souls of the dead, some in one part of sheol are happy and some in another part of sheol are in torment, and they are waiting there for the resurrection. If Paul and all the saved go to be with the Lord at death and the Lord is in Heaven there is no such place as sheol or hades, or if there where such a place no one would be in it for we are told they would be with the Lord in Heaven. If the dead all go to sheol and they are with the Lord, the Lord would be in sheol under the earth, or wherever those who believe sheol is a storehouse for living souls to be at; therefore, the Lord could not be in Heaven, not setting on the right hand of God. **If all are transported to Heaven or Hell instantly at death, it would makes all the passages that speak of the dead being in sheol or hades (the grave) a lie, and all the passages that speak of the resurrection of the dead be a lie, for those in Heaven could not be dead; it makes the Bible say one thing in one place and another thing in another place.**

COMPANION BIBLE by E.W. Bullinger, on 2 Corinthians 5:8: “It is little less than a crime for anyone to pick out certain words and frame them into a sentence, not only disregarding the scope and context, but ignoring the other words in the verse, and quote the words ‘absent from the body, present with the Lord’ **with the view of dispensing with the hope of the Resurrection (which is the subject of the whole passage) as though it were unnecessary; an as though ‘present with the Lord’ is obtainable without it.**”

#### 2 CORINTHIANS 5:1-4

In contemporary English and paraphrased translations

NEW LIVING TRANSLATION: “*For we know that when this earthly tent we live in is taken down—when we die and leave these bodies—we will have a home in heaven, an eternal body made for us by God himself and not by human hands. We grow weary in our present bodies, and long for the day when we will put on our heavenly bodies like new clothing. For WE will not be spirits without bodies, but WE will put on new heavenly bodies. Our dying bodies make us groan and sigh, but it’s not that we want to die and have no bodies at all. We want to slip into our new bodies so that these dying bodies will be swallowed up by everlasting life.*”

THE LIVING BIBLE PARAPHRASED: "For **we** know that when this tent **we** live in now is taken down—**we** will have wonderful **new bodies** in heaven, homes that will be **ours** forevermore, made for **us** by God himself, and not by human hands. How weary **we** grow of our present **bodies**. That is why **we** look forward eagerly to the day when **WE shall have heavenly bodies** which **we** shall put on like new clothes. For **we** shall not be merely spirits without **bodies**. These earthly bodies make **us** groan and sigh, but **we** wouldn't like to think of dying and having no **bodies** at all. **We** want to slip into our **new bodies** so that these dying **bodies** will as it were, be swallowed up by everlasting life."

CONTEMPORARY ENGLISH VERSION: "Our bodies are like tents that **we** live in here on earth. But when these tents are destroyed, **we** know that God will give each of **us** a place to live. These homes will not be buildings that someone has made, but they are in heaven and will last forever. While **we** are here on earth, **we** sigh because **we** want to live in that heavenly home. **We** want to put it on like clothes and not be naked. These tents **we** now live in are like a heavy burden, and **we** groan, But **we** don't do this just because **we** want to leave these bodies that will die. It is because **WE want to change them for bodies that will never die.**"

NEW CENTURY VERSION: "**We** know that our **body**—the tent **we** live in here on earth—will be destroyed. But when this happens, God will have a house for us. It will not be a house made by human hands; instead, it will be a home in heaven that will last forever. But now **we** groan in this tent. We want God to give us our heavenly home, because **it will clothe us so we will not be naked**. While **we** live in this **body**, **we** have burdens, and **we** groan. **We** do not want to be naked, but want to be clothed with **our** heavenly home."

THE SIMPLE ENGLISH BIBLE: "When the earthly 'tent' in which **we** live is destroyed, **we** know that **we** have another building which comes from God, a house in the heavenly worlds, not man-made. It lasts forever. That is why **we** groan, yearning to be clothed with **our** heavenly house. Since **we** will be clothed with a body, **we** will not be a naked spirit. While **we** are in **our** bodies now, **we** are groaning because **we** feel burdened. That doesn't mean **we** want to die; **we** only want a new life."

GOOD NEWS FOR MODERN MAN. THE NEW TESTAMENT IN TODAY'S ENGLISH VERSION: "For **we** know that when this tent **we** live in—**our** body here on earth—is torn down, God will have a house in heaven for **us** to live in, a house he himself made, which will last for ever. And now **we** sigh, so great is our desire to have our home which is in heaven put on over **us**; for being clothed with it **we** shall not be found without a **body**. While **we** live in this earthly tent **we** groan with a feeling of oppression; it is not that **we** want to get rid of **our** earthly **body**, but that **we** want to have the heavenly **one** (body) put on over **us**, so that what is mortal will be swallowed up by life."

#### CLOTHED BY PUTTING ON CHRIST IN THIS LIFE TIME

"For all of you who were baptized into Christ **have clothed yourselves with Christ**" (Galatians 3:27). We put Christ on when we are baptized into His death and walk in newness of life (Romans 6:3-5). Christ said to the church at Laodicea, "You do not know that you are wretched and miserable and poor and blind and **naked**, I advise you to buy from Me gold refined by fire, that you may become rich, **and white garments, that you may clothe yourself, and that the shame of your nakedness may not be revealed**" (Revelation 3:17-18). **A person can put Christ on only in this life time**; the church at Laodicea were to buy white garments that they would not be naked in this life time. If a person is clothed with Christ in this life, they will be clothed at the judgment, those that are naked, without Christ at their death; they will be naked at the judgment. There is no salvation after death, if a person dies clothed with Christ they will always be, if they die naked, not clothed with Christ they will never be. Paul is speaking of being found naked "while we are in this tent." "We do not want to be unclothed but to be clothed" is before their death, not after their death." "So that what is mortal will be swallowed up by life," if we are clothed with Christ while we are mortals, our mortality will be sown a natural

body and raised a spiritual body (1 Corinthians 15:44); only those clothed with Christ in this lifetime will be raised a spiritual body. All that are clothed with Christ when they die will be clothed with Christ after the Resurrection.

- **If we are clothed with Christ at our death, we will be clothed at the Judgment and always after.**
- **If we are without Christ, naked, at our death we will be naked at the Judgment.**

**(6). W. E. VINE'S SIXTH PASSAGE OF HIS EIGHT**

**To prove there is a SPIRIT in a person that is now immortal**

***"Supposed that they beheld a spirit" Luke 24:37***

The sixth proof that Vine used to prove a person now has an *"immaterial, invisible part of man"* is Luke 24:37-39, ***"Supposed that they beheld a spirit."*** This is what they (as men) thought based on their fear, and was not based on inspiration. The two parallel accounts of this says phantom (Matthew 14:26; Mark 6:49). Strong (page 1006) says this word is not pneuma (spirit) #4151, but "phantasma" #5326 (also #5324); "A (mere) show...i.e. specter (a hunting vision)" When Christ walked on the water is the one time this word (phantasma) is used in the Bible, and is translated "ghost" in the American Standard Version and most others. It is translated "a phantom" by Marshall, and in the "Christian Bible." The "Englishman Greek Concordance," page 783 says, "Lit. A phantom." These disciples seem to have believed they were seeing a ghost or phantom, and like these disciples, some today believe in ghosts, spooks, haunted houses, and such things. This maybe the only time Vine's thin air with no substance ghost or spirit is in the New Testament, and then it was only in the mind of these disciples, only what they thought they were seeing, and not what they did see. Spirits, God, Christ, Angels have a body, and mankind after judgment will have a body, and are more than just thin air nothing, but we will not have two bodies with two opposite natures both at the same time. **The use of this passage to prove a person has an immortal soul makes the proof be based on a lie, based on what the disciples thought they were seeing, not on what they did see.** What they thought they were seeing, a phantasm or ghost must be changed to say they were seeing, *"The immaterial, invisible part of man"* which Vine does not seem to know whether it was an invisible "soul" or an invisible "spirit" they were seeing, but it was not very invisible for they were seeing it. **Christ said to them that He was not a spirit,** not a phantom or ghost, not something that has no body that they thought they were seeing, that He was flesh and blood. It seems that these disciples were familiar with the pagan teach that was taught all around Israel at that time, and thought that they were seeing such a spirit; Christ simply pointed out to them that His having flesh and bones was completely inconsistent with the pagan concept of an immaterial bodiless soul they thought they were seeing. **Why did Vine use an uninspired statement made by men in fear, who was not seeing what they thought they were seeing to prove something to be a divine truth? Notice that Vine used it to prove the very thing that Christ pointed out to them was not true?** This passage says absolutely nothing about a person having an immortal invisible soul that he used it to prove. Does he think they were inspired to believe a lie and that this lie becomes truth, but only after he changes this "phantom" to both a "soul" and a "spirit"? And that this *"immaterial, invisible part of man"* is just air, and it has no kind of substance or no body of any kind; and that a spiritual body is no body at all, with just nothing to it? Yet, Vine said these disciples

thought they were seeing something that he says is "*immaterial, invisible*"; therefore, could not be seen. Although what they were seeing was not invisible, he used it to prove a person has an invisible bodiless something in them. **Most who believe a person has an immortal soul do not believe a bodiless soul that has not flesh and bone can be seen, never the less they will use this to prove these men were seeing a soul that has no substance, a bodiless soul that they say cannot be seen.**

LUKE 24:27-29 and ACTS 7:59: Two of the passages, which W. E. Vine used to prove a person has an immortal part, are uninspired statements. What these disciples thought they were seeing but were not, and what Stephen was asking that could not be unless they believed in Christ. (See (2) Acts 7:59 above) **Does this not say something about how weak his proof is, something about how desperate he was for his proof?**

**(7). W. E. VINE'S SEVENTH PASSAGE OF HIS EIGHT**

**To prove there is a SPIRIT in a person that is now immortal**

***"The spirits of just men made perfect"* Hebrews 12:22-23**

He used "*the spirits of just men made perfect*" to prove that the spirits of the just dead men are alive in Heaven, and were made perfect at the moment of death. Hebrews 12:22-23 is a list of seven ways the New Covenant is **now** better than the Old Covenant. Paul said they **had come**, not will come after death to the spirits of just men made perfect. This was then, while Paul and the others were alive, it was before they had died, before the Resurrection, before the Judgment, they had already come "*to the spirits of just men made perfect*" at the time Paul wrote this before anyone will be in Heaven. We could not have come to the spirits of those made perfect in Heaven for they are not yet in Heaven. Seven ways the New Covenant is now better than the Old Covenant.

1. You have not come unto a mount that could be touched and that burned with fire, "**but you are come** unto mount Zion, and unto the city of the living God, the heavenly Jerusalem."
2. You are come "*To innumerable hosts of angels.*"
3. You are come "*To the general assembly and church of the firstborn who are enrolled in heaven.*"
4. You are come "*To God the Judge of all.*"
5. You are come "*To the spirits of **just men made perfect.***" "*And to the spirits of the **righteous made perfect***" (New Revised Standard Version).
6. You are come "*To Jesus the mediator of a new covenant.*"
7. You are come "*To the blood of sprinkling that speaks better than that of Abel.*"

If the "spirits" of the just dead were now in Heaven, the just dead under both the Old and New Covenants would be in Heaven, and it would not prove the New Covenant to be better than the Old Covenant. It would be out of place in this list of ways the New Covenant is better than the Old Covenant. **Those who believe all, both the saved and the lost, have souls that are now immortal believe they were just as immortal under the Law as they now are under the New Covenant; therefore, it would not be a way the New Covenant is better than the Old.**

**When and how are the spirits of just man made perfect? "*The spirits of just men made perfect*" refers to men made perfect by having their sins washed away by the blood of Christ.** We have had our sins washed away and have come to have fellowship with others who have been made perfect by having their sins washed away.

Adam Clarke in his Commentary on Hebrews 12:23: "In several parts of this epistle *teleiouv*, the just man, signifies one who has a full knowledge of the Christian system, who is justified and saved by Christ Jesus; and the *teteleiwnemoui* are the adult Christians, who are opposed to the *nhpioi* or babes in knowledge and grace...The spirits of the just men made perfect, or the righteous perfect, are the full grown Christians; those who are justified by the blood and sanctified by the Spirit of

Christ. Being come to such, *implies* that spiritual union which the disciples of Christ have with each other, and which they possess how far so ever separate; for they are all joined in one spirit, #Eph 2:18; they are in the unity of the spirit, #Eph 4:3, 4; and of one soul, #Ac 4:32. This is a unity which was never possessed even by the Jews themselves in their best state; it is peculiar to real Christianity: (See Heb 12:29)."

There is no way we could have come to the "spirits" of those in Heaven; if they were in Heaven they would be beyond our reach unto we are in Heaven with them. We would not have come to them.

*"And to the spirits of the righteous made perfect"* (New Revised Standard Version). If disembodied spirits were in Heaven and in any way we had fellowship or communication with us it would prove Spiritualism, which is forbidden by God. Most all who uses this to prove we now have an immortal soul do not believe we have any communication with the dead, not if the dead are in Heaven, Hell, the grave, or any other place; therefore, they do not believe we could have come unto them, but they are desperately looking for any passage to prove we now have an immaterial, immortal soul in us and take *"And to the spirits of the righteous made perfect"* out of it's contexts.

**When this is used to prove that after death we have a "soul" that is alive and made perfect, it makes the judgment and resurrection be 100% totally useless.** The *"made perfect"* in Hebrews 12:23 is something that had happened at the time Paul said this, not something that will not happen unto after the resurrection.

- *"To the spirits of just men made perfect (telioo)"* (Hebrews 12:23).
- *"Herein is our love made perfect (telioo)"* (1 John 4:17).
- *"He that fears is not made perfect (telioo) in love"* (1 John 4:18).
- *"And by works was faith made perfect (telioo)"* (James 2:22).
  - Made perfect is not used to mean we have no sins or cannot sin.

### **(8) W. E. VINE'S EIGHTH PASSAGE**

**To prove there is a SPIRIT in a person that is now immortal**

#### **1 Peter 4:6**

*"For unto this end was the gospel preached (past tense) even to the dead (present tense), that they might be judged indeed according to men in the flesh, but live according to God in the spirit."*

The question is:

- (1) Who were the dead?
- (2) And when was the gospel preached to them?

Two views of who were the dead that had had the Gospel preached to them.

(1) Christians that were alive in the flesh at the time the gospel was preached to them and they believed, but they were dead (asleep in Christ) at the time Peter wrote this. See 1 Corinthians 15:12-28.

(2) Those who *"were dead in your trespasses and sins"* (Ephesians 2:1) before the gospel was preached to them. The Gospel was preached to them when they were dead through their trespasses and sins (past tense) so that they may live (present tense).

- *"And you did he **make alive, when you were dead** through your trespasses and sins"* (Ephesians 2:1).
- *"He that hears my word, and believes him that sent me, has eternal life, and **has passed out of death into life**"* (John 5:24).

Nothing is said about any preaching to any one after they were physically dead, or nothing about preaching to souls or spirits. The Gospel is preached to save; Peter is not

saying salvation is being offered to anyone after they are dead, or that the gospel was preached to anyone after their death.

#### SPIRIT IN THE NEW TESTAMENT

Spirit is translated from the Greek word *pnuma*. It is the same as *ruach* in the Old Testament.

- *“The Spirit (ruach) of the Lord God is upon me”* (Isaiah 61:1).
- *“The Spirit (pnuma) of the Lord is upon Me”* (Luke 4:18).

#### GOD IS SPIRIT

*“God is spirit (pnuma)”* (John 4:24)

#### THE HOLY SPIRIT

He is spoken of as a distinct person (John 14:26; 15:26; Luke 3:22), a heavenly being; therefore, He is a spirit as is God the Father.

#### JESUS CHRIST

Before He took on the form of man He was with the Father (John 1:1-17) *“For a little while lower than the angels”* (Hebrews 2:7). After His resurrection He is now in Heaven, a heavenly being like the Father and the Holy Spirit (Hebrew 1:1-14), just as He was before He took on the form of man.

#### ANGELS

*“Are they (angels) not all ministering spirits (pnuma)”* (Hebrews 1:14). *“Who makes his angels spirits (ruach)”* (Psalm 104:4).

#### DEMONS

*“A woman, whose little daughter had an unclean spirit (pnuma)”* (Mark 7:25).

#### MANKIND

Mankind are being of this earth, not heavenly spirit being; we are now in the image of Adam, and will not be in the image of Christ unto the resurrection (1 Corinthians 15:42-49). No one in the image of Adam, no one who is flesh and blood, is ever said to be a spirit. God, Christ, the Holy Spirit, angels, and demons are spirits, but men are never called a spirit in the Bible; a person will not be a spirit unto after the resurrection and judgment. *“For in the resurrection they neither marry, nor are given in marriage, but are like angels in heaven”* (Matthew 22:30); now mankind are not like angels, not spirit being as angels now are, but are now earthly being. Not unto after the resurrection will any one be *“as angels in heaven”*

1. *“A spirit does not have flesh and bones as you see that I have”* (Luke 24:39). At the time Christ said this He was in the form of man (Philippians 2:6-11).
2. The natural body we now have will be raised a spiritual body (1 Corinthians 15:42-45). (Matthew 22:30).

#### THE GREAT CONFUSION: Soul or spirit or both?

**Two terms that comes from different words, and are not used interchangeable in the Bible. Vine says they are not the same thing, but he says both are an *“immaterial, invisible part of man”***

Does a person have an immortal soul or an immortal spirit that is not subject to death, and both the soul and the spirit now have eternal life without the resurrection? How many immortal beings does a person have in them? If two, a soul and a spirit, will both of the immortal beings in a person always exist as two independent and separate beings? If only one of the two, which one of the immortal beings that is in a person, the immortal soul, or the immortal spirit? Vine says they are different, *“Generally speaking the spirit is the*

*higher, the soul the lower element*" (page 589); yet he says both are *"the immaterial, invisible part of man"* (soul on page 588 and spirit on page 593). Do we have both a higher and a lower *"immaterial, invisible part of man?"*

Those who believe all mankind have an *"immaterial, invisible part of man"* do not seem to know whether it is the "soul" or the "spirit" that is the *"immaterial, invisible part of man"* that will live without the earthly body. When preachers preach on the soul being immortal, they use passages that speak of the spirit but say nothing about a soul. **There is much confusion on what part of a person is immortal, will it be the soul, or will it be the spirit that will be in Heaven.**

**MANY USE SOUL AND SPIRIT INTERCHANGEABLY. For their belief, the soul and the spirit must be the same. If they were not, they would be forced to say one or the other is the immortal something that is in a person, or that a person has two immortal beings inside of them.** When I believed in Hell I could not see there being a separate **immortal soul** and **immortal spirit**; I used them interchangeably just as most do now without realizing it. When some read the **spirit goes back to God**, in their mind they see an immortal **soul going back to God**. Those who believe (1) the **soul** will take up permanent residence in Heaven at the moment of death, (2) and many who believe the **soul** is in Abraham's bosom and that it will not be in Heaven unto the Judgment Day, both use Ecclesiastes 12:7 to prove the **soul** (the *"immaterial, invisible part of man"*) goes back to God in Heaven at death. How could the **spirit** (the other *"immaterial, invisible part of man"*) return unto God at death if it goes to Abraham's bosom, or if the soul of many goes to Hell? I have continually been told for years that lost souls go to Hell at the moment of death. Then how could the soul return to God if it goes to Hell, and only the few souls that are saved will go to Heaven at the moment of death? How can they not see that they are saying the soul goes to one place, and at the same time they are saying the soul goes to another place?

After Christ had been dead for three days and after His resurrection He said, *"Touch me not for I have not yet ascended to my father"* (John 20:17). Many say Christ went to an intermediate place where souls go before the resurrection, but not to Heaven. If there were such an intermediate place, then the soul or the spirit does not return to God at death. One position is taken on one passage, and then the same persons shifts to another position on another passage, and are continually shifting their position.

#### **SOUL OR SPIRIT, WHICH ONE IS IMMORTAL?**

Any time 1 Thessalonians 5:23, Hebrews 4:12, etc., comes up in a Bible class the teacher has the same problem, the same confusion. What is the difference in soul and spirit? Which one is immortal? Many never seem to be quite sure which of the two, the soul, or the spirit they believe to be immortal, and not sure if they are the same, or if they are two entirely different immortal beings in a person. 1 Thessalonians 5:23 does not say what the functions of the body, soul, or spirit is, or what becomes of them at death. It does not say one is mortal and two of them are immortal, and will forever live somewhere. This must be read into it. Whatever Paul means by the use of the word *"preserved"* it is apply equally to body, soul, and spirit, the body is *"preserved"* just as the soul and spirit are *"preserved"*; it cannot mean one is immortal and another is not immortal. He said, *"The Lord shall deliver me from every evil work, and will preserve me unto His heavenly kingdom"* (2 Timothy 4:18 King James Version). It is the whole Paul



("me") that will be preserved, not just an immaterial something that was in Paul, not just a part of Paul, but his whole being.

- **There is nothing about any part of a person now being immortal in it.**
- **There is nothing about Hell after the judgment in it.** This also must be read into it.

#### **SPIRIT HAS TAKEN THE PLACE THAT SOUL DID HAVE**

Many that not long ago believe the soul was the immortal part of man now say not so, that the soul is not immortal but the spirit is. One of the many examples that could be given is, "What happens to you when you die?" by La Vista Church of Christ at: <http://lavistaachurchofchrist.org/LVanswer/2004/2004-07-20.htm>. If you, as many in the Lord's church have, change the part of a person they say is immortal from the "soul" to the "spirit," have you did anymore than change the name of the part of a person you believe is **now** immortal? Are you not saying we **now** have immortality and Paul was wrong? Are they saying, "O. K. we were wrong when we taught the pagan doctrine of an immortal soul, but we are not going to give it up for then we would have to give up eternal torment, we will change from an "immortal soul" to an "immortal spirit," and will still teach the same thing about the spirit that we have always taught about the soul.

Those who say the "spirit" is the *"immaterial, invisible part of man"* that is immortal must stop using passages speak of the "soul" to prove the spirit is immortal if soul and spirit are not the same thing. *"The spirit returns to God"* cannot be used to prove the soul is immortal if they are not the same, the spirit is not the soul; however, many do use this passage to prove a person has an immortal soul. *"Fear him who is able to destroy both soul and body in Gehenna"* cannot be used to prove the spirit is immortal if they are not both the same the *"immaterial, invisible part of man"* that is immortal, but many do use one to prove the other, then will use the other to prove the first. Is this what is called "reasoning in a circle"?

- Passages, which have "spirit" in them, but are used to prove a person has an immortal soul.
- Passages, which have "soul" in them, but are used to prove a person has an immortal spirit.

Body, soul-life, and spirit all are a person as he is now in the image of Adam. All three terms, body, soul, and spirit are used referring to a living person at the same time. They are not three parts that can exist without each other. If they were, a person would have two separate immortal beings in Heaven simultaneously. They are not three separate beings with opposite natures, with two beings living within the other one.

- BODY: The body the Lord formed from the dust of the ground (Genesis 2:7).
- SOUL: *"The life...is in the blood"* Leviticus 17:10-14. The living nature of a person that he has in common with all animals.
- SPIRIT: The breath of life breathed in the earthy body. All life is from God, and returns to God at death (Ecclesiastes 12:7, Job 34:14-15). All life is a gift from God to both man and animals, and the life goes back to God at death. The spirit is not an immortal something that is in a person that preexisted as a living being with God before the birth of the person and this immortal spirit goes back to God when the person is dead.

Paul does not say may your soul be preserved blameless without your body or spirit. He puts the three together as being inseparable, the whole person, not three separate parts of a person.

Mark 12:30 *"And you shall love the Lord your God with all your **heart**, and with all your **soul** (psukee – life), and with all your **mind**, and with all your **strength**."*

1. With all your **heart**.
2. With all your **soul** (psukee – life).
3. With all your **mind**.

4. With all your **strength**.

What Jesus is saying is that we are to love God with all our being, not love God with some immaterial invisible no substance something that we would have no control over, and no way to know whether it loved God or not. I can know I love God with all my heart and with all my mind, but if there were an immaterial invisible no substance being in me that will live after my death, I would have no way to know whether it loved God or not. The psukee is no more a part of a person that lives after the death of the person than the heart, mind, or strength will live after death. All four are a person looked at from different points of view while the person is living, not four parts of a person that one can exist without the others.

Hebrews 4:12: *"For the word of God is living, and active, and sharper than any two-edged sword, and piercing even to the dividing of soul and spirit, of both joints and marrow, and quick to discern the thoughts and intents of the heart."*

1. Dividing of soul and spirit.
2. Dividing of both joints and marrow.
3. Dividing of the thoughts and intents of the heart.

This passage shows that the soul and spirit are different things and can be divided, but there is nothing in it that says the soul, or the spirit is an immortal part of a person that will exist without the person.

Unlike animals, God made man in His image with the potential of living forever. The spirit (ruach-spirit, breath, wind), of both man and animals returns to God, but one of the differences in persons and animals is that animals will not be raised from the dead. They are forever dead, just as a person would be if there were not going to be a resurrection. After death animals will never again have life, just as the loss will never again have life after the second death. Death is death for both men and animals. Death is not death for animals, and another kind of life for men; death is death for both. The second death will be death, not another kind of life that will go on forever.

- **Spirit in the Old Testament is from ruach** (Strong's word number 7307). It is translated spirit, breath, and wind, in the King James Version, but it is **never translated soul**. It is never said to be a deathless something in a person.
- **Spirit in the New Testament is from pneuma** (Strong's word number 4151). It is translated spirit, ghost, and wind in the King James Version, but it is **never translated soul**.
  - Pneuma is translated both **wind** and **spirit** in the same passage. *"The **wind** (pneuma) blows wherever it pleases. You may hear its sound, but you cannot tell where it comes from or where it is going. So it is with everyone born of the **spirit** (pneuma)"* (John 3:8).
- **Soul in the Old Testament is from nehphesh** (Strong's word number 5315). It is translated life, creature, soul, person, mind, etc. in the King James Version, but it is **never translated spirit**. Never said to be a deathless immaterial something in a person.
- **Soul in the New Testament is from psukee** (Strong's word number 5590). In the King James Version it is translated life, soul, heart, heartily, mind, he, strength, and us, but it is **never translated spirit**.
  - The spirit ("breath of life") returns to God.
  - The soul goes to sheol-hades, the grave.

There are more than 1,600 references to soul and spirit in the Bible, but not a one of them says anything about the soul or spirit living without the body, yet many who say they teach only the Bible teach it all the time.

*"May your spirit and soul and body be preserved entire, (may the whole person, not just an invisible no substance part of a person) without blame at the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ."*

- Spirit preserved entire, when, *"at the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ."*
- Soul preserved entire, when, *"at the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ."*
- Body preserved entire, when, *"at the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ."*
  - This is speaking of the whole person being preserved when *"this mortal must put on immortality"* (1 Corinthians 15:53).

**Spirit and soul are not used interchangeably, and a passage that has one in it cannot be used to prove anything about the other one as many do today. Body, soul, spirit,** the whole man of Genesis 2:7 and 1 Thessalonians 5:23 *"And Jehovah God formed man of the dust of the ground (body), and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life (spirit); and man became a living being (soul)."* Body + the breath of life (spirit) = soul-a living being.

**PASSAGES IN WHICH "SPIRIT" (pneuma)  
IS USED BY MANY AS IF IT IS THE SAME AS "SOUL" (psuke)**

Not one time is only a part of a person said to have an existence after death, or to be able to function without the body neither before nor after the resurrection.

**(1). THE SPIRITS IN PRISON 1 Peter 3:18-20**

Most who uses this to prove the "spirit" is immortal believe the Protestant version that lost souls go to Hell instantaneous at death; therefore, to them these disobedient spirits that were destroyed in the time of Noah for being disobedient were not destroyed, but are now being tormented in Hell. **If they were in Hell, why did Christ go to these disobedient spirits?**

**(1) For what purpose would Christ go into Hell and preach to only some that were there? To save them; can those in Hell ever be saved? The very ones who believe there is a Hell, and use this passage to prove the souls of the lost are alive in Hell before the resurrection, and before they are judged, also says no that once a person is in Hell he or she can never get out, can never be saved.** Most Protestants reject the doctrine of Purgatory and say there is no chance of salvation after death.

(2) What message would He take them that can never get out of Hell; the time when they could be saved was past; therefore, the Gospel would do them no good? Would He go to raise a hope of release that could never be, or to taunt them?

(3) It would mean that Christ was alive in the three days from His death unto His resurrection; therefore, He was never dead and could not have been raised from the dead. Any interpretation that requires that Jesus did not really die on the cross completely destroys His sacrificial death and resurrection.

(4) It would mean that Christ did not die for our sins; therefore, we are still in our sins. If a soul is immortal and cannot die, Christ gave only His earthly body for our sins. He was as much alive in the three days His earthly body was in the grave as He was before He came to earth and as He was after the resurrection of His earthly body. **Therefore, Christ could not have died for our sins if he were never dead.** If only His earthly body were dead, then He was the same "spiritual being" with all the power and glory in the

three days His body was in the grave that He is now, or had before He came to earth. There would have been no difference in Christ (1) when only His earthly body was in the grave (2) than there is now when He is in Heaven, (3) or in the time before He came to earth. If He was alive His death was not a real death, than what did God gave when He gives His only Son? Just one human body for three days. Nothing more. According to today's teaching there was no real sacrifice by God or Christ, **no real death or resurrection** as He was not really and in truth dead. Nevertheless, He said, *"I am he that lives, and was dead"* (Revelation 1:18). *"I lay down My life so that I may take it again. No one has taken it away from Me, but I lay it down on My own initiative I have authority to lay it down, and I have authority to take it up again"* (John 10:17-18). If Christ was alive in the time before His resurrection, how could He say, *"I lay down my life"* when there was never a time He did not have life? If He were alive it would mean that Jesus did not pour *"out His life unto death"* (Isaiah 53:12). *"Poured out Himself to death"* New American Standard Bible. Death is the punishment for sin; a loss of life was the penalty that Christ paid, not eternal life in torment.

(5) It would mean that those who were disobedient in the days of Noah were more important than all others who were disobedient, and that Christ went into Hell to preach unto them for those that say the soul is immortal and does not die, say the lost go directly to "Hell" at death; therefore, Christ had to go into "Hell" to preach to them.

(6) It would mean that these may have been given a second chance after death, but all others will not be given a second chance.

(7) It would mean that God is a respecter of persons giving some a second chance, but not to all.

(8) *"By which"* must be changed to *"while He was dead."*

(9) It would be a contradiction to the traditional theology of today that says Christ went to Heaven and took the theft with Him at the time of His death; a contradiction to the traditional theology that at the moment of death the immortal spirit returns to God.

(10) Death is repeatedly pictured as being sleep. Christ is *"the first fruits of those who are asleep"* (1 Corinthians 15:20). If He was never dead He could not be *"the first fruits of those who are asleep."* If He was asleep He could not have been awake and preached to anybody in the three days He was asleep. **If He was *"the first fruits of those who are asleep,"* then He was not awake in Heaven in the time He was *"asleep,"*** He did not ascend into Heaven unto after His resurrection (John 20:17), after His sleep in the grave. His death and resurrection was a pattern of the coming resurrection of those that are saved, they are now asleep, and they will not ascend into Heaven unto their resurrection. *"The hour is coming in which all that are in the tombs shall hear his voice, and shall come forth; they that have done good, unto the resurrection of life; and they that have done evil unto the resurrection of judgment"* (John 5:28-29).

Where will the dead be when they hear the voice of Jesus?

- Not alive in Paradise.
- Not alive in Abraham's bosom.
- Not alive in Heaven.
- Not alive Hell.
- Not alive in any kind of "intermediate state."
- Not alive in a holding place for souls under the earth.
- Not alive in Purgatory.

- Not alive in the Catholic Nether World.
- **The dead will be in the “graves” (plural tombs—graves) when they hear the voice of Jesus and come forth unto the resurrection of life, or the resurrection of judgment.**

*"Put to death in the flesh, but made alive in the spirit"* (1 Peter 3:18). Notice carefully what is said. This passage is used to prove there is an immortal spirit in all that can never die.

- If it were speaking of an immortal spirit, that immortal spirit was *"made alive,"* therefore that immortal soul had to be dead, if it was not dead it could not be *"made Alive."*
- If *"made alive in the spirit"* was not the resurrection of Christ, then the very thing they are trying to prove is that the spirit cannot die; nevertheless, they are saying the deathless spirit that cannot die was dead and was *"made alive."*
- **If Christ was alive and never dead, He could not have been *"made alive,"* but would have been *"kept alive,"* or *"preserved alive,"* and there could have been no resurrection.** Made alive: *"Quickened by the spirit"* King James Version. *"Made alive by the spirit"* New King James Version. Strong's word #2227 "made alive, give life, quicken."
  - Christ said of Himself that He *"was dead, and behold, I am alive forevermore"* (Revelation 1:18).
  - *"They will kill Him, and He will be raised on the third day"* (Matthew 17:23).
  - *"The Son of Man is to be delivered into the hands of men, and they will kill Him; and when He has been killed, He will rise three days later"* (Mark 9:31).
- If Christ did not actually die, to say He was not really dead for the three days He was in the grave is to deny both that He died and that He was raised from the dead; this would take away all hope and possibility of being saved. Satan has done his work well.
  - If Christ was not actually dead no ransom was paid (Matthew 20:28).
  - If Christ was not actually dead sins were not taken away (John 1:29).

If this preaching were by Christ in person, not by Christ through Noah, then the order was:

1. Put to death
2. Quickened or made alive-His resurrection
3. Preached to the spirits in prison after His resurrection. Therefore, the preaching would have been done after His resurrection, not before and would not prove that His "soul" was alive in the three days before He was quickened or made alive.

To fit with today's theology Peter's order must be changed to:

1. Put to death.
2. Preached to the spirits in prison in the three days before He was *"made alive,"* before His resurrection.
3. Quickened or *"made alive"* - His resurrection was **after** He had preached to the spirits in prison.

**The reason this passage is used is to prove His soul was alive before His resurrection is to prove that His soul was never dead, but they must change it to make it say Christ did the preaching after His death and before His resurrection. If they do not change it, it does not prove what they want it to.** If this preaching were by Christ during the three days He was in the grave, and if the prison were somewhere other than Hell it would prove that there is somewhere like the Catholic Purgatory, but that

only for a few of the lost would be in it, but those who are using this to prove the soul is immortal believe all the lost are in Hell.

**When was this preaching done?** In the days of Noah, or in the three days Christ was in the grave? This is the whole question, was it:

**(1) After they were dead and in Hell when they could not be saved?** Those who believe the soul of the lost is transported instantly into Hell at death do not believe any that are in Hell can be saved. According to their belief, all go to Heaven or Hell at the moment of death; therefore, if Christ went and preached to them in the three days He was in the grave, He would have had to preach to them either in Heaven or Hell. Why would He go to Hell and preach to those who could not be saved? Why do they use this verve? Is it not because they are desperate for any verse that will prove their immortal soul that they will give a few a second chance after death to be taken out of Hell if it would prove a part of a person is now immortal? If Christ went and preached to them in the three days He was in the grave, "by which" must be change to "while He was in the grave but not dead."

**(2) Or was it when they were alive and could be benefited by the preaching?** Adam Clarke said He went and preached by Noah for one hundred and twenty years. The preaching was done in the days of Noah through Noah, a preacher of righteousness (2 Peter 2:5), not after the death of Christ. Noah warned them of the destruction to come if they did not repent. How were they in prison? *"His servants you are whom you obey"* (Romans 6:16). *"For of whom a man is overcome, by this he is enslaved"* (2 Peter 19). *"To open blind eyes, to bring out prisoners from the dungeon, and those who dwell in darkness from the prison"* (Isaiah 42:7; also Isaiah 61:1; Psalm 142:7; Luke 4:18; John 8:34-45). Those who obey Satan are in prison to him. Those who would not hear Christ preaching through Noah were in prison to Satan. *"For we also once were...enslaved to various lusts and pleasures"* (Titus 3:3). *"For of whom a man is overcome, of the same is he also brought into bondage"* (2 Peter 2:19).

*"Then certain of the scribes and Pharisees answered him, saying, Teacher, we would see a sign from you. But he answered and said unto them, an evil and adulterous generation seeks after a sign; and shall no sign be given to it but the sign of Jonah the prophet: for as Jonah was three days and three nights in the belly of the whale; so shall the Son of man be three days and three nights in the heart of the earth"* (Matthew 12:38-40). If Jesus were in the earth, the grave, from His death to His resurrection, how could He have gone to "Hell" and preached to those in it? I do not think anyone believes "Hell" is in the grave, but the grave is where Jesus was at onto His resurrection.

Adam Clarke: "He went and preached' by the ministry of Noah, one hundred and twenty years. Unto the spirits in prison. The inhabitants of the antediluvian world, who, having been disobedient, and convicted of the most flagrant transgressions against God, were sentenced by his just law to destruction. But their punishment was delayed to see if they would repent; and the long-suffering of God waited one hundred and twenty years, which were granted to them for this purpose; during which time, as criminals tried and convicted, they are represented as being in prison - detained under the arrest of Divine justice, which waited either for their repentance or the expiration of the respite, that the punishment pronounced might be inflicted" Clarke's Commentary on 1 Peter 3:18-20.

Dillard Thurman: "I have heard funeral orations extol the happiness and bliss the departed has instantly with death; but on checking the New Testament assiduously, I have yet to find a single promise where the dead go to heaven on instant pass, or have immediate conscious happiness." Gospel Minutes April 2, 1990, "Notice carefully what is said. Jesus was put to death in the flesh,

and died like any mortal man. But He was quickened, or made alive by the Spirit. By what Spirit? By the same Spirit by which He once preached to spirits imprisoned by sin and Satan in the days of Noah! When did this happen? The passage plainly states it: 'When once the long-suffering of God waited in the days of Noah.' The word 'when' is an adverb of time that tells when the action took place: in the days of Noah! The idea of the Son of God being off on a preaching junket for the three days and nights that His body was in the tomb is utterly foreign to any Bible teaching! If false doctrines had not first brought forth this fanciful idea, this passage would not have been twisted to support the error." Gospel Minutes, Volume 34, Number 5, February 1, 1985, West Freeway church of Christ.

**PASSAGES IN WHICH "SOUL" (psukee)**  
**IS USED AS IF IT IS THE SAME AS "SPIRIT" (pneuma)**  
**(1). LOSING LIFE (SOUL) or SAVING LIFE (SOUL)**

**Matthew 16:26; Mark 8:37**

Those who believe the soul to be immortal and cannot die, also believe it is the soul that must be saved or lost. To them, to lose your soul means it will go to Hell; therefore, to "lose his *soul* (psukee-life) for my sake" means going to Hell for Christ. Their own definition of "lose his *soul*" is going to Hell. Do they think anyone will go to Hell for Christ's sake? If "psukee" means an immortal something in a person that will live forever in Heaven or Hell, and a person loses their **soul** (psukee-life) for Christ, going to Hell for Him would be just what this passage would say they would do. Back when I believed all the lost would be eternally tormented in Hell by God, this passage was a problem to me; I believed, as many do, to lose your soul meant it would go to Hell, but the King James Version undeniable says (1) if your soul went to Hell for Christ you would save your soul, (2) and that we are to hate our immortal soul.

**BY TODAY'S THEOLOGY DOES LOSING THE SOUL SAVE IT?** Christ said, "For whosoever would save his *psukee* (life) shall lose it: and whosoever shall lose his *psukee* (life) for my sake shall find it. For what shall a man be profited, if he shall gain the whole world, and forfeit his *psukee* (life)? Or what shall a man give in exchange for his *psukee* (life)?" **To lose ones life for Christ's sake is to lose it because of being faithful to Christ, and many did lose their life in the first century.** Those who lose there life for Christ will find eternal life at the judgment. **But, if psukee is an immortal soul, will some lose their immortal soul because they are faithful to Christ? In today's theology, "save the soul" is to save it from Hell, and "lose the soul" is to lose it in Hell. When this passage is used to prove a person has an immortal "immaterial, invisible part of man" that will never die, it makes Christ say:**

1. "Whosoever would **save** his immaterial invisible immoral soul from Hell will **lose** his immaterial invisible immoral soul in Hell."
2. "Whosoever would **lose** his immaterial invisible immoral soul in Hell will **save** his immaterial invisible immoral soul from Hell."

Those who say the soul is immortal also say we lose it when we sin, and save it when we obey Christ. If they were right, the only way we could lose our souls for Christ's sake would be for us to sin. According to them the only possible way to lose our "immortal soul" is to sin; then did Christ say we were to sin to save our soul? No, it is life some would lose **because they will not sin and are faithful to Christ**, not lose some immaterial, invisible immortal part of them selves **because they do sin and are not faithful to Christ**. The promise that the *psukee* (life) will be saved when it is sacrificed for Christ makes no sense if the soul is some "immaterial, invisible" undying part of a person. How could we lose "our soul" for Christ's sake? "He that loves his *psukee* (life)

loses it; and he that hates his *psukee* (life) in this world shall keep it unto life eternal" (John 12:25). How do they think a person could lose the only part of his or her self that they say cannot die? When a person has sinned and "lost his soul," does that person have a living body with no soul in it? **Christ was saying that gaining much would profit us nothing if we lose our life-our very existence.** All who die without being in Christ have lost their *psukee* (life), they will not put on immortality at the resurrection; they will not have eternal life in Heaven. After the judgment and second death, they will have lost their very existence.

- The same thing that is saved is the same thing that will be lost.
- The person that saves his **life** by denying Christ will lose the same thing that is saved, will lose his **life** at the judgment.
- It is not a soul that is saved by denying Christ but **life** on earth.
- It is not a soul that will be lost at the judgment but **life** in Heaven.
- John 12:25 said the same, "*He that loves his life (psukee) shall lose it; and he that hates his life (psukee) in this world, shall keep it unto life eternal.*"

**Those who do not obey Christ shall lose the very thing that is saved by those who do obey Him-life; the lost shall die and the saved shall live. No doctrine of the Bible is more plain than the loss of life in this passage is the lost of our earthly life because of being faithful to Christ, not eternal life with torment for the sinner; finding life is to find eternal life at the resurrection, and the person that saves his earthly life (psukee) by denying Christ will lose his life at the judgment.**

Epaphroditus hazarded "his *psukee* (life)" (Philippians 2:30). Judas and Silas have "*hazarded their psukee (lives) for the name of our Lord Jesus Christ*" (Acts 15:26-27). They could put their life in danger for the sake of Christ. Many put their life in danger, and lost their life for preaching Christ, but how could they risk an immortal part of a person that cannot die, and no man can see it or kill it? Paul says, "*But I hold not my psukee (life) of any account as dear unto myself*" (Acts 20:24). If this *psukee* is an inter being which has immortality from our birth, Paul must not have thought it not to be of any account, or not worth much. Just as have been said about other passages, today's theology that says *psukee* means an "*immaterial, invisible part of man*" makes these passages be nonsense.

Adam Clarke: "On what authority many have translated the word *psukee* in the twenty-fifth verse life, and in this verse (26) soul I know not; but I am certain it means life in both places."

**(2). "WHAT SHALL A MAN GIVE (not sell)  
IN EXCHANGE FOR HIS SOUL."**

Matthew 16:26; Mark 8:37 This passage is used to show that a person has an undying soul that is of more value than the entire world, but many will sell their **soul** for very little. Does it teach this? The American Standard Version and most other translations, translates "**psukee**" into "**life**," not "**soul**" as the King James does. A man can give all he has to someone about to take his life to get that someone to let him live, but he could in no way give anything in exchange for an immortal inter part of himself which cannot die. **Think about this; how could anyone buy or sell an "immaterial, invisible" immortal part of another person, which he cannot see, and it can never die?** It would be impossible for anyone to give anything in exchange for it.

*"Or what shall a man give in exchange for his life?"* **When "psukee" is made to be an inter immortal part of a person that cannot die, then would not giving something**



**in exchange for it be buying ones way into Heaven?** Frequently, in sermons and invitations, I have heard *"what would a man give in exchange for his life"* changed to *"what would a man sell his immortal soul for."* To give something in exchange for something is to buy it, not sell it. "Give" (pay, to give money or something) is changed to "sell" (to take money). It is changed to say the opposite of what it does say to make it say what many want it to say. There is not one word in this verse about a person, or an immaterial something that is in a person being tormented forever. **This passage is about how a man would pay all he has in exchange for a few more years of life, but would "forfeit his life" in Heaven in exchange for the pleasure of sin.** The wages of sin is death (Romans 6:23). Do not take the pleasures of sin for a few years in exchange for your life in Heaven as many do. When it is translated right, as in the American Standard Version and many others, the word "soul" as it is used in today's theology is not in this verse.

### **(3). SOUL REQUIRED Luke 12:19-21**

*"And I will say to my **life** (Greek psukee), **life** (psukee), you have much goods lain up for many years: take your ease, eat, drink, be merry. But, God said unto him, You foolish one, this night is your **LIFE** (psukee) **required** of YOU; and the things which you have prepared, whose shall they be? So is he that lies up treasure for himself, and is not rich toward God."* It is not eternal torment that will be required of them but life; life required of you, not life required of a soul. The New International Version reads, *"And I'll say to **myself** (Greek psukee-life), '**you** (Greek psukee-life) have plenty of good things laid up for many years. Take life easy; eat drink and be merry.' But, God said to him, 'You fool! This very night your **life** (Greek psukee) will be demanded from you. Then who will get what you have prepared for yourself?' This is how it will be with anyone whom stores up things for himself (puts the world ahead of God) but is not rich toward God."* Those who believe souls are immortal use this to prove there will be life after death before the resurrection. They say this life must be from the time of death onward and never end, but it does not say either; life could not be required of a soul that has eternal life, of a soul that cannot not have life. There will be a resurrection and judgment of all, not just those in Christ. After the judgment, those who have laid up treasure for them self on earth, and are not rich toward God, their life will be required of them. **Christ could not have said any plainer that life (not torment) would be required of those not rich toward God. It would make no sense if this psukee were an undying immortal soul. If a person had a soul that was deathless and will live forever after the person it was in is dead, how could life be required of that soul?**

*"**YOUR soul** (life-psukee) **required of YOU.**" Who is the "your" and "you"? They could not be the soul for then it would be saying the "soul" is required of the "soul." "Your" is the person whose life will be required. **A Soul, as the word is used today, was never required of anyone.** Psukee in the New Testament is never an undying *"immaterial, invisible part of man."* Life will be required of the sinner, not an undying soul.*

### **(4). God is able to destroy both soul and body in Gehenna**

**Matthew 10:28, Luke 12:5**

See Gehenna in chapter four, second occasion.

### **(5). Souls under the altar Revelation 6:9**

See chapter eight, part three.

**PASSAGES THAT DO NOT HAVE  
"SPIRIT" OR "SOUL" IN THEM  
BUT ARE USED TO PROVE A PERSON  
NOW HAS AN IMMORTAL SPIRIT /SOUL.**

Some passages are said to "imply" that a person has an immortal soul/spirit, but do not state it. This doctrine is based on what is thought to be implied, not on what is said; based only on the assumption that there is such a thing an immaterial invisible no substance something in mankind that is immortal.

**(1). THE THIEF ON THE CROSS Luke 23:43**

**Did the thief (1) know anything about the kingdom, (2) or did he know that Christ was to be resurrected when at that time no others knew, when not even the twelve knew?** From Matthew one to Acts two it was believed that the Christ was to restore the kingdom to Israel and sit on the throne of David and be a king on this earth.

- Herod thought Jesus was to was born to be an earthly "*king of the Jews*" and "*slew all the male children that were in Bethlehem*" (Matthew 3:1-16) to keep Jesus from replacing him as king of an earthly kingdom.
- "*And Jesus said unto him, 'Do you see these great buildings? There shall not be left here one stone upon another, which shall not be thrown down.'* And as he sat on the Mount of Olives over against the temple, Peter and James and John and Andrew asked him privately, tell us, when shall **these things** be?" (Mark 13:2-3). The disciples, thinking of what the Lord had said, asked two questions, which they supposed both would be at the same time. "**When shall THESE THINGS You speak of be and what shall be the sign that THESE THINGS are about to come to pass?**" At the time they asked these questions they did not believe or know that Jesus would be put to death and be resurrected from the dead, or that he would be going back to Heaven and coming a second time and there would be a resurrection and a judgment day for all. The disciples still thought the Christ would restore the earthy kingdom of Israel, just as all the Jews did. "*And they understood none of these things, and this saying was hidden from them, and they did not comprehend the things that were said*" (Luke 18:34; also Luke 19:11; 24:21-27; John 16:16-18; 20:9).
- On the day of His resurrection the Disciples did not know it was the resurrected Christ they were talking to and said to Him, "**But we hoped (past tense) that it was he who should REDEEM ISRAEL**" (Luke 24:21).
- Forty days after He was raised from the dead the Disciples still did not understand; therefore, they still did not expect Christ to go away and return to earth a second time at the end of the world; they expected Him to restore the kingdom to Israel. "*They therefore, when they were come together, asked him, saying, Lord, do you at this time restore the kingdom to Israel?*" (Acts 1:6). "*Lord, is it at this time You are restoring the kingdom to Israel?*" New American Standard Version. Even after his resurrection the apostles were still looking for the earthly kingdom of Israel to be restored and Christ to be it's king, and at this time the apostles had no idea that the kingdom Christ was going to set up was not an earthly kingdom of Israel.

If this thief was not speaking of an earthly kingdom of Israel he would have had to know that Christ was going to be resurrected from the dead, and then set up His kingdom when no one, not even the twelve know.

### **THE MOCKERY OF JESUS**

**MOCKERY AT HIS TRIAL BEFORE PILATE** *"Then the soldiers of the governor took Jesus into the palace, and gathered unto him the whole band. And they stripped him, and put on him a scarlet robe, and they platted a crown of thorns and put it upon his head, and a reed in his right hand; and they kneeled down before him, and mocked him, saying, Hail, King of the Jews! And they spat upon him, and took the reed and smote him on the head. **And when they had mocked him**, they took off from him the robe, and put on him his garments, and led him away to crucify him" (Matthew 27:27-30). "And the soldiers platted a crown of thorns, and put it on his head, and arrayed him in a purple garment; and they came unto him, and said, Hail, King of the Jews! And they struck him with their hands" (John 19:2-3).*

- They stripped Him.
- They put on Him a scarlet robe.
- They platted a crown of thorns and put it upon His head.
- They put a reed in His right hand.
- They kneeled down before Him, and mocked Him, saying, Hail, King of the Jews!
- They spat upon Him.
- They took the reed and smote Him on the head.
- They struck Him with their hands.

The scarlet robe, crown of thorns, a reed in His hand, and kneeling down before Him was mockery of His claim to be a king.

*"Now it was the Preparation of the Passover: it was about the sixth hour. And he said unto the Jews, Behold your King! They therefore cried out, Away with him, away with him, crucify him! Pilate said unto them, 'Shall I crucify your King?' The chief priests answered, 'We have no king but Caesar'" (John 18:14-15). Jesus was the king the Jews were looking for, but He said, "My kingdom is not of this world," and when He did not restore the earthly kingdom to Israel as they thought their savior was going to do, they rejected Him and mocked Him.*

**MOCKERY BY PILATE WHEN CHRIST WAS ON THE CROSS** *"And Pilate wrote a title also, and put it on the cross. And there was written, JESUS OF NAZARETH, THE KING OF THE JEWS. This title therefore read many of the Jews, for the place where Jesus was crucified was nigh to the city; and it was written in Hebrew, and in Latin, and in Greek. The chief priests of the Jews therefore said to Pilate, Write not, The King of the Jews; but that he said, I am King of the Jews. Pilate answered, 'What I have written I have written'" (John 19:19-22). When Pilate put this on the cross of a man he did not think was a king, or who would ever be a king, it was nothing but mockery by Pilate.*

**MOCKERY BY THOSE THAT PASSED BY, THE CHIEF PRIESTS AND THE ROBBERS.** Matthew 27:39-48 *"And they that passed by railed on him, wagging their heads, and saying, You that destroyed the temple, and builds it in three days, save yourself: if you are the Son of God, come down from the cross. In like manner also **the chief priests mocking him**, with the scribes and elders, said, He saved others; himself he cannot save. He is the King of Israel; let him now come down from the cross, and we will believe on him. He trusted on God; let him deliver him now, if he desires him: for he said,*

*I am the Son of God. And the robbers also that were crucified with him cast upon him the same reproach.* (Note the time BOTH robbers mocked Christ, just before the darkness) Now from the sixth hour there was darkness over all the land until the ninth hour. And about the ninth hour Jesus cried with a loud voice, saying, *Eli, Eli, lama sabachthani, that is, My God, my God, why have you forsaken me? And some of them stood there, when they heard it, said, 'This man calls Elijah.'* And straightway one of them ran, and took a sponge, and filled it with vinegar, and put it on a reed, and gave him to drink. And the rest said, *Let be; let us see whether Elijah cometh to save him."*

Mark 15:29-32: *"And they that passed by railed on him, wagging their heads, and saying, ha! You that destroys the temple, and builds it in three days, save yourself, and come down from the cross. In like manner also the chief priests mocking him among themselves with the scribes said, He saved others; himself he cannot save. Let the Christ, the King of Israel, now come down from the cross that we may see and believe. And they that were crucified with him reproached him. And when the sixth hour was come, there was darkness over the whole land until the ninth hour. And at the ninth hour Jesus cried with a loud voice, Eloi, Eloi, lama sabachthani? Which is, being interpreted, My God, my God, why have you forsaken me? And some of them that stood by, when they heard it, said, Behold, he calls Elijah. And one ran, and filling a sponge full of vinegar, put it on a reed, and gave him to drink, saying, Let be; let us see whether Elijah comes to take him down."*

THIS MOCKERY WAS OVER CHRIST CLAIMING TO BE KING BY:

1. By the soldiers
2. By Pilate
3. By those that passed by
4. By the chief priests and scribes
5. By **both** robbers

**MOCKERY BY THE BOTH ROBBERS.** *"And robbers also that were crucified with him cast upon him the same reproach"* (Matthew 27:44). Matthew and Mark give no details of the mockery by both robbers saying only that they **"cast upon him the same reproach."** Luke tells how they *"cast upon him the same reproach."* Just as Pilate did not believe Jesus, who had never been king over any nation and was about to be put to death, was **"THE KING OF THE JEWS,"** this robber did not believe the person being put to death with him would ever be a king and come into His kingdom. *"And the people stood beholding. And the rulers also scoffed at him, saying, He saved others; let him save himself, if this is the Christ of God, his chosen. And the soldiers also mocked him, coming to him, offering him vinegar, and saying, 'If you are the King of the Jews, save yourself'. And there was also a superscription over him, 'THIS IS THE KING OF THE JEWS'. And one of the malefactors that were hanged railed on him, saying, 'Are not you the Christ? Save yourself and us'. But the other answered, and rebuking him said, 'Do you not even fear God, seeing you are in the same condemnation? And we indeed justly, for we receive the due reward of our deeds: but this man has done nothing amiss'. And he said, 'Jesus, remember me when you come into your kingdom'. And he said unto him, 'Truly I say unto you, to-day you shall be with me in Paradise'"* (Luke 23:33-38).

**WHAT DID THE THIEF ASK CHRIST TO DO?**

- One robber railed on Christ by saying, *"Are not you the Christ? Save yourself and us."*

- The other robber by saying, *"Remember me when you come into your kingdom."* What would "remember me when" mean to the Jews of that day; they understood the kingdom to be an earthly kingdom of Israel, the Old Testament kingdom restored, and the Messiah they looked for would literally rule Israel as David did. The thief know he was dying and was speaking to a person that he could see was dying, mocking Him about coming into His kingdom when He was dying. Neither of the robbers thought this dying man was the Christ, or that He would come into a kingdom. Saying to someone whom he knows would soon be dead, *"Remember me when you come into your kingdom"* was nothing more than mockery just as the sign the thief could see over His head *saying "THIS IS THE KING OF THE JEWS"* was mockery. Neither of the robbers would have understood the messianic kingdom the Jews were looking for to be anything but a physical kingdom of Israel with an earthly king; someone that the robber could see would soon be dead could not be the king that Israel was looking for.
- Neither of the thieves would have thought this person that they could see would soon be dead would soon be with God in Heaven. Whatever Christ means by "paradise," to be in paradise, or Heaven, or to be anyplace with Christ after His death was not what the thief asked for.

**CHRIST DID NOT GO TO HEAVEN THAT DAY.** If Christ went to Heaven with the thief that day, would it not make His resurrection from the dead on the third day be nothing but mockery? Did Christ tell the theft that he would be in Heaven that day? Jesus did not go to paradise that day. **He had said He would be in the heart of the earth (grave) for three days (Matthew 12:40);** *"For as Jonah was three days and three nights in the belly of the whale; so shall the Son of man be three days and three nights in the heart of the earth."* It was on Friday evening just before the beginning of the Sabbath day when Christ told the robber that he would be with Him in Paradise, but on Sunday morning He said, *"Touch me not; for I am not yet ascended unto the Father"* (John 20:17). Paul said Christ died, was buried, **and was raised on the third day** (1 Corinthians 15:3-4; see Matthew 12:40). He was dead and in the grave unto the third day when the Father raised Him. **If Christ was alive and went to Heaven the day He died, what was His resurrection on the third day? It would be nothing but mockery to say He was raised from the dead when He was alive in Heaven.** Christ said, *"No one has ascended into heaven, but He who descended from heaven, even the Son of Man"* (John 3:13). If Moses did not ascend into Heaven at his death and had not ascended at the time Christ spoke this, how did the robber ascend to Heaven if Moses and David did not? In an attempt to make a passage say someone went to Heaven at death the thief has been made to be better than Moses and David? **Where was Christ from His death to His resurrection?** *"He foreseeing this spoke of the resurrection of the Christ, that neither was he left unto Hades, nor did his flesh see corruption. This Jesus did God raise up"* (Acts 2:31-32). This is from Psalm 16:10, *"Because you will not abandon me to the grave (sheol)"* New International Version. When will anyone go to Heaven? Not unto after the judgment. We must wait for the resurrection and judgment before we will go to Heaven.

**WHICH WAY DO THEY SEND CHRIST?** The advocates of an immortal soul say Christ went both up and down at His death.

- **In the spirits in prison** 1 Peter 3:18-20 the advocates of an immortal soul say Christ went down to Hell to preach to the spirits in prison at His death.

- In **the robber** Luke 23:43 the advocates of an immortal soul say He went up to Heaven at His death. They say one place one time, and another place another time.
- **The advocates of an immortal soul send Christ both down to Hell to preach to spirits in prison, AND up to Heaven with the robber, both places at the same time.**

#### WHAT IS NOT SAID:

- Nothing is said about the robber believing after he had "*reproached him*." This is added by those who say they do not believe in adding to the word of God. I have been told the robber "could have" heard Christ before this. If he did, he did not believe for he was still a robber, and even after he was on the cross he mocked Christ ("*reproached him*"). He may have been one of the many that could have heard Christ before this, but if he had heard Christ he did not believe for both robbers were some of the many who mocked Christ. Anyone can prove anything that they want to with a "could have."
- Nothing is said about an immortal soul that would depart from his body and would live on after the death of the person it was in, but it is almost always changed from the thief asking to be remembered, to be him asking for his immortal soul to be remembered; if it were not changed it would not prove we now have an immortal soul. The thief was not asking that an immaterial, bodiless something that was in him to go to Heaven, but he was a man that know he was dying that day asking a man that he know was also dying that day to remember him when he became the king of the nation that was putting them to death—it was nothing but pure mockery.

**Christ went to the grave that day, not Heaven.** Both Christ and the robber were in hades - the grave - on "*this day*."

#### FOUR PROBLEMS

1. Christ did not go to Heaven that day, did not tell the thief that he would be in Heaven that day.
2. It must be assumed that mankind now has immortality and will never die.
3. It must be assumed that all the saved go to Heaven at the moment of death, before and without the resurrection and judgment, that none go to sheol (the grave), and that none go to Abraham's bosom.
4. It must be assumed that David did ascend into the heavens (Acts 2:34).

#### THE KING JAMES VERSION AND THE COMMA

The way it is worded in the Kings James Version makes Christ be asking the thief a question ("*shall thou be with me in paradise*") with the question mark left out, and it ends the question with a period.

As it is in the Kings James Version with the Old English changed to today English."

- "*I say unto the, to-day, shalt thou be with me in paradise?*" Old English.
- "*I say unto you to-day, shall you be with me in paradise?*" Today's English.
  - As it is in the King James Version, Christ asked the thief a question, no promise that he will be in paradise, Heaven, or anyplace in that day, or any day is given to him. Yet this question Christ asked is frequency used to prove Christ was telling the thief that they both would be together in Heaven that very day.

Christ went to the grave that day. **Where is Paradise?** The only other two uses of Paradise in the New Testament are:

(1) Paul was "*caught up into paradise,*" which he says is in "*the third heaven*" (2 Corinthians 12:2-4).

(2) "*To him that overcomes, to him will I give to eat of the tree of life, which is in the Paradise of God*" (Revelation 2:7); the tree of life is in the New Jerusalem (See Revelation 21:1 to 22:5).

Many translations make Christ be telling the thief that they both would be together in paradise (Heaven?) that day.

- Wycliffe New Testament: "*And Jesus said to him, Truly I say to thee, **this day thou shalt be with me in paradise.***"
- English Standard Version: "*And he said to him, Truly, I say to you, **today you will be with me in Paradise.***"
- Young's Literal Translation: "*And Jesus said to him, Verily I say to thee, **To-day with me thou shalt be in the paradise.***"
- New International Version: "*Jesus answered him, I tell you the truth, **today you will be with me in paradise.***"
- New American Standard Bible: "*And He said to him, Truly I say to you, **today you shall be with Me in Paradise.***"
- English Standard Version: "*And he said to him, Truly, I say to you, **today you will be with me in Paradise.***"
- Amplified Bible: "*And He answered him, Truly I tell you, **today you shall be with Me in Paradise.***"
- English Standard Version: "*And he said to him, Truly, I say to you, **today you will be with me in Paradise.***"
- Darby Translation: "*And Jesus said to him, Verily I say to thee, **To-day shalt thou be with me in paradise.***" This Catholic Bible, like the King James Version, makes Christ be asking the thief a question, but it does not end the question with a question mark.
- Holman Christian Standard Bible: "*And He said to him, I assure you: **Today you will be with Me in paradise.***"
- New International Reader's Version: "*Jesus answered him, What I'm about to tell you is true. **Today you will be with me in paradise.***"
- Today's New International Version "*Jesus answered him, Truly I tell you, **today you will be with me in paradise.***"
- New International Version - UK: "*Jesus answered him, I tell you the truth, **today you will be with me in paradise.***"
- Marshall Parallel New Testament In Greek And English: "*Truly thee I tell, **Today with me thou will be in the paradise.***"

With the comma where it is in most translations, Christ answer to the mockery of the thief was that he would be with Him that day. That day Christ was in the grave; therefore, Christ told the thief that he would be in the grave that day. **Telling the thief that he was going to die and be in the grave that day does not sound like an answer the thief would have received if he had truly repented and was forgiven.**

**If Christ were telling the thief that he would be with Him in Heaven, it was not on that day;** the comma, which is not in the Greek must be moved for both Christ and the thief went to the grave that day, not to Heaven. "*I say unto you to-day, you shall you be with me in paradise.*" This would not make the being in paradise not be on that day, not on the day of their death. If the thief truly did repent and by "*paradise*" Christ was telling the thief that he would be in Heaven with Him, the comma must be put after "*today*" for Christ or the thief did not go to Heaven that day.

The Greek, in which the New Testament was written, did not have chapters or punctuation. Men have added the punctuation. The oldest manuscripts are all capitals, the words are not separated, and there is no punctuation.

- Cardinal Hugu de Sancta Caro divided it into chapters in A. D. 1250.
- Robert Stevens divided the Bible into verses about A. D. 1550.
- Manutius, a printer of Venice in A. D. 1490, invented the comma. It was put in the King James Version in A. D. 1611, **but it was not used by Luke before it was invented; therefore, there was no comma in Luke 23:43.** Punctuation that was put into the Bible in the medieval Dark Age to make the Bible teach what the translators wanted it to teach makes the Bible contradict the Bible.

There was not a comma in the whole New Testament. Men put all the punctuation marks in the Bible we use today, not God. The translators could sometimes make it say what was consistent with their beliefs by the way they used punctuation. Move the comma, which was not invented until 1490 and was added by uninspired men in the King James Version by man in A. D. 1611, and it does not say when they would be in paradise.

- VERILYISAYUNTOYOUTODAYYOU SHALLBEWITHMEINPARADISE.  
The oldest Greek manuscripts have all capital letters with no separation between words and sentences, and no punctuation marks.
- VERILY·I·SAY·UNTO·YOU·TODAY·YOU·SHALL·BE·WITH·ME·IN·PARADISE  
E  
Dots were put into the Greek in the ninth century to separate the words. The dots and all later punctuation of all Greek texts, which has been added after the ninth century is entirely on human authority.
- *“Verily I say unto you, ‘To-day you shall be with me in paradise.’”*
- *“Verily I say unto you today, ‘You shall be with me in paradise.’”* The comma was invented in 1490 and put in the Bible by men.

*“This day”* and *“I command you today”* is a common expression in the Bible to stress the time of the promise or command. See Genesis 31:18; Exodus 34:11; Deuteronomy 4:26; 4:40; 6:6; 7:11; 8:1; 8:11; 10:13; 11:8; 11:13; 11:18; 30:5.

- *“I declare to you this day, that you shall surely perish”* (Deuteronomy 30:18). He was told that he would perish, but was not told that the perishing would be on the day that he was being told; he did not perish until sometime after the day he was told.
- *“Wherefore I take you to record this day, that I am pure from the blood of all man”* (Acts 20:26 King James Version).

The Companion Bible, Appendix 173: **“The interpretation of this verse depends entirely on punctuation, which rests wholly on human authority, the Greek manuscripts having no punctuation of any kind till the ninth century,** and then it is only a dot in the middle of the line separating each word.”

To put the comma where the King James Version put it makes Jesus be saying He would be in paradise that day when He knew He would not be in paradise that day. The King James translators, who believed that everyone will go immediately to Heaven or Hell at death, punctuated it to make both Christ and the thief be in Heaven **on that very day.**

H Leo Boles: “Evidently Jesus did not mean that this robber would go with him to heaven that day, as it seems clear from other statements that Jesus did not go to heaven that day. His day of



ascension came about forty days after that time" A Commentary On The Gospel Of Luke, page 454, 1954, Gospel Advocate Company.

Curtis Dickinson: "It may be asked why translators of most modern version do not place the comma after the 'today' so that the verse will harmonize with other scriptural teaching on death and resurrection. We might as well ask why they do not translate the Greek *bapitizo* as 'immerse' or *diakonos* as 'servant' instead of merely spelling them with English letters. To do so would put the translation at odds with most denominational doctrine and almost insure its failure to be accepted." "The Witness" Volume 30, Number 8, 1990.

There is no grammatical justification for the placement of the comma before "*today*." Christ or the thief did not go to Heaven that day. By moving the comma that was added by uninspired men with a theological prejudice, the conflict with other passages is removed even if "*in paradise*" does mean "in Heaven."

Note: The punctuation can change the meaning of the same words.

"After he had offered one sacrifice for sin for ever, set down on the right hand of God."

"After he had offered one sacrifice for sin, for ever set down on the right hand of God."

Woman, without her man, is nothing.

Woman, without her, man is nothing.

### **Passages that do not have spirit or soul in them**

#### **But are used to prove both**

#### **(2). "TO DIE IS GAIN" Philippians 1:21-23**

When this passage is used to prove that a person immediately takes up residences in their permanent home in Heaven at death, it is taken out of context. The first chapter of Philippians is about the Gospel being preached. Paul says, "*Now I want you to know, brethren, that my circumstances have turned out for the greater progress of the gospel, so that my bonds became manifest in Christ throughout the whole praetorian guard, and to all the rest; and that most of the brethren in the Lord, being confident through my bonds, are more abundantly bold to speak the word of God without fear*" (Philippians 1:12-14). His imprisonment was not a personal gain, but because of it the word of Christ was being preached; therefore, it was gain to the cause of Christ. In verse 18 it did not matter the motives, Christ was being preached and he rejoiced. Verse 20 "*So now also Christ shall be magnified in my body, whether by life, or by death.*" If he lived, he would preach Christ. If he died, others would be made more bold and preach Christ because of his death. Verse 21 "*For to me to live is Christ, and to die is gain.*" Death is an enemy (1 Corinthians 15:26). It was not a personal gain for Paul. He knows that if he died before the coming of Christ he would not be in Heaven unto after the resurrection and judgment at the second coming of Christ. **He knows his death would be a gain for the cause of Christ, and that Christ would be preached because of his death, not a personal gain for himself.** Verse 22 "*But if to live in the flesh, if this shall bring fruit from my work, then what I shall choose I know not*" If he lived and preached Christ, or if his death would cause others to preach Christ, which one would bring the most fruit, he knew not. "*Now I want you to know, brothers and sisters, that what has happened to me has actually served to advance the gospel. As a result, it has become clear throughout the whole palace guard and to everyone else that I am in chains for Christ. And because of my chains, most of the brothers and sisters have become confident in the Lord and dare all the more to proclaim the gospel more courageously and fearlessly,*" (Philippians 1:12-14 New International Version). **He is not saying he did not know whether (1) living in**

**this world was best, (2) or living in Heaven was best, but when this passage is used to prove an immortal soul this is what he says is changed to.**

Philippians 1:12-30: When it became known that Paul was in prison it was gain to the Gospel for it made others bold to preach the Gospel, and made others preached the Gospel "*thinking to raise up affliction for me in my bonds.*" In the same way Paul is saying his death would be gain to the cause of Christ just as his being in prison was, not a personal gain. **If "To die is gain," means we go to Heaven when we die,**

- **Why would Paul say he did not know if going to Heaven was better than living on earth?**
- **Why do we go to a doctor to get well and do all we can to keep from going to Heaven; why do we pray for each other when one of us is sick; would we not asking God not to take us to Heaven and are thankful if He does not?**

The reason we do not want to die is that death is not a gateway to Heaven, but death is an enemy, which makes the resurrection be absolute necessity; without it there would be no life after death for anyone. If death were a gateway to Heaven, we would be praying, "Lord, do not make us come live up there with You, let us live down here on earth where Satan can tempt us." **If there is no real death, there cannot be a real resurrection.**

We are repeatedly told **we will be with the Lord at His coming**, not at death (2 Thessalonians 2:1) when He shall appear (Colossians 3:4), yet "*To die is gain*" is used to set aside many plain and clear passages, and make the entrance to Heaven be immediately at death, not after the resurrection.

The Greek word "ex" is used hundreds of times in the New Testament, mostly translated "all" or "from." Of the hundreds of times it is used, Philippians 1:23 is the only time "ex" is translated "betwixt."

**Passages that do not have spirit or soul in them  
But are used to prove both  
(3). "TO DEPART AND TO BE WITH THE LORD"  
Philippians 1:23; 2 Corinthians 5:8**

Philippians 1:23: "*But I am hard-pressed from both directions, having the desire to depart and be with Christ.*" **Be with the Lord at the Judgment Day, not instantly at death:** In the same letter Paul says, "*If by any means I may attain unto the resurrection from the dead*" (Philippians 3:11). Every time Paul discusses life after death he always points to the resurrection; without it there would be no life after death. He tells the Thessalonians that we will **be with the lord** after the resurrection, "*For the Lord Himself will descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of the archangel, and with the trumpet of God; and the dead in Christ shall rise first. Then we who are alive and remain shall be caught up together with them in the clouds to meet the Lord in the air, and thus we shall always BE WITH THE LORD*" (1 Thessalonians 4:16-17). It was Paul, "I" that had a desire to be with the Lord, not something in Paul that had no substance.

- Be with the Lord "*at that day*" 2 Timothy 4:8.
- Be with the Lord at "*His appearing*" 2 Timothy 4:8.

2 Corinthians 5:8: "*Knowing that he that raised up the Lord Jesus shall raise up us also with Jesus, and shall present us with you...are willing to be absent from the body, and to be at home with the Lord...For we must all be made manifest before the judgment-seat of Christ; that each one may receive the things done in the body*" (2 Corinthians 4:14-5:10). The context 2 Corinthians 5:8 is the resurrection and judgment at

the coming of Christ, not to be in Heaven at the moment of death; it is taken out of its context and changed to contradict its context.

Many passages show that Paul's whole hope of being with Jesus was at the resurrection, not at the moment of death. *"Henceforth there is laid up for me the crown of righteousness, which the Lord, the righteous judge, shall give to me at THAT DAY; and not to me only, but also to all them that have loved His appearing"* (2 Timothy 4:8). Paul clearly says the time of his death has come, but he will not receive the crown of righteousness unto the appearing of Christ at the Judgment Day. He will be with the Lord at the same time all the saved will be, *"at that day"* the Judgment Day, not at death. At *"his appearing"* See 2 Timothy 1:12; 1:18; 4:18; 2 Thessalonians 1:10; Philippians 1:10; 1:6; 1 Corinthians 1:8; 5:6. When will Paul be given *"the crown of righteousness,"* when Christ comes, not at death? See 1 Peter 5:4. *"To be with the Lord,"* says nothing about an *"immaterial, invisible part of man"* (1) not between death and the resurrection (2) or not after the resurrection; Paul used "me," and "we," not "my soul," or "your soul," nothing is said about "your soul" in this passage. *"For the Lord himself shall descend for Heaven...and so we shall ever be with the Lord"* (1 Thessalonians 4:16-17); it is after the resurrection that *we* will be with the Lord, not at death. No one has ascended into Heaven but Christ; therefore, Paul has not ascended to Heaven, and he is not now in Heaven with the Lord (John 3:13). **Paul died about two thousand years ago, but like David (Acts 2:29), Paul is not yet in Heaven with the Lord, and he will not be until after the resurrection; therefore, this passage could not be saying Paul had an immortal, invisible soul that would go to Heaven and be with the Lord at the time of his death.**

- Peter says of David, *"That he both died and was buried...for David ascended not into the heavens"* (Acts 2:29-34).
  - David is in the grave; Christ is not in the grave.
  - David is not in Heaven; Christ is in Heaven.
    - The same David that is in the grave is the same David that is not in Heaven.
- Today's theology says, "David is not dead and he has ascended into Heaven."

Paul teaches:

1. That the dead are now asleep.
2. That the dead will not be resurrected until the resurrection at the coming of Christ.
  - Therefore, *"absent from the body"* cannot mean going to Heaven at death.

To make *"with the Lord"* mean we go to Heaven with the Lord at death takes away any need for a resurrection, and makes it useless and foolish. After some had been in Heaven with the Lord for centuries, why would He send them back to earth to raise them from the dead when they were not dead, and take them back to Heaven when from the day of their death they had been very much alive in Heaven and were never dead?

There are three major views on the condition of the dead.

1. The dead are now dead and will be dead until the resurrection of the dead.
2. The dead are now alive in an intermediate state without the resurrection.
3. The dead are now alive in Heaven or Hell without the resurrection.

Although this passage is used as undeniable proof of both 2 and 3, and to set aside the many passages on the resurrection, this passage is completely silent about where the dead are before the resurrection, and it says nothing about a separate conscious entity being in a person; it was Paul that would die (depart), and Paul that would be with the Lord, not

just some something that Paul could not see or could not know it was in him. It is not implicated, as some say, that Paul was speaking of some immaterial something that has no substance that would be with the Lord after Paul was dead, but Paul himself that will be with the Lord, the whole Paul.

Those who believe the dead go to hades, some to be with the rich man in torment, and some to be in "*Abraham's bosom*" also use "*be with the Lord*" when they are trying to prove men now have an immortal soul, but in doing so they do not seem to be able to see that they are making all go to Heaven or Hell at death; therefore, they have made going to hades, to "*Abraham's bosom*," at death impossible. We could not be (1) in "*Abraham's bosom*," and (2) in Heaven with the Lord both at the same time. When they need to, they make hades be "the grave" for the body to be in, and when they need to, they make it be "*Abraham's bosom*" for the "soul" to live in. How do they know when it should be one, and when it should be the other? In trying to make Paul and Stephen be conscious after death, they are both put directly in Heaven at death before and without the Judgment Day; sometimes even by those who do not believe anyone is now in Heaven.

We need to be very careful not to make Paul say something he did not say (2 Peter 3:16). "*To be with the Lord*," but where and when will we be with the Lord? Not in our permanent abode in Heaven at death, for we will not be there unto after the judgment. If we go to Heaven or Hell at death, this would mean that the final judgment takes place immediately at death, for God would have to decide our destiny then; therefore, God would have made the final judgment before the Judgment Day, before the coming of Christ.

Jesus said, "***And if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again, and receive you to Myself; that where I am, there you may be also***" (John 14:3). Many say, "Not so Lord, we will be with you in Heaven, Your second coming and the resurrection will not be needed for we will be alive with You in Heaven." But Paul said, "***For our citizenship is in heaven, from which also we eagerly wait for a Savior, the Lord Jesus Christ; who will transform the body of our humble state into conformity with the body of His glory***" (Philippians 3:20-21). It is us (our bodies) who will be transformed, not something that is in us that is now just as immortal as it could ever be, something that will not need to be transformed, and this something that is already immortal that is now in a person that will not wait for the Lord Jesus to come again, but it will immediately go to Heaven to be with Him just as soon as it is freed by the death of the person it is in. Both the how and when Paul or anyone will be with the Lord is stated in no uncertain terms in many passages

Living Christians need not sorrow as the rest who have no hope (1 Thessalonians 4:13). There are four points in this passage.

1. Those who are asleep will be resurrected from the dead at the second coming of Christ. **The departed person will not be with Christ unto He comes "*again, and receive you to Myself, that where I am, there you may be also*"** (John 14:2). Not alive before, "*The Lord himself shall descend from heaven...and the dead in Christ shall rise first.*" At the coming of Christ the dead shall rise from the grave, not come back from Hell or Heaven. He is not speaking of any that are alive in Heaven, not those who are in any way awake and active, but to those who are "*asleep.*"

2. Those who are living at the time Christ comes will be changed. Living Christians will not precede (go ahead of) the Christians that are not living (them that are fallen asleep) to meet the Lord, *“And so shall we ever be with the Lord”* (1 Thessalonians 4:15).
3. **Both those in Christ who are dead, and those who are living, will together go from the earth to meet the Lord in the air when he is coming from Heaven before we will “be with the Lord.” “Then we that are alive, that are left, SHALL TOGETHER with them be caught up (from the earth) in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the air”** (1 Thessalonians 4:17-18). **How could Paul have said any clearer that those who are now asleep are not now alive in Heaven, but that they will be raised from the dead and meet the Lord in the air as He is returning?** It is by (1) resurrection of the dead (2) and by translation of the living, both at the coming of Christ that we shall be with the Lord, **there is no other way or time that anyone will ever be with the Lord.**
4. *“And so shall we (both the living Christians and the Christians that are not living at the time He comes) ever be with the Lord”* (1 Thessalonians 4:17). With the Lord in the place in Heaven where He has gone to prepare for the saved (John 14:2). The future existence of the dead in Christ absolutely depends upon (1) the resurrection of those who are asleep (2) or on a translation of those who are living when Christ comes. *“That whether we are awake or asleep, we may live together with Him”* (1 Thessalonians 5:10).

The saved will not have the bodies of flesh and bones that will be renewed and made to be immortal bodies of flesh and bones, but will have new bodies made for Heaven just as the angels.

Why did Paul say he had a desire to depart? He lived a life of suffering, toil, and trials (2 Corinthians 11:23-33), and like Job, he understood death would be a relief from pain; and he knew that from the standpoint of the person that departs it will be as if he or she is with the Lord the next moment, for we will know nothing of the time between death and the resurrection, that time will seem as if it was only a moment for both the person that has been asleep for thousands of years, and for the person that has just fallen asleep. The dead in Christ are now asleep, and have not yet ascended into Heaven, not even David or Paul, only Christ is now in Heaven, *“But now has Christ been raised from the dead, the first-fruits of them that ARE ASLEEP...in Christ shall all be made alive. But each in his own order: Christ the first fruits, then they that are Christ’s at His coming”* (1 Corinthians 15:20-23). For us, there is no life after death unto the resurrection, and never would be life without a resurrection of the dead.

**Analus is used in the New Testament only two times.**

1. *“When he will RETURN (Greek-analus) from the wedding”* Luke 12:36.

2. *“Having a desire to DEPART (Greek-analus), and to be with the Lord”* Philippians 1:23.

**“To depart,” or “Will return,” which one does analus means?** The article “the” is in the Greek before analus, but was not put in most English translations. “

**Passages that do not have spirit or soul in them**

**But are used to prove both**

**(4) IN THE BODY OR OUT OF THE BODY (2 Corinthians 12:1-2)**

***“But I will come to visions and revelations of the Lord” Paul had not died at the time he wrote this; therefore, there are only two possibilities.***

1. **First possibility: Paul was taken to the third Heaven in his earthly body** and given a revelation, which was not lawful for him to utter, and then returned to Earth. He did not die. This would prove nothing about a disembodied soul from death unto the resurrection. **Being taken to Heaven alive in his body would not even be a death. At the time he says this, he was still a living human being that had not died, it was not after the death of Paul that a disembodied soul went to Heaven without the body of Paul. Then how can this be used to show that Paul had an "immaterial, invisible part of man" that would not die when Paul died? "Whether in the body,"** although it is almost certain that no flesh and blood body has ever been in Heaven or ever will be, God has the power, and He could have taken Paul to the third Heaven when he was in his body, or He has the power to have taken Paul to the third Heaven in a vision. Paul did not know which so we cannot know. If Paul were caught up to the third Heaven before his death this was special case, and not what happened to Paul after his death, or will happen to all mankind instantaneously at death. It is not going to Abraham's bosom, which is where many teach all the saved will go immediately at death. **There is nothing in this passage about what will be after death, (1) nether before the resurrection (2) nor after the resurrection for Paul or for us; so how can this passage be used to prove a person has a "disembodied soul" in them that will go to Heaven after the death of the person it was in?** Paul had not died. He said, *"I know a man...how that he was caught up into Paradise"* not "I know a immaterial soul." This took place while Paul was alive; there is nothing in this passage about a soul that was in Paul that left his body, but that is what it is repeatedly used to prove.
2. **Second possibility: this was a vision:** Neither would a vision prove anything about there being a disembodied soul that is in a person that will be in Heaven or Hell from the death of the person unto the resurrection. "Visions" in 2 Corinthians 12:1 is translated from "optasia," and it is used only four times in the New Testament.
  - (1) *"That he had seen a VISION (optasia) in the temple"* (Luke 1:2).
  - (2) *"They had also seen a VISION (optasia) of angels"* (Luke 24:23).
  - (3) *"Disobedient unto the heavenly VISION"* (optasia) (Acts 26:19).
  - (4) And in this passage, *"I will come to VISIONS (optasia) and revelations"* (2 Corinthians 12:1). A vision, which is something like a dream, cannot be used to prove that there is an immortal soul or an immortal spirit in Paul or in anyone that lives on after the person is dead.

**EITHER WAY:** If Paul were taken to Heaven, or if this was a vision.

1. This says nothing about an *"immaterial invisible part of man,"* nothing about a soul or a spirit.
2. Or nothing about anything that will be after death before the resurrection, this was when Paul was still alive, not after his death.

Those who use this to prove a person has an immortal soul that is now as immortal as it will be after the resurrection must say they know what Paul said he did not know. They must say only something that was in Paul, a "soul" but not his body went to Heaven, and that this was not a vision. How could anyone know this when Paul did not? According to the common view, when a soul leaves the body, the body is dead, and death is the

separation of body and soul. Therefore, if this something called "soul" separated from the body, and it went to the third Heaven, but his body was on the earth separated from this soul that had been in him, then Paul was dead, but the soul that had been in Paul was alive. According to the belief that death is only a separation of the body and soul, Paul would have been dead, and his soul coming back to his body would have to be a resurrection from the dead. According to this teaching, his dead body was on earth at the same time that his soul was in Heaven separated from his body, he died and was raised from the dead and did not know it. We are told that "*out of the body*" means Paul's soul went to paradise and left his corpse on the earth; therefore, Paul was dead according to their own definition of death. Who can believe Paul was dead, and he was resurrected when his soul returned, and he did not know it?

Those who use this to prove a person has an immortal soul that is now as immortal as it will be after the resurrection must say they know what Paul said he did not know. They must say only a part of Paul, his "soul" but not his body went to Heaven, and that this was not a vision. How could anyone know this when Paul did not? According to the common view, when the soul leaves the body, the body is dead, and death is the separation of body and soul. Therefore, if a part of Paul called "soul" separated from the body, and it went to the third Heaven, but his body was on the earth separated from this soul; therefore, dead. According to the belief that death is only a separation of the body and soul, Paul would have been dead, and his soul coming back to his body would have to be a resurrection from the dead. According to this teaching, his dead body was on earth at the same time that his soul was in Heaven separated from his body, he died and was raised from the dead and did not know it. We are told that "*out of the body*" means Paul's soul went to paradise and left his corpse on the earth; therefore, Paul was dead according to their own definition of death. Who can believe Paul was dead, and he was resurrected, and he did not know it?

"*Out of*" is translated from the Greek word "ektos." It is used nine times in the New Testament.

1. "*Clean first the inside of the cup and of the platter, that the **outside** (ektos) thereof may become lean also*" (Matthew 23:26).
2. "*Saying **nothing** (ektos) but what the prophets and Moses did say should come*" (Acts 26:22).
3. "*Flee fornication. Every sin that a man does is **without** (ektos) the body; but he that commits fornication sins against his own body*" (1 Corinthians 6:18). Paul is not saying all the sins of a person were by a disembodied soul without (ektos—"out of the body") the person.
4. "*Greater is he that prophesies than he that speaks with tongues, **except** (ektos) he interpret*" (1 Corinthians 14:5).
5. "***Except** (ektos) you believed in vain*" (1 Corinthians 15:2).
6. "*It is evident that He is **excepted** (ektos) who did subject all thing unto Him*" (1 Corinthians 15:27).
7. "*I know a man in Christ, fourteen years ago (whether in the body, I know not or whether **out of the body** (ektos), I know not; God knows*" (2 Corinthians 12:2).
8. "*And I know such a man (whether in the body or **apart from the body** (ektos), I know not God knows)*" (2 Corinthians 12:3).

9. "Against an elder receive not an accusation, **except** (ektos) at the mouth of two or three witnesses" (1 Timothy 5:19).

- Of the nine times ektos is used, why are only two translated in a way that would support the belief of there being an immortal something in a person, why is ektos translated seven times with only one word, and only two times ektos is translated into four words? In the Greek, body is from "soma," there is no way to get "body" from "ektos," but the translators added "body" anyway, but in only two of the nine times ektos is used. There is no way to get a disembodied immaterial soul that can leave the person it is in out of Paul's vision.

Summary: First **ADDED**, then **CHANGED**. First "psukee (life, soul, living being)" must be **ADDED** into this passage when it is not in it, then the **ADDED** psukee must be **CHANGED** into an immortal bodiless being that can exist "*apart from the body.*" Theology had to go on a long trip to put what they wanted into this. There is nothing in this passage about the intermediate time from death unto the resurrection; but that a part of a person called "soul" is alive in the intermediate time from death to the resurrection is what they are trying to prove with it. **Paul was speaking about a vision that had happened fourteen years before (2 Corinthians 12:1), not a death for at the time of the vision Paul was very much alive, and there is nothing in this passage (1) about a soul or a spirit, (2) nothing about death (3) or nothing about anything that will be after death.** How could this possibly be used to prove that there is a soul in Paul or anyone that is immortal and cannot die; therefore, cannot be resurrected from the dead?

**Passages that do not have spirit or soul in them**

**But are used to prove both**

**(5). THE BELIEF OF THE PHARISEES AND OF THE SADDUCEES  
WHOSE WIFE SHALL SHE BE**

**THE GOD OF ABRAHAM, ISAAC AND JACOB Luke 20:27-38**

There is much conflict and confusion in what has been written about the beliefs of both the Pharisee and the Sadducees. Below is a brief outline of their beliefs, which is in agreement with most writers.

**THE SADDUCEES** believed in a strict following of the Law, and they believed that the Law said nothing about an immortal soul, or about the resurrection of the dead. See (6). "The God of Abraham" next in this chapter.

**THE PHARISEES** were originated in the time of the Maccabees, and probably died out in A. D. 70 or soon after. A belief in some kind of resurrection was established among some of the Jews in the time of Christ, but was not believed by most, but the teaching of Christ in Mark 12:26-27 on anyone having eternal life and immortality in Heaven after death was new to them (2 Timothy 1:10). The Pharisees seem to have believed much of Rabbinic Judaism, mostly writings that were written between the Testaments that were influenced by Greek pagan teaching. Some form of an immortal soul was believed by the Greeks, and is in some of the Rabbinical writings. The Pharisees did believe in both the resurrection of the dead, and in spirits and angels (Acts 23:8); they did believe the teaching of eternal life was found in the Scriptures, and searched the scriptures for proof (John 5:39), but what kind of life and where did they believe it would be; what did they believe about the resurrection? The only resurrections in the Old Testament Scriptures that they searched were resurrections of earthly body back to a



mortal life that was no different from the mortal life of those who had not been resurrected; the seven men and the wife were physically breathing people, and the Pharisees believed they would be the same when they were resurrected with the same earthly needs, marriage, need for food, sleep, etc. The New Testament teaching of a resurrection to immortality in Heaven is not in the Old Testament was unknown to them. Christ abolished death, and *"brought life and immortality to light through the gospel"* (2 Timothy 1:10-11); something brought to light is made visible, something that was not seen, but now it can be seen; something not brought to light could not have been seen by them; therefore, how could the Pharisees or anyone have known about something God had not made known? They looked for the Christ to restore Israel as a great nation and to set on the throne of David in Jerusalem, not a Christ that would be killed and resurrected, and He would set on His throne in Heaven over a kingdom not of this world. They may have thought Abraham, David, and others would be resurrected as mortals in the restored Israel under the savior they looked for, but even the prophecies of the Old Testament about Christ (Acts 2:25) were not understood to be a resurrection to immortality or to life in Heaven, for they thought their savior would be a person just as David was, a person who would save the nation of Israel and would literally set on the throne of David in Jerusalem. **Whatever they believed about a resurrection, it could not have been the resurrection to eternal life in Heaven, which was not known about before Christ.** A resurrection and judgment of all, and eternal life in Heaven for believers after death was unknown to them. They had many traditions and were rebuked for making the Law void by their traditions. Jesus said to them, *"You hypocrites, well did Isaiah prophesy of you, saying, this people honors me with their lips; but their heart is far from me. But in vain do they worship me, teaching as their doctrines the precept of men"* (Matthew 15:7-9). Much of the teaching of Christ was a rebuke to the both the Pharisees and the Sadducees about their beliefs. See Matthew 19.

- *"But as touching the dead, that they are raised"* Mark 12:26.
  - *"But that the dead are raised"* Luke 20:37.
  - *"But as touching the resurrection of the dead"* Matthew 22:31.
    - The subject was the resurrection, that there will be a resurrection, not an immortal soul that could not be resurrected.
    - *"But as touching the dead"*--not a deathless soul that was never dead, that was already alive in Heaven or Hell without the resurrection. If Abraham kept on living, if only his body was dead, but the real Abraham was alive in Heaven, in Abraham's bosom, or anyplace, then he could not have been resurrected from the undead; **a soul that is not dead could not be resurrected from the dead.**
1. God is the God of Abraham.
  2. Without the resurrection there is no life after death.
  3. Therefore, Abraham will be raised from the dead and live again; proves the resurrection of Abraham, not that there was a soul in Abraham that is not dead.

#### THE QUESTION OF THE SADDUCEES

The Sadducees did not believe in a resurrection, their question was an attempt to disprove the belief of the Pharisees of an earthly resurrection. *"On that day there came to him Sadducees, they that say that there is no resurrection"* (Matthew 22:23). **To prove there was no resurrection they tried to trick Jesus with a question that would prove**

**there was not. The point of His answer was to prove there is to be a resurrection, not to prove anything about the state of the dead before the resurrection. There is nothing in their question or in Christ's answer about a disembodied soul or spirit that is alive before the resurrection.** Christ was asked, *"The woman also died...in the resurrection; therefore, whose wife of them shall she be"* (Luke 20:33)? They did not ask whose wife she would be after the death of the body, but whose wife in the resurrection; they seem to think that those who believed in the resurrection thought it would be a resurrection to life on this earth, life much as it now is, their question was not who now has her disembodied spirit in the intermediate state. Christ said to them, ***"But they that are accounted worthy to attain to that world (aion-age) and the resurrection from the dead...but that THE DEAD ARE RAISED"*** (Luke 20:35-37), ***"But as touching the resurrection of the dead (Matthew 22:31). "For when they shall rise from the dead...But as touching the dead, that they are raised"*** (Mark 12:25-26).

*"In the resurrection; therefore, whose wife shall she be of the seven?"* (Matthew 22:28. Notice the question or the answer did not mention an intermediate state. The fact that they thought that if there were a resurrection she would have to be the wife of one of the seven points out that they were thinking of a resurrection of an earthly mortal body with life on this earth as it is now with husbands, wives, and children. The only resurrections in the Old Testament, resurrections that they would know about, were resurrections back to a mortal life that would die again, back to life just as it was before death.

This has two parts:

First part: Christ answers their argument.

Second part: Christ's new revelation about believes going to be as angels in Heaven.

Then He adds proof of the resurrection, *"I am the God of Abraham."*

#### FIRST PART

**"YOU DO ERR, NOT KNOWING THE SCRIPTURES"**

Matthew 22:29; Mark 12:24

Marriage and the Law -- women with seven husbands

Their err was not on what the Law said about the resurrection, but on what the Law said about marriage. *"Do you not know, brothers and sisters—for I am speaking to those who know the law—that the law has authority over someone only as long as that person lives? For example, by law a married woman is bound to her husband as long as he is alive, but if her husband dies, she is released from the law that binds her to him. So then, if she has sexual relations with another man while her husband is still alive, she is called an adulteress. But if her husband dies, she is released from that law and is not an adulteress if she marries another man"* (Romans 7:1-3, New International Version). When all seven died, the women was freed from them all. The New Testament says the same as the Old Testament on marriage, *"A wife is bound for so long time as her husband lives; but if the husband be dead, she is free to be married to whom she will; only in the Lord"* (1 Corinthians 7:39).

Then Christ adds a new revelation, *"In the resurrection"*

This reply by Christ is one of, if not the first suggestion of a resurrection that will not be a resurrection back to a mortal life. This was a new teaching of Christ that was not known about before He brought it (immortality) to light through the gospel (2 Timothy 1:10); therefore, immortality could not have been known about by either the Sadducees or

the Pharisees. *"The sons of this world (aion-age) marry, and are given in marriage: but they that are accounted worthy to attain to that world (aion-age), and the resurrection from the dead, neither marry, nor are given in marriage: for neither can they die any more; for they are equal unto the angels; and are sons of God"* (Luke 20:34-36). Jesus is speaking of life in two different ages, in this age where there is marriage and death, and life in an age (Heaven) where there is no marriage or death. The Pharisees view of the resurrection that the Sadducees did not believe seems to be a resurrection to life as it now is in this age. Christians, while living on this earth are (1) not immortal, (2) not deathless, (3) not spirits, (4) not equal unto the angels, (5) they do marry.

**"BUT AS TOUCHING THE RESURRECTION OF THE DEAD"**

Matthew 22:31-33

Christ now introduces proof of the resurrection. *"But regarding the fact that the dead rise again, have you not read in the book of Moses, in the passage about the burning bush, how God spoke to him, saying, 'I am the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob'? He is not the God of the dead, but of the living; you are greatly mistaken"* (Mark 12:26-27). The Sadducees understood this proof of the resurrection and were put to silence (Matthew 22:34). *"Neither dared any man from that day forth ask him any more questions"* (Matthew 22:46).

But how did Christ get a resurrection out of, *"I am the God of Abraham"*? If Abraham were alive in Heaven then it would prove the resurrection to be both not needed and not possible.

- If Abraham was not dead then he could not be resurrected from the dead.
- David is not yet in Heaven (Acts 2:29).
- Christ is the only one that has been resurrected and is now in Heaven (1 Corinthians 16:20). He is the only one that will live be unto after the resurrection and judgment.
- All that have died are now asleep and will sleep unto the resurrection (1 Corinthians 15:20-24).
- The Old Testament did not teach life in Heaven for anyone, Jesus *"abolished death, and brought life and immortality to light through the gospel"* (2 Timothy 1:10). See chapter seven on, "A strange and unexplainable silence the silence of the Old Testament on punishment and life after death."

Those that teach there is a deathless immortal soul that is in a person say this speaking of the soul that had been in Abraham, but a deathless soul could not be used to prove that there will be a resurrection of the dead.

- 1. If "I am the God of Abraham" proves Abraham has an immortal soul that never died, it proves that there cannot be a resurrection.**
- 2. If "I am the God of Abraham" proves Abraham is dead and must be resurrected, it proves that Abraham did not have an immortal soul that was alive at the time Christ said this.**
  - **It cannot prove both. If it proves life after death on the grounds of inherit immortality, it proves that there cannot be a resurrection.**

How *"I am the God of Abraham"* proves there will be a resurrection was understood by those hearing Christ, but the commentaries are extremely divided on this passage and I have not found even one that has a convincing answer. Luke adds, *"Now he is not the God of the dead, but of the living: for all live unto him"* (Luke 20:38). Even though

Abraham is now asleep and will be unto the resurrection, Is Christ saying Abraham exist in the mind of God and Abraham the person will be resurrected but with a new body that will be *"equal unto the angels"* (Luke 20:34-36). Abraham will be raised but not his natural earthly body; he will be raised with a spiritual body (1 Corinthians 15:44) for life in Heaven.

Today most that are called Jews believe more like the Sadducees did, and do not believe the Old Testament says anything about an immortal soul, or anything about anyone going to Heaven at anytime after death; they do not believe their savior has come, and believed when he dose come he will restore Israel as a nation.

Alexander Campbell: "1. That before the Captivity, and the Macedonian and Roman conquests, the Jews observed the most profound silence upon the state of the deceased, as to their happiness or misery. They spoke of it simply as a place of silence, darkness, and inactivity. 2. But after the Hebrews mingled with the Greeks and Romans, they insensibly aided into their use of terms, and adopted some of their ideas on such subjects as those on which their oracles were silent." Appendix to "The Living Oracles," page 59, 1826, Gospel Advocate Company.

The belief of the Greeks was reincarnation back to some kind of earthly life that would die again, and would be reincarnated over and over with little or nothing being remembered about any of the earlier lives, not even what kind of plants or animals they may have been in past lives; they had no conception of eternal life in Heaven that was made known by Christ.

### **Passages that do not have spirit or soul in them**

#### **But are used to prove both**

#### **(6). THE GOD OF ABRAHAM**

Matthew 22:32 *"But as touching the resurrection of the dead, have you not read that which was spoken unto you by God, saying, 'I am the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob? God is not the God of the dead, but of the living.'"* Christ was proving to the Sadducees that there will be a resurrection, not that Abraham was alive at the time He was not saying that at that time Abraham was not alive in Heaven, Hell, in Abraham's bosom, or alive any other place. **If the dead are living in a disembodied state, for God to say he was the God of Abraham would not prove there will be a resurrection, but would prove one was not needed. If Abraham were not dead, Christ could not have used Abraham to prove the dead will be raised.** The dead must be dead to be raised; a living Abraham would not need to be raised, would not need a resurrection to make him alive. **The whole point Christ was making is that there will be a resurrection, not that none are dead to be resurrected. Not that a disembodied spirit is the only part of a person that will be in Heaven or Hell, and this immaterial part of a person is now alive in Heaven or Hell while his or her dead body is in the grave. If a disembodied part of Abraham were alive anywhere it would make his resurrection impossible. A resurrection of those who are living would be an empty show, a fraud, not a resurrection.** The belief of many says, "Not so Christ, I was born immortal and cannot die; therefore, I cannot be dead or raised from the dead"? This theology destroys the Biblical doctrine of the resurrection.

1. Either Abraham was dead and will be resurrected.
2. Or Abraham was alive and he cannot be resurrected.
3. It could not be both; he could not be resurrected if he was alive.

If Abraham were alive, as many teach he was, then he was never asleep. Many believe we have an immortal part of us that can never be dead, but despite the fact this soul is

alive it is going to be resurrected from the dead so that it can be in Heaven even though it is already alive in Heaven before the resurrection. Paul said of Able, "*He being dead*" (Hebrews 11:4), if language has any meaning, Abel was dead, not alive at the time Paul said this. "*For David...fell asleep, and was laid unto his fathers, and saw corruption*" (Acts 13:36); if David were living (awake) at this time, if only his body was in the tomb, Peter had no point or argument; what Peter said had no meaning.

1. Christ was not in the grave at that time He was visible for all to see.
  - David was in the grave.
2. Christ did not see corruption.
  - David did.
3. Christ ascended into Heaven.
  - David has not ascended into Heaven, and he will not unto the resurrection.

*"From the day that the fathers fell asleep"* (2 Peter 3:4) shows that Abraham and David are still asleep, along with all other's that *"are fallen asleep"* (1 Corinthians 15:6). To say that Abraham has been raised is to say the resurrection is past, and Christ was not the *"first fruits"* (2 Corinthians 15:20), or the *"first born"* (Colossians 1:18, Revelation 1:5). To say that an immortal part of Abraham was never dead is to make a resurrection impossible. The resurrection at the coming of Christ is the subject, and nothing is said about what will be between death and the resurrection. *"For none of us live to himself, and none die to himself. For whether we live, we live unto the Lord; or whether we die, we die unto the Lord; whether we live therefore, or die, we are the Lord's. For to this end Christ died and lived again, that he might be Lord of both the dead and the living"* (Romans 14:7-9). **How could Christ be Lord of the dead if no one is dead? If all are alive, either alive in Heaven or alive in Hell?**

Although Exodus 3:6 is constantly quoted to prove the dead Abraham was not dead, there is nothing in it that says Abraham was alive in Heaven at that time, but on the other hand the use of this passage by Christ to prove there will be a resurrection proves beyond any doubt that the dead are not now conscious, are not now alive before and without the resurrection.

This passage cannot prove both that:

- The dead are alive without the resurrection.
- That there will be a resurrection of the dead.

Christ used it to prove there will be a resurrection; thereby proving Abraham did not have a departed spirit that was alive without the resurrection. The, *"Resurrection of the dead"* was the issue of the Sadducees; nothing is said about departed spirits being alive in Heaven or Hell without the resurrection. It was, *"As touching the resurrection of the dead"* that Jesus quotes, *"I am the God of Abraham...He is not the God of the dead but of the living"* (Matthew 22:31-32), and His conclusion is that there will be a resurrection of the dead. Without the resurrection there is no life after death.

*"For David, after he had served the purpose of God in his own generation, fell asleep, and was laid among his fathers, and underwent decay: but He whom God raised did not undergo decay"* (Acts 13:36-37). After the resurrection and ascension of Christ Peter said, *"For David ascended not into the heavens"* (Acts 2:34); David is asleep, not just his body is asleep but the real David is awake in Heaven, and David, all of David, will be asleep unto the resurrection, **neither the real David, nor some immaterial something in David has not ascended to Heaven, no one but Christ has.** John 3:13 clearly and undeniable said, *"No one has ascended into heaven, but he that descended*

*out of heaven, even the Son of man, who is in heaven.*” None of the Old Testament saints went to Heaven at death, and they were not in Heaven at that time, not even Abraham or David was in Heaven. John wrote this years after Jesus had ascended to Heaven when Jesus was in Heaven; this is believe by many to be a parenthetical statement (words put in as a note of explanation) by John after Christ had ascended back to Heaven in Acts 2, which would make John be saying years after the ascension (at the time when John was writing the Gospel according to John) that no one, not even the Old Testament saints were in Heaven. When Jesus ascended in Acts 1:9 He was alone, none of the Old Testament saints accompanied Him, and none were in Heaven before Him.

Summary: If the dead are more alive than when they were living, it both takes away the need for a resurrection and made it impossible. **Christ's argument that there will be a resurrection is totally destroyed. When this passage is used to prove the dead are not dead but are conscious, then it would proves that there is no resurrection. If the dead are now alive then how would His answer prove there would be a resurrection, and what would be the need of one? This is a serious problem for those who teach unconditionally immortality. IT CANNOT BE TAUGHT THAT THE DEAD ARE MORE ALIVE THAN THE LIVING WITHOUT DESTROYING THE BIBLICAL DOCTRINE OF THE RESURRECTION. If Abraham, David, Job, and other saints are now alive in Heaven, death has already been destroyed. Death would have been destroyed for all at death, not at Christ's second coming; and even those in the Old Testament would have had life, eternal life, without the death of Christ and without the resurrection and judgment.** Take away the fact that Abraham was dead, which is the very thing that those who say a person is born immortal and can never die are trying to do; and you take away the point of Christ's argument, and make Him be saying just so many words that say nothing. Christ's argument, that there will be a resurrection, requires that Abraham is dead at the time Christ made the argument. Abraham being alive would have requires that he never died or that his resurrection was past before the death and resurrection of Christ. When did it happen? The resurrection of Christ, Abraham, or anyone requires that they be dead at the time of the resurrection for they could not be resurrected if they were alive. How could anyone think that a coming back of the living from Heaven is a resurrection of the dead? If David were not still in the tomb then he had been raised the same as Christ, but before Christ; therefore, Christ was not the first fruit. Today's theology has changed this to read, "But that the dead are not dead to be raised," or "But that the separated are not dead to be raised." **If Jesus were saying Abraham is alive now, He would be denying the point He was making, that there will be a resurrection, for Abraham could not be raised if he were alive. If Abraham were alive at that time then Luke 20:27-38 proves that there will not and cannot be a resurrection. This passage teaches a "resurrection of the dead," not that "no one is dead to be resurrected from the dead."**

**Passages that do not have spirit or soul in them**

**But are used to prove both**

**(7). THE TRANSFIGURATION: A RESURRECTION or A VISION?**

**Matthew 17:1-9, Mark 9:2-9.**

**A VISION:** Christ said it was a vision. *"Tell the vision to no man"* (Matthew 17:9). Moses and Elijah ("Elias" in the King James Version) were seen with Christ and then were gone, leaving only Christ. Vision (Greek-horoma) is used in the New Testament twelve times, and in the King James Version it is always translated "vision" except in

Acts 7:31 where it is translated "the sight." This is not the Greek word "optasia" that is translated "vision" in 2 Corinthians 12:1.

1. "Tell the **vision** (Greek-horama) to no man" Matthew 17:9.
2. "He wondered at the **sight** (Greek-horama)" Acts 7:31.
3. "To him said the Lord in a **vision** (Greek-horama)" Acts 9:10.
4. "And has seen in a **vision** (Greek-horama) a man" Acts 9:12.
5. "He saw in a **vision** (Greek-horama)" Acts 10:3.
6. "What this **vision** (Greek-horama) which he had seen might mean" Acts 10:17.
7. "While Peter thought on the **vision** (Greek-horama)" Acts 10:19.
8. "And in a trance I saw a **vision** (Greek-horama)" Acts 11:5.
9. "But thought he was seeing a **vision** (Greek-horama)" Acts 12:9.
10. "A **vision** (Greek-horama) appeared to Paul in the night" Acts 16:9.
11. "And after he had seen the **vision** (Greek-horama)" Acts 16:10.
12. "To Paul in the night by a **vision** (Greek-horama)" Acts 18:9.

**If this were a vision, no argument can be taken from it for the existence of disembodied souls, for Moses and Elijah were only seen in a vision.** Those who believe in unconditional immortality **MUST** reinterpret this into being a soul that was alive in Heaven and came back from Heaven to earth, and that:

- Despite the fact that Christ said no man had ascended to Heaven, Moses and Elijah had ascended to Heaven.
- Despite the fact that nothing is said about where Moses and Elijah were before the vision or after it.
- Despite the fact that nothing is said about them having come down from Heaven. That they were in Heaven must be added to what is said, if not added it would not prove anything about a soul, or anything about where that soul was.

They must say to Christ, "No it is not a vision of Moses, but the real Moses has been alive in Heaven and came back from Heaven." **It is not said or implied that Moses was in Heaven and came back to earth, or that he was alive anyplace without the resurrection. We are told that this was a vision. "Tell the vision to no man" (Matthew 17:9). It being a vision proves they were not called back from Heaven; it does not prove that there was an immaterial, invisible part of them that is now alive anywhere;** if Moses and Elijah were alive and in Heaven Christ could not have been the first fruits.

Visions were common in the Old Testament and were not used to prove anyone has an immortal something in them that is not subject to death.

**A RESURRECTION:** (1) If Moses and Elijah were really there, then Matthew was wrong when he called it a vision. (2) If it were a resurrection, it was a resurrection like Lazarus and other resurrections in the Bible, then it would prove Moses was really dead before this resurrection, it would prove Moses was not alive and that he had to be resurrected to be there. **If Moses were alive and immortal, he would have been brought back from Heaven; he would not have needed to be raised from the dead. For this passage to teach a person now has an "immaterial, invisible part of man" it must be proved that this was not a vision or a resurrection of the dead, but a bringing back of the living Moses from Heaven.** Would the apostles be able to see an "immaterial, invisible" disembodied spirits that had no human body? It had to be a vision or a resurrection for the apostles to be able to see them. If they were alive in the flesh, they had to be brought back from the dead just as Lazarus and others were. All

resurrections in the Bible, other than of Christ, were only temporary restoring of the earthly life to be a life just as it was before death, and those who were raised from the dead did not put on immortality as those in Christ will at the resurrection (1 Corinthians 15:50-54). Just as Lazarus was brought back in his earthly body to a mortal life, they were resurrected back to a mortal life, and they were still in a mortal body, and were not like the resurrection of Christ, or like the resurrection of the saved at the coming of Christ. **They were all raised mortals subject to death, and they all died again. Not one of them is still alive today. Not one of them was raised immortal.** In any of these temporary resurrections, not one thing is said about what will be after our death or after the resurrection. If God raised one or ten thousand back to an earthly body that is mortal, it would not effect the resurrection of all at the coming of Christ and would not in any way prove a person is now mortal or immortal. These earthly resurrections of mortal bodies say nothing about the resurrection at the coming of Christ when the saved will put on immortality. From the resurrections of Lazarus and others back to the mortal earthly body, if there were no other revelation about the resurrection we would not know anything about those in Christ that are going to be raised immortal on the Resurrection Day.

Summary: **Either way**, if the transfiguration were a resurrection or a vision, it does not prove that a person is now mortal or immortal. The reason for this vision or resurrection was to show that we are not to hear the law and the prophets, but to *"hear you him."* Christ is now the one who has *"All authority"* (Matthew 28:18). If any of the resurrections in the Old or New Testament were a resurrection to immortality, Christ could not have been *"the first-fruits of them that are asleep"* (1 Corinthians 15:20-23). **How can death be changed to life in Heaven without a resurrection?**

**THE DEATH OF LAZARUS:** In John 11 is the account of the death of Lazarus and his restoration to life on this earth to a mortal person that would die just as all mortal persons will. **When Jesus arrived, the sister of Lazarus said, "Lord, if You had been here, my brother had not died." Did Jesus comfort her by saying her brother was a good person, and he was now happy in Heaven with other saints and angels, and he would never again have pain, and he was much better off than when he was in this world, but He was going to take Lazarus out of Heaven and bring him back to this world; this is the way of today's theology, but it is not found in the Bible. His reply was, "Your brother shall rise again." Martha declared her faith in the resurrection as was taught by Jesus by saying, "I know that he shall rise again in the resurrection at the last day" showing she did not believe he was then alive and in Heaven. Paul says the same when he says that those in Christ who have fallen asleep have perished if the dead are not raised (1 Corinthians 15:14-20). If they were forever alive in Heaven, they would not have perished if there were no resurrection. Today's teaching is not found in the Bible, and makes a lie of the Biblical teaching. Those who have *"fallen asleep in Christ"* will be asleep unto the resurrection, and without it they will forever be asleep. *"And this is the will of him that sent me, that of all that which he has given me I should lose nothing, but should raise it up at the last day"* (John 6:39). God could not have told us any clearer where we will be after death. **In many churches Plato's philosophy of an immortal soul that can never be dead has replaced the Bible teaching of the resurrection of the dead at the coming of Christ.****



**MANY BODIES OF THE SAINTS:** In Matthew 27:52 the resurrection of many of the saints is sometimes used to prove the existence of immaterial entities.

- They were asleep before this resurrection, before *“the tombs were opened,”* not in Heaven, Hell, or Abraham’s bosom. **THEY CAME FROM THE TOMBS, NOT FROM HEAVEN.** Coming from the tombs is positive proof that they were not alive in Heaven and that it was earthly bodies that was resurrected, not immortal souls or spirits.
- Nothing is said about these *“bodies”* ascending to Heaven after they were resurrected.
- This says *“the tombs were opened”* and bodies came out of the graves, it say nothing about immortal souls that according to the immortal soul doctrine would not have been in the tombs, but they would have to come from Heaven or Hell.
- Their resurrection was not unto eternal life, this was before the resurrection of Christ who was the *“first fruits”* (1 Corinthians 15:20). If this or any resurrection were to eternal life in Heaven Christ would not have been the *“first fruits.”*
- This was before any one will put on immortality (1 Corinthians 15:54; Romans 2:7). These resurrected saints were earthly being with *“bodies”* that were seen just as Lazarus was, not immortal, immaterial, invisible souls or spirits.

**Passages that do not have spirit or soul in them  
But are used to prove both**

**(8). GOD WILL BRING WITH CHRIST 1 Thessalonians 4:14-17**

This is often used to prove those who have died are now in Heaven, and Christ will bring them back when He comes for the judgment. This passage is about the resurrection at the coming of Christ, and it says not a word about an *“immaterial, invisible part of man”* that is now alive before the resurrection, and it says nothing about a place called Hell. *“For if we believe that Jesus died and rose again, even so them also that fallen asleep (are dead) in Jesus will God bring with him. For this we say unto you by the word of the Lord, that we that are alive, that are left unto the coming of the Lord, shall in no wise precede (go before) them that are fallen asleep.”*

There are three points in 1 Thessalonians 4:16-17.

1. **The second coming of Christ:** *“For the Lord himself shall descend from heaven, with a shout, with the voice of the archangel, and with the trump of God.”*
2. **The resurrection of the dead in Christ:** The **dead** in Christ, those that are in their graves shall **rise, be resurrected** first, not those who are alive in Heaven or any other place returning to earth.
3. **Christians who will be living when Christ returns:** then we that are alive at the time Christ descends, *“that are left, shall together with them be caught up in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the air: and so shall we ever be with the Lord”* (1 Thessalonians 4:16-17). **Both** the dead in Christ and those who are alive when He comes shall together be caught up from the earth to the clouds. Not as some say, that we that are alive shall be caught up to meet Christ, **and** those He is to bring from Heaven with Him who would not be asleep if they were already in Heaven.

This passage is a plain statement that there will be a resurrection, and it is opposed to the theory that no one is really dead. Both cannot be true. It is clearly said that they *“are asleep”* not awake in Heaven. *“And I will raise him up at the last day”* (John 6:40).

*“The dead in Christ shall rise first.”* Those who are asleep will wake up first.

1. **How could they wake up if they are not asleep?**
2. **How could they rise from the dead if they are not dead?**

### 3. How could they meet the Lord in the air if they were coming with Him from Heaven?

Paul says nothing about immortal souls, but persons.

1. Persons "*who are asleep in Christ.*" Believers that are dead.
2. And persons "*that are alive*" when Christ comes. Believer that will be alive at the second coming.

Those who believe we have an "*immaterial, invisible part of man*" that is now immortal take the resurrection out of this passage and makes it be about:

1. Those who are now alive (not asleep) in Heaven with Christ shall come with Him from Heaven.
2. And the soul of "*we that are alive*" when Christ comes, shall meet their souls in the air as they come back from Heaven. **There will be no resurrection for no one's soul would be dead, not souls now living in Heaven, or saints that will be alive on earth at when Christ returns. If you believe in an immortal soul there is no reason for a resurrection and no room for it.**

*"In my Father's house are many mansions; if it were not so, I would have told you; for I go to prepare a place for you. And if I go and prepare a place for you, I come again, and will receive you unto Myself that where I am, there you may be also"* (John 14:2-3).

Those who teach we have a soul that goes directly to Heaven at death believe that souls are now in the place where Christ has gone to prepare before He comes to receive them, and have made the coming of Christ, the resurrection, and the judgment useless. Those who preach at funerals often say our loved ones are now with the Lord in Heaven, even those that teach that it is only a soul, not the person, not our loved ones that are in Heaven. This is a contradiction of Paul's detailed account of what will happen at the resurrection.

Two views:

1. The dead in Christ are now in Heaven, and God will bring them back to earth with Christ.
2. God will bring those who have fallen asleep in Christ with Christ when He returns to Heaven after the judgment.

The first view makes many problems.

- At the time Paul wrote this the dead Christians were "*asleep in Christ,*" not in Heaven. "*Concerning them that fall asleep...even so them also that are fallen asleep in Jesus*" (1 Thessalonians 4:13-14). "*Then they also that fallen asleep in Christ have perished*" (1 Corinthians 15:18). There would be no need to sorrow for the dead in Christ if they are alive in Heaven; they should have been rejoicing for their loved ones would be in a much better place and be with Jesus. The fact that those who have fallen asleep in Christ have perished if there is no resurrection clearly states (1) that they are not in Heaven before the resurrection, (2) that life after death is completely dependent on the resurrection (3) and that no one will be alive in Heaven before the resurrection of the dead. Many gospel preachers who say they speak only where the Bible speaks and are silent where it is silent, when they teach the dead in Christ are now in Heaven clearly are speaking the opposite of the Bible. "*In Christ shall all be made alive. But each in his own order: Christ the first fruits, then they that are Christ's at his coming*" (1 Corinthians 15:22-23). The victory over death is not instantly at death (1

Corinthians 15:54), but at the resurrection of the dead. The “*dead in Christ*” shall rise at the coming of Christ, not at death. (1 Thessalonians 4:16).

- When “*those who are asleep*” is used to prove a person has an immortal soul, **then it would prove the immortal soul is asleep, and they prove “soul sleeping,”** which they falsely accuse those of believing who do not believe a person has an immaterial invisible something. It is the whole person, not just an immaterial something in the person that is asleep unto the waking up at the Resurrection.

Although “soul sleeping” and “annihilation” are often confused and thought to be the same, **the two are totally different.**

- “**Soul sleeping**” is the belief that a person **now** has an invisible, deathless, immaterial something living in them that will never die, but from the death of the body unto the resurrection that immortal immaterial part of a person is “asleep,” not “annihilated,” and only this sleeping immortal, no substance something in a person, not the person, will awake at the judgment to eternal life in Heaven or Hell.
- **Annihilation** is the belief that “*the wages of sin is death,*” not eternal life in torment; after the second death (called annihilation) no part of a person is asleep; no part of a person will ever wake up. Annihilation is an unbiblical way of saying “*the wages of sin is death,*” that all of a person will be annihilated after the judgment. **Those who believe “the wages of sin is death” do not believe in “soul sleeping” although they are often falsely accused of it.** It is the person that is asleep from death unto the resurrection, and not just an immaterial part of a person that cannot be asleep (according to those that teach this doctrine of a deathless no substance something in a person).
  - If, as many that believe in the immortal soul doctrine teach, that at death it is the person that dies, but the soul never dies, and it is the soul only that will ever be in Heaven or Hell, then this doctrine makes the person go out of existence at death, and only an immaterial, invisible, no substance soul will ever exist after the death of the person. It is not you that will be in Heaven, but something in you that you cannot see and that you know nothing about, not what it thinks, not what it looks like, something that you do not now know anything about and you never will know anything about it, something that if you were not told that it were there then you could not know if it is in you, or know that this something even exist; the Bible tells you nothing about what a soul really is.
  - We are told that we “have a soul.”
    - I “have a dog.” The dog is not me, but something I have that is not me.
    - If I “have a soul” the soul would not be me but something I have that is not me. I know what a dog is, but what is this something that I could not know I have without being told that I have it? The only answer I am given is that it is an, “Immaterial, invisible, something that has no substance that is in me,” but I cannot tell that it is there or if it is not there, that only this something that I have to be told that I have is what will be in Heaven or Hell.

The second view solves these problems.

- Those who are "*asleep in Christ*" are asleep waiting for the return of Christ and the resurrection.
- Makes the resurrection necessary.
- After the judgment when Christ returns to Heaven, those in Christ will go with Him. "*We that are alive, that are left, shall together with them be caught up in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the air: and so shall we ever be with the Lord*" (1 Thessalonians 4:17). **God will bring (both those who are asleep in Christ and those who are alive) with Christ when Christ returns to Heaven after the resurrection and judgment.**

**Christ will be coming from Heaven with His "*holy ones*," the angels, not dead saints that are not dead.** "*Behold, the Lord comes with many thousands of His holy (hagios) ones*" (Jude 14 New American Standard Version). "*Saints*" in the King James Version is from "hagios," which is the same word that is translated "holy" 93 times in the "*Holy (hagios) Spirit*." **Those who come with Christ from Heaven are the holy angels, not those who are asleep in Christ.** "*When the Son of Man shall come in his glory, and all the holy (hagios) angels with Him*" (Matthew 25:31, King James Version). "*When he comes in the glory of his father with the holy (hagios) angels*" (Mark 8:38). "*For the Lord himself shall descend from heaven, with a shout, with the voice of the archangel*" (1 Thessalonians 4:16). "*The Son of man shall send forth his angels*" (Matthew 13:41). "*At the coming of our Lord Jesus with all His saints (hagios-holy)*" (1 Thessalonians 3:13), "*holy ones*" New International Version; both Jude 14 and 1 Thessalonians 3:13 use "hagios," not "saints."

**Passages that do not have spirit or soul in them**

**But are used to prove both**

**(9). "EVERYONE WHO LIVES**

**AND BELIEVES IN ME SHALL NEVER DIE" John 11:26**

This passage is used to prove that all men now have an immortal "*immaterial, invisible part of man*" that can never die, but when it is so used, it makes a problem for them. **Christ is clearly saying ONLY those that believe on Him "*shall never die;*" therefore, those that do not believe on Him SHALL DIE.** If all have immortality from birth and can never die, what was He saying? This passage makes "*never die*" be conditional on believing on Christ, not on a never dying "*immaterial, invisible part of man*" that is read into it. It is used to prove all unconditionally have an immortal soul and can never die, even those who do not believe on Him will never die. Those who believe on Him die a physical death, just as those who do not believe on Him. In what way do those who believe never die? Their name is in the book of life, and there will be a resurrection when they will "*put on immortality*" (1 Corinthians 15:54). Their resurrection and their eternal life are so sure that it is counted as if they now have it. They will not die the second death which all that do not believe will die.

Summary: According to today's theology, when this is read, as many read it, "He that has the Son has an immortal soul that shall never die," then it must also be read, "He that has not the Son has an immortal soul that shall never die," for today's theology says all now have an immortal soul that shall never die if they believe or if they do not believe. **Even though endless life and never dying are conditional on believing Christ,**

**theology says not so, all are now immortal and have eternal life and can never die, and those that do not believe on Christ “shall never die.”**

**Passages that do not have spirit or soul in them**

**But are used to prove both**

**(10) INNER MAN AND OUTER MAN**

*“Therefore we do not lose heart, but though our outer man is decaying, yet our inner man is being renewed day by day”* (2 Corinthians 4:16). Paul is simply saying the inner spiritual life of a Christian is renewed daily even though the body is growing old. New Christians are babes in Christ (1 Peter 2:2; 1 Corinthians 3:1, but they grow and *“leaving the doctrine of the first principles of Christ, let us press on unto perfection”* (Hebrews 6:1, also Ephesians 3:26-17; Galatians 2:20). A Christian must grow stronger in the Lord even though the body is dying; a new Christian may have a young body and be a baby in Christ, but as the years pass he or she will have a body that is decaying, but will be becoming a mature Christian. Man is used in the sense of person; to be politically correct we would have to say, “Our outer he or she is decaying, yet our inner he or she is being renewed day by day.” If the “*outer man*” is the person, and the “*inner man*” is the soul, it would make the soul be a totally separate he or she (person) than the outer he or she; there would be us (the outer man or person) that is dying, and another person (the inner man or person--soul) that is growing. They must be badly in need of something to prove their immortal soul to make it be another he or she that needs to be renewed daily. If the inner man were a soul, as this passage is used to prove, what would it mean to renew an immortal soul? Would it be to make it more immortal, or to a make a saved soul more saved? J. W. McGarvey on this passage said, “The apostle knew that the transfiguration described at 3:18 was perfecting itself daily,” Standard Bible Commentary on Corinthians, 1916.

**Passages that do not have spirit or soul in them**

**But are used to prove both**

**(11) LED CAPTIVITY CAPTIVE**

*“When he ascended on high, he led captivity captive, and give gifts unto man”* (Ephesians 4:8). This is speaking of when Christ ascended back to Heaven after His resurrection; the Christ that came down to earth lived among men is the same Christ that ascended back to Heaven. When He ascended the gifts He give to men were: (1) Some to be apostles, (2) some to be prophets, (3) some to be evangelists, (4) some to be pastors and teachers (Ephesians 4:11-16).

This passage says:

- Nothing about the time from the death of Christ unto His resurrection. Nothing about anything He did or did not do in the three days He was in the grave.
- Nothing about Christ preaching to anyone, or teaching anyone in the three days from His death to His resurrection or any other time.
- Nothing about Hell. Does anyone think Hell was led captivity?
- Nothing about people or souls that were in captive in Hell or hades or any other place in the three days Christ was in the grave.

Whatever this is saying Christ did, it is saying He did it when He ascended back to Heaven, not when He was in the grave. It was death that was led captivity, death that up to that time had all in its power with no hope of any life after death. Note: some think it

was Satan that had all in captive through death. Either one, it was when Christ ascended back to Heaven, not when He was dead in the grave.

**Passages that do not have spirit or soul in them**

**But are used to prove both**

**(12) WHAT IS ETERNAL?**

**BEING TORMENTED BY GOD or DEATH? Matthew 25:46**

*“Eternal punishment” and “eternal life” are not the same thing. “Punishment” does not mean “life.” If “eternal punishment” were “eternal life” then both would “go away into eternal life.”*

The argument made often is that the **punishment** must last as long as the **life**, but this does not say what the punishment is. It is a question of whether the punishment is an eternal **life** with torment, or eternal **death**. It is **supposed** by many that punishment can only be conscious suffering by being tormented by God, and their conditioning makes them read an eternal life of being torment by God into it although we are told repeatedly that punishment will be death, destruction, perish, die, lost, etc.; but never that the punishment will be to be tormented by God forever. Nothing could be a more eternal punishment than a death from which there will never be a resurrection. There are many kinds of punishment, but from Matthew 25 all we can say is that there will be punishment, but nothing more or less than punishment. To say Matthew 25 says where or what the punishment will be is to say more than it says; therefore, is adding to what God said. “Kolasis” simply means punishment, whatever the punishment is, whether the punishment is eternal torment, eternal death, or whatever is not defined. **To know what the punishment will be we must go to other passages, to say as many do that the punishment in this passage is being eternally torment by God, it is undeniable that when it is said that this passage teaches eternal torment is adding to and saying what is not said in it.** God's word must say what the punishment is, and it nowhere says God will be tormenting people forever. His word says, *“The wages of sin is death,”* not eternal life with torment. The second death is death, not a second life that will be lived in perpetual-torment.

The Greek word, *kelasis*, which is translated “punishment” in Matthew 25:46 is used only one other time, 1 John 4:18, which is certainly not speaking of endless torment of a deathless soul.

- If a person were restored to life after one year—their punishment would only be for one year.
- If a person were restored to life after one hundred years—their punishment would only be for one hundred years.
- **If a person were never restored to life—their punishment would be endless, eternal punishment; the punishment will last as long as the death, unless a person was restored to life their punishment would be eternal punishment, just as eternal as the life of those in Heaven is eternal life.**

The Scripture clearly says that the punishment is death, the wages of sin (Romans 6:23). Paul clearly says what the everlasting punishment is, *“even eternal destruction”* (2 Thessalonians 1:9). Christ contrasts *“eternal life”* for the saved with *“eternal punishment”* for the lost. *“Life” — “eternal life”* is promised to the saved repeatedly (See chapter two: **Life and death**), but life is never promised to the lost. It will be *“death”* for them

(Romans 6:23; James 1:15). *"They that have done good, unto the resurrection of life; and they that have done evil, unto the resurrection of judgment"* (John 5:29), not to a resurrection of eternal life for those that have done evil. In Revelation 21:3-8 the saved are given the fountain of the water of life freely, but the lost shall have their part in the lake of fire which is the second death, life for the saved, death (not eternal life in torment) for the lost. Christ said, *"If a man abide not in me, he is cast forth as a branch, and they gather them, and cast them into the fire, and they are burnt"* (John 15:6). **The punishment is not to be forever dying, or is not forever living separated from God; it is forever being dead. The punishment for sin is death (Roman 6:23; James 1:15), and the punishment of death is just as eternal as the life.** Punishment can have many forms, but because of the conditioning of some (through their red glasses), they can see only fire and torment in Hell of a deathless soul. We do not torment our children when we punish them do we? The concept of Hell is not from the Bible. The name or the place is not in it, and unto it is clearly shown that there shall be such a place, it cannot be said that this punishment is going to be eternal life in "Hell;" or shown that *"the wages of sin"* is not death, that there will be any kind of life anyplace after the second death. After the judgment there is much said about the saved; they will be in the image of Christ; they will be immortal and have incorruption. But, there is nothing said about the lost, not what image they will have, not where they will be, or anything at all except that they will be dead (the second death). There is not a passage in the Bible that says the lost will be raised immortal or imperishable, but many that say they will be as stubble, tares, dry branches, will be destroyed. Those who read the Bible with their Hell fire and damnation glasses on see Hell in Matthew 25:46, and on every page of the Bible.

Matthew 25:46 may be the #1 proof text for Hell.

- **The name Hell is not in it.**
- **Today's concept of Hell, a place after the judgment where God will cruelly torment forever is not in it.**
- **It says that the lost will have a punishment that will be forever, but nothing is said about what the punishment will be or where it will be, yet it is continuously misused to teach both what the punishment will be (eternal torment), and where the punishment will be (in Hell).**

Before anyone could possibly see "Hell" in this passage:

1. A place called "Hell" must be assumed.
2. Then accepted as a fact.
3. Then God must be made into the most cruel, sadistic, and fiendish being there is, far surpassing even Satan in cruelty.

There is not one word in Matthew 25:46 about where or what the punishment will be. Other texts say it is death, perish, destroyed, lost, and end. It does not say the punishment is eternal torment after the Judgment Day is over. To teach that Matthew 25:46 says the punishment is an eternal life of torment in Hell, as many do, is adding to it.

- **WHAT?** What the punishment will be, that it will be eternal torment by God in "Hell" is added.
- **WHERE?** Where the punishment will be is added. The name of the place is added to the Bible by deliberate mistranslating.
  - Both the "what" and the "where" are added by many of the reformation movement that say they do not add to the Bible or take away from it.

Some traditionalists say annihilation (death) is not punishment. They believe that "by no stretch of the imagination can the punishment spoken of in Matthew 25:46 be defined as an end of

consciousness, for if actual suffering is lacking, then so is punishment." To say death would not be eternal punishment because there is no eternal consciousness torment is not valid for saying punishment must be torment simply begs the whole question. Where does Matthew 25:46 say anything about suffering; (1) the punishment must be **changed** to eternal suffering (2) and a place **added** to have anyone suffering in Hell. If death row is not punishment, then why is the death sentence the worse punishment a person can get, for worse than life in prison? How is being on death row considered by those on it to be in the worst part of a prison; why is the death penalty strongly opposed as being too cruel in this country, but the same persons say death is too mild a punishment for sinners at the Judgment Day? **What would those on death row say if someone told them death is not a punishment?** Throughout all of history, death has been thought of as being the worst punishment there is. Why would most on death row love to get off it, and have the punishment of life in prison instead of death? They are told they are not fit to live, and their punishment is to be death. For the sinner to stand before God on the Judgment Day and be told he is not fit to live, and he or she will be punished with the second death is the worst kind of punishment. Most fear death more than pain and will do all they can to live a little longer even if it is in pain. Life is our most precious possession; death is the worse punishment because it takes everything from a person and deprives of all the life and joy a person would have had, and the second death will deprive of eternal life and joy in Heaven, of an eternity of ceaseless years of joy beyond any joy we can now even dream of; **it is an infinite punishment in that it takes an infinite amount of life and joy from a person.** We cannot vision all the joy that will be in Heaven for all eternity; therefore, we cannot know how much death will take from them. It is much more than we can know before the judgment. **Death is a much greater punishment than any person can now imagine, and the second death will be an eternal punishment. Those who teach Hell must make them selves and all others believe death is not a punishment; therefore, there must be endless life in Hell being tormented by God.** When a lost person comes to the judgment, he may see that the saved will have an eternal life of joy and bliss in a place of indescribable glory and to know that all this could have been his, but for him there will be only the blackness and darkness of nothing. And some say this is not punishment! To say death is not punishment, and there is no punishment if there is no torment of a consciousness soul is to make a statement that all thinking persons know is not the truth.

The opposite of life is death. If the reward for those on the right hand side is *life*, neither those on the right hand side nor those on the left could already have eternal *life*, if they did *life* would not be given to either one. To say Christ is promising *life* to those on the right side means those on neither side already had endless *life* before the promise. To have promised *life* to those that already had endless *life* would be a mean-less promise.

#### **GOD'S PUNISHMENT IN THE OLD TESTAMENT**

Through out the Old Testament the worst punishment was always death, never torment. If, as the argument is that eternal suffering is the only form of punishment, that annihilation would not be punishment, the Old Testament writers did not seem to know that death would not be punishment. A few of the many times death is said to be punishment in the Old Testament, Exodus 21:12; 21:14; 21:15; 21:16; 21:17; 21:23; 21:29; Leviticus 20:2; 20:9; 20:10; 20:11; 20:12; 20:13; 20:14; 20:15; 20:16; 20:27;



Genesis 2:17; Ezekiel 18:4; 18:20. In none of these punishment does not implies consciousness.

Wayne Jackson in the "Christian Courier" said, "Punishment implies consciousness. It would be absurd to describe those who no longer exist as being 'punished.'" According to him, those who get "death" for killing a person would not be punished. According to him Paul was wrong when he said, "*The wages of sin is death*" (Romans 6:23); "*The wages of sin*" cannot be "*death*" for in "*death*" there is no consciousness. The argument that death is not punishment is nothing but a desperate attempt to change death to life, to change "*the wages of sin is death*" to "the wages of sin is an endless life of consciousness suffering, an endless life of being tormented by God."

Summary: **Whatever the punishment is in Matthew 25:46, it is the same punishment as** Romans 6:16; 6:23; 8:6; Revelation 21:8; James 5:22; 2 Peter 2:1; 2:6; 3:7; Philippians 1:28; 3:19; 2 Corinthians 7:10; 2 Thessalonians 1:7-9; Matthew 3:12; 13:40; John 3:16, etc. The Bible does not teach one kind of punishment in one verse and then change it to a very different kind of punishment in another verse. It does not teach the punishment is everlasting life with torment in one verse and death in another verse. It comes down to the question of,

- Is the wages of sin death, or is the wages of sin everlasting life with torment?
- Is the second death a death, or is the second death everlasting life?
- Did God really mean "the wages of sin is eternal life with torment," and He mistakenly said, "*The wages of sin is death?*"

**A passage that does not say what the punishment is cannot override the many passages that do say what it is. From Matthew 25:46 alone, no one can say what the punishment will be. Just that it will be after the judgment and that whatever it is it will be without end. The only way to know what is the punishment of Matthew 25:46 is to go to other passages that do say how God is going to punish the lost. THAT A PASSAGE WHICH DOES NOT SAY WHAT THE PUNISHMENT WILL BE IS THE #1 PROOF TEXT FOR HELL SHOWS THE WEAKNESS OF THE PROOF. Can anyone deny that they are going beyond what the Bible says when they say what the punishment of Matthew 25:56 will be, and deny that they are adding eternal life in Hell when it is not there?**

**Is the only difference in what the punishment will be?** Robert A. Peterson, a strong believer in Hell, says, the Old Testament judgments, the Flood, the destruction of Sodom, and Gomorrah, the Egyptian plagues and the crossing of the Red Sea, the captivities of Israel, the punishment of Sodom and Gomorrah **was ALL the loss of human life** (page 23-24 of "Hell On Trial). Then on page 26, he says the punishments described in them are consistently earthly and temporal, resulting in physical death. **None of these passages speak of life after death or eternal destinies**, but he says Annihilationist err, for their belief would entail cessation of existence at death, not the resurrection and punishment of the wicked, "Hell On Trial" P & R Publishing. The New Testament used them as a type of God's judgment after the resurrection; Peterson on page 26 says they resulted in physical death. If the result of the judgment is not **death**, but an everlasting **life** of torment, then the types are not true for the types of the Old Testament, for the Old Testament does not show **eternal life** with punishment; but they would be true if **death** is the end. The New Testament writers used the Old Testament types to show the destruction of (death), not the torment of the lost. He errs in that he does not give God the

power to raise the dead for judgment and punishment if the punishment is to be death. God will raise and judge them, and just as His judgments in the Old Testament resulted "in death" (Peterson), so will His judgment at the resurrection be a second death. His statement that Annihilationist err because they believe the first death to be the end of those not in Christ, and that the lost will not be raised for judgment may possibly be true of some Annihilationist (none that I know of), but it is definitely not true of most. Most believe the Bible teaching that all the dead will be raised for the judgment at the second coming of Christ, then for those not in Christ there will be the second death, an eternal death from which there will never be a resurrection. Did Robert A. Peterson just make a make-believe man of hay or stubble so that he could pull down his stubble Annihilationist? **The only difference is in what the punishment will be after the judgment.** Believers in Hell believe the punishment, "*the wages of sin is death*" will not be death but will be "everlasting life with torment." Those who believe in Hell often argue as if they think that those who oppose Hell do not believe in the resurrection, the judgment, or punishment. They know that if Annihilationist do believe in the resurrection, judgment and punishment, they have lost much of their argument, **for if the dead are all raised for judgment then the only question is what will the punishment be, and there is no question that the Bible says "*the wages of sin is death.*"** In much of his book he does as many, he assumes that those who do not believe in "Hell" do not believe the lost will be raised for judgment, and he assumes that there is a Hell, and that Hell is its name; then he unjustly puts this name into the mouth of Christ.

**A more basic question than what the punishment will be after the resurrection is, "What is the resurrection?"** If he is right, that there is that some part of a person that **NOW** has immortality, and this part of a person is now alive, and that there is no death for this it, then there cannot be a resurrection for whatever this part of a person is, and his belief makes him be the one that does not believe in the resurrection that he falsely says those he calls Annihilationist do believe in. Will what he falsely calls the resurrection be only a bringing of those who are alive in Heaven and Hell; therefore, there are not dead and are already judged, back to earth for a second judgment, or will the resurrection be a real resurrection, a real raising the dead that are really dead and bringing them back to life? On page 68 Peterson says God did not send his Son into the world to condemn the lost, but to rescue them from Hell. This is a typical example of the way Hell is added to the Bible. The Bible is changed to read the way they want it to read and Hell is added where it is not. How could he know the lost shall be rescued from Hell? Is he saying the lost will be rescued from Hell before their death; therefore, before they are in Hell before their death, or is he saying the lost will be rescued from Hell after they are in Hell? Does he have a revelation that is not in the Bible? **There is no revelation in the Bible that says the deathless lost are rescued from Hell, but there is much revelation that says the lost are saved from death.** "*Let him know that he who converts a sinner from the error of his way shall save a soul (psukee-life) from death*" (James 5:20). Salvation is from death, the wages of sin (Romans 6:23), not salvation from an everlasting life of being tormented by God. "*God gave unto us eternal life, and this life is in his Son. He that has the Son has the life; he that has not the Son of God has not the life*" (1 John 5:11-12).

E. D. Slough, evangelist, church of Christ: "The word '**punishment**' is not a puzzling word. One of the most familiar terms in the English language. Do you know its meaning? Just

think a moment and try to define it. The dictionary tells us it is the infliction of **penalty** for an offence. **Is it?** If the teacher tells the pupil she will 'punish' him a question would spring up in his mind, **what way?** Even the child knows there are many ways to punish. **Though our theologians, after losing sight of the definition of the word, at last give it but one idea, that of misery.** Cunning enough, indeed, to separate it from its primary meaning in the New Testament. As if death inflicted for sin was not a punishment. If it is a recompense of the same nature, **what is the nature, how severe?** The term punishment as a retaliation for offence, **never defines the nature of the infliction to be executed.** It only announces the fact that a judicial penalty is due, without revealing the severity of it. Punishment, retaliation, recompense, penalty, are synonymous words, and may be used interchangeably. So if the Lord had said, 'These shall go into everlasting recompense' or penalty, or retaliation, we would still be forced to seek other scriptures to learn **what kind of recompense is meant.** We are told there can be no punishment without pain. I deny the assertion. **I challenge the reader to search the Old Testament for the hundreds of instances where the infliction of death was the penalty for crimes.** And that it was inflicted to satisfy the offence regardless of the pain accompanying it. Punishment lasts so long as its results last, and where death has been administered for the satisfaction of crime; **the punishment continues till life is restored, and if never restored, it is an everlasting punishment.** Lost of property, loss of liberty, loss of life, may all be meted out to the transgressors under the label of punishment. And death as the capital punishment, legalized on the statutes of all civilized nations of the world, is the highest punishment man can inflict—or so recognized,—being the deprivation of life, the first source of all pleasures and enjoyments, and recognized as being forfeited for certain crimes." "The Indictment Of Eternal Torment—The Self-negation Of A Monstrous Doctrine," page 196-197, F. L. Rowe, Publisher, 1914. On line at: [www.robertwr.com/EternalTorment.htm](http://www.robertwr.com/EternalTorment.htm)

Summary: **There is no way that those who believe all are born immortal could really believe in the resurrection, or in the need for it. By teaching that all are born with an immortal something in them that can never die the resurrection is denied and made not possible. The two are not compatible, and both cannot be true. Satan has done his work well.**

### ETERNAL

**ETERNAL JUDGMENT** Hebrews 6:2. The judgment will be in one "*day*" at the second coming of Christ, and it is not being judged forever without end; it is a judgment in which the results will last for eternity. Eternal is not describing a judging that has no end. Eternal has reference to the result of the judgment, not to the act of judging. The judging will end, but its result will never end. The punishment is after the judging, the judging is not the punishment. Will it take God all eternity to do the judging? If so, He will never get to the punishment, it would require two eternities, one eternity that would never end for the judgment, and a second eternity for the punishment after the first eternity ended. Whether the punishment is, if it is from Hell or from death, it will not matter if God never gets past the judging. **It is the result of the judgment, an endlessly binding verdict that will never be changed; it is an eternal verdict, not an eternal judging.**

When a person goes before a judge he is judging, when the judge gives his judgment--verdict the judging has stopped; after God judges on the Judgment Day His judging will

stop, He will not be forever judging, but after His judging has ended His judgment will stand for eternity. The results of His judgment, not the judging, will be eternal.

**ETERNAL REDEMPTION** Hebrews 9:12, and **ETERNAL SALVATION** Hebrews 5:9. Not redemption or a saving that goes on without end, but saving once that will be for eternity. The time of salvation ends. God will not be saving those in Heaven for eternity. **The redemption will not be going on forever, but the results of the redemption will be without an end.** Those that are saved are forever saved, forever redeemed, not forever being redeemed; their salvation is without an end. Even those who believe in Hell believe those in Heaven are redeemed, not being eternally redeemed; and those they believe to be in Hell can never be redeemed.

**ETERNAL SIN** (Mark 3:29) is a sin, which will be committed in this lifetime, and not endless sinning that will be being committed through out all eternity without end in Hell after the judgment. **It is a sin that the result (death: the wages of sin) is a death from which there will never be a resurrection.**

**ETERNAL FIRE** (Jude 7) is not a fire that is still burning Sodom and Gomorrah, and it will be burning these cities from now on, but the results of the fire, the total destruction of these cities will have no end. These cities are not still burning, but the results of the fire were their eternal destruction. **The fact that Sodom and Gomorrah suffered the vengeance of "eternal fire" shows that the results are eternal, not that the fire was eternal, and not that it is still burning today, and not that it will be burning these cities for eternity.** The fire that destroyed Sodom has long since gone out, but their destruction remains and will always remain, and their eternal destruction is set forth as an example of "*eternal fire*" that will eternally destroy the wicked just as it eternally and completely destroyed these cities. **Although it is continuous used to prove "Hell fire," this fire was not in Hell, but was a fire that was on this earth that could be seen by all that were in that place on earth; there is no reference in it to Hell, or to an eternal life of suffering in fire; it has reference to "destroyed them that believed not" (Jude 5) just as Sodom was eternity destroyed.**

**ETERNAL DESTRUCTION** 2 Thessalonians 1:9 and **ETERNAL PUNISHMENT** Matthew 25:46. Is this a destruction that will be bit by bit, but God will never be able to complete it? No. It is destruction that the results will be final and eternal; a destruction that never destroys would not be destruction for destruction would never take place if the destroying were never completed. An everlasting process of destroying would never be destruction. Death, the wages of sin, is eternal punishment, but not eternal punishing; the death will be a permanent death, not forever dying but never dead. Eternal destruction and eternal punishment are speaking of the permanent results of both, a destruction and a punishment that will last forever, and is not describing the duration of the destroying, that it will take forever; not describing a destruction that the destroying will go on forever but never be destroyed. **There will never be a resurrection from the second death; it is an eternal destruction.** Those who teach that there is a part of a person that can never be destroyed make God be forever destroying it, but never able to completely destroy it. Unconditional immoralists believe God made this something that is in a person destruction proof, and even He cannot destroy whatever this something is, but nevertheless He will be trying to destroy it by burning it for all eternity. **It is complete destruction that is eternal, not eternally destroying but never destroyed.** If the destroying never ended it could not be called eternal destruction for it would be eternal

destroying, as long as the destroying was going on there never could be destruction; if the destroying was ever completed the destruction would be a complete destruction, past tense; it would be an on going, present tense, eternal destroying.

- Eternal judgment is a judgment that happens one time, but the verdict will never be changed.
- Eternal redemption, not eternally redeeming.
- Eternal salvation, not eternally saving. Eternal redemption and eternal salvation is not a saving that will be going on for eternity; not a saving that the saving will never be finished.
- Eternal sin, not eternally sinning. Eternal sin is a sin that happens in this lifetime, but the results will last for eternity.
- Eternal punishment, not eternally punishing.
- Eternal destruction, not eternally destroying. Eternal destruction and punishment is a destruction that the results will last for eternity.
  - Does anyone think the saving will go on forever?
  - Does anyone think the redeeming will go on forever?
  - Does anyone think the dying will go on forever but death will never come?

The Bible does not say the lost will receive eternal punishing, eternal destroying, eternal dying, and eternal perishing. Eternal punishment is death, destruction. There is a vast difference in “eternal punishment” and the change to “eternal punishing” that must be made to make it teach eternal torment.

None of the above is an endless processes that will go on forever, but rather they have a permanent result; the result of salvation is being eternally saved, not eternally being saved.

#### **(12). “READY TO JUDGE THE LIVING AND THE DEAD” 1 Peter 4:5**

Christ will be ready to judge those who are living at the time of His coming, and those who have died before He comes. Nothing is said about a spirit or about a soul in this verse. Nothing is said about any of the dead being alive and having immortality before the resurrection. Before the resurrection the dead will be dead, not more alive than when they were alive.

#### **OLD TESTAMENT PASSAGES THAT ARE USED TO PROVE A PERSON HAS AN IMMORTAL SOUL AND/OR SPIRIT AT BIRTH**

This doctrine, "That there is an immaterial something in a person, sometimes called a soul and sometimes called a spirit, that cannot die," made it necessary for evil people to have an endless existence, and this existence has been made into an endless tormented by God for this something that is in a person in a place that has been given the name Hell, but where did this doctrine or this name come from? The Bible says, "***This mortal must put on immortality***" 1 Corinthians 15:53, it does not say, "This soul is now immortal." How could a soul put on immortality if it was already immortal? **It is the person that will put on immortality, not an already immortal something that is in the person.**

#### **(1). MADE IN GOD'S IMAGE Genesis 1:27**

Most probably the #1 proof text for immortality at birth. The argument is that God is immortal. A man is in God's image. Therefore, a man must also be immortal. This argument would make:

- God is immortal. A man is in God's image. Therefore, a man must also be immortal.
- God is omniscient (almighty). A man is in God's image. Therefore, a man must also be almighty.
- God is omnipotent (all knowing). A man is in God's image. Therefore, a man must also be all knowing.

When God made a man, He did not give him all His characteristics. God is omnipotent (almighty) and omniscient (all knowing). A man is not almighty or all knowing although

he is in God's image, but God is both; being in God' image does not prove that a person is immortal anymore than it proves a person is almighty. Animals are *"living souls"* (Genesis 1:20, 21, 24, 30, 2:19) just as persons are *"living souls,"* but animals were not created in the image of God; it is not the *"living soul"* that makes a person be in the image of God. It is obvious that immortality, not subject to death (not a person that is not subject to death, or not something that is in a person that is not subject to death) is not the way man is in *"image of God,"* and it is only assumed to be even when the Bible specifically says otherwise. We now seek immortality (Romans 2:7), and we will put on immortality at the resurrection (1 Corinthians 15:53-54), but we are not now immortal; nor do we now have an immaterial invisible something in us that has no substance, which is now as immortal as it will ever be. This argument gives the impression that the person making it thinks God has only one attribute, immortality; therefore, if a person is in the image of God, that person must also be just as immortal as God is.

A man is to rule (have authority) over all that God has put under him just as God rules over all. It maybe that man's authority over all the earth, which none of the other created being of the earth have, is the way man is in the image of God; the two are without any doubt spoken of in the same context. Mankind rules over all created beings on earth in a finite way as God does in an infinite way. Christians *"have put on the new man that is being renewed unto knowledge after the image of him that created him"* (Colossians 3:10, See Romans 3:29; 1 Corinthians 15:49; Ephesians 4:24).

## (2). THE BREATH OF LIFE (Genesis 2)

The breath of life is used to prove God breathed into a person an immortal soul, which He did not give to lower animals. The fact is overlooked that **the same writer applies the same expression to both a person and animals, also to fish and birds.** *"So they went into the ark to Noah, by twos of all flesh in which was the **breath of life**...And all flesh that moved on the earth perished, birds and cattle and beasts and every swarming that the swarms upon the earth, and all mankind; of all that was on the dry land, **all in whose nostrils was the breath of the spirit of life, died**"* (Genesis 7:15-22 New American Standard Bible, also Ecclesiastes 3:19-20). Animals, fish, man, birds, and insects have the same *"breath of life."* When it is gone they all are dead.

- *"Jehovah God formed man of the dust of the ground, and breathed into his nostrils **the breath of life** and man became a living soul"* Genesis 2:7.
- *"Two of all flesh wherein is **the breath of life**"* Genesis 7:15.
- The reverse of Genesis 2:7 *"**His breath** (ruach-spirit) **goes forth, he returns to his earth; in that very day his thoughts perish"*** Psalm 146:4. The personal pronouns are of the earthly person, not to something that is in the person.
  - **His** breath (ruach-spirit)
  - **He** returns to his earth
  - **His** thoughts perish

*"Stop regarding man, whose **breath of life** is in his nostrils"* (Isaiah 2:22). It is difficult to understand how anyone can find an immortal soul in this. It is the body that has breath, and that breath is in the nostrils of the body. Do they think the immortal soul is nothing but breath in the nostrils of man? As long as the *"breath of life"* is in his nostrils, a person has *"life."* When the *"breath of life"* is no longer in his nostrils, he no longer has *"life."* Instead of saying mankind is immortal; therefore, cannot be destroyed,

this is speaking of the frail and perishable nature of a person, that their life depends on the breath in the nostrils.

It is even more difficult to understand how anyone can find an immortal soul that cannot die in this when it plainly says, "*And all mankind; of all that was on the dry land, all in whose nostrils was the **breath of the spirit of life, DIED.***" Beasts and man **both** have the breath of life, and **both** died. Did souls that cannot die, die? The breath of life is not a living, thinking, conscious entity that was put into a person and it survives death, and it will live after the body is dead. "*Then the Lord God formed man of the dust from the ground (the body without breath was a lifeless person that could not think, see, speak, or feel), and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life (lives, plural in the Hebrew) and man (the thing that was made of dust) became a living being (nehphesh).*" Not "*A living being*" was put into the thing made of dust.

### (3). A LIVING BEING Genesis 2:7

See "USE OF SOUL (NEHPHESH) IN THE OLD TESTAMENT" in the first part of this chapter. The argument of many seems to be that God made man out of the elements He had created, then super-added a living being to the man making him a dual being. It does not say God made a being living (man), and then put another living being in the man He had already made. It says God made the man, and then put life into him. According to Plato a soul was put into the prison house of the body at birth, and freed from the person at death. If it were a living being that was put into the body, before it was put into the body, could it see or hear before it had the eyes and ears of the body, and can it do so after it leaves the body? If the "soul" was not capable of performing these functions without the body, how can it do so after the death of the person? **The body God made became a living being when God breathed into it's nostrils the breath of life. When the breath of life leaves the person, he or she becomes a lifeless body. It was life that was given to the body, not an immortal living being imprisoned in a person that was better off without the person in which it was imprisoned.**

### (4). "**YOU SURELY SHALL NOT DIE**" (Genesis 3)

WHERE DID THE IDEA OF AN IMMORTAL SOUL ORIGINATE? Not from the first lie as many believe. Adam and Eve were told, "***You** (not your soul) shall not eat of it; neither shall **you** (not your soul) touch it lest **you** (not your soul) die.*" Satan said, "***You** (not your soul) shall not surely die.*" Satan lie is taught in most creeds—that all men kind are born with an "immortal soul" that "*surely shall not die,*" but the "*you*" has been changed from Adam to a deathless something that was put into Adam unto his death that "*surely shall not die.*" Adam and Eve were not told their "souls" would die. **They**, not their "soul" were sent out of the Garden of Eden "*lest **he** (not his soul) put forth **his** (not his soul) hand and take also of the tree of life, and eat, and live forever.*" Not an "immaterial, invisible" soul that cannot die, but that deathless soul must eat of the tree of life to lives forever.

1. **There is not one word about a soul in Genesis chapter three, but this chapter is used to prove a person has an immortal soul that cannot die**
2. **There is not one word about "Hell" in Genesis chapter three, but this chapter is also used to prove an eternal life of torment in Hell.**
  - God said, "*In the day **YOU** eat it **DYING YOU SHALL DIE.***"
  - Eve said, "***YOU** shall not eat from it or touch it, **LEST YOU DIE.***"
  - Satan said, "***YOU** surely **SHALL NOT DIE.***"

- *"In the day YOU eat"*
- *"Dying YOU shall die"*
- *"YOU shall not eat"*
- *"YOU shall not...touch it"*
- *"Less YOU die."*
- *"YOU...shall not die"*
- The same YOU (person) that eats is the same YOU (person) that touches and the same YOU (person) that will die, and is the same YOU (person) that Satan said would not die. The YOU does not change from being a mortal person that can eat and die to being an immortal something in a person that cannot eat or die.
- Satan lie is used in today's preaching, but changed to be, *"Your body shall die, but your soul, which is the real you, shall surely not die."*
- *"And all the days that Adam lived were nine hundred and thirty years: and he died"* (Genesis 5:5). *"Adam lived...and he died."* Today's theology says not so, *"Adam lived and he continued to live."*
- Death was the penalty for sin, not eternal life in torment, *"surely die"* cannot mean *"surely live."* It was Adam that would die; there is no hint that only a part of Adam would die, just his body would die, or just his soul would die. *"Dust you are, and unto dust you shall return"* (Genesis 3:19). *"Dying you shall surely die"* is changed to *"dying you shall surely live,"* *"dying you shall surely live being tormented by God."*

*"Then the Lord God formed man of the dust from the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became a living being"* (Genesis 2:7). The warning for eating of the tree was *"YOU ("man") shall surely die."* God's sentence for eating of the tree was *"to dust YOU shall return"* (not your soul shall return to dust, or your soul shall be eternity tormented). In God's statement to Adam, the personal pronouns "you" and "your" are used about fifteen times (it varies in different translations). *"Then to Adam He said, 'Because YOU have listened to the voice of YOUR wife, and have eaten from the tree about which I commanded YOU, saying, YOU shall not eat from it; cursed is the ground because of YOU; in toil YOU shall eat of it all the days of YOUR life. Both thorns and thistles it shall grow for YOU; and YOU shall eat the plants of the field; by the sweat of YOUR face YOU shall eat bread, till YOU return to the ground, because from it YOU were taken; for YOU are dust, and to dust YOU shall return'"* (New American Standard Version). The "YOU" is Adam that had to work to live, would sweat, and would die, not just an immaterial, invisible, unseen, deathless something in Adam. Those who use this passage to teach a person has an immortal soul pick one of the many of the "YOU'S" and say only this one is an immortal part of Adam, but they say nothing of the others and hope you do not see the others for their immortal *"immaterial, invisible part of man"* cannot eat, will not return to the ground, does not sweat, etc.; **the YOU that eat is the same YOU that died; there is nothing obscure or vague in this statement, language could not be more definite.** This passage is used to teach the doctrine of an immortal soul (nehphesh) even though it says nothing of a deathless soul (nehphesh) or nothing of immortality, and at the same time, death, which is in the passage, is removed and it is made not to exist. **Why would an immortal, immaterial soul that cannot die have any need of the tree of life to live?** Why do many think God would tell Adam he would die if God know Adam was immortal and could not die, and why would God take



the tree of life from him “lest he eat and live forever” if God know Adam had an “immortal soul” that was the only part of him that would live forever, and his “immortal soul” would live forever without the tree of life?

In “*YOU shall surely DIE*,” die is from mooth, Strong’s world 4191, and it is used repeatedly through out the Old Testament with reference to the death of mankind, animals, fish, etc., but never means eternal life with torment. It is “*YOU*” Adam that would “*DIE*” (mooth) just as animals and fish die, not some part of Adam that could not die that would **LIVE** some place separated from God.

- “*Shall surely die*” (mooth) Genesis 2:17.
- “*So all the days that Adam lived were nine hundred and thirty years and he died*” (mooth) Genesis 5:5. Adam died, not a soul.
- “*All that was in the dry land, died*” (mooth) Genesis 7:22.
- “*Less some evil take me, and I die*” (mooth) Genesis 19:19.
- “*Let him die*” (mooth) Genesis 44:7.
- “*And it be hurt, or die*” (mooth) Genesis 22:14.
  - Hundreds more throughout the Old Testament.

Mooth is in the Hebrew in Genesis 2:17 two times, “Dying you shall die.” Most English translations took one dying (mooth) out.

“*YOU shall surely die*” and “*YOU shall live in endless torment*” are as difference as night and day. That Adam would die is so clear that an attempt is made to get around it by saying that revelation is progressive and later revelation revealed that the penalty for sin is not death, but life with torment. While revelation is progressive and things are reviled that were not reviled before that time the latter revelations are never contradictory to the first. Adam was told that the penalty would be death if he eat, if a latter revelation said no the penalty would not be death, it is an endless life of torment, the two revelations would be contradictory, both could not be the truth. When Adam was told, “*You shall surely die*” no latter revelation would say, “No Adam, you shall not surely die, you shall live forever in torment.” No latter revelation changed “*YOU shall surely die*” to “*Your deathless soul shall live separated from God.*” It was Adam that the cherubim keep from the tree of life, “*Less HE stretch out HIS hand, and take also from the tree of life, and eat, and live forever,*” Absence nothing is said about Adam having an immortal soul. Neither die or death dose not mean life, not life with God, nor life separated from God, not life for Adam, not life for a deathless something that was in Adam.

“*Surely die*” is used 21 times in the King James Version, and it always means to die a physical death (Genesis 2:17; 3:4; 20:7; Numbers 22:23; Judges 13:22; 1 Samuel 14:39; 14:44; 20:31; 22:16; 2 Samuel 12:5; 12:14; 1 Kings 2:37; 2:42; 2 Kings 1:4; 1:6; 1:16; 8:10; Ezekiel 3:18; 18:13; 33:8; 33:14). The opposite, “*Surely live*” is used a number of times, and like “*surely die*” was always physical life that would “*surely live.*”

- “*He will surely live, he shall not die*” (Ezekiel 33:15; Also Ezekiel 3:21; 18:9; 18:17; 18:19; 18:21; 18:28; 33:13; 33:16).
- “*Shall surely be put to death*” is used many times (Exodus 19:20; 21:12; 21:15; 21:16; 21:17; 31:14; 31:15; Leviticus 20:2; 20:9; 20:10; 20:11; 20:12; 20:13; 20:15; 20:16; 20:27; 24:16; 24:17; 27:20; Numbers 35:16; 35:17; 35:18; 35:21; 35:31).
- All three, “*surely die,*” “*surely live,*” and “*surely be put to death*” are always speaking of life or death of the body, not of a deathless soul that could not “*surely die,*” that could not “*surely be put to death.*”

It was a real tree with a real earthly fruit that a real person with a real earthly hand that was told **HE** would die if **HE** eats, and a real earthly person that was put out of a real garden lest **HE** (not his soul) put forth **HIS** hand (not his soul's hand), and take also of the real tree of life by eating the fruit **HE** would have had in the same hand **HE** put forth (not his soul eating), **and live forever. To what did living depend on eating of the tree of life**, to Adam, or to an *"immaterial, invisible"* immortal part of Adam that could not die even if it did not eat? Would it not be a contradiction to say Adam had an immortal soul that could not die, and it must live forever, but his deathless soul depended on eating of the tree of life to live, or that the soul that could not die would die if it did not eat of the tree of life? Yet, we are told that all, even Adam, have an immortal soul that will live forever, and this deathless soul has no need of the tree of life, and that this deathless part of a person is the only part of a person that will ever live forever; therefore, what could the tree of life give to Adam's deathless soul that it did not already have? Nothing. According to this doctrine, Adam's deathless soul did not lose its deathless when Adam eat of the tree. This doctrine makes the flaming sword useless to keep Adam from the tree of life so that he may eat and live forever, for it makes Adam live forever if he eats, or if he does not eat.

1. God placed Adam in the garden and gave him access to the tree of life to sustain his life; his life was dependent on his having access to this tree, not on his being created with unconditional immortality and not subject to death.
2. Adam was removed from the tree of life *"lest he eat and live forever"*; his life depended on his eating of the tree before he sinned. He was not remade, not recreated with a different body; he had the same body before and after he was put out of the garden, just did not have access to the tree of life.

**It was Adam that God said would die if he ate, not an immortal soul that cannot die. It was Satan that told Adam he would not die if he did eat. God or Satan said nothing about Adam having an immortal deathless soul that could not die.** *"You shall surely die"* is far from saying, "When you die, a part of you will live and suffer eternal torment" but this is read into it. Was Adam created mortal or immortal? If immortal, how could he be threatened with death when he could not die? If he were immortal, he would be death-proof; therefore, God's sentence of death if he eats would have been a lie.

- When God said, Adam shall *"surely die,"* He is saying Adam was mortal.

*"It is appointed unto man to die, and after this comes the judgment"* (Hebrews 9:27). Not just part of a person, not only the body of the man. This is changed to read only your outer shell, and not the real **YOU** shall die. *"In the day YOU eat thereof YOU shall surely die"* is not, "After the death of your body, your soul, a part of you, shall be eternity alive in Hell and tormented by God" but this is what many read into it. Some say this is not physical death but a spiritual death. Then where did physical death come from? What death was passed unto **ALL** men (Romans 5:12)? Is it appointed for a man to die is changed to be it is appointed for only a part of a man to die?

*"The first man is of the earth, earthy"* (1 Corinthians 15:47; Ecclesiastes 3:20).

- **The death sentence:** God: *"YOU shall surely die"* (Genesis 2:17) versus Satan: *"YOU shall not surely die"* (Genesis 3:4).

- **The death sentence repeated:** *"Dust YOU are, and unto dust YOU shall return"* (Genesis 2:19). The **YOU** that shall die is the same **YOU** that shall return to dust. These words do not point to a continuation of life but to the end of it.
- **The death sentence passed to all:** *"Therefore, just as through one man sin entered into the world, and death through sin, and so death spread to all men, because all sinned"* (Romans 5:12). Adam's sin took him away from the tree of life and brought death which passed on to all for all are born mortal and do not have access to the tree of life, all return to dust.
- **The remedy for the death that came through Adam's sin.** *"For the hour is coming, in which **all that are in the tombs** shall hear his voice, and **shall come forth**; they that have done good, unto the resurrection of life; and those that have done evil, unto the resurrection of judgment"* (John 5:28-29). If we had a deathless immortal soul it would not be in the tomb, and if this soul was in a tomb on this earth when Christ comes it would be a total contradiction to souls going to Heaven or Hell at death.

Was this sentence of death given to an immortal soul that cannot die; if it is immortal then how could any kind of death sentence be given to it, how could it not live forever without the death of Christ? It would not be subject to death. It would not matter if Adam ate or did not eat for if there were an immaterial, invisible, immortal, deathless soul in Adam it could not die. In the fall of Adam and his sentence, nothing is said about an immortal soul. It was Adam that sinned, Adam that died; it was through Adam that death came into the world and passed unto all men, not death passed to all immortal deathless souls (1 Corinthians 15:21-22; Romans 5:12-14). The penalty to Adam and all his seed is death, not eternal life in Hell. There will be a resurrection from the death that came into the world from Adam's sin.

Today's preachers would tell Adam that he was going to Hell for his sin, but God said not one word about Hell. "Die" has been changed to "Hell." "Death" has been changed to "life with torment." Satan said, *"You surely shall not die."* Satan added the "not" and many have changed his *"you shall not"* to *"your soul shall not die"* to make a person now have an *"immaterial invisible"* immortal soul that shall not die.

- **God:** *"You shall surely die...dust you are, and unto dust shall you return."*
- **Today's preachers:** *"You shall not surely die, for you are now immortal and will live forever some place."*

For a person to have an immortal soul two kinds of life and two kinds of death must be read into Genesis 2 with one of the deaths not being a death at all, but eternal life with torment. Look in your concordance and you will see that both "spiritual life" and "spiritual death" are read into this and are not in the Bible. It is argued that Adam did not die physically that day; therefore, "spiritual death" was Adam's penalty for eating. If this were true, why did he ever die a physical death, and how did physical death come into the world? In the Hebrew the penalty was *"dying YOU shall die."* It was the *"living being"* (Genesis 2:7) that begin dying that day, not an immortal soul that cannot die, but that soul was told that it would die anyway. Death came into the world through Adam and all die (1 Corinthians 15:22; Romans 5:12-21). Adam could not have understood that YOU was only his body, and that only a part of the YOU would die, but the rest of the YOU would not die, but a part of YOU would live forever in torment unless he had a revelation from God to tell him a part of him was deathless. There is no such revelation recorded in

Genesis, although it is repeatedly read into it today. Adam's undying soul theory is based on the silence recorded in Genesis two and three.

Edward White: "No word is said either before the fall, or on the approach of the Judge, or afterwards, of Adam's possession of a deathless soul, when his mortal integer was broken up;—not a word is uttered in the divine comment on the curse, of an eternity of misery to be endured by the soul after dissolution of the Man. Indeed, that notion seems to deserve little else than the scorn, which Locke bestows upon it. It is the gratuitous invention of theologians who have forfeited the claim to be listened to in that matter by their perverse departure from the record." *Life In Christ*, page 212, 1878.

A definition of death from the Bible, "***Till YOU return to the ground, because from it YOU were taken; for YOU are dust, and to dust YOU shall return.***" Without the resurrection, all of "you" would forever remain dust. But, God's definition of death cannot be believed by any that believe the soul is immortal; they tell us that by, "*You shall die,*" God really means "spiritually death," which is life separation from God, not death. Spiritual death is not to really die and return to the ground; according to the belief of many, spiritual death is not death. The tradition of many makes changing the Bible a must; how many times have we been told that "***You shall surely die***" means "**your soul, not you shall surely die spiritually?**"

**Another use of "you shall surely die"** (the same words in the Hebrew). Solomon told Shimei to "*Build yourself a house in Jerusalem, and dwell there, and go not forth thence any whither. For on the day you go out, and pass over the brook Kidron, know you for certain that you shall surely die*" (1 Kings 2:37). He did go out of Jerusalem, and he did die just as Adam did, but not on the very day he went out; their death was sealed and made certain on that day.

**If Hell were Adam's sentence:** "Die" must be changed into an eternal life for a part of Adam, but not his body. If Hell was Adam's sentence then God was unclear in His warning and unclear in the sentence. What was the penalty God give in Genesis 3:9-24?

1. The serpent cursed
2. Sorrow in bringing forth children
3. The man ruling over his wife
4. The earth bringing forth thorns and thistles
5. Must work to eat, by the sweat of his face
6. They would die and return to the ground from which they came

**How can anyone get Hell out of this sentence? There is not one word about an immortal, immaterial part of a person in it, and not one word about Hell or torment after death in it. There is nothing about anything after death in it. The penalty for eating of the forbidden tree ended when they returned to the ground.**

John Locke: "It seems a strange way of understanding a law which requires the plainest and direct words, that by death should be meant eternal life in misery...I must confess that by death, here, I can understand nothing but a ceasing to be, the losing of all actions of life and sense. Such a death came upon Adam and all his posterity, by his first disobedience in paradise, under which death they should have lain forever had it not been for the redemption by Jesus Christ," "*Reasonableness of Christianity*," Volume 6, page 3, 1695.

Adam and Eve passed from a state in the garden where they had access to the tree of life, where it was possible for them to live forever, to a state where it was impossible for them not to die. The day they did eat was the beginning of the dying process ("*Dying you shall die*"). There is nothing in this about a person being a dual being with an immortal

soul, but most read it into this. It was the whole person as he was then, which would have lived forever if he had eaten of the tree of life. It was the whole person, not just some inter part of a person, which God said would die. **How could an "immaterial invisible" part of a person eat of a visible material tree?** Satan's lie was that **they**, not some inter part of them, would not die. The presence of the "*tree of life*" in Eden indicates that immortality was conditional on eating of that tree. To prevent the possibility of being able to "*live forever*" (Genesis 3:22) God put a barrier to the garden when Adam was put out of Eden, and the dying process began. It would have been nonsense for God to prevent access to the tree of life if the real Adam was an inter-person that was immortal, and the real Adam would live forever with or without the tree of life.

The New JOHN GILL Exposition of the Entire Bible: "For in the day thou eat thereof **thou shalt surely die; or in dying, die;** which denotes the certainty of it...man became at once a mortal creature, who otherwise continuing in a state of innocence, and by eating of the tree of life, if he was allowed to do, would have lived an immortal life; of the eating of which tree, by sinning he was debarred, his natural life not now to be continued long, at least not forever; he was immediately arraigned, tried, and condemned to death, was found guilty of it, and became obnoxious to it, and death at once began to work in him; sin sowed the seeds of it in his body, and a train of miseries, afflictions, and diseases, began to appear, which at length issued in death."

YOUNG'S Literal Translation Genesis 2:17: "*For in the day of thine eating of it - **dying thou dost die.***"

GEORGE V. WIGRAM: "**Dying shalt die.**" The Englishman's Hebrew And Chaldee Concordance Of The Old Testament, Page 675.

ADAM CLARKE: "Thou shalt surely die. Literally, a death thou shalt die; or, **dying thou shall die**-from that moment thou shall become mortal, and shall continue in a dying state till thou die. This we find literally accomplished; every moment of man's life may be considered as an act of dying." On Genesis 2:7: "From that moment thou shall become mortal, and shall continue in a dying state till thou die."

JOHN WESLEY: "Thou shalt die—That is, thou shalt lose all the happiness thou hast either in possession or prospect; and thou shalt become liable to death, and all the miseries that preface and attend it. This was threatened as the immediate consequence of sin."

ALEXANDER CAMPBELL: "Adam died at the end of nine hundred and thirty years after his creation, and that this was threatened in the words, 'In the day thou eatest thereof **dying thou shall die.**'" Campbell Skinner Debate On Everlasting Punishment, page 118, College Press, 1840.

A DOUBLE CHANCE:

- First change: Adam's death must be changed to be a "separation," not death.
- Second change: Then the first change much be changed again, Adam's "separation" from God must be changed to be an eternal life being tormented by God.

"For as in Adam all die" (1 Corinthians 15:22). If death = separation, and separation = being tormented by God, then all will be tormented for "*in Adam all die.*"

**(5). "IN MY FLESH SHALL I SEE GOD" Job 19:25-27**

See chapter seven, "**IN MY FLESH SHALL I SEE GOD**"

**(6). "SHAME AND EVERLASTING CONTEMPT" Daniel 12:2**

"*And many of them that sleep in the dust of the earth shall awake, some to everlasting life, and some to shame and everlasting contempt.*" Who has this "*contempt*" and "*shame*"? It is the shame and contempt that others have for them that is everlasting, Hell and eternal torment by God is added when there is nothing about them in this passage.

"*And many of them that sleep*" is not the same "*All that are in the tombs shall hear his voice, and shall come forth*" (John 5:28). When Daniel 12:2 is kept in the context of Daniel 11 and 12, Daniel is not speaking of the resurrection at the coming of Christ, but

is speaking of a time of restoration of Israel when **many** would return to God just as Ezekiel pictured the dead bones as a resurrection of the dead (37:11-14) was speaking of a restoration of Israel as a nation when many did return to God. See Isaiah 52:1-2; 26:5.

"Ezekiel's prophecy referred to a spiritual resurrection of the Jews in Babylon and their return to Judea; for Jehovah added, 'Son of man these bones are the whole house of Israel'" Homer Hailey, A Commentary on Daniel, page 243, 2001, Nevada Publications.

"The belief in the resurrection was nationalistic rather than individualistic" "Afterlife and Eschatology" at MyJewishLearning.com. Israel believed God would restore (resurrect) the nation when it sinned and turned back to God, but not in the resurrection of the dead individuals.

Daniel chapter 11 and 12 are about Israel coming out of the captivity and being restored as a nation. **If Daniel 12:2 were speaking of the resurrection and judgment at the second coming of Christ, there could not be a bigger conflict with the orthodoxy teaching that all go to Heaven or Hell at the moment of death. How could those in Heaven be asleep "in the dust of the ground"? How could those in Heaven "awake"? How could an immortal soul that now has everlasting life and cannot die (which some tell us is the only part of a person that will live in Heaven or Hell), which soul cannot sleep the sleep of death, how could it awake from the dust of the ground if that immortal soul was alive and awake in Heaven or Hell, and it was not asleep in the dust of the ground?** Orthodox teaches that long before the resurrection and Judgment Day the saved are in Heaven and have everlasting life. The Abraham's bosom version would also in conflict with it.

Kenny Boles in "The Life to Come," page 276 says this prophecy of Daniel is the first and only clear declaration of the resurrection in all of the Old Testament. Only by taking verse 12 out of context can it be made to be speaking of the Resurrection, and then it makes the problem:

- Of only some of the dead being resurrected
- Therefore, some of the dead would not be resurrected

Which would be an undeniable contradiction to what is said of the Resurrection in the New Testament, that all the dead, not "*many*" of the dead will be resurrected (John 5:28).

- "Contempt" (from Hebrew - derawone) Daniel 12:2.
- "Abhorrence" (from Hebrew - derawone) Isaiah 66:24

*"Then **they** shall go forth and look on the corpses of the men who have transgressed against Me for **their** (the corpses) worm shall not die, and **their** (the corpses) fire shall not be quenched: and **they** (the corpses) shall be an **abhorrence** to all mankind"* (Isaiah 66:24). The antecedent of these three pronouns is "*corpses*," dead bodies. Strong says both **contempt** and **abhorrence** are from the same Hebrew word. Strong's word #1860, "To repulse, an object of aversion, abhorring, contempt." Contempt and abhorrence are the way others think about, "*The corpses of the men who have transgressed against Me.*" It does not say the, corpses will forever be conscious or in torment, is says nothing about torment, but that others will forever have shame and contempt for them. **It is the contempt that is said to be everlasting, not that the corpses of dead persons, or everlasting or torment in Hell by God.** God tormenting the corpses is read into this in an attempt to put Hell in it. How does those seeing the corpses of those that were killed by the Lord, those seeing the corpses having "*everlasting contempt*" for them become "everlasting torment" by God? Where is there anything about God forever tormenting those in "Hell" in this passage? **It was the living people that saw the corpses, not God, that had "everlasting contempt."**

**(7). PLEASE EXPLAIN HOW THE *SPIRIT* THAT RETURNED TO GOD  
IS CHANGED TO BOTH A *SOUL* IN HELL  
AND A *SOUL* IN "ABRAHAM'S BOSOM"**

**Ecclesiastes 12:7**

Some of my brothers in Christ, who believe in "Abraham's bosom," and that the soul of no one will be in Heaven or Hell unto after the judgment, use this and other scriptures to prove the soul or spirit, the only part of a person they think will ever be in Heaven, goes to Heaven at death. In their own words:

"And I wondered why my dear brother did not see the verse just preceding it, which says, 'And they stoned Stephen, calling upon God and saying, Lord Jesus, receive my spirit.' Where was Jesus? Stephen saw him alive at the right hand of God. Where could Jesus receive his spirit? He could receive his spirit only where he was. Where does the spirit go? Eccl. 12:7, 'Then shall the dust return to the earth as it was, and the spirit shall return unto God who give it.' That immortal principle of the human family that never dies. So they killed the body of Stephen, but Stephen prayed for the Lord to receive his spirit where he was." L. S. White, Russell-White Debate, page 51, 1912, F. L. Rowe Publisher.

When he answered his own question of where is Stephen now before the resurrection,

(1) He changed spirit of **all** (Ecclesiastes 12:7), both saved and lost that returns to God who is in Heaven, to only the spirits of the saved return to God, he believes that the spirits of the lost are forever separated from God.

(2) Then he said Stephen is now in Heaven; therefore, he is saying Stephen is not now in "Abraham's bosom," that Stephen will be in Heaven unto the resurrection.

Sometimes Stephen is said to be in "Abraham's bosom," and sometimes the same preachers will say Stephen is now in Heaven. I think where they put Stephen depends on what they are trying to prove at that time. Ecclesiastes 12:7 says the bodies of all returned to the earth and the spirit (ruach) of all returned to God. Can my brother not see that if the something he believes to be in a person is the only part of a person he believe is now immortal, if it is what goes back to God who gives it, **He has this immortal something that is in all, both the saved and the unsaved, going back to God in Heaven at the time of death? What happened to his "Hell?" He is saying no one goes to Hell at death, and that no one goes to Abraham's bosom at death, for the spirit of all, both the saved and the lost, return to God.** What happened to "Abraham's bosom," the second coming of Christ, the resurrection, the judgment, and the second death? If no one goes to Heaven at death, which is what those who believe in "Abraham's bosom" believe, how is it that this immortal something in a person, which will not go to Heaven unto after the judgment, but it will go back to God at death? *"Do not all go to one place?"* (Ecclesiastes 6:6). The whole chapter of Ecclesiastes 12 is speaking to all mankind, not just to the saved. **All** are admonished to remember God in their youth before the evil days of old age, then **all** shall return to dust and the spirit of **all** (the same **all** that returned to dust) shall return to God. No reference is made to the **all** being good or evil at the time of their death. If the spirit of **all** goes back to God at death is a conscious soul, then the immortal soul of no one will not go to Hell. **There is nothing in the spirit returning to God that makes those who are saved any different from those who are not saved; the spirit of all returns to God, yet, those who use this to prove a person has an immortal soul say, "No, Solomon was wrong. The spirit/soul of the lost does not return to God at death, some says it goes to Hell at death, and others says it goes the bad side of hades at death."**

**The three places where the “soul” is sent at death by those that believe we now have an immortal deathless soul.**

1. At death does the **spirit or the soul** of the lost go to Hell?
2. At death does the **spirit or the soul** of the lost go to the bad side of hades (Abraham’s bosom)?
3. At death does the **spirit or the soul** of all, both the lost and the saved return to God?

Has the zeal to prove Plato's immortal soul, which needs no resurrection, blinded him so he does not see that he is going both ways at the same time? He believes that after the soul is freed from the body by death (as Plato put it, freed from its earthly prison) that it is just as alive as it will ever be, and when a person dies, he believes that person has everything that is ever going to be dead, already dead, and everything that he believes will be alive after the resurrection is already alive and immortal from birth, the soul, the only part of a person that he believes will ever be immortal he believes is just as alive and is now just as immortal before death as it will be both (1) after death (2) and after the resurrection.

The Hebrew word translated “spirit” in Ecclesiastes 12:7 is from Ruach, not from nehphesh, which is the word that some of the times it is used it is translated “soul.” Ruach is translated breath, wind, spirit, etc., but never translated “soul.” That which returns to God is the breath of life (Genesis 2:7), that came from God and made both man and beast “*living beings.*” In Ecclesiastes 11:4 it is, “*He who watches the wind (ruach).*” If Ecclesiastes 12:7 did prove that a person has an immortal soul in them and it is this soul that returns to God in Heaven is a rational, intelligent, thinking being, then it proves that the same immortal soul preexisted with God in Heaven as a rational, intelligent, thinking being before the birth of the body. By misusing this verse to prove a person now has something in them that is now immortal and it is this immortal something in a person goes back to God at death, then it would prove more than they want to prove. If the spirit that returns to God is an inward part of a person that is immortal, and it came from God, this immortal thinking being had to preexist in Heaven with God before the person was born; if it did not preexist then it could not “*return to God.*” Most do not want **preexistence** before birth of **ALL**, neither do they believe that **ALL**, both the saved and the lost going back to Heaven unto second coming of Christ, they believe that the soul of most will go to Hell at death, but if their view were right, that the spirit is an immortal inter part of a person that came from God at birth and then returns to God at death, there would be no way around both the saved and the lost going to Heaven at death. **The incorrect use of this passage to prove a person is born with an immortal soul in them undeniably implies the preexistence of that soul, that it existed in Heaven a living being before the birth of the person, and that at death all souls of both the saved and the unsaved, and also the souls of animals, leave the person or animal it was put in and returns to God who is in Heaven, back to where the soul was before the person or animal was born. Whatever came from God, whether it was life, or a living intelligent being that was in Heaven before birth is what returns to God.** It does not say that what came from God was a created intelligent living being (as are the angels) that was in Heaven, but that is what is inferred when this passage is used to prove the doctrine that person has an immortal soul or an immortal spirit in him or her that **returns** to God at death.

It would prove:

1. **Before birth:** It would prove the preexistence of **ALL** in Heaven. In the part of eternity before birth **ALL** would have been safe in Heaven.



2. **At birth:** It would prove the spirits of **ALL** were put out of Heaven and sent down to earth and put in earthly bodies.
3. **From death unto the resurrection the body:** At the death of the earthly bodies the spirits from Heaven were put in, the spirits of **ALL** will go back to Heaven with God unto the judgment. Some of the lost will be in Heaven for thousands of years before the judgment.
4. **At second coming:** It would prove that the spirits of **ALL** are sent back to earth for judgment.
5. **After judgment:** It would prove that the spirits of **ALL** that were safe in Heaven before the birth of the person now go to Heaven or Hell, the "many" to Hell. According to their teaching many who preexisted in Heaven before their birth (most of mankind) will go to Hell after the judgment. In the part of eternity that will be after the judgment, they will end up in Hell with God forever tormenting them. If this view were true, why did God not leave them in Heaven? Did He want most of the spirits that were in Heaven with Him to be lost where He could torment them forever?

If the spirits that came from God is man's immortal souls then:

- Birth is changed to be only a moving day from Heaven to earth for a soul that preexisted in Heaven before birth.
- Death is changed to be only a moving day from earth to Heaven or Hell for a soul that preexisted in Heaven but had moved to earth.
- From the second coming onward: For many Protestants nothing happens; the saved are brought from Heaven only to return to Heaven where they were before the second coming, and the lost are brought from Hell only to return to Hell where they were before the second coming. Both the saved, and the unsaved would have to be judged at death to know whether they would go to Heaven or Hell. They say they believe in the resurrection and the Judgment Day, but by their teaching they deny both the Day of Judgment and the Resurrection by making both impossible.
- Both the saved and the lost preexisted in Heaven but most of them will never return to Heaven after the judgment.

According to the teaching of many, this immortal soul was a living, conscious, thinking being before it came from God,

(1) It existed in Heaven as a living, thinking being,

OR

(2) What came from God was life, not a thinking being that preexisted and was immortal.

**It is the "spirit," (ruach) not "an immortal soul" (nehphesh) that returns to God.** What is the spirit that came from God? *"Then the Lord God formed a man of the dust from the ground and **breathed into his nostrils the breath of life** (ruach); and man (the body of dust) became a living being (a soul-nehphesh - Genesis 2:7).* A body made of dust + the spirit, the breath of life from God (Genesis 2:7) = a soul, a living creature whether it is a person or an animal. The spirit (breath of life) all life comes from God the only source of life, whether the life of a person, or the life of an animal, and this life returns to God. When the life returns to God, the body returns to dust, and we will have no work, device, knowledge, or wisdom (Ecclesiastes 9:10) unto the resurrection when life comes from God. All life is from God.

If the spirits that came from God is man's immortal soul then:

- Then all immortal souls of both the saved and the lost return to God at death (Ecclesiastes 12:7).
- But David did not ascend *"into Heaven"* (Acts 2:34; 2:29).
  - Would not this make the immortal soul or immortal spirit that came from God and had returned to God that had been in David be some kind of being that was in David, but was not David? That this being that was in David is now in Heaven, but David is not in Heaven?

Ecclesiastes 12:7 is the reverse of the process in Genesis 2:7.

- Body from the ground + breath of life from God = a soul, a living being (Genesis 2:7).

- Dust returns to the ground - spirit returns to God = a dead being (soul) (Ecclesiastes 12:7).
- Body minus the spirit = a dead soul (a dead being, a person or animal) (James 2:26).
  - *"Body without the spirit (breath of life) is DEAD"* James 2:26.
  - *"Faith without works is DEAD"* James 2:26.

**Today's theology tells us two conflicting things.**

- 1. Theology says that most souls go to Hell at death, and that some souls return to God at death.**
- 2. And at the same time theology uses Ecclesiastes 12:7 to say all spirits returns to God at death.**

The way Ecclesiastes 12:7 is misused to prove a person has an immortal part that cannot die makes this passage prove:

1. Before birth: Today's theology makes the soul be both alive and immortal; **just the same as they say it was at birth and as it will always be.** The view of many implies the spirit that came from God was an immortal, conscious, independent, and an intelligent being before it came from God to man, before birth.
2. From birth to death: Today's theology make the soul be both alive and immortal; **just the same as they say it was at birth and as it will always be.**
3. From death unto the resurrection: Today's theology make the soul be both alive and immortal; **just the same as they say it was at birth and as it will always be.**
4. From the resurrection onward: Today's theology make the soul be both alive and immortal; **just the same as theology say it was at birth, and as it will always be.** Soul and spirit are used as if they are the same thing.

According to today's theology the only thing that can change for the soul is its location. Birth, death, and the resurrection are only three moving days for it. There could not be a real death for an immortal soul, or a real resurrection for a soul that was not dead.

Most Eastern religions, most New Age believers, and many Christians believe in the preexistence of the soul, literally billions. Many Christians believe God creates a new soul for each at birth, some at the time of conception, some at the time of the first breath, which they believe to be only a part of a person that is immortal, and it is only this immaterial something in a person that will be in Heaven or Hell. However, if Ecclesiastes 12:7 is used to prove a person has an immortal soul that will live forever, **there is no way to get around preexistence of the soul that came from Heaven at birth, or that all (the saved, the lost, and all beasts) will go back to Heaven at death.**

**Proves Universalism**, but not the same Universalism taught by the Universalist. If this "spirit" that returns to God is an immortal soul, then it proves all, both good and bad will go to Heaven at death without the "attitude adjustments" taught by the Universalism, but it may not last forever for, according to their doctrine, **ALL** will be taken out of Heaven and return to earth at the judgment; then if one is a Christian, or not a Christian, his or her spirit that came from God at birth goes back to Heaven to God at death, but all spirits will leave Heaven for judgment, and only some spirits will go back. If the "spirit" that came from God were an immortal part (soul) of a person, then **most of the all that was with God in Heaven before their birth will end up in Hell after the judgment;** even if they do not believe what their incorrect use of this passage would prove, it would still prove it.

Job said, *"If He should gather to Himself His **spirit and his breath**, all flesh would perish together, and man would return to dust"* (Job 34:14-15). ***"And the breath***

**(nshahmah—sprit) of the Almighty gives me life”** (Job 33:4). The breath of life came from God and returns to God, it was not a conscious immortal being before it came from God, and is not a conscious immortal being after it returns to God. The spirit that returns to God at death is not an immortal soul, and is not the spiritual body that the dead in Christ will put on at the resurrection (1 Corinthians 15:44). In Genesis 2:7 Adam was made from the earth, then God breathed into Adam the breath of life and Adam, not part of Adam became a living being (soul), in Ecclesiastes 12:7 when Adam returned to the earth, the spirit or breath of life that came from God returned to God. When the “*spirit departs*” (returns to God) the “*thoughts perish*” (Psalm 146:4); if the spirit that departs were a living being with a separate existence, would it have no thoughts? If it did have thoughts they would be its thoughts, not the thoughts of the person that it was in

It is said that the dead do not know anything was only, "The way the world perceives the dead" at the time Solomon wrote this, but that is not true. Most of the world at that time, other than the Jews, believed in reincarnation, and believed the dead had some kind of life and thoughts in the underworld until they were reincarnated. Egypt, where the Jews had just come from believed the dead lived and had always lived and would always live, and would keep coming back over and over again; therefore, they would have had thoughts and known something. Many Pagans believed the soul has always existed, and must always exist, that the soul is self-existence, that it has always been reincarnated over and over, and always will be. If a person has an immortal soul in them and it came from God and will go back to God, then the soul lived before the person was born, and the soul will live when the person is dead. The inescapable conclusion would be that the pagans were right, and all that I am, all that I think and do is just a temporary passing thing just as my body is; it is only the soul that existed before me and was put in a prison in my body for a short time, and it (not me) will always exist. This is what the pagans teach, and is the source from which the church fathers brought this teaching into the church.

Old age and death are the subject in Ecclesiastes 12:7. All are born and all die and when **"it"** the spirit (ruach—breath of life—See Job 27:3; 33:4) of both men and animals returns to God. Solomon says **it is a vanity**, not a blessed event of going home to God (Ecclesiastes 12:7-8). Those who use the spirit returning to God to prove a person now has an immortal soul that returns to God at death overlook verse 8.

Solomon called the "*spirit*" an "*it*." Ecclesiastes 12:7 "*And the spirit (ruach) returns to God who give it.*" Psalm 104:29-30 "*You take away their breath (ruach—sea creature and animals - see verses 24-25), they die, and return to their dust. You send forth Your spirit (ruach—sea creature and animals); they are created.*" Psalm 146:4 "**His** breath (ruach—spirit) goes forth, **he** returns to his earth; in that very day **his** thoughts perish." If a person's thoughts perishes when the body perishes, if there were an immortal soul, would that not make it have no thoughts? If the thinking part of a person is the earthly person, and this thinking part perishes at death, and the person's thoughts perishes at death, then if a soul lived after the death of the person, (1) it would be a thoughtless something like plants (2) or it would have it's own thoughts that were not the thoughts of the person. If there were something that is in a person and it continues to think after the death of the person, after "**in that very day his thoughts perish,**" than a soul's thoughts could not be the thoughts of the person. It is not possible to reconcile today's immortal soul theology, or an immortal spirit theology with God's word.

Summary: **If this spirit that returns to God were an immortal soul, it would undeniable be in conflict with the teaching of today's theology that lost souls go to Hell immediately at death, and not to Heaven.** Why is this passage that says all spirits (ruach-breath of life) returns to God one of the most used passages to teach a person has an immortal soul that goes to either (1) Heaven (2) or Hell? Can you find anything about the spirit (ruach-breath of life) of anyone going to Hell in this passage? Maybe because there is no passage that really teaches it, changing spirit of both that came from and returns to God into a living, thinking, immortal soul is the best that can be found.

### **(8) THE SPIRIT OF MAN AND THE SPIRIT OF BEAST**

#### **Ecclesiastes 3:18-21**

*“I said in my heart, it is because of the sons of men, that I may prove them, and that they may see that they themselves are but as beasts. For that which befalls the sons of men befalls beasts; even one thing befalls them: as the one dies so dies the other; yes, they have all one **breath** (Hebrew–ruach–spirit); and man has no preeminence above the beasts: for all is vanity. All go unto one place; all are of the dust, and all turn to dust again. Who knows the **spirit** (Hebrew–ruach) **of man**, whether it goes upward, and the **spirit** (Hebrew–ruach) **of beast**, whether it goes downward to the earth.”* Why was the same Hebrew word (ruach) translated “breath” when it has references to both man and beast; were they hiding the fact they both have the same “ruach” because they did not believe beast have the same spirit as man?

Ecclesiastes 3:19-21 King James Version:

*“All (man and beasts) have the same BREATH (ruach).”*

*“Who knows that the SPIRIT (ruach-breath of life) of man.”*

*“That the SPIRIT (ruach-breath of life) of the beast.”*

Psalms 104:29-30 King James Version:

*“You take away their BREATH (ruach) they die.”*

*“You send forth your SPIRIT (ruach-breath) they are created.”*

Innate soul advocates would not give both man and beasts the same spirit (soul), neither could they have God taking away the soul.

If this BREATH–SPIRIT (ruach) were an immortal soul that returns to God at death, then it is like Ecclesiastes 12:7 above in that it would prove ALL, both the good and the evil are saved, and both return to God at death. See notes above.

***“They all have the same breath and there is no advantage for man over beast.”***

1. **Who knows whether (if) “the spirit (ruach) of man” goes up** when the body returns to the dust?
2. **Who knows whether (if) “the spirit (ruach) of beast” goes down** when the body returns to the dust?

*“Who know that the breath (ruach) of man ascends upward and the breath (ruach) of the beast descends downward to the earth?”* (Ecclesiastes 3:21 New American Standard Version). Solomon is asking a question, to which he gives no answer, **but his question is turned into statement of fact when it is used to prove that man has a spirit (ruach) in him that is immortal**, but the same spirit (ruach) in a beast is mortal. WHEN HIS QUESTION IS CHANGED INTO A STATEMENT THAT SAYS SOLOMON KNEW MANKIND HAS IMMORTAL SOULS, AND BEASTS DO NOT, IT MAKES A LIE OUT OF HIS STATEMENT THAT *“THERE IS NO ADVANTAGE FOR MAN OVER BEAST,”* THERE WOULD BE A VERT BIG ADVANTAGE.

There is an old saying, "That which proves to much proves nothing." The **spirit** of a person going up after his death is used to prove a person has a **soul** that does not die when his body dies; therefore, this soul is immortal, then the beast having a spirit that goes down after its death would prove that the beast has a soul just as immortal as a person's soul, and that it does not die when the body of the beast dies; therefore, its soul is immortal. **The "spirit (ruach) of a beast," and the "spirit (ruach) of a man" are in the same sentence, and both times "spirit" is from the same Hebrew word, there is no way to make one "spirit" be an immortal something that cannot die, and the other "spirit" be only the life of the body that is not immortal.** If a beast has a soul or spirit (Hebrew—ruach, the same soul—ruach persons have) that separates from its body and goes anywhere after the death of the person or beast, if it goes up or if it goes down, then the ruach of beast would be just as alive after the ruach of the beast separated from the body of the beach as the ruach of a person would be after the ruach separated from the body of the person. If the spirit (ruach) going up proves it is immortal and cannot die, then the spirit (ruach) going down would prove that it is immortal and cannot die.

Ruach is translate 16 different ways, most often as breath and wind, and is used to describe all earthly living beings. All flesh, birds, cattle, beasts, and every creeping thing, all have the same spirit (ruach) as man (Genesis 7:22; Genesis 6:17; Ecclesiastes 3:19).

**This is a question that Solomon asked, but he did not give an answer.** Yet, many give their own answer and say, "Yes I know where the soul of man goes, it returns to God all the way up to Heaven," and then use their uninspired answer to prove that Solomon said a person has an immortal soul that is alive and goes up to God in Heaven after the death of and without the person, or a soul that is alive and goes down to Hell after the death of the person. **That the lost are transported directly down to Hell at death much be added, for if not, they have made this passage teach all will be saved at death, and that before and without the death of Christ. But was Solomon asking whether anyone knows that the dead go to Heaven?** In the time of Solomon the Pagans that were all around Israel believed in reincarnation; the resurrection and life after death was not known about in the Old Testament, "*Our Savior Christ Jesus, who abolished death, and brought life and immortality to light through the gospel*" (2 Timothy 1:10). With the revelation that Solomon had, with all that had been made known at that time he could see nothing after death for man or beast. All the blessings of the Law were in their lifetime, not after death (Deuteronomy 28:11). **Not one word about a blessing after death** (see chapter seven—"A strange and unexplainable silence of the Old Testament on punishment and life after death" and (6) above); having no revelation about a resurrection after death Solomon saw the same fate for both, and saw no pre-eminence of one over the other after death, they both die. Without knowing of a resurrection after death, he could not see any life for either one. See Psalm 115:17; 6:5; 146:4-5; Ecclesiastes 9:5; Job 14:21. "*As it is with the good man, so with the sinner...the same destiny overtakes all...for the living know that they will die, but the dead know nothing*" (Ecclesiastes 9:2-5 New International Version). Without the resurrection to immortality, which was not make known at that time (2 Timothy 1:10; 1 Corinthians 15:18) all blessing and all cursing would be in this life-time, no blessing or cursing after death (Deuteronomy 28:1-68).

Reincarnation, that all living being, both men and animals, have a soul that come back as a higher or lower life was taught by the Pagans that was all around Israel at that time.

He was asking a question of someone. His question might have been to the Pagans asking them how did they know about reincarnation, how did they know a spirit or soul of a person or beast goes anywhere after death and is reincarnated. According to Pagan teaching that all, both persons and beasts do have an immortal soul, and they believe this soul goes somewhere after death. He asked how or by what authority do you know this; how did they know some are reincarnated **down** to a lower life and some **up** to a higher life? The only answer would be they did not know; there was no revelation from God, no way to know about reincarnation but human reasoning.

Unconditional immortality must change what Solomon said, *"For the fate of the sons of men and the fate of beasts is the same. As one dies so dies the other; indeed, they all have the same breath (ruach) and there is no advantage for man over beast, for all is vanity. All go to the same place, All come from the dust and all return to the dust.* (After clearly saying man and beast go to the same place, he is made to say in the next sentence that they do not go to the same place). *Who knows that the breath (ruach) of man ascends upward and the breath (ruach) of beast descends downward to the earth?"* His question must be changed into a statement of fact that would make I be a direct contradiction of what he had just said for it to teach today's theology. Solomon says the living knows something, but the dead do not know anything. (Ecclesiastes 9:5).

- The "living" person knows.
- The "dead" person does not know.
  - It is the person that knows or does not know, not a soul that is in the living person but has left the dead person.

He did not say, "Dead bodies do not know anything." There is no way anyone can say the dead know anything unless they say Solomon did not tell the truth, for if the dead go immediately to Heaven or Hell at death, they do know something. How could they be in torment in Hell if those in Hell do not know anything?

This is spoken of **all men**, not just the good ones. If it is an immortal spirit going to Heaven, then both the good and the bad go to Heaven at death, and this was before the death of Christ. If all were going to Heaven ("up" which they say is back to God in Heaven) at death before and without the death of Christ, before anyone had ascended to Heaven, why did Christ die? **Has not the death of Christ been made useless?**

In "Life and Death," Campbell argued that spirits, whether it be spirits of angles or spirits of men, cannot die just because they are spirits, is there anyway that his argument would not prove that the spirits of beast cannot die just because they are spirits? But he is changing the spirit (ruach) into an immortal, deathless soul that has its own life that is separate from the life of men or beast, with the spirit (ruach) of beast being mortal, and the spirit (ruach) of man being immortal, even when the same word in the Hebrew is used in the same passage; by what revelation can anyone know that one spirit (ruach) is immortal, and the other spirit (ruach) is mortal?

#### **(9) LIFE DEPARTING AND RETURNING 1 Kings 17:2**

*"Then he stretched himself upon the child three times, and called to the Lord, and said, 'O Lord my God, I pray Thee, let this child's **life** (nehphesh) return to him.'" (1 Kings 17:21 New American Standard Version). The same Hebrew word is used in Genesis 1:30. *"And to everything that creeps upon the earth, wherein there is **life** (nehphesh)." Nehphesh is translated "life" or "lives" 108 times in the King James Version. A person having an immortal something, whatever that something is believed to**

be, that is not subject to death is not in this passage. Since the child later died again after his resurrection, he was still mortal after this resurrection, just as mortal as before.

1. The earthly life that left the body.
2. Is the same earthly life that returned to the body.
3. Is the same earthly life that left the body when the child died a second time of old age.

When the bodily life is restored only to die again, how could this prove an immortal soul left the body and returned? The life that left the body and was restored must be changed to the spirit left the body and returned.

Passages that speak of life departing and returning to the body

1 Kings 17:21 This is frequently used to prove that an immortal soul had left the child, and was in Heaven even though nothing is stated nor implies about either an immortal soul, nor about him being in Heaven; both are added to it.

- *"And he stretched himself upon the child three times, and cried unto the Lord, and said, O Lord my God, I pray thee, let the child's **soul** (life-nehphesh) come into him again. And the Lord heard the voice of Elijah; and the **soul** (life-nehphesh) of the child came into him again, and he revived,"* King James Version.
- *"Then he stretched himself upon the child three times, and called to the Lord, and said, 'O Lord my God, I pray Thee, let this child's **life** (nehphesh) return to him,' And the Lord heard the voice of Elijah, and the **life** (nehphesh) of the child returned to him and he revived,"* New American Standard Bible.
- *"Then he stretched himself out on the body three times and cried to the Lord, 'O Lord my God, let this boy's **life** (nehphesh) return to him!' The Lord heard Elijah's cry, and the boy's **life** (nehphesh) returned to him and he lived,"* New International Version.
- *"He called out to the Lord: 'O Lord, my God, will you afflict even the widow with whom I am staying by killing her son?' Then he stretched himself out upon the child three times and called out to the Lord: 'O Lord, my God, let the **life breath** (nehphesh) return to the body of this child.' The Lord heard the prayer of Elijah; the **life breath** (nehphesh) returned to the child's body and he revived,"* The New American Bible. (Note: "breath" was added, it is not in the Hebrew).
- *"O Lord my God, let the **breath of life** (nehphesh), I pray, return to the body of this child. The Lord listened to Elijah's cry, and the **breath of life** (nehphesh) returned to the child's body and he revived,"* The New English Bible. (Note: "breath" was added, it is not in the Hebrew).

Genesis 35:18

- *"And it came to pass as her **soul** (life-nehphesh) was in departing (for she died),"* King James Version.
- *"As she **breathed her last** (nehphesh) - for she was dying,"* New International Version.
- *"Then with her **last breath** (nehphesh), as she was dying,"* Revised English Bible.
- *"As she **lay dying** (nehphesh), she named the boy,"* New Century Version.
- *"Rachel was about to die, but with her **last breath** (nehphesh) she named him **Bensni**,"* New Living Bible.
- *"With her **last breath** (nehphesh)...for she was at the point of death,"* The New American Bible.

An immortal undying part of a person can be read into this only by applying today's meaning of the English word "soul" to the Hebrew word "nehphesh" See Acts 20:9-10. It was "**life**" that departed, not some inter immortal something that some believe to be in a person and it cannot die, but it departed from the person it was in and went to Heaven or Hell before and without the Judgment. Psalm 104:29-30 *"You take away their **spirit** (ruach—sea creature and animals—see verses 24-25), they expire, and return to their dust. You send forth Your **spirit** (ruach—sea creature and animals) they are created."* When the

life (ruach) of beasts and creeping things depart (Genesis 9:5), no one believes it is an immortal soul departing for someplace without the animal or creature that it was in.

#### GIVING UP THE GHOST IN THE KING JAMES VERSION

“Gahvag” is used 23 times in the Hebrew Old Testament. It is translated *die* or *died* 12 times, “*gave up the ghost*” 9 times, *perished* 2 times.

In 14 times of the 23 it is as the person that died or perished. In the other 9 times it is a ghost that was leaving the person it had been in. The person dying was changed to a living ghost departing from a person. One Hebrew word was changed to four English words, changed from dying to departing.

Genesis 25:28: The King James Version was made when they were coming out of the Dark Age and it seems as if the translators still had many of the Dark Age beliefs that they wanted to put into the Bible; beliefs that the translators of later translations did not have.

- “*Then Abraham give up the ghost*” King James Version.
- “*Abraham breathed his last and died*” New American Standard Bible, New Revised Standard Version, New International Version.
- “*He died at a great age*” Revised English Bible.
- “*Then he breathed his last, dying at a ripe old age*” New American Bible, Catholic.

#### (10) GATHERED TO HIS PEOPLE Genesis 25:8-9

See chapter three.

#### (11) DAVID'S SON 2 Samuel 12:23

*“I shall go to him, but he will not return to me”* 2 Samuel 12:23. How and where did David think he would go to where his son was? See (10) above. Many years after David's death, Peter said David has not gone to Heaven (Acts 2:29).

#### (12) SAMUEL OR A DEMON 1 Samuel 28:7-28

From the days of the “church fathers” it has been debated whether this was Samuel or a demon. Those who believe in an immortal *“immaterial, invisible part of man”* say this was Samuel to prove all are living after death. If it were Samuel, then it proves he was down in the earth, in the ground (in sheol—the grave). Whether it was Samuel, or a demon, he *“came up out of the earth Saul did not believe today's theology that the dead are in Heaven; he believed they are in the grave. He asked the women to “bring up” Samuel, not “bring down” Samuel. The woman saw something “coming up out of the earth,”*

- *“And bring up for me whom I shall name to you”* (1 Samuel 28:8).
- *“Whom shall I bring up for you?”* (1 Samuel 28:11).
- *“I see a divine being coming up out of the earth”* (1 Samuel 28:13).
- *“Why have you disturbed me by bringing me up?”* (1 Samuel 28:15).

If this was Samuel he was not in Heaven. Those who believe that all have an immortal soul that goes to Heaven or Hell at death have no choice but to say (1) that Samuel was not in Heaven, Hell, or Abraham's bosom, (2) or that this was not Samuel that came up out of the earth.

If Samuel was in Heaven, could a medium bring him down out of Heaven, or could a medium bring him over the *“great gulf fixed, that they that would pass from hence to you may not be able, and none may cross over from hence to us”* (Luke 16:26)?

If Samuel was in Heaven, do you think Saul would be with him the next day?



## WHAT IS A "FAMILIAR SPIRIT"?

"Familiar spirit" does not come from ruach or nehphesh. The two words comes from one Hebrew word, "ohv," and it is used 16 times in the Old Testament and translated into two words, "familiar spirits" in all but one where "ohv" is translated, "burst *like new bottles*" (Job 32:29). It is never used of a person's soul or spirit; ohv is not the spirit (ruach) that returns to God at death (Ecclesiastes 3:21); even though the translators translate both Hebrew words into "spirit" they are nothing alike; Hebrew readers would know that two completely different words are used, but the translators did not let there English reader see this.

Strong's word 178, "A mumble, i. e. a water-skin (from its hollow sound); hence a necromancer (ventriloquist, as from a jar):--bottle, familiar spirits."

Familiar spirits are spirits of devils (See Numbers 25:13). They are just as real as Satan. It shows us that Satan has been successful in making his lie, "*You shall not die*" be believed, and even today Satan is using demons to promote his lie by passing themselves off as the spirit of a dead loved one to convince some that their loved ones are now alive, and that they have an immortal soul that is alive before the resurrection. By believing his lie, "*You shall not die*" is the truth then you have choosing Satan over God. There are so few passages that can be use to teach we have an immortal "*immaterial, invisible part of man*" that some are willing to use it despite the problems it creates for them. "*So Saul died for his trespass which he committed against the Lord, because of the word of the Lord which he did not keep; and also because he asked counsel of a medium, making inquiry of it, and did not inquire of the Lord. Therefore He killed him, and turned the kingdom to David the son of Jesse*" (1 Chronicles 10:13-14).

This being did not come from Heaven or Hell, but "*up out of the earth.*" An immortal "*immaterial, invisible part of man*" being in the earth is not what is believe by many today, and this woman would not have been able to see the invisible spirit that the soul is believed to be by many that believe we now have an immortal soul. If it were Samuel, instead of proving he was alive, it proves he was dead and in the grave; to bring one back from the dead is a resurrection of the dead, if not, why not? If it were Samuel, it would have been as all the other temporary resurrections of the Bible. Lazarus and other temporary resurrections lived a normal human life, and died as all others do; they were not raised immortal; they were raised still in the image of Adam, not with the spiritual body in the image of Christ. **If this were a resurrection of Samuel, then Samuel knew that he would be back in the grave the next day; therefore, he was not raised immortal. How can this be used to prove a person now has a something in them that is believed to be an invisible immortal soul that Saul could not see, but the woman could see? Neither a temporary resurrection of Samuel from the grave, or an evil spirit impersonating Samuel would tell us (1) nothing of life after death, (2) or that a person now has an immortal "*immaterial, invisible part.*"**

God had refused to answer Saul by any of the ways He spoke to man at that time, He did not answer by prophets, by dreams, and not by Urim and Thummim (1 Samuel 28:6). Then why would He answer by a way that He had forbidden Saul or anyone to use?

If this were Samuel, it would be a contradiction to today's theology of the saved going to Heaven at death for Samuel would be **up in Heaven**, and he would be in Heaven both (1) without the death of Christ, (2) and without the resurrection, not **down in the grave** (sheol-hades) unto the resurrection of the dead. It must first be assumed (1) that there is a part of a person that is now immortal and cannot die, (2) then assumed that a person using

witchcraft can call a “soul” out of Heaven which is where those who believe that this was the soul of Samuel believed his soul would have been, for they believe that the saved go to Heaven at the moment of death, (3) then assumed that an “*immaterial, invisible part of man (soul)*” can be seen, but only by the person using witchcraft, not by Saul. Would not this make Satan and those who practice witchcraft have the power to actually reach into Heaven and remove a “soul” from the very presents of God?

**What about "Abraham's bosom"?** Those who believe all go to the good or bad side of hades believe none can come back to earth. How is it that they have Samuel coming back from the good side of hades, and telling Saul that he would be with him in Abraham’s bosom the next day? It would not only teach that the living can converse with the those in hades, but also teaches that a witch can bring someone back to earth from hades (or Heaven) even when their “immortal soul” did want to come. If Samuel could come back why was Lazarus not permitted to come back to the rich mans five brethren (Luke 16:24-31)?

### WHAT DOES THE BIBLE SAY ABOUT IMMORTAL SOULS AND/OR IMMORTAL SPIRIT?

Nothing. Together soul and spirit are used almost 1,100 times in the King James Version, but not one time is immortal even used in the same verse with either one. Immortal and immortality are in the Old Testament 0 times, in the New Testament, immortal one time, immortality five times, all by Paul. What does he say?

1. Only God has immortality (1 Timothy 6:16).
2. "*Now unto the King eternal, immortal*" (1 Timothy 1:17).
3. Christ "*abolished death and brought life and immortality to light through the gospel*" (2 Timothy 1:10).
4. "*To them (Christians) that...seek for glory and honor and immortality, eternal life*" (Romans 2:7, King James Version).
5. "*This mortal must put on immortality*" (1 Corinthians 15:53) at the resurrection.
6. "*This mortal shall have put on immortality*" (1 Corinthians 15:54) after the resurrection.

**ONLY GOD NOW HAS IMMORTALITY:** If a person is made with something in the person that is immortal from birth and whatever it is, if it is now immortal, how is it that only God has immortality? If only God has immortality at this present time, then being "*created in the image of God*" cannot mean a person was created with immortality. How can anyone who says, they “speak where the Bible speaks, and are silent where the Bible is silent,” say all persons now has an immortal deathless soul in them when the Bible clearly says only God now has immortality (1 Timothy 6:16).

**SEEK FOR IMMORTALITY:** "*To those who by perseverance in doing good seek (zeeteo) for glory and honor and immortality, eternal life*" (Romans 2:7). Zeeteo is used 119 times in the New Testament, and it is always something that the person that is seeking for but does not have.

- "*But seek (zeeteo) you first the kingdom*" (Matthew 6:33).
- "**Seeking** (zeeteo) of him a sign from heaven" (Mark 8:11).
- "*For Herod will seek (zeeteo) the young child*" (Matthew 2:13).
- "*For I seek (zeeteo) not your's but you*" (2 Corinthians 12:14).
- "*In doing good seek (zeeteo) for glory and honor and immortality*" (Romans 2:7).

Why are we to "*seek for*" that which we are born with? Why will we "*put on immortality*" if the something that is in us is the only thing that will ever be immortal and it has been immortal from birth (or before birth)? **The fact that a person must "seek**

*for...immortality," and immortality must be "put on" at the resurrection is conclusive proof that nothing that is in a person does not now have immortality. Immortality is a promise, a hope, not a present possession; we (persons, not immortal souls that are in the persons) seek for it and must put it on. If Romans 2:7 and 1 Corinthians 15:53 teaches nothing more, they teaches that no part of a person now possess immortality, not that a part of man's nature is **now** mortal, and a part of man's nature is **now** immortal. Could it be said in a more positively way that no man is now immortal; that immortality will not be given to anyone before the second coming of Christ?*

**PUT ON IMMORTALITY:** *"For this perishable must **put on** (enduno) the imperishable, and this mortal must **put on** (enduno) immortality. But when this perishable will have **put on** (enduno) the imperishable, and this mortal will have **put on** (enduno) immortality" (1 Corinthians 15:53-54); most every one understands that a person cannot **put on** something they already have on. "This mortal" is this person that is not immortal, this mortal person will "**put on immortal**," not this soul that is already immortal will "**put on immortal**." The argument that this is speaking of our bodies that are **now** mortal, that we have a soul that is **now** immortal will not hold up, it is what is **now** mortal that **will be** immortal by putting immortality on at the resurrection, not a soul that is **now** immortal putting on immortality. Psukee is the only word that is translated "soul" in the New Testament is never used with immortality or immortal.*

- *"Be not anxious for your life...nor yet for your body, what you shall **put on** (enduno) (Matthew 6:25)*
- *"**Put not on** (enduno) two coats" (Mark 6:9)*
- *"**Put on** (enduno) the whole armor of God" (Ephesians 6:11)*

We seek for that which we do not now have, we put on that which we do not now have on. It is said so simple that only those who do not want to see will not see it.

***"And we shall be changed. For this corruptible must put on incorruption, and this mortal must put on immortality"*** (1 Corinthians 15:52-53).

- If we now have a soul that is not corruptible, how can that soul "*put on incorruption*" when it would now has incorruption on? "*Be changed*" from what, from corruptible bodies to incorruptible bodies, not from corruptible souls to incorruptible souls.
- If we now have a soul that is now immortal, how can that soul "*put on immortality*" when it would now has immortality on?
- If we now have a soul that cannot die, how can a soul inherit "*eternal life*" when it would now has eternal life?
  - Will a soul "*put on*" and "*inherit*" that which it already has?

What is the part of a person that is now mortal, but will put on immortality (1 Corinthians 15:53)? **It could not be a soul that is now immortal that will put on immortality at the resurrection, but a person that is now mortal that will put on immortality at the resurrection.** "*This mortal*" is a person as he now is in the image of Adam, and this person will become an immortal person with a spiritual body in the image of Christ. Only the body will be different, not the person.

Corruption and mortal are both used throughout the Bible, but incorruption and immortal are used only by Paul, and are never used referring to the lost, or never to a soul or to a spirit. Immortality was brought to light by the Gospel, and will be "*put on*" by the saved at the judgment. **It is never said the lost will ever "*put on immortality*," or that they will ever have either incorruption, or immortality, or that anyone (lost or saved) now has immortality before the resurrection.** There is not one verse that

teaches all men, both good and bad are born with an immortal soul that is inside of them and it can never die, and God cannot kill it. An *"immaterial invisible"* part of a person called an "immortal soul" is not in the Bible. If this doctrine is not changing the Bible, it cannot be changed. **For a person to have a soul and/or spirit, which will live forever in Heaven or Hell, that person must now have immortality. According to the teaching of some, the soul is the only part of a person that will ever be immortal, and it is now as immortal as it will ever be. This teaching makes Paul's statement in 1 Corinthians 15:53, "This mortal must put on immortality" not possible.** With today's teaching there is no sense to what Paul said for it would make him be saying, "This immortal soul must put on immortality" and become an immortal soul at the resurrection.

The doctrine and precepts of man. An immortal soul from birth-the soul, which many teach is the only part of a person that will ever be immortal, would already be immortal before the resurrection.

Bible doctrine. A mortal person will put on immortality at the resurrection (1 Corinthians 15:53). **Both cannot be true.**

- **Not one passage in the whole Bible says a person is now immortal.**
- **Not one passage in the whole Bible says a person has an immortal soul that is now inside of the person.**
- **Not one passage in the whole Bible says a person has an immortal spirit that is now inside of the person.**

The Bible is not silent on this question for there are many passages that say loud and clear that all are now mortal, and not one passage of scripture says any person will be immortal before the resurrection.

Dr. Robert A. Morey: Even though he believes there is an immortal soul that is in a person said, "From our examination of the terms 'immortal' and 'incorruptible,' it is obvious that they describe the attributes of the resurrection body and do not speak of the condition of man's soul after death. As a matter of fact, the phrase 'the immortality of the soul' is never found in Scripture...They thus pit resurrection against a conscious afterlife as if the two were in conflict with each other," "Death and the Afterlife," page 95, 1984, Bethany House Publishers.

**Three words are translated immortal and incorruptible in the New Testament.** Not one time are they used referring to the soul, every time they are used referring to a person, not just to an *"immaterial invisible part of man."* Immortality is always something a person will have, but does not now have. **Only when they are used referring to God are they in the present tense. When used referring to a person they are always in the future tense.**

(1) **ATHANASIA** (immortality) is used three times. Not one of them is used referring to a person now in this life before the resurrection, or to a no substance invisible part of a person. **Immortality (athanasia) is never used referring to the lost.**

- Athanasia used referring to God.
  - (1) 1 Timothy 6:16 *"Who alone possesses **immortality** (athanasia) and dwells in unapproachable light."* Only God has immortality now.
- Athanasia used referring to a person only after the resurrection, immortality is not attributed to a person, or anything that is in a person in this lifetime. Then it is the mortal person that will be immortal, not something in a person that is already immortal.
  - (2) 1 Corinthians 15:53 *"This mortal must put on **immortality** (athanasia)."*
  - (3) 1 Corinthians 15:54 *"But when...this mortal shall have put on **immortality** (athanasia)."* Immortality for a person is in the future, not the present. The person, not a soul, must put it on.

(2) **APHTHARTOS** (incorruptible) is used seven times. Not one of the seven is used referring to a person, or to a no substance that is in now a person in this life.

- Aphthartos used referring to God.
  - (1) Romans 1:23 *"The glory of the **incorruptible** (aphthartos) God."* In this passage man now being corruptible is in contrast with God being incorruptible.
  - (2) 1 Timothy 1:17 *"Now unto the King eternal, **immortal** (aphthartos), invisible, the only God."*
- Aphthartos used referring to a person only after the resurrection.
  - (3) 1 Corinthians 15:52 *"And the dead shall be raised **incorruptible** (aphthartos), and we shall be changed."*
- Aphthartos used referring to our inheritance after the resurrection.
  - (4) 1 Peter 1:4 *"Who...begat us again...unto an inheritance **incorruptible** (aphthartos), and undefiled, and that fades not away, reserved in heaven for you."*
- Aphthartos used referring to our crown we will receive after the resurrection.
  - (5) 1 Corinthians 9:25 *"Now they do it to receive a corruptible crown; but we an **incorruptible** (aphthartos)." (An incorruptible crown, not an incorruptible soul).*
- Aphthartos used referring to the word of God.
  - (6) 1 Peter 1:23 *"Having been begotten again, not of corruptible seed, but of **incorruptible** (aphthartos), through the word of God, which lives and abides forever."*
- Aphthartos used referring to our adorning.
  - (7) 1 Peter 3:4 *"But let it be the hidden man of the heart, in the **incorruptible** (aphthartos) apparel of a meek and quiet spirit."*

(3) **APHTHARSIA** (incorruption) is used eight times. Not one of them is used referring to a person, or an immortal *"immaterial, invisible part of man"* now in this life.

- Aphtharsia used referring to a person only after the resurrection, something we seek for, but do not now have (the body we will have, not soul).
  - (1) Romans 2:7 *"Who will render to every man according to his works: to them that...seek for glory and honor and **incorruption** (aphtharsia), eternal life."*
  - (2) 1 Corinthians 15:42 *"So also is the resurrection of the dead. **It** is sown in corruption; **it** is raised in **incorruption** (aphtharsia)." Note: it is the dead person, not a dead immortal soul that is resurrected; incorruption is only after the resurrection of the dead person. It is the dead person that is sown in the grave; a deathless soul could not be put in the grave. **There is nothing about a "soul" in this.***
  - (3) (4) and (5) 1 Corinthians 15:50, 15:53 and 15:54 *"Now...flesh and blood cannot inherit the kingdom of God; neither does corruption inherit **incorruption** (aphtharsia). Behold, I tell you a mystery: We all shall not sleep, but we shall all be changed, in a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump: for the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed. For this corruptible must put on **incorruption** (aphtharsia), and this mortal must put on immortality (thanasia). But, when this corruptible shall have put on **incorruption** (aphtharsia), and this mortal shall have put on immortality (thanasia)."*
  - (6) 2 Timothy 1:10 *"Christ Jesus, who abolished death, and brought life and **immortality** (aphtharsia) to light through the gospel." The only way we can know about immortality after the resurrection is through the gospel, not from philosophy or science, not from the Old Testament.*
- Aphtharsia used referring to our love for Christ.
  - (7) Ephesians 6:24 *"Grace be with all them that love our Lord Jesus Christ with a love **incorruptible** (aphtharsia)."*
- Aphtharsia used referring to our doctrine.
  - (8) Titus 2:7 *"In all things showing yourself an ensample of good works; in your doctrine showing **uncorruptness** (aphtharsia), gravity, sound speech."*

Immortality or uncorruption is not used in the Old Testament; eternal is used in the King James Version two times, translated from two different Hebrew words,

- Strong's Word 6924-kehdem It is used referring to God one time, "*The eternal God*" Deuteronomy 33:27. It is translated "*ancient*" many times, in Deuteronomy 33:15 it is translated "*the ancient (kehdem) mountains,*" and just few verses later the same word is changed to "*eternal (kehdem) God.*" In Psalm 68:34 "*the heavens of heavens, which were of old (kehdem).*" It is translated ancient, old, past, before, and east many times, but today's concept of eternal that was unknown to the ancient Hebrew people was used only that one time, but in the other passages where kehdem also has references to God it is "*even he that abideth of old (kehdem)*" Psalm 55:19; "*before his works of old (kehdem)*" Proverbs 8:22; "*whose goings forth have been from of old (kehdem)*" Micah 5:2.
- Strong's word 5769-olawn, and is used in Isaiah 60:15. This Hebrew word is used hundreds of times but is translated eternal only this one time.

The doctrine that God made a person with an immortal soul that cannot cease to exist, and that even God cannot destroy this something that is believed to be in a person is based on pagan philosophy, not on the word of God; therefore, the argument that the lost must live somewhere for they cannot cease to exist is also based on pagan philosophy.

**If a person were born with something in them that is now immortal and not subject to death, would it not be strange that there is but one clear passage in the entire Bible that says "you shall not surely die" (Genesis 3:4), and it is from the father of lies (John 8:44).**

#### **THE MANY VIEWS OF "SOUL" and/or "SPIRIT"**

**A brief review of some of the many divisions in what people believe about immortality and the soul; views of the soul that require death to mean eternal life somewhere, and that all men are deathless and possess immortality inherently at or before birth.**

1. **THE PAGAN VIEW OF REINCARNATION OF THE SOUL.** Ancient Egyptian belief was that the soul had a gloomy existence in the underworld (transmigration). The Greeks and Romans believed almost the same with some changes. Oriental and Pythagorean philosophy, Hindus, Burmans, Buddhists, and Grand Lama all believed in some form of reincarnation. They believed the "soul" of the evil had some punishment, but not all believed it had the same punishment, or that the punishment is eternal. Today, worldwide there are more who believe in reincarnation than all other afterlife beliefs combined. Many religions that are not Christian believe in some form of reincarnation.
2. **THE CATHOLIC AND PROTESTANT VIEW.** Mankind is born with an immortal soul that can never die or be destroyed. A very small percent will go to Heaven at death but most will go to Hell.
3. **THE HADES VIEW.** This view is that no one goes to Heaven or Hell at death, but the saved are rewarded in a place many call Abraham's bosom, and the lost are tormented before they are judged, before the resurrection and judgment. Death is changed to life before the resurrection, but not life in Heaven or Hell.
4. **THE UNIVERSALIST VIEW.** All will be saved. Those who do not obey Christ in this lifetime will have an "attitude adjustment" after death, and the soul that is believed to be in the person will end up in Heaven with no souls in Hell.

5. **THE RESURRECTION TO IMMORTAL LIFE ON THE RESTORED EARTH.** This view is that the earthly body will be raised and restored to be like Adam before his sin on a restored earth. No one's soul will be immortal in Heaven or Hell. Some believe the lost will be raised with the same mortal bodies we now have, and Christ will return to earth and will rule forever over the earth from Jerusalem; and the lost will literally be cast into Gehenna, which will have been restored.
6. Many other minor views in religions around the world.
  - o There are some minor differences within all the above views. The fate of those who do not obey Christ is made to fit with their view of immortality. Protestants now have many minor differences, and some differences that in no way could be called minor.
7. **THE BIBLE VIEW.** It does not teach the natural immortality of a person, or immortality of anything that is in a person. All are now mortal. Those in Christ will be raised immortal at the coming of Christ. All others will be raised to judgment and will have their part in the lake of fire, which is the second death.

#### THE PHILOSOPHICAL ARGUMENT

Some times used to prove innate or inborn immortality.

1. There are only two substances, matter, and spirit.
2. Matter has no power of thought or life.
3. Therefore, when matter has life and the power of thought an immortal soul or spirit had to be added.

If this were true it would give an immortal soul to every kind of life, to all insects, all animals, even worms would be immortal. All animals have the power of thought; therefore, all animals have a soul.

If this were true Jesus could not have given eternal life to anyone, they would all have it without Him.

-----  
 An abridgment from Miles Grant, Positive Theology, chapter 5 "Conditional Immortality," 1885,

"The Hebrew word nehphesh and the Greek word psukee are translated in **fifty different ways in the Bible**. These fifty may be reduced to three. **(1) The LIFE of any living being. (2) ANY living being. (3) The DESIRE of any living being.** All fifty words have a reference to this life, not one to an immortal soul.

#### (1) "The LIFE of any living creature"

**SOUL:**

Nehphesh and psukee "The word soul occurs in our English Bible 535 times." (Note: Mr. Grant was using the King James Version where nehphesh and psukee are translated soul about 535 times. If the New International Version 2011 update were used, they are translated soul only 95 times. Life, person, heart, or a pronoun for a person is used much more than in the list he gives below).

- Nehphesh is used over 870 times in the Old Testament and translated soul 475 times in the King James Version. Psukee is used 106 times in the New Testament and translated soul 58 times in the King James Version
  - From ndeevah 1 time (Job 30:16, the only time this word is in the Bible)
  - From nshahmah 1 time" Nshahman is used 24 times, mostly translated "breath" or "breath of life," It is translated "souls" only 1 of the 24 times in the King James Version (Isaiah 57:16), but is changed to "breath" in the New American Standard
1. "The **soul** (nehphesh) *that sins, it shall die*" Ezekiel 18:4, 20. How is it that Ezekiel did not know an immortal soul couldn't die?
  2. "No **soul** (nehphesh) *of you shall eat blood*" Leviticus 17:12. Can a soul that has no earthly substance eat blood?
  3. "That **soul** (nehphesh) *shall be cut off*" Leviticus 7:20

4. "Our **soul** (nehphesh) dried away" Numbers 11:6
5. "They have dug a pit for **soul** (nehphesh)" Jeremiah 18:20. Could they put an immortal soul in a pit?
6. "To slay the **souls** (nehphesh) that should not die, and to save the **souls** (nehphesh) alive that should not live" (Ezekiel 13:19). By today's definition of soul, "an invisible something that cannot die," makes this passage is nonsense and foolish. It was lives, or persons that were saved or killed, not invisible souls that cannot be killed
7. "For you have delivered my **soul** (nehphesh-life) from death" (Psalm 56:13). His life (nehphesh) had been saved from death. Not his soul that could not be dead, but it was dead anyway and was brought back to life. He had been saved from death, past tense, not will be delivered from death, future tense
8. "Let them be put to shame and confounded that seek after my **soul** (nehphesh-life)" (Psalm 70:2)
9. "Let the enemy pursue my **soul** (nehphesh-life), and overtake it" (Psalm 7:5)
10. "Deliver my **soul** (nehphesh-life) from the wicked" (Psalm 17:13)
11. "Deliver my **soul** (nehphesh-life) from the sword" (Psalm 22:20)
12. "Rescue my **soul** (nehphesh-life) from their destructions" (Psalm 35:17)
13. "For strangers are risen up against me, and violent men have sought after my **soul** (nehphesh-life) Psalm 54:3.
14. "But those that seek my soul (nehphesh) to destroy it" (Psalm 63:9)
15. "Let them be put to shame and confounded that seek after my **soul** (nehphesh-life)" (Psalm 70:2)
16. "They that lay in wait for my **soul** (nehphesh-life)" (Psalm 71:10)
17. "He spared not their **soul** (nehphesh-life) from death" (Psalm 78:50)
18. "You have delivered my **soul** (nehphesh-life) from death" (Psalm 116:8). Clearly the writers of Psalm did not understand nehphesh to mean a part of a person that cannot die. Even the King James translators repeatedly translated nehphesh as life in the same type of passages
19. "They devised to take away my **life** (nehphesh)" (Psalm 31:13)
20. "They also that seek after my **life** (nehphesh) (Psalm 38:12 and many more like this)." Today's readers would have understood it better if they had been more uniform for if someone were trying to kill us, we would not say they were after our "soul" but after our "life." Most translations are somewhat better than the King James and a few are much better translated
21. 515 more. Some have reference to man, both to living men and to dead men. Some have reference to any living beings (living creatures). Some have reference to both man and other living beings
22. "Able to destroy both body and **soul** (psukee)" Matthew 10:28
23. "Shall save a **soul** (psukee) from death" James 5:20

#### LIFE:

- Nehphesh "is rendered **life and lives** one hundred and twenty times, and is applied indiscriminately to man and beast." Genesis 1: 20. Genesis 1: 30; 9: 4; 9: 5; 19:1 7; 19:19; 32:30; 44:30; Exodus 4:19; 21: 23; 21:30; Leviticus 17:11; 17:14. Numbers 35:31. Deuteronomy 12:23. Deuteronomy 19:21. Deuteronomy 24:6. Joshua. 2:13; 2:14; 9:24; Judges 5:18; 9:17; 12:3; 18:25; Ruth 4:15. 1 Samuel: 19:5. 1 Samuel. 19:11. 1 Samuel. 20: 1. 1 Samuel. 22:23. 1 Samuel. 23:15. 1 Samuel. 26: 24; 1 Samuel. 28:9; 1 Samuel. 28:21; 2 Samuel. 1:9; 4:8; 14:7; 16:11; 18:13; 19:5; 23:17; 1 Kings 1:12; 2:23; 3:11; 19:2; 19:3; 19:4; 19:10, 14; 20:31; 20:39; 20:42; 2 Kings 1:13; 1:14; 7:7; 10:24; 1 Chronicles 11:19; 2 Chronicles 1:11; Esther 7:3; 7:7; 8:11; 9:16; Job 2:4; 2:6; 6:11; 13:14; 31:39; Psalm 31:13; 38:12; Proverbs 1:18; 1:19; 6:26; 7:23; 12:10; 13:3; 13:8; Isaiah 15:4; 43:4; Jeremiah 4:30; 11:21; 21:7; 21:9; 22:25; 34:20, 21; 38:2; 38:16; 39:18 (2 times); 44:30; 45:5; 46:26; 48:6; 49:37; Lamentations 2:19. Lam 5:9; Ezekiel 32:10; Jonah 1:14; Jonah 4:3
- Psukee **life and lives** forty times. Matthew 2:20; 6:25; 10:39; 16:25 (2 times); 20:28; Mark 3:4; 8:35 (2 times); 10:45; Luke 6:9; 9:24 (2 times); 9:56; 12:22, 23; 14:26; 17:33; John 10:11; 10:15; 10:17; 12:25 (2 times); 13:37, 38. (2 times); 15:13; Acts 15:26; 20:10; 20:24; 27:10; 27:22; Romans 11:3; 16:4; Philemon 2:30; 1 John 3:16; Revelation 8:9; 12:11
- GHOST (nehphesh) two times. "The giving up of the **ghost** (nehphesh)" Job 11:20. "She has given up the **ghost** (soul-nehphesh)" Jeremiah 15:9
- MORTALLY (nehphesh) one time. "If any man hate his neighbor...and smite him **mortally** (nehphesh)" Deuteronomy. 19:11
- BREATH (nehphesh) one time. "His **breath** (nehphesh) kindles coals" Job 41:21

#### (2) "ANY living being" (living creatures)

#### CREATURE (nehphesh) nine times

1. "Let the waters swarm with swarms of **living creature** (nehphesh)" Genesis. 1:20



2. "And God created the great sea-monsters, and every **living creature (nehphesh)**" Genesis. 1:21
3. "Let the earth bring forth **living creature (nehphesh)** after their kind, cattle, and creeping things, and beasts of the earth" Genesis 1:24
4. "And whatsoever the man called every **living creature (nehphesh)**, that was the name thereof" Genesis 2:19
5. "**Living creature (nehphesh)**" Genesis 9:10 birds, cattle, every beast of the earth
6. "**Living creature (nehphesh)**" Genesis 9:12 every living creature
7. "**Living creature (nehphesh)**" Genesis 9:15 every living creature of all flesh
8. "**Living creature (nehphesh)**" Genesis 9:16 every living creature of all flesh
9. "Every **living creature (nehphesh)** that moves" Leviticus. 11:46  
Birds, cattle, every beast of the earth are a nehphesh, a living being, just as man, but you can not see this in most English translations.

**PERSON** (nehphesh) thirty times

1. "Give me the **persons (nehphesh)**" Genesis 14:21, not, "Give me the immortal souls of the persons."
2. "And dip it in the water, and sprinkle it upon the tent, and upon all the vessels, and upon the **persons (nehphesh)** that were there, and upon him that touched the bone" Numbers 19:18. Is water to be sprinkled on immortal souls that have no substances just as it is on the tent and vessels? How can this be? Even the King James translators know water could not be sprinkled on something that could not be seen.
3. "That the manslayer that kills any **persons (nehphesh)** unwittingly...everyone that kills any **persons (nehphesh)**" (Numbers 35:11-15). Could anyone kill an immortal soul that can never die?
4. "Whoso kills any **persons (nehphesh)**, the murderer shall be slain at the mouth of witnesses; but one witness shall not testify against any **persons (nehphesh)** that he die" (Numbers 35:30). How could anyone be a witness to the killing of a soul that they cannot see?
5. "I have occasioned the death of all the **persons (nehphesh)** of your father's house" (1 Samuel 22:22)
6. "They traded the **persons (nehphesh)** of man and vessels of brass for your merchandise" (Ezekiel 27:13). How could they trade souls if no one can see souls?
7. 7 to 30 **person(s)** twenty-three more times: Genesis 36:6; Exodus 16:16; Leviticus 27: 2; Numbers 5:6; 31:19; 31:35; 31:35; 31:40; 31:46; Deuteronomy 10:22; 27:25; Joshua 20:3; 20:9; 2 Samuel 14:14; Proverbs 28:17; Jeremiah 43:5; 43:6; 52:29; 52:29; Jeremiah 52:30; Ezekiel 16:5; 17:17; 33:6

**MAN** (nehphesh) four times

1. "Every **man (nehphesh)** must eat" Exodus. 12:16. Not "Every immortal soul must eat"
2. "He that kills the life of a **man (nehphesh)**" Leviticus. 24:17
3. "The money that every **man (nehphesh)**" 2 Kings 12:4
4. "To him whom **man (nehphesh)** despised" Isaiah 49:7

**MEN** (nehphesh) one time

1. "And of **men (nehphesh)** a hundred thousand" 1 Chronicles 5:21. A hundred thousand invisible immortal souls or a hundred thousand people?

**HIM** (nehphesh) four times

1. "Let us not kill **him (nehphesh)**" Genesis 37:21, it does not say, "Let us not kill an immortal soul that cannot be killed?"
2. "Less the avenger of the blood...slay **him (nehphesh)**" Deuteronomy. 19:6
3. "And slay **him (nehphesh)**" Deuteronomy 22:26. Slay an immortal soul or a person?
4. "Seven are an abomination unto **him (nehphesh)**" Proverbs 6:16

**HE** (nehphesh) two times

1. "**He (nehphesh)** was laid in iron" Psalm 105:18. An immortal soul in iron?
2. "**He (nehphesh)** that labors" Proverbs 16:26

**ME** (nehphesh) three times

1. "Let **me (nehphesh)** die" Numbers. 23:10; this is "let **me** die" not "let my immortal soul die"
2. "Let **me (nehphesh)** die with the Philistines" Judges 16:30
3. "I pray thee, let **me (nehphesh)** live" 1 Kings 20:32

**YOUR SELVES** (nehphesh) six times

1. "You shall not make **yourselves (nehphesh)** abominable" Leviticus. 11:43
2. "Neither shall you defile **yourselves (nehphesh)**" Leviticus 11:44
3. "Take you good heed unto **yourselves (nehphesh)**" Deuteronomy. 4:15
4. "Take good heed therefore unto **yourselves (nehphesh)**" Joshua. 23:11
5. "Take heed to **yourselves (nehphesh)**" Jeremiah 17:21

6. "Deceive not **yourselves** (nehphesh)" Jeremiah 37:9  
**YOU** (psukee) one time: "And I will very gladly spend and be spent for **you** (psukee)" 2 Corinthians 12:15  
**HER** (nehphesh) one time: "At **her** (nehphesh) *pleasure*" Jeremiah 2:24  
**SHE** (nehphesh) one time: "Let her go whither **she** (nehphesh) will" Deuteronomy 21:14  
**THEE** (nehphesh) two times. "To slay **thee** (nehphesh)...wherefore should he slay **thee** (nehphesh)" Jeremiah 40:14; 40:15  
**US** (psukee) one time: "How long do you make **us** (psukee) to doubt?" John 10:24  
**WE** (nehphesh) one time: "Ah, so would **we** (nehphesh) have it." Psalm 35:25  
**THEY** (nehphesh) one time: "**They** (nehphesh) die in youth" Job 36:14  
**HIMSELF** (nehphesh) eight times  
 1. "Requested for **himself** (nehphesh)" 1 Kings 19:4  
 2. "He tears **himself** (nehphesh) in this anger" Job 18:4  
 3. "He justified **himself** (nehphesh)" Job. 32:2  
 4. "The Lord...sworn by **himself** (nehphesh)" Jeremiah 51:14  
 5. "Neither shall the mighty deliver **himself** (nehphesh)" Amos 2:14  
 6. "And he that is swift of foot shall not deliver **himself** (nehphesh)" Amos 2:15  
 7. "The Lord God has sworn by **himself** (nehphesh)" Amos 6:8  
 8. "Wished in **himself** (nehphesh) to die" Jonah 4:8  
**MYSELF** (nehphesh) one time: "I have behaved and quieted **myself** (nehphesh)" Psalm 131:2  
**HERSELF** (nehphesh) two times  
 1. "Hell has enlarged **herself** (nehphesh)" Isaiah 5:14. Does Hell have an enlarged immortal soul?  
 2. "Backsliding Israel has justified **herself** (nehphesh)" Jeremiah 3:11. Does a nation have an immortal soul?  
**THYSELF** (nehphesh) one time: "Think not with **thyself** (nehphesh)" Esther 4:13.  
**THEMSELVES** (nehphesh) three times  
 1. "They have decreed for **themselves** (nehphesh)" Esther 9: 31  
 2. "But **themselves** (nehphesh) are gone into captivity" Isaiah 46:2  
 3. "They shall not deliver **themselves** (nehphesh)" Isaiah 47:14  
**ANY** (nehphesh) three times  
 1. "And when **any** (nehphesh) will offer a meat offering" Leviticus. 2:1.  
 2. "He that touches the dead body of **any** (nehphesh) man" Numbers. 19:11. Can anyone touch a dead soul that has no body to be touched and it cannot be dead?  
 3. "A man be found stealing **any** (nehphesh)" Deuteronomy. 24:7  
**OWN** (nehphesh) one time: "The heart knows his **own** (nehphesh) bitterness" Proverbs 14:10  
**DEAD** (nehphesh) five times  
 1. "Any cutting in your flesh for the **dead** (nehphesh)" Leviticus. 19:28  
 2. "There shall none be defiled for the **dead** (nehphesh)" Leviticus 21:1  
 3. "Anything unclean by the **dead** (nehphesh)" Leviticus 22: 4-6  
 4. "Whosoever is defiled by the **dead** (nehphesh)" Numbers. 5:2  
 5. "He sinned by the **dead** (nehphesh)" Numbers 6:11  
**BODY** (soul-nehphesh) seven times  
 1. "Any dead **body** (nehphesh)" Leviticus 21:11  
 2. "Shall come at no dead **body** (nehphesh)" Numbers 6:6  
 3. "Defiled by the dead **body** (nehphesh) of a man" Numbers 9: 6  
 4. "Defiled by the dead **body** (nehphesh) of a man" Numbers 9:7  
 5. "Unclean by reason of a dead **body** (nehphesh)" Numbers 9:10  
 6. "Whosoever touches the dead **body** (nehphesh) of any man" Numbers 19:13  
 7. "Unclean by a dead **body** (nehphesh)" Haggai 2:13  
**FELLOWS** (nehphesh) one time: "Lest angry **fellows** (nehphesh) run upon you, and you lose your life" Judges 18:25  
**DEADLY** (nehphesh) one time: "My **deadly** (nehphesh) enemies" Psalm 17:9  
**TABLETS** (nehphesh) one time: "The **tablets** (nehphesh) and the earrings" Isaiah 3:20  
**BEAST** (nehphesh) three times. 1, 2, and 3 "And he that kills a **beast** (nehphesh) shall make it good; **beast** (soul - nehphesh) for **beast** (nehphesh)" Leviticus. 24:18 (3 times). Can anyone make an immortal soul good, soul for soul? Can anyone deny that beasts ARE a soul—a living being?  
**THING** (nehphesh) two times  
 1. "Any living **thing** (nehphesh)" Leviticus 11:10  
 2. "Every **thing** (nehphesh) that lives" Ezekiel 47:9

**ONE** (nehphesh) four times

1. "Let **one** (nehphesh) die with the Philistines" Judges 16:30. Can anyone "let" an immortal soul die or live?
2. "Let **one** (nehphesh) die the death of the righteous" Numbers 23:10
3. "I pray you, let **one** (nehphesh) live" 1 Kings 20:32. Let one soul live but let the rest of the souls die?
4. "If any **one** (nehphesh) of the common people sin" Leviticus. 4:27

**FISH** (nehphesh) one time: "All that make sluices and ponds for **fish** (nehphesh)" Isaiah 19:10

### (3) "The DESIRE of any living creature"

**DESIRE** (nehphesh) five times

1. "The wandering of the **desire** (nehphesh)" Ecclesiastes 6:9
2. "The land whereunto they **desire** (nehphesh) to return" Jeremiah 22:27
3. "To the which they have a **desire** (nehphesh)" Jeremiah 44:14
4. "He utters his mischievous **desire** (nehphesh)" Micah 7:3
5. "Who enlarges his **desire** (nehphesh)" Habakkuk 2:5

**MIND** (nehphesh) fifteen times

1. "If it be your **mind** (nehphesh) that I should bury" Genesis. 23:8
2. "In mine heart and in my **mind** (nehphesh)" 1 Samuel. 2:35
3. "My **mind** (nehphesh) could not be toward this people" Jeremiah 15:1
4. Twelve more: Deuteronomy. 18:6; 28:65; 2 Samuel. 17:8; 2 Kings 9:15; 1 Chronicles 28:9; Ezekiel 23:17; 23:18 (2 times); 23:22; 23:28; 24:25; 36:5

Psukee–soul three times

1. "And made their **minds** (psukee) evil affected against the brethren" Acts 14:2
2. "With one **mind** (psukee) striving together for the faith of the gospel" Philemon 1:27
3. "Less you be wearied and faint in your **minds** (psukee)" Hebrews 12:3

**HEART** (nehphesh) fifteen times

1. "And cause sorrow of **heart** (nehphesh)" Leviticus. 26:16
  2. "Sets his **heart** (nehphesh) upon it" Deuteronomy. 24:15
  3. "The wicked boasts of his **heart's** (nehphesh) desire" Psalm 10:3
  4. Twelve more: Exodus. 23:9; 1 Samuel. 2:33; 2 Samuel 3:21; Proverbs 23:7; 28:25; 31:6; Jeremiah 42:20; Lamentations 3:51; Ezekiel 25:6; 25:15; 27:31; Hosea 4:8
- Psukee - soul one time: "Doing the will of God from the **heart** (psukee)" Ephesians 6:6

**LUST** (nehphesh) two times

1. "My **lust** (nehphesh) shall be satisfied upon them" Exodus. 15:9
2. "By asking meat for their **lust** (nehphesh)" Psalm 78:18

**WILL** (nehphesh) three times

1. "Unto the **will** (nehphesh) of mine enemies" Psalm 27:12
2. "Unto the **will** (nehphesh) of his enemies" Psalm 41: 2
3. "Delivered thee unto the **will** (nehphesh) of them" Ezekiel 16:27

**PLEASURE** (nehphesh) three times

1. "When you come into your neighbor's vineyard, then you may eat grapes your fill at your own **pleasure** (nehphesh)" Deuteronomy. 23:24
2. "To bind his princes at his **pleasure** (nehphesh)" Psalm 105:22
3. "Set at liberty at their **pleasure** (nehphesh)" Jeremiah 34:16

**DISCONTENTED** (nehphesh) one time: "Everyone that was **discontented** (nehphesh)" 1 Samuel. 22:2

**GREEDY** (nehphesh) one time: "They are **greedy** (nehphesh) dogs" Isaiah 56:11

**HEARTY** (nehphesh)

- Nehphesh–one time. "Of a man's friend by **heartly** (nehphesh) counsel" Proverbs 27:9
- Psukee–one time. "And whatsoever you do, do it **heartily** (psukee), as to the Lord" Colossians 3:23

**APPETITE** (nehphesh) two times

1. "If you be a man given to **appetite** (nehphesh)" Proverbs 23:2
2. "The **appetite** (nehphesh) is not filled" Ecclesiastes 6:7

From the above, it is clear that all the words into which nehphesh and psukee are translated clearly show that a person does not have an immortal something in them that has any existence without the body, or that has any function without the body, or that has any life after the death of the person. "Nehphesh" or "psukee" is not something that has a life of its own that can live without the person; it is any living being, a person, or animal. In a

**person nehphesh and psukee is the earthly person who is in the image of Adam, not an immortal something in a person that is less than the whole person, and can live without the whole person.** Both persons and animals are nehpheshs (living beings, souls); not a living being that has a nehphesh (a soul) that will live without them.

---

The following quotation from an unknown author will illustrate the vague idea of many in relation to what may be saved through Christ.

"A man stands looking over the rail of a vessel into the surging water, and cries out, 'Save it!' Men come rushing up with, 'Save what? A man overboard?' 'No.' 'A woman?' 'No.' 'Then it must be a child.' 'No, it is not a child.' 'What then can it be?' 'I cannot tell.' 'Well, what does it look like?' 'I do not know, it has never been seen.' 'What form is it?' 'It has no form.' 'How large is it?' 'Why, it has no size.' 'Well, about how much will it weigh?' 'It has no weight.' 'Will it perish in the water?' 'No, no; it can never perish but save it, save it.'"

---

### "IT" OR "ME"

Many who believe the doctrine of unconditional immortality often say "IT" when they speak of the soul. Will "IT" be "ME" or will "IT" be my soul in Heaven? If I had a soul and "IT" had thoughts and emotions that were not my thoughts and emotions, then "IT" could not be "ME," but another being living in me.

The whole person will be raised from the dead at the resurrection. It will be "ME" changed from a "soul" (nehphesh-psukee) a living creature in the image of Adam into a new spiritual body in the image of Christ. Some believe and teach it will only be an immaterial (no substance) invisible part of "ME," which they call the soul "IT" that will be in Heaven.

If "IT" thinks, has any thoughts or knowledge, has any kind of sensibility different than or apart from "ME"; it is not "ME," but is another being. If the spirit "IT" is not my mind, then "IT" must have a mind of "ITS" own and thoughts of "ITS" own. Is "IT" intelligent and has a brain of "ITS" own? If not, then "IT" has no sensibility, then "IT" is only a nonliving thing.

If the "soul," ("nehphesh" and "psukee") as used in the Bible, is not our life, mind, feeling and emotions; if "IT" is not the whole of a person; then "IT" could only be another being existing within "ME"; but "IT" and "ME" are not the same; and only the soul "IT" shall be in Heaven, but not the real "ME" (the part that now feels, thinks, and lives). Only this no substance being living in "ME" which I can know nothing about. Not what "IT" looks like, or what "IT" thinks, how "IT" feels, or any other thing about "IT."

I could not even know "IT" is in "ME" without being told that "IT" is there. Therefore, "IT" could only be another being that will live on after "ME" is dead. When "IT" lives in Heaven, it will be "IT" living, not "ME," and my mind and thoughts will be dead, and "ME" will not even know that "IT" is living.

If my spirit "IT" is not "ME," then when "ME" dies, my mind will be dead. If "IT" is a part different from my mind, heart, feeling, thoughts, then how can "IT" be condemned for what "ME" thinks, and feels, and does?

If what will be in Heaven is "ME" (my mind, feeling, thoughts, heart, life) with a spiritual body in the image of Christ; where is the "soul" ("IT"), which I now have, but cannot see, or know anything about what "IT" will be? Will "IT" be in Heaven with "ME," and I still will not know anything about "IT" or see "IT"?

If "IT" is not my mind, what does "IT" think? If "IT" is only something living in "ME," which I know nothing about; and "IT" will leave "ME" at my death and go onto another home without "ME"; and I still will not know anything about "IT," or what "IT" is, or what "IT" thinks, or where "IT" is, or what "IT" is doing, or looks like.

After MY death, "IT" will live without a body or substance where "ME" (my mind, feeling, thoughts, heart) cannot live. If I am a "dual being" and "IT" is the second of my two beings, when my first being is dead, "ME" will be dead, and only the second being "IT" will be alive. Only a part of "ME" is immortal and only a part of "ME" will ever be in Heaven or Hell, and that is the part of "ME" that will never know anything about what "IT" is like.

If my spirit ("IT") came into existence when I was born, and "IT" is different from my earthly being, then "ITS" thoughts are not the thoughts of "ME" (not the thoughts of my mind); therefore, how do I know "IT" has ever had any thoughts, or that "IT" knows anything?

If "IT" is immortal, "IT" has no need of the tree of life to live forever; but "ME" is not immortal, and could not live forever without the tree of life. Death is not the enemy of "IT" for "IT" cannot die for the sins of "ME." "IT" cannot pay the wages of the sins for "ME."

WILL YOU HAVE ETERNAL LIFE IN HEAVEN, OR WILL "IT" TO HAVE ETERNAL LIFE IN HEAVEN? The Bible does not teach there is something living in a person, but the whole of a person as he is now, and only the body will be different in Heaven from what we now are. A person is only one being, and will be the same one being in Heaven. We do not have a soul (do not have an "IT"), but we are a living soul, which is the image of Adam, a living being—a living person. Men and animals do not have a soul, but both are a living soul (living creatures). There is a world of

differences in being a living soul, as is taught in the Bible, and having an "immaterial invisible" soul that is in us as is taught today.

After death the Bible never speaks only of the sleep of the body, or only of the sleep of the soul, but of the sleep or death of the person. God's creation of this earth is very good even with the thorns caused by sin; but His creation of Heaven is far better and does not have the thorns. Nevertheless, the soul "IT" is made to be living in us and to be of neither creation, just some thin air something with no substance. When Lazarus was raised, he was the exact identical person he was before his death, with the same body, a "soul" (nehphesh - psukee) living creature in the image of Adam. At the resurrection the saved will be the exact identical person as now, but with a new "*spiritual body*," in the image of Christ, not some thin air no substance "IT" that will be different from the person we now are.

Many use "soul sleeping" just as many have used "Campbellism," and "water salvation." They can see only Plato's immortal part of a person that lives on after the death of the person. It will not be Plato's inter immortal no substance part of a person that will exist after the death of the body. It will be "ME" not just something that is in "ME" that will be raised from the dead, not "IT" that is not dead. It is "ME" that will sleep and "ME" that will wake up at the resurrection. Not "IT" that I will know nothing about.

If "IT" (the soul) is immortal from birth, "IT" can never die for "IT" is immortal. If "IT," whatever it is, is what will be in heaven, there can be no resurrection, for "IT" is not dead to be resurrected. If "IT" can never die, "IT" did not need Christ to die in "its" place to keep "IT" from dying, for "IT" is immortal and cannot die. "IT" has no need of the death of Christ to save "IT" from the death that "IT" cannot die. It is a person "ME" that will put on immortality at the resurrection, and not just something that is in a person "IT," which is both alive and immortal before the resurrection. It will be my life, mind, feeling and emotions, my whole person "ME" that will be immortal in Heaven, not just some unknown something that is in me.

I do not know how God can raise "ME" from the grave and give "ME" a new spiritual body and it still be "ME"; not just some "IT" which was not dead to be raised; but I have complete faith that He can and will. My faith is in Christ and the resurrection He taught. Will faith in the pagan doctrine or in the immortal soul it teaches save you or condemn you?

There is no revelation telling about an "IT" that is in "ME," or anything about an "IT"; therefore, no one could know anything about "IT," not one thing.

In Plato's doctrine of an immortal soul, the person dies, but the soul lives and comes back in another person, it lives without the first person, and it will live after the death of the second person it was in, after the death of the third person that it was in, etc. Yet from this heathen philosophy is where the so-called church fathers got their doctrine of an immortal soul that will live after the death of the person it was in.

Do you believe that it will be **you** that will be saved or lost, or that there is **something** in you that you that is the real you and "it" is what will be saved or lost, something that you cannot see or know what it, something that nobody knows what it really is, something that you cannot now know anything about, and after your death you will not be able to know if it is saved or lost, if it is being rewarded or tormented? **The doctrine of a never dying immortal soul is in direct conflict with hundreds of the plainest statements of the Bible. How can anyone say they believe the Bible when they have replaced it with the teaching of the heathen philosophy of Plato?**

## CHAPTER TWO

### Life or Death

Eternal life or immortality is never said to be something a person is born with, but something that only Christians will inherit in the future.

- **Eternal life will be inherited**, "*And shall inherit eternal life*" (Matthew 19:29).
- **Eternal life is a gift**, "*For the wages of sin is death; but the gift of God is eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord*" (Romans 6:23).
- **Eternal life is now a hope**, "*We might be made heirs according to the hope of eternal life*" (Titus 3:7).
- **Eternal life is promised**, "*And this is the promise which he promised us, even eternal life*" (1 John 2:25).

Many continually preach, *"The wages of sin is death,"* but then by what they preach they contradict them self by preaching that unbelievers will have eternal life in Hell; therefore, *"The wages of sin is an eternal **life** of torment in Hell" not death.*

The changing of life and death.

- *"Life" has been changed to mean only a "reward," and "death" changed from death to life, eternal life being tormented by God. The orthodox view changes death into a different mode of life, a deathless death.*
- *"The wages of sin is death, but the free gift of God is eternal life in Christ Jesus our Lord." Romans 6:23 is changed to mean the wages of sin is not death, but the wages of sin is eternal life with torment.*

Eternal life is a conditional gift to the saved at the resurrection and judgment. ***"He that has the Son has eternal life. He that has not the Son has not life"*** (Immortality) (1 John 5:12.) *"He that hears My word, and believes Him that sent Me, has eternal **life**, and comes not into judgment, but has passed out of **death into life**"* (John 5:24).

*"I have set before you **life and death**"* (Deuteronomy 30:19). Life and death are two of the most misused words in the Bible. Many are unwilling to believe that when God said, *"The wages of sin is death"* that He did really mean what He said, that death is death and not eternal life in some other place. Death is not life, death is not a lifelong imprisonment with torture. **Death is death, not a better life in Heaven, or a worse life in Hell; it is life or death.** Death is the exact opposite of life, and death cannot be changed to be eternal life with torment. For a person to have an immortal soul from birth, death as the wages of sin must be explained away. Innate inborn immortality is hostile to God's word. If a person is born with an immortal *"immaterial, invisible part of men"* (W. E. Vine) that is not subject to death, and this "soul" is the only part of a person that will survive death, the law of God has no power over whether that soul lives or dies, for according to innate inborn immortality a soul cannot die; God can only say how or where this *"immaterial, invisible part of men"* is to live if this *"part of man"* is not subject to death and must always live some place.

***"He that hears my word, and believes him that sent me, has eternal life, and comes not into judgment, but has passed out of death into life...they that have done good, unto the resurrection of life"*** (John 5:24-29). Not a soul *"that hears my word, and believes"* that that has eternal life passing out of one kind of eternal life into another kind of eternal life, but a person (*"he"*) that has passed **out of death into life**. If there were a soul that now has eternal life, it could not be resurrected *"out of death into life."* The life could not be literal (real) life if the death was not literal (real) death.

*"It is appointed unto man once to die, and after this comes judgment"* (Hebrews 9:27). *"For the hour comes, in which all that are in the tombs shall hear his voice, and shall come forth; they that have done good, unto the **resurrection of life**; and they that have done evil, unto the **resurrection of judgment**"* (John 5:28-29). We now bear the image of Adam, and like Adam, we all will die, but both the saved and those not saved will be raised at the second coming of Christ and be judged. The saved will bear the image of Christ and have life forever (1 Corinthians 15:45-49). The church at Smyrna was told, *"Be you faithful unto death, and I will give you the crown of life...He that overcomes shall not be hurt of the **second death**"* (Revelation 2:10-11). Throughout the Gospels, Christ promised life to all who believed Him. Paul says, *"His servants you are whom you obey; whether of **sin unto death, or obedience unto righteousness**"* (Romans 6:16). *"What fruit then had you at that time in the things whereof you are now ashamed: for the **end** of these things is **death**. But, now being made free from sin and become servants to God, you have*

*your fruit unto sanctification, and the end eternal life" (Romans 6:21-22). As clear as human language can be, Paul says, "For the wages of sin is death; but the free gift of God is eternal life in Christ Jesus our Lord" (Romans 6:23).*

In Romans 6:23, the issue is:

**LIFE** - - - - - **OR** -- **DEATH**  
Not life in one place-Heaven - OR -- life in another place-Hell  
Death is the absence of life - NOT - another kind of life,  
which will be either better  
or worse than this life

**All who obeys Christ and "overcomes," will at the judgment be given the crown of life, and shall not be hurt of the second death (Revelation 2:11). The clear implication is that anyone who does not overcome shall be hurt of the second death at the judgment. "He that overcomes shall inherit these things: and I will be his God, and he shall be my son. But for the fearful, and unbelieving, and abominable, and murderers, and fornicators, and sorcerers, and idolaters, and all liars, their part shall be in the lake that burns with fire and brimstone; which is the second death" (Revelation 21:7-8).**

There may be more in the New Testament on life and death than any other subject. If God can destroy a person (the whole person, Matthew 10:28), unconditional immortality cannot be true. If a person can lose his life (Matthew 10:39) unconditional immortality cannot be true. Those who believe there is something that is in a person and this something cannot die knows *"the wages of sin"* (Romans 6:23) must be changed to be something other than death, for if *"death"* means *"death"* the sinner will die, he cannot live forever in Hell. **The Bible teaching on death must be done away with or there can be no Hell.**

**John 3:16:** If all have a "soul" in them that now has eternal life and will always have eternal life and cannot perish, why did God give His Son that the "soul" of all who believe on Him would have eternal life and not perish? How could the gift of God to the deathless soul that is in those that believe be eternal life when it already has eternal life? Eternal life is only for those who believe. Just as sure as those that believe on Christ will have eternal life, those who do not believe on Christ will not have eternal life any place. Will **be received** in the future (John 3:16). The gift of God to those who believe on His Son is eternal life (John 3:16), and this gift is something they did not already have; not something ALL were born with. If all have eternal life from birth, even those who do not believe, how could life be a gift only to believers? When those who believe that all now have a "soul" that is inside of them and this soul now has eternal life read the Bible, and change *"life"* into "a reward" and change death, die, perish, destroyed, and destruction into "punishment." To them, the Bible cannot mean what it says and they must change it.

- Only those that believe will be given eternal life, life that those that are not in Christ will never have.
- Is changed by those who say they do not change God's word to, all are born with something in them that now has eternal life, and only whatever a soul is that is in a person, only it will live forever, either in Heaven or Hell.

Life could not be given to a soul that is already deathless.

*"Should not perish, but have eternal life,"* it is either or, either perish or have eternal life.

1. Those that perish do not have eternal life.
2. Those that have eternal life do not perish.

When a newspaper says, “Twenty persons perished in a plane crash,” twenty persons died, perish means die. Perish is not eternal life with a “lost of well-being,” perish is not eternal life in torment, perish is not any kind of life anyplace.

**1 John 3:11-12:** “*God gave unto us eternal life, and this life is in his Son. He that has the Son has the life; he that has not the Son of God has not the life.*” The immortal soul doctrine, that all are born with a soul that has eternal life, makes John be completely wrong when he said, “*He that has not the Son of God has not the life.*”

**John 11:25:** “*I am the resurrection, and the life: he that believes on me, though he die, yet shall he live; and whosoever lives and believes on me shall never die.*” If no one “*shall never die,*” then why did Jesus promise something that all, even sinners already had? “*And declare unto you the life, the eternal life*” (1 John 1:1). Only those who are raised with Christ through baptism have life. Only those in Christ are the only ones who, “*Though he die, yet shall he live*” (John 11:25). Christianity without a resurrection to life for those in Christ is inconceivable.

### (1) LIFE

**The gift of God is eternal LIFE, but only to those in Christ. God's gift of LIFE is not just a reward to those who are born with eternal life and cannot die.**

1. The Greek concept of an immortal soul assumes that the soul already possess eternal life and is not subject to death.
2. The orthodox view is that a person has an “*immaterial, invisible part of men,*” and only this soul that is in a person possessed eternal life at or before birth, and this immaterial something is the only part of a person that is not subject to death; the orthodox view is that this is the only part of a person that will be in Heaven or Hell immediately after death, before and without the resurrection and judgment. According to the orthodox view, that after the death of the person the soul that was in the person goes to Heaven or Hell, and that soul will always be in Heaven or Hell even if there never will be a second coming of Christ, or resurrection, or judgment.
3. **The Bible says that Christ “abolished death, and brought life and immortality to light through the gospel”** (2 Timothy 1:10). Without the resurrection there would be no life after death. Before the resurrection, no person, or no part of a person now has immortality.

**Psukee (life) is the only word that is translated soul in the New Testament. The adjectives eternal and everlasting are never used with psukee.** Psukee is translated: life 40 times, you 1 time, us 1 time, mind 3 times, heart 1 time, heartily 1 time, soul 57 times in the King James Version. Psukee (life) is the natural life of a person from Adam, and the natural life of any living being (Revelation 8:9; 16:3). It is the life common to all living creatures, man, and all animals; psukee—life is never said to be eternal. All living creatures by natural birth have psukee (life) from birth to death. “*The first man Adam become a living soul (psukee-living being)*” (1 Corinthians 15:45): psukee is the same as nehphesh in the Old Testament. Adam became “*a living soul*”—nehphesh—a living being (Genesis 2:7). It is the life Adam had in common with animals and all living creatures, life that can be destroyed, saved, laid down, end, loss, put in danger, die.

Psukee is used 50 times in the four gospels. In spite of the belief of the King James translators they were compelled to translated it “life” 28 of the 50 times, and “soul” only 21 of the 50, “us” 1 time. Life and soul are not synonymous in English; they do not mean



the same thing, life and soul are not even close to being the same thing. In trying to put Plato's teaching into the mouth of Christ they had to translate the same word into two words that are not even close to meaning the same thing. Unfortunately most English readers never see what they did.

**Zoe (life) is a gift from Christ to those who believe, the eternal life He gives to those who are His, life that those that are not His will never have.** "Zoe" is used about one hundred thirty times, and is translated "life" every time. It refers to the life given by Christ to believes in all but about ten of the about one hundred thirty times it is used, and in those ten it is life or existence in this life time, "*Seeing He Himself gives to all life (zoe), and breath, and all things*" (Acts 17:25); all life to persons or animals is a gift from God.

Zoe (life) is the life Christ gives to believers; a life that is beyond this earthly life that nonbelievers do not now or will ever have. Life (zoe) that Christ gives to believers is existence for believers as opposed to non-existence or death for nonbelievers. **The penalty for sin is death, but Christ made the atonement for our sins by his death; life for believers is only through Christ's atonement, and without his atonement there is only death, not eternal life anyplace with or without torment.** The wages of sin is death, and Christ has not made the atonement for the sins of the wicked that never believe Him, and there is no life for them; without eternal life they cannot be eternally tormented.

- **"Shall inherit eternal (aionios) LIFE (zoe)"** Matthew 19:29.
- **"That whosoever believes may in him have eternal (aionios) LIFE (zoe)"** John 3:15. The only way to have eternal life is through believing in Christ, not by birth, not being born with an immortal soul that already has eternal life even if the person the soul is in never believes in Christ.
- **"Whosoever believes on him should not perish, but have eternal LIFE (zoe)"** John 3:16.
- **"He that believes on the Son has eternal LIFE (zoe); but he that obeys not the Son shall not see LIFE (zoe),"** JOHN 3:36. He or she that obeys not the Son is not now immortal, and will never be immortal in Hell or any place, will never have eternal life any place. If this were not speaking of the person, but is speaking only of an immortal soul (1) that shall see life (2), or shall not see life, then how is it that the immortal soul that we are repeated told is deathless "shall not see life?"
- **"The water I shall give him shall become in him a well or water springing up unto eternal LIFE (zoe)"** John 4:14.
- **"Fruit unto LIFE (zoe) eternal** John 4:36.
- **"Son also gives LIFE (zoe)"** John 5:21.
- **"Out of death into LIFE (zoe)"** John 5:24.
- **"That you may have LIFE (zoe)"** John 5:40.
- **"Unto the resurrection of LIFE (zoe)"** John 5:29.
- **"Food which abides unto eternal LIFE (zoe)"** John 6:27.
- **"Should have eternal LIFE (zoe); and I will raise him up at the last day"** John 6:40.
- **"And I give unto them eternal LIFE (zoe)"** John 10:28. He is not giving them life that they had at birth, but life that they or no part of them had before the new birth. When Jesus said, "He that believes not the Son shall not see life," eternal life in torment shall not be seen.
- **"He should give eternal LIFE (zoe)"** John 17:1-3.
- **"And that believing you may have LIFE (zoe)"** John 20:31. This life is a free gift given to the person that believes; it is not a gift of life to a soul that unconditional immortal tell us already has life and according to them it will always have life.
- **"The free gift of God is eternal LIFE (zoe) in Christ Jesus our Lord"** Romans 6:23.
- **"Believe on Him unto eternal LIFE (zoe)"** 1 Timothy 1:16.
- **"Lay hold on the LIFE (zoe) eternal, whereunto you were called"** 1 Timothy 6:12.

- "May lay hold on the **LIFE** (zoeë) which is **LIFE** (zoeë) indeed" 1 Timothy 6:19.
- "**Abolished death and brought LIFE** (zoeë) **and immortality to light**" 2 Timothy 1:10.
- "**In hope of eternal LIFE** (zoeë)" Titus 1:2.
- "**We might be made heirs according to the hope of eternal LIFE** (zoeë)" Titus 3:12.
- "**Shall receive** the crown of **LIFE** (zoeë)" James 1:12.
- "**Declare unto you the LIFE** (zoeë), **the eternal LIFE** (zoeë), (Christ) which was with the Father" 1 John 1:2.
- "And this is **the promise which he promised us, even the LIFE** (zoeë) **eternal**" (1 John 2:25). At the resurrection the saved shall put on immortality (eternal life). This is so sure that it is spoken of as if we now have it.
- "**And in the world (age) to come eternal LIFE** (zoeë)" Mark 10:30.
- (1) "God gave unto us **eternal LIFE** (zoeë), (2) and this **LIFE** (zoeë) is in his Son. (3) He that has the Son has the **LIFE** (zoeë); (4) **he that has not the Son of God has not the LIFE** (zoeë)" 1 John 5:11-12. No invisible immaterial part of a person that is not in Christ now has eternal life, or the promise of eternal life.
- "And the end, eternal **LIFE** (zoeë)" Romans 6:22.
- "**Looking for** the mercy of our Lord Jesus Christ unto **eternal LIFE** (zoeë)" Jude 21.
- "That of all that which he has given me I should lose nothing, **but should raise it up at the last day**" (John 6:29). "For this is the will of my Father, that every one that beholds the Son, and believes on him, **should have eternal LIFE** (zoeë); **and I will raise him up at the last day**" (John 6:40). "**And I will raise him up at the last day**" (John 6:44) "**And I will raise him up at the last day**" (John 6:54).
- "Who will render to every man according to his works: **to them that by patience in well doing seek for glory and honor and incorruption, eternal LIFE** (zoeë)" Romans 2:7.
- "**I AM THE RESURRECTION AND THE LIFE** (zoeë)" "Jesus said unto her, I am the **resurrection**, and the **LIFE** (zoeë): he that believes on me, though he **die**, yet shall he **live**; and whosoever lives and believes on me shall never die" (John 11:25-26).
- "Our Savior Christ Jesus, who **abolished death**, and **brought LIFE** (zoeë) **and immortality to light through the gospel**" (2 Timothy 1:10). Christ is the Word of life. "Concerning the Word of life (and the life was manifested, and we have seen, and bear witness, and declare unto you the life, the eternal life, which was with the Father)" (1 John 1:2). Only those raised with Christ through baptism have the promise of eternal life and will not be subject to the Second Death.

**The promise of eternal life at the judgment only to those who believe in and obey Christ is positive proof that we do not now have immortality, but this promise of eternal life to the faithful is so certain that it is often spoken of as something they now have;** "And this is the record, that God has given to us eternal life, and this life is in his Son. **He that has the Son has life; and he that has not the Son has not life**" (John 5:11-13); life depends on having a relationship with Christ; "Therefore if you have been raised up with Christ, keep seeking the things above, where Christ is, seated at the right hand of God. Set your mind on the things above, not on the things that are on earth. For you have died and **your life is hidden with Christ in God**. When Christ, who is our life, is revealed, then you also will be revealed with Him in glory" (Colossians 3:1-4). A born again person cannot be given immortality at the judgment if all men are now immortal and cannot die, for all, both the saved and the lost, would have been born with eternal life and born immortal. The theology that says a person is born with an immortal soul in them that is deathless gives life to all and robs Christ of giving the gift of life only to all who believes and gives life to the soul that is in all even the worst sinner at birth. **These passages make no sense if we are born with a soul that has life, and that can never die, and this soul that is not subject to death is the only part of a person that will be**

**in Heaven. This theology makes Christ give life only to something that is in a person that is already immortal and already has eternal life from birth, and it cannot die.** Immortality is conditional on being in Christ; there is no eternal life except to these in Christ. It would be nonsense for Christ to promise life in the age to come to a deathless soul that couldn't not have life. *"God gave unto us eternal life, and this life is in his Son. He that has the Son has the life; he that has not the Son of God has not the life"* (1 John 5:11-12). Yet we are told that *"he that has not the Son"* has a soul that has life, that it is not "us" but "it" that will have eternal life.

- *"Your fathers ate the manna in the wilderness, and they die. This is the bread which came down out of heaven, that a man may eat thereof, and not die. I am the living bread which came down out of heaven; if any man eat of this bread he shall live for ever...He that eats this bread shall live forever"* (John 6:51-57). The comparison is undeniable that a person will die if that person does not eat of this bread, but that person will live if he or she does eat the bread; absolutely nothing is said about a deathless soul that cannot die, not that a soul will live or that a soul will die if it eats or does not eat of this bread.
- *"I am the resurrection and the life; he who believes in Me shall live even if he dies, and everyone who lives and believes in Me shall never die"* (John 11:25-26).

Because those that believe still die, many apply this promise of life only to a soul, not to the person.

1. If this promise of life was to the soul, not the person, then the soul of the person that does not believe will die; therefore, it would make the souls of all that do not believe be mortal and will die.
2. If, as we are told, all souls have always been immortal and can never die, then this promise of life does not give anything to a soul that it did not already have. It would be a useless, empty, meaningless promise to a soul that already had life, and that soul could never die, that soul could never be without life even if the person did not eat the bread Christ gives.
3. It is mortal man that is *"faithful unto death"* that is promised life, not an immortal something that has always and always will have life even if it were not *"faithful unto death"*. To change the person (*"he"* and *"everyone"*) that is given life for believing to an *"it"* that has life even if *"it"* never believe is not *"speaking where the Bible speaks and keeping silent where the Bible is silent."*
4. The *"he"* is the person that believes *"shall live forever."* There is all kinds of attempts made to change this to being all soul will live forever, either live a better life or live a worse life; the person living forever just will not work with unconditional immortality, therefore; it is a must with them to change this from a person being given life to a soul that has life even if the person does not eat of *"this bread,"* after all, according to them it is only a soul that is in a person that will live forever, not the person.
  - *"For if... we shall be also in the likeness of His resurrection"* Romans 6:5.
  - *"And this mortal must put on immortality"* 1 Corinthians 15:53.
  - *"Made alive"* Ephesians 2:1-5.
  - *"Who according to his great mercy begat us again unto a living hope by the resurrection of Jesus Christ from the dead, unto an inheritance incorruptible, and undefiled, and that fades not away, reserved in Heaven for you, who by the power of God are guarded through faith unto a salvation ready to be revealed in the last time...receiving the end of your faith, the salvation of your souls" (psukee-lives) "the salvation of your lives."* Our lives are saved from death by the blood of Christ who give His life to save our life, not just something that is in a person. *"Set your hope perfectly on the grace that is to be brought unto you at the revelation of Jesus Christ"* (1 Peter 1:3-13).
  - *"But if by the Spirit, you put to death the deeds of the body you shall live"* Romans 8:13.
  - *"That we may be also glorified with Him"* Romans 8:17.
  - *"With the glory which shall be revealed to us-ward"* Romans 8:18. When? Not now, but at the resurrection.

- **"Waiting for our adoption"** Romans 8:23. (Not an immaterial part, or "our" waiting for "its" adoption).
- **"Foreordained to be conformed to the image of His Son"** Romans 8:29.
- For this hope we must **"with patience wait for it"** Romans 8:25.
- **Four times in John 6:39-54 Christ says He will rise up those that are his "at the last day"** (John 6:39, 40, 44, and 54).

Eternal life is the gift of Christ to those who obey Him, not something all mankind possess without obeying Christ. **Innate immortality denies that Christ will give eternal life to those that believe by teaching that all already have eternal life.** It is not a better life in Heaven, or a worse life in Hell; it is life of death. We can choose between life and death, not a better life, or a worse life of torment.

#### ETERNAL LIFE

##### WHEN DO WE RECEIVE ETERNAL LIFE?

Paul writing to Titus said, **"In hope of eternal life,** which God who cannot lie, promised" (Titus 1:2). Eternal life will be given at the Day of Judgment to those who *"seek for glory and honor and incorruption...in the day when God shall judge the secrets of man"* (Romans 2:5-16); could it be said in a more positively way that immortality is something Christians *"seek for,"* and not something that they now have? **"Should have eternal LIFE (zoe); and I will raise him up at the last day"** (John 6:40). Those who are believers will "sleep" just as all will but will be raised up to eternal life. This life is so certain that it is often spoken of as if believers now have it.

- Will **be received** in the future (John 3:16), *"but have"* is future tense.
- Will **be inherited** (Matthew 19:29), not something that the "soul" of all now has. *"Unto an inheritance incorruptible, and undefiled, and that fades not away, reserved in heaven for you, who by the power of God are guarded through faith unto a salvation ready to be revealed in the last time"* (1 Peter 1:5).
- **Is the gift of God** (Romans 6:23) only to those who obey God, not something all have from birth?
- We now have the **hope of eternal life** (Titus 3:7) in the future; something only believers shall receive, but sinners never will have eternal life.
- Eternal life **is promised** (1 John 1:25). If all have it from birth, then life could not be the gift of God promised only to believers.
- Christians are **"waiting for our adoption...if we hope for that which we see not, then do we with patience wait for it"** (Romans 8:23-25). Are we waiting and hoping for something we already have?
- *"Since, then, you have been raised with Christ, set your hearts on things above, where Christ is seated at the right hand of God. Set your minds on things above, not on earthly things. For you died, and your life is now hidden with Christ in God. When Christ, who is our life, appears, then you also will appear with Him in glory"* (Colossians 3:1-4).
- **"Be faithful unto death, and I will give you the crown of life"** (Revelation 2:10). Crown of life is not given before the second coming of Christ (2 Timothy 4:8).

**"YOU HAVE NOT LIFE IN YOURSELVES"** (John 6:53)

We will live only by being in Christ. No one has eternal life or has a deathless being in them that now has and will always have life.

Summary: If everyone now have a soul that is immortal and deathless, that soul could not be given life for believing, it could not be given life or immortality at the resurrection, it would make much of the New Testament be complete nonsense. If there were a soul that is now immortal and deathless, that soul would not be subject to death, it could not die, it could not pay the wages of sin which is death, it could not be resurrected for it would not be dead. All deathless souls, even the lost, would now have eternal life, all would now be immortal and have no need for Christ to have died in their place to give them eternal life. The immortal soul doctrine that all have a soul that is immortal, that all now have eternal life is a gospel that is totally different than the gospel of the New Testament (Galatians 1:6-9), which teaches that only those that believe and obey Christ will be given eternal life and immortal, and that no one now has, or will have eternal life without the resurrection.

#### BREAD FROM HEAVEN—THE RESURRECTION—ETERNAL LIFE

*“Truly, truly, I say to you, you seek Me, not because you saw signs, but because you ate of the loaves and were filled. 27 Do not work for the food which perishes, but for the food which endures to eternal life, which the Son of Man will give to you, for on Him the Father, God, has set His seal.” 28 Therefore they said to Him, “What shall we do, so that we may work the works of God?” 29 Jesus answered and said to them, “This is the work of God, that you believe in Him whom He has sent.” 30 So they said to Him, “What then do You do for a sign, so that we may see, and believe You? What work do You perform? 31 Our fathers ate the manna in the wilderness; as it is written, ‘HE GAVE THEM BREAD OUT OF HEAVEN TO EAT.’ 32 Jesus then said to them, “Truly, truly, I say to you, it is not Moses who has given you the bread out of heaven, but it is My Father who gives you the true bread out of heaven. 33 For the bread of God is that which comes down out of heaven, and gives life to the world.” 34 Then they said to Him, “Lord, always give us this bread.” 35 Jesus said to them, “I am the bread of life; he who comes to Me will not hunger, and he who believes in Me will never thirst. 36 But I said to you that you have seen Me, and yet do not believe. 37 All that the Father gives Me will come to Me, and the one who comes to Me I will certainly not cast out. 38 For I have come down from heaven, not to do My own will, but the will of Him who sent Me. 39 This is the will of Him who sent Me, that of all that He has given Me I lose nothing, **but raise it up on the last day.** 40 For this is the will of My Father, that everyone who beholds the Son and believes in Him **will have eternal life, and I Myself will raise him up on the last day.**” 41 Therefore the Jews were grumbling about Him, because He said, “I am the bread that came down out of heaven.” 42 They were saying, “Is not this Jesus, the son of Joseph, whose father and mother we know? How does He now say, ‘I have come down out of heaven?’” 43 Jesus answered and said to them “Do not grumble among yourselves. 44 No one can come to Me unless the Father who sent Me draws him; **and I will raise him up on the last day.** 45 It is written in the prophets, **AND THEY SHALL ALL BE TAUGHT OF GOD.**’ Everyone who has heard and learned from the Father, comes to Me. 46 Not that anyone has seen the Father, except the One who is from God; He has seen the Father. 47 Truly, truly, I say to you, **he who believes has eternal life.** 48 I am the bread of life. 49 Your fathers ate the manna in the wilderness, **and they died.** 50 This is the bread, which comes down out of heaven, **so that one may eat of it and not die.** 51 I am the living bread that came down out of heaven; if anyone eats of this bread, **he will live forever;** and the bread also which I will give for the life of the world is My*

flesh.” 52 Then the Jews began to argue with one another, saying, “How can this man give us His flesh to eat?” 53 So Jesus said to them, “Truly, truly, I say to you, unless you eat the flesh of the Son of Man and drink His blood, **you have no life in yourselves.** 54 **He who eats My flesh and drinks My blood has eternal life, and I will raise him up on the last day.** 55 For My flesh is true food, and My blood is true drink. 56 He who eats My flesh and drinks My blood abides in Me, and I in him. 57 As the living Father sent Me, and I live because of the Father, so he who eats Me, **he also will live because of Me.** 58 This is the bread which came down out of heaven; not as the fathers ate and **died**; he who eats this bread **will live forever**” (John 6:26-58). The fathers were given bread in the wilderness, but that bread was only to sustain earthly life for a little time, while the bread Christ gives eternal life; although those who eat of it will die, they will be resurrected to life that never ends; life which will be given only after the resurrection, not at death.

- Those that eat the bread in the wilderness **died**.
- Those that eat the bread that Christ gives will **never die**.
  - This is speaking of the persons that died in the wilderness, and the persons that will not die if they eat the bread Christ gives. If it were speaking of an immortal something that cannot die that was in a person, then Christ would be giving no life that they did not already have.

Those who do not eat of the bread Christ gives will die; to teach that all will live some place is to teach that all that does not eat of the bread Christ gives will have life that is just as eternal as those that do eat, even if they do not eat of this bread they can never die, only the place where they will live their eternal life they already had will be different.

#### IN REVELATION ONLY BELIEVERS WILL BE GIVEN LIFE

The tree of life (Revelation 2:7; 22:2; 22:14)

The crown of life (Revelation 2:10)

Name written in the book of life (Revelation 20:12; 20:15; 21:27; 22:19)

A river of water of life (Revelation 22:1-2)

Those who are not in the book of life are cast into the lake of fire (Revelation 20:15), which is the second death (Revelation 21:8).

God “*will take away his name from the tree of life*” (Revelation 22:19).

- In the Book of Revelation it is life for those in Christ, death for those not in Christ.

### (2) DEATH

**Are The Dead Really Dead?**

**Or Is Dead Not Really Dead?**

**Are The Dead Alive or Dead?**

**Is Death The Absence Of Life, Or Are The Dead Alive?**

**Salvation is from death, not from torment for those who cannot die.** Eternal life with torment in Hell would mean there is no death. Death is the absence of life; death is not an eternal deathless life of being endless burned in fire by God. **Death is death, not life.**

- **The penalty of sin is death** (Romans 6:23), not eternal life in Hell. This passage is preached continually, but very few that preach it believe it. They preach, “*The wages of sin is death,*” and in the same breath preach a person has a deathless something in them that cannot die, and the wages of sin for that deathless something in a person is not death; according to them “*the wages of sin*” is life,

an eternal life of torment in Hell for the soul.

- If *“the wages of sin is death,”* then after the penalty, the second death, there will be no life; death is total nothingness, no awareness of anything, no love, no hope, no relationships, no joy, no torment, no thoughts, no nothing.
- *“Whether of sin unto death, or of obedience unto righteousness”* Romans 6:16.
- *“For the end of these things is death”* Romans 6:21.
- *“For godly sorrow works repentance unto salvation, a repentance which brings no regret: but the sorrow of the world works death”* 2 Corinthians 7:10.
- *“Sin, when it is full grown, brings forth death”* James 1:15.
- *“And you shall call His name Jesus; for He shall save his people from their sins”* Matthew 1:2.
- *“Christ Jesus made me free from the law of sin and death”* Romans 8:2.
- *“That He might redeem us from all iniquity”* Titus 2:14.
- *“Who delivered us out of so great a death”* 2 Corinthians 1:10.
- *“Will save him from death”* New International Version, James 5:20.
- *“For to be carnal minded is death; but to be spiritually minded is life and peace”* Romans 8:6.

It is difficult not to understand this passage, but it is difficult to explain away *“the wages of sin is death,”* and to change *“death”* to *“life.”* All attempts to explain death out of the Bible fall far short. Death is death, not an eternal dying, but never dead; death is not eternal life with torment for the soul that we are told is in a person.

Death and life in torment are not synonymous terms; a dead person cannot be tormented. Salvation is from death, there is no passage that says anything about being saved from an eternal life of torment. All have sinned; the wages of sin is death. Death is God's penalty for sin; how could God have said this anymore clear and simple? The gift of God canceled the wages of sin and gives life. The free gift of God is not changing one kind of life for another kind of life, or life in one place for life in another place. **It is giving life in place of death.** This is made possible not by Christ living our life of eternal torment for us, but by Christ dying our death for us. **The free gift of God is life, not just a change of address from Hell to Heaven for a soul that already has eternal life and cannot die.**

Death is changed into two doors that open instantly into two parallel eternal lives.

1. Door one: opens into instant eternal life in Heaven.
  2. Door two: opens into instant eternal life in Hell. Death is changed from death to life, to an unending life of endless torment.
- Both doors change death into life without a resurrection of the dead, and without a Judgment Day.

*“Shall save a soul (psukee-life or person) from death”* *“Will save him from death”* New International Version James 5:20. The person saved is saved from death, not saved from an eternal life of torment.

*“Receiving the end of your faith, even the salvation of your souls (life-psukee)”* 1 Peter 1:9.

*“Sin unto death”* Romans 6:16: Not sin unto an eternal life of torment.

*“What fruit then had you at that time in the things whereof you are now ashamed? For the end of those things is death. But now being made free from sin and become servants to God, you have your fruit unto sanctification, and the end eternal life (at judgment).”*

*For the **Wages of sin is death**; but the free **gift of God is eternal life**"* Romans 6:21-23, **death** is not a gateway to a better **life**. Death is an "enemy," and our only hope for life is the resurrection, not death being life. "*For you shall be recompensed in the resurrection*" (Luke 14:14), not recompensed instantly after death.

*"Be you faithful unto death (end of this life) and I will give you **the crown of life** (at the judgment)...shall not be hurt of **the second death**" ("I will give **you**" not to an immaterial "part of you")* Revelation 2:10. And with the world **they shall "passes away"** 1 John 2:17.

*"For if you live after the flesh, **you must die**"* Romans 8:13 ("**You**" not just something that is in "**you**" must die).

*"**We have passed out of death into life**" (not just a part of us, not something that is in "**we**" that cannot die; therefore, cannot pass "**out of death into life**")* 1 John 3:14.

Death is so sure to those not in Christ that they "**abides in death**" 1 John 3:14.

*"If we have only hoped in Christ in this **life**, we are of all men most pitiable. But now has Christ been **raised from the dead**, the first fruits of them that are **asleep**. For since by man came death, by man came also the resurrection of the **dead**. For as in Adam all **DIE**, so also in Christ shall all be made **alive**"* (1 Corinthians 15:21-23). In the plainest language possible, Jesus said, "*If you believe not, **YOU shall die in your sins**"* (John 8:21-24). Many read this passage and see, "If you believe not, your soul that cannot die is now dead."

*"The wages of sin is death, but the gift of God is eternal life"* (Romans 6:23). There are two reasons why the sinner will die in this passage. (1) They will receive the wages they earned for sin, which is death. (2) Eternal life, immortality, is given only to those who are in Christ. There is not one text that says the lost will ever be given the gift of immortality.

"But now having been made free from the slavery of sin, and having become a servant of God, your present reward is the blessedness and joy of a clean life, and your future reward is life eternal. And this is obvious, for, following my figure of slave, masters and wages to the end, the wages which men earn and receive from your former master, sin, is death; but the wages which you cannot earn, or deserve, but which God freely gives you for serving him, is eternal life in Christ Jesus our Lord." J. W. McGarvey, Commentary on Romans 6:23, 1916, Standard Publishing Company.

Those who believe in eternal torment are saying:

- To the unsaved that they already have eternal life, but they will spend it in the wrong place.
- They are saying to the lost that they can never die, but that they will live an unhappy everlasting life.
- They are saying the lost will be in Hell, and they will be just as alive as those in Heaven, and in no sense can the lost to be said to be dead; in no plain common sense language can the wages of sin be said to be death to an immortal being that cannot die for if it could die or if it were dead it would not be an immortal being.
- They are saying that death cannot be death, but death is only a transfer of life from this realm to life in another realm. For a person to now have an immortal soul that can never die, death, particularly the second death must be changed to a second life. Those who believe men are now immortal must take death out of the Bible. **Death is not life**. In all the repeatedly times Christ promised eternal life to believers, He must be made not to mean what He promised; not eternal life, but to



be promising only a reward or happiness. "Eternal life" and "death" cannot be twisted to mean the same thing, but the immortal soul doctrine says both are the same, that the "wages of sin" is eternal life in Hell. 1 John 3:5 says, "No murderer has eternal life abiding in him," but the immortal soul doctrine says, "O yes, he has an immortal soul that has life abiding in it and life will abide in it forever in Hell." This doctrine that gives eternal life to all sinners is a complete contradiction of the Bible doctrine that says Christ gives eternal life only to those that believe.

**"WAGES OF SIN IS DEATH," not an eternal life of torment for a "soul" that cannot ever be dead** (Romans 6:23). Death is not life in a different form; death ends life, and without the resurrection death means the utter destruction of life to both believers and unbelievers. Death is to be abolished at "the end" (1 Corinthians 15:24-26) by casting it into lake of fire. Jesus endured the wages of sin in our place so that we would not have to. **Christ could not be our savior, if the wages of sin is eternal torment.** Jesus died in our place (Romans 3:24-25; 1 Corinthians 15:1-4; Ephesians 1:7; Colossians 1:21-22; Hebrews 9:12-15; 1 Peter 1:18-19), but He did not endure eternal torment in our place; therefore, if the wages of sin were an eternal life of torment He could not be our savior; He would not have paid our debt. He did "taste of death for every man" (Hebrews 2:9); He paid our debt in full with His death. When today's theology says that death is only life in a different place, and death is not really death, then it makes our salvation impossible by making the death of Christ not to have happen, it makes Christ not have died for our sins.

The doctrine of an immortal soul takes the gospel out of the gospel (1 Corinthians 15:3-5).

1. It destroys the Bible doctrine of the wages of sin being death.
2. It destroys the Bible doctrine of a Judgment Day to come by making all be judged at death.
3. It destroys the Bible doctrine of a resurrection by making no soul be dead to be resurrected from the dead.
4. It changes the gift of God from being life to all the faithful to the gift of God is escape from eternal torment in Hell for those who were born with eternal life.

Robert Turner: "Sin separates us from God, and 'the soul that sinneth, it shall die.'" Florida College Annual Lectures, 1986, page 172. Which one is he saying? (1) The soul that sins lives forever separated from God, or (2) "The soul that sins shall die." The two are a total contradiction of each other and both cannot be true, but many are so blinded by their theology that they are unable to see the contradiction.

- "For the end of these things is death...for the wages of sin is death" King James Version.
- "For the outcome of these things is death...for the wages of sin is death" New American Standard.
- "These things result in death...for the wages of sin is death" New International Version.
- "These things only bring death...when people sin, they earn what sin pays--death" New Century Version.
- "And they lead to death...sin pays off with death" Contemporary English Version.
- "Things that end in eternal doom...for the wages of sin is death" New Living Translation.
- "The result of those things is death...for sin pays it wage--death" Today's English Version.

There is not the slightest sign of an immortal soul that is not subject to death in this passage.

Romans 8:5-13, "For those who are according to the flesh set their minds on the things of the flesh, but those who are according to the Spirit, the things of the Spirit. For the mind set on the flesh **is death**, but the mind set on the Spirit **is life and peace**...for if you are living according to the flesh, **you must die**; but if by the Spirit you are putting to

*death the deeds of the body, you will live.*" Again, it is life or death, live, or die, not two kinds of life.

James 1:15: **The three steps to death.** (1) **Lust** (when it has conceived) (2) gives birth to **sin** (3) Sin (when it is accomplished) brings **death**. In today's preaching the three steps are changed to **(1) Lust (2) Sin (3) Eternal life in Hell.**

- "Then when **lust** hath conceived, it bringeth forth **sin**; and sin, when it is finished, bringeth forth **death**" (King James Version).
- "Then, when **desire** has conceived, it gives birth to **sin**: and sin, when it is full-grown, brings forth **death**" (New King James Version).
- "Then the **lust**, when it hath conceived, beareth **sin**: and the sin, when it is full grown, bringeth forth **death**" (American Standard Version).
- "Then when **lust** has conceived, it gives birth to **sin** and when sin is accomplished, it brings forth **death**" (New American Standard Version).
- "Then, when that **desire** has conceived, it gives birth to **sin**, and that sin, when it is fully grown, gives birth to **death**" (New Revised Standard Version).
- "Then, after **desire** has conceived, it gives birth to **sin**; and sin, when it is full-grown, gives birth to **death**" (New International Version).

2 Corinthians 7:10: **Godly Sorrow brings salvation, but worldly sorrow brings death.** "*Godly sorrow brings repentance that leads to salvation and leaves no regret, but worldly sorrow brings death.*" Many read this and change death to life in Hell even when there is nothing said about Hell or eternal life with torment in it; why do they not believe God? Death is death; death is not eternal life any place.

It is **life or death**, not reward or torment, never an everlasting life of torment with God doing the tormenting. There is so much teaching in the New Testament on life and death that it is as if God foreknew men would change the death that is the wages of sin into an everlasting life of torment, and He gives them no way to say at the judgment, "I did not know." Why do men not believe God? **Death is in contrast to life. It is the opposite of life, and not just another kind of life. Death is not life in Heaven, Hell, Purgatory, or hades. Death is not life of any kind anywhere; death is death, not everlasting life with torment, not a mere change in the mode of existence; death is not life in another condition, not life separated from God.** After death the unsaved cannot be both eternally dead and eternally alive and conscious; they cannot be both dead and alive at the same time. Why would God say one thing to us, and mean the opposite of what He said? Why would God say the wages of sin **is death** if the wages of sin **is life**? Today's theology has changed God's **death into life** because Plato said man has a soul that cannot be dead, a soul that will live after the person it is in is dead.

*"For if you live according to the flesh, YOU will die: but if by the Spirit YOU put to death the deeds of the body, YOU will live"* (Romans 8:13). "**YOU**" will live or die, not just an "*immaterial, invisible part of man*" (W. E. Vine). **The same thing that "will die" is the same thing that "will live," but we are told that the soul cannot die; therefore, the "YOU" that can live or die could not be the soul that cannot die,** nevertheless this passage that says, "*YOU will die*" is often used to prove we have a soul that cannot die.

- Narrow way = **life** - Broad way = **destruction** (Matthew 7:13-14)
- **Life**, or **death** (Romans 6:23; 4:17; 1 Corinthians 3:22)
- **Life**, or **perish** (John 3:16)
- **Life**, or **die** (Romans 8:13)
- **Life** and **peace**, or **death** (Romans 8:6)
- **Salvation**, or **death** (2 Corinthians 7:10)

- **Saved**, or **destroy** (James 4:12)
- **Life**, or **destruction** (Matthew 7:13-14)
- Into **life**, out of **death** (1 John 3:14)
- Under the Old Testament Law (earthly life or death)
  - **Life** and **death** (Deuteronomy 30:15-20)
  - **Death** and **live** (Ezekiel 18:23)
  - **Death** and **live** (Ezekiel 18:32)

The Bible says what it means, and means what it says. God inspired John to say, "Should not perish," but many say God did not mean, "perish," but "shall have an eternal life of torment." Death has been made not to exist, no one ever dies, they just pass from one kind of life to another kind of life; death is made to be a transfer of life to life in another realm.

Is the world on Satan's side?

- God said, "*You shall surely die*" (Genesis 2:17).
- Satan said, "*You shall surely not die*" (Genesis 3:4).
- Most Protestant theologians say, "*You shall surely not die.*"

In Romans 1:28-23, Paul gives a list of sins, and then he said, "*They that practice such things are worthy of death.*" Not worthy of an eternal life of torment in Hell, but of death, but many today say, "They that practice such things **are worthy of eternal life in Hell.**" Will you believe them or Paul? You cannot believe both. "*What fruit then had you at that time in the things whereof you are now ashamed? For the end of these things is death...You have your fruit unto sanctification, and the end eternal life, for the wages of sin is death; but the free gift of God is eternal life in Christ Jesus our Lord*" (Romans 6:21-23). The gift of God to those who believe on His Son is eternal life (John 3:16), and this gift is something they do not already have; not something ALL were born with. If all have eternal life from birth, even those who do not believe, how could life be a gift to believers? When those who believe that all now have eternal life (an immortal soul) read the Bible, and change "life" into "a reward" and change death, die, perish, destroyed, and destruction into "punishment." To them, the Bible cannot mean what it says and they must change it.

### FROM WHAT ARE WE SAVED

We are saved from death by the death of Christ and given life, not saved from Hell. Christ died our death; He did not suffer an eternal life in Hell.

### ADDITIONS TO THE BIBLE

"Eternal Hell," "immortal soul," "save your immortal soul," and "eternal suffering in Hell fire," are not in the Bible, but are used often by preachers and Bible teacher, and are falsely presented as being the teaching of the Bible.

The first death is the end of life of the flesh (life as it exist now). The second death then must also be the end of life (life as it will exist then), or it is not a second death, but something altogether different from death—a second life. An everlasting life of torment is not a second death. The traditional concept is that a person has an immortal soul, which neither the first or second death can kill; therefore, death must be changed to be something other than death for that soul; death is changed to be a translation to eternal life in Heaven or Hell, the second death is changed to be only a translations from one life form to another life form, a translation from this life to eternal life in Heaven to immortal souls that are already in Heaven and already had eternal life, or a translation to eternal life in Hell to the souls that are already in Hell, for we are told that that they were already

translated to eternal life in Hell by the first death. On about every page throughout the New Testament it is life or death, not just reward or punishment. **The unsaved die, perish, are destroyed, and are lost. The obedient are saved from death and are given life and immortality at the judgment.** If there were a soul that now has eternal life, if that soul is now immortal and cannot die, then much of the language of the Bible has no meaning and is saying nothing. **Why is there so much in the Bible on death if there is no death?** Many have believed what their preacher or church says, and they have rejected the Bible as being untrue. Eternal life is frequently promised to the righteous, but never to the wicked. If the wicked do not have eternal life they cannot endure eternal torment. Our **body** will be:

- "Fashion a new" American Standard Version
- "Change" King James Version
- "Transform" New American Standard Version
  - If it were going to be only the soul, not our bodies that will be in Heaven why would our bodies be, "Fashion a new"?

Philippians 3:20-21: *"But when this corruptible shall have put on incorruption, and this mortal shall have put on immortality, then shall come to pass the saying that is written, Death is swallowed up in victory...but thanks be to God, who gives us the victory through our Lord Jesus Christ."* If the lost will live forever in Hell, do they also have the victory over death; will not their life (not their death) be just as eternal as the saved?

Summery: If it were true that there is no real death, that death is only a separation from God, then there could not be a resurrection of the dead for no one could be really dead. The pagan doctrine of the immortality of the soul makes the Bible doctrine of the resurrection of the dead both impossible and useless. Any life after death depends wholly on the resurrection of the dead at the coming of Christ, not on a deathless soul (Luke 14:13-14; 1 Thessalonians 4:16; 1 Corinthians 15:51-55).

#### **THE BIBLE HAS BEEN CHANGED TO TEACH THAT DEATH IS ETERNAL LIFE**

*"We have passed out of death into life"* (1 John 4:14). It is us (the whole person) that were dead in our relation to God, not a dead soul that *"passed out of death into life"* and is now alive. **If we did have a soul that was dead, but that soul is now alive, it would be a contradiction of the doctrine that the soul can never die, for an immortal soul that cannot be dead would have been dead, and the dead soul would have "passed out of death into life;"** the soul, which we are told can never be dead would have been dead at one time, but now the soul that was a dead soul is now alive. It was the person that was dead before they were in Christ, but is now alive in Christ, it is the person that has passed out of death into life, not an undying immaterial part of the person that could never be dead.

Believers in immortality from birth must change the Bible to say:

1. Those who are destroyed **are not destroyed** (James 4:12; 2 Peter 2:12; 2 Peter 3:7). There is no similarity between destruction and endless torment.
2. Those who perish **do not perish** (1 Corinthians 1:8; John 3:16).
3. Those who die **do not die** (Romans 6:23) (Death is not death).
4. The end of the wicked **is not their end** (Philippians 3:19; Hebrews 6:8).
5. Those who are consumed **are not consumed** (Hebrews 10:27).

6. **Mortals are born immortal** (1 Timothy 6:16); therefore, how can there be any such thing as being mortal? There are no mortals and could never be a mortal if all men are created immortal.
7. It is believed by many that the second death **is not a death; it is eternal life with torment** (Revelation 21:8).

Are they really teaching the Bible when they corrupt it into saying the opposite of what it really says, or teaching what they want the Bible to say?

### **IS "THE WAGES OF SIN IS DEATH"**

**Or**

### **IS THE WAGES OF SIN AN ETERNAL LIFE OF TORMENT?**

It cannot be both. If all are immortal from birth, then death could not exist; no one will ever die; no one will ever be dead; therefore, the wages of sin could not be death.

**Death, the enemy defeated for believers:** *"Jesus said unto her, your brother shall rise again. Martha said unto him, I know that **he** shall rise again in the resurrection at the last day. Jesus said unto her, I am the resurrection, and the life: **he** that believes on me, though **he** die, yet shall **he** live; and **whosoever** lives and believes on me shall never die"* (John 11:23-26); the same **he** that shall die is the **he** that shall live, the same person that believes is the same person that shall live, not the same soul that cannot die that shall live. *"If a man keep my word, **he** shall never see death"* (John 8:55). *"I am the living bread which came down out of heaven: if any **man** eat of this bread, **he** shall live forever"* (John 6:51). It is evident that Jesus was not speaking of physical death, for like Lazarus believers shall die, but unlike nonbelievers they have a new existence, a new life in Christ that is no longer subject to the enemy, death. After the resurrection they will have a victory over death, and the saved will be able say, *"Death is swallowed up in victory, O death, where is your sting? The sting of death is sin: and the power of sin is the law: but thanks be to God, who gives us the victory through our Lord Jesus Christ"* (1 Corinthians 15:55-56). We are told twice that the second death has no power over believers (Revelation 2:11; 20:6). They are not subject to it and shall live forever. *"Our Savior Christ Jesus, who abolished death, and brought life and immortality to light through the gospel"* (2 Timothy 1:10); for all faithful believes Christ defeated the enemy by His resurrection.

A. CAMPBELL: "The words of the Bible contain all the ideas in it. These words, then, rightly understood, and the ideas are clearly perceived. The words and sentences of the Bible are to be translated, interpreted, and understood according to the same code of laws and principles of interpretation by which other ancient writings are translated and understood; for, when God spoke to man in his own language, He spoke as one person converses with another-**in the fair, stipulated, and well-established meaning of the terms.** This is essential to its character, as a revelation from God; otherwise, it would be no revelation, but would always require a class of inspired men to unfold and reveal its true sense to mankind" Alexander Campbell, "The Christian System," page 3, Gospel Advocate Company, 1835. "It is absolutely essential to the very idea of a Divine communication in the form of a revelation, that its words and sentences be understood according to their usual sense at the time when that communication was made, and amongst the people to whom it was addressed and to whose care it was committed," An essay on "Life And Death" from the Millennial Harbinger, 1844, church of Christ

ASHLEY JOHNSON, Founder and president of the Johnson Bible College: "Perish! ' Perished'!! 'Perisheth' and 'Perishing'!!! What do these words mean? They occur in the sacred scriptures about one hundred and forty times. Again, I ask what do they mean? I answer in every reference the word carries the thought of destruction, in numerous cases, utter annihilation, utter

destruction. Let us suppose that all we can know of the destiny of the ungodly we must get from the passages in which these words are found. What would we conclude? Eternal conscious punishment for all the wicked, without regard to how wicked? **Not if there is any meaning in the language?** The word is used in the scriptures in the exact sense in which the word as it stands in English is used, or its corresponding word in every language and dialect. We say: 'His hand has perished.' We say: 'For want of rain our crops have perished.' We say: 'Babylon has perished.' We say: 'The seed we sowed perished because it was without life.' What do we mean? We can only mean one thing. Absolute destruction! So far as we know God has but one way of communicating with man; namely, language. This language is clear, pointed, unmistakable. Christianity has life, or immortality, and he offers it to men here, and those who reject the light and the life must perish. Here is the definition by one of the greatest lexicographers in history: 'To go or run through, come to nothing, perish.'" "The Resurrection And The Future Life," page 420-421, 1913, Knoxville Lithographing Company, church of Christ.

E. D. SLOUGH: "When the Lord talked with men, and used human language, if he placed other meanings on the words than those understood by men, **how could God teach us?** Or if he used them in a figurative sense, in their last and most important application, why were we not apprised of the change...**if the Bible doesn't mean what it says, then nobody knows what it does mean.**" page 195-206, "If the people would allow the words in the Bible to teach them the same thought they get from the Dictionary, and from common use—**allow God to mean the same thing when talking to us that we mean when talking to one another**—these disputes would quickly adjust themselves. The condition of unrest everywhere on these issues of the Bible is ample argument that something is needed as a standard which makes words mean the same whether in or out of the Bible." page 42, "The Indictment Of Eternal Torment—The Self-negation Of A Monstrous Doctrine," F. L. Rowe, Publisher, 1914, evangelist, church of Christ. On line at: [www.robertwr.com/EternalTorment.htm](http://www.robertwr.com/EternalTorment.htm)

Those who believe men are now immortal have to make the words that God used not mean what they say. Is it not unreasonable to make words in the Bible has a meaning attached to them that is unlike the way they are used in any other book in the world, unlike the way they were used in the language of the people God was speaking to?

### **CHANGES THAT MUST BE MADE**

**(1) LIFE** must be changed to be not life, but to be only a reward to those who are born with something in them that already has eternal life. Is it not unreasonable to say the many times Christ promised eternal life to those that believe Him, that He only promised them only a reward, not eternal life? And just as unreasonable to say that He promised life to only to something in a person that was born with eternal life and cannot die, and only this immaterial something that some believe to be in a person will be the only thing in Heaven. This doctrine of an immortal soul that cannot die makes Christ promise us something over and over that we already had. Throughout the Book of John Christ repeatedly promised life to those who believed, and those who did not believe would not see life (John 3:36; 4:14; 4:36; 5:21; 5:40; 6:33, 39, 44, 47, 57, 63, 68). *"That to all whom you have given him, he should give eternal life. And this is life eternal, that they should know you the only true God, and him whom you did send, even Jesus Christ"* (John 17:2-3). There could not be a stronger statement saying only those who believe in Jesus will have life, and those who do not believe will not be given any life anywhere.

Alexander Campbell in the preface to "The Living Oracles," his translation of the New Testament said, "The reader will please to consider, that, when God spoke to man, he adopted the language of man. To the fathers of the Jewish nation he spoke in their mother tongue. By his Son, and his Son by the Apostles, spoke to every nation in its own language. When he spoke to any nation, he uniformly adopted the words of that nation in expressing his will to it. And that he used their words

in the commonly received sense, needs no other proof than this, that if he had not done so, instead of enlightening them in the knowledge of his will, he would have deceived and confounded them: than which, no hypothesis is more impious. For example: were God to speak to us in *English*, and select from our vocabulary the words *death*, *punishment*, *perpetual*, and *wicked*; were he to use the last term as we use it, and annex to the others a significant different from that we affix to them-- **such as to mean *life* by the term *death*, *happiness* by the *punishment*, and a *limited time* by the word *perpetual***; and without apprising us of such a change, in their meaning...what a deception would he practice on us!"

**How many changes "*death*" to "*life*," by changing "*the wages of sin is death*" to "*the wages of sin is eternal life with torment*"?**

Henry Constable: "Its uniform testimony (the New Testament) is that 'eternal life' hereafter will be the exclusive possession of the just, and that the wicked will certainly not obtain it: 'He that believeth on the Son hath everlasting life; and he that believeth not the Son shall not see life.' **Our simple enquiry is, what is meant by that Greek word translated 'life' in the passages referred to.** Our Lord in addressing Himself to the Jewish people, Luke in writing a Gospel for the Gentile world, Paul in writing to Rome, the metropolis of heathenism, or Corinth priding itself on the Grecian tongue, James, Peter, and Jude writing to Christians wherever scattered over the earth, all alike use this word as universally understood. We have only, therefore, to refer to our classical dictionaries, and there we find its primary and universally accepted sense to be *existence*. If we want any further confirmation, let us listen to the Apostle James defining it's meaning. 'What is your life? It is even a vapor, that appeared for a little time, and then vanishes away.' On the classical usage, and express definition of the New Testament, we take our stand. Dictionaries of the New Testament, and commentators on it, may, if they please, put upon the phrase the sense of 'happiness' in the numberless passage where it occurs, but we deny to them the right to alter the meaning of a well understood Grecian word for the sake of bolstering up their baseless and horrid creed" *The Duration and Nature of Future Punishment*" 1871.

**(2) DEATH** must be changed so that it does not mean death, but an eternal life with torment for a soul that can never be dead. The dead cannot really be death if death is only "a loss of well-being," a loss of happiness and if death were really eternal life with torment. Death must be changed to be not death, but changed to a doorway to a spiritual world where the souls of **all**, both the souls of the saved, and the souls of the lost are alive, and both must have eternal life; to the saved death must be changed to means an instant doorway to a greater and fuller life, but only for the soul that is thought to be in them; to the lost an instant doorway to an eternal life of pain. **In no plain language can death be said to be the wages of sin to an immortal being that cannot die.**

**Death is made to be not death, but a mere change in the mode of existence for a soul. To many, death means for a soul to be alive, to have eternal life, but separated from God and tormented by God. To make the word "*death*" fit their view; they must make death figurative. The true meaning of the word "death" will destroy their view. All plain passages like Romans 6:23 ("*the wages of sin is death*") must be changed into figurative language, but they cannot tell us how they know what the figurative language means, how they know death is not death but is endless life separated. They cannot tell us how they know "*death*" means "*life*." Figurative language always draws it meaning from literal language, it never means the opposite of the literal; "*death*" in figurative language could not mean any kind of "*life*." A basic rule of Bible study, which is accepted by most, is a word or a passage must be assumed to be literal unless the context demands that it must be taken figuratively. They cannot tell why the word "*death*" means "*death*" when it is the body that is dead, but "*death*" means**

“life” when it relates to the soul They cannot tell why death must be made figurative other than it would destroy their teaching that there is a deathless something in a person that lives after the person is dead if it were used with it’s true meaning, if death is really death with it’s universally understood meaning. If there were a Hell, for souls in it to feel pain they could not be dead, they would have to be just as alive as the souls in Heaven; they would have to have life just as eternal as the souls that we are told are in believers.

When the death of anyone is spoken of in the Bible, the modern phraseology (they have gone to be with Christ, have gone to their reward, have gone to be with their loved ones in Heaven, etc.) is never used. Not even Abraham is said to have gone to his home in Heaven at his death before the judgment. *“And Abraham breathed his last and died in a ripe old age, an old man and satisfied with life; and he was gathered to his people”* (Genesis 25:8 New American Standard Version). Such a radical change of death to life in torment is a denial of death; an attempt to evade death by saying in each person there is a deathless soul that will live after the death of the person; therefore, the soul is not subject to death. It is a deliberate carefully thought out wresting of the scriptures (2 Peter 3:16). If the Bible does not mean what it says, then nobody can know what it does mean; when the Bible says, *“The wages of sin is death”* if the wages of sin is not an actual real death, then who can know what the wages of sin is? Death is definitely the forfeiture of life, and without a resurrection there would never be any kind of life anyplace.

#### **DEATH HAS BEEN CHANGED TO LIFE**

- Those that refused to have God in their knowledge *“are worthy of death”* (Romans 1:28-32), but instead of death they are given endless life in Hell being tormented by God.
- Sin is *“unto death”* (Romans 6:16) *“Leads to death”* New International Version, has been changed to sinners live forever in torment.
- *“The wages of sin is death”* (Romans 6:23), but the wages can never be paid because man teaches an immortal soul cannot die.
- *“For if you live according to the flesh, you must die”* (Romans 8:13), but an immortality soul would have has eternal life and could not die.
- *“For the end of these things is death”* (Romans 6:21). *“These things result in death”* New International Version. This has been changed to, “For the end of these thing is eternal life in torment.”
- *“Acts that lead to death”* (Hebrews 9:14) New International Version.
- *“His servants you are whom you obey; whether sin unto death, or obedience unto righteousness”* (Romans 6:16).
- *“For to be carnal minded is death”* (Romans 8:6).
- *“Sin...brings forth death”*(James 1:15), but we are repeatedly told that an immortal soul is not subject to death.
- *“For except you believe that I am he, you shall die in your sins”* (John 8:24), but we are told you (your soul) cannot die! Then what did Christ say, the person will die but the after the death of the person the soul that was in the person will live?

Those that teach death is an eternal life of torment are as one writer said, “Forced to argue that a horse could not die so dead that it must keep dying deader.” The dead must keep on dying; the destroyed must keep on being destroyed.

Why would God say one thing to us and mean the opposite of what He said? Why would He say the wages of sin is DEATH if the wages of sin is LIFE? How could the wages of sin be death to a soul that cannot die!

#### **LIFE AND DEATH IN ROMANS CHAPTERS FIVE AND SIX DEATH OF CHRIST**



*“For while we were yet weak, in due season **Christ died** for the ungodly. For scarcely for a righteous man will one **die**: for peradventure for the good man some one would even dare to **die**. But God commended his own love toward us, in that, while we were yet sinners, **Christ died for us**. Much more then, being now **justified by his blood**, shall we be saved from the wrath of God through him. For if, while we were enemies, we were reconciled to God through the death of his Son, much more, being reconciled, shall we be **saved by his life**; and not only so, but we also rejoice in God through our Lord Jesus Christ, through whom we have now received the reconciliation”* (Romans 5:6-11). Can anyone read of how Christ was put to death, was buried, and resurrected on the third day and say His death was not a real death? His death was not just a “lost of well being.” Death is death, not any kind of life anyplace, Christ died for us.

#### ALL DIE

*“Therefore, as through one man sin entered into the world, **and death through sin; and so death passed unto all men**, for that all sinned; for until the law sin was in the world; but sin is not imputed when there is no law. Nevertheless **death reigned from Adam until Moses**, even over them that had not sinned after the likeness of Adam's transgression, who is a figure of him that was to come But the free gift is not like the transgression. For if by the transgression of the one the **many died**, much more did the grace of God and the gift by the grace of the one Man, Jesus Christ, abound to the many. The gift is not like that which came through the one who sinned; for on the one hand the judgment arose from one transgression resulting in condemnation, but on the other hand the free gift arose from many transgressions resulting in justification. For if by the transgression of the one, **death reigned through the one**, much more those who receive the abundance of grace and of the gift of righteousness will **reign in life** through the One, Jesus Christ. So then as through one transgression there resulted condemnation to all men, even so through one act of righteousness there resulted justification of **life** to all men. For as through the one man's disobedience the many were made sinners, even so through the obedience of the One the many will be made righteous”* (Romans 5:12-19). Death. When a person dies and is buried, without the resurrection that person is really dead and will forever be dead without the resurrection of all because of the death and resurrection of Christ, a resurrection to judgment, then endless life or endless death, the second death.

#### DEATH BY SIN,

*“The Law came in so that the transgression would increase; but where sin increased, grace abounded all the more, so that, as **sin reigned in death**, even so grace would reign through righteousness to **eternal life** through Jesus Christ our Lord. What shall we say then? Are we to continue in sin so that grace may increase? May it never be! How shall we who **died to sin** still live in it?”* (Romans 5:20-21).

#### LIFE IN CHRIST

“Or do you not know that all of us who have been baptized into Christ Jesus have been **baptized into His death**? Therefore we have been buried with Him through baptism into death, so that as Christ was **raised from the dead** through the glory of the Father, so we too might walk in **newness of life**. For if we have become united with Him in the likeness of His death, certainly we shall also be in the **likeness of His resurrection**, knowing this, that our old self was

crucified with Him, in order that our body of sin might be done away with, so that we would no longer be slaves to sin; for **he who has died is freed from sin**. Now **if we have died with Christ**, we believe that **we shall also live with Him**, knowing that Christ, having been **raised from the dead**, is **never to die again; death no longer is master over Him**. For **the death that He died, He died to sin once** for all; **but the life that He lives**, He lives to God. Even so consider yourselves to be dead to sin, but alive to God in Christ Jesus. Therefore do not let sin reign in your mortal body so that you obey its lusts, and do not go on presenting the members of your body to sin as instruments of unrighteousness; but present yourselves to God as those alive from the dead, and your members as instruments of righteousness to God. For sin shall not be master over you, for you are not under law but under grace" (Romans 6:1-14).

#### SIN BRING DEATH, NOT TORMENT

*"What then? Shall we sin because we are not under law but under grace? May it never be! Do you not know that when you present yourselves to someone as slaves for obedience, you are slaves of the one whom you obey, either of sin resulting in death, or of obedience resulting in righteousness? But thanks be to God that though you were slaves of sin, you became obedient from the heart to that form of teaching to which you were committed, and having been freed from sin, you became slaves of righteousness. I am speaking in human terms because of the weakness of your flesh. For just as you presented your members as slaves to impurity and to lawlessness, resulting in further lawlessness, so now present your members as slaves to righteousness, resulting in sanctification. For when you were slaves of sin, you were free in regard to righteousness. Therefore what benefit were you then deriving from the things of which you are now ashamed? For **the outcome of those things is death**" (Romans 6:15-21).*

"But now having been freed from sin and enslaved to God, you derive your benefit, resulting in sanctification, and the outcome, eternal life. **For the wages of sin is death, but the free gift of God is eternal life in Christ Jesus our Lord**" (Romans 6:22-23). TO MAKE DEATH NOT BE DEATH IS A DELIBERATE CHANGE OF GOD'S WORD.

(3) **DIE** *"If you live after the flesh, you must die; but if by the spirit you put to death the deeds of the body, you shall live"* (Romans 8:13). The immoral soul doctrine must make **die** to mean exactly the same thing as **live**, just live in two different places; therefore, die and live both mean eternal life!

1. "You" must be changed to "your soul" will live after "you" are dead.
2. "Die" must be changed to eternal life with torment.
  - It must be changed from speaking of **you** that will die if **you** live after the flesh, to **your soul** that will live forever in Hell if **you** live after the flesh. This

passage is speaking of you the person; there is nothing about a soul that cannot die in it.

- The way many read this is: "If you live after the flesh, your soul must live forever in torment; but if by the spirit you put to death the deeds of the body, your soul shall live in Heaven." If **you** sin, it is not **you** that will be tormented in Hell, but **the soul that is now in you will be tormented for your sins after you are dead.**

Die and live must both be interpreted to both means to live forever! Who can believe it? It is obvious that die is only interpreted to mean "eternal life in torment" when it serves the purpose of the doctrine of eternal torment, and all other times "to die" really means "to die"; just as obvious that we must have someone tell us when "die" means "eternal life in torment" and when "die" really means "die"; and without this help we could never know when God intended us to understand the opposite of what He said, and when He intended us to understand what He said in the way He said it. When "die" is used of the death of animals, then the animal is really dead, but when the same word is used of a person, then the person is not at all dead, but is somewhere more alive than before the person died but did not die.

**(4) DESTRUCTION** must be changed to be only a loss of well-being. The traditionalist argument is that the words "*destroy*" and "*destruction*" should not be taken with their established meaning, but be interpreted as "a loss of well being," or an "irreparable loss." How could anyone know this without a revelation from God? How can the Scriptures speak of the destruction of the lost if they are not destroyed? The word destruction would be meaningless if there is not a point where the destruction is complete. Why would God say He were going to destroy the lost if He knows the soul is immortal and He could not destroy it? **Destruction has been changed to existing forever in torment.** For destruction to mean existing in torment they much find a way to somehow have a destruction that will preserve the destroyed person in tact. Preserve the destroyed person undestroyed!

E. D. Slough: "But these as natural brute beasts made to be taken and destroyed, speak evil of the things they understand not and shall utterly perish in their own corruption' (2 Peter 2:12). **What is the plain and natural sense of perish? Is it not a literal destruction? The people of the flood perished. Sodom and Gomorrah perished. Fifteen hundred in the great Titanic tragedy perished. Five hundred people in the Iroquois Theater fire perished. And thousands, tens of thousands, perish annually in one manner or another. Oh, Yes. We too keenly realize what the plain and natural sense of perish means. But does Willis urge it here? No, never. Peter says they shall "utterly perish," utterly, completely, absolutely, put an end to. Why not plead for the plain, natural sense of the word then? Listen, reader, he knows his theory would "utterly perish" that instant.**" Indictment of Eternal Torment – The Self-negation of a Monstrous Doctrine. Evangelist Church of Christ, F. L Rowe Publisher, On line at: [www.robertwr.com/EternalTorment.htm](http://www.robertwr.com/EternalTorment.htm)

**(5) DESTROY** must be changed to mean to preserve forever. "Can never be" must be added to destroy and make it read, "Can never be destroyed." They argue that an immortal soul cannot die; therefore, "destroy" cannot mean "destroy," and the Bible did not really mean "destroy" when it said "destroy," just as "death" cannot really mean

"death," but these words must mean something; therefore, they are changed and given a meaning that is the opposite of their true meaning; many words must always be changed and used with a meaning that is the opposite of what the words mean. They argue that nothing can be annihilated in the scientific sense, that nothing is annihilated by fire; it just changes its form. They overlook the fact that the Bible is not a scientific book, and is not written in today's scientific language, and that God made all things out of nothing, and all things will go back to nothing. Those to whom Paul was writing would not have thought that if a book were burnt up that it was not destroyed. Just as they would not have thought the elements that the book was made of was a book before the book was printed. When destroy is applied to things it is always the end of them.

In Matthew 10:28 there is no figurative language, but we are told that one word must be taken out of its literal context and used in a figurative way to mean just the opposite of its true meaning, that the one word "destroy" must be changed to mean "an eternal life of torment for souls;" one word must be made figurative, even when nothing is figurative in the context that the word is in. There is no figurative language in 2 Thessalonians 1:9, but two words, "destruction" and "perish" must both be changed to figurative, that both words mean "an eternal life of torment."

- In the Old Testament God **destroyed** many cities and nations. Sodom was completely destroyed, not just lost its well being; it is an example of the destruction that is coming to the lost (2 Peter 2:6).
- The lost will be **destroyed**, not live forever in torment.

"Destroyed" cannot be made to mean both (1) death, going out of existents and (2) eternal life, never going out of existents.

- **Death**, when made figuratively, death is **eternal life** in Hell for souls that are separated from God, **but definitely not dead**, the dead could never be dead.
- **Destruction**, when made figuratively, is only a loss of well-being.
- **Destroy and perish**, when made figuratively, means to preserve forever. Did God intend to say imperishable when He said perish?
- **Sleep**, when made figuratively, is **to be awake** in Heaven or Hell, **but definitely not asleep**, that would make their *"immaterial, invisible part of men"* be asleep in Hell; therefore, they have labeled this "soul sleeping." It is true that the Bible says nothing about "soul sleeping" of an *"immaterial, invisible part of men,"* but it repeatedly says a person, not an immaterial something in a person, sleeps unto the person wakes at the resurrection; it is the resurrection that turns the death of a person into a sleep from which that person will wake up.

(6) **PERISH** like destruction and destroy, perish must be changed to mean, "can never perish, or never be destroyed, but to live forever in an unhappy and miserable condition in Hell." Forever perishing, but imperishable! To say "to perish" is to "live forever" is a complete contradiction.

**Do you wonder why the writers of the Bible said the lost will die, be destroyed, perish, but today we are told the souls that were in the lost cannot die, cannot be destroyed, and cannot perish?**

*"If Christ has not been raised then our preaching is vain, your faith also is vain. Moreover we are even found to be witnesses of God, because we witnessed against God that He raised Christ, whom He did not raise, if in fact the dead are not raised. For if the dead are not raised, not even Christ has been raised; and if Christ has not*

*been raised, your faith is worthless; you are still in our sins. **Then those also that are fallen asleep in Christ have perished***” (1 Corinthians 15:14-18). Certainly Paul did not say that those who are asleep in Christ are alive and in torment if there is no resurrection; he clearly said that they have **perished** if the dead are not raised, that they would forever remain dead, they had perished. Perished cannot be made to mean one thing when it is speaking of the saved, those in Christ, and another thing when it is speaking of the lost.

Perished cannot mean both life and death.

- Death, no resurrection, therefore no life after death (*“have perished”*) when it is speaking of those in Christ if there is no resurrection.
- Eternal life in torment, life with a loss of well being that **can never perish** when it is speaking of the souls of the lost.

H. L. HASTINGS: “We shall be guided by the literal meaning of these word, refusing to give them a strange or unusual signification for the purpose of saving or up building a cherished theory.”, “After The Verdict,” 1982, page 4.

JACOB BLAIN: “When I read that all who came out of Egypt over twenty years of age—of the fate of Sodom and Pharaoh’s army—of the 2,000 swine which ran into the sea, I shall not go to the learned to find out whether they *died*, or were only made *miserable*, when it is said the *“perished”* and were *“destroyed.”* If perish and destroy means to *live* in misery, as preachers say, then beasts live in endless woe, for the terms are often applied to them. It is a perfect contradiction in language to say a thing is to be “consumed,” “devoured,” “burned up,” &c., if it is indestructible, as divines say the *soul* is. Page 21, “Death Not Life: Or, The Theological Hell and Endless Misery Disproved,” Public domain.

- *“For the preaching of the cross is to them that **perish**, foolishness”* (1 Corinthians 1:18).
- If there is no resurrection, *“Then those also how have fallen asleep in Christ have **perished**”* (1 Corinthians 15:18).
  1. **Perish** would the same to both, neither one would have eternal life with a lost of well-being. *“Whose end is destruction”* (Philippians 1:28). *“End”* cannot be changed to “endless.” *“Destruction”* cannot be changed to eternal life with “a lost of well being.”

**(7) FIRE** destroys useless things like chaff, we know what fire is and what it does, fire consumes, devours and destroys; fire is used in the Bible as a symbol of utter destruction, never as a preservative. For today’s theology to be true **fire must be changed into figurative language of something that is nothing like fire**, something that is altogether different from fire, something that preserves and cannot consume. With the kind of “fire” that we are told will be in Hell you would only have to put wood in your fireplace one time and it would heat your house forever. It took some thought to come up with a fire that does not do what fire does, a fire that burns but never burns, which consumes but never consumes. Fire destroys, consumes; in figurative language there is always a parallel; if it were figurative language, just as real fire consumes the chaff, the wicked will be consumed, devoured, destroyed by the wrath of God (Hebrews 10:27). In neither the Old Testament nor the New Testament fire is not used by God to eternally torment an immortal soul after the death of the person it had been in.

#### **Fire in the Old Testament**

1. Consumed the burnt offering, no one thinks the burnt offering was torment (Leviticus 9:24).

2. Consumed Nadab and Baihu, "*And they died before the Lord*" (Leviticus 11:1-2)
3. "*Fire also came forth from the Lord and consumed the two hundred and fifty men who were offering the incense*" (Numbers 16:35), consumed, not tormented.
4. "*And it shall be that the one who is taken with the things under the ban shall be burned with fire, he and all that belongs to him.*" Zerahites, his family, and all that belonged to them were burned with fire (Joshua 7:15-26).
5. "*Then the fire of God came down from heaven and consumed him and his fifty*" (2 Kings 1:10-12).
6. "*Therefore thus says the Lord Jehovah: Behold, mine anger and my wrath shall be poured out upon this place, upon man and upon beast, and upon the trees of the field, and upon the fruit of the ground; and it shall burn, and shall not be quenched*" (Jeremiah 7:20). If this was the Lord's anger being poured out in Hell, it would make beasts, trees, fields, and the fruit of the ground be in unquenchable fire in Hell. In Jeremiah 17:27 it is "*the palaces of Jerusalem*" that would be destroyed by an unquenchable fire; are "*the palaces of Jerusalem*" now burning in Hell or any other place?
7. **Ezekiel speaks of Judah burning using the imagery of a forest burning.** "*And the word of Jehovah came unto me, saying, son of man, set your face toward the south, and drop your word toward the south, and prophesy against the forest to the field in the South; and say to the forest of the South, Hear the word of Jehovah: Thus says the Lord Jehovah, Behold, I will kindle a fire in you, and it shall consume every green tree in you, and it shall devour ever green tree in you, and ever dry tree; the flaming flame shall not be quenched, and all faces from the south to the north shall be burnt thereby. And all flesh shall see that I, Jehovah, have kindled it; it shall not be quenched*" (Ezekiel 20:47-48). This fire that could not be quenched by mankind was not in Hell, it was God using Babylonian to destroy Israel for their sins (Ezekiel 21:19; Nehemiah 1:3).
8. Living people on this earth go out to look at dead bodies that were slain by the Lord and were being consumed by an unquenchable fire (Isaiah 66:15-24). No one could put it out, but when it had did what the Lord wanted it to do it went out, it is not burning today.
9. Cities, nations, people, Israel, Israel's enemies, and fortresses were consumed and destroyed by fire, Hosea 8:14; Amos 1:7; 1:14; Jeremiah 17:27; 49:27; Numbers 21:28; Obadiah 18; Joel 2:2-3; Isaiah 1:31; 34:6-15; 47:14; Malachi 4:1-3; 1 Kings 14:10; Ezekiel 20:47-48.

#### **Fire in the New Testament**

- **Fire will burn up** the useless chaff of wheat (Matthew 3:12, Luke 3:17)
- **Fire will burn up** the weeds, tares and bad fish (Matthew 13:30-50)
- **Fire will burn up** the withered branches (John 15:6)
- God will **burn up** the chaff with unquenchable fire (Luke 3:16-17)
  - When fire burning up broken off branches, dead weeds, and stubble, they are already lifeless and worthless; it is not torment but the outcome of being useless. Chaff, tares, weeds, stubble, dry branches are highly combustible materials that are soon completely destroyed by the fire, but the "figurative fire" of today's theology is nothing like fire and the "figurative fire" burn up nothing.

- The end of worthless ground **is to be burned** (Hebrews 6:7-8).
- **Fire totally destroyed**, not tormented Sodom and Gomorrah (Jude 7; 2 Peter 2:6-9; Luke 17:28-29).
- *“For if we sin willfully after that we have received the knowledge of the truth, there remains no more a sacrifice for sins, but a certain fearful expectation of judgment, and a fierceness of fire which shall devour the adversaries”* (Hebrews 10:26-17). *“For our God is a consuming fire”* (Hebrews 12:29).
- *“But the heavens that now are, and the earth, by the same word have been stored up for fire, being reserved against the day of judgment and destruction of ungodly men...But the day of the Lord will come as a thief; in the which the heavens shall pass away with a great noise, and the elements shall be dissolved with fervent heat, and the earth and the works that are therein shall be burned up”* (2 Peter 3:7-9).
- *“The lake of fire which is the second death”* (Revelation 21:8).

(8) **SPIRITUAL DEATH** is not found in the Bible, but it has been added, and it is used repeatedly in today's preaching. To escape from death being death the word “spiritual” is added to death despite the fact that “spiritual death” is not in the Bible. The wages of sin is not spiritual death, which we are told would be a death that is not really a death to a soul if a soul or a spirit can never be dead. The wages of sin is death to the person whom sins are not washed away by the blood of Christ. If adding to God’s word is a sin, why would adding and preaching “spiritual death” that is not in the Bible not be a sin? Many who say they, “Speak when the Bible speaks and are silent where the Bible is silent,” then add “spiritual.” Romans 6:23 is changed to, “The wages of sin is spiritual death.”

What is spiritual death?

- If physical death is the end of all life of the body.
  - Then spiritual death would be the end of all life of the spirit.
1. Death would be death to both, not death to one, and eternal life to the other. Death is death, not death is life, and not death is eternal life anyplace.

Spiritual (pneumatikos) is used in the New Testament 21 times, but "spirituality dead" not one time, yet many preach it continually. From where did they get this? Do they mean the spirit is dead? If they mean "lost," why do they use an unscriptural term that does not say what they mean? In his review of my "From Where Came Hell" Csonka says, "We are spiritually dead when, as Isaiah says, 'your sins have separated you from your God,'" Guardian of Truth, January 5, 1995, page 17, (Isaiah 59:2). He must know that Isaiah is speaking about *"the house of Jacob their sins"* (Isaiah 58:1) *"A nation"* (Isaiah 58:2). This is about a nation that had left God being separated from God, and there is not one word about any kind of death of a person in it, but he reads it in. He changes this from a nation (Israel) being separated from God to a person "we" being separated from God, and then changes this person "we" from a living person separated from God to a soul that is not really dead, but alive and has eternal life in Hell forever separated from God. Has he heard this verse misused so often he does not know that he is misusing it? He must add changes to changes to make the nation of Israel be a soul that was in a person, but he did not seem to know whether he wanted it to be (1) a soul of a dead person that is alive in Hell, (2) or a living person that is "spiritually dead."

"Spiritual death" is not in the Bible, but if there were such a thing as "spiritual death," it would have to be when the spirit had no life for if it still had life, it would not be dead.

If a soul were living somewhere with eternal life, how could that soul be dead? It could not be "dead" if it were "alive." Most who believe in Hell say:

- After the resurrection the second death will be a "spiritual death," that is separation of a soul from God, not a real death.
- And say lost persons are now "spiritual dead" even before they die.

Do they not make the second death be nothing more than a continuation of the state they say the lost are now in, just a continuation of the lost being separated from God? Therefore, they have done away with the second death, for they tell us that the lost are already "spiritual dead," and will always be "spiritual dead," even when their souls are alive in Hell. The use of "spiritual dead" is not to "speak where the Bible speaks, and be silent where the Bible is silent."

**(9) SLEEP** could not really mean sleep; asleep must be changed to awake. If the dead are being tormented in Hell, how could they in any way be sleeping? **All** the dead are sleeping unto the resurrection; it is the resurrection that turns death into a sleep from which the person will awake, without the resurrection death would be the end of life. The metaphor of the dead being asleep that is used repeatedly in the Bible is made void and foolishness by the doctrine of an immortal soul being awake in Heaven or Hell. The Bible does not use words in such a self-contradictory manner. Death is referred to as sleep about 67 times in the Bible, about 47 in the Old Testament, and about 20 in the New Testament with both the righteous dead and the unrighteous dead being asleep; asleep does not mean awake, not awake in Heaven, not awake in Hell. The second death is never called sleep; there will be no waking up from it.

Bill Reeves: "The body of our humiliation, that it may be conformed to the body of His glory (Phil. 3:20, 21). We do not expect this at the moment of each one's death, for at death we sleep in Jesus and rest, but when He comes from heaven." Truth Magazine, February 15, 1973.

"May they rest in peace" that is often on graves would make no sense if the person in the grave was not asleep, but were awake and enjoying Heaven or suffering in Hell. Sleep would be a very inappropriate and misleading word if the dead were awake in Heaven, if they were more awake than we are. That a person sleeps between death and the resurrection, and then wakes up at the resurrection makes going to Heaven at the time of death not possible; innate immortality and being asleep are contradictions, both cannot be.

**(10) KILL** "*And I will kill her children with pestilence*" (Revelation 2:23). Kill is used interchangeably with die and destroyed. "To be killed," "to die," "to be destroyed."

Summary: **Death and all these words must be changed into figurative language even when they are in plain passages. All these words must be given a theological meaning that is not found in the words, but they never tell us how they know what this theological meaning is. But, one thing is clear, if they did not change them into figurative language, their theology would be destroyed. Death, destruction, destroy, and perish are simple words, and there is no hint of them being figurative language when they are used in plain passages; therefore, they must be taken in their simple literal meaning. These words cannot be changed to be figurative, and given a meaning not found in the words to save a theology that is not in the Bible. They can and; therefore, should be taken literally.** The only reason these words are made to be figurative language is that if these words are taken with their literal meaning they make the doctrine of an immortal soul and eternal life in Hell not passable.



**When figurative language (Lake of Fire) is made literal, then the literal language must be changed to agree with the figurative language that has been changed into literal language.** If not, the Bible would say in one place that destruction is not destruction, and in many others that destruction is destruction; and say that there is no death.

- When figurative language is changed to literal language, literal language must be changed to figurative language in order for them not to conflict with each other.

To say an immortal soul can die, be destroyed, or perish is a contradiction of words or terms. **The present definitions of words must be destroyed, and new definitions given.** The new definitions end up being the opposite of the old definition, death is no longer death; death is life, death is eternal life in Hell. When we say anything, a plant, animal, or person is dead, we do not mean that plant, animal, or person is alive and being tormented. Death must be made to mean one thing when it is a plant or animal that is dead, and another when it is a person that is dead. **There are no stronger words that could have been used to say the end of the wicked is a total end of existence; death is ceasing to live.** Where is the revelation by which it is known that death is not death; where is the book, chapter and verse for it? **Is there any word God could have used that they would not say it does not mean what it says?** No, there is not a one that would not be changed if it would conflict with their theology.

R. F. Weymouth: "My mind fails to conceive a grosser misinterpretation of language than when the five or six strongest words which the Greek tongue possesses, signifying 'destroy,' or 'destruction,' are explained to mean maintaining an everlasting but wretched existence. To translate black as white is nothing to this," "Life In Christ," page 365. R. F. Weymouth is the translator of "The New Testament in Modern Speech."

Dr. C. Campbell, who believed in eternal torment said, "If the words and phrases employed by the apostles and evangelist, in delivering the revelation committed to them by the Holy Spirit, had not been agreeable to the received usage of the people to whom they spoke, their discourse being unintelligible, could have conveyed no information, and consequently would have been no revelation to the hearers" Preliminary Dissertation, Part 1, Sect. 1, 1854.

Edward White: "There must exist some argument of almost overpowering influence which has thus determined the interpretation of masses of language to a sense exactly contrary to its natural meaning. **For the process by which such terms as death, perishing, destruction are made to stand for the idea of endless misery, is one so remarkable as to arrest attention and demand instant inquiry.** A corresponding action on the word 'life' so often used in the Bible to denote the eternal reward of the saints would result in making it stand for the strange idea of a *happy extinction*, or a blessed abolition of existence--an *euthanasia*. The radical idea of destruction, that is extinction of being, if first taken out of the term *Death*; then the word is made to stand for its opposite, eternal being; and then the associated idea of misery is grafted upon the stock of the converted primary; the result being, that *destruction* stand for endless misery. An exactly parallel treatment of the promise of Life, therefore, will result, first, in taking out of it its radical idea or conscious existence--next, in making it stand for its opposite, extinction--and lastly, in joining the idea of happiness with the converted primary, -so that you obtain the complex result of a *happy extinction*. It would require some argument of overmastering force to persuade nine-tenths of the scholars of Christendom to perform this operation upon the promise of life to the righteous" "Life in Christ," page 357.

George Storrs: "The next principle of interpretation I would lay down is, That it is a truth, from which we are not to depart without the clearest evidence, that words are never used to mean more than their primary signification...Not to adhere to this principle is to make revelation no revelation. Those who abandon it may as well admit, at once, that the common people ought not to have the

Bible, for it will only lead them astray. Why should Protestants boast over the Catholics in this respect? Do not both, virtually, claim that the language of Scripture is mystical, or has a meaning that does not appear in the common signification of the words? and, therefore, the Priests must interpret them to the people? Might we not as well give our Bibles altogether into the hands of these interpreters? Especially, if the plain common sense meaning of words is not to be followed, when there is no clear necessity for departing from it...**What should we think of a law that says, "For murder thou shalt die," if we were told the meaning is not, that the transgressor shall actually die, but be kept alive in indescribable torments**, protracted to the greatest possible extent? Would any man think he was fairly dealt with by such an administration? And would he not have just cause of complaint at the want of definiteness in the terms used to denote the punishment threatened!" Sermon One, page 13.

John Locke: "By death some understand endless torments in hell fire; **but it seems a strange way of understanding a law, which requires the plainest and directs of word, that by death should be meant eternal life in misery.**"

Dean Alford: "A canon of interpretation, which should be constantly born in mind, is that a figurative sense of words is never admissible except when required by the context" Commentary on Acts 10:42. **"Death" used in a figurative sense to be "eternal life separated from God" is never required by the context but that "death" means "eternal life" is a must for today's theology. Today's teaching is that the Bible almost never means what it says and must be interpreted, and one of the ways it must be interpreted is to explain the meaning of death to be life.**

H. L. Hastings: "EIGHT TIMES he (Paul) speaks of the wicked as destined to perish. DEATH is used to express their destiny SEVEN TIMES; NINE TIMES they are spoken of as be DESTROYED, *once* as DEVoured by fire, and *once* as BURNED. Not one of these words has, in the original or the translation, the meaning of eternal torment. Not one of them means any such thing in common conversation, **and it is only by a 'theological' or false definition, alike repugnant to the laws of language and common sense, that such an idea can be conveyed by such language.** Paul does not tell us that he used these words in a *peculiar* or *theological* sense. No Greek would have supposed so, had they heard him; and we are led to conclude that as Paul would not use words calculated to mislead; therefore, **we should take these words in their most obvious and current signification.** Paul did teach the utter DESTRUCTION or PERISHING, or DEATH, or EXTERMINATION of ungodly men...**No stronger expressions can be found in Greek or English, to denote the utter extirpation of the ungodly. If these words can be evaded or explained away, then, if the doctrine be ever so true, it would be impossible to teach it. If these words do not convey the idea, than no words can be made to do it.**" After The Verdict, reprinted 1982, page 30, 31.

The Bible must be made to use opposite words than what the words means. The theological use of these words today is the same as saying white is black, sweet is bitter, night is day.

- White must be changed to mean black.
- Sleep must be changed to mean awake.
- Death must be changed to mean life.
- To die must be changed to mean to live forever in torment.
- Destruction must be changed to mean eternal torment.
- To perish, to be destroyed, must be changed to mean for the soul to be preserved incorruptible and imperishable in Hell. Perish and destroy do not mean a loss of well-being and never has.
- Fire must be changed into something that preserves, not something that devours or consumes.

**With definitions such as are given by today's theology, anything, whatever anyone wants can be proved, and whatever anyone does not want can be disproved.**

To put eternal torment by God in an eternal Hell in the Bible the exactly opposite of what the scripture clearly say must be read into the Bible.

Those who believe in Hell give God the power to "*destroy both body and soul in Gehenna,*" but only after they put their own meaning on both destroy and Gehenna, and they say the meaning of both is an eternal life of misery and suffering in Hell.

There is no way that anyone could know that death is not death, but that death is eternal life in torment. How could the wages of sin be death when the souls of sinners will have an eternal life in Hell? Without a revelation from God, no one could know that God meant only a loss of well being when He used these words.

If Hell exists, then death cannot be death; if death is death, there cannot be a Hell.

### **THE MISSING WORDS**

Words that are not in the Bible, but are preached today as if they were on every page, (1) Immortal soul (2) Hell (3) An eternal life of torment. The Bible is made to say what the readers want it to say, and their faith (what they believe) is only a projection of their own desires.

Summary: If immortality is unconditional and whatever the soul is that is in a person that will live forever in Heaven or any other place cannot die, then many words cannot "be translated, interpreted, and understood according to the same code of laws and principles of interpretation by which other ancient writings are translated and understood." **Many words, life, death, die, dead, destroy, perish, destruction, consumed, kill, end, burned up, and sleep, must be redefined in a way that the world does not use them.** We must have "a class of inspired men to unfold and reveal its true sense to mankind." The belief that men are born immortal and can never die makes death impossible, and death must be redefined as a different kind of life in a different place. This is just what they have done by saying death does not mean to be dead, but death means to be alive and living a deathless eternal life with torment. Anyone who reads the Bible believing that a soul is an "*immaterial, invisible part of a person*" (W. E. Vine) that is immortal and can never die, is compelled to change all texts that speak of the lost being destroyed to mean that they are only tortured forever but cannot ever be destroyed. "Destroy" cannot be understood, "**In the fair, stipulated, and well-established meaning of the terms,**" (A. Campbell). Interpretation of parables, symbols, and figurative languages are made to be superior over plain statements. What is clear language must be made to agree with what is thought to be said in the symbolic language.

God said it the way He meant it.

1. **Life** is life, not just a reward to an immaterial invisible part of a person that now has eternal **life** and can never be dead.
2. **Death** is death and it is the opposite of life, not a different form of life. Not eternal life with torment; death is not eternally dying but never dead.
3. **Destruction** is destruction. Destruction does not mean there is a part of a person that can never be destroyed. Destruction does not mean kept alive in eternal torment. Not after being destroyed by God for thousands of years yet are no more destroyed then when God first began the destroying.
4. **End** is end, not going on forever without an end.
5. **Kill** is to end life, and does not mean never able to be killed, never able to end life.
6. **Burned up** is burned up, does not mean never able to be burned up.
7. **Consumed** is consumed, does not mean never able to be consumed.

8. **Perish** is perish, not just a loss of well-being to those who cannot perish.
9. **Sleep** is sleep, not to be awake in Heaven or Hell.

**These words do not teach what many believe; therefore, the meaning of these words must be and are changed to make the Bible say what is believed. They are changed to make the Bible agree with what is believed, changed to be the opposition of their meaning (death changed to life, etc.), and they are changed even by those who say they do not believe the Bible should be changed.**

**There is no way that God could have said, “the wages of sin is death” any clearer than that what He did.** There was words in the Greek that was used by the writers of the New Testament that would have conveyed the same thoughts that we are told by preachers that tell us that death is not death but only a lost of well being, that the wages of sin is eternal torment, but not once did God lead them to use those words.

#### **CHANGES THAT MUST BE MADE**

#### **BY THOSE WHO BELIEVE IN ETERANL LIFE IN HELL MUST MAKE TO MAKE THE BIBLE AGREE WITH THEM**

- Death changed to life with torment.
- To die changed to live.
- To “lose life” changed to be preserved alive in a miserable existence.
- “Burn up” changed to burning with out end.
- “Destroy” changed to preserved without ever being destroyed.
- To be devoured, to perish, and to be consumed must be changed to being immortal and indestructible.
- “End” changed to be endless.

Traditionalist must change the Bible to say the opposite of what it says.

- “*He that believes on the Son has eternal life; but he that believes not the Son shall not see life*” (John 3:36) must be changed to, “He that believes not the Son was born with eternal life, and that person will see life in Hell where he will live forever.”
- “*For the gate is narrow and the way is hard that leads to life, and few are they that find it*” (Matthew 7:13-14) must be changed to, “For the gate is narrow, and the way is hard that leads to life in Heaven, and most shall see life in Hell.”
- “*For God so loved the world that He give His only begotten Son, that whosoever believes on Him should not perish, but have eternal life*” (John 3:16) must be changed to, “The souls of all will have eternal life someplace, in Heaven or in Hell.”
- “*Even He who is able to save and to destroy*” (James 4:12) must be changed to, “Even He who is able to save alive in Heaven, or save alive and undestroyed in Hell.”
- “*For he that sows unto his own flesh shall of the flesh reap corruption: but he that sows unto the Spirit shall of the Spirit reap eternal life*” (Galatians 5:8) must be changed to, “Both shall reap eternal life, just not both in the same place, some eternal life in Heaven and some eternal life in Hell.”
- “*For the wages of sin is death, but the free gift of God is eternal life in Christ Jesus our Lord*” (Romans 6:23) must be changed to, “For the wages of sin is eternal torment in Hell for those who were born with eternal life, and the gift of God is eternal life must be changed to an escape from eternal torture for a ‘soul’

that already has eternal life, and a reward for the 'soul' that is in you that now has eternal life."

- "*Whosoever shall seek to gain his life shall lose it: but whosoever shall lose his life shall preserve it*" (Luke 17:33) must be changed to, "Whosoever shall seek to gain his life shall preserve life in eternal torment in Hell, but whosoever shall lose his life shall preserve his life in Heaven, but only for 'it,' not for 'you.'"

The changes that must be made by those who teach eternal life in Hell for a deathless soul could be extended to many pages, but this should be enough for anyone who loves the truth more than the "*doctrines and precepts of men*" (Matthew 15:9).

**The reinterpretation of the many words used that mean the end of life has no equal. Other reinterpretations are based on the changing of a few passages; Peter being the first Pope is based mostly on a reinterpretation of Matthew 16:18; but for souls to be deathless and tormented forever, there had to be many plus many more changes and many adding to God's word. "Everlasting destruction" had to be changed to be "everlasting life with torment." Was Paul trying to deceive by using the word "destruction," and today's theology has to correct him by saying, "No Paul, you really meant to say everlasting torment"? Destruction does not mean to preserve alive in eternal torment.**

*"And you know that no murderer has eternal life abiding in him"* (1 John 3:15). Was John wrong when he said no murderer has eternal life? If, as many say, mankind has a "soul" that is now immortal and cannot die, and if the only part of men that shall live after the judgment is an ever-living soul that all that even all murderers now have, then a murderer does have this something that now has eternal life and can never die. All the murderers would now have the same "*immaterial, invisible part of man*" (W. E. Vine) that will live forever that the saved have. Without eternal life, a murderer cannot have an immortal soul; **if he did have an immortal soul, he would have eternal life abiding in him; if he does not have eternal life abiding in him he does not have an immortal soul.** To teach all have a soul in them that is eternal and can never die make all have a soul that now has eternal life, it can only be a question of where that soul will spend its eternal life. John said, "*And this is the promise which he promised us, even the life eternal*" (1 John 2:25). "*We have passed out of death into life...no murderer has eternal life abiding in him*" (1 John 3:14-15). Is there anyway John could have said any clearer that a murderer does not have an immortal soul that now has eternal life, that murderers has not "*passed out of death into life*"?

### **Death is not Hell**

**A dead person cannot be tormented; they can feel no pain. Only the living can be tormented. If Hell were a real place, those in it would be alive, not dead. Their life would be just as eternal as the life of the saved.**

- Death makes Hell impossible.
- Hell makes death impossible.
- Hell makes the resurrection of the dead impossible.

If there is no death, there cannot be a resurrection of the undead. If there is no resurrection, we have no hope 1 Corinthians 15:16-19. **Can there be a doctrine more harmful than the doctrine of Hell, which takes away our resurrection; therefore, our hope of salvation?**

### **WHAT THE DEAD DO NOT DO?**

1. There is no activity (Ecclesiastes 9:10).
2. They do not have plans (Ecclesiastes 9:10).
3. They have no wisdom (Ecclesiastes 9:10).
4. Their bed is in darkness (Job 17:13).
5. They do not mention God (Psalm 6:5).
6. They give God no thanks (Psalm 6:5).
7. They have no thoughts (Psalm 146:4).
8. They know nothing (Ecclesiastes 9:5).
9. The wicked are silent, no speech (Ps. 31:17).

What do the dead do, think, and know? Nothing. Does anyone think this is a picture of Heaven or Hell? **Without the resurrection the dead would never know anything after death** (1 Corinthians 15:12-22).

**Unwilling to accept God's word:** Inspired writers speak often about death being a sleep, and about its unconscious nature. *"His breath goes forth, he returns to the earth; in that very day his thoughts perish"* (Psalm 146:4). If Solomon had said, "Their love, as their hatred and their envy will continue...for there is work, and device, and knowledge, and wisdom, in Sheol, whither you go" (Ecclesiastes 9:5-10), then those who teach a "immaterial, invisible part of man" is alive from our death unto the resurrection, could rightly say this ends all debate on this subject. But, when it is put the way God inspired it; **they reject it**. If you try for the rest of your life, you would never be able to say any stronger than Solomon that there is nothing after death, and without the resurrection taught by Christ there never would be life after death. Unconditional immortality must have knowledge in sheol, the grave; therefore, many plain statements that there is no knowledge in the grave must be rejected, and many plain statements that death is a sleep must be rejected. See Isaiah 38:18-19; Psalm 115:17; 6:5; John 11:11-14; Daniel 12:1-2; Job 14:12-15; 1 Corinthians 15:20.

Some say that Ecclesiastes is the view of those in the world, the way they see life when God is left out, but it is not the way a child of God sees life. Ecclesiastes has statements that are so conductivity to the soul being immortal that many try to make the whole book not be the truth, but it is only "life...viewed from the perspective where God is left out." Because it was conductivity to his belief that salvation is by faith only without works, Calvin did with the book of James the same as many do to Ecclesiastes. There is much in Ecclesiastes that cannot be said to be the way those in the world look at life (see Ecclesiastes 12:1, 12:13, and many other statements throughout the book), but to do away with these statements, they are willing to do away with all. If Ecclesiastes is "life...viewed from the perspective where God is left out," why is it not use it that way when Ecclesiastes 12:7 is used to prove the "soul" is immortal? If Ecclesiastes is, "life...viewed from the perspective where God is left out," then nothing in the book is the truth. Was a book that is not the truth inspired by God? If the book is only "life...viewed from the perspective where God is left out," what good could it have been to those that read it? Then why do we have this book in the Bible? Because it is not true that it is only the way the world sees life with God left out.

**Death that never dies! The living dead! The undead dead!** If this sounds like something out of a horror film, it is the teaching of many about some deathless something which is an "immaterial, invisible part of man." If there is a "part of man" that can never die, the lost could never be dead; common sense tells you that an immortal being can

never die would have no need of a savior to die in its place to keep it from dying. Death is not life, whether it is good life in Heaven, or bad life in Hell. To die is not to live. There cannot be life after death without a resurrection that ends the death.

### FIRST RESURRECTION - SECOND DEATH

*"He that over comes shall not be hurt of the second death"* (Revelation 2:11, 20:6). The first resurrection is when a person is *"born anew...born of the water and the Spirit"* (John 3:3-5). *"And you did he make alive when you were dead...made us alive together with Christ (by grace have you been saved), and raised us up with him"* (Ephesians 2:1-6; Galatians 2:18-19; 3:1).

2. *"But God is so rich in mercy, and he loved us so much, that even while we were dead because of our sins, he gave us life when he raised Christ from the dead...for he raised us from the dead along with Christ"* (Ephesians 2:4 New Living Bible).
3. *"But God, rich in mercy, for the great love he bore us, brought us to life with Christ...He raised us up"* (Ephesians 2:4 New English Bible).

The first resurrection is when a person (not a soul, whatever a soul is) put on Christ, *"We were buried therefore with him through baptism into death: that like as Christ was raised from the dead"* (Romans 6:3-4). *"And you did he make alive, when you were dead through your trespasses and sins...even when we were dead through our trespasses, made us alive together with Christ...and raised us up with him"* (Ephesians 2:1-10), it was *"us"* *"we"* that were dead and made alive, not a soul. *"I say unto you, the hour comes, and now is when the dead shall hear the voice of the Son of God; and they that hear shall live"* (John 5:25). The first resurrection is when a person *"like as Christ was raised from the dead"* when they were buried through baptism and resurrected to a new life in Christ, a resurrection to a life that the unsaved never will never have; a life that begins when a person is buried through baptism and *"And you did he make alive when you were dead...made us alive together with Christ."* Just as the resurrection at the coming of Christ will be, it is a resurrection that will happen only one time; in both it is the person that is resurrected, not a pagan immaterial, deathless soul. The endless life that begins when a person comes up out of the water or baptism, *"That like as Christ was raised from the dead"* (Romans 6:3-4), after a sleep that will seem as if it was only a moment, is the life that is hid with God in Christ, *"If then you have been raised up with Christ...you have died and your life is hidden with Christ in God. When Christ, who is our life, is revealed, then you also will be revealed with Him in glory"* (Colossians 3:1-4). Life after the resurrection for *"those alive from the dead"* (Romans 6:13) is not a different life but a continuance of the life that began when a person was *"raised up with Christ."* All the faithful in Christ have been raised from the dead and now have life as long as they remain faithful and *"shall not be hurt of the second death"* (Revelation 2:11). At the second coming of Christ, those that are alive in Christ, whether they have fallen asleep in Christ or remain unto He comes, when He come they will be changed and put on incorruption, immortality, and forever have the victory over death (1 Corinthians 15:52-55).

In John 5 Christ gives *"eternal life"* to those that believe, *"He that hears my word, and believes him that sent me, has eternal life, and comes not into judgment, but has passed out of death into life"* (John 5:24). Those that hear and believe Christ have now passed our of death and have endless life, but are still in the image of Adam, have not yet put on the spiritual body; they will sleep with their life *"hidden with Christ in God."* But *"the hour comes in which all that are in the tombs shall hear his voice and shall come*

forth; that that have done good, unto the resurrection of life.” At that time they will awake in the image of Christ with spiritual bodies that will be suitable for life in Heaven. All others, “*They that have done evil, unto the resurrection of judgment*” (John 5:29). In this passage Christ speaks both (1) of the believes passing from death to life in this lifetime, (2) and also a resurrection to immortality for believes that will take place at His second coming. It is a continuance of life for believes that never will have an end even when they have “*fallen asleep in Christ*” (1 Corinthians 15:18). Believes “*comes not into judgment,*” but are raised from sleep to life, those that do not believe will be raised for judgment, not life; those that believe not “*shall not see life*” (John 3:36), after they have been raised for judgment (John 5:29), they shall be hurt of the second death (Revelation 21:8).

In John 11:25-26 Christ speaks of the life the believer will receive both now and after the judgment. “*I am the resurrection, and the life; he who believes in Me shall live even if he dies, and everyone who lives and believes in Me shall never die*” Even when the saved are asleep in Christ they live unto God; it is the person that is asleep in Christ that will wake up from their sleep.

All that are in the grave, both saved and lost, will hear His voice and come forth at the resurrection. All will be raised and stand “*before the judgment-seat of Christ; that each one may receive the things done in the body, according to what he has done, whether it be good or bad*” (2 Corinthians 5:10). All who were born again, made alive by being raised with Christ through Baptism, and live faithful shall not be hurt of the second death, which will be after the judgment. Christ paid the wages of sin for them. All others will pay their own wages of sin, which is death (Romans 6:23). “*But the fearful, and unbelieving, and abominable, and murderers, and fornicators, and sorcerers, and idolaters, and all liars, their part shall be in the lake that burns with fire and brimstone; which is the second death*” (Revelation 21:8). The second death is after the second coming of Christ, after the resurrection and judgment; from this death there will never be a resurrection. The results will be eternal. An endless life of torment is not a second death; it is eternal **life** with torment; **an endless life of torment bears no resemblance to a death**. To feel pain, those in Hell would have to be just as alive as those in Heaven are. For an immortal, immaterial soul that cannot be dead to be forever alive and tormented in a literal lake of fire is so dissimilar to death that a person would be in desperate need to prove his or her theology to say an eternity of being **alive** in a lake of fire is **death**; if a dead person were in a lake of fire, that dead person would not feel or know about the fire; if an immaterial soul that, according to Dr. Morey in “Death And The Afterlife,” page 79, is nothing but thoughts and will not have a body, that soul could not feel the fire .

Summary: All are dead unto they are buried with Christ “*through baptism into death and raised from the dead through the glory of the Father*” (Romans 6:3-5). All saved persons now have eternal life even though there bodies are still in the image of Adam (John 3:15; 3:16; 3:36; 4:14; 5:24; 6:47; 11:28; 20:31; many more). They will sleep with there life “*hidden with Christ in God*” unto the second coming of Christ; at that time the persons that believed and has been given life, the same person will put on immortal bodies in the image of Christ. The life a person will have after putting on the image of Christ is a continuation of the endless life given to them when they were in the image of Adam.



"There are only two alternatives, the crown of life-eternal life-or the second death" Homer Hailey, Revelation, page 128, Baker Book House. It is life or death, not life in Heaven or life in Hell. Death is real.

I. D. Williamson: "Relative to the question, whether the lake that burns with fire and brimstone is to be understood literally or figuratively, I have little to say. During the dark ages, it might have been necessary to discuss that question; but the day has passed when any man, claiming even a tolerable share of theological knowledge, would risk his reputation, as a man of sane mind, in an attempt to maintain the existence of a real lake of literal fire and brimstone, in which immortal and immaterial spirits are to be burned. It is a figure used to represent a reality, and this reality is the second death." "An Examination Of The Doctrine Of Endless Punishment."

**"The Second Death"** is used four times, all in Revelation.

1. He that overcomes shall not be hurt of the second death (Revelation 2:11). The saved will not have a part in the second death. Only the lost.
2. Those who are buried and raised with Christ (Romans 6) in the first resurrection, *"Over these the second death has no power"* (Revelation 20:6).
  1. The first two times "the second death" is used say that those in Christ will not die the second death.
3. Death and hades, and any not found written in the book of life are cast into the lake of fire; which is the second death. All three come to the same end. All three end in death (Revelation 20:14-15). The symbolical lake of fire brings all three to an end just as a literal lake of fire would bring any living thing to an end. The lake of fire is a symbol of total destruction of any thing cast into it, an endless death, not an endless life.
4. He that overcomes shall inherit and be God's son, but for all others, *"Their part shall be in the lake that burns with fire and brimstone; which is the second death"* (Revelation 21:8). No ransom has been offered for the second death; it is without an end. The second death is not said to be sleep as the first death is, no one will wake up from it, there will be no resurrection from it.

#### **SECOND DEATH IN PLAIN UNSYMBOLIC LANGUAGE**

*"There remains no more a sacrifice for sins, but a certain fearful expectation of judgment, and a fierceness of fire which shall devour the adversaries"* (Hebrews 10:27). For the lost (1) judgment then (2) devour in the lake of fire, which is the second death. Not as it is preached today (1) judgment (2) then an eternal life of torment in Hell forever, but never devoured, or as preached by many an eternal life in Hell at death before and without the resurrection and Judgment Day.

- The Bible speaks of two deaths, the first, and the second, if the first death is death, but if the second death is eternal life being tormented by God, and then the second death is not death.
- The second death is a real death, just as real as is the first death; both the first and second death is the end of life, neither one is not life in another form or place.
- The second death is never spoken of as a sleep; there is no waking up or resurrection from it.
- The first death is the end of living in this temporal life, which all die and is not the wages of sin. The second death is the end of living in whatever kind of life the lost will have when they are resurrected from the dead (when the dead are resurrected for judgment they will have life of some kind, but not eternal life that

is given only to believers—resurrection means life, if not then it would not be a resurrection).

- “*And the sin, when it is full grown, brings forth death*” (James 1:15).
- “*Whoever turns a sinner away from his error will save him from death*” (James 5:20) New International Version.
- “*For the end of these things is death*” (Romans 6:21).
- “*They that practice such things are worthy of death*” (Romans 1:32). “*Those who practice such things deserve to die*” New Revised Standard Version.
- “*For if you live after the flesh, you must die*” (Romans 8:13).
- “*The wages of sin is death*” (Romans 6:23).
- “*And their part shall be in the lake that burns with fire and brimstone: which is the second death*” (Revelation 21:8).
- Death, not eternal torment is the end of the sinner. The second death is a real death, just as real as is the first death; both the first and second death are both an end of life, as the first death deprives a person of all psychical life and is the final end of all earthly existence, so the second death is the final end of all existence after the resurrection to judgment.

***"IF YOU LIVE AFTER THE FLESH, YOU SHALL DIE."*** “*For if you are living according to the flesh, you must die (apothnesko); but if by the Spirit you are putting to death the deeds of the body, you will live*” (Romans 8:13). All mankind, even the faithful, have been dying the first death since the sin of Adam, this is not a reference to the first death but the second when only those who live according to the flesh will die. Paul did not say, “If you live after the flesh you are now spiritually dead,” (present tense), but “*you shall die*” (future tense). Not A soul shall live forever separated from God, but “*you shall die.*” Why do many that say they believe God, but work hard to change His word? “*But if by the Spirit you put to death the deeds of the body, you shall live.*” It is **you** that will live or die, not a **part of you** that will always live and cannot die.

“*For the wages of sin is death*” (Romans 6:23). Not the death of the flesh, which all die, but the second death.

“*I am the bread of life. Your fathers ate the manna in the wilderness, and they died (apothnesko). This is the bread which came down out of Heaven, that a man may eat thereof, and not die (apothnesko)*” (John 6:48-50). All die the first death, even the apostles, but there will be a resurrection, and those who eat of the bread that came down out of Heaven will not die the second death, all that do not eat of it will die the second death”

“*I am the resurrection, and the life: he that believes on me though he die (apothnesko), yet shall he live; and whosoever lives and believes on me shall never die (apothnesko)*” (John 11:25-26). Although those who believe will die the first death just as all do, they will be resurrected, and will never die the second death; those who do not believe will also die and be resurrected for judgment, and will die the second death. “*For the hour comes in which all that are in the tombs shall hear his voice, and shall come forth; they that have done good, unto the resurrection of life; and they that have done evil, unto the resurrection of judgment*” (John 5:28-29). “*For if we sin willfully after that we have received the knowledge of the truth, there remains no more a sacrifice for*

*sins, but a certain fearful expectation of judgment, and a fierceness of fire which shall devour (“consume” King James Version) the adversaries”* (Hebrews 10:26-27).

*“For the land (those who were once enlightened and fell away Hebrews 6:4-6) which has drunk the rain that comes often upon it, and brings forth herbs meet for them for whose sake it is also tilled, receives blessing from God: but if it bears thorns and thistles, it is rejected, and nigh unto a curse; whose end is to be burned”* (Hebrews 6:4-8). Those that fall away will be burned in the lake of fire, which is the second death, just as thorns are burned.

“Why do we burn briars and thorns? To destroy them, to get permanently rid of them.” Ashley Johnson, Founder and president of the Johnson Bible College, “The Resurrection And The Future Life,” page 413, 1913, Knoxville Lithographing Company, church of Christ.

“As there is a second higher life, so there is also a second and deeper death. And as after that life there is no more death, SO AFTER THAT DEATH THERE IS NO MORE LIFE” Afford. As quoted by Homer Hailey in “Revelation.”

The resurrection of all at the coming of Christ makes death be a sleep from which all will awake, but there will be no resurrection from the second death. It will be permanent and everlasting death.

**Made alive at His coming, not at death:** *“In Christ all will be made alive. But, each in his own turn: Christ, the first fruits; then, when he comes, those who belong to him”* 1 Corinthians 15:22-23 New International Version. Paul says that those who belong to Christ will be *“made alive”* at His coming. If the *“immaterial, invisible part of man”* is very much alive in Heaven or Hell it could not be *“made alive”* at the resurrection. Christ the first fruits of them that are asleep (now), then they that are Christ's at his coming. Unconditional immortality makes all, Christ, those that are His, and those that reject Him now be alive before, not at His coming; therefore, Christ could not have been the *“first born”* (Romans 8:29; Colossians 1:15-18) for, according to this teaching all who died before Christ died would have been alive before Him.

**Death is the end:** Paul says of those who are servants of sin that *“the end of those things is death”* (Romans 6:21-22). But, many now say, *“The end of those things is eternal life with torment without an end”*? Who are you going to believe, God, or man?

**The sting of death** 1 Corinthians 15:54-57: After the resurrection when the saved will have put on immortality, **death** would have been swallowed up in victory. Victory over what? Over death. After the resurrection we will have put on immortality, and will never again be subject to death, but we are now subject to it, and it takes away our life. If we now have immortality we would now have the victory over death. If there is no death, then death has no sting. If there were a soul in a person that is deathless, that soul would have always had the victory over death, it would never have been subject to death. The doctrine of unconditional immortality from birth makes nonsense out of 1 Corinthians 15:54-57, and gives all, those in Christ, and those not in Christ the victory over death; and gives all this victory without the death and resurrection of Christ. If all are born with an immortal soul and it cannot die, then no one's soul is subject to death from the day of their birth and never will be. What kind of victory could there be over the nothingness of death that is not death to a soul that was never subject to death?

**Is death an enemy, or a gateway to Heaven?** A companion of Paul, Epaphroditus, was nigh unto death but God had mercy on him. If death is a gateway to Heaven, then when God had *“mercy on him,”* was God not being cruel by keeping him out of Heaven? Why do most do all they can to live a little longer, even if it is in pain? If death is a

friend, why is this friend not a welcome visitor? Why are we grief-stricken and not rejoicing when our "friend" takes someone we love to be with Christ and God in Heaven? How could going from this life (from pain and troubles for many) to paradise be an enemy? If death is a doorway by which we go to Heaven at the moment of death, why would a person who had lived in pain for years do everything possible to stay out of Heaven and live a little longer, even if it were in pain? Why do we mourn and not rejoice if a love one who lives in pain would go to their everlasting residence in Heaven immediately after death where there is no pain? Is it not because we know death is an enemy, not a friend (1 Corinthians 15:26), and they are under the power of death, not in Heaven; do they not by their actions demonstrate beyond any doubt that they do not believe what they profess, that death is a friend that takes their loved one to be with Christ? We will not have the victory over death unto the resurrection? But, many say going to Heaven is just what happens at death, even for the Old Testament saints who died before the death of Christ: therefore, before their sins were paid for by His death. If this were true, death would then be a friend, not an enemy. **How can death be an enemy to an immortal "immaterial, invisible part of men" (W. E. Vine) that is not subject to death and it and cannot die?**

What is it that will be destroyed (1 Corinthians 15:26)? Just what is the "enemy?" Could the enemy be anything other than changing from life on this earth to life in Heaven? Is not this change what many say death is, moving from earth to Heaven or Hell, is this moving an enemy that will be destroyed? There would be no death, and it would be impossible to die. **Death** (moving to Heaven or Hell) **would be an enemy only to the lost who were moving to Hell. It would be a friend to the saved who were moving to Heaven.** But there is a problem, **how can there be a resurrection if only souls, not us, will be in Heaven and souls are never dead to be resurrected?** If no one is dead, the Bible teaching of a resurrection is out of place and should not be in the Bible. Maybe this is why the teaching of the resurrection is being abandoned in many churches. **If death is not real, there is no resurrection. If death is real, the resurrection is our only hope.** Without the resurrection, we perish forever when we die (1 Corinthians 15:18). Without the resurrection, the enemy of death will never be destroyed and we will be forever dead.

#### **IS DEATH LIFE SEPARATED FROM GOD?**

#### **IS THERE LIFE WITHOUT GOD?**

**Death is to be "abolished"** (1 Corinthians 15:26) American Standard Version, **"destroyed"** King James Version. How? By being cast into the lake of fire (Revelation 20:14). Yet, some teach that when evil men are cast into this same lake of fire, they are tormented by it, but not abolished or destroyed. Fire is a consumer, if it did not consume it would not be fire, to use fire to illustrate something that does not do what fire does, does not consume, would make the language unintelligible. **Does the Lake of Fire abolish death but does not abolish people?** *"Death shall be no more"* Revelation 21:4. Therefore, being cast into lake of fire cannot be "being separated from God" (a definition of death that is believed by many), for then death will last forever, and could never be "abolished." Death is to be "abolished" before Christ will be subjected" to God (1 Corinthians 15:28ff), before when we will be in Heaven, *"death shall be no more"* (Revelation 21:4); therefore, all *"wages of sin"* (Romans 6:23) shall have been paid; if not, they can never be paid as there will be no death, and cannot go on being paid in Hell forever; for then death would last as long as the *"wages"* were being paid, which would

be forever for if death is "being separated from God," then death must last forever. If death did not last forever then Hell could not last forever, the last enemy (death) can never be abolished (1 Corinthians 15:26). The people in Bible times would not have understood death to mean alive but separation any more than the people of the world today understand it or use death to mean alive. We use death in our everyday language to mean to be dead, not to have life, but in the theology use of the word, it does not mean dead, but to be dead is to have life, and be more alive than we are while we are living! Why did God not just say what He means, that death means alive not dead? Did God in some way apart from His word revealed to some that He did not mean what He said in the Bible, but He only revealed this to some and not to all?

Many who do not want to say, "You are going to Hell and be eternally tormented by God" say, "You are going to be eternally alive separated from God." They really believe God is going to forever be tormenting most of humanity, but this is so revolting that they water down what they really believe. All who believe in Hell must use their theology to explain death out of the Bible. Trying to put separation in the place of death is a poor try, but it seems to be the best they could do. Such a radical redefining of death to be life is nothing more than a denial of death. Wayne Jackson in an article he called, "The 'Second Death' – Separation or Annihilation?" printed by the "Christian Courier" redefined the Second Death to be (1) Separation or (2) Annihilation.

1. SEPARATION: He changed death to eternal life separated from God. I understand him to be saying that after the person is dead the soul that was in the person that was not in Christ lives forever being tormented. Does he think the soul has life if it is separated from God? Where does the life of this soul come from? If this soul was separated from God, who does he think is doing the tormenting, if it were really separated from God than God could not be the one that was doing the tormenting? But separation is not usually used to mean that souls are spirits are really separated from God, but usually only in an attempt to make death mean life, not to really mean death.
2. ANNIHILATION: The word "*death*" that God used must be to dead to suit him; Annihilation to most may not sound as dead as death does, therefore; to make it have less impact on those hearing it, he changed God's word "*death*" to annihilation even though annihilation is not in the Bible.
3. SECOND DEATH: "*But for the fearful, and unbelieving, and abominable, and murderers, and fornicators, and all liars, their part shall be in the lake that burns with fire and brimstone which is the second death*" (Revelation 20:8).

Who did all these things?

1. Was it persons?
2. Was it souls?
3. Was it spirits?

Did spirits murder other spirits? Did souls commit fornication? Did souls or spirits lie to each other? Could God have said any clearer that whoever committed these sins will die? This is speaking of persons after they have been resurrected from the death that they will die the second death, not deathless souls that cannot die. Wayne Jackson had to change death to separation to be able to change it from persons after the resurrection that would die the second death to souls that he believes can never die a first or second death, therefore; they must live someplace forever separated from God even though the persons

these souls had been in was dead. **The wages of sin is death for the person that sins, not eternal life separated from God for a soul that had been in the person that sinned.**

**If death means, "separated but alive," then we can use it in place of death. Try it.**

- "I was separation from God but alive some place without God, and behold, I am alive without God for evermore" Revelation 1:18. Therefore, if Jesus were always alive, **separated**, but alive, there could not have been a resurrection. Jesus just returned from somewhere, just a reunion, but He could not have been resurrected from the dead if He were alive.
- "It is Christ Jesus that **was separation from God but alive**, yet rather, that raised from the **separated but alive** " Romans 8:34.
- "The firstborn from the **separation from God but alive some place without God**" Colossians 1:18.
- "He that raised up Christ Jesus from the **separation from God but alive some place without God** " Romans 8:1. This redefining of death to be life would make Christ not to have died for our sins; therefore, there could not have been a resurrection. Christ could not have been raised from the dead; He was never dead, **just separated from God**. It would make His death not be a genuine death, but a reunion of Jesus and God when neither one was dead, just separated from each other. **If the Father and the Son were just separated from each other for the three days the Son was in the grave, the Father would have been just as separated from the Son as the Son was from the Father, neither one would have died, God would have been separated from God. There is no death in separation, no shedding of blood, no New Covenant bought with the blood of Christ.** If death were only a spiritual separation from God, and not real death, the death of Christ on the cross would have no meaning, would not have been a death.
- "Christ **was separation from God but alive some place without God** for our sins" 1 Corinthians 15:3. **Was He separated from God, but alive, not really dead? Was God separated from God?**
- "They also that are **separation from God but alive some place without God** in Christ have perished" 1 Corinthians 15:18.
- "The law of sin and **separation from God but alive some place without God**" Romans 8:2.
- "For the mind of the flesh is **separation from God but alive some place without God** " Romans 8:6.
- "For without the law sin was **separation from God but alive some place without God**" Romans 7:8.
- "I through the law am **separated from God but alive** to the law" Galatians 2:19.
- "Again from the **separation but alive**" Hebrews 13:20.
- "Was translated that he should not see **separation but alive**" Hebrews 11:5.
- "How are the **separation but alive** raised?" 1 Corinthians 15:35.
- "So also is the resurrection of the **separation but alive some place without God**" 1 Corinthians 15:42.
- "**Separation but alive some place without God** is swallowed up" 1 Corinthians 15:55.
- "Abolished is **separation but alive some place without God**" 1 Corinthians 15:26. If separation is abolished or swallowed up, then where are the separated or dead going to be?
- "And the **separated from God but alive**, shall be raised incorruptible" 1 Corinthians 15:52.
- "By man came **separation but alive**, by man came also the resurrection of the **separation but alive**" 1 Corinthians 15:21.
- "You proclaim the Lord's **separation but alive** till he comes" 1 Corinthians 11:26.
- "Whosoever lives and believes on me shall never **separate**" John 11:26.
- "Except a grain of wheat fall into the earth and **separates**" John 12:24.
- "It is Christ Jesus that **separated but alive**" Romans 8:24.
- "The body is **separated but alive** because of sin" Romans 8:10.
- "Sin revived, and I **separated**" Romans 7:9.

- "These all **separated** in faith" Hebrews 11:23.
- "And I will kill her children with **separation**" Revelation 2:23.
- "A name that you live, and are **separated from God but alive**" Revelation 3:1.
- "**Separation** shall be on more" Revelation 21:4. Also "The last enemy that shall be abolished is **Separation**" 1 Corinthians 15:26. This is the same as saying "separation shall be separated."
- "*Though he **die**, yet shall he **live***" John 11:25. This would be saying, "Though he be **separated but alive**, yet shall he be **unseparated**."
- "*And whosoever lives and believes on me shall never die*" John 11:26. Shall never have a **separation** of body and soul.

Whatever death is, (1) if death is really death, (2) or if is death is not death but alive is only separated from God, but tormented by God, it would be undeniable that James 2:26 says it is the earthly body that is separated (dead); therefore alive, "*For as the body apart from the spirit is dead*" is used repeatedly to prove death is not death but that the spirit of the lost is alive but it is separated from God, yet it is somehow tormented by God; in this passage it is the body that is dead; therefore, it would be the body that has turned to dust that is alive separated from God. If death is only separation from God, James would be saying, "For as the body apart from the spirit is separated," nothing is said about the spirit being dead, nothing about, "For as the spirit apart from the body is dead" nothing about the spirit being alive but separated from God, **but they do not want to make the dead body be separated but alive, they want this to be saying only the spirit is alive.** If the change they want to make, that death is not death but only separation from God, what do they have this passage saying? It is the body that James says is dead, he says nothing about the spirit being dead; therefore, the dead body is not dead but is separated from God but it would be alive.

If death is only separation, not death, when the body and the spirit were separated from each other:

1. The dead body would not be dead, it would be alive (separated) in one place, just as alive as the spirit from which it is separated.
2. The spirit would be alive (separated) in another place, but no more alive then the body from which it would be separated.
  - Both would be equality separated from each other. If death were only separation, not a real death, the body that was separated from the spirit would be just as alive as the spirit that is separated from the body. **The spirit would be no more separated (alive) then the body.**

*"For the wages of sin is **death**, but the free gift of God is eternal **life**"* (Romans 6:23). **If "life" is literal then "death" in the same passage is just a literal.** How could anyone know that just one word in a literal sentence is not just as literal as all the other words? If the death of sinner is not a literal death, the life for believers is not a literal life. The same persons that tell us death is not a literally death tell us that death literally means death when it is used in reference to animals; dead animals are dead, not separated from God, but alive some place where God is not at. **Those who tell us that death means alive, but separated from God do not want to use separation when talking about the just dead or the death of animals, and definitely not when talking about the death of Jesus, for then it does not fit in with the theology that says death cannot mean death; therefore, death can only mean separation but alive for the lost. But, according to this theology, death cannot mean separation for the saved. Death means alive but separated from God only when they want it to.**

If death is only eternal separation from God, that separation would be forever, and death could never be destroyed, the lost would always be separated from God and Paul was wrong in 1 Corinthians 15:54. Any kind of life is not death. When we say God cannot die, we mean God cannot cease to exist, not that God is separated.

**The same ones that tell us death is separation from God also tell us that God will forever be with the lost in Hell tormenting them, that the lost can never be separated from God. Which time do they believe what they say?** All life depends on God the giver of life; therefore, separated from God no one could have life, not life in Hell, or any other place.

This theology makes nonsense of the Bible. The Bible speaks repeatedly of death, and the wages of sin being death, but this theology tells us that everyone is born deathless. If no one is dead, the resurrection will not be from the dead to living, but just a change of address from the living who are separated to the living who are unseparated. The English word death and the Greek word from which it is translated both mean death, not life.

"Spiritual death" and "death is a separation" are not Biblical expressions. They are interpretations. They are additions used to teach what man wants to hear, not what the Bible teaches. Death and separation are different words in both the Hebrew and the Greek, and have different meanings just as they do in English. When someone dies we say that person is dead, not that person is separated but alive.

How can death be a separation of the body and soul when the soul (a living being, person) is the earthly body that is in the image of Adam? 1 Corinthians 15:48-50: It is the image of Adam, the soul, a living being that is flesh and blood, and cannot inherit the kingdom of God.

**Is there life without God?** If death is life separated from God, then mankind can live without God, and life can exist that is not sustained by God. But, the truth is the dead can never be separated from God if the dead are not dead, if they have eternal life with torment it would be God keeping them alive and doing the tormenting. There could be absolutely **no existence** if a person or a soul were separated from God, for there can be **no life** without God, and without life there can be **no torment**. If any have life in Hell, God must be in Hell with them giving them this life, and He must be where they are doing the tormenting, for if He were not, there would be no life and no torment. **To be separate from God can only mean to be nowhere. If a person can exist separated from God, that person is self-existing; they are a God for only a God can be self-existing; therefore, according to today's theology, all the lost who are separated from God are self-existing Gods.** How far will they go to prove "Hell"? Death is a separation but not eternal self-existing life separated from God; death is a separation from life.

The King James Version puts God in Hell. *"If I make my bed in Hell behold thou art there"* (Psalm 139:8). If those in Hell are separated from God, then God cannot be in Hell, but by its mistranslation to put Hell in the Bible it is undeniable that the King James Version says that God is in Hell. Did they think God has forever given the lost to Satan to do with them what he wants to? Will Satan have his own kingdom where he is in total control, which will have more in it than God's kingdom? He will if the dead are separated from God and God is not in Hell with them. If there were a Hell, which way is it? (1) Either God is in Hell doing the tormenting and sustaining the life they have, and they are not separated from Him, (2) or God is not in Hell, and the lost are separated from Him and He is not doing the tormenting or sustaining the life they have. It cannot be both



ways. Today's theology makes many problems. Where did the concept come from that there is any life when one is separated from God, the source of all life? It is not a matter of eternal life with Christ, or eternal life separated from Christ, for there is no life separated or apart from Christ. A sinner does not have any kind of immortal life. Only those in Christ will have immortality only after the resurrection.

If death is "separation" of a soul from the earthly body, and not a real death, then the resurrection could only be the return and reuniting of the soul to the earthly body, and they must forever be together or the resurrection would not be forever. If all earthly bodies end at the end of this earth, then death (separation) of the saved will last forever; the soul would be forever separated from the earthly body, which would not exist. But those who teach death is separation only want death to be separation when death is a soul that is alive but separated from God, all other times death is death; death cannot mean eternal life part of the time and death part of the time.

Alexander Campbell: "Every word not specially explained or defined in a particular sense by any standard writer of any particular age and country, is to be taken in the current or commonly received signification of that country and age in which the writer lived and wrote." Christian System, page 3.

Theological meaning of words came about after the New Testament. Both the Old Testament and New Testament use the words as those to whom God was speaking used them.

Did God say one thing, but mean something different from what He said? If so, there is no need for us to read the Bible, for no one could know that God used "death" to mean "separated but alive" without a revelation from God, or someone who is inspired to tell us. Who was the inspired person that told us "death" means "separated but alive?" If no inspired person did tell us, many preach that which they have no way of knowing, for they would have no revelation to tell them that when God said death that He really intended to say separated but alive.

#### **Reasoning in a endless circle**

- Eternal separation from God is used to prove all have an immortal soul that cannot die.
- An immortal soul that cannot die is used to prove death cannot be death, but that the deathless soul is alive separation from God.
- Then eternal separation from God is used to prove death cannot be death, but that death is eternal life separation from God.
- Then an immortal soul that cannot die is used to prove death cannot be death, but that the deathless soul is alive separation from God.
- Then—Then—Then—.

After the second death the dead will not be with God, but how can being dead, and not with God prove that they have an immortal soul that is alive some place, a place where God is not there? Death is the opposite of life, another kind of life is not death, not even if it was possible to exist and to have life separated from God; if anyone were alive some place, that person would not be dead.

#### **If death is separation**

#### **What is separated from what?**

At death the dead body goes back to the earth, the body is really dead. But we are told that the soul that was in the dead body that has gone back to the earth is separated from

the body that was in, but just as alive as it was when it was in the body; the body is without life—the deathless soul lives. What could be resurrected from the dead? Only the dead body that has gone back to the earth from which it came.

**Summary: If, as some teach, that Hell is the punishment for sin, then being eternally tormented by God, not separation or death is "the wages of sin." Being tormented by God, not separation from God is made to be the thing they call death, but those who change death from being death, to death being alive but separation from God do not seem to see they are teaching two completely different doctrines at the same time.**

1. **Death is an eternal life of torment with God doing the tormenting.**
2. **Or death is an eternal life separated from God.**

**But who do they believe would be doing the tormenting if the living dead were separated from God?**

**Most that believe unconditional immortality do not think of the lost as really being separated from God but of God being where the lost are and tormenting them forever. They say separation, but that is only an attempt to take death out of the Bible when they actually think and teach God is the one who will be where the lost are, and God will be the one who will be eternally tormenting them. They do not really believe separation from God, as if there could be life any place where God is not.**

1. They seem to be somewhat confused for they say death is separation from God and "a loss of well being," but tell those who grieve at funerals that their dead loved ones are not separated from God, but they are in Heaven with God, and their well being is now much better than it was before death.
2. Then tell the lost that the dead lost are not separated from God, that God with always be with and always them tormenting them.

This redefining of death to be life has caused much of the confusion in the church.

**John 3:36:** *"But, he that obeyed not the Son shall not see life, but the wrath of God abides on him."* Implied: he shall see death, the opposite of life. You are alive, or you are dead, no in between. Will those in Hell that cannot die have no life? If they *"shall not see life,"* how can they be alive to be tormented when they are in Hell? Can a rock that does *"not see life"* be tormented? *"Shall not see life"* is not to be alive anywhere, not to be alive in Hell. How much clearer could Jesus have possibly have been, how much clearer could He have said whoever rejects Him shall not see life, not see an eternal life of torment?

**Everlasting life, or everlasting destruction** Matthew 7:13-14: *"Enter through the narrow gate; for the gate is wide and the way is broad that leads to destruction, and there are many who enter through it. For the gate is small and the way is narrow that leads to life, and there are few who find it."* Destruction is used in contrast to life, not both leads to life, the narrow gate to eternal life in one place and the broad gate to eternal life in another place. Jesus said as clear as language can be that the wide gate leads to destruction not life. *"Or those eighteen, upon whom the tower in Siloam fell, and killed them...except you repent, you shall all likewise perish"* (Luke 13:4-5). "Killed" and "likewise perish" are both the same, both death, not eternal life.

**"Worthy of death," but cannot die** Romans 1:32. *"They that practice such things are worthy of death,"* but if they have an immortal never dying something from birth, this

something could never die. Why did Paul bother to say they are worthy of death if he knows they could not die?

**When does a sinner die?** If death means only separation, the sinner is separated from God now. Is the second death to be a "double separation?" Will they be any more separated than they now are? If the lake of fire, which is the second death, is only a separation from God, and they are now separated from Him, they cannot be any more separated than they are now.

**Literally or figuratively:**

Thomas Andrews said that those who accept annihilation as the end of mankind claim that the words destroy and death that are used to describe eternal punishment should be understood literally (1997 Florida College Lectures, page 169).

Those who believe in Hell must change "*death*" to be figuratively or allegorical, not a real death; but they make "*life*" real even when both are used in the same sentence. On the same page he said, "The Biblical concept of eternal extends to both life and death."

- The Biblical concept, eternal death.
- The Biblical concept, eternal life.
  - Death will last just as long as life, if life is without end, death is also without end.

The Biblical concept is that the death is just as eternal as the life. If death is figuratively and not real death, then life is figuratively and not real life. One cannot be figuratively and the other literal just because he need it that way for his theology. If death is figurative, then there are two kinds of figuratively life.

- **If death is figurative, then life must be figurative.**
- **Eternal "*death*"** is as literal as **eternal "*life*."** Does a real sin have a figurative punishment? Death must be "*wrest*" (2 Peter 3:16) into something that is not death to make it fit around the doctrine of an immortal, immaterial, invisible "soul" that cannot die; therefore, death of a deathless "soul" has to be changed to be only a figurative death.
- "*There is only one Lawgiver and Judge, the One who is able to **save and to destroy***" (James 4:12). "*But we are not of those who shrink back and are **destroyed**, but of those who believe and are **saved***" (Hebrews 10:39). If the destroying is figuratively, and is not literally destroying, then the saving is also figuratively, and is not literally saving.

Three blind men were told to feel an elephant and tell what it looks like. One felt the tusk and said, "It is hard and smooth." One the leg- "It is like a tree." One the tail- "It is like a brush." None told what the elephant is like. "It is like a brush" is not a description of an elephant, and "separated" from God, but are alive without Him is not a description of death.

**"Dead while she lives"** 1 Timothy 5:6, What was dead?

- Her body was alive.
- According to those that say we now have an immortal soul, that soul is always alive and it can never be dead.
  - Even though this passage is used to prove she had an immortal soul, it says nothing about a soul or a spirit.
  - She was dead in her relationship to God. She did not have a dead body, or a dead soul.

Dead and alive at the same time. In what sense is she alive? Physically she is not dead, but was alive. In what sense is she dead? She is the same as all other sinners and unsaved people. Their death is so certain that they are spoken of as being dead (See Luke 9:60). They do not have Christ living in them, and the "life" He came to give (John 5:21-29). They have only the "resurrection of judgment" (John 5:29) to look forward to, and the wages of sin, death (Romans 6:23), not the "resurrection of life" (John 5:29). Both life for those who believe, and death for those who do not believe, are so certain that throughout the New Testament it speaks as if we now have the eternal life or death, which will come at the judgment. **The only life she has is physical life. How can an immortal soul that will always have life be gotten out of "while she lives"?** It was her body that "lives," not an immortal, immaterial, invisible something that lives without the body; therefore, if a "soul" were in this passage it could only be in the part of her that was "dead" to which is added "spiritual dead."

- Because the passage speaks of her being dead while her body lived, her having a soul that is alive while she is dead is read into this passage even when nothing is said about an immortal soul, or nothing about any kind of life after death.
- This passage is often used to prove that the "soul" cannot be dead, but it has another kind of life, even when there is nothing said about a "soul" in it. "Dead while she lives" **must** be changed to be, "Alive while she is alive."
- Death **must** be removed from this passage and life with torment for something that cannot be dead added to it; this is what is called pulling something out of thin air, or reading into a passage something that is wanted to be in it.

The Bible uses death in both a literal and a figurative application. In the literal use of death life has ceased to exist. The figurative use of a word must take its meaning from its literal use. The figurative use of death is often confused with the literal use of death. The Christian widow that "has her hope set on God" had a relationship with God but if she "gives herself to pleasure" that relationship is dead; it no longer exists, the relationship is dead. She "is (figuratively) dead while she lives," but the real death will not come until after the judgment.

In Luke 15:11-32, Matthew 8:21-22. "Follow me; and leave the dead (those who have no relationship with God) to bury their own dead." There is nothing about an "immaterial invisible part of man" that is alive in the dead that are to bury the dead. Neither the dead that was doing the burying, nor the dead that were buried were a dead immortal soul that cannot be dead, both the one that was alive, and the one that was dead, were both dead in the same way, both were dead in their relationship to God. The prodigal son had a relationship with his father, the relationship ceased to exist, then was restored when the son returned. He was alive, then dead, then alive in his relationship with his father, but he was never literally dead, and there was no literal resurrection of the dead; in this passage there is nothing said about an immortal soul although it is repeatedly used to prove the prodigal son was an immortal soul that was separated from his father. Even today a Jewish family often has a funeral for a person that has been converted to another religion, or leaves the Jewish religion.

This was more than a simple separation. Frequently one person is separated from another, but not counted as dead. When a child leaves home we do not say our child is dead, but in Bible times the Hebrews would say the child was dead if it left home and had no relationship with the father or mother, it was as if he was dead to them. When God

gives a revelation, He used words and customs just as they were used by the persons to whom He gave the revelation, and not only the words, but also the customs of the persons to whom He give the revelation. To the Hebrew mind and to the Oriental cultures even today, the Prodigal son is counted as dead and the father no longer has a son.

*"Truly, truly, I say to you, he who hears My word, and believes Him who sent Me, has eternal life, and does not come into judgment, but has passed out of death into life. Truly, truly, I say to you, an hour is coming AND NOW IS, when **the dead shall hear the voice of the Son of God; and those who hear shall live**"* (John 5 24-25). He was not saying the hour had come when He was going to the graveyard, and the dead there would hear His voice and live, be resurrected from the grave. He was not speaking of a physical or literal resurrection, but of those who are not believers (dead by the Hebrew and Oriental cultures) becoming believers and alive to God. The widow was dead to God just as the Prodigal Son was dead to his father because she had put something ahead of God in her life. The resurrection at the second coming of Christ is not spoken of in this passage.

- "And YOU were dead in YOUR trespasses and sins" (Ephesians 2:1).
- "But SHE who gives HERSELF to wanton pleasure is dead even while SHE LIVES" (1 Timothy 5:6).
  - Nothing is said about an immortal something that cannot die being dead, it is the person that is dead to God. She was dead to God even while she was still alive just as the Ephesians were dead to God before they became Christians, not one thing is said about a soul, not about it being alive or it being dead, not that is even exist; why then is this passage used repeatedly to show all have in immortal something in them.

Matthew Henry: "**She that lives in pleasure is dead while she live**, is no a living member of the church, but as a carcass in it, or a mortified member. They are in the world to no purpose, buried alive as to the great ends of living" Matthew Henry's Commentary, page 1891.

**Die in the Old Testament:** Die is from "moosh" in the Old Testament and occurs over 800 times. None of the 800 has any references to death being anything but death. In no one is death a separation of the earthly body from a soul that is alive, or that anything is as alive as it will ever be after the death of the person. Throughout the Old Testament, "moosh" is used of both men and animals, and makes no distinction between them. Both die. *"For the fate of the sons of men and the fate of beasts is the same. As one dies (moosh) so dies (moosh) the other"* (Ecclesiastes 3:19). Fish, cattle, frogs, men, dogs, lions, a city, and flies all die (moosh). For all, death is the end of life, and if there were no resurrection, a person would be as all the above, dead forever.

In "Truth Magazine," June 7, 2001, page 343, Johnie Edwards has a short article, "What Death Says."

- What does death say? It says that for there to be life after death, there must be a resurrection from the dead.
- What does the resurrection say? It says if there is to be a resurrection, there must be death to be resurrected from, not a higher kind of life than life that we now have that would not need a resurrection.
- The resurrection says death is a real death; it says someone who is not dead cannot be raised from the dead by a resurrection.

J. B. Coffman, 2 Corinthians 2:16: "The meaning therefore is, the Gospel, which arises from Christ and which is preached through us, is to the unbelieving, but the incense arising from one crucified and dead, and so it is to them a savor from the dead and producing death. But to the believing it is a savor

FROM THE LIVING, PRODUCING LIFE." J. W. McGarvey, 1916. "McGarvey pointed out the extremely significant phrases 'from death' and 'from life' as used in this passage. To the unbelieving, the news of the Gospel is from one who was crucified and is dead: so, for them, it is an odor from death unto death EVEN ETERNAL DEATH; but to Christians, the news of the Gospel is 'from life unto life' in them that are saved."

The widow is under the sentence of death, but the sentence of death has been removed for those in Christ, and the promise of life (immortality, incorruption) given to them. For those not in Christ, there is only death, the wages of their sin. They will be raised only to face the judgment and the second death "*a savor from death unto death.*"

**"A Savor from life unto life"** The new birth (John 3:3). "*Walk in newness of life*" (Romans 6:4). "*Have passed out of death into life*" (1 John 3:14). At the second coming of Christ the saved shall "*put on immortality*" (1 Corinthians 15:53), after which there will be no death.

**"A Savor from death unto death"** Dead while she lives (1 Timothy 5:6). "*Abides in death*" (1 John 3:14). The lost will be raised from the dead at the second coming of Christ, then judgment and the second death after which there will never be any life, never a resurrection from this death.

H. L. Hastings: "In all classical literature no instance can be found where the word death has this signification of eternal torment" "The Last Judgment," 1853  
For those who are not in Christ, there is no eternal life anywhere.

## Chapter Three

### A Deathless, Immaterial, Invisible, No Substance Soul Versus The Resurrection Of The Dead

The main point of an article, "Reinterpretation Of The Scripture" in Truth Magazine, August 7, 2003, page 458 is about reinterpreting Genesis 3 to mean the Serpent was not real, but was taken from well-known pagan myths. The article points out that when one reinterpretation is accepted more will soon come, and gives some reinterpretations the writer think may come. Without doubt, many have made reinterpretations of many scriptures, and many more will make more reinterpretations; reinterpretation that the magazine said nothing about have been made and accepted by many. Some reinterpretations that have been made in the past that are historical facts, and are believed by many today, reinterpretations that have caused many of the divisions we now have are Purgatory, Limbo, worship of Mary and Saints, Nether World, holy water, the rosary, forbidding Priest to marry, the crucifix, Monks and Nuns, forbidding eating of meat on Friday, and candle-burning. About all Protestants believe Purgatory to be a change or reinterpretation, and there are hundreds more reinterpretations that are historical facts, and are believed by many today, but no one believes all to the hundreds of reinterpretations made in the past. Most believe only a few of them, and all the many others they believe to be the doctrine of man, not God. On what does anyone base his or her belief that most reinterpretations are not from God, but believe that a few are from God? Going to God's word is the only way anyone can know whether any teaching is from man or if it is from the Bible.

#### THE SUBJECTS OF THIS CHAPTER

**(1) The nature of man, from mankind now being mortal, reinterpreted to mankind now being immortal.**

- The reinterpretation of the nature of a person, that a person has a immaterial something in them is now immortal, and only it, not the person, goes to Heaven or Hell at death, only this immortal something in a person will ever live after the death of the person, only it will ever be in Heaven.
- The general confusion of soul and spirit, are they both the same, or are they two different immortal, invisible, immaterial being that are in a person and one or both will live after the person is dead?

**(2) "The wages of sin is death" reinterpreted to be the wages of sin is an eternal life of torment in Hell for an immortal soul that is not subject to death.** The resurrection versus an immortal soul that cannot die, therefore it needs no resurrection.

**(3) The reinterpretation of the final destiny of a person changed from Heaven to earth.** That the saved will forever be with Jesus in Heaven is reinterpreted to be that Jesus will forever be with the saved on this earth, and no person will ever be in Heaven.

These three reinterpretations are believed by many today, and are causing many of the divisions we now have.

**Unconditional immortality makes many of the great doctrines of the New Testament useless and/or impossible.**

### **(1) THE REINTERPRETATION OF THE DEATH OF JESUS**

*"Him who knew no sin he made to be sin on our behalf; that we might become the righteousness of God in him"* (2 Corinthians 5:21). Jesus actually died for our sins (Romans 5:8). *"We were reconciled to God through the death of his Son"* (Romans 5:10). The wages of sin is death (Romans 6:23), and Christ died our death that we may have life, not to keep us from an eternal life of torment, but to give us life (eternal life). He paid the wages for our sin, and died our death in our place, but He is not forever being tormented in our place. Death is the penalty for sin, not eternal life with torment. (Hebrews 9:11-28; 1 Peter 2:24; 2 Corinthians 5:16-19; Matthew 27:20; John 10:15; 12:23-26; 1 Corinthians 15:3; Hebrews 2:14; 9:16-17; 10:14; Isaiah 43:12). **If, as many teach, the wages of sin is eternal life in torment, Christ did not suffer eternal torment for us; therefore, He would not have paid the wages of sin for us.** Jesus bore the punishment of sin that the sinner will bear at the judgment, but He is not suffering eternal torment; therefore, if eternal torment were the wages of sin, He is not paying it for us. Life is His gift to us, not just a reward for an immaterial, invisible "soul" that has eternal life and cannot die. Those who do not reach the blood of Christ (His death) will die, for the wages of their sin is death, *"For if we have become united with him in the likeness of his death, we shall be also in the likeness of his resurrection"* (Romans 6:5). If those not united in the likeness of His death will not be in the likeness of His resurrection, then what likeness will they have in Hell? **The wages of their sin is death, not having the likeness of Christ, or Adam, or any other likeness when in Hell.** The only part of a person many says is immortal and will be in Heaven or Hell is an undying soul that can never die; therefore, Christ could not have died in its place to save a deathless soul from the wages of sin for that immortal soul would not be subject to death and would have no need for Him to have died in its place.

If Christ were as much alive in the three days His earthly body was in the grave as He was after the resurrection, then there was no difference in Christ (1) than when before He came to earth (2) than when His earthly body was in the grave (3) and now when He is in Heaven, If His death were not total and complete, if only His earthly body were dead,

then He was the same spiritual being with all the power and glory in the three days His body was in the grave that He had before He came to earth, or that He now has in Heaven. Jesus could have given nothing but His earthly body for our sins. According to those who believe we have a soul, which is only a part of us that cannot die, the soul of Christ could not and did not die; therefore, **according to their teaching Jesus did not die for our sins for he was never dead.**

The death of Jesus was not just a door by which He went instantly back to Heaven before His resurrection. He was not "*received up from you into heaven*" (Acts 1:11) unto 50 days after His death, not at the time of His death, not before His resurrection.

**Christ "poured out his being unto death"** (Isaiah 53:12). "*He poured out Himself to death*" New American Standard Bible. Christ poured out his being, not just a human body, unto dead. Unto His resurrection He was dead, not alive in Hell or any other place; if He had not been dead He could not have been resurrected.

Christ was as dead and as much under the power of death as mankind will be after death. He was not somewhere very much alive with the same body (spiritual body), and the power and glory He had before He came to earth, and His resurrection was just His coming back from someplace where He was alive, just coming back to His human body; **that would not have been a death or a resurrection.** The Wages of sin is death (Romans 6:23), and Christ died in our place with all God's wrath that we would have had upon us at the judgment. Jesus paid our debt in full. He "*lay down his life*" for us (John 15:13), but he is not suffering eternal punishment for us; therefore, if eternal punishment is the wages of sin, He is not now paying our debt.

The death Christ died and his resurrection are opposites. **If His death was not a real death, His resurrection could not be a real resurrection.** Then what would God has given when He gave His only Son, nothing more than one human body for three days. There was no real sacrifice by God or Christ, **no real resurrection** as Jesus was alive while His body was in the grave. We are told repeatedly God raised Christ from the dead (Acts 3:15; 4:10; 5:30; 10:40; 13:30; 13:37; Romans 4:24; 8:11; 10:9; 1 Corinthians 6:14; 15:15; 2 Corinthians 4:14; Galatians 1:1; Ephesians 1:20; Colossians 2:12; 1 Thessalonians 1:10; 1 Peter 1:21). "*Now the God of peace, who brought again from the dead the great shepherd of the sheep with the blood of an eternal covenant, even our Lord Jesus*" (Hebrews 13:20). Suffering is never said to be the wages of sin, but **many take away the wages of sin (death) and put an eternal life of suffering in Hell in its place.** Not to take anything away from the suffering of Christ, but if He had suffered all He did right up to His death, and then not have died for our sin; we would still have to pay the penalty of our sin, which is death (Romans 6:23). Jesus died for us, but He is not being forever tormented for us.

- "*He laid down his life for us*" (1 John 3:16).
- "*Tell the vision to no man, until the Son of man be risen from the dead*" (Matthew 17:9).
- "*And go quickly, and tell his disciples, he is risen from the dead*" (Matthew 28:7).
- "*Thus it is written, that the Christ should suffer, and rise again from the dead the third day*" (Luke 24:46).
- "*This is now the third time that Jesus was manifested to the disciples, after that he was risen from the dead*" (John 21:14).
- "*And killed the Prince of life; whom God raised from the dead*" (Acts 3:15).

**(a) Christ is our Passover:** Exodus 20: The lamb died in the place of the first-born. It was slain, not forever tormented. Its blood was placed on the doorpost, and the death



angel passed over. If there were no blood, there was death for the first born, not an eternal life of torment. *"For our Passover also has been sacrificed, even Christ"* (1 Corinthians 5:7). *"That by the grace of God he should taste of death for every man"* (Hebrews 2:9). Christ died in the place of the sinner. It is by His blood that we are saved from death just as the blood of the lamb saved the first-born from death; the saved will be passed over by the second death. He tasted of death for all, but He is not forever being tormented for all.

**(b) No atonement:** If God's penalty for sin is not death, it would not have been necessary for Christ to die to redeem us from the curse of the law; for if the law did not inflict death on the sinner, and yet required the death of Christ for the redemption of the sinner, it inflicted on Christ as payment for our sins something it would not have inflicted on us as payment for our sin.

Curtis Dickinson: "If the punishment due for our sins is not actual death, then Christ could not have made an atonement for us by his death. Under the Mosaic Law there was no such punishment as imprisonment for life, much less imprisonment for life under continuous torture. The penalty for the greatest offenses was always and only death." *What The Bible Teaches About Immortality And Future Punishment*, page 16, church of Christ.

If the soul does not die, but is translated to Heaven or Hell at death, then Christ was not dead. He was not raised the third day, but only came back from Heaven or Hell, **but it could not be a resurrection.** In Old Testament types, it was the **life** given up in the blood poured out on the altar that atoned for sin; it was **life** given up by Christ that atones. Sin must be atoned for; the wages of sin is death. If Christ did not die, no atonement was made. If the wages of sin is an everlasting life of torment, then Christ did not pay it, and no atonement was made. When "soul" (nehphesh-life) is reinterpreted to be an immaterial, invisible, undying inter part of a person, then when Christ "poured out his soul (nehphesh-life) unto death" (Isaiah 53:10-12), was this undying part of Him dead? If He were not dead, He did not pour out his life (nehphesh) unto death, and there was no atonement.

- Wages of sin is death.
- Christ died in our place, our death.
- Therefore, believers are saved from death by the death of Christ, not saved from an eternal life of torment. Death is death; death is not life.

**(c) No New Covenant:** *"For where a testament is, there must of necessity be the death of him that made it. For a testament is in force where there has been death: for it never avail while he that made it lives"* (Hebrews 9:16-17). If Christ only changed from living on Earth to living any other place, whether it was Heaven, Hell or wherever.

1. If His soul which was alive before He came to Earth.
2. Was alive while He was on Earth.
3. And was alive when His earthly body was in the grave.
4. Just as it now alive in Heaven.

He did not die, there was no death, and the New Covenant is not in force.

***"He was cut off out of the land of the living: for the transgression of my people was he stricken. And He made his grave with the wicked, and with the rich in his death"*** (Isaiah 53:8-9). ***"Him being delivered by the determinate counsel and foreknowledge of God, you have taken, and by wicked hands have crucified and slain: whom God has raised up, having loosed the pains of death: because it was not possible that he should be held of it...Men and brethren, let me freely speak unto you of the patriarch David, that he is both dead and was buried, and his grave is with us unto this day. Therefore being a***

prophet, and knowing that God had sworn with an oath to him, that of the fruit of his loins, according to the flesh, **he would raise up Christ** to sit on his throne, he seeing this before **spoke of the resurrection of Christ**, that his soul was not left in hades, neither did his flesh see corruption. **This Jesus has God raised up**, whereof we are all witnesses" (Acts 2:24-32). This passage speaks of the death of David, and the death of Christ as being the same death with David still dead, but Christ rose from the dead after three days. Christ was as dead for three days as David still is, and will be unto the resurrection. Christ was dead and buried in the grave just as David still is, not alive someplace.

*"And therefore it was imputed unto him for righteousness. Now it was not written for his sake alone, that it was imputed to him; but for us also, to whom it shall be imputed, if we believe on him that **raised up Jesus our Lord from the dead**; who was delivered for our offenses **and was raised for our justification**" (Romans 4:22-25). "For He has **made Him to be sin for us**, that we might be made the righteousness of God in him" (2 Corinthians 5:21). "Who in the days of his flesh, when he had offered up prayers and supplications with strong crying and tears unto him **that was able to save him from death**, and was heard in that he feared, though he were a Son, yet learned he obedience through the things that he suffered; and being made perfect, he became the author of eternal salvation unto all them that obey him" (Hebrews. 5:7-9). "For Christ is not entered into the holy places made with hands, which are figures of the true; but into heaven itself, now to appear in the presence of God for us: nor yet that he should offer himself often, as the high priest entered into the holy place every year with the blood of others; for then must he often have suffered since the foundation of the world: but now once in the end of the age (aion-age, not world, probably the end of the Jewish age that ended at His death) **has he appeared to put away sin by the sacrifice of Himself** And as it appointed unto men once to die, but after this the judgment: **so Christ was once offered to bear the sins of many**; and unto them that look for him shall he appear the second time without sin unto salvation" (Hebrews 9:24-28).*

**We are saved by the death of Christ.** We were baptized into the death of Christ, and raised from the dead. In some way that we may never fully understand those that are in Christ have died with Him, and His death became our death for our sins. See 2 Corinthians 5:14; Romans 6:3-8; Colossians 2:12; Galatians 2:20; Philippians 3:10; 2 Timothy 2:11.

**(d) Makes Christ's death be inadequate:** Many who say they "speak where the Bible speaks, and are silent where the Bible is silent," say "We cannot fully grasp the righteousness and holiness of God, nor the sinfulness of sin in His perfectly created universe." They believe that the sinfulness of sin makes eternal torment in Hell necessary, and eternal death would not be enough for God to be a just God. If they, "Speak where the Bible speaks," then how do they know that sin is not evil enough to require the supreme penalty of the death of the sinner; therefore, the sinner must be let off with a lesser penalty of a life of torment. The Bible clearly says death is required. *"The wages of sin is death,"* not just a life of torment. They are clearly speaking where the Bible does not speak. It is often said that the sinfulness of sin makes Hell necessary, but not once does the Bible say this; it says, *"The wages of sin is death."*

**When Christ paid the wages of sin for us, it was with His death. He is not suffering eternal torment for us; therefore, if the wages of sin is eternal torment and not death, then the death of Christ was inadequate to pay for our sins. The wages of**

**sin is death and death is definitely the forfeiture of life, if eternal torment is the wages of sin, Christ did not pay it, and there is no salvation for anyone.**

**(2) THE REINTERPRETATION OF  
THE SECOND COMING OF CHRIST**

If all the saved are now in Heaven with Christ, and all the lost are now in Hell, why is He coming back to this earth? Death the "*last enemy*" has been made to do what Christ would have done at His second coming, namely taken all the saved to Heaven. There would be no need for Him to come back to do what death has already done; if the saved go to Heaven at death, they would not be on earth and they would not be dead. The doctrine of an immortal undying soul has supplanted the second coming of Christ by making the enemy of mankind be his best friend that takes him instantly to Heaven. **This view has Christ coming back to earth for those who are not on earth, but are already with Him in Heaven.**

The Abraham's bosom view says Christ is coming back to the earth for the resurrection, but the ones He is coming back to earth to raise from the dead are those who are not dead; they are already alive somewhere other than on earth. This view makes souls be alive wherever they think Abraham's bosom to be. No one is dead; therefore, there cannot be a resurrection of the undead who are alive either in Heaven, or alive in Abraham's bosom.

**(3) THE REINTERPRETATION OF THE RESURRECTION  
OF THE DEAD FROM THE GRAVE  
INTO AN INSTANT TRANSLATION TO HEAVEN  
MAKES A RESURRECTION IMPOSSIBLE  
AND NOT NEEDED BY ELIMINATING DEATH**

Those that are not dead cannot be raised from the dead. Unconditional immortality says a person has an immaterial "soul" in them that is now immortal, and it is not subject to death, and that this "soul" that is in them goes to Heaven or Hell at death. If this were true, it would make the resurrection be of no consequence, impossible, and not needed. Most unconditional immoralists say whatever the immaterial something that is in a person is the only part of a person that will be in Heaven, and it is not now dead, and it is not now in the grave, and it will not be dead, or in the grave at the coming of Christ. If it were true that the only part of a person that can never die is the only part of him that will ever be in Heaven, and it is already in Heaven, then there could not be a resurrection of the dead, for this undead soul that is in a person would not be dead. The resurrection is at the coming of Christ; if the souls of those who have died in Christ are now alive in Heaven, some for two thousand years or more, what would be the point of the second coming of Christ to receive these souls unto Himself (John 14:3). Would it not be ridiculous for Christ to come to Earth for His people when they had been with Him in Heaven, some for thousands of years? There would be nothing on earth to rise, but the earthly body that will never be in Heaven. 1 Corinthians 15:50 "*Flesh and blood cannot inherit the kingdom of God.*"

There could not be a resurrection to immortal life if a soul that is now in a person now has immortal life; that it is only this soul that will be in Heaven, it would just go on living without being resurrected. Can those who are not asleep wake up? **Dying has been made into a translation to another kind of life, not a death. Death has been made into a doorway into a continuation of life for an immaterial soul without the resurrection**

**in which the lost souls will be just as alive as the saved, and the lost souls would have eternal life that is just as eternal as the saved.** The sting of death has been removed, and death made into a victory, made into instantaneous life in Heaven, and in so doing has completely eliminated the need for a resurrection. Many believe the dead now have a spiritual body that now has incorruption (1 Corinthians 15:42), that it now has glory and power (1 Corinthians 15:43), and believe that it is now in the image of the heavenly (1 Corinthians 15:49). If, as soon as they die, the dead are alive and they have the image of Christ, what more will they have or could want after the resurrection? **Going instantly to Heaven at death makes the immaterial souls that were in David and all the Old Testament saints to have been saved, and they went to Heaven before and without any need of the death and resurrection of Christ.**

What about the immaterial souls that would now be in Hell? Are they to be resurrected; what could possibly be the purpose of their resurrection, if it is for judgment why are they now in Hell before they are judged? To judge them after they had been in Hell, some for thousands of years, would be nothing but pure mockery; it would make God to have sent them to Hell without a judgment, or be unsure of His first judgment and need a second one.

### **JUDGED TWICE**

The doctrine of going to Heaven or Hell immediately at death would make both the lost and the saved be judged two times.

- The lost must be judged at death and found worthily of eternal torment in Hell, then be called out of Hell at the coming of Christ for a second judgment for the same sins that they had already been judged for, found guilty, and condemned again to the same eternal torment by God.
- Those that were judged at death and found worthily of eternal life in Heaven, would have to be called out of Heaven, to enter their graves to be resurrected, judged, and found not guilty a second time, and then enter Heaven a second time.

### **THE RESURRECTION OF THE DEAD IS AN UNSOLVABLE PROBLEM**

For those who believe an undying soul is translated to Heaven or Hell at the moment of death without the resurrection at the second coming of Christ, the resurrection is a problem for which they seem to have no solution. What do they think will be raised from the dead when Christ comes? What body will be raised; if the earthly body is raised, what will be done with it after it is raised from the dead? It cannot go to Heaven; what would happen to the earthly body if it were raised? **A resurrection of those who are alive in Heaven or Hell is no resurrection at all; it is an empty show. It is an inescapable fact that according to the popular teaching, that there is no place for a resurrection in the popular view of today, and no logical reason for it.** A resurrection requires that the person raised be dead at the time of their resurrection, not more alive than when they were living. **The Bible teaching of the resurrection of the dead at the coming of Christ cannot be reconciled with the heathen doctrine of an immortal soul. They are opposed to each other, and both cannot be true; an immortal soul that cannot be dead cannot be resurrected from the dead; it is dead persons that will be resurrected, not living deathless souls.** How could life be restored to those that are alive?

"Nevertheless, there is a sturdy realism about the way the Bible handles death. No effort is made to avoid its impact. No plastic disguises are attempted to make the dead seem still alive. No circumlocutions or euphemisms are employed in an effort to make death seem something more pleasant than it is. In biblical stories men and women die and are buried and appropriately mourned. They neither 'pass away' nor 'expire.' They die. For death is more than ceasing to breathe and more than a stage on the great journey of life. It is an end, a period placed after the last chapter of the book or mortal existence. Scripture never skirts that fact." Fred P. Thompson, Jr. *What The Bible Says About Heaven And Hell*, page 54, College Press, 1983.

### **THE RESURRECTION OF THE DEAD IS A FUTURE EVENT**

John 5:28-29; Acts 24:15

If a person has an immortal soul that will never be dead, and this "soul" is the only thing that will be in Heaven, the New Testament teaching of the resurrection has been destroyed. The Greek concept of the immortal soul assumes that this soul already possesses eternal life and the only question is, "Where will this eternal life be spent?" It cannot be said that something that is now living can be raised from the dead. It is utterly impossible to harmonize the New Testament teaching of a resurrection with the pagan teaching of an immortal soul. If there is no resurrection, then all life ceases at death. *"For if the dead are not raised, neither has Christ been raised: and if Christ has not been raised, your faith is vain; you are yet in your sins. Then they also that are fallen asleep in Christ have perished. If we have only hoped in Christ in this life, we are of all men most pitiable"* (1 Corinthians 15:18). **There is no stronger way Paul could have said that there is no hope of life after death if there is no resurrection; that those who are fallen asleep in Christ have perished; that they are not now in Heaven before the resurrection. If they were in Heaven they could not have perished in any way.** What ever you think will be in Heaven, the whole person or just a soul, it is clear from this passage that neither one will be in Heaven if there is no resurrection, both (1) the person or (2) their soul has ceased to exist, and neither one is now in Heaven before the resurrection, or neither one will ever be in Heaven if there is no resurrection.

**They have not yet been raised – OR – they are in Heaven without being raised.**

**They have not yet been judged – OR – they are in Heaven without being judged.**

- **Before the resurrection and judgment *"they also that are fallen asleep in Christ have perished"* if the dead are not raised.**

▪ **----OR----**

- **Before the resurrection and judgment they that are fallen asleep in Christ have not perished, even if there is no resurrection, for they are now alive in Heaven before and without the resurrection.**

**The two are incompatible.**

- **An immortal deathless soul makes the resurrection from the dead impossible.**
- **The resurrection from the dead makes an immortal deathless soul impossible.**

**Both cannot be true. The resurrection of the dead destroys the theory of an immortal soul that is never dead; therefore, cannot be resurrected.**

Death is the end of life. The resurrection is a return to life. If death is life in another place, the resurrection is nothing more than a moving day, from being alive at one place to being alive at another place, just a continuation of life in another place, not a real resurrection from the dead.

### **THE RESURRECTION OF THE DEAD**

## IS THE ONLY HOPE OF LIFE AFTER DEATH

The Bible could not say any stronger than it does that an awakening from the dead by the resurrection is our only hope of life after death. Without the resurrection to life from death, there would be no existence after death. Being raised from the grave to immortality is the teaching of the New Testament (See 1 Corinthians 15; Matthew 22:31; Luke 14:14; John 11:25; Acts 17:31; Philippians 3:8-11; John 6:3-9). **Without the resurrection, "Your faith is worthless; you are still in your sins. Then those also who have fallen asleep in Christ have perished"** (1 Corinthians 15:17-18). *"If from human motives I fought with wild beasts at Ephesus, what does it profit me? If the dead are not raised, let us eat and drink, for tomorrow we die"* (1 Corinthians 15:32); not tomorrow immortal souls lives. Both reincarnation and the immortal soul from birth are a poor substitution for the truth. As clearly as life and death, the return of Jesus, the resurrection from the grave, and the Judgment Day are taught in the New Testament, how could anyone read the New Testament and believe reincarnation, or that Plato's immortal soul is alive before and without the resurrection?

*"If the dead are not raised"* (1 Corinthians 15:16-19).

- *"Neither has Christ been raised."*
- *"Your faith is vain (useless)."*
- *"You are yet in your sins."*
- *"They also that are fallen asleep (are dead) in Christ have perished."* If there is no resurrection of the dead, there will be no hereafter for anyone who has died.
- *"If we have only hoped in Christ in this life, we are of all men most pitiable"* for there would be no resurrection, no Judgment Day, no second death, no eternal life.

If an immaterial soul is the only thing that will never be dead, it will always live independent of the resurrection; if all souls now have eternal life, then all souls will live forever without the death and resurrection of Christ. The doctrine of the immortality of the soul has replaced the resurrection of the dead, and made the resurrection to be completely of no consequence, it has destroyed the need for the resurrection. It is a fact that the doctrine of an immortal soul that cannot die has pervaded over the doctrine of a resurrection in most churches. **There could not be a gospel more different than the gospel of an immortal soul that will never die.** Nothing is more plainly taught than there will be no life for anyone after death without the resurrection of the dead at the coming of Christ.

## AFTER THE RESURRECTION OF THE DEAD IS THE ONLY TIME ANY OF THE DEAD WILL BE ALIVE AND WITH THE LORD

*"For the Lord Himself will descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of the archangel, and with the trumpet of God; and the dead in Christ shall rise first. Then we who are alive and remain shall be caught up together with them in the clouds to meet the Lord in the air, and thus we shall always be with the Lord"* (1 Thessalonians 4:16-17).

## THE RESURRECTION OF THE DEAD IS WHEN THE JUST SHALL BE RECOMPENSED

### NOT RECOMPENSED AT DEATH FOR THOSE WHO ARE NOT DEAD

*"For you shall be recompensed in the resurrection of the just"* (Luke 14:14). No one is recompensed by going instantly to Heaven at death before the resurrection and judgment.

*"In my Father's house are many mansions; if it were not so, I would have told you; for I go to prepare a place for you. And if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again, and will receive you unto myself that where I am, there you may be also"* (John 14:3). No one, or no deathless *"immaterial part of a person"* (W. E. Vine) that will at the death of the body go to His Father's house in Heaven before He comes again. *"Unto an inheritance incorruptible, and undefiled, and that fades not away, reserved in Heaven for YOU, who by the power of God are guarded through faith unto a salvation ready to be revealed in the last time"* (1 Peter 1:4-5). The *"you"* is the person, not something in a person that will leave that person at death. It is *"you"* that Christ is preparing a place for.

**1 CORINTHIANS 15:** This entire chapter is devoted to the subject of the resurrection of the dead. In it, it is clear that Paul believed in the resurrection of the dead as being our only hope of life after death, not in an instant translation to Heaven at the moment of death.

**The dead are asleep:** Christ was *"the first fruits of those who are asleep"* (1 Corinthians 15:20). *"Are asleep"* is present tense, the Corinthian Christians who had died were asleep at the time Paul was writing this, not awake in Heaven. The dead in Christ are spoken of as being asleep through out this chapter.

1. *"Some have fallen asleep,"* some had died, (1 Corinthians 15:6).
2. *"Those who have fallen asleep in Christ have perished"* if there is no resurrection, (1 Corinthians 15:18).
3. Not all Christian will fall asleep before the coming of Christ (1 Corinthians 15:51).

**The first fruits:** In the Old Testament the first of the harvest was to be offered unto God, and then the harvest would come after the first fruits. *"But now Christ has been raised from the dead, the first fruits of those who are asleep"* (1 Corinthians 15:20). The harvest will come at the coming of Christ, *"But each in his own order: Christ the first fruits, after that those who are Christ's at His coming"* (1 Corinthians 15:23). The resurrection of the dead will be when Christ comes, if those who has pass on are alive they could not be resurrected as Christ was resurrected from the dead. To deny the resurrection by teaching an instant translation into Heaven is saying there will be no harvest at the coming of Christ. **A more direct or positive statement about how long the dead will be dead, and when the dead will no longer be dead ("at His coming") could not be made. Yet many say no Paul you are wrong, the dead are never dead.**

Christ was the first fruits (first one raised from the dead); afterward those who are Christ's shall be made alive (raised from the dead) at His coming (1 Corinthians 15:22-23). The doctrine of an immortal soul that grow out of Plato's teaching makes Christ being the first fruits or firstborn from the dead not possible, for it makes those who lived and died before His resurrection be alive before Him.

**"Utterly lost:"** *"For if the dead are not raise, it follows that Christ was not raised; and if Christ was not raised, your faith has nothing in it and you are still in your old state of sin. It follows also that those who have died within Christ's fellowship are utterly lost"* (1 Corinthians 15:16-18, New English Bible). Unconditional immortality says the real you never dies; therefore, cannot be resurrected, the real Christ could not die; therefore, was not resurrected. If Christians lives on after the death of the body they could in no way be said to be, *"Utterly lost."* If the dead saints go to Heaven at death it makes this statement by Paul be totally wrong for there would be no way that the dead saints that

were already alive in Heaven could be “*utterly lost*,” even if there were no resurrection, and if wrong it could not be inspired by God. If this passage were not inspired there would be no way we could know that anything Paul said was inspired.

“***In Christ all shall be made alive***” (1 Corinthians 15:22). If those in Christ were alive in Heaven they could not be made alive, they would already be alive. **Nothing is said about an immaterial soul in this chapter on the resurrection**, it is *us* that are saved, not an *it* that nobody knows what *it* really is, it will be us, not it that will be resurrected with a spiritual body. Is there any way that God could have told us any stronger that no one will have life after death before the resurrection?

**The inconsistency of making death a friend:** (1 Corinthians 15:52-57). According to the belief of many, the dead are instantaneous translated to Heaven at death and are with God. Yet they do all they can, pray to God to keep the sick alive and out of Heaven, spend a great sum of money to keep them on earth, and grieve when they think a loved one goes to be with Jesus. It is obvious there is an inconsistency in what they claim to believe, and what they really believe, it is obvious that they believe death to be an enemy, not a friend. Death is not an instant pass to Heaven before the resurrection.

### PAUL’S FUNERAL SERMON

“*But we do not want you to be uninformed, brethren, about those who are asleep, so that you will not grieve as do the rest who have no hope. For if we believe that Jesus died and rose again, even so God will bring with Him those who have fallen asleep in Jesus. For this we say to you by the word of the Lord, that we, who are alive and remain until the coming of the Lord, will not precede those who have fallen asleep. For the Lord Himself will descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of the archangel and with the trumpet of God, and the dead in Christ will rise first. Then we who are alive and remain will be caught up together with them in the clouds to meet the Lord in the air, and so we shall always be with the Lord. Therefore comfort one another with these words*” (1 Thessalonians 4:13-18). The Thessalonians were not concerned that some of their members had died and were with the Lord in Heaven, they were concerned about their members that had died before Christ came, that they would not be there to meet Christ when He came. Paul points out that there was no difference in privilege between those that had fallen asleep and those that were alive, that both would be caught up to meet the Lord when He comes. Paul did not comfort them then by telling them that their loved ones were already up in Heaven looking down on them, he comforted them by telling them that:

1. Their loved one who had fallen asleep in Jesus “*will rise first.*” It is by knowing that loved ones who are now asleep in Jesus will be resurrected to life that gives both the Thessalonians Christians and us comfort, not an immortal soul that is not dead. “*And the dead in Christ will rise first,*” Christ will raise them that are dead from the grave, not resurrect them that are alive from Heaven. The immortal soul doctrine is Pagan, not Christian; immortality is promised, it is not now possessed by living saints or possessed by sleeping saints after death; **no one will ever be alive and have immortality after death before or without the resurrection at the coming of Christ.**
2. Then any that are alive when Christ comes will be “*caught up together with them in the clouds to meet the Lord in the air.*”



3. *And so we* (both those who are resurrected from sleep when Christ comes and those that are alive when Christ come) *shall always be with the Lord.*"

The doctrine of being awake in Heaven at death, or awake any other place before the resurrection, is both a rejection of Paul's inspired teaching and is changing God's word to the Pagan teaching of Plato. How can anyone say they believe in the resurrection if they believe no one is asleep to wake up, if they believe no one is dead to be resurrected? If all Christians that die were now alive in Heaven, no one would be dead to be resurrected.

NEW BIBLE DICTIONARY: "The most startling characteristic of the first Christian preaching is its emphasis on the resurrection. The first preachers were sure that Christ had risen, and sure, in consequence, the believers would in due course rise also. This set them off from all the other teachers of the ancient world...Nothing is more characteristic of even the best thought of the day than its hopelessness in the face of death. Clearly the resurrection is of the very first importance for the Christian faith" page 1010, 1996. The resurrection is a New Testament teaching. The word resurrection is used forty-one times in the New Testament but not once in the Old Testament.

ADAM CLARKE on 1 Corinthians 15:32: "I believe the common method of pointing this verse is erroneous; I propose to read it: 'If, after the manner of men, I have fought with beasts at Ephesus, what does it advantage me? If the dead rise not, let us eat and drink; for tomorrow we die.' **What the apostle says here is a regular and legitimate conclusion from the doctrine that there is no resurrection; for if there be no resurrection, then there can be no judgment-no future state or rewards and punishment;** why, therefore, should we bear crosses, and keep ourselves under continual discipline? Let us eat and drink, take all the pleasure we can; **for tomorrow we die, and there is an end of us forever.**"

JERRY CROSS: "It is important to notice that Paul argues for a resurrection, and not a release. Paul does not have in mind some disembodied existence such as advocated by Greek thinkers such as Plato. Furthermore, Paul is arguing for a resurrection that is a transformation and not a continuation or resumption of life just as it had been laid down. **The resurrected body is to be radically different from the body of this earthly life** (vv. 35-49). This is the same position argued by Jesus against both the view of the Sadducees and that of the Pharisees (Matt. 22:23-33; esp. v. 30)" Magnolia Bible College 1984 Lectures, pages 47-48.

DILLARD THURMAN, Brown Trail church of Christ: "The hope and aspiration of many has been shifted from His coming again to receive His own, to an immediate immortality and heavenly bliss immediately at death! Jesus DID NOT promise that!" Gospel Minutes, Volume 34, Number 5, February 1, 1985. "I have heard funeral orations extol the happiness and bliss the departed has instantly with death: but on checking the New Testament assiduously, I have yet to find a single promise where the dead go into heaven on an instant pass, or have immediate conscious happiness" Gospel Minutes, Volume 34, Number 5, February 1, 1985, church of Christ.

The resurrection was the backbone of the belief and teaching of the New Testament Church (Philippians 3:10-11; Acts 17:31, 23:6, 24:15, John 6:39-54, Luke 14:13-14, Hebrews 9:27, 1 Corinthians 15:1-58). If the body is only a house in which the soul lives, then the putting off this house is not a death, but only an immaterial what ever it is moving from this house to were ever an immaterial something moves to; if the soul is alive, and if anything comes forth out of the grave, it could only be the body of flesh; and then the "soul" must come back from Heaven to rejoin the body, or (1) we would have our dead earthly body resurrected on earth, but with no "soul" (2) with our "soul" alive in Heaven with a disembodied existence, both at the same time. **The apostles never preached a disembodied life after death, but a resurrection of the person that is dead.** "God both raised the Lord, and **will raise up us**" (1 Corinthians 6:14).

**If we were now a two parts being of (1) body and (2) spirit; then what is the spiritual body that the saved soul or saved spirit will "put on" (1 Corinthians 15:44)?**

Is the "soul" (as the word is used today) different from the spiritual body that the resurrected persons that are in Christ will put on at the resurrection? Is the immaterial spirit, which some teach we now have, going to put on a body at the resurrection and become a material being, or will this immaterial being put on a spiritual body that will be just as immaterial as "it" now is? Will it be a second spiritual body? If we now have this spirit or soul, how can it be changed in any way? Will it be different from the soul we now have? If it will not be different, all we could do would be to put off the body of flesh; then the immortal disembodied something that is in us would now be just as it will be in Heaven; if not, why not? There could be no other change or a resurrection; nothing other than putting off the body of flesh at death, and those who have died would have already done this, and are **now** without the resurrection just as they will always be. **If the "soul" is now immortal, there will be no resurrection, and no spiritual body to be put on at the resurrection.**

- "How are the dead raised, and with what manner of body do they come?" (1 Corinthians 15:35).
- "You sow not the body that shall be" (1 Corinthians 15:37).
- "So also is the resurrection of the dead. It is sown in corruption; it is raised in incorruption" (1 Corinthians 15:42).
- "And as we have born the image of the earthy (Adam), we SHALL also bear the image of the heavenly (Christ)" (1 Corinthians 15:49).
- "Flesh and blood cannot inherit the kingdom of God" (1 Corinthians 15:50).
- "We shall all be changed in a moment" (1 Corinthians 15:49).
- "The dead shall be raised incorruptible and we shall be changed" (1 Corinthians 15:52).
- "It is not yet made manifest what we shall be. We know that, if he shall be manifested, we shall be like him; for we shall see him even as he is" (1 John 3:2).

Unconditional immortality teaching is that:

1. The soul is alive now; the soul of both the saved and the lost now has the same eternal life.
2. The soul will be alive after death before the resurrection; and it will be "at home with the Lord" from the time of the death of the body before and without the resurrection.
3. The soul will be no more alive after the resurrection than it now is.

David Owen said in 1996 Florida College Lectures, page 216 that it should be noted that Paul said we would be raised with a *spiritual body*, not a *spirit*. It will be "us" that will be raised with a new "*spiritual body*," not an undying spirit that is now in a person that is not dead being raised from Heaven?

If the resurrection were taken from the Bible, it would not affect the theology of many churches today. They take a short cut and go directly to Heaven at death without the resurrection. Because they believe they are born with an immortal soul in them, which is the only thing that they believe will be in Heaven, "it" does not need to put on immortality at the resurrection; this disembodied "it" will have bypassed the resurrection by going straight to Heaven when it leaves the person it was in.

A believer in unconditional immortality said, "Therefore, at the Second Coming, all the resurrected saints are brought together and publicly displayed, not raised at that time." From a web site at: <http://www.tranexp.com/win/intertrans.gif>.

One of the "church fathers," Justin Martyr said those, "Who say there is no resurrection of the dead, and that their souls, when they die, are taken to heaven are not Christian at all."

**If you believe that only a part of a person will be saved, and that this part is an immortal soul that can never die, you cannot believe in the resurrection. Both cannot be true.** Satan's lie, "*You shall not surely die*" after being changed to, "My soul shall not surely die" has succeeded to the point that many now say, "No Christ, there is something in me that needs no resurrection, this being that has no substance is now

immortal and at my death it will come to You in Heaven; this invisible being that is in me will not wait to go to Heaven unto after your second coming and the resurrection." **A faith in something God has not spoken is a vain useless faith; therefore, a faith based on life after death because we have an immortal soul that is not subject to death is a vain faith that is based on a lie.** The belief in the resurrection and the need for it is being abandoning by many, but the Bible teaches that all die, and none will live before the resurrection; without it there would be no life for anyone after death, no life for the saved or no life for the lost.

**(4) THE REINTERPRETATION OF THE WAGES OF SIN  
MAKES "THE WAGES OF SIN" IMPOSSIBLE  
BY ELIMINATING DEATH (Romans 6:23)**

If the soul cannot die, it cannot pay the wages of sin, which is to die; therefore, the wages of sin had to be changed from death to an eternal life of torment.

- Romans 6:23: *"The wages of sin is death"* has been reinterpreted to be an eternal life with torment. I cannot understand how anyone can read *"death"* and understand death to be endless life, *"the wages of sin is endless life."*
- James 1:15: James should not have said, *"And sin, when it is accomplished, it brings forth death."* He should have said, *"And when it is accomplished, sin brings forth eternal life in Hell to be eternally tormented by God."*

**As long as a person has life, that person is not dead; therefore, as long as any "Immaterial part of a person" (W. E. Vine) is alive, that "part of a person" has not received the wages of sin. Nor can that "part of a person" be said to be dying if death can never be reached.** To an immortal soul that cannot die, death cannot be the wages of sin. Mankind does not like death, and many have made themselves believe **there is no real death.** Even at the time of our death, many believe we do not die, and have reduced God's death row to life in prison. And as we now have immortality, the promise of *"eternal life"* must be reduced from being eternal life to just being a reward (Heaven). If only the earthly body dies, not the real "us," then the resurrection could not be the center of the gospel (1 Corinthians 15:1-10); it could not even be a part of the Gospel; therefore, the undying immortal soul doctrine takes the resurrection out of the Gospel; both the resurrection of Christ and our resurrection.

**NEVER A VICTORY:** Evil and good beings must live side by side. If death is only separation from God, the separation must go on forever. **There never can be an end to death.** There never can be an end to separation, for if the separation did end, both the lost and the saved would then be together. There will never be an end to evil. Satan, evil angels, and evil men are just moved to another place, not ended, and not defeated. They will remain just as evil, just as much in rebellion to God as they are now. According to the traditional doctrine of Hell there will be two kingdoms, the Kingdom of God and the kingdom of Satan with the kingdom of Satan being many times larger than the Kingdom of God. What kind of victory would that be? It makes Satan win. Death will be our enemy unto our resurrection at the coming of Christ.

**(5) THE REINTERPRETATION OF THE JUDGMENT DAY  
MAKES THE JUDGMENT A MOCKERY and NOT NEEDED**

The Judgment Day at the coming of Christ is opposed to an immortal soul being translated instantly to Heaven or Hell at death. If the dead are now in Heaven or Hell, all would have been judged at death, and the judgment is going on now for each person

would have to be judged at death before they could be sent to Heaven or Hell. To take those who have already been judged and sent to Hell or judged and sent to Heaven out of Heaven or Hell **for a second judgment** only to put them back in the same place where they now makes the Judgment be a useless and empty show. It would make a mockery of both the resurrection and the judgment. The popular idea of an immortal soul going instantly to Heaven at death makes the resurrection and judgment to be out of place, and many have abandoned it. At the most, the Judgment Day could be nothing more than another reward day for these who were already judged and rewarded at death.

The judgment of all will take place on a special day **in the future**, the day of the second coming of Christ, **not at death**. Matthew 16:27; John 5:27-29; 2 Timothy 4:1; 1 Corinthians 4:5; 2 Peter 3:7; Acts 17:31; Matthew 10:15; 11:22; 11:24; Mark 6:11; Matthew 7:22; Luke 19:22; John 6:39, 40, 44, 54; 11:24; 12:48; Romans 2:5; 2:16; 1 Corinthians 1:8; 3:13; Ephesians 4:30; 6:13; Philippians 1:6; 1:10; 2:16; 1 Thessalonians 5:2; 5:4; 2 Thessalonians 2:2; 2:3; 2 Timothy 1:12; 1:18; 4:8; 2 Peter 2:9; 3:7; 3:10; 3:12; 1 John 4:17; Jude 6. The Bible is so clear on when anyone will be judged that I find it difficult to understand how anyone can read the Bible, and then say we are judged at death to be saved or loss.

A SECOND JUDGMENT: If all are translated instantly to Heaven or Hell at death as is taught by today's theology, **would not a second judgment make God unsure of Himself?** If in all the billions He had judged at death and sent them to Heaven or Hell, if He found just one that He had misjudged, He would not be infallible; therefore, He would not be God. Satan fashions himself as an angel of light and his ministers as ministers of righteousness, and they have done their work well (2 Corinthians 11:14-15).

Kenneth Fortier: "The immortality of the soul makes a mockery of all this. Resurrection becomes superfluous, since we can relate to Christ "out of body." Because the saints have already spent long ages with Christ, the Parousia becomes something less than the great 'revelation' portrayed by Scripture. Finally, the Judgment is transformed into a farce. After spending thousands of years in heaven, will Abel have to pass before the bar of divine justice to determine whether or not his name is written in the Book of Life? Conversely, will Judas be summoned from a hell he has occupied for two millennia to discover if he is really among the damned? Any doctrine, which allows for such scenarios ought to be suspect from the very outset." Resurrection Magazine, Volume 95, Number 2, 1992.

The Catholic Encyclopedia, "Hell" by P. Kreeft: "God must appoint some fixed term for the time of trial, after which the just will enter into the secure possession of a happiness that can never again be lost in all eternity...Accordingly, it is the belief of all people that eternal retribution is dealt out immediately after death." Most Protestants also believe a person goes to Heaven or Hell immediately after death; therefore, their judgment must be immediately after death, not at the second coming of Christ.

*"Inasmuch as He has appointed a day in which He will judge the world"* (Acts 17:31). *"It is appointed unto men once to die, but after this the judgment"* (Hebrews 9:27). *"For we must all be made manifest before the judgment-seat of Christ; that each one may receive the things done in the body, according to what he has done, whether it be good or bad"* (2 Corinthians 5:10). **There will be a day of judgment when all will come before the judgment-seat of Christ, not a judgment of each person at death.**

*"For the hour is coming when all who are in their graves will hear His voice and come out, those who have done good to the resurrection of life, and those who have done evil, to the resurrection of condemnation"* (John 5:28-29 New Revised Standard Version, also 2 Corinthians 5:10). **The dead will hear the voice of Jesus "when they are in their**

*graves*” and “*come out*” of their graves, not hear when they are in Heaven, Hell, or Abraham's bosom. The resurrection is not a bringing back from Heaven or Hell those who are not dead; it will be a real resurrection from a real death. Jesus clearly said, “*All who are in their graves.*” He did not say, “The souls of **all** who are in Heaven or Hell.” If the dead now have life in Heaven or Hell, then Christ was wrong. “*But should raise it up at the last day. For this is the will of my Father that everyone that beholds the Son, and believes on him should have eternal life; and I will raise him up at the last day*” (John 6:39-40) “*And I will raise him up in the last day*” (John 6:44) “*And I will raise him up at the last day*” (John 6:54). “*I know that he shall rise again in the resurrection at the last day*” (John 11:24).

**(6) THE REINTERPRETATION OF DEATH  
TO BE NOT DEATH BUT ETERNAL LIFE**

**EITHER ETERNAL LIFE IN HEAVEN OR ETERNAL LIFE IN HELL  
BEFORE THE RESURRECTION AND JUDGMENT  
AND BEFORE THE SECOND COMING OF CHRIST**

***“To die” never signifies “to live in torment.”*** If Abraham, David, and all the saints of the Old Testament were in Heaven they were there before and without the resurrection or the death of Christ; neither His death or His resurrection would have been needed, nor would there be any death to abolish to a “soul” that cannot die.

1. Death would have been destroyed by changing death into eternal life for everyone at the time of their death, not at Christ's second coming. Death would have been destroyed for those in the Old Testament before and without the death of Christ by putting them all in Heaven or Hell at the time of their death.
2. If death takes anyone to Heaven it would be no enemy to him or her.
3. Death would not be death. Changing from life on this earth to life in Heaven, or to life in Hell would be life, not death.

**There cannot be eternal life in Hell** for “*the free gift of God is eternal life in Christ Jesus our Lord*” (Romans 6:23). Without being in Christ there is no eternal life. “*He that believes on the Son has eternal life; but that obeys not the Son shall not see life*” (John 3:36). **DEATH IS NOT LIFE. The doctrine of the immortality of the soul, which gives eternal life to the lost, is in direct contradiction to the Bible.** There is not a passage in the Bible that says any part of the lost now has immortality, or will be raised immortal, or imperishable, but many passages that say they will perish, will be destroyed. “*He that believes on the Son of God has the witness in him: he that believes not God has made Him a liar; because he has not believed in the witness that God has borne concerning His Son. And the witness is this that God gave unto us eternal life, and this life is in His Son. He that has the Son has the life, he that has not the Son of God has not the life*” (1 John 5:10-12). What we believe does make a difference.

- God said, “*You shall surely die.*”
- Satan said, “*You shall not surely die.*”

**(7) THE REINTERPRETATION OF ASLEEP  
ARE THE DEAD ASLEEP OR AWAKE?**

What is asleep, the body, or soul, or spirit, or the whole person? The scriptures never speak of a soul being asleep, or only the body being asleep, or the spirit being asleep, but the whole person as being asleep, and the whole person will be asleep unto the resurrection day when the whole person will be resurrected. If Christ were not raised the

dead are gone; those who are asleep in Christ will never wake up. The Bible must be changed, and made to say that the soul, the only part of a person that many believe will be in Heaven is not asleep, and it can never sleep. 1 Corinthians 15:18 *"Then they also that are fallen asleep in Christ have **perished** (Apollumi)."* **When Paul said those who are asleep in Christ have "perished," he is saying they will never live again anywhere if there is no resurrection from the sleep of death. They are gone "perished" forever. He is not saying they have just "lost their well being" but are alive somewhere even if Christ were not raised from the dead; they are alive someplace even if there never will be a resurrection.** Perished cannot mean tormented, but a total end, for if *"perished"* means "tormented," then Paul said those who are *"asleep in Christ"* will be "tormented" if there is no resurrection (1 Corinthians 15:12-19). Paul is not saying that if Christ were not raised, the dead in Christ have just "lost their well being" because they are alive, and will forever live in pain and torment, but he is saying that they are dead and will never live again anywhere if there is no resurrection. If whatever it is that is believed by many to be in a person, if it cannot die, it must forever live somewhere, then Paul has no argument, and there cannot be a resurrection of the undead that cannot die; when Paul said some had perished, he just did not understand that a soul cannot perish, that there is an immaterial something in a person that will live forever cannot die or perish. Paul's argument has been neutralized, and he is made to be saying nothing; the death and resurrection of Christ has been made to be useless and not needed? **Paul said the dead in Christ are asleep, the theology of many says not so Paul, all the dead in Christ have a soul that is awake in Heaven.**

- Jesus said, *"Lazarus is fallen asleep"* (John 11:11).
- Then said, *"Lazarus is dead"* (John 11:14).

He did not say Lazarus's body is asleep, but his soul is alive in Heaven. Lazarus would have spent four days in Heaven, but Lazarus or none of the others in the Bible that were raised from the dead ever said one word about what it was like. Do you think that if they had seen the joy of Heaven, or the pain of Hell, which many believe they would have seen, that a single one that was brought back from Heaven or Hell could have kept quiet about what they had seen? Could you? They said nothing because, as Christ said, they were *"asleep"* not more alive than the living; they had seen nothing. Lazarus was a problem to the chief priests and Pharisees because everyone knew he had been dead and was alive (John 11:47), not because he was telling of what he had seen. Not a one that was brought back from the dead had an "afterlife experience." Why? Because they were *"asleep."* Is earth better than Heaven; if Lazarus were in Heaven for four days, would he want to come back to earth? Would you or anyone want to leave Heaven and come back to this earth? Why would Christ have been cruel to Lazarus by taking him out of the joy of Heaven?

#### THE SLEEPING DEAD WILL NOT PRECEDE THE LIVING

*"For this we say to you by the word of the Lord, that we who are alive and remain until the coming of the Lord, will not precede those who have fallen asleep. For the Lord Himself will descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of the archangel and with the trumpet of God, and the dead in Christ will rise first. Then we who are alive and remain will **be caught up together** with them in the clouds to meet the Lord in the air, and so we shall always be with the Lord"* (1 Thessalonians 4:15-17). Just as those that are awake (alive) shall not go before those that are asleep, **those who are asleep have**

**not already gone before the living.** Both will “*be caught up together*” and “*meet the Lord in the air*” together. It is the person that is asleep, not an immortal soul that is asleep; “soul sleeping” is not in the Bible, but a person sleeping unto the awakening, which is at the resurrection, is Biblical.

- “*To be the judge the living and the dead*” (Acts 10:42).
- “*Who shall judge the living and the dead*” (2 Timothy 4:1).
- “*Ready to judge the living and the dead*” (1 Peter 4:5).

The judgment of neither the living or the dead has taken place, and will not unto the resurrection; their judgment has not already preceded the judgment of the living. At His coming Christ will judge (1) the living, those who will be alive of earth, (2) the dead, those who will have died before He come (2 Timothy 4:1).

**a) Gathered to his people:** Abraham (Genesis 25:8-9) and others died, and were “*gathered to his people.*” The argument is made that this could not refer to Abraham but only to his soul that was “*gathered to his people,*” therefore, it must be changed from Abraham that was gathered to his people to Abraham’s soul that was gathered to his people despite the fact that there is nothing said about his soul. If that were true then the souls that were gathered together would be asleep together, not awake together; therefore, it would not prove the sleeping souls are conscious after death. The Hebrew belief was that both the good and the bad went to sheol—the grave. See Genesis 3:7-35; Job 7:21; 14:12; 24:19; Psalm 13:3; 16:10; 31:17. “*Slept with his fathers*” is in the Old Testament about 38 times.

- Abraham “*was gathered to his people*” (Genesis 25:8-9).
- “*Moses, Behold, you shall sleep with your fathers*” (Deuteronomy 31:16).
- “*So David slept with his fathers*” (1 Kings 2:10; 11:21). “*David...fell asleep, and was laid among his fathers, and underwent decay*” (Acts 13:36). The David that fell asleep and underwent decay was the same David that was laid (buried) among his fathers; nothing is said about an immaterial soul that had been in David being buried (“laid”) among his fathers.
- “*From the day that the fathers fell asleep*” (2 Peter 3:4). Those that use this to prove that we have a soul that never dies do not believe what they make this passage teach, that souls sleep; it was the fathers that fell asleep, not the souls of the fathers that are asleep. They change “*fathers*” to “*souls of the fathers*” fell asleep, but they do not believe their own change—that the souls of the dead are asleep.
- “*Christ...the first fruits of them that are asleep*” (1 Corinthians 15:20). Christ is the only one who has been raised from the dead, and is the only one who is not now “*asleep.*” “*That are asleep*” is present tenses, **ALL** the dead but Christ was “*asleep*” when Paul wrote this; **ALL** the dead persons are asleep, nothing is said about souls that are asleep or awake. 10/26/12

If, “*gathered to his people,*” means “*awake*” then, “*asleep*” has to mean, “*awake.*” If not, then wherever Abraham was he would be “*asleep,*” and he would not know where he was, or who was with him. How could Christ be the first fruits if Abraham were alive before Him?

**Abraham's father served other gods.** “*Terah, the father of Abraham, and the father of Nahor: and they served other gods*” (Joshua 24:2), which, according to most Catholics and Protestants, would send him to Hell, but both believe Abraham went to Heaven, and was “*gathered to his people,*” which would include his father. Both seem to be somewhat unsure of where Abraham is; not sure if Abraham was “*gathered to his people*” in sheol, which is the grave, or if he is in Heaven and not “*gathered to his people*” for his father the idolater they believe is in Hell for idolaters cannot be in Heaven.

Not one of the passages, which speak of persons being of being "*gathered to his people*," is speaking of any person or of any soul being gathered in Heaven. Sheol (the grave) is not Heaven; therefore, these passages are not speaking of anyone's soul being translated to Heaven, even though they are often used to prove it.

**b) The state of the dead. The analogy of sleep is used throughout the Bible**, about 47 times in the Old Testament and about 17 in the New Testament. If death does not indicate unconsciousness, then the analogy of sleep, which is used throughout the Bible, would be meaningless if the dead are not asleep. (Deuteronomy 31:16; 2 Samuel 7:12; 1 Kings 1:21; 2:10; 11:21; 11:43; 14:20; 14:31; 15:8; 15:24; 16:6; 16:28; 22:40; 22:50; 2 Kings 8:24; 10:35; 13:9; 13:13; 14:16; 14:22; 14:29; 15:7; 15:22; 15:38; 16:20; 20:21; 21:18; 24:6; 2 Chronicles 9:31; 12:16; 14:1; 16:13; 21:1; 16:2; 26:23; 27:9; 28:27; 32:33; 33:20; Job 3:13; 7:21; 14:12; Psalm 13:3; 76:5; 90:5; Jeremiah 51:39; 51:57; Matthew 9:24; 27:52; Mark 5:39; Luke 8:52; John 11:11-14; Acts 7:60; 13:36; 1 Corinthians 11:30; 15:6; 15:18; 15:20; 15:51; 1 Thessalonians 4:13; 4:14; 4:15; 5:10; 2 Peter 3:4). **The scriptures often speak of persons being asleep after death, but never says animals sleep when they die, just as it is never said that the lost will be asleep after the second death.** Why? If they were asleep, they would not be dead; the second death would not be death. With so much prominent being given to the state of the dead being asleep, how can anyone believe in the immortal soul doctrine that says some part of the dead are not asleep, but is now alive in Heaven or Hell?

#### **THE STATE OF THOSE WHO ARE ASLEEP**

- (1) They have perished if there is no resurrection (1 Corinthians 15:18).
- (2) Their thoughts have perished (Psalm 146:4).
- (3) They are as though they had never been (Job 3:11-18; Psalm 39:13; 146:2).
- (4) They have no remembrance of God (Psalm 6:5).
- (5) They rest in the dust of the earth (Job 17:13).
- (6) They cannot give thanks to God (Isaiah 38:18).
- (7) "*The dead know not anything*" (Ecclesiastes 9:5; 9:10).

The resurrection is the only hope for the dead. Without it, the dead will never have life again.

E. D. Slough, evangelist, church of Christ: "While these patriarchs and prophets were talking so much about the '**dead body**' having no wisdom, no thoughts, no praises, no knowledge and no intelligence of any sort, why did they not draw on the spirit a little for our special edification, and teach us that there is wisdom and knowledge and thoughts and praises where it goes? Why not? Why talk so much and so dramatically about the dead body, and tell us that which all know, and say not one encouraging word about the joys and praises the spirits are giving God in the unseen world? Is there nothing significant about that omission? Why did they not cheer up our earth life, by painting a picture of the hosts of happy spirits in the unseen world of the dead? That would have been real instruction. That would have been, indeed, information, and would have settled a long drawn argument. Do you want the real reason for this action on the part of inspired men? Here it is. Obviously, they were speaking of the whole creature man. They saw no spirit off yonder praising God as Milligan, McGarvey, and others. They saw death the end of man, and they pointed it out as such, including his thoughts perishing in death, which means the dissolution of all his faculties. They did not talk of the thoughts being transferred, but perishing. The only possible result of death, destroying the organism by which thought is possible. Never a time did they say, 'There is wisdom and knowledge with the spirits of the dead.' How easy it would have been to say it. But had they said it, they could not have said the other. There are two propositions—one or the other must be untrue. Look at the incongruity of reasoning standing out like a hug knot on a limb. Some one says,



'John Doe is dead.' And that there is no remembrances or praise where he went. He knows not anything. But immediately they tell us 'the real John Doe is the spirit' and that it knows better than before. The man of God said, 'whither thou go' there is no wisdom, etc. 'Thou' John Doe. Men say 'Thou' means the spirit, and that it never ceases to think. Our clergy and the wise men are at variance again. What shall we do? We will leave them that way—if they can't see the truth.

Thus, **John Doe is dead, and he is not dead.**

**His thoughts perish, and they do not perish.**

**He praised God, and he does not praise Him.**

**He remembers, and he does not remember.**

**All at the same time—the same John Doe...**They can not even suggest a reason why those ancient mouth pieces of God should argue and repeat and emphasize and affirm and declare over and over that the 'dead body' knows nothing, remembers nothing, praised nothing, thinks nothing and does nothing, which is only a deep and solemn fact known by all the living, **and never open their mouths once about the spirit being able to do all these things.** It would have been in perfect accord with their enthusiasm along this line to have said, 'Cheer up and rejoice, for though the dead body has no knowledge, no wisdom, no thoughts, etc., yet the spirit is rejoicing and happy, thinking and praising God.' What a relief that would have been to modern theology. But the fact that such was not the case, is proof that it is not true." pages 191-194, "Indictment Of Eternal Torment—The Self-negation of a Monstrous Doctrine," F. L. Rowe, Publisher, 1914, On line at: [www.robertwr.com/EternalTorment.htm](http://www.robertwr.com/EternalTorment.htm)

D. Padfield seems to make knowing, or not knowing each other in Heaven to be dependent on Abraham now being awake with his people. He leaves out the resurrection, and makes Abraham now be alive without it. He jumps from death in sheol before the resurrection to Heaven after the resurrection as if they are the same place, and everything is the same in both. What we will be and know in Heaven after the resurrection does not depend on what we will know while in the grave, and will not depend on being awake while we are in the grave. Is he not so desperately trying to prove a person now has an immortal something in them that he is saying to God, "Abraham being with the fathers proves he is not '*asleep with the fathers*'?" This view is used by those who believe in "Abraham's bosom," but in this attempt to prove that the dead are not asleep, they makes the saved and the unsaved be awake together waiting for the resurrection, even though this view is that those in Abraham's bosom are not dead; therefore, cannot be resurrected from the dead. This view makes:

1. Makes the dead not be dead but alive.
2. Makes those who "*sleep with the fathers*" are not asleep, but are "awake with the fathers."
3. Makes the resurrection impossible, as the soul that was in a person that is dead, that soul is not dead.
4. Makes the Bible not mean what it says. The many times it says "*sleep with the fathers*" must be changed to be "awake with the fathers," and the many times the Bible uses the metaphor of sleep for death are not true.

**c) The awakening, wakening up at the resurrection:** The resurrection will be an awakening. Death is likened to sleep because it is a state of unconsciousness, which will be followed by an awakening. Christ is the first fruits, and the rest will be resurrected "*at his coming*" (1 Corinthians 15:23). Abraham and his people fell asleep, and will be asleep unto the resurrection, "*From the day that the fathers fell asleep*" (2 Peter 3:4). The Bible says nothing about the state of a person from the time he falls asleep unto the resurrection. **The Christian hope is not on death, not on being awake anywhere**

**before the resurrection, but on the resurrection to life, on being raised from the dead at the second coming of Christ.**

Albert Barnes: "In the Scripture sleep is used to intimate that death will not be final: that there will be an awakening out of this sleep, or a resurrection. It is a beautiful and tender expression, removing all that is dreadful in death, and filling the mind with the idea of calm repose after a life of toil, with a reference to a future resurrection" Barnes' Notes On the New Testament.

What is the resurrection?

- Is it spirits who are now awake and living in Heaven or Hell returning to their earthly bodies?
- Or is it all that are asleep in the grave will wake up at the judgment?

It was Lazarus who was asleep. Not just his body while his soul was alive (John 11:11). Some of the saints had fallen asleep. Not just the body had fallen asleep, but the "*living being*," the whole person (1 Corinthians 15:6). The Bible nowhere speaks of the body being asleep while some immaterial, invisible, inter part of a person is awake. It is the whole person that sleeps unto the resurrection, and the whole person that will wake up at the resurrection. If only the body were asleep with the spirit alive in another world, why would there never be a hint that the real person was not asleep in any of the passages that use sleep as a metaphor of death?

**ABRAHAM, WHERE ARE YOU?**

Three views about where Abraham is

1. **Bible view:** Abraham is asleep with the fathers.
2. **Catholic and Protestant view:** Abraham is awake in Heaven.
3. **A newer after judgment view:** Abraham is awake in Abraham's bosom, the good side of hades. This view has been widely taught in the church of Christ and the Christian Church.

Many who do not know whether they believe #2 or #3 will say some loved one had gone to be with Jesus in Heaven, but if they are trying to prove the soul is alive before the resurrection will use Luke 16. Abraham is moved back and forth from Heaven to Abraham's bosom as they need to, but most of them do not seem to know they are moving him.

**(8) THE REINTERPRETATION OF THE LIFE  
THAT CHRIST PROMISED TO THEM THAT OBEY HIM**

John 4:14; 4:36; 5:21; 6:40 See chapter two, Life or death

If all are born with an immortal soul that cannot die, all have eternal life, and Christ could only give them a reward, but not eternal life. Unconditional immortality gives both the sinners and the saved eternal life without the death of Christ.

**(9) THE REINTERPRETATION OF FIRE  
TO BE SOMETHING THAT CANNOT BURN UP**

See chapter eight, part two, symbolic pictures, the lake of fire

**TWO VERY DIFFERENT GOSPELS**

**Unconditional immortality of a "soul," and the resurrection of the dead are two very different Gospels** (Galatians 1:6-9). There is a dividing line between unconditional immortality and conditional immortality so sharp that the two are completely different Gospels, as far apart as night and day. Both cannot be true. One is a "*delusion*" (2 Thessalonians 2:11, King James Version) "*A working of error*" (American Standard Version). Do you believe a working of error? Unconditional immortality is very different from anything preached in Paul's day (Galatians 1:6). It is the "*doctrines and precepts of*

*men*" (Matthew 15:9), and is wresting the writings of Paul and the other scriptures (2 Peter 3:16). It takes away a need for the death of Christ, and the need of the resurrection.

### TWO INCOMPATIBLE BELIEFS

Either one makes the other one impossible.

1. The resurrection: **Makes an immortal never dying soul impossible.** If it is not dead, a soul that is alive cannot be raised from the dead.
2. Unconditional immortality: **1. Makes the resurrection an unanswerable problem.** If the soul is immortal and never dies, what will be the use of the resurrection? What will be raised from the dead? **2. Makes a real resurrection impossible.**

These two Gospels, (1) the resurrection of the dead, (2) or an undying immortal soul, are so opposed and contradictory to each other that if one is true, it makes the other one a lie of Satan that will destroy you at the judgment; they are not compatible. If one is true, then the other one cannot be. Believing unconditional immortal is disbelieving God; believing this doctrine, or not believing it, can be the difference in whether you believe God or man. One came from man and is vain worship (Matthew 15:9). Christ taught the resurrection. It is our only hope of life after death, not now having immortality and never dying. The undead cannot be raised.

### THE SILENCE OF THE BIBLE

All the great doctrines of the Bible are clearly expressed. The doctrine of God, of Christ, the resurrection, the church, the judgment, sin, etc., and are all as clear and plain as our language can say them, but the doctrine of an "immortal soul," or "a never-dying soul," which is constantly expressed today, cannot be found in the Bible. From where did it come? If anyone believes, practices, or teaches anything in the name of Christ, they are obligated to prove it from the Bible. If they do not or cannot, it is a sin to believe, practice, or teach it. It is up to the person who affirms anything to prove it. Have those who believe in and teach Hell proved it to be from God's word? Hell **must** be proved if it is taught. At the judgment, what will you say to God if there is no Hell and you have taught many that God was the cruel and sadistic God of Hell, and He will torment most forever?

**How many times can a person make Christ a liar by believing and teaching the opposite of what He taught and attributing these lies to Him?** How often can we attribute the teaching of man to Christ before it becomes the "*precepts of man*" and "*vain worship*?" (Matthew 15:9). Will you say to God at the judgment that you loved your theology, a different gospel, more than His word?

**It adds to the book of Revelation:** Most all who believe in Hell misuse many symbolic passages in revelation to prove it. John said, "*If any man shall add unto them, God shall add unto him the plagues which are written in this book*" (Revelation 22:18). Do some love this cruel and evil teaching enough to have these plagues added to them selves?

**"Heavier judgment"** James 3:1 and "*vain worship*" Matthew 15:9. When we teach things that slander God, and makes the resurrection of Christ not needed, etc., we teachers will answer to God at the judgment with a heavier judgment. As teacher we will be judged for not knowing and teachings the truth. We teach that following the teaching of man is vain worship and sinful for others, but it is as sinful for us when we do the same things. If we are not sure beyond any doubt that God's word teaches eternal

torment, but teach it anyway, and it is the commandments of men, it may be the difference in living or the second death for us. *"Whatsoever is not of faith is sin"* (Romans 14:23), and faith comes by hearing the word of Christ (Romans 10:17); therefore, **if the doctrine of Hell is not taught in the Bible it is sin to believe or teach it.** Do we think this would not apply to us if we teach anything that we have any doubt about? At the judgment we will give an answer for both what we teach, and for what we do not teach. If we teach Hell or that when a person is born there is an immortal something in him or her that will not die when the person dies, and that God cannot destroy it, then we better make sure that what we teach is from the Bible; for we will answer to God in the very same way as anyone teaching "faith only," or any other doctrine of men. Do some condemn themselves by teaching it is a sin to change God's word, and then preaching what may be the biggest change ever made to it? There is no acceptable reason for a gospel preacher not to know and teach the truth. What will they say to God at the judgment?

It is taught by some that the promise of being immediately in Heaven with God has more comfort than the promise of being in Heaven after the resurrection.

- Comfort that is based on a lie (*"you shall not surely die"*) is a vain useless comfort.
- To add to or change God's word is a sin.
- Only by teaching the truth can a preacher save those who he preaches to and save himself.

**Is a person born with an immortal soul, or do the saved put on immortality at the resurrection? This is one of the most important questions of all times. It has more influence on our conception of our nature, our view of life in this world, and life after death, the nature of God, than any other question. YOUR WHOLE THEOLOGY (all that you believe) IS DETERMINED BY WHAT YOU BELIEVE ABOUT SOUL. Not only does man does an immortal soul now being in a person make the resurrection impossible, it makes the judgment be passed, and the second coming of Christ pointless for there could not be a resurrection or a judgment at His coming.**

Summary: the doctrine of unconditional immortality

- Changes the nature of God, makes Him cruel and sadistic.
- Changes the hope set forth in the New Testament that there will be a resurrection. It makes no one ever be dead to be resurrected from the dead. At funeral services we are told the departed are not dead, but the souls that were in them are now in Heaven looking down on their loved ones, and any who point out that the Bible says the dead are not in Heaven before the resurrection are branded as being a part of a cult, often even by those who believe the dead are now in Abraham's bosom unto the Resurrection and the dead are not now in Heaven.
- Changes the resurrection of Christ, which gives us a hope of being resurrected, by reducing the death and resurrection of Christ to His earthly human body only if His soul were immortal and could not have died; therefore, the resurrection of Christ must be the "first fruits" only of the resurrection of this earthly body. If we have an immortal "soul" that is now in us, then it could not die; therefore, could not be resurrected. Makes the something that is in a person that cannot be dead or resurrected be the only thing that will be in Heaven.
- Changes the message we preach to the lost and their fate, whether the soul that is in the lost will have an eternal life with torment, or a second death from which

there will never be a resurrection, changes from the wages of sin being death, to the wages of sin is eternal life with torment in Hell for a soul.

- Changes the nature of a person from mortal, to being mortal being with an immortal being in the mortal being. Two opposite natures at the same time is not a possibility.
- Changes the nature of the resurrection of Christ, whether He was dead and raised by God, or only His earthly body was dead, and He just came back from Heaven to it.
- Changes the nature of the resurrection from whether the dead are resurrected, or just come back from somewhere. It makes a real resurrection impossible.
- It makes the second coming of Christ pointless.
- It makes the judgment be passed.
- Changes many words (die, death, perish, destroyed, lost, end, sleep) to mean the opposite of the way they were used by those living then, and the opposite of the way the world now uses them (see chapter two). **Changes eternal life to eternal reward, and changes eternal death (the wages of sin) to eternal life with torment.**

**Anything more different from the gospel than the immortal soul theology would be difficult to imagine.** It makes judgment a second time of those who were already judged and put in Hell at the moment of death be nothing but pure folly. If it is not a total different gospel there could not be one, for not just some part of it is different, but it is one hundred percent different, one hundred percent pagan.

The belief in an immortal deathless soul (Satin's lie "*thou shall not surely die*" is the foundation of:

- Much of philosophy beginning with the Egyptians, the Greeks, and today
- Reincarnation-transmigration of souls to other bodies after death
- Most Eastern religions
- The Catholic and the Protestant immortal soul at birth
- The doctrine of Hell
- Purgatory
- Limbo
- Nether World
- Worship of Mary and the reported sighting of her
- Intercession of and worship of saints
- Original Sin
  - a. Total Hereditary depravity
  - b. Infant baptism
    - "Baptismal regeneration," the removal of original sin in infants
- The belief that Abraham's bosom is a real place where all saved deathless immortal souls are now living unto the resurrection, but living in speaking and seeing distance of the lost deathless souls that are now in torment
- Spiritualism
- Communication with the spirits of the dead
- The "New Age" movement and channeling craze with spirits of the dead

- Near-death experiences or out-of-body experiences. Those who claim to have died and gone to Heaven or Hell are claiming to have been resurrected from the dead, to have been in Heaven or Hell and then came back to earth. All near-death experiences are totally dependent on the belief of the person, Hindus, Muslims, and others claim to have near-death experiences, but their experiences are what are taught by their beliefs; those who do not believe in Heaven or Hell have near-death experiences, but never believe they go to Heaven or to Hell.
- An evil, cruel, and sadistic God who made most of mankind just so he could torment them.

**All of the above teachings are based on the soul being immortal, which is of pagan origin; unconditional immortality is the major premise on which they all stand. Without the doctrine that there is something in a person is not subject to death none of the above could be true. The pagan doctrine of a deathless unconditional immortality soul is the mother or foundation of more false doctrines than any other teaching, and is the greatest deception, and most harmful of all deceptions in the church.** Eternal torment of the soul cannot be unless Plato's immortal soul is true, Mary could not be seen or make intercession if she is asleep, there could be no communication with souls of the dead if the whole person were asleep. If unconditional immortality were true, then the resurrection as taught by Christ could not be true, for there could be no resurrection of those who are not dead. As long as one believes this pagan doctrine, and reads it into the Bible, it makes it virtually impossible to understand the Bible correctly. If one believes the pagan teaching of Socrates and Plato over Christ can they truly say they are a believer? *"They worship me in vain; their teachings are but rules taught by men"* (Matthew 15:9 New International Version).

Charles Welch says, "If a man would become satisfied of modern Spiritism, he must first be satisfied that he is an immortal being."

"The visitations and manifestations of the spirit world are to convince you of the immortality of the soul."

"The first, the greatest, and the grandest truth coming through modern Spiritism is the immortality of the soul."

Here it will be seen that Orthodoxy has nothing to say against these doctrines of demons, but rather, in Pulpit, Press, and Song, this great lie is echoed and enforced, coloring as it does the whole evangel. We give in our next quotation a Resolution passed at an important Spiritistic Convention, which shows how important a place this doctrine holds in their Creed:—"RESOLVED—That Spiritism, according to the modern acceptation of the term, embraces all those who believe in the immortality of the soul...Beyond this common faith, there is no doctrine or creed necessarily incident to modern Spiritism." It must come as a great shock to many godly Christians, who constantly pray for the "never dying souls" of men, to find themselves sharing a "common faith" with the enemy of truth! Yet so it is. A spirit says of this doctrine, "When once that is established, this one simple germ of knowledge will work out all the rest. The first lie of Satan was, "Ye shall not surely die." This was the "simple germ." It will culminate in the fruition of the second lie, "Ye shall be as God," for Spiritism and its doctrines are the precursors and forerunners of antichrist..."

From "The Immortality of the Soul and the Doctrine of Demons" at:

<http://www.truthaccordingtoscripture.com/documents/death/immortality-of-the-soul-doctrine-of-demons.php>

### **THE SAVED WILL HAVE A NEW BODY AFTER THE RESURRECTION AND JUDGMENT**

1 Corinthians 15:35-45

“But someone will say, ‘How are THE DEAD raised? And with what kind of BODY do they come?’ You fool! That which you sow does not come to life unless it dies; and that which you sow, you so not sow the BODY which is to be, but a bare grain, perhaps of wheat or of something else. But God gives it a BODY just as He wished, and to each of the seeds a BODY of its own. All flesh is not the same flesh, but there is one flesh of men, and another flesh of beasts, and another flesh of birds, and another of fish. There are also heavenly BODIES and earthly BODIES, but the glory of the heavenly is one, and the glory of the earthly is another. There is one glory of the sun, and another glory of the moon, and another glory of the stars; for star differs from star in glory. So also is the resurrection of the dead. **It (the body) is sown a perishable BODY, it (the body) is raised an imperishable BODY; it (the body) is sown in dishonor, it (the body) is raised in glory; it (the body) is sown in weakness, it (the body) is raised in power; it (the body) is sown a natural BODY, it (the body) is raised a spiritual BODY. If there is a natural BODY, there is also a spiritual BODY. So also it is written ‘The first man, Adam, became a living soul.’ The last Adam became a life-giving spirit. Howbeit that is not first which is spiritual, but that which is natural; then that which is spiritual...and as we have borne the image of the earthly, we shall also bear the image of the heavenly...We all shall not sleep, but we shall all be changed, in a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump: for the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed. For this corruptible must put on incorruption, and this mortal must put on immortality”** (1 Corinthians 15:35-54). It is this mortal person, the “natural BODY” that we now are that will be “raised a spiritual BODY.” The “spiritual BODY” does not now exist and will not exist unto the resurrection; the “spiritual BODY” is not an immaterial bodiless something that is now in us. Just as when we plant a seed, that seed is not the tree that will be, the “natural BODY” that “is sown” is not the “spiritual BODY” we will have after the resurrection. If the “spiritual BODY” were an immaterial bodiless soul that we already have it would make all that Paul said above be total nonsense. **“However, the spiritual is not first, but the natural; then the spiritual”** (1 Corinthians 15:46). The “natural BODY,” and the “spiritual BODY” does not exist together, not both at the same time, yet we are told that the immortal soul exist from the day of birth of the “natural body,” and that it will exist in the person as long as the “natural body” lives, and are told that the soul continues to live after the death of the “natural body” that it was in.

Could it be say any clearer that:

- **The “spiritual BODY” is not a soul that is now in the natural body.**
- **Any clearer that the “spiritual BODY” is not a spirit that we now have.**
- **Any clearer that the “spiritual BODY” does not exist while the “natural BODY” is alive.**

Before the resurrection no one has a “spiritual body.”

**“AND WITH WHAT KIND OF BODY?”**

Just as a seed that is put in the ground does not have the body that will come out of the ground, the body that will be resurrected will not be the body we now have, it is the person that is put in the ground, and the person that will be raised; if there were a soul that could never be dead:

- That not dead souls could not be put in the ground.
- That not dead souls could not be raised from the dead.

The “*natural body*” is the seed, a “*bare grain*” of the incorruptible “*spiritual body*,” that will be raised in glory and power, **The “*bare grain*” is not the seed of a soul or a spirit that we now already have in us**; it is difficult for us to understand how the body we now have, the “*natural body*” will be the same body but “*changed*” to a “*spiritual body*,” but God is able to do it; “*But some one will say, ‘How are the dead raised and with what manner of body do they come’ ...you sow not the body that shall be... God gives it a body even as it pleased Him*” (1 Corinthians 15:35-49). “*Who shall fashion anew the BODY of our humiliation, that it (the body of our humiliation – the body we now have) may be conformed to the BODY of his glory*” (Philippians 3:21). The body that goes into the grave will come forth, but just as the seed comes forth is in a different form, the body that comes forth from the grave will be changed from a “*natural BODY*” to a “*spiritual BODY*.” It is our changed body, not a soul, or a spirit that will be like “*the BODY of his glory*.” The question was, “**how are the DEAD RAISE,**” not how are souls that are not dead raised.

Fred P. Thompson: “If the body comes forth from the grave, restored/transformed, the verdict against death is sealed. (3) Body life is the only kind of life Paul can imagine. Granted, the body that is sown is not in every respect like the one that is raised. But it resembles it at least in the way a seed resembles the shaft of wheat into which it grows. It is the same basic stuff, not transformed into a new mode of existence. (4) It is the body of flesh which is the ‘perishable nature’ spoken of in v. 53. Because nothing perishable is appropriate for the land of eternity the body must undergo that miraculous change into imperishability.” Page 167, *What The Bible Says About Heaven And Hell*, College Press 1983. Note: it is the body that undergoes the change, not a deathless soul that cannot be changed.

I know of no one that believe:

- A dead soul will be raised from the dead.
- Or that believes a soul will be given any “*kind of body*.”
- Or that a soul will ever have any kind of body.
- Or that the soul they believe in will ever be any more immortal than they believe a soul now is. They believe that a soul is now as immortal as it will ever be, not that it will “*put on immortality*” at sometime in the future.
- Or that a soul is now just a seed to what a soul will be after the resurrection, nothing is said about a soul being changed, or fashion anew.
- Or about a dead soul being resurrected to life.

IT IS THE RESURRECTION THAT GIVES US HOPE OF LIFE AFTER DEATH, immortality will come at the resurrection, it is not something that a soul that is in us already has. No person or nothing that is in a person is now immortal; there would be no immortality or no life for any person without the resurrection.

**The resurrection is a restoring to life the body, the person, but with a changed body.**

You sow a bare grain 15:37 | of the BODY that shall be 15:37

The BODY is buried in	The BODY is raised in
(1) Corruption	(1) Incorruption
(2) Dishonor	(2) Glory
(3) Weakness	(3) Power
(4) A natural body	(4) A spiritual body

(1) Is a soul buried in corruption and raised with incorruption?

Can you believe we now have an immortal soul that when we die this soul will be buried in corruption and raised in incorruption? **Or is this is speaking of the resurrection of the person, not a soul that is not subject to corruption?**

(2) Is a soul buried in dishonor and raised in glory?



Can you believe we now have an immortal soul that when we die this soul will be buried in dishonor and resurrected from the dead in glory? **Or is this speaking of the resurrection of the person, not just something that is now in a person?**

(3) Is a soul buried in weakness and raised in power?

Can you believe we now have an immortal soul that when we die this soul will be buried in weakness and raised in power? **Or is this speaking of the resurrection of the person, not just something that is now in a person?**

(4) Is a soul buried a natural body and raised a spiritual body?

Can you believe we now have an immortal soul that is now a natural body that will die, be buried, and be resurrected a spiritual body? **Or is this speaking of the resurrection of the person, not just something that is now in a person?**

None of the above says anything about a deathless soul or a deathless spirit that has no substance, that is now immortal and not subject to corruption, **all four are speaking of a PERSON that can die, can be sown (buried), and be resurrected; the PERSON that is now corruptible but will be resurrected incorruptible, the PERSON will have glory and power, the PERSON that now has a natural body but will have a spiritual body in the image of Christ.**

<u>EARTHLY BODY</u>	<u>RESURRECTED BODY OF THOSE IN CHRIST</u>
<u>"As WE have borne the image</u>	<u>WE SHALL also bear the</u>
<u>Of the earthy 1 Cor. 15:49</u>	<u>image of the heavenly" 1 Cor. 15:49</u>
<u>"Flesh and blood cannot</u>	<u>WE SHALL all be changed in a moment, in</u>
<u>inherit kingdom of God"15:50</u>	<u>the twinkling of an eye, at last trump]</u>
<u>Buried a perishable body</u>	<u>- Raised an imperishable body 1 Cor. 15:42</u>
<u>Buried a natural body</u>	<u>- Raised a spiritual body 1 Cor. 15:44</u>
<u>Buried (sown) in dishonor</u>	<u>- Raised in glory 1 Corinthians 15:43</u>
<u>Buried (sown) in weakness</u>	<u>- Raised in power 1 Corinthians 15:43</u>
<u>The dead in Christ</u>	<u>- Raised incorruptible 1 Corinthians 15:52</u>
<u>Living saints</u>	<u>- Will be Changed in a moment 1 Cor. 15:52</u>
<u>"This corruptible - must put on Incorruption"</u>	<u>1 Corinthians 15:53</u>
<u>"This mortal - must put on Immortality"</u>	<u>1 Corinthians 15:53</u>
<u>Body of humiliation</u>	<u> "Conformed to the body of his glory" Phil 3:21</u>
<u>Earthly tent</u>	<u> "A house not made with hands" 2 Cor. 5:1-10</u>
<u>Earthly image of Adam</u>	<u>  Heavenly image of Christ 1 Corinthians 15:49</u>
<u>Adam a living soul</u>	<u>  Christ a life giving spirit 1 Corinthians 15:45</u>
<u>All now have the body of Adam</u>	<u>  Saints to be like Christ 1 John 3:2</u>

*"It is not yet made manifest what WE shall be. WE know that when He appears, WE shall be like Him, because WE shall see Him just as He is" (1 John 3:2). "Just as He is," just as Christ is now, not as He was when He was in the flesh and blood image of Adam.*

**THE PERSON IS** (a deathless soul cannot be buried):

<u>BURIED a perishable body</u>	<u>- RAISED an imperishable body 1 Cor. 15:42</u>
<u>BURIED a natural body</u>	<u>- RAISED a spiritual body 1 Cor. 15:44</u>
<u>BURIED (sown) in dishonor</u>	<u>- RAISED in glory 1 Corinthians 15:43</u>
<u>Buried (sown) in weakness</u>	<u>- RAISED in power 1 Corinthians 15:43</u>
<u>The dead in Christ</u>	<u>- RAISED incorruptible 1 Corinthians 15:52</u>
<u>Living saints</u>	<u>- Will be Changed in a moment 1 Cor. 15:52</u>

**"How are the dead raised? And with what kind of body:"** According to this chapter we—not a soul - will have a body. *"Body" or "bodies"* are mentioned eleven times (15:35; 15:37; 15:38—2 times; 15:40—2 times; 15:44—4 times; 15:44). The first time in verse 35 asks the question what kind of body will we have in the resurrection. That the body that is put in the ground is not the body that will be resurrected is illustrated by giving an example of planting a seed; the body that comes forth is nothing like and is far greater than what was put into the ground, but it is a body, not a bodiless thin air nothing. **The BODY that is put into the ground is not the BODY that shall be resurrected.** A bodiless soul that we are told leaves the body at death, but is not dead is not resurrected from the dead.

- *“It is sown a perishable body, it is raised an imperishable body.”*
  - The body we now have is put buried and it perishes, it is perishable.
  - The body that is resurrected is imperishable, but it is a body, not just an immaterial, invisible, no substance nothing that existed before *“it is raised an imperishable body”* at the resurrection.
    - The “perishable” body that is in the image of Adam that is buried. *“Corruption”* King James Version. It is the person’s body that is perishable or corruptible that is put in the grave, not Plato’s bodiless soul.
    - The *“imperishable”* or *“incorruptible”* body that is resurrected is in the image of Christ. It is the person’s changed body that is resurrected imperishable in the image of Christ, not Plato’s bodiless soul.
- *“It is sown in dishonor, it is raised in glory.”* The decaying body that is put in the grave has no honor, in the resurrection the saints will be resurrected like Christ, *“It has not appeared as yet what we shall be. We know that, when He appears, we shall be like Him, because we shall see Him just as He is”* (1 John 3:2). *“Who (Christ) will transform the **body** of our humble state into conformity with the **body** of His glory”* (Philippians 3:21), not an immortal soul that will be in glory before it is raised, or not be transformed (changed), and see Him and be like Him at death; if it were at death, it would make these passages mean less.
- *“It is sown in weakness, it is raised in power.”* The earthly body that is put in the grave has no power, and it is a body, not a soul, that will be resurrected with power.
- *“It is sown a natural body, it is raised a spiritual body.”* The *“natural body”* is the image of the earthy Adam, the first man, the *“spiritual body”* with which the saints will be resurrected with is the image of the second man from Heaven (1 Corinthians 15:42-49). There is (1) this earthly, natural body that now is and (2) the spiritual body after the resurrection, there is no kind of body between death when it is *“sown a natural body,”* and the resurrection when it is *“raised a spiritual body.”* Nether are there two kinds of bodies before death; there is not a *“spiritual body”* before it is *“raised a spiritual body,”* at the second coming of Christ. *“Natural”* is translated from *psukikos*, which is derived from *psukee*; *psukee* is the natural body (life) we now have, not an immaterial, invisible, no substance something that has no body, and that no one knows what it really is, or what it is like.

**It is this corruptible mortal person that will put on incorruption and immortality, not a soul that already is both incorruptible and immortal.**

*“This corruptible - must put on Incorruption”* 1 Corinthians 15:53

*“This mortal - must put on Immortality”* 1 Corinthians 15:53

If we have a soul that is now immortal, how could this immortal soul it be changed to immortal?

1. *“This mortal”* is without doubt the earthly person in the image of Adam; even those that believe we now have an immortal soul do not believe this soul is now mortal. It is the saved **person** that is now mortal that will put on immortality, not an immortal soul that would already be immortal. This is speaking of the saved at the resurrection, nothing is said about the lost who will also be resurrected for

- judgment at the same time, nothing about them being changed from the image of Adam to the image of Christ, or being raised in glory and power, or about them putting on immortality.
2. It is this mortal person that is to be changed to an immortal person, not a soul that is already immortal changed from immortal to immortal.
  3. It is the person that is now in the image of Adam that will be changed to the image of Christ.
    - I know of no one that believes the immortal soul they believe in is now in the image of Adam, but this soul will *“be changed, in a moment, in the twinkling of an eye,”* or that an immortal soul they say is now immortal is now *“this mortal.”*
    - To change 1 Corinthians 15 from speaking about a person, and make it be speaking about a deathless immortal soul or about a deathless immortal spirit makes it pure nonsense.

Fred P. Thompson: “Neither Paul nor any other main-stream Christian theologian has been content with the idea of immortality without resurrection. Some kind of body is essential to personality as we know it. Resurrected, we shall not be naked but appropriately clothed, **not phantoms or pure spirits but embodied persons.**” Page 168, *What The Bible Says About Heaven And Hell*, College Press, 1983.

**It is the person that is now in the image of Adam that will be in the image of Christ, not as taught by Plato, an immaterial soul that has no substance that was never in the image of Adam.**

Wayne Jackson “Do Human Beings Have an Immortal Soul?” *Christians Courier*, says First Corinthians 15:53 speaks of the nature of the future **resurrected body**.

- Then it is the corruptible person that must put on (become) an incorruptible person (1 Corinthians 15:53).
- Then it is the mortal person that must become an immortal person (1 Corinthians 15:53).

If the person is resurrected an incorruptible and immortal person, a spiritual being, and if there were an immortal spiritual being already in a person, then there would be two immortal spiritual being.

1. The immortal spiritual “soul.”
2. The immortal spiritual person.

Will the two ever know each other anymore that the person can now know the soul that he or she is told is in them? I know nothing about an “immaterial, invisible” (Vine, page 588) being that is nothing but *“mental thoughts”* (Merey, “Death And The Afterlife,” page 79); it has not contacted me or in any way let me know it is in me; I know no more about “it” than a person that has never heard of the Bible or about “it.” But I am told that I must believe, repent, and be baptized to save “it” from Hell.

A STRANGE CHANGE: When I first became a Christian in the fifties all most every sermon ended with an invention in which the sinners were told to repent and be baptized to save the soul that is in them from Hell. Today “soul” is almost never used in preaching and it has been years since I have heard anyone told to “save your soul” or God will forever torment “it” in Hell.

Body of humiliation | “Conformed to the body of his glory” Phil 3:21  
Earthly tent | “A house not made with hands” 2 Cor. 5:1-10  
Earthly image of Adam | Heavenly image of Christ 1 Corinthians 15:49  
Adam a living soul | Christ a life giving spirit 1 Corinthians 15:45  
All now have the body of Adam | Saints to be like Christ 1 John 3:2

*“For since by man came death, by man came also the resurrection of the dead. For as in Adam all die, so also in Christ shall all be made alive. But each in his own order: Christ the first fruits, then they that are Christ’s at his coming”* (1 Corinthians 15:21-23). It is strange that when that when many read this they see:

- A soul that cannot die but it dies.
- A soul that is dead but it is not dead, nevertheless that soul is made alive by the resurrection.

It is the mortal person that dies—the same mortal person that will be made alive by the resurrection, not a deathless soul made alive by the resurrection.

*"Behold, I tell you a mystery: WE all shall not sleep, but WE shall all be changed, in a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump: for the trumpet shall sound, and THE DEAD shall be raised incorruptible, and WE shall be changed"* (1 Corinthians 15:51-52). (1) IT IS THE PERSON THAT IS ASLEEP THAT WILL BE INCORRUPTIBLE WHEN THE PERSON IS RAISED FROM THE DEAD, (2) AND THE PERSON THAT IS ALIVE WHEN CHRIST COMES THAT WILL BE CHANGED. *"Changed"* means something will be changed, it is the mortal person that will be changed to an immortal person, not an immortal soul or spirit changed to an immortal soul or spirit. *"And WE shall be changed,"* not *"our souls or our spirits shall be changed."* Why do those that say they do not change the Bible change the *"we"* to *"it"*? It is the transformation of the person that is in the image of Adam to the person in the image of Christ, the survival of the person, not a soul. It is not a soul, whatever you believe a soul to be that will be raised from the dead; it will be you changed from mortal to immortal. It is you that will always live in Heaven with Christ, or you that will always be dead. That it is only a soul, not you, that will be in Heaven is the doctrine of man. The resurrection means the restoring of the person, not just something that is in the person and will leave the person at death.

1. *"Flesh and blood cannot inherit the kingdom of God"* (1 Corinthians 15:50).
2. *"WE all shall not sleep, but WE shall all be changed, in a moment in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump: for the trumpet shall sound"* (1 Corinthians 15:51-52). It is the transformation of the flesh and blood body to a spiritual body; without the transformation from earthly to heavenly, no person could inherit the kingdom of God. For both those that will be asleep and those that will be living when Christ returns, both will experience the same change to the image of Christ.
  - Those that are asleep and those that will be living are both changed in the same moment at the sound of the trumpet; therefore, no one is changed at the moment of death without the resurrection.
3. *"And THE DEAD shall be raised incorruptible"* (1 Corinthians 15:52).
4. *"And WE shall be changed"* (1 Corinthians 15:52). Not a soul or spirit changed.
5. *"For this corruptible must put on incorruption"* (1 Corinthians 15:53).
6. *"And this mortal must put on immortality"* (1 Corinthians 15:53). This mortal person, not this mortal soul or spirit.

*"But some one will say, 'How are the dead raised and with what manner of body do they come'...you sow not the body that shall be...God gives it a body even as it pleased Him"* (1 Corinthians 15:35-49).

- *"It is sown in corruption; it is raised in incorruption"* not *"sown and raised in corruption, then changed to incorruption."*
- *"It is sown in dishonor; it is raised in glory"* not *"sown and raised in dishonor then changed to honor."*
- *"It is sown a natural body; it is raised a spiritual body"* not *"sown and raised a natural body then changed to spiritual body."* It is a **spiritual body** that is raised,

not an “immaterial invisible no substance” **soul or spirit** that is not dead and has no body.

**Nowhere is it said only a soul will be resurrected, only a soul will be in Heaven. The Bible always says it is the person that will be resurrected, and the mortal person that will put on immortality, it is the person that is now in the image of Adam and will be in the image of Christ.**

*"We shall **all be changed**, in a moment, in the twinkling of an eye **at the last trump**: for the trumpet shall sound, and **the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed**"* 1 Corinthians 15: 52. If all the saved are **alive** in Abraham's bosom, who are the **dead** that shall be **raised**? If the dead are neither mortal – in the image of Adam nor immortal – in the image of Christ, then if they are now living, what kind of being are they, what image are they in? How can anyone deny that 1 Corinthians 15:53 is speaking of persons being changed from mortal bodies to immortality bodies, not of immortal souls being changed to immortal souls—that would be no change? It is persons that will be changed from mortal to immortal persons that will be in Heaven, not souls that are now living in the persons,

- **New International Version:** *"For the perishable must clothe itself with the imperishable, and the mortal with immortality."*
- **New American Standard Bible:** *"For this perishable must put on the imperishable, and this mortal must put on immortality."*
- **American Standard Version:** *"For this corruptible must put on incorruption, and this mortal must put on immortality."*
- **English Standard Version:** *"For this perishable body must put on the imperishable, and this mortal body must put on immortality."*
- **New Living Translation:** *"For our dying bodies must be transformed into bodies that will never die; our mortal bodies must be transformed into immortal bodies."*
- **King James Version:** *"For this corruptible must put on incorruption, and this mortal must put on immortality."*
- **International Standard Version:** *"For what is decaying must be clothed with what cannot decay, and what is dying must be clothed with what cannot die."*
- **Darby Bible Translation:** *"For this corruptible must needs put on incorruptibility, and this mortal put on immortality."*
- **English Revised Version:** *"For this corruptible must put on incorruption, and this mortal must put on immortality."*
- **Weymouth New Testament:** *"For so it must be: this perishable nature must clothe itself with what is imperishable, and this mortality must clothe itself with immortality."*

The body of a caterpillar is nothing like the body of the butterfly it changes into, but it is still the same insect; the body of a mortal person is nothing like the immortal body the person will change into, but it will still be the same person.

#### **The two "all's."**

*"We **all** shall be changed."* Both **all** those who are asleep in Christ, and **all** those who are alive at the second coming will **both** be changed. The immortal soul doctrine says, "None of us shall sleep for this would be soul sleeping." It is the whole person that sleeps, not an immaterial soul.

- In 1 Corinthians 15:50-53 Paul said nothing about a soul or spirit that needs no resurrection or change; he is speaking of the resurrection of the dead in Christ changed to a spiritual body.
- *"For in the resurrection they...are as the angels **IN HEAVEN**"* (Matthew 22:30). Angels are not in the image of Adam and have never been in his image.

- "And as **we** have borne the image of the earthy (Adam), **we** shall also bear the image of the heavenly (Christ)" (1 Corinthians 15:49).
- "Beloved, **we** are now children of God, and it is NOT YET MADE MANIFEST WHAT **WE** SHALL BE. **We** know that, if he shall be manifested, **WE** SHALL BE LIKE HIM; for **we** shall see him even as he is" (1 John 3:2).
- "In my Father's house are many mansions; if it were not so, I would have told **you**; for I go to prepare a place for **you**. And if I go and prepare a place for **you**, I come again, and will receive **you** unto myself that where I am, there **you** may be also" (John 14:2-3). Christ was speaking to them, not to spirits; He has not yet come to receive them.
- "The dead in Christ shall rise first; then **we** that are alive, that are left, shall together with them be caught up in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the air: **and so shall WE ever be with the Lord**" (1 Thessalonians 3:16-17).
- "For **our** citizenship is in heaven; whence also **we** wait for a Savior, the Lord Jesus Christ: who shall **FASHION ANEW the body of our humiliation, that it may BE CONFORMED to the body of his glory**" (Philippians 3:20-21 American Standard Version). "CHANGE" King James Version. "TRANSFORM" New American Standard Version.

**The body will be changed, not an immortal soul "changed."** "The body of our humiliation" is not an "immaterial, invisible, no substance" soul that will be remade ("fashion anew") into another "immaterial, invisible, no substance" soul, but it is us that will be changed from an earthly body to a body like the body Christ now has, changed from a body that is suitable for life on this earth to a body that will be suitable for life in Heaven. **It is our body that will be changed, not an immaterial something in us that is now just as it will be in Heaven, and it cannot ever be changed.** I do not know how I can be raised without this earthly body and still be me, but I believe God when He says that it will be me with a spiritual body. Those who believe a person now has an immortal immaterial soul now living in them believe this invisible something in them is already "conformed to the body of His glory," not the person that will be changed to the image of Christ at His coming. Just as we now have the right bodies for life on this earth, we will have the right bodies for life in Heaven. It is our bodies (us - not souls) that will be transformed to be like His heavenly body. **What body will be resurrected?** Many believe that without the resurrection of the earthly body it would not be us but a new creation. Are they saying God dose not have the power to resurrect us immortal without first resurrecting the earthly body?

- Some believe the dead in Christ will be, "**Raised with an earthly body and soon after the resurrection the earthly body will then be changed to a spiritual body.**"
- Others believe it will be, "**Raised an earthly body, and restored to be like the earthly body of Adam before he sinned.**"

Both are adding to and changing what the Bible says, "*Raised a spiritual body*" (1 Corinthians 15:44), not raised with an earthly body and then changed to a spiritual body.

**The image of Christ is not just a glorified earthly image of Adam.** The body made for this earth that is put in the ground will be raised a spiritual body suitable for life in Heaven. There is now no way we can know anything about what a "*spiritual body*" is like, but we shall know at the coming of Christ. It is not just a glorified natural earthly body, not a glorified image of Adam.

The immortal soul doctrine says not so.

1. The innate immortality doctrine says, "While the person is living, the immortal soul is just as immortal as it will ever be; the immaterial invisible no substance soul that will be in Heaven is now

existing; the soul will not be changed after the death of the body that the soul is now imprisoned in.”

2. The innate immortality doctrine says, “Souls will be alive in Heaven from the moment of death; these immortal souls that are now in a person can never be dead; therefore, they cannot be raised from the dead.” Who is wrong, Paul or today's theology?

**Image of Adam versus image of Christ:** We are now a living soul in the image of Adam. We will be raised in the image of Christ (1 Corinthians 15:45-49). **The “living soul,” the physical body in the image of Adam that we now have** (Genesis 2:7; 1 Corinthians 15:44-45) **is not the “spiritual body”** (1 Corinthians 15:44) **in the image of Christ that we will have.** An immortal soul, which many believe we need to save so that it will live in Heaven, is not the “spiritual body,” which all saved persons will have after the resurrection. We will be the same person we now are, but our bodies will be changed from the image of Adam to the image of Christ, from earthly bodies to spiritual bodies. All of us, our whole person, will be in Heaven; not just some thin air, immaterial, invisible part of us that has no body.

“If there is a natural (*psuchikos*–soulish) body there is also a spiritual body” (1 Corinthians 15:44-45). Paul is quoting Genesis 2:7, the first man, Adam became a living being (*psuche*), not had a pagan immaterial deathless soul put in him.

Terms Paul used of the natural (*psuchikos*–soulish) body.

- The natural soulish body is now “a living being (*psuche*)” (1 Corinthians 15:44).
- The natural soulish body, is now a living being is “of the earth, earthy” (1 Corinthians 15:47).
- The natural soulish body is now a living being that is in the “image of the earthy” (Adam) (1 Corinthians 15:47), a living being that is “flesh and blood” (1 Corinthians 15:50).

When God made the earth He give fish bodies that are appropriate to live in water, and birds bodies that are appropriate to fly. He gives Adam a body that was appropriate for life on this earth, a body of flesh and blood. Where will we be after the Judgment Day, if in Heaven we will need to have a spiritual body suitable for life in Heaven? Flesh and blood cannot inherit the kingdom of God, but the earthly body in the image of Adam both before and after he sinned is flesh and blood. In the resurrection we will be like angels who are in Heaven (Matthew 22:30). Is there anyone who believes angels have earthly bodies of flesh and blood in the image of Adam? After the resurrection Christians will have spiritual bodies in the image of Christ, not earthly bodies in the image of Adam that **cannot inherit the Kingdom of God** (1 Corinthians 15:50).

Where will the saved be after the resurrection?

On Earth or in Heaven?

If Christians are to be reunited with their earthly bodies at the resurrection, no matter where the kingdom of God will be after the resurrection, it cannot be inherited by “flesh and blood” (1 Corinthians 15:50).

1. Or if, as some teach, the kingdom of Heaven is to be on this earth, “flesh and blood” bodies that are in the image of Adam could not inherit it (1 Corinthians 15:50). “That which is born of the flesh is flesh” (John 3:6). “**It is sown a natural body (It is the body of “flesh and blood” that is put in the grave); it is raised a spiritual body”** (1 Corinthians 15:44); **this passage is not complicated, the body is put in the ground is a natural body, and the body that comes out of**

**the ground will be a spiritual body.** The spiritual body is not just a glorified earthly body.

- The natural body is sown in the ground in corruption, dishonor, and weakness.
  - The spiritual body is raised with incorruption, glory, and power.
2. Or if, as others teach that the “soul,” the “immaterial, invisible, no substance” something is to be is to be reunited with the body of “*flesh and blood*” at the resurrection, neither the body nor the “soul” could inherit the kingdom of Heaven as long as the “soul” is reunited to the “*flesh and blood*” body.

**How could it be said any more clearly that this earthly body will not be raised, or that we do not now have the body we shall have after the resurrection?** (1) Or that it is not an inter immortal part of us, which is now existing in us, which needs no change, which will never be dead, but will be raised from the dead anyway? (2) Nor any more clearly that we are now "mortal," but we will be raised "immortal"? Something that is in us could not put on immortality if it is already immortal. It is this mortal person that must put on immortality, not an immortal soul that is now in this mortal person that must be freed. If a person did have a soul in them and it is now immortal, that immortal soul could not "*put on immortality.*"

1. Those asleep: Their physical bodies sowed will be raised spiritual bodies. "*It is sown a natural body,*" but it is not the natural body (the body of flesh and blood) that will be raised, but "*it is raised a spiritual body.*"
2. Those living: Their physical bodies will be changed to spiritual bodies. The change to both those asleep, and those who will be living will be identical and at the same time, both at the resurrection. On this side of the coming of Christ we have only physical bodies. On the other side of the coming of Christ we will have spiritual bodies. It will be an alteration of the whole person from being physical in the image of Adam to being spiritual in the image of Christ, not just "*an immaterial part of a person*" (W. E. Vine) forever being unchanged.
3. "*But now has Christ been raised from the **dead**, the first fruit of them that are asleep. For since by man came **death**, by man came also the resurrection of the dead. For in Adam all **die**, so also in Christ shall all be made **alive**. But each in his own order: Christ the first fruits, then they that are Christ's at his coming*" (1 Corinthians 15:20-23). The term "*dead*" or "*die*" means the same every time it is used in this passage. It is the person that is dead, and the person that will be made alive at the resurrection, not just some immaterial part of the person that is now alive, and cannot be dead. Death is death, and cannot be made to mean alive.

If the dead are now living in some kind of paradise somewhere, but not Heaven, Hell or earth, why do they hope for a resurrection of the mortal earthly body, and what good would it be? "*In a moment, in the twinkling of an eye*" (1 Corinthians 15:52) what would be the reason for raising the natural body for such a short time? Will the deathless “soul” come back from Heaven to put the earthly body back on, only to put it off ("*Be changed*") in a moment all before the judgment? See 1 Corinthians 15:50; 1 Thessalonians 5:15-17; Philippians 3:21). Then it would have the earthly body resurrected only for the "*twinkling of an eye*" (1 Corinthians 15:52). If this deathless soul were living in Heaven or Hell, the resurrection of the body for only a moment is all there could be to the resurrection, why have it; no part of a person would be dead but his body; no part of a person could be



raised from the dead but his body. The only part of a person they believe will be in Heaven or Hell, the immaterial, invisible soul, would be as alive as it will ever be, and already be where they think it will always be.

Robert C. Welch says we will not come forth with the same kind of body, which is planted. Florida College Lectures, page 238, 1975.

**What kind of body will we have for eternity?** When we are caught up to meet Christ in the air, will He bring us back to earth, and have His kingdom on earth where we will have an earthly body, or will we be with Him in Heaven and have a spiritual body? If you believe on earth, an earthly body is a must, if you believe in Heaven it cannot be an earthly body. **Where we will be for eternity will determine what kind of body we will have.**

**Not one kind of body living in another kind of body:** 1 Corinthians 15:42 is a simple and undeniable statement that says that we do not now have incorruption and immortality, and will not have them after death; we will not have put on incorruption, or immortality unto the resurrection (1 Corinthians 15:54). No one knows anything about what our spiritual body will be like, but it is not something we now have inside this body of flesh, just waiting to get out at death. Those that are in Christ will have a body, not be just a thin air nothing, or some kind of ghost; therefore, the resurrected body will have substance of some kind, but not any kind of earthly substance, not flesh (1 John 3:2). And not something that will fit within this body and not be seen. **Not one kind of body, made with one kind of substance, living inside another kind of body that has another kind of substance.** Likewise, Heaven is a place with substance (most certainly far greater than this earth), and not just a cloud in the sky. This world and universe are so complicated and large that there is much on this earth that man does not yet know, and he does not yet even know the size of this creation with its many galaxies. My opinion is that it is small and insignificant in both size and splendor when compared to Heaven, and this body is an insignificant seed, an acorn compared to a large oak tree (1 Corinthians 15:35-39). Seeds are unlike the trees yet the same identity is in them; we cannot know what the characteristics of the spiritual body will be by looking at our physical body. If there were a Hell would the lost have the same great new and splendid spiritual body in Hell that the saved in Heaven will have?

We cannot see God's greatest work (Heaven and spiritual beings), or know anything about what they are like; therefore, this universe shows us only a small part of the power of God. We each do different things in a day, not all the same things, or all think the same thoughts. Today we do not do the same thing that we did the day before. While there will not be days as we know them, Heaven will not be an eternity with everyone doing and thinking the same thing, or all seeing the same thing with never any change. Heaven will not be just a glorified earth, but we will each one be the same individual as we now are, not just carbon copies of each other. Heaven will be great far beyond this earth or anything that can come into our minds now, but many act in such a way that shows going there is not the most important thing to them, and taking others to it is even less important. What Heaven is like that we do not know would fill many books, what Heaven is really like, not the metaphors of streets of gold, but what we know about what it is really like would not take up one line in a book. The Bible is silent about what Heaven is like, just as it is silent on what a "*spiritual body*" is like. We know that Heaven is where God is, and where Christ was before He came to earth, and is where He is now at the right hand of God. We know that Heaven is where the angels are, but nothing about what

it is like, and not really anything about what angles are really like. We know that Heaven is where Christ has gone to prepare a place for us, but nothing about what Heaven or the place He has prepared will be like when we get there.

Many believe, Revelation 21 is a vision of the church before the second coming, a vision of the perfect bride of Christ on earth, or if, as many others believe it is a vision of Heaven. If it is a vision of Heaven, it is a vision of the utterly magnificent and perfection of Heaven, but nothing about what is really there, or nothing about what Heaven will really look like.

We are told some things that will not be in Heaven.

- No tears, no death, no mourning, or crying, or pain (Revelation 21:4)
- No curse (Revelation 22:3)
- No night (Revelation 22:5)

In Revelation 21 and 22 we are given a vision of a city (a earthly city as we know), but it is a city of perfection and beauty far beyond any city on earth. It is symbolism of perfection to tell us of Heaven's perfection and magnificent, but we are not to think that Heaven will literally have streets of pure gold that are transparent as glass, or walls of precious stones. Heaven will be composed of spiritual substance for more spectacular than any earthly substance, even more spectacular than gold.

B. Reeves: "I do not know what all we will be doing in heaven, but I do know we will not be dormant and inactive" Guardian of Truth, page 8, 1996.

We now have a "*natural body*," and after the resurrection the saved will have a "*spiritual body*." Do evil spirits have a body? If God, angels and evil spirits have no substance of any kind, if they are nothing but thoughts with no body, there can not be a "*spiritual body*" (1 Corinthians 15:44). Is there were a being in us, it would now be like the angels, but Christ said **we, not "it,"** will be "*as angels*" in the resurrection, **but we are not now "as angels"** (Matthew 22:30). Though we can now know only of material substances of this earth does not mean there is no spiritual substances. If there were not, there could be no Heaven and no spiritual body; just as this earth is a real place made up of real substance, Heaven is a real place, and spiritual being are real being. We are not now a spirit as the angels and demons are, and will not be unto the resurrection.

If Heaven is not a real place it could have no beauty; the symbolism showing it's perfection and beauty would have no meaning. Christ could not have gone there to prepare a place for us in a place that does not exist.

Can you imagine such a thing as people standing before God clothed with white robes and praising God, but they have no body? It is inconceivable. A thin air nothing cannot wear a robe; if Robert Peterson were right, there could not be white robes for there will be nothing but thoughts. If this earthly body "*the body of our humiliation*" that shall be fashioned anew "*that it may be conformed to the body of his glory*" shall be a thin air ghost with no body, then it would make Christ also be a thin air nothing. How can nothing have "*glory*"? How can thin air nothing be like anything "*conformed*" ("*fashioned*" King James Version)? There would be nothing to "*conform*" to anything. "*What we will be has not yet been revealed, what we do know is this: when He is revealed, we will be like Him, for we will see Him as He is*" (1 John 3:2, New Revised Standard Version). I do not know how God made this world out of nothing, but He said in His word that He did and I believe Him. I do not know how God can raise me with a

spiritual body without this earthly body and it shall still be me, but His word says He will, and I believe Him.

Summary: The resurrection will be from the **dead**, not from life. **It shows we are now mortal, and we will die, and we will be dead, that we are not immortal before the resurrection.** The resurrection will be a bringing back to life those who are **dead**.

**"BUT EACH IN HIS OWN ORDER"**

1 Corinthians 15:23-38

(1) "*Christ the first-fruits*" (2) "*Then they that are Christ's at His coming.*" Those that believe the soul is the only part of a person that will live after death must change the order of being raised from the dead.

- Changes the dead in the Old Testament to have been raised **at their death**, before Christ and without His resurrection.
  - Therefore, Christ was not the first-fruits
- *Changes "Then they that are Christ's at His coming,"* to they are raised **at their death and are now in Heaven before the coming of Christ**, and Paul is made to be wrong both times. (1) Wrong when he said Christ was the first fruits, (2) and wrong when he said, "*They that are Christ's at His coming.*" **Do you believe man or God?**

Guardian of Truth, page 254, 1994 said in 1 Thessalonians 4:13-18 Paul deals with one-half of the resurrection; he is speaking only of those in Christ, and he says nothing about those not in Christ. This is also true of most of 1 Corinthians 15 "*They that are Christ's at His coming*" 15:23. The lost will not be "*raised in glory*" 15:43, in "*power*" 15:43, or in "*the image of the heavenly*" (Christ) 15:49. **Can you find one thing said about the body of the lost after the judgment? What will it be like? Or that the lost will have any kind of body?**

- Will their body be in the image of Christ when they are in Hell?
- Will their body still be in the image of Adam when they are in Hell?
- Will God give the lost a spiritual immortal body only so He can torment them forever?

The doctrine of eternal torment makes the Bible need to be rewrote.

- "*Wages is sin is death*" (Romans 6:23) must be rewritten to be, "Wages of sin is an eternal life of torment."
- "*You shall surely die*" (Genesis 2:16-17) must be rewritten to be, "You shall surely suffer eternal torment in Hell."
- "*Through one man sin entered into the world, and death through sin*" (Romans 5:12) must be rewrote to be, "Through one man sin entered into the world, eternal Hell through sin."
- "*For God so loved the world, that whosoever believes on him should not perish*" (John 3:16) must be rewrote to be, "For God so loved the world, that whosoever believes on him should not go to Hell."

**THE BIBLE TEACHES ----- BUT MAN TEACHES**

We put on immortality at the Judgment 1 Corinthians 15:53	We are immortal from birth   (also we "seek" it Romans 2:7)
Wages of sin is death Rom 6:23	Human soul can never die
The end of the lost is to be burned Hebrews 6:8	Lost will be burned,  but will have no "end"
The word the or idea of Hell is not in Bible	Hell is taught as though it is  on most every page of the Bible
"Raise up even from the dead" Hebrews 11:19	Living souls to be brought back from  somewhere, not raised from death

The evil shall perish be destroyed	The evil can never perish,  or be destroyed, or die
Death to be abolished 1 Corinthians 15:26 and 15:55	Death is "separated from God"  and can never be abolished
Lost will be devoured Hebrews 12:29	The lost can never be devoured or  consumed, they must burn forever
God can destroy soul in Gehenna Matthew 10:28	God can torment the soul,  but He cannot destroy it
Christ died (give His life) for our sins	His soul did not die: only  His human body was dead
Christ came to give us life John 10:10; 10:28	All humans are eternal from birth  (have life and immortality) there-
"Eternal life" John 17:2	fore already have "eternal life"
God is everywhere	God is not everywhere  (if death is separation from God)
God is just and loving	This teaching makes God  unjust, sadistic, cruel, evil
First the natural (now) <b>Then that which is spiritual"</b> (after the resurrection)	We were born with a natural  body with a spiritual body  inside the natural body
A day of wrath and judgment (same day) Romans 2:5ff	A Day of Judgment but an  eternity of wrath
Nothing about God tormenting anyone or wrath of God on the lost after Judgment Day	Both are taught as if they  were gospel facts
The resurrection is unto life John 5:29 And is "from the dead" Romans 1:4; Acts 23:6	The dead are now living in Heaven  or Hell - have life and rewarded  or punished without the resurrection
Christ said "I give unto them eternal life" John 10:18	He gives eternal (immortal) life  to all at birth
Earthly body is but a bare seed of spiritual body which we will have after Judgment Day 1 Corinthians 15:35-49	We now have the full-grown  spiritual body, the soul,  before death and the judgment  not just a seed of it
Judgment and punishment are at the second coming of Christ "They are worthy of death" Romans 1:32	We are judged good or bad at death  and punished/rewarded at that time  But they cannot die and God  cannot kill them
"For there is no work, nor device nor knowledge, nor wisdom, in Sheol, whither you go" Ecclesiastes 19:10	"For there is work, and  device, and knowledge, and  wisdom, in Sheol whither you  go " Ecclesiastes 9:10
"Soul that sins, it shall die" Ezekiel 23:4*	The soul is immortal,  therefore, it cannot die *This seems to be a person bring put to death under the law, but many almost always apply it to a soul dying at the judgment, even while they are teaching that there is a deathless soul that cannot die. See Hebrews 10:28.

---



---

**GOD ----- VERSUS --- THEOLOGY**

God said "destruction"	God meant "torment"
God said "death"	God meant "separation"
God did not say man has an immortal soul from birth	Plato and theology says  and teaches it for him
Nothing is said about wrath after the Judgment Day	Some know and teach it will  last for eternity in hell

---



---

**NOT FLESH OR SPIRIT! - WHAT IS THIS THIRD KIND OF BODY BEFORE THE RESURRECTION?  
NOT EARTH OR HEAVEN! - WHERE IS THIS THIRD KIND OF PLACE WHERE THOSE WHO ARE NOT ASLEEP ARE  
NOW IN?**

<b>BEFORE DEATH</b>	<b>AFTER DEATH</b>	<b>AFTER SECOND COMING</b>
Natural Body	What Body?	Spiritual Body 1 Cor. 15:44ff
Image of Earthly	Who's Image?	Image of Heavenly 1 Cor. 15:49
Corruption	Neither one	Incorruption 1 Cor. 15:42-43
Dishonor	Neither one	Glory 1 Corinthians 15:43
Weakness	Neither one	Power 1 Corinthians 15:43
Mortal	Neither one	Immortality 1 Corinthians 15:54
By man (Adam)	(Asleep in Christ)	By man (Christ)
Death	1 Corinthians 15:21	Resurrection of Dead

Die in Adam	Alive Before Being	In Christ MADE ALIVE
1 Cor. 15:22	"Made Alive"	at His Coming
"Unto Death"	? ? ? ? ? ? ? ? ?	"Crown of Life" Revelation 2:10
"Once to Die"	The Silence of God	"After This Comes
	But We Speak	Judgment" Hebrews 9:27
"This world"	The Thunderous	"That which is to come"
Ephesians 1:2	Silence of God	

**Unconditional immortality makes 1 Corinthians 15 impossible** by teaching that we are now immortal and now have incorruption from birth. We cannot put on that which we now have on. If we now have an immortal *"immaterial, invisible part of man,"* (W. E. Vine) which cannot die, then Paul's argument in 1 Corinthians 15 to prove there is a resurrection is destroyed. If the Corinthians that had died had a spirit that could not die, they had not perished, and could not perish; if they were alive in Heaven they could not be resurrected from the dead, there will be no resurrection and 1 Corinthians 15 is nothing but pure footlessness.

**Unconditional immortality makes Paul's "changed" impossible** 1 Corinthians 15:51. If a person now has an immortal incorruptible soul, it cannot be *"changed."* It is "us" not just something that is in "us" that will come forth from the grave *"changed."* If a "soul" were now immortal, it could not be *"changed"* from mortal to immortal, it could not *"put on immortality"* at the resurrection. We do not have immortality before the resurrection. The doctrine of immortality from birth makes the soul now have incorruption. Paul says, *"This mortal must put on immortality"* 1 Corinthians 15:53. **"This mortal" is what will put on immortality, not a soul that is already immortal.** It is not some inter immaterial, invisible part of us that is now immortal and can never die, which shall be raised from the dead and *"changed,"* but it is "us" that will be *"changed"* at our resurrection.

**Unconditional immortality makes tree of life not needed** Genesis 3:22-24: If a person now has an immortal "soul" in them, this soul could not die. It will live forever somewhere, on earth or wherever. A soul leaving the person it is in and moving from earth too wherever; and having more joy, more power, more blessing, etc., when it gets there than it has while it was in our body would not be a death. Without the tree of life, this soul will always live for it would already be immortal and cannot die.

**Unconditional immortality makes the Bible contradict the Bible.** A soul that cannot die-**versus**-death, perish, destroy, lost, end. If the wages of sin is death, there cannot be an eternal life of torment. By misusing some scriptures, those who teach there is a soul in a person that can never die makes the Bible contradict itself.

**It maybe a delusion to some** 2 Thessalonians 2:9-12, *"And with all the deception of wickedness for those who perish, because they did not receive the love of the truth so as to be saved. And for this reason God will send upon them a deluding influence so that they might believe what is false, in order that they all may be judged who did not believe the truth."* The delusion can be any doctrine of man that is not the truth. **How big a lie and how many lies can you believe and still say you believe Christ?** Where do you draw the line on how much error you can believe? Some believe there is no line, and God will accept anything as worship. Some believe God will accept worship only if it is by faith, which comes from hearing His word (Romans 10:17; 14:23).

- Most do not believe Pagan worship is acceptable to God.
- Many do not believe worshipping the Pope, or a saint is acceptable to God.
- Many do not believe infant baptism and sprinkling are acceptable to God.
- Many do not believe having many wives is acceptable to God.

- Many do not believe the error that there is an immortal soul that is in a person at birth, which is the foundation of many other errors and the doctrine of Hell, which makes God more sadistic than any other being, to be acceptable to God.

Worshiping after the doctrines and precepts of men is not acceptable to God (Matthew 15:9). Not in the time of Christ and not today. If something is not clearly taught in the Bible, you cannot say that something is of faith that comes by hearing (Romans 10:17; 2 Corinthians 5:7). The truth shall make you free (John 8:32). Can anyone who believes any of Satan's lies over God's word be made free by the truth? **What you believe and teach can be a delusion, and be the difference in whether you live or die at the judgment if you make God more sadistic and evil than Satan.**

**Unconditional immortality makes modern spiritualism possible.** The teaching, that a person is conscious after death makes it possible and even probable that spirits can and do return to earth and speak to us. This has prepared the way for spiritualism. Satan may be using this to send his angels with lies to lead those who go to spiritualists into his way and keep them from the truth of God. If the truth, that all mankind are asleep from death to the resurrection were believed, and not the pagan doctrine of an immortal soul, then spiritualism would not be possible. If Mary is asleep, then the appearances of her ghost are the manifestations of a demon that makes many believe a lie. Satan is using spiritualism to make many believe his lie, "*You shall not surely die.*"

**Unconditional immortality makes some believe in "after death experiences," and makes them believable to many.** If a person now has a deathless soul in them, which does not die when the body dies, it makes it possible for some to believe a person can come back and tell things they saw on the other side of death. The truth, that a person is "*asleep*" from death unto the resurrection, and has no knowledge in the grave (Ecclesiastes 9:10) makes "after death experiences" impossible and unbelievable. A person who is asleep unto the resurrection has no afterlife experiences to tell us. In the many after death experiences I have read, no two are the same.

Not to take anything away from the power of Satan in the world, or his danger to us (see 1 Peter 5:8 etc.), but by making him be an eternal being, and the eternal ruler over Hell, Satan is being given a power he does not have that may add to his being worshiped by many. Some seem to think that to exist in torment with Satan over them may be better than not to exist, and they worship the one who they think will be over them. But, if they knew the truth, that at death Satan's end will be the same as theirs, and he will have no more power over them, he may not have the appeal of a being to be worshiped. **Satan has had many victories, but his lie that mankind now has something in them that is already immortal; therefore, there is no death, and the invention of Hell maybe his biggest victories. Many preach his lies!**

Summary: **Unconditional immortality reduces God and all spirit beings to being nothing but "mind," to being nothing but mental thoughts with no body, no substance, just thin air nothing.** Although most who believed unconditional immortality does not realize it makes God, angels, and mankind after the judgment to be nothing more than mental thoughts, but some have realized what it does to God and men. Robert Morey in "Death and The Afterlife," on page 79 says from the meaning of rephaim, when the body dies, a person enters a new kind of existence and exists as a spirit as angels and other spirits, they are nothing but thoughts. If that were true then both men and angels would be only energy beings, and they would be composed only of mind or mental energy, and be capable of supradimensional activity as thought and speech

without any kind of body. Although he did not mention God, he has reduced God to being nothing more than thoughts, an "energy being." According to him God and the soul he believes to now be in a person has no substance of any kind, they are only a disembodied mind or mental energy being.

Ron Halbrook said God is an immortal spirit, without a body, page 117, Florida College Annual Lectures, 1986.

W. E. Vine says, "*immaterial, invisible part of man,*" Vine's Complete Expository Dictionary Of Old And New Testament Words, page 593. According to them Heaven can exist only in the mind of God; it cannot be a real place if spirits are nothing more than thoughts with no substance; could a soul or a spirit be any more real than a dream is, for a soul would have no more actual existence, and no more substance than a dream. Not only is it this doctrine the same as the Pagan doctrine from which it came (we have an immaterial soul in us that has no body or substance), but also it makes God be the same and be nothing but thoughts. Most who believe a part of a person is now immortal have not come to the realization of where this belief takes them. The concept of a real resurrection and a "*immaterial, invisible part of man,*" that is only thoughts are completely incompatible, just as incompatible as the resurrection of a "soul" that is as alive as it will ever be; therefore, it would be as alive before it's resurrection as it will be after it's resurrection. "*And will raise up US through his power*" (1 Corinthians 6:14), not "it."

If you remain a conscious being after your body dies, have you really died?

**Anything that is not taught in the Bible is not a Bible doctrine. Faith comes by hearing God's word. Can anyone who believes something not taught in the Bible truly say he or she has faith?**

## CHAPTER FOUR

**From where came Hell, from man or God?  
How did a real earthly valley near Jerusalem  
Which existed in the time of Christ  
And is still today called by the name "Gehenna"  
Become a place of eternal torment named "Hell"  
Which is a place that is not on this earth?**

The word Hell in the King James Version is translated from four different words, three in the Greek New Testament (Gehenna, hades and Tartarus), and one in the Hebrew Old Testament (sheol). Both sheol in the Old Testament, and hades in the New Testament mean grave; Sheol is translated both (1) grave (2) and Hell in the King James Version, and Tartarus is translated Hell one time. Most other translations (American Standard Version, New American Standard Version, Revised Standard Version, New Revised Standard Version, New International Version, and others) translate only one word (Gehenna) into Hell, and only in the New Testament, not four different words, which have different meanings. The word Hell is not in the Old Testament in any of the above translations, or is not in most other translations. Although this valley is mentioned frequently in the Old Testament called the valley of Hinnom, even the King James Version did not translated it "Hell" as they did in the New Testament. Gehenna was a well-known valley south of Jerusalem long before it was made into a dump, and it exists and has the name "*Gehenna*" to this day. Josiah might have made this valley into a rubbish dump (2 Kings 23:10; 2 Chronicles 28:1-4). In the time of Christ this valley was

the city dump. Most newer translations, and most all Bible students now admit sheol, hades, and Tartarus do not mean Hell, but some still believe Gehenna should be translated Hell; this makes a detailed look at this valley as it is used in both the Old and New Testament is necessary.

### **HOW DID ONE PLACE BECOME ANOTHER PLACE?**

**Gehenna is the name of a valley south of Jerusalem; it is a real geographical location in both the Old Testament and the New Testament, and it is still a real location today, and many tourists now visit it.** The valley of Gehenna was used in the time of Christ as the city dump of Jerusalem. In the fifties I did some work at the dump of a city about the size of Jerusalem in the time of Christ. The refuse would be put in large piles and set on fire, and all day rains could not put it out. There would have been no way for the people of Jerusalem to quench it (put out) before it burnt up all there was to burn. The remains of animals were put in pits to be covered, and worms (Greek, Maggots-Young, page 1074) would get into them, and even after we put many gallons of spray in a pit you could see the remains moving from the working of the maggots. Back in the fifties and before cities did not have landfills, but had garbage dumps where they would put the garbage in piles or in pits, and burn the garbage. Big city garbage dumps were always burning night and day, and the smoke could sometimes be seen for miles. They were the same as Gehenna was in the time of Jesus, and were literally used for the destruction of the unwanted city garbage. Brimstone (sulfur) was added to keep the garbage burning in Gehenna; it was always burning night and day, and those near by could see the smoke always rising. On some of the four occasions Christ used Gehenna as a metaphor, those He was speaking to might have been able to see the smoke of Gehenna in the background while He was speaking. The people of Jerusalem did not have a trash pickup as we do, and had to take their own trash to Gehenna; therefore, many of those Christ was speaking to would be very familiar with the never-ending fires and worms that were in Gehenna. **How did the name of a valley that is near Jerusalem that exists to this day, and it's name is still called Gehenna today, how did it's name become Hell in the Bible when "Hell" is not the name Christ used; "Hell" is a name that was unknown in the time of Christ and unknown to anyone unto long after the New Testament was written? In the time of Christ Gehenna was a place of destruction with no torment, how did the name that Christ used, "Gehenna" get changed into an English word "Hell" that means an eternal place of torment, changed from Gehenna, a place that is on this earth to Hell, a place that is not on this earth, changed from a place of destruction to a place where there is no destruction as there was in Gehenna?** The answer is simple; the translators were willing to change the Bible to put their pagan doctrine into the Bible.

#### **Gehenna:**

- A place of destruction with no torment
- A place that is on this earth

#### **Hell:**

- A place of torment with no destruction
- A place that is not on this earth

ALEXANDER CAMPBELL: "In the time of our Savior, it (Gehenna) was the place to which all the filth, and the dead bodies of animals and criminals from the city of Jerusalem, were conveyed. Here worms were ever reveling on the carcasses of the dead, and fires were ever kept burning to



consume the noxious matter and to purge the air from its pestilential stench" "Five Discourses On Hell," 1848.

MOSES STUART: "After these sacrifices had ceased, the place was desecrated, and made one of loathing and horror. The pious king Josiah caused it to be polluted, 2 Kings xxii. 10; i.e. he caused to be carried their the filth of the city of Jerusalem. It would seem that the custom of desecrating this place, thus happily begun, was continued in after-ages down to the period when our Savior was on earth. Perpetual fires were kept up, in order to consume the offal, which was deposited there. And as the same offal would breed worms (for so all putrefying meat of course does), **hence came the expression, "Where the worm dies not, and the fire is not quenched."** "Exegetical Essays On Several Words Relating To Future Punishment," pages 192-193, Presbyterian Publication Committee, Public Domain.

JACOB BLAIN: "For Dr. George Campbell says, 'Our Lord, we find from the evangelists, spoke to his countrymen in the dialect of their own Scriptures, and used those names to which the reading of the Law, and the prophets had familiarized them.' Not observing this fact has been the great cause of the woeful mistake about future punishment. I affirm, then, that *Hinnom*, (*Gehenna*) is never used in the O. T. to mean a place of infernal punishment, or world of woe." Page 49, "Death Not Life: Or, The Theological Hell and Endless Misery Disproved," public domain.

ALBERT BARNES: "The extreme loathsomeness of the place, and filth and putrefaction, the corruption of the atmosphere, and the lurid fires blazing by day and by night, made it one of the most appalling and terrific objects with which a Jew was ever acquainted," Commentary on Matthew 5:22.

In the time of Jesus Gehenna was used as a place of destruction, but there was no torment in it; **those who heard Jesus would understand the use of Gehenna as a symbol of destruction, but would not have been able to look at Gehenna, their city dump and understand how it could be used as a symbol of a place of endless torment by God, for there was no torment in their city dump, and nothing alive was thrown into it, living persons were not tormented in the fire of Gehenna in the Old Testament of the New Testament.** When most who use the King James Version read Hell they never understand that Christ was speaking of the city dump, for they cannot from the King James Version for the translators have completely hid this from their readers. It was mistranslated to make the readers understand Christ to be speaking of a place that is not on this earth where God will be forever tormenting immortal souls and will be even after the earth is destroyed, even after the real Gehenna has been destroyed with the earth.

**A proper noun is the name of "a particular person, place, or thing." Gehenna is a proper noun, the name of a well-known particular place near Jerusalem, a place where many tourists now visit. To change Gehenna into Hell, another proper noun, the name of a completely different particular place is more than a bad translation; it is a deliberate changing. Bethlehem, Dead Sea, Gehenna, Rome, and Jericho are all proper nouns and should not be changed into another name. Why is Gehenna the only name that is changed to another name? Proper nouns (names) are the same in most languages; therefore, they are not translated, but Gehenna was changed, not translated, into Hell, into another proper noun, the name of another particular place just because the King James translators needed to. Hell is not a translation of Gehenna in the same way that New York is not a translation of Jerusalem. Gehenna and Hell are two different proper names of two completely different places. From where did the King James translators get this name, and why did they want to deliberately mislead all who read their translation? Changing Gehenna into Hell is not a**

**translation; it is a complete change, an unjustifiable change; NO ONE CAN DENY THAT JESUS USED "GEHENNA" AND THE TRANSLATORS DELIBERATELY CHANGE "GEHENNA" the name of one place on earth TO "HELL" the name of another place that is not on earth.** No body can deny that Jesus NEVER used the name "Hell," or used any Greek word that has the meaning that the English word Hell has today. The name of this valley is used in the New Testament only when speaking to the Jews for it was not a locality or a name that would be known to most Gentiles that did not live near Jerusalem. It was a local particular place and Gehenna would be a name known and used only to those who lived in or near Jerusalem. The names of the city dumps of most cities are not well known to any but to some who live near the dump, and those not from that city would not know or use it. Paul did not say anything about Hell in any of his letters to those not at Jerusalem.

Mistranslating Gehenna into Hell is a deliberate mistranslation. There is no other literal place that the translators changed into another literal place as they did when that changed Gehenna (a literal real place) into Hell (another completely different literal real place).

- Changing Gehenna into Hell,
- Is the same as mistranslating New York into Jerusalem would be.
- And the same as mistranslating Jericho into Florida would be.

The name of this valley that is on this earth was not changed into Hell that is not on this earth in the Septuagint, a translation of the Old Testament from Hebrew to Greek that was used in the time of Christ; in it Gehenna was left untranslated the same as all other names. "Hell" is not a translation but a deliberate changing of one place for another completely different place. I believe it was deliberately changed to put "Hell" in the Bible. A place has been made up that is not in the Bible; and a name given to it that is not in the Bible; if this is not adding to the Bible then what would it take to add to the Bible? **That Christ used the name of a valley, which was the city dump, is completely hid from the reader of the King James Version, whether intentional or not; and the readers are led to believe He spoke of a different place, which has been named "Hell." The teachings of Christ have been deliberately changed. Gehenna is a real geographical location on this earth, not somewhere under the earth or out in space, in the time of Christ Gehenna was a real place where real fires were constantly kept burning since it served as an incinerator for the useless refuse of the city. Christ used it as a symbol (an illustration) of destruction (like the burning of the useless chaff of Luke 3:17). Gehenna cannot be changed into Hell, no one has the right to change what Christ said.** To say Gehenna, as used by Christ, is Hell, is to say it has no reference to the Gehenna (the city dump) near Jerusalem.

**The Jews might have made the valley of Gehenna a dump because of their hatred of its misuse, but the figures or symbols used by Christ (fire and maggots) did not come from its use in The Old Testament. Fire and maggots are symbols of destruction, not of torment. In the time of Christ there was no torment, and no idol worshipped in Gehenna (the city dump).** Christ was not alluding to idol worship or torment, but to the destruction of those who rejected him. Worms (maggots) do not eat living being, but dead ones, not to torment them, but to consume (eat up for food), neither do maggots eat "souls." As long as there was something to burn or eat, the maggots would never die out, and the fire would not go out, but be consuming, not tormenting

what was being cast in. In the time of Christ the valley of Gehenna was a place used to dispose of useless things, not to torment them. Many misuse this to show that living being will be tormented forever, and make God be doing the tormenting. **Living victims was not preserved alive and tormented in Gehenna (as we are told they are in Hell), but fire or worms devoured dead victims.** To make it a place of eternal torment is without any base whatsoever. **Before the name of a place can be used as symbolic of another place, the place and it's name for which the emblem is used must first be known to exist;** no such place as the Hell that is taught today, or it's name, was not known about in the Old Testament and was not known or used by anyone in the time of the New Testament. Also there must be a parallel between the two; there is no parallel between:

- Gehenna, a place of destruction with no torment.
- Hell, a place to torment with no destruction.

Gehenna that existed in the Old Testament and in the time of Christ is not symbolic of the Hell that is taught today. **We are told that both Gehenna and the Lake of Fire are metaphors of Hell; THERE IS NO WAY ANYONE COULD KNOW THEY ARE METAPHORS OF HELL IF THEY DID NOT KNOW ABOUT HELL, BUT THERE IS NOT ONE PASSAGE IN THE BIBLE THAT TELL US THERE IS SUCH A PLACE.**

Gehenna and the Lake of Fire are often thought to be the same metaphor by many.

- Gehenna is a place of destruction.
- A lake of fire would be a place where no life as we know it could exist.

They are two different symbolic pictures (Revelation 20:14). Both picture the total destruction of whatever was thrown into them; neither one is a symbol of an eternal life of torment; Gehenna was a place of destruction of trash or what ever was cast into it, anything that was alive and cast into a lake of fire would be totally destroyed, nothing could live in fire; neither one is not a place of eternal life. Both picture complete destruction, not life.

On 11/1/2010 I found this on the web by Steven Clark Goad, church of Christ Christian Ekklesia Podcast: "In summation, isn't it strange indeed that false teachers have taken a "real place" (Gehenna) referred to by Jesus himself as a metaphor of destruction and have changed in (? it) into another made up/fabricated "real place" (hell) where souls (spirits, living beings, whatever) will be tortured unendingly by a loving heavenly Father? If Gehenna is a metaphor of "hell" as it is traditionally taught, isn't it a poor one, for Gehenna (the Jerusalem city dump of Jesus' era) was a real place of destruction and consummation with no torment and no torture involved, while "hell" is a made up place of torment and torture with no destruction at all? Is this twisted thinking the height of misguided thinking?" "Thoughts on Punishment of the Wicked" at:

<http://www.godsmessagetheweb.net/2010/07/25/thoughts-on-punishment-of-the-wicked/mp3> No longer on the web.

### **WEeping AND GNASHING OF TEETH**

See chapter eight, part four, "Weeping And Gnashing Of Teeth"

### **UNQUENCHABLE FIRE**

### **AND IMMORTAL WORMS OF GEHENNA**

***"Unquenchable fire" and "their worm dies not" as they are used in the Old and New Testaments: complete destruction.***

John the Baptist used "*Unquenchable fire*" on one occasion. He says Christ "*will gather his wheat into the garner, but the chaff he will **burn up** with unquenchable fire*" (Matthew 3:12; Luke 3:17). Will this unquenchable fire forever torment the chaff, which has been burned up?

Adam Clarke: "He will burn up the chaff that is, the disobedient and rebellious Jews, with unquenchable fire that cannot be extinguished by man."

When a fire surpasses the ability of firefighter, and they cannot put out a burning building they say it is an unquenchable fire, but it is not a fire that will burn forever; no one will be able to escape from it by putting it out, but it will go out when there is nothing more to burn; if a fire burned for six hours and the firefighters were unable to put it out and the building burned to the ground, that would say the fire was unquenchable.

**An unquenchable fire is not an eternal fire, but one that cannot be put out unto there is nothing to burn.** John the Baptist is not saying that God is going to literally burn up all the rebellious Jews, but that no one can stop His destruction of them before the destruction is complete; this happened in A. D. 70.

Unquenchable fire is used on one occasion by Christ of the burning of trash in the city dump in Mark 9:43 where He repeats it a second time in verses 48 in the American Standard Version, Revised Standard Version, New International Version. "*Unquenchable fire*" is repeated five times in Mark 6:43, 44, 45, 46 and 48 in the King James Version. In verses 44, 46, and 46 the American Standard footnote says they, "Are omitted by the best ancient Authorities." If on the only occasion Christ used "*Unquenchable fire*" was repeated two times or five times, what He was telling them was the same, what ever was cast into Gehenna was consumed, not tormented.

Both the chaff and trash are utterly destroyed by burning to get rid of something unwanted. The chaff or the trash was not tormented. Gehenna was not used in the rest of the New Testament, and neither is unquenchable fire; Paul, Peter, John, etc never used it. Christ used both the maggots and the fire of Gehenna as a symbol of total destruction, not to show that God will forever torment most of mankind. If this is not figurative language, will there be immortal maggots in Hell? Can earthly maggots eat an immortal soul in Hell; those that teach Hell tell up that the "soul" is immaterial; therefore, would have no substance that literal maggots could eat? Most that believes in Hell make the maggots they say will be in Hell figurative maggots, not real maggots in Hell, but make the fire they say will be in Hell be literal fire. If this was true, how could they know which one was literal and which one was figurative? Are they saying literal worms cannot eat a soul that is "immaterial, invisible," and has no earthly substance that literal worms can eat, but literal fire can burn this immaterial soul that has no earthly substance that literal worms can eat?

If Gehenna's "*unquenchable fire*" and "*their worm dies not*" are a description of the endless punishment of the wicked in "Hell," the silence of the New Testament writers would be unexplainable. (1) Acts, a history of the preaching and church for about thirty years does not mention Gehenna, unquenchable fire, or immortal maggots. (2) In none of Paul's fourteen letters, he never mentioned them. (3) Peter, John, James, and Jude are also as silent as Paul. (4) Neither can they be found in the Book of Revelation.

**(1)** The only occasion Christ used "*unquenchable fire*" is in Mark 9:43 and 9:48, where He was quoting from Isaiah 66:24. **To understand His words, they must be understood in the way the Old Testament used them,** just as much of Revelation is to be understood by the way the same symbols are used in the Old Testament.

**"Unquenchable fire"** was a well-known expression in the Old Testament and would be understood by those hearing Christ. *"And the strong man will become tinder, his work also a spark, thus, they shall both burn together, and there will be none to quench them"* (Isaiah 1:31). Jeremiah warned Jerusalem of the consequence of their sins, *"Then will I kindle a fire in the gates thereof, and it shall devour the palaces of Jerusalem and it shall not be quenched"* (Jeremiah 17:27). Jeremiah's warning was fulfilled in 2 Chronicles 36:19-21 when Jerusalem was destroyed with an **"unquenchable fire"** that no one could stop before God's destruction of them was complete. It consumed all, and was not quenched unto it went out when there was nothing more to consume; then the fire that no one could put out went out when it had did God's work of burning Jerusalem; Jerusalem is not burning today. **THE UNQUENCHABLE FIRE IN THE OLD TESTAMENT WAS ALWAYS A JUDGMENT ON A CITY OR NATION ON THIS EARTH.** Those who believe in Hell make two changes.

1. They change dead bodies being burned up by the unquenchable fire in the Old Testament from dead bodies on this earth to deathless souls; others change dead bodies to deathless spirits, which they say cannot be burned up.
2. Then change *"unquenchable"* into "eternal," then move the unquenchable fire that destroyed Jerusalem from Jerusalem on this earth, and put this "eternal fire" in their "Hell," which they say is not on this earth. The Jews that know the Old Testament and were hearing Christ would have never understood *"unquenchable fire"* to be eternal torment of a living soul after the person it had been in was dead; a soul that those that make this change tell us that this soul has no substance that fire can burn.
  - First, the fire must be changed.
  - Second, after the fire has been changed, then it must be moved from Jerusalem on this earth to Hell that is not on this earth.

Isaiah says, *"For behold, the Lord will come in fire and His chariots like the whirlwind, to render His anger with fury, and His rebuke with the flames of fire. For the Lord will execute judgment by fire and by His sword on all flesh, and those slain by the Lord will be many...Then they shall go forth and look on the corpses ("dead bodies" in American Standard Version) of the men who have transgressed against me. For their (the corpses) worm shall not die, and **their (the corpses) fire shall not be quenched;** and they (the corpses) shall be an abhorrence to all mankind"* (Isaiah 66:15-24); *"carcasses"* in King James Version, *"dead bodies"* New International Version. The worms consumed the corpses, and the fires were not quenched unto there was no more flesh to consume or burn. **It was corpses, carcasses, dead bodies, which were on the earth that were being consumed by the unquenchable fire and undying maggots, it was "those slain by the Lord" slain "by His sword,"** dead bodies that was being burn up by fire and eaten by maggots (Isaiah 66:16), not **"those tormented by the Lord,"** not deathless immortal souls in Hell that cannot be slain screaming in anguish and pain; Isaiah 66:16; 66:24 describes the aftermath of a battle with the dead unburied; there is no suggestion of unending torment or of any torment of the dead bodies that were being eaten by the worms. Those people back in the time of Isaiah did not look from Heaven down into Hell, and see living souls being eaten by maggots; it was the living people on this earth that went out to the battle field, and saw real dead bodies on this earth being eaten and burned, not immortal souls in Heaven that *"shall go forth and look on the corpses"* and see living souls that are that are being tormented by God in Hell as

**worms and fire are consuming, but never consume them. How can fire or worms eternally torment a dead body? THIS UNQUENCHABLE FIRE WAS ALSO A JUDGMENT ON A NATION.** It is difficult to conceive how those that believes a soul is an immaterial, no substance something, that it can be eat by maggots, and made more difficult by the fact that maggots eat only dead flesh. It is the fire that is unquenchable and both Isaiah and Christ speak only of the maggots being alive, not that the corpses were alive while they were being burnt up or eaten, they were dead, they have been slain, there is nothing said about them being alive and in torment, but today's theology says they are both alive and are being forever tormented by fire. There is not even a hint that the corpses that were in the unquenchable fire were aware of anything. For this to prove the soul is immortal they would have to be viewing disembodied immortal souls that had been "*slain by the Lord*" (Isaiah 66:16), but were still living and in torment after the Lord had killed these souls, and be proved that they were not viewing dead bodies that were on this earth, but were viewing invisible deathless souls that were in "Hell." **WITHOUT DOUBT, THIS UNQUENCHABLE FIRE WAS BURNING THOSE THAT HAD BEEN SLAIN BY THE LORD, IT WAS A JUDGMENT AND PUNISHMENT ON THIS EARTH, A JUDGMENT ON A NATION THAT HAS ENDED; the unquenchable fire went out when it had did it's work; it was not a punishment of individuals in Hell that will never end.**

- **There is no mention of torment.** The ungodly had been killed; it says nothing about the Lord **tormenting** them after He killed them, but many add to the Bible by adding torment where there is none.
- **There is no mention of living immortal souls that are being eaten by maggots, and being consumed by fire.** The witnesses are living people that see the **result of this destruction (slaying); they see real corpses, carcasses, dead bodies** being consumed by real fire and maggots; neither the worms or the fire causes any suffering to the dead bodies, it was not a living, immaterial, invisible something that had been in a person that was being eaten by maggots after the person it had been in was dead.
- **They do not see these dead bodies in pain and anguish,** they do not see God endlessly torturing souls in Hell that He will never let die; it was living people on this earth that seen corpses that were dead and were on this earth, not in Hell. To teach eternal torment in Hell the dead bodies that were being eaten by maggots on this earth have been changed to living souls suffering eternal torture by God in an endless Hell after the persons these souls were in are dead; it is beyond me to see how those who make such a change can still say they do not change the Bible; there is nothing about souls, eternal torment by God, or Hell in this passage, but all three are added.
- Some believers in Hell change the Bible by changing the worms into undying souls. Maggots being changed into souls in torment is nothing more than a desperate attempt to prove something that has no proof. If the maggots were souls what would the maggots be eating?

Changes that must be made to make this prove the doctrine of Hell.

1. Dead bodies that were lying on this earth, and were visible to living people must be changed to living souls that are not visible; those that went out to see them

could not have seen, "The immaterial, invisible part of man," W. E. Vine, page 588.

2. Maggots and fire that devour must be changed to immortal maggots and fire that cannot devour an immortal soul.
3. The word fire is used throughout the Old Testament as a symbol of complete destruction. Fire always destroys what ever is cast into it; it is never a preservative, but the theology of today must change fire into something that preserves alive and cannot destroy. Just as death must be changed to eternal life, fire must be changed into some thing that cannot destroy but keeps alive in endless torment.
4. The Gehenna of the New Testament that is on this earth changed into Hell that we are told is not on this earth.

(2) *"Therefore thus says the Lord Jehovah: Behold, mine anger and my wrath shall be poured out upon this place, upon man and upon beast, and upon the trees of the field, and upon the fruit of the ground; and it shall burn, and shall not be quenched"* (Jeremiah 7:20). If this was the Lord's anger being poured out in Hell, it would make beasts, trees, fields, and the fruit of the ground be in unquenchable fire in Hell. In Jeremiah 17:27 it is *"the palaces of Jerusalem"* that would be destroyed by an unquenchable fire; are *"the palaces of Jerusalem"* now burning in Hell or any other place?

(3) **Ezekiel also speaks of the destruction of Judah using the imagery of a forest burning.** *"And the word of Jehovah came unto me, saying, son of man, set your face toward the south, and drop your word toward the south, and prophesy against the forest to the field in the South; and say to the forest of the South, Hear the word of Jehovah: Thus says the Lord Jehovah, Behold, I will kindle a fire in you, and it shall consume every green tree in you, and it shall devour ever green tree in you, and ever dry tree; the flaming flame shall not be quenched, and all faces from the south to the north shall be burnt thereby. And all flesh shall see that I, Jehovah, have kindled it; it shall not be quenched"* (Ezekiel 20:47-48).

ADAM CLARKE, "The forest of the south field is the city of Jerusalem; which was as full of inhabitants as the forest is of trees. I will kindle a fire, i. e., I will send war; and it shall devour ever green tree, i. e., the most eminent and substantial of the inhabitants; and every dry tree, i. e., the lowest and meanest also; it shall not be quenched, i. e., **till the land be utterly ruined.**"

This **"unquenchable fire"** was God using Babylonian to destroy Israel (Ezekiel 21:19; Nehemiah 1:3), not a literal fire. God's judgment on Israel was unquenchable, no one could stop it, but it ended when Israel was utterly ruined and in captivity.

(4) **Isaiah describes the desolation of Edom,** *"For my sword has drunk its fill in heaven; behold, it shall come down upon Edom, and upon the people of my curse, to judgment...For Jehovah has a day of vengeance, a year of recompense for the cause of Zion. And the streams of Edom shall be turned into pitch, and the dust thereof into brimstone, and the land there of shall become burning pitch. It shall not be quenched night or day; and the smoke thereof shall go up forever; from generation to generation it shall lay waste; none shall pass through it forever and ever. But the pelican and the porcupine shall possess it; and the owl and the raven shall dwell therein"* (Isaiah 34:6-15). If this fire that **"shall not be quenched night nor day,"** is the Hell that is taught today, how is it that **"none shall pass through it forever and ever,"** is their no one that shall be in Hell but pelican, porcupine, owl, and ravens? This is clearly an earthly

judgment on Edom that has long passed, not an unquenchable fire in Hell after the Judgment Day. After the unquenchable fire had done its work the fire went out and the land became a desert that was inhabited by pelicans, porcupines, owls and ravens (Isaiah 34:10-11).

(5) For more examples of God's judgments in this world being spoken of as an unquenchable fire see Isaiah 1:31; (6) Jeremiah 17:27; (7) Jeremiah 21:12; (8) Amos 5:6; (9) 2 Kings 22:26-27; (10) 2 Chronicles 34:24-25. **These passages and many others show that the writers of the Old Testament used "unquenchable fire" as a judgment by war and famine both on Israel and wicked nations when they sinned, BUT WHEN THE JUDGMENT WAS OVER AND THE UNQUENCHABLE FIRES HAD DID THEIR WORK THEY WENT OUT. When Jesus was speaking of the fire and worms of Gehenna, he was giving a description of the finality of the coming destruction of Israel who rejected Him.** His audience would know the way unquenchable fire and undying worms were used in the Old Testament and would understand His use of them. They would have known the Gehenna that He was speaking of was a foul place of destruction where worthless things were disposed of, and would have known He was saying the destruction He was speaking of would be like the destruction of the garbage in Gehenna, like the destruction of Jerusalem by unquenchable fire in the Old Testament. They knew they were being threatened with complete destruction just as the trash in the city dump was destroyed. Jerusalem was destroyed and burnt, and historians say in A. D. 70 many dead bodies were burned and many were left unburied for the maggots. *"The vision of Isaiah the son of Amoz, concerning Judah and Jerusalem...And the strong man will become tinder, his work also a spark, thus, they shall both burn together, and there will be none to quench them"* (Isaiah 1:1-31). The strong man and all that the strong man had built, all his work, will burn together; they did in A. D. 70.

CURTIS DICKINSON: "There are some 70 cases in scripture where fire is used as judgment upon wickedness...never was it used for the purpose of torture." "A Place Called Gehenna," church of Christ.

Summary: The worm that dies not, and the unquenchable fire, as used in the Old Testament and by Christ, proves **utter destruction**, not everlasting torment. **Gehenna is believed by those who teach everlasting torment to be their strong hold, but the symbols of maggots eating dead bodies on this earth, and fire consuming unwanted trash ("dead bodies" Isaiah 66:24) are symbols of destruction, not symbols of torment. Many think this is the strongest proof of everlasting torment in the Bible, but it is the other way around, it is a strong proof that the lost will be everlasting destroyed. It does not prove that a sadistic God will forever torment anyone.**

#### THE OLD TESTAMENT HISTORY OF GEHENNA

Gehenna was first mentioned in Joshua 15:8; 18:16 although it was never called "Gehenna" in the Old Testament. Ahaz *"burnt incense in the valley of the son of Hinnom, and burnt his children in the fire"* (2 Chronicles 28:3; 2 Kings 16:3). Manasseh also burnt his children in the fire in this valley (2 Chronicles 33:6).

Jeremiah 7:31-32 Children of Judah burned their sons and daughters in the fire in this valley, and Jehovah said, *"And they have built the high places of Topheth (Gehenna), which is in the valley of the son of Hinnom, to burn their sons and their daughters in the fire, which I did not command, and it did not come into My mind. It shall no more be called Topheth, nor The valley of the son of Hinnom, but the valley of slaughter: for*



they shall bury **in Topheth** (Gehenna), till there be no place to bury. And the dead bodies of this people shall be food for the birds of the heavens, and for the beasts of the earth; and none shall frighten them away." Those who teach "Hell fire" are saying to God, "O yes it came into Your mind. You have said You are going to burn most of Your children in a fire much hotter than the fire in which they burnt their children."

Jeremiah 19:1-15 *"Thus says the Lord, Go and buy a potter's earthenware jar, and take some to the elders of the people and some of the senior priests. Then go out to the valley of Ben-hinnom (later was changed to valley of Gehenna), which is by the entrance of the potsherd gate; (A gate to Jerusalem) and proclaim **there** the words that I shall tell you, and say, Hear the word of the Lord, O kings of Judah and inhabitants of Jerusalem: thus says the Lord of hosts, the God of Israel, Behold I am about to bring a calamity upon **this place**, at which the ears of everyone that hears of it will tingle. Because they have forsaken Me **and have made this an alien place** and have burned sacrifices **in it** to other gods that neither they nor their forefathers nor the kings of Judah had ever known, and because they have filled **this place** with the blood of the innocent and have **built the high places of Baal to burn their sons in the fire as burnt offerings to Baal**, a thing which I never commanded nor spoke of, nor did it enter My mind; therefore, behold, days are coming, declares the Lord, **when this place will no longer be called Topheth or the valley of Ben-hinnom, but rather the valley of Slaughter**. And I shall make void the counsel of Judah and Jerusalem **in this place**, and I shall cause them to fall by the sword before their enemies and by the hand of those who seek their life; and I shall give over their carcasses as food for the birds of the sky and the beast of the earth. I shall also make this city a desolation and an object of hissing; everyone who passes by it will be astonished and hiss because of the disasters. And I shall make them eat the flesh of their sons and the flesh of their daughters, and they will eat one another's flesh in the siege and in the distress with which their enemies and those who seek their life will distress them. Then you are to break the jar in the sight of the men who accompany you and say to them, Thus says the Lord of hosts, Just so shall I break this people and this city, even as one breaks a potter's vessel, which cannot again be repaired; **and they will bury in Topheth** (Gehenna) because there is no other place for burial. This is how I shall treat **this place** and its inhabitants, declares the Lord so as **to make this city like Topheth** (Gehenna). And the houses of Jerusalem and the houses of the kings of Judah **will be defiled like the place Topheth**, because of all the houses on whose rooftops they burned sacrifices to all the heavenly host and poured out libations to other gods. **Then Jeremiah came from Topheth** (Gehenna), **where the Lord has sent him to prophesy**; and he stood in the court of the Lord's house and said to all the people; thus says the Lord of host, the God of Israel, **Behold, I am about to bring on this city and all its towns the entire calamity that I have declared against it**, because they have stiffened their necks so as not to heed My words." Jeremiah used the valley of Gehenna to warn Israel of their destruction as a nation. Christ also used the valley of Gehenna to warn Israel of their destruction as a nation. It was outside the gate of Jerusalem named the "potsherd gate" in the time of Jeremiah (Jeremiah 19:1-15).*

Many believe the angel of the Lord killed the 185,000 Assyrians in this valley when they were laying siege to Jerusalem (Isaiah 37:36). They were killed near Jerusalem, and it could have been in this valley, but I can find no proof that it was. See Isaiah 30:31-33.

Josiah "*defiled Topheth (Gehenna), which is in the valley of the children of Hinnom, that no man might make his son or his daughter to pass through the fire to Molech*" (2 Kings 23:10). When he defiled Gehenna maybe when it became the trash dump that it was in the New Testament.

It is also mentioned in Nehemiah 11:30; Jeremiah 19:2: Because of their worshipping other gods in it, God made it a place of destruction and death, not torment. Topheth (Gehenna in the New Testament) literally means a place of burning, and a place of death, "*The valley of slaughter*" (Jeremiah 7:31).

**Every reference to Gehenna in the Old Testament was to a place on this earth; not one of them says anything about eternal torment after the judgment.** It is admitted by all that Gehenna in the Old Testament was not a place of eternal torment, and it was not changed to "Hell" in any Old Testament passage, not even in the King James Version which is sometimes called "Hell's Bible."

HENRY THAYER: "Gehenna, the name of a valley on the S. and E. of Jerusalem...The Jews so abolished the place after these horrible sacrifices had been abolished by king Josiah (2 k.xxiii, 10) that they cast into it not only all manner of refuses, but even the dead bodies of animals and unburied criminals who had been executed. And since fires were always needed to consume the dead bodies, that the air might not become tainted by the putrefaction, it came to pass that the place was called (Gehenna)." "A Greek-English Lexicon Of the New Testament" page 111. He also said in "Theology," "Our inquiry shows that it is employed in the Old Testament in its literal or geographical sense only, as the name of the valley lying on the south of Jerusalem-that the Septuagint proves it retained this meaning as late as B. C. 150-that it is not found at all in the Apocrypha; neither of Philo, nor in Josephus, whose writings cover the very times of the Savior and the New Testament, thus leaving us without a single example of contemporary usage to determine its meaning at this period-that from A. D. 150-159, we find in two Greek authors, Justin and Clement of Alexandria, the first resident in Italy and the last in Egypt that Gehenna began to be used to designate a place of punishment after death, but not endless punishment since Clement was a believer in universal restoration-that the first time we find Gehenna used in this sense in any Jewish writing is near the beginning of the third century, in the Targum of Jonathan Ben Uzziel, two hundred years too late to be of any service in the argument-and lastly, that the New Testament usage shows that while it had not wholly lost its literal sense, it was also employed in the time of Christ as a symbol of moral corruption and wickedness; **but more especially as a figure of the terrible judgments of God on the rebellious and sinful nation of the Jews,**" Henry Thayer, "Theology."

CANON FARRAR: "In the Old Testament it is merely the pleasant valley of Hinnom (GeHinnom), subsequently desecrated by idolatry, and especially by Moloch worship, and defiled by Josiah on this account. (See 1 Kings 11:7; 2 Kings 23:10; Jer 7:31; 19:10-14; Isa. 30:33; Tophet). Used according to Jewish tradition, as the common sewage of the city, the corpses of the worst criminals were flung into it unburied, and fires were lit to purify the contaminated air. It then became a word which secondarily implied (1) the severest judgment which a Jewish court could pass upon a criminal-the casting forth of his unburied corpse amid the fire and worms of this polluted valley; and (2) a punishment-which to the Jews a body never meant an end-less punishment beyond the grave. **Whatever may be the meaning of the entire passages in which the word occurs, 'Hell' must be a complete mistranslation, since it attributes to the term used by Christ a sense entirely differently from that in which it was understood by our Lord's hearers, and therefore, entirely different from the sense in which He could have used it.**" From the preface to "Eternal Hope."

"Gehenna, the Greek word translated hell in the common version, occurs twelve times. It is the Grecian mode of spelling the Hebrew words, which are translated, 'The Valley of Hinnom.' This valley was also called Tophet, a detestation, and an abomination. Into this place were cast all kinds

of filth, with the carcasses of beasts and unburied bodies of criminals, who had been executed. Continual fires were kept to consume these. Sennacherib's army of 185,000 men was slain there in one night. Here, children were burnt to death in sacrifice to Moloch. **Gehenna, then, as occurring in the New Testament, symbolizes death and utter destruction, but in no place symbolizes a place of eternal torment"** From the Emphatic Diaglot.

GEORGE LEMASTERS said Gehenna is said to have been a receptacle of bones, bodies of beasts and criminals, and all unclean things. Page 265, Florida College Annual Lectures, 1975.

RON HALBROOK said Gehenna became a common refuse dump for the dead bodies of criminals, animal carcasses, and other kind of filth. Page 123, Florida College Annual Lectures 1986.

"Hell" From Iron Chariots Wiki "The accurate use of the word 'Hell' as a translation of Gehenna is open to interpretation. The subjects about which Jesus speaks, when referring to Gehenna, have no less significance when referring to that literal valley of the damned (as opposed to the eternal concept of punishment and torture interpreted after the fact). There is no suggestion that Gehenna need to be translated to 'Hell' any more than any other proper noun for a place or region. Similarly there is no reason to believe that Hell as a concept even occurred to the Jewish prophet or his followers." At: <http://wiki.ironchariots.org/index.php?title=Hell>.

JAMES CORAM, "The meaning of Gehenna must be established from facts furnished by the Scripture, not by falsehoods foisted by human tradition. To the reader of the Hebrew Scriptures themselves, Gehenna can only mean a verdict, which, besides condemning a man to death, also ordains that, after death, his body should be cast into the loathsome valley of Hinnom. This being the sense of Gehenna in the Hebrew Scriptures, we may be sure that this is the sense in which Christ used it."

At: <http://www.concordant.org/expohtml/DeathAndJudgment/TheGehennaOffire.html>

**Whatever was cast into Gehenna (the city dump), if it were trash or the bodies of criminals were cast into the trash dump to be destroyed, both were destroyed, not tormented; trash or dead bodies cannot be tormented. The fire and worms soon consumed whatever was cast into Gehenna, nothing was cast into Gehenna to be preserved, and no Jew hearing Jesus could have understand it in any way but a place of total destruction. Gehenna was a real place they could walk out and look at, and literally see the smoke ascending out of it. If Christ had used their trash dump in a way that was different from what would have been understood by those hearing Him without any explanation of the new way He used it, they could not have known what He was saying to them. The fate of Israel is compared to trash and dead bodies that were cast into the city dump to be disposed of.**

Both Christ and James used the name of the city dump (Gehenna). Although the translators have James using the word Hell, but when James wrote this, neither the English word "Hell," did not exist, nor was there a Greek word for "Hell." **Christ never used the word Hell, He used Gehenna, and He never said one thing about Hell.** Even in Old English where the word Hell was first used, Hell did not have the meaning it has in today's English; not the meaning it now has in today's Protestant theology.

#### **THE USE OF GEHENNA BY CHRIST**

Gehenna was used on four occasions by Christ, and was used one time by James, the brother of the Lord (James 3:6). The name Gehenna is in three of the gospels eleven times, but as the three gospels repeat the same discourses, Jesus really used it in only four occasions (four sermons).

- **First occasion, in the Sermon on the Mount.** *"Shall be in danger of Gehenna...your whole body be cast into Gehenna...and not your whole body go into Gehenna"* Matthew 5:22, 29, 30.
- **Second occasion, in a lesson to the twelve disciples.** *"Fear him who is able to destroy both soul and body in Gehenna"* Matthew 10:28. *"Fear him, who after he has killed has power to cast into Gehenna"* Luke 12:5.
- **Third occasion, in another lesson to his disciples.** *"Rather than having two eyes to be cast into Gehenna"* Matthew 18:9. Also in the parallel account in Mark 9:43, 45, 47.
- **Fourth occasion, to the Scribes and Pharisees.** *"You make him twofold more a son of Gehenna than yourselves...How shall you escape the judgment of Gehenna"* Matthew 23:15, 33.
- **And one time by James, to the twelve tribes.** *"The tongue, which defiles the whole body, and sets on fire the wheel of nature, and is set on fire by Gehenna"* James 3:6.

### THE FIRST OCCASION IN THE SERMON ON THE MOUNT

Gehenna is used 3 times in Christ's sermon in Matthew 5. Christ is teaching those who that at that time were under the Law.

#### THE FIVE JUDGMENTS

Five judgments the disciples had heard that the Law said.

**(1) THE FIRST JUDGMENT** Matthew 5:21-26, *"You have heard that the ancients were told, 'You shall not commit murder,' and 'whoever commits murder shall be liable to the court.' But I say to you that everyone who is angry with his brother shall be guilty before the court; and whoever shall say to his brother, 'Raca,' shall be guilty before the Supreme Court; and whoever shall say, 'You fool,' shall be guilty enough to go into the fiery hell (Greek-Gehenna of fire)"* New American Standard Bible. Gehenna, the city dump of Jerusalem was always burning, day and night, 24/7.

**The three crimes that were judged by the courts:** All three have to do with the way they felt toward their brother, all three were judged according to the Law by an earthly court; the Sermon on the Mount is not information about the fate of the unrighteous after death. *"Murder shall be liable to the court: but I say to you everyone who is,"*

1. Everyone who is *"Angry with his brother"* **guilty before THE COURT** (New American Standard Version): A judgment under the Old Testament Law. "Not the final judgment of the world, but the tribunal established by the Law of Moses in each city for the trial of murders and other criminals. (See Deut. xvi. 18.) Every man slayer was tried before this tribunal, and either put to death or confined in the city of refuge." J. W. McGarvey, The New Testament Commentary, page 53, The Standard Publishing Company, 1875.
2. Whoever *"Shall say to his brother, 'Raca'"* **guilty before the SUPREME COURT** (New American Standard Version): A judgment under the Old Testament Law. "An epithet of contempt; 'empty head'" B. W. Johnson, The People's New Testament, Gospel Light Publishing, 1889. "The council mentioned is the supreme court provided for by the Law of Moses (Deut. xvii. 8-13), and represented in the days of Jesus by the Sanhedrim." J. W. McGarvey, The New Testament Commentary, page 54, 1875.

3. Whoever *"Shall say, 'You fool'"* **guilty enough to go into the fiery Gehenna:** Like the first two, this is a Jewish judgment where the bodies of criminals that were thought to be unworthy of a burial were cast into the city dump to be burned. To whom will they say, *"you fool"*? Could it be anyone other than *"his brother,"* just as the first two were? Could the difference in the sinfulness of saying to your brother *"race"* (empty headed), and saying to him *"you fool"* be enough to jump from a judgment of the Jewish court to the judgment of God at the coming of Christ? How could anyone know Christ changed from judgments under the Law to a judgment at the resurrection when there is no indication that He changed? According to the teaching of some, a person can be angry with his brother and have contempt for him and not go to Hell, but if you say, *"You fool"* to your brother, then you will go to Hell.

DR. R. F. WEYMOUTH: "Gehenna of Fire Or 'Hell,' The severest punishment inflicted by the Jews upon any criminal. The corpse (after the man had been stoned to death) was thrown out into the Valley of Hinnom (Ge Hinnom) and was devoured by the worm or the flame." "New Testament in Modern Speech, Mark 3:29, page 10.

ALEXANDER CAMPBELL: "The fact is, that the allusions in this verse are all to human institutions or customs among the Jews; and the Judges, the Sanhedrim, and the hell-fire here introduced, and *all human punishments...being burned alive in the valley Hinnom*" "The Campbell Debate On Everlasting Punishment," page 123, College Press, 1840.

ADAM CLARKE: "There are *three* kinds of offences here, which exceed each other in their degrees of guilt. 1st. *Anger* against a man, accompanied with some injurious act. 2dly. *Contempt*, expressed by the opprobrious epithet *raka*, or *shallow brains*. 3dly. *Hatred* and *mortal enmity*, expressed by the term *moreh*, or *apostate*, where such apostasy could not be proved. Now, proportioned to these *three* offences were *three* different degrees of punishment, each exceeding the other in its severity, as the offenses exceeded each other in their different degrees of guilt. 1st. The *judgment*, the council of *twenty-three*, which could inflict the punishment of *strangling*. 2dly. The *Sanhedrin*, or great council, which could inflict the punishment of *stoning*. And 3dly. The being *burnt alive* in the valley of the son of Hinnom. This appears to be the meaning of our Lord." Notes on Matthew 5:22. (Note: Clarks says, "Burnt alive" but it was only the bodies of those who were thought to be unfit to be buried that were cast into Gehenna for their dead bodies to be burnt).

Matthew 5:23-26, A lesson on how to make your offering acceptable to God. *"Agree with your adversary quickly, while you are with him in the way; lest haply the adversary deliver you to the judge, and the judge deliver you to the officer, and you are cast into prison. Verily I say unto you, you shall by no means come out till you have paid the last farthing"* (Matthew 5:25-26). *"Make friends quickly with your opponent at law"* New American Standard Version. **When it is paid, then the person in prison shall come out.** This is speaking of a judgment and punishment under the Law, not at the resurrection.

- **Who is to agree with whom?** It is the person charged who is to *"Make friends quickly with your opponent at law"* that charged him, *"while you are with him in the way"* (in the way to the judge).
- **What will happen if there is not an agreement?** *"Lest haply the adversary (opponent at law) deliver you to the judge, and the judge delivers you to the officer, and you are cast into prison."* Does this sound to you like the judgment at the last day and being cast into "Hell," or does this sound like an earthly opponent at law, judge, officer, and prison?
- **How long will the person who is cast into prison be in the prison?** *"You shall by no means come out thence, till you have paid the last farthing."* **When** the debt

for which the person was cast into prison is paid, **then** he will come out of prison. Those who believe in Hell tell us no one will ever come out. If this were speaking of punishment after the judgment, then it would teach a limited punishment, which would end when the last farthing (a corn of little worth) was paid.

- That this use of "*Gehenna*" is taken completely out of the context of an earthly courts and law by today's theology is beyond any doubt. This is speaking of a judgment and punishment under the Law, not at the resurrection.
- To teach "Hell" from this passage, Christ must be made to jump from judgments and punishments under the Law of Moses in verse 21-22, to the judgment and punishment at His coming in last part of verse 22 and then back to judgment and punishment under the Law in verse 25-26 without anything to show He was speaking of a different judgment and punishments. **First**, a part of one verse must be taken out of context. **Second**, then it much be changed from *Gehenna* that is a valley on this earth to Hell that we are told is not on this earth.

**(2) THE SECOND JUDGMENT, "*You have heard that it was said, 'You shall not commit adultery'*" Matthew 5:27-30. "*And if your right eye causes you to stumble, pluck it out, and cast it from you: for it is profitable for you that one of your members should perish, and not your whole body be cast into hell (Greek-Gehenna). And if your right hand causes you to stumble, cut it off, and cast it from you: for it is profitable for you that one of your members should perish, and not your whole body go into hell (Greek-Gehenna).*"** Jesus is saying to them that they had heard that it was said (in the Law), "*You shall not commit adultery*" for which they would be put to death under the Law of Moses (Leviticus 20:10), and their body cast into the valley of *Gehenna*.

Christ is teaching them that if there is a danger that they may look on a woman to lust after her, if their eye causes them to stumble, pluck it out and cast it away. If taken literal a disfigurement of their body would have been unlawful by the Old Testament Law they were under. The lesson to them was that they were to remove anything from their lives, which would cause them to be judged unworthy to be buried, and their bodies to be cast into *Gehenna*. Under the Law adultery had a death penalty, and could cause their whole bodies to be cast into the fire and maggots in *Gehenna* (Leviticus 20:10-16). The lesson to them and to us is that if something in our life that would cause us to be lost, even if it is as dear to us as our eye or hand, it needs to be cut off unless the whole body be destroyed, the removal of anything in our life that would cause us to be destroyed by God as worthless trash was destroyed in *Gehenna*. Christ was saying to them anything in their life, adultery, or any other sin that would cause them to perish needed to be removed. **Those that use this to prove Hell do not believe that to "*cut off*" any part of the body of a living person will keep the soul that they believe to be in a person out of Hell after the death of the person. To them the hand and the eye are a literal hand or eye, but according to their teaching "*the whole body*" is not a body at all, but a formless, no substance, invisible, deathless something in a person that has no body, no hand to cut off.**

The loss of a hand or eye is contrasted with the lost of the whole body (of which the hand was a part) by the body being cast into *Gehenna*, not the loss of a hand being contrasted with the soul, of which the hand was **not** a part, the hand that was cut of was not the hand of the soul being cast into Hell. The "*eye*" and the "*right hand*" are a part of the "*whole body*." **No one can cut off the hand of a soul, which they say has no**

**substance**, and Christ does not change from parts of the earthly body to something that most who believe in "it" says "it" has no body. No one that I know of who believes Hell is an eternal place of torment believes the human body, or any part of the body will be eternally tormented by God in that eternal place. In the same sentence, did Christ change from a literal physical hand to a "soul"? **If the "whole body" is a formless no substance soul, then the "hand," which was cut off this body is a part of the "whole body," and would also be a formless no substance something that we could not cut off, and if we could cut the hand of a soul off, then the cut off hand of an immortal soul would be as immortal as the rest of the no substance formless soul from which it was cut off. In today's theology no one believes you can cut off the hand of a spirit so that the rest of the spirit will not go to Hell.** No one that I know of believes the "soul" shall *"enter into life,"* which he or she says is Heaven, with a cut off hand of that soul in Hell. The "soul" in Heaven, but its "hand" in Hell! They don't believe that a disfigurement of the earthly body, whether it is a self inflicted disfigurement, or any other disfigurement, will be passed onto the immaterial, invisible part of a person, which they believe is to be something that is now in a person and that only this "it" will be in Heaven. Neither do they believe any person has the power to cut of any part of his immaterial soul. Gehenna must be changed to Hell and be literal, but the cut off the hand that is cast into Hell cannot be literal.

*"Perish"* must be changed to mean, "preserve." God's word says He will destroy the soul, but many change this and make it say God will not let the soul perish, but will preserve it forever. There seems to be no end to the changes they are willing to make. ***"Destroy the body and soul" must be changed to "preserve the soul but destroy the body."***

A dead body part, or a whole dead body being cast into the city dump (Gehenna) to be destroyed by fire or worms is not a picture of a living immortal soul being tormented forever in some place other than the valley of Gehenna. There is no suggestion of eternal torment in this. **There is nothing, not one word about an immortal soul or an immortal spirit in this passage.** It was their *"whole body"* that would be cast into the valley of Gehenna; nothing is said about an immaterial, invisible something in a person that will be cast into "Hell, nothing about eternal torment." **Instead of saying that immortal souls will burn forever in the valley of Gehenna, it says the body will be cast into Gehenna and destroyed in Gehenna.** Nothing is said about an immaterial something that is in a person in Matthew 5:22, 29 or 30. "Soul" is not in Matthew 5; **it has been added, and is preached today that the "soul" will be cast into "Hell," not the "whole body" cast into the Gehenna that those hearing Christ would know about. This passage is one of the most used passages to prove a person has in immaterial something that is in them that will be in an eternal place of torment after the death of the person it is in, but neither (1) an immaterial, deathless something that is now in a person, but leaves the person at their death (2) or a place of eternal torment is not in Matthew 18:8-9. Everything that Christ said is changed, and that by those that say they do not change the Bible ("whole body" cast into the Gehenna, must be changed to "soul" cast into the Hell).**

In Matthew 18:8-9:

- Being *"Cast into the everlasting (aionios-age lasting) fire"* (18:8) and being
- Being *"Cast into the Gehenna fire"* (18:9) are used interchangeable.

It is the fire that is said to be age lasting, not one thing is said about how long a person or how long a soul that had been in a person unto the death of the person would or would not last in the fire although it is repeatedly used to teach that a soul that is now in you will be tormented in Hell after you are dead if you do not save "it," whatever "it" is. The aionios (age lasting) fire of Gehenna went out in A. D. 70; today there is no fire in Gehenna and no dead bodies are being cast into it; Gehenna is now a place for tourist.

(3) The third, *"You have heard you shall not forswear yourself"* (Matthew 5:33).

(4) The fourth, *"You have heard...an eye for an eye"* (Matthew 5:38).

(5) The fifth, *"You have heard...love your neighbor"* (Matthew 5:43).

**All five of the "you have heard" are about judgments of the Old Testament Law that had punishment only in this life, not anything about any punishment in the life after the resurrection and judgment. Being cast into Gehenna is an earthly judgment that is in the same context with other earthly judgments.** This is the first time Christ used the term Gehenna; if He had used it to teach endless torment, He said nothing that those hearing Him, or those who read His words today could know He was speaking of any judgment other than the judgments in the Law given through Moses; there is absolutely no indication He was speaking of eternal torment of a "soul."

#### THE SECOND OCCASION

##### IN A LESSON TO THE TWELVE DISCIPLES

This was spoken to the twelve apostles when they were sent forth to preach, *"The kingdom of heaven is at hand"* (Matthew 10:1-28). He was persecuted, and they would be, but they were to *"Fear them not."* *"But I will warn you whom you shall fear: **fear him, who after he has killed has power to cast INTO GEHENNA**"* (Luke 12:4-5). *"Has the authority to cast into Gehenna"* New American Standard Version. *"Those who kill the body"* (12:4), and *"after he has killed"* (the body) (12:5) are both speaking of killing the body. ***"Fear him who is able to destroy (Apollumi) both soul (life—psukee) and body IN GEHENNA"*** Matthew 10:28. It seems to be as clear as it could be said that the destroying is the body being ***"CAST INTO GEHENNA;"*** the killing comes before being cast into the valley of Gehenna, not killed the deathless soul before it is cast into Hell. Fear him who has the authority to cast the killed earthly body into Gehenna, the trash dump where the bodies of those who were not thought to be worthy to be buried were cast into to be destroyed. ***"Destroy both...in Gehenna"*** in Matthew 10:28, and ***"killed"*** and then cast into Gehenna in the parallel account in Luke 12:4-5 does not mean being alive and torment in a completed difference place called "Hell;" the fate of the one being cast into Gehenna is destruction, *"able to destroy,"* nothing is said about any kind of torment at any time. *"Destroy"* in Matthew and *"killed"* in the parallel passage in Luke is not "alive" in Hell. Christ was speaking to the twelve apostles, He was not telling them to fear being tormented after death.

- Fear him who is able to destroy the soul (life—psukee) in Gehenna.
- Fear him who is able to destroy the body in Gehenna.



If this were changed to a soul being tormented in Hell, then it would also make the body be tormented in Hell. Being killed and then cast into Gehenna is not being alive and tormented in Hell. **This passage speaks only of those that have already been “killed” being cast into Gehenna.**

**The only place spoken of in this passage is Gehenna.**

- **Nothing is said about a place called “Hell.”**
- **Nothing is said about torment after death, not in Gehenna or Hell.**
- **Nothing is said about any kind of life after death in this passage, not life in Gehenna, not life in Hell, or life in Heaven.**
- **Nothing is said about any torment in Gehenna, or anyone being cast into Gehenna before being *killed* or *destroyed*. No living person was cast into Gehenna.**
  - But when Gehenna is changed to Hell, then Hell is said to be a place of endless torment for a living soul that cannot be killed or destroyed.

Explain this change!

- The killing is done **before** being cast into Gehenna.
- When Gehenna is changed to Hell and the “*killed*” is changed to an eternal life of torment for a soul that cannot be killed, it then makes the torment be before being cast into Hell, not the torment is in Hell. But this seems to be no problem for those that change, after they have changed the “*killed*” to eternal life in torment, and changed Gehenna to Hell, they just make another change and change the time of the torment from before being cast into Hell, to after being cast into Hell.

Christ speaks of being destroyed in Gehenna, but never says anything about Gehenna being eternal, or about torment in Gehenna, but those who change Gehenna into Hell add both eternal life and torment to Gehenna.

To have the "Hell" that is taught today, Gehenna must:

1. Be changed from a place of desertion to a place of torment.
2. Then the changed place must be moved.
3. Then after the place that have been changed and moved, it must then be given a new name (Hell), a name that is not in the Hebrew Old Testament or the Greek New Testament.

**There is no ground for the traditional view of an immortal soul that cannot be killed or destroyed in this passage, or any other passage. Jesus used both kill and destroy, but said nothing about torment. Theology must be used to change “*killed*” and “*destroy*” to life in torment, for if the words killed and destroy are not changed to mean life, there would be no living "souls" to be tormented in Hell; therefore, no Hell.**

Apollumi (destroy) is used 95 times in the New Testament. **Matthew 10:28 and 39** (with the parallel accounts in Luke, Mark, and John) **is the only time it is used with psukee—life, and it says fear him who is able to destroy (apollumi) the soul (psukee—life).** Those who believe this “psukee” is a deathless soul that cannot die must deny this plain statement made by Christ that it could be destroyed.

- “Fear him who is able to destroy (apollumi) both soul (psukee—life) and body in Gehenna” (Matthew 10:28).
- “The young child to destroy (apollumi) him” (Matthew 2:13).
- “And the bottles perish (apollumi)” (Matthew 9:17). Bottles cannot be tormented.

- "How they might destroy (apollumi) him" (Matthew 12:14). Take His life, not torment Him.
- "Will miserably destroy (apollumi) those wicked ones" (Matthew 21:41). "He will put these wretches to a miserable death" (apollumi) Revised Standard Version.
- "But the king was enraged and sent his armies, and destroyed (apollumi) these murderers, and set their city on fire" (Matthew 22:7).
- "Shall perish (apollumi) with the sword" (Matthew 26:52).
- The saved will never perish (apollumi) (John 10:28).
- The lost will perish (apollumi) (1 Corinthians 1:18).
- Anyone can perish (apollumi) by drowning (Mark 4:38; Matthew 8:25). When apollumi is applied to persons, whether in this life, or at the judgment, it is life that is destroyed, not living forever being tormented by God and cannot perish.
  - In the Greek it is not "soul," but "psukee" (life) that God can and will destroy.

"Fear him who is able to destroy (apollumi) **both** soul and body in Gehenna."

- What ever happens to the soul (psukee-life) also happens to the body.
- What ever happens to the body also happens to the soul (psukee-life).

The advocate's of an immortal soul say, "destroy," (apollumi) means "torment." If this is true, "torment" should be used in place of "destroy" in all places. Try it. The same is true when apollumi is made to mean "a loss of well being."

- "The young child to torment (apollumi) him" Matthew 2:13. "The young child to a loss of well being (apollumi) him"
- "One of your members should torment (apollumi)" "One of your members should a loss of well being (apollumi)" Matthew 5:29
- "Lord, save us, we torment (apollumi)" Matthew 8:25
- "And the bottles tormented (apollumi)" Matthew 9:17
- "That finds his life shall torment (apollumi) it" Matthew 10:39
- "One of these little one should torment (apollumi)" Matthew 18:14
- "If she torment (apollumi) one piece" Luke 15:14
- "Flood came and tormented (apollumi) them all" Luke 17:27
- "Torment (apollumi) not him with your meat" Romans 14:15
- "I will torment (apollumi) the wisdom of the wise" 1 Corinthians 1:19
- "Is it lawful on the Sabbath to do good, or to do harm? To save a life, or to torment (apollumi) it" (Luke 6:9). In the parallel passage Mark used apokteino - "kill," not apollumi - "destroy."
  - "To save a life, or to kill (apokteino)" (Mark 3:4).
  - "To save a life, or to destroy it (apollumi) (Luke 6:9).

Those who say to destroy means a lost of well being, not death, will have a little trouble saying Mark's parallel passage that "kill" does not mean death. Mark and Luke make destroy (apollumi) and kill (apokteino) both means the same thing, both means death, not eternal life with a lost of well-being.

- "Your silver perish (apollumi) with you" (Acts 8:20). Peter told Simon that both (1) he and (2) his silver would perish. If perish means eternal torment then Simon's silver would be in eternal torment with him; the same thing will happen to both.
- Many more. See Wigram Englishman's Greek Concordance page 74 for a long list of passages where destroy could not mean a lost of well being. Just as they only want death to be "separation," or "a lost of well being" part of the time (See chapter two, "Life or Death"), apollumi is only wanted to be "a lost of well being," or an eternal life of torment part of the time. Only when they need apollumi to be translated separation or translated torment, only when it would destroy the immortal soul doctrine if it were not changed. As translated in the King James Version, both words (apollumi and death) destroy the doctrine of an immortal soul from birth. They must use their theology reinterpretation to save it. Destroy does not mean to torment forever in any dictionary. Note: By

"lost of well being" they really mean, "God will forever be tormenting them." A "lost of well being" is just a watered down way of saying, "God will forever be tormenting them."

In the King James Version in the 95 times apollumi is used, whatever it is used with is destroyed, not torment, it is the end of the things that are destroyed, not tormented, such as bottles, meat, gold Matthew 9:27; John 6:27; 1 Peter 1:7; etc. Apollumi is translated destroy, destroyed, perish, lose, lost, and die. When a thing is destroyed or burned is ceases to be the thing that it was before it was destroyed, the elements do not have the identity they did have, the elements in a book was not a book before the book was made, and the elements that was a book is no longer a book after the book is burned up. According to the immortal soul teaching a person is made up of a body and a soul; this passage says God can and will destroy both the body and the soul of a sinner; the whole person will be destroyed, abolished in the lake of fire and the sinner will not exist.

Men did kill the bodies of many disciples and Christ warned that they would be killed, but this has no effect on their ultimate existence. Death is but a brief sleep, which will be as if it were only a moment from death unto the resurrection. (Deuteronomy 31:16; 2 Samuel 7:12; 1 Kings 1:21; Job 7:21; 14:12; Psalm 13:31 Jeremiah 51:39, 57; 1 Kings 2:10; 11:21, 43; 14:20, 31; 15:8, 24; 16:6, 28; 22:40, 50; 2 Kings 8:24; 10:35; 13:9, 13; 14:16, 22, 29; 15:7, 22, 38; 16:20; 20:21; 21:18; 24:6; 2 Chronicles 9:31; 12:16; 14:1; 16:13; 21:1; 26:2, 23; 27:9; 28:27; 32:33; 33:20; Job 3:13; Isaiah 26:19; Matthew 9:24; 25:5; 27:52; Mark 5:39; Luke 8:52; John 11:11-14; Acts 7:60; 13:36; 1 Corinthians 15:6, 18, 20, 51; 1 Thessalonians 4:13-15; 5:10; 2 Peter 3:4). While there is nothing about a resurrection in Luke 22:4-5 or Matthew 10:28, there will be a resurrection, and in the ultimate eternal sense man cannot kill the psukee (life). God can destroy and make our memory to perish (Deuteronomy 32:39; 1 Samuel 2:6; Ecclesiastes 9:4-6; Psalm 31:12; 88:5; Isaiah 26:14; Ecclesiastes 9:10; Matthew 10:28; Luke 12:5; Romans 6:23). If death does not indicate unconsciousness, then the analogy of sleep, which is used throughout the Bible, is meaningless for the dead are not asleep. It is more than just meaningless, saying the dead are asleep when they are awake in Heaven or Hell would be an outright lie that is repeated frequently. The second death is never called a sleep because there will be no waking up or resurrection from it.

**If the words "immortal soul" were substituted for "soul" and "life," it would be absurd.** "But are not able to kill the **immortal soul** (life—psukee): but fear him who is able to destroy both **immortal soul** (life—psukee) and body in Hell (Gehenna)...He that finds his **immortal soul** (life—psukee) shall lose his **immortal soul** (life-psukee); and he that loses his **immortal soul** for my sake shall find his **immortal soul**" (Matthew 10:28-39). In using this to prove that a person has an immortal soul, which cannot be destroyed, it proves that the soul can be destroyed. If psukee were an immortal soul, then God would be able to destroy this immortal soul. **There is no stronger way in which to say God can and will destroy it.** He is to be feared by those of the world because He will. **I find it strange that one of the most used passages to prove there is an "immaterial, invisible part of man" (Vine) that cannot be destroyed says the psukee (life) can be destroy, the very thing that some are trying to prove cannot be destroyed can be destroyed; but no stranger then the use of death to mean an eternal life of torment with God doing the tormenting.** By saying black is white you can prove anything.

The point some are trying to make from being "*able to destroy*" is that there is life after death, and this life can only be an immortal soul that cannot be destroyed, which this does not prove. At the resurrection there will be life that **God can destroy**, not that there

is an immortal soul that God cannot destroy. **It says nothing about an "immaterial, invisible part of man" that is alive before the resurrection that cannot be destroyed.** It does not say there will be any life from death unto the resurrection. That there will be a resurrection is taught through out the New Testament, but if all are alive when Christ comes, there cannot be a resurrection of those that are not dead. **God can destroy the life that now is, and the life that will be after the resurrection.** He is to be feared by the lost because He will destroy the life they will have after the resurrection.

**Would prove more than the advocate's of an immortal soul want to prove.** If Matthew 10:28 were changed to be speaking of torment in Hell it would prove more than they believe and more than they want to prove, for they do not believe this earthly body will be tormented in "Hell," or that the *"immaterial, invisible part of man"* will be destroyed. But, to prove their Hell, they make destroy be just a loss of well being, but still alive and being tormented in Hell. If the immaterial, invisible part of a person is not destroyed, but just lost its well being, then the earthly body is not destroyed, but has just lost its well-being. The same thing would happen to both the body *and "the immaterial, invisible part of a person;"* therefore, if destroy means one is tormented, not destroyed, then destroy means the earthly body will be tormented in Hell just as we are told that the soul will. Most who believes in Hell do not believe the flesh and blood "body" will be tormented, but, it is clear that whatever happens to the "body" also happens to the "soul" (psukee—life), both are destroyed. If one is killed, both are killed, if one is tormented, both are tormented. **If God is able to kill or destroy both the body and soul (psukee—life), neither one could now be immortal.**

Psukee as it is used in Luke 12, New International Version.

- *"Fear him who after the killing of the body, has power to throw YOU (psukee) into hell"* (Greek—Gehenna, throw your body he has killed it into Gehenna) (Luke 12:5).
- *"And I'll say to MYSELF (psukee), 'YOU (psukee) have plenty of good things lain up for many years'"*(Luke 12:18).
- *"But God said to him, 'You fool! This very night your LIFE (psukee) will be demanded from you'"* (Luke 12:20).
- *"LIFE (psukee) is more than food, and the body more than clothes"* (Luke 12:23).

*"Fear him, who after he has killed has power/authority to cast INTO GEHENNA"* (1) Is this speaking of the Jewish governing authorities that they killed, and then cast the bodies into Gehenna of those they thought not to be worthy of a burial (see "The five Judgments" in the first occasion above), (2) or is it speaking of God destroying Israel in A. D. 70 when many were killed and left unburied (see Chapter Eight, Part Four). It definitely is not speaking of a dead ("*killed*") soul being cast into Hell.

### THE THIRD OCCASION IN ANOTHER LESSON TO HIS DISCIPLES

This was a different discourse than Matthew 5:29-30 above, but He was teaching the same thing. See the notes on the first occasion above. Matthew 18:9 *"And if your eye causes you to stumble, pluck it out, and cast it from you: it is good for you to enter into life with one eye, rather than having two eyes to be cast into the Hell (Greek—Gehenna)*

*of fire."* Mark 9:43, 45, 47 *"And if your hand cause you to stumble, cut it off: it is good for you to enter into life maimed, rather than having your two hands to go into Hell (Greek—Gehenna), into the unquenchable fire. And if your foot cause you to stumble, cut it off; it is good for you to enter into life halt, rather than having your two feet to be cast into Hell (Greek—Gehenna). And if your eye cause you to stumble, cast it out; it is good for you to enter into the kingdom of God with one eye, rather than having two eyes to be cast into Hell (Greek—Gehenna) where their worm dies not, the fire is not quenched"* *"Where their worm dies not, the fire is not quenched"* is in Mark 9:44, 46, and 48 in some translations. **Not many believes the human body is going to be cast in "Hell" and be tormented, yet this passage about the human body being cast into the valley of Gehenna is often used to prove the "soul" will be eternally tormented, not in the valley of Gehenna, but in Hell; the "hand," "eye," and "body" are a person, not parts of a immaterial soul that has no earthy parts; the foot that is cut off is a part of the earthy body that will be cast into Gehenna. "Where their worm dies not, the fire is not quenched" is a direct quotation from Isaiah 66:23-24 where it is speaking of dead bodies on this earth being literally burned with fire and dead bodies being literally eaten by worms just as anything that was cast into Gehenna was burned with fire or eaten by worms. Gehenna, a place on this earth, has been changed to Hell, a place not on this earth, and bodies has been changed to bodiless soul; and no one can give a Bible passage that tells of a place called "Hell." "It is better for you to enter life crippled" (Mark 9:43), what "life" is Christ speaking of, this life "crippled," or life in Heaven "crippled"? If Christ were speaking of Heaven, unless it is possible to be crippled with only one foot and one eye in Heaven, this passage would make no sense. Do unconditional immoralists believe Christ is saying it is better for an immortal soul to enter life in Heaven a "crippled" soul; "it is good for you to enter into life halt, rather than having your two feet to be cast into Hell (Greek—Gehenna)"? If Christ were speaking of immortal souls entering life in Heaven or being cast into Hell, would there be any way to say there will not be crippled souls in Heaven? These are symbolic words teaching that if there is anything in our lives that would be in the way of entering into the kingdom of Heaven we need to remove them; a person who uses drugs needs to repent, a person who is a thief needs to repent—to remove (cut off) the things from their lives that would prevent him or her from entering into the kingdom.**

#### **THE FOURTH OCCASION**

##### **IN A SERMON TO THE SCRIBES AND PHARISEES**

Gehenna is used two times in a sermon to the Scribes and Pharisees warning them of God's rejection of Israel. In Matthew 23 and 24 Christ speaks of the destruction of Israel. *"All these things shall come upon this generation"* (Matthew 23:36). **The context of these two uses of Gehenna are clearly an in time judgment of Israel, a judgment that has now passed, not of anything that will be after the judgment at the coming of Christ. They have no reference to "Hell." The judgment and destruction of Israel did come on that "generation," but "damnation of Hell" as it is preached today did not come on that "generation."** Damnation" is from krisis which means judgment, not damnation as it is mistranslated in the King James Version, the Greek says, "judgment of Gehenna," not the "damnation of Hell," as it was changed to in the King James Version. These two uses of Gehenna are in a context of a rebuke toward the Pharisees and religious leaders of that time, and not of anything after the Judgment Day. Added to this

is that it is followed by the lamentation of Jesus over the doomed city of Jerusalem, “*O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, that kills the prophet’s and stones them that are sent unto her! How often would I have gathered your children together even as a hen gathers her chickens under her wings, and you would not! Behold, your house is left unto you desolate*” (Matthew 23:37-38).

ISRAEL THE WICKED HUSBANDMEN Matthew 21:33-46: Before looking at this use of Gehenna it may help understand it to first look at the parable of the wicked husbandman that comes just before it and is a part of the same sermon spoken to the Scribes and Pharisees. “*When; therefore, the lord of the vineyard shall come, what will he do unto these husbandman? They say unto him, He will miserably destroy these miserable men, and will let out the vineyard unto other husbandmen, who will render him the fruits in their seasons. Jesus said unto them, did you never read in the scriptures, the stone, which the builders rejected, the same was made the head of the corner; this was from the Lord, and it is marvelous in our eyes? Therefore say I unto you, **the kingdom of God shall be taken away from you, and shall be given to a nation bringing forth the fruits thereof. And he who falls on this stone will be broken to pieces; but on whomever it falls, it will scatter him like dust. And when the chief priests and Pharisees heard his parables, they understood that He was speaking about them.***” How is it that today most do not understand this parable to be about Israel, do not understand “*that He was speaking about them*”? Many parables deal with the rejection of Christ by Israel and its destruction. See chapter 8, part 1, and part 2.

(1) **SON OF GEHENNA:** Matthew 23:15 “*Woe unto you, Scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! For you compass sea and land to make one proselyte; and when he is become so, you make him twofold more a son of **Hell (Greek—Gehenna)** then yourselves.*” In speaking to the Pharisees, Christ said, “*For you are like unto whitewashed tombs, which outwardly appear beautiful, but inwardly are full of dead man’s bones, and of all **uncleanness***” (Matthew 23:27). The Scribes and Pharisees made their proselytes twofold more a **son of Gehenna** than them selves (Matthew 23:15). A place cannot give birth to a person. No one, not even those who believe in Hell believe Hell is literally the father or mother of anyone. To call a person a son of a place is not to say that place is literally the person’s mother, but is to say a part of his or her character is similar to the place. Gehenna was a place of filth and **uncleanness**. To use the metaphors “*son of Gehenna*” is to say they were **unclean** like the filthy city dump. To be a “*son of Gehenna*” means to be like Gehenna and the things in it: to be filthy and contemptible, fit only to be destroyed. The proselytes were made twofold more **unclean** then the Pharisees, this is speaking of them being sons of Gehenna (unclean) while they were alive, not twofold more in Hell after their death. Because Gehenna does not literally have sons, this is a figure of speech, and is not intended to be taken literally, not in this life, or after death. James and John are called “*sons of thunder*” (Mark 3:17). Thunder did not give birth to them, but a part of their character is similar to thunder, “*And if a son of peace be there*” (Luke 10:6), “*Son of exhortation*” (Acts 4:36), “*Sons of disobedience*” (Ephesians 2:2), “*The son of destruction*” (2 Thessalonians 2:3).

J W McGarvey, Matthew 8:11: “The child of anything in Hebrew phraseology expressed the idea of special property which one has in the thing specified, as, for instance, children of disobedience (Eph. ii. 2)” The Fourfold Gospel, Standard Publishing Company, 1914.

Robert W. Yarbrough: “In biblical usage ‘son of’ normally means physical descendent. But it also has a metaphorical use. It can mean ‘to share the characteristics’ of someone or something.

'Sons of thunder' are boisterous and impulsive young men (Mark 3:17; cf. Luke 9:54). "Sons of light and sons of the day' (1 Thess. 5:5) are people whose lives reflect God's moral brilliance." *Hell Under Fire*, page 73, 2004, Zondervan printers.

**This metaphor is taken from the filth and uncleanness of Gehenna. Although this passage is repeatedly used to prove eternal torment after death, there is nothing about any torment in it, not in this lifetime, or after death, or after the judgment.**

In the same address to the Scribes and Pharisees, Christ gives two more examples of their uncleanness.

1. The Pharisees washed the outside of the cup to make it clean, *"but within they are full from extortion and excess. You blind Pharisee, cleanse first the inside of the cup and of the platter, that the outside thereof may become clean also"* (Matthew 23:25-26).
2. The Pharisees were like whitewashed graves, *"which appear beautiful, but inwardly are full of dead man's bones, and all uncleanness. Even so you also outwardly appear righteous unto men, but inwardly you are full of hypocrisy and iniquity"* (Matthew 23:27-28).

Matthew 23:13-39 is a list of seven woes to the Scribes and Pharisees. *"Twofold more a son of Gehenna."* Matthew 23:15 is the second of the seven woes on the Scribes and Pharisees (Matthew 23:13-39).

1. The Pharisees shut the kingdom of Heaven against men, and enter not in (Matthew 23:13-14).
2. **The Pharisees made their proselytes' twofold more a son of Gehenna than them selves** (Matthew 23:15).
3. The Pharisees said to swear by the temple is nothing (Matthew 23:16-22).
4. The Pharisees left undone the weightier matters (Matthew 23: 23-24).
5. The Pharisees were full of hypocrisy and iniquity; they cleaned only the outside of the cup (Matthew 23:25-26).
6. The Pharisees are like whitewashed tombs, full of dead men's bones and all uncleanness (Matthew 23:17-28).
7. **The Pharisees are sons and partakers with their fathers that slew the prophets. "How shall YOU escape the judgment of Gehenna"?** (Matthew 23:29-39).

(2) **JUDGMENT OF GEHENNA:** Matthew 23:33-36 *"Fill you up then the measure of your fathers. You serpents, you offspring of vipers, how shall you escape the judgment of Hell (Greek—Gehenna)? Therefore, behold, I send unto you prophets, and wise men, and Scribes: some of them shall you kill and crucify; and some of them shall you scourge in your synagogues, and persecute from city to city: that upon you may come all the righteous blood shed on the earth, from the blood of Abel the righteous unto the blood of Zechariah son of Barachiah, whom you slew between the sanctuary and the altar. Verily I say unto you, all these things shall come upon this generation."* All the "you" are the Pharisees; Christ had just told the Scribes and Pharisees they made their proselytes more a **"SON of Gehenna,"** more unclean than themselves; then He calls them **"offspring (SONS of) vipers,"** and **"all these things** (all the righteous blood from Abel to Zechariah) **shall come upon this generation."** Matthew 23 is a discourse to the Scribes and the Pharisees, and they knew that Jesus was speaking to them, it is not about things that are happening today, or after the Judgment Day; many take one word of this

discourse out of its context, and then changed this one noun to another noun that is not in the Bible.

The Scribes and Pharisees knew the law, but did not keep it. Outwardly they were as beautiful as white sepulchers, but inwardly were full of dead man's bones. They would not escape the judgment to come. *"Verily I say unto you, all these things shall come upon this generation"* (Matthew 23:36). Matthew 24 is a discourse to His disciples about the destruction of Israel of which He had spoken of to the Pharisees in the chapter before. **That generation would not escape the judgment of Gehenna.** It came in A. D. 70 when some historians say Gehenna had many dead bodies of Jews from the destruction of Jerusalem (See Jeremiah 19). To the Jews, to be judged as not being fit to be buried, was the worse of all insults. It was the most severe judgment of contempt upon a criminal known to the Jews. In the judgment soon to come upon them Josephus said six hundred thousand dead bodies of the Jews were carried out of Jerusalem and left unburied.

### **CONDEMNATION, DAMNATION, AND DAMNED Of the King James Version**

In Matthew 23 the seventh woe of this lecture and warning to the Scribes and Pharisees and Matthew 24 are about the judgment coming to them and on Israel. Why did the King James translators change *"The judgment (krisis) of Gehenna"* into **"the damnation (krisis) of Hell"** (Matthew 23:33)?

*"Judgment of Gehenna"* for Israel that *"shall come upon this generation"* (Matthew 23:36) is changed to: "Damnation of Hell." That generation is long past and there has been no "damnation of Hell" yet, but the judgment of Gehenna did come on that generation in A. D. 70 when Israel was destroyed. I would really like to know how the translators thought they had the right to change this warning to the Scribes and Pharisees about a judgment of Gehenna that was coming on that generation to the Hell they believed in, especially when neither the word "damnation" nor "Hell" is not in the Greek from which they translated it.

Krisis is used in the New Testament 48 times and translated "judgment" 41 times, "damnation" 3 times, condemnation 2 times, accusation 2 times in the King James Version. The translators must have thought that if they put damnation with Hell that it would make the threat of Hell stronger? Krisis should have never been translated damnation or condemnation. In the American Standard Version Krisis is translated "judgment" 47 times, and "sin" 1 time in Mark 3:29.

**The resurrection of ~~damnation~~ (krisis) (KJV), judgment (krisis) (ASV), "The resurrection of judgment (krisis)" (John 5:29)** says nothing about an eternal life of torment in Hell after the second coming of Christ although this passage is continually used to prove eternal torment. **The verdict of the judgment**, if it were death, or eternal life with torment **is not in this passage.** In an attempt to put Hell in the Bible, the translators of the King James Version (1) changed the judgment and made it be the verdict of the judgment, (2) and then made the verdict be what they needed it to be, namely eternal torment by God.

John 5:29

- *"Unto the resurrection of ~~damnation~~ (krisis)"* King James Version, New King James Version.
- *"Unto the resurrection of judgment (krisis)"* American Standard Version.

John 5:24



- "Shall not come into ~~e~~condemnation (krisis)" King James Version.
- "Shall not come into judgment (krisis)" New King James Version, American Standard Version.

Matthew 23:33

- "Escape the ~~dam~~nation (krisis)" King James Version, New King James Version.
- "Escape the judgment (krisis)" American Standard Version.

John 3:19

- "And this is the ~~e~~condemnation (krisis)" King James Version, New King James Version.
- "And this is the judgment (krisis)" American Standard Version.

If "krisis" means "damnation," then we are all in trouble for. "It is appointed unto men once to die, and after this comes ~~dam~~nation judgment (krisis)" (Hebrews 9:27), judgment will come to all, both the saved and the lost, but not damnation. When it is applied only to the lost the King James translators translated "krisis" condemnation or damnation, but when it is applied to all (Hebrews 9:27) they translated "krisis" judgment. Just one more example of how they were willing to mistranslate to put "Hell" into the Bible. The American Standard Version and most others do not translate "krisis" into condemnation or damnation. **Two words had to be changed in Matthew 23:33 to put today's Hell in the Bible. "Judgment" had to be changed to "damnation," and "Gehenna" had to be changed to "Hell."**

NO ROOT, NO BRANCH, NO HOPE OF LIFE FOR ISRAEL. Foy E. Wallace, Jr.: "The prophet declares that 'the day shall burn as an oven' and 'it shall burn them up'--a pronouncement against the Jewish nation and governments that rejected and condemned the Christ, and persecuted his saints." "God's Prophetic Word," page 545.

Krino is translated judge, judged, 86 times in the King James Version, damned 1 time, condemn 1 time, condemned 2 times, condemneth 1 time in the King James Version.

John 3:17-18

- "For God sent not his Son into the world to ~~e~~condemn (krino) the world; but that the world through him might be save. He that believeth on him is not ~~e~~condemned (krino): but he that believeth not is ~~e~~condemned (krino) already" King James Version.
- "For God sent not the Son into the world to judge (krino) the world: but that the world should be saved through him. He that believeth on him is not judged (krino): he that believeth not has been judged (krino) already" American Standard Version.

Romans 14:22

- "Happy is he that ~~e~~condemneth (krino) not himself" King James Version.
- "Happy is he that judgeth (krino) not himself" American Standard Version.

2 Thessalonians 2:12

- "That they all might be ~~dam~~ned (krino)" King James Version.
- "That they all might be judged" American Standard Version.

There is a vast different in "damned" and "judged," both cannot be a true translation. Condemnation, damnation, and damned were all taken out of the American Standard Version and most others. How many millions have been made to believe a lie by this deliberate changing of the Bible?

The Jews would have been acquainted with the language of judgment on nations in the Old Testament. Malachi's pronouncement is against the Jewish nation. *"For behold, the day is coming, burning like a furnace; and all the arrogant and every evildoer will be chaff; and the day that is coming will set them ablaze, says the Lord of hosts, so that it will leave them neither root nor branch"* (Malachi 4:1). Job says when a tree is cut down there is hope that the root will sprout (Job 14:8); there is hope of life. In the last chapter in the Old Testament of our English Bible Malachi says Israel will not be left a root to sprout a branch or a branch to sprout roots; therefore, there will be no hope for life.

Summary: Just as every reference to Gehenna in the Old Testament are to a place on this earth, to the valley south of Jerusalem, and it is never translated "Hell." every reference to Gehenna by Christ is also to the same place on this earth, to the same valley. In the four occasions that Gehenna is used, not in a one is Gehenna said to be eternal or everlasting, not once is there any torment of living persons in it, and not once is it used in connection with the resurrection, but today preachers most always add everlasting and say it will never end. How do they know this? **None of the apostles ever preach anything about Gehenna. If it were a place of torment where God shall torment all of the lost, why did they never say anything about it? They used death, destroy, destroyed, perish, die, and end; but never "Hell."**

**AND ONE TIME BY JAMES  
TO THE TWELVE TRIBES OF ISRAEL**

**SET ON FIRE BY GEHENNA James 3:6:** *"And the tongue is a fire; the world of iniquity among our members is the tongue, which defiles the whole body, and sets on fire the wheel of nature, and is set on fire by Hell (Greek-Gehenna)."* James used the same proper noun (the name of a particular place) that Christ used in Matthew 23:15 as a metaphor of uncleanness. The tongue is a fire and is set on fire by Gehenna-the filthy, contemptible garbage dump. Most who are given to gossip look for some filthy rotten garbage on someone, and then cannot wait to tell it. James did not use Gehenna to teach the Jews about what was going to happen them after death if they rejected Christ. To say, "The tongue is set on fire by the place of eternal torment after the judgment," which is what many teach, makes no sense. This metaphor is not taken from the destruction by the fire and maggots in Gehenna; but, like the fourth occasion that Christ used Gehenna, **it is a metaphor taken from the filth and uncleanness of Gehenna.** There is nothing about being killed and then cast into Gehenna, nothing about torment or destruction in it, and nothing about anything after death. The tongue is a fire now in this lifetime. To make Hell be a literal place not of this earth that sets on fire a literal tongue of a living person on this earth would somehow make that person's tongue be in contact with a place that is not on this earth. **James used Gehenna as a place of uncleanness, which he figuratively applied to a vile tongue. This passage says nothing about any kind of punishment before or after death, or nothing about the fate of the unrighteous after death.**

**TOURS OF HELL**

Today many travelers to Israel are offered "a tour of Hell," they are taken to the valley of Gehenna, but they find no fire there. After A. D. 70 the fire went out and all signs of the fire has disappeared completely.

**THE MISTRANSLATION OF GEHENNA**

| KJV | ASV NASV RSV NRSV\* | Others\*\*  
 Matthew 5:22, 29, 30 | Hell | Hell Footnote-Greek Gehenna | Gehenna

Matthew 10:28	Hell	Hell Footnote-Greek Gehenna	Gehenna
Mt 18:9 Mk 9:43, 44, 45	Hell	Hell Footnote-Greek Gehenna	Gehenna
Matthew 23:15, 33	Hell	Hell Footnote-Greek Gehenna	Gehenna
Luke 12:5	Hell	Hell Footnote-Greek Gehenna	Gehenna
James 3:6	Hell	Hell Footnote-Greek Gehenna	Gehenna

The American Standard Version, Revised Standard Version, New Revised Standard Version, and others have a footnote "Gr. Gehenna."

\*\*New American Bible (Catholic), World English Bible, Young's Literal New Testament (author of "Young's Analytical Concordance"), Wesley's New Testament (founder of Methodist Church), Christian Bible 1991, and many more translations have "Gehenna" in the text as it should be as it is a Proper Noun (the name of a particular place). The Amplified Bible has it as an insert in the text: "Hell (Gehenna) of fire."

#### THE TRANSLATION OF GEHENNA IN SEVEN TRANSLATIONS

(1) **Young's Literal Bible** (1891) Author of "Young's Analytical Concordance To The Bible"

First occasion, in the Sermon on the Mount

Matthew 5:22—*Gehenna Of The Fire*

Matthew 5:29—*Gehenna*

Matthew 5:30—*Gehenna*

Second occasion, in a lesson to the twelve disciples

Matthew 10:28—*Destroy in Gehenna*

Luke 12:5—*Gehenna*

Third occasion, in another lesson to his disciples

Matthew 18:9—*Gehenna of the fire*

Mark 9:43—*Gehenna*; Mark 9:44 and Mark 9:45 - *Gehenna*

Fourth occasion, to the Scribes and Pharisees

Matthew 23:15—*Son of Gehenna*

Matthew 23:33—*Gehenna*

And one time by James, to the Twelve Tribes—James 3:6—*Set of fire by the Gehenna*

(2) **Wesley's New Testament** (1755) the original edition by Wesley, the founder of Methodist Church, not the updated editions that were changed by others.

First occasion, in the Sermon on the Mount

Matthew 5:22—*Gehenna*

Matthew 5:29—*Gehenna*

Matthew 5:30—*Gehenna*

Second occasion, in a lesson to the twelve disciples

Matthew 10:28—*Gehenna*

Luke 12:5—*Gehenna*

Third occasion, in another lesson to his disciples

Matthew 18:9—*Gehenna*

Mark 9:43—*Gehenna*

Mark 9:44 and Mark 9:45 - *Gehenna*

Fourth occasion, to the Scribes and Pharisees

Matthew 23:15—*Gehenna*

Matthew 23:33—*Gehenna*

And one time by James, to the Twelve Tribes—James 3:6—*Gehenna*

(3) **Weymouth New Testament** (1903)

First occasion, in the Sermon on the Mount

Matthew 5:22—*Gehenna of Fire*

Matthew 5:29—*Gehenna*

Matthew 5:30—*Gehenna*

Second occasion, in a lesson to the twelve disciples

Matthew 10:28—*Gehenna*

Luke 12:5—*Gehenna*

Third occasion, in another lesson to his disciples

- Matthew 18:9—*Gehenna of fire*  
 Mark 9:43—*Gehenna*  
 Mark 9:44 and Mark 9:45—*Gehenna*  
 Fourth occasion, to the Scribes and Pharisees  
 Matthew 23:15—*Son of Gehenna*  
 Matthew 23:33—*Gehenna*  
 And one time by James, to the Twelve Tribes—James 3:6 - *Set of fire by Gehenna*
- (4) The New American Bible (1991) (Catholic)**  
 First occasion, in the Sermon on the Mount  
 Matthew 5:22—*Whoever says, 'You fool,' will be liable to fiery Gehenna*  
 Matthew 5:29—*Better to lose part of you body than have it all cast into Gehenna*  
 Matthew 5:30—*Better to lose part of you body than have it all cast into Gehenna*  
 Second occasion, in a lesson to the twelve disciples  
 Matthew 10:28 *Gehenna*  
 Luke 12:5—*Fear him who has power to cast into Gehenna after he has killed*  
 Third occasion, in another lesson to his disciples  
 Matthew 18:9—*Better to enter life with one eye than be thrown with both into fiery Gehenna*  
 Mark 9:43—*Better for you to enter life maimed than to keep both hands and enter Gehenna with its unquenchable fire*  
 Mark 9:44—*Better for you to enter life crippled than to be thrown into Gehenna with both feet*  
 Mark 9:45—*Better for you to enter the kingdom of God with one eye than to be thrown with both eyes into Gehenna*  
 Fourth occasion, to the Scribes and Pharisees  
 Matthew 23:15—*Gehenna*; Matthew 23:33—*Gehenna*  
 And one time by James, to the Twelve Tribes—James 3:6—*And its fire is kindled by hell*
- (5) The Christian Bible (1991)**  
 First occasion, in the Sermon on the Mount  
 Matthew 5:22—*The Gehenna of Fire*  
 Matthew 5:29—*Your whole body should be thrown into Gehenna*  
 Matthew 5:30—*Your whole body should pass away into Gehenna*  
 Second occasion, in a lesson to the twelve disciples  
 Matthew 10:28—*And the body in Gehenna*  
 Luke 12:5—*Gehenna*  
 Third occasion, in another lesson to his disciples  
 Matthew 18:9—*Then to have two eyes and to be thrown into the Gehenna of fire*  
 Mark 9:43—*Gehenna*  
 Mark 9:44 and Mark 9:45—*Thrown into Gehenna*  
 Fourth occasion, to the Scribes and Pharisees  
 Matthew 23:15—*A son of Gehenna*  
 Matthew 23:33—*Gehenna*  
 And one time by James, to the Twelve Tribes—James 3:6—*The tongue...is set of fire by Gehenna*
- (6) World English Bible**  
 First occasion, in the Sermon on the Mount  
 Matthew 5:22—*Shall be in danger of the fire of Gehenna*  
 Matthew 5:29—*Than for your whole body to be cast into Gehenna*  
 Matthew 5:30—*And not your whole body be cast into Gehenna*  
 Second occasion, in a lesson to the twelve disciples  
 Matthew 10:28—*Able to destroy both soul and body in Gehenna*  
 Luke 12:5—*Gehenna*  
 Third occasion, in another lesson to his disciples  
 Matthew 18:9—*Than having two eyes to be cast into the Gehenna of fire*  
 Mark 9:43—*Gehenna*  
 Mark 9:45—*Gehenna*  
 Mark 9:47—*Gehenna of fire*  
 Fourth occasion, to the Scribes and Pharisees  
 Matthew 23:15—*You make him twice as much of a son of Gehenna as yourselves*

Matthew 23:33—*How will you escape the judgment of Gehenna?*

And one time by James, to the Twelve Tribes James 3:6—*Set on fire by Gehenna*

(7) **Phillips New Testament** (1952)

First occasion, in the Sermon on the Mount

Matthew 5:22—*Fire of destruction*

Matthew 5:29—*Rubbish-heap*

Matthew 5:30—*Rubbish-heap*

Second occasion, in a lesson to the twelve disciples

Matthew 10:28—*Fire of destruction*

Luke 12:5—*Throw you into destruction*

Third occasion, in another lesson to his disciples

Matthew 18:9—*Fire of the rubbish-heap*

Mark 9:43—*Go to the rubbish-heap*

Mark 9:44—*Thrown on to the rubbish-heap*

Mark 9:45—*Thrown on to the rubbish-heap*

Fourth occasion, to the Scribes and Pharisees

Matthew 23:15—*Ripe for destruction*

Matthew 23:33—*Fire of destruction*

And one time by James, to the Twelve Tribes James 3:6—*It can set the whole of life ablaze, fed with the fires of hell*

(8) There are also many other translations that do not have "Hell" in them.

The New Testament in Modern English" by J. B. Phillips says:

- *"And go to the rubbish-heap where the fire never dies"* (Mark 9:43).
- *"Thrown on the rubbish-heap, where decay never stops and the fire never goes out"* (Mark 9:49, Also Matthew 5:29, 18:9, Mark 9:47).
- *"Fire of destruction"* (Matthew 5:22, 10:28, 32:33, Luke 12:5).

Phillips leaves out "*Gehenna*," a name of a particular place; and puts what Jerusalem's Gehenna was to the people of that time to make it where people today will understand the same thing the Jews that Christ was speaking to would have understand. Many today would not know that Gehenna was the Rubbish-heap of Jerusalem. This is not a translation of the Greek, but it is a good commentary. He translated "*Gehenna*" into Hell only one time (James 3:6). This is the only time Hell is in his translation, and shows he believed in Hell, but knows the Greek manuscripts did not have it.

### **DID JESUS SAY MORE ABOUT HELL THAN HEAVEN?**

It has been said often by many preachers that Jesus said more about Hell than He did about Heaven. Is this the truth or is it a lie that has been told so many times by preachers that many believe it without questioning it? The truth is that without mistranslating to make Jesus say something He or any New Testament writers did not say, there is not one word about Hell in the Bible, JESUS SAID NOTHING ABOUT HELL, NOT ONE WORD. Although the New Testament writers said nothing about Hell, they did say much about Heaven. Although Hell is not in the Bible, Heaven is hundreds of times referring to Heaven it's self, the kingdom of Heaven, and to the universe – the heavens. The claim that Christ said more about Hell than He did about Heaven is not true and is only a desperate attempt to prove Hell.

- A place in Heaven *"In My Father's house are many dwelling places; if it were not so, I would have told you; for I go to prepare a place for you. If I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again and receive you to Myself, that where I am, there you may be also"* (John 14:12).
- Our treasures are in Heaven Matthew 6:20; 10:21; 19:21; Luke 18:22
- Our citizenship is in Heaven Philippians 3:20-21
- Reserved in Heaven for us 1 Peter 1:4; Matthew 6:20; 19:21; Mark 12:25; Luke 6:23

**THE QUESTION IS, WHERE DID JESUS SAY ANYTHING ABOUT HELL EVEN ONE TIME? WHERE DID HE USE THE NAME "HELL"?** The statement that is made by many that Jesus said more about Hell than He did about Heaven has no

truth in it; Jesus never said anything about Hell. When those that know Jesus used “Gehenna” and He never used “Hell” (and most preachers do know this), but they use a mistranslated English Bible that they know is mistranslated to teach those that do not know very much about what Jesus did say that He said much about Hell, what do you think they will say to Jesus at the Judgment?

## THE VANISHING HELL

### TRANSLATIONS ARE GETTING AWAY FROM HELL

The King James Version and the New King James Version are the only two of the major translations that have Hell in the Old Testament; all others have rejected it as a bad translation. Hell is rapidly vanishing from the Bible. It has vanished from the Old Testament in most conservative translations. Moses or Abraham did not know about it. It has all but vanished from the New Testament in the conservative translations, and has vanished altogether in many. Even in the 31 times Hell is in the Old Testament of the King James Version, in 12 of these the New King James Version changed Hell in the King James Version to sheol (from 31 times to 19 times). Were the translators trying to ease away but were afraid to go to far?

### The vanishing Hell: Why is the number of times Hell is used decreasing?

#### Translators cannot agree on how many times to mistranslate it.

Number of times Hell is used in	The Bible	The O.T.	The N. T.
The Latin Vulgate (A. D. 405?)	111 times	87 times	24 times
The Wycliffe Bible (A. D. 1395)	83 times	57 times	26 times
Miles Coverdale Bible (1535)	70 times	50 times	23 times
The Bishop's Bible (1568)	59 times	35 times	24 times
The Geneva Bible (1587)	36 times	16 times	20 times
Westster Bible (1611)	49 times	26 times	23 times
The Original King James Version (1611)	52 times	30 times	22 times
King James Version (1769 update)	54 times	31 times	23 times
The King James Version has had several reversioners and the one that is used today (1769) is not the original 1611 version; it is the last of several revisions.			
New King James Version (1982)	32 times	19 times	13 times
Young's Literal Bible (1891)	0 times	0 times	0 times
American Standard Version (1901)	13 times	0 times	13 times
New American Standard Version (1960)	13 times	0 times	13 times
Revised Standard Version (1946)	13 times	0 times	13 times
New Revised Standard Version (1989)	12 times	0 times	12 times
Derby Translation (1890-1961)	12 times	0 times	12 times
New International Version (1987)	14 times	0 times	14 times
New International Version (2010)	13 times	0 times	13 times
New International Version - UK (1984)	14 times	0 times	14 times
Today's New International Version (2005)	13 times	0 times	13 times
Amplified Bible (1987)	15 times	0 times	15 times*
New Century Version (1987)	12 times	0 times	12 times
Revised English Bible (1989)	28 times	15 times	13 times
Contemporary English Version (1995)	20 times	0 times	20 times
New Living Translation (1996)	19 times	3 times	16 times
English Standard Version (2001)	14 times	0 times	14 times
Holman Christian Standard Bible (2003)	11 times	0 times	11 times
Update Bible Version 1.9 (2003)	12 times	0 times	12 times
Peshitta - Lamsa translation	12 times	1 time	11 times
Common English Bible (2011)	13 times	0 times	13 times
Darby Translation (Catholic)	14 times	0 times	14 times
New American Bible (Catholic) (1991)	0 times	0 times	0 times
New American Bible Revised Edition (2011)	0 times	0 times	0 times
World English Bible (Catholic)	0 times	0 times	0 times
Rotherham Emphasized (1902)	0 times	0 times	0 times
Young's Literal Translation	0 times	0 times	0 times
Fenton's Bible in Modern English (1903)	0 times	0 times	0 times
Hebrew Names Version of WEB	0 times	0 times	0 times
Daniel Mace New Testament (1729)			3 times
Wesley' N. T (The original, not some updated editions) (1755)			0 times
Scarlett's New Testament (1798)			0 times

New Covenant, New Testament	(1884)	0 times
Scrivenre New Testament	(1884)	0 times
Hanson's New Covenant	(1884)	0 times
Twentieth Century New Testament	(1900)	0 times
Rotherham's Emphasized Bible (reprinted)	(1902)	0 times
Fenton's Holy Bible in Modern English	(1903)	0 times
Weymouth's New Testament in Modern Speech	(1903)	0 times
Panin's Numeric English New Testament	(1914)	0 times
The People's New Covenant (Overbury)	(1925)	0 times
Western New Testament	(1926)	0 times
Western New Testament	(1959)	0 times
The New Testament, A Translation (Clementson)	(1938)	0 times
J. B. Phillips New Testament in Modern English	(1947)	1 times
New Testament of our Lord and Savior Anointed (Tomanek)	(1958)	0 times
Restoration of Original Sacred Name Bible	(1976)	0 times
The New Testament, A New Translation (Greber)	(1980)	0 times
Concordance Literal New Testament	(1983)	0 times
Christian Bible, New Testament	(1991)	0 times
Recovery Version, New Testament	(1991)	0 times
New Testament of Our Lord and Savior Jesus Anointed		0 times
The Original Bible Project (Dr Tabor)		0 times
The New Testament in Greek and English (Kneeland)	(1823)	0 times
Interlinear Greek-English New Testament (Berry) (Note A)	(1897)	0 times
Emphatic Diaglott, Greek/English Interlinear (Wilson)	(1942)	0 times
Zondervan Parallel N. T. in Greek and English (Note A)	(1975)	0 times
NASB-NIV Parallel N. T. in Greek and English (Marshall)	(1986)	0 times
Interlinear NASB-NIV Parallel NT Greek-English (Note A)	(1993)	0 times
Jewish Publication Society Bible Old Testament (Note B)	(1917)	0 times
Orthodox Jewish Brit Chadasha New Testament only		0 times
Tanakh, The Holy Scriptures, Old Testament (Note B)	(1985)	0 times
The Complete Jewish Bible (Note B)		0 times
The Septuagint-translation of Hebrew to Greek	3rd century BC	0 times

\*12 times the Amplified Bible has "Hell (*Gehenna*)" in the text, not in a footnote.

Note A, the word-for-word translations beneath the Greek, not the translations that are in the margin.

Note B, all Jewish translations I found of the Old Testament do not have "Hell" in them. It is not in the Septuagint, a translation of the Old Testament from Hebrew to Greek that was in used in the time of Christ.

I find it strange that the Catholic Church believes in Hell yet they removed Hell from two translations they made. I have been told that there is a NWT translation by the Jehovah's Witnesses that dose not have "Hell" in it, but I could not confirm this. I am sure there are many others that I do not know about in English, and there are many in other languages for Gehenna, like all other proper nouns are not translated or changed to other proper nouns in the translations to other languages.

ONE EXAMPLE OF THE VANISHING HELL Psalm 116:3.

- *"The sorrows of death compassed me, and the pains of **HELL** gat hold upon me: I found trouble and sorrow."* King James Version.
- *"The pains of death encompassed me, and the pangs of **SHEOL** laid hold of me"* New King James Version.
- *"The cord of death compassed me, and the pains of **SHEOL** gat hold upon me"* American Standard Version.
- *"The snares of death encompassed me; the pangs of **SHEOL** laid hold on me"* Revised Standard Version.
- *"The cords of death entangled me, the anguish of the **GRAVE** came upon me"* New International Version.
- *"Death had its hands around my throat; the terrors of the **GRAVE** overtook me"* New Living Translation.
- *"The cords of death bound me, **SHEOL** held me in its grip"* Revised English Bible.
- *"The cords and sorrows of death were around me, and the terrors of **SHEOL** (the place of the dead) had laid hold of me"* Amplified Bible.
- *"The ropes of death bound me, and the fear of the **GRAVE** took hold of me"* New Century Bible.

Why did the King James translator's use the Old English word "Hell"? Was it not to force their pagan beliefs into the teaching of Jesus?

**When was the last time you heard a sermon of Hell?** There was a time when most every revival had one or more sermons on the horrors of the Hell, and that most were going to be tormented by God. Most every sermon ended with a warning that all that did

not repent was going to Hell. Jonathan Edwards was well known for his "Hell-fire" sermons. These "Hellfire" preachers are not as popular as they once were, and their audience is much smaller. Today in most churches a sermon on Hell is never preached, and no one is told he or she will go to Hell if they do not repent. Although there are many who do not believe in Hell, and other that are no longer sure that there is a Hell is the reason many say nothing about it in their sermons and Bible lessons? Why does that say nothing? A preacher may think he would not be allowed to preach, and most would not. Many churches would brand him a heretic if he preached there is no Hell, and he would not be able to preach in most churches. Elders and Deacons would not be allowed to continue as Elders and Deacons. Bible teachers would not be permitted to teach if they taught that there is nothing in the Bible about a place called Hell. Members would not be permitted to lead singing, lead prayer, or do anything in the worship service. About all that anyone who does not believe in Hell is permitted to do in most churches is come and sit and give their money; you will be shut out and not be permitted to lead prayer, or take part in the worship in any way, but no matter what you believe you will be permitted and even expected to give your money. Along with many others, I can tell you for a fact that this is sure to happen in most congregations of the church.

#### **THE VANISHING HELL**

#### **THE CHANGING HELL**

Why are there many conflicting Hells? In "Four Views of Hell" edited by William Grocket four Protestant scholars give four different and conflicting views of Hell that are now being taught in the Protestant churches. In "Two Views Of Hell" Robert A. Peterson and William Fudge give two competing views. These two books and others like them show that there are very different competing views about Hell in the Protestant churches, but in truth there are many more than four conflicting views in Protestant and Catholic churches, all with a large number of believers, and many other views of Hell views in other churches. **None of the many different views of Hell that are in the Protestants churches have a majority of Protestants that believe it, all that believe the any of the views of Hell is a small group when compared with all other Protestants that are in all other groups. Not one of the many different views of Hell has even one-fifth of all those that claim to believe the Bible.** The divisions on what Hell is and who will be in it is unbelievable, and most who say they believe in Hell has no idea of the vast number of the visions of Hell, or the unbelievable differences in what Hell is believed to be, how long it will last, who will be in it, and where it will be.

#### **TWENTY-SIX PLUS VERSIONS OF HELL**

Where is Hell?

What is Hell?

There are over 25 different Hells that are commonly believed. While some have some features that are similar, they are all difference and have sharp disagreements. Those that believe one version of Hell are in conflict with all those that believe any of the others.

In the thousands of denominations around the world professing to be Christian there are countless views on what Hell is, where Hell is, who is over Hell, how long will Hell last, many others, with many others views of what Hell is in the non-Christian religions of the world.

#### **SOME OF THE MORE PROMINENT OF THE MANY DIVISIONS OF THE PROTESTANT VERSIONS OF HELL**



1. The Calvin Version of Hell
2. The Jonathan Edwards versions
3. The Graphic view of Hell
4. Satan doing the tormenting
5. God doing the tormenting
6. The Metaphorical view of both Heaven and Hell
7. Mental anguish only Hell – Billy Graham
8. The eternal sinning version of Hell
9. C. S Lewis - the almost pleasant Hell
10. Protestant Traditionalist
11. Many Protestant Premillennial versions
12. Realized Eschatology – A. D. 70 version
13. The “Sudden Realization” version of Hell
14. Protestant Rephaim version

#### **EIGHT OTHER VERSIONS OF HELL**

1. Church of Christ, Christian Church Abraham’s bosom, the after Judgment Hell, A newer version
2. Edward Fudge version: The short Hell that will end
3. Christadelphians version
4. Church of God and others
5. Universalist version of Hell
6. Seventh-Day Advent version
7. Latter-day Saints version (Mormons)
8. The Grave is Hell version (Jehovah’s Witnesses)

#### **THREE CATHOLIC VERSIONS OF HELL**

1. The Dark Age Medieval Catholic version of Hell
2. The New Catholic version of Hell
3. Nether World

#### **NO BIBLE HELL**

**Which Hell do you believe in? From where did Hell come?**

How Hell was put into and is being kept in the Bible

#### **MORE THAN THIRTEEN**

#### **PROTESTANT VERSION OF HELL**

#### **SOME OF THE MANY DIVISIONS OF THE PROTESTANT VERSIONS OF HELL.**

After much conflict among the reformers, most Protestants accepted much of the early Catholic version of some going to Heaven or Hell one by one at death, before and without the judgment, or the Resurrection, but the Catholic Purgatory (a temporary place of punishment to which Catholics believe most will go to the moment of death that is not Heaven or Hell) was rejected. Unconditional immortality, which is the foundation on which Hell stands, was accepted mostly due to Calvin and those that followed him winning out over Martin Luther and his followers. If they had accepted Luther's views on immortality, there would be no foundation for Hell. Many Protestants believe the soul of all who do not accept Christ will instantly be transported to Hell at the death of the person the soul was in before the resurrection and before the Judgment Day. God deliberately chooses to make them suffer and feel the pain without any letup forever. The saved will go to their eternal home in Heaven at death (an instant rapture). The Westminster Confession says, "The souls of the righteous...are received unto the highest heavens...the soul of the wicked are cast into Hell." Does God judge them at death, then maybe thousands of years later, takes souls out of Heaven and Hell to judge them a

second time at the resurrection to see whether He made a mistake? Many believe an unbaptized baby will not be saved. This version is still believed by many today. An opposition to belief in Hell is rapidly growing in the Protestant churches. From the Protestant Reformation unto now there have been many changes and new Protestant versions of Hell.

**(1) THE CALVIN VERSION OF HELL:** The given no chance Hell. An early Protestant Version with a god that made most of mankind knowing he is going to torment the soul that is in them in Hell forever, and there is nothing a person can do to keep the soul that we are told it in them from going to Hell, a god that made the condition of salvation that he know most would not meet, but he is going to torment the souls for eternity because the persons did not meet it. This god made them just so he could torment the soul that was in them forever as their creed says, "To His good pleasure." No amount of preaching or teaching can change the number that shall be in this Hell not even by one person. The Westminster Confession says, "By the decree of God, for the Manifestation of is glory, some men and angels are predestinated unto Everlasting Life, and others foreordained unto everlasting death." Some Protestants still believe this version of Hell that their god made most of mankind just so he could torment their souls for eternity but it is not near as poplar as it was a few years ago. Those who say they are orthodox Protestants but do not believe the Calvin Version of Hell may far out number those who do.

**(2) THE JONATHAN EDWARDS VERSIONS OF HELL:** Also an early Protestant Version and there was a time when most Protestants believed this view of Hell, but now only a few believe it. *There are about as many variations of the Jonathan Edwards versions as there are preachers who preach it.* Most taught God had given Hell over to Satan and Satan will roast most souls forever, and torment them however he wishes to. Some have demons peeling off the burning flash of those in Hell with God making sure they keep it up forever. Some have God doing the tormenting of Satan, the demons, and souls that were in the lost, with God forever pouring in fire and brimstone, and thousands of other ways of tormenting with each preacher trying to out do the others in telling of the horrors of Hell. Each one trying to make the god of Hell more evil then the others have. Jonathan Edwards said God "will crush their blood out and make it fly, so that it will sprinkle his garment and stain all his raiment." They never tell how they know such details. Put all their horrors together, and it would take many books to tell then all. Some of it's preachers get very specific with the details of the torment. These "Hellfire" preachers are not as poplar as they once was, and their audience is much smaller. It is unimportant to them if they have no Bible for their Hell or its horrors; the badly mistranslated King James Version is all they need to make their Hell believable to many with whatever kind of torment they want to put in it. Some believers of the Calvin version also believe this version and mix the two together. There is not much unity of belief among the Protestants. Today, in almost any church if the preacher started preached sermons about Hell that was like the one's Edwards preached he would be out of work very soon. This version of Hell makes there be something like two kingdoms or two universes after the judgment with Satan over one with most of the souls that had been in the lost before the death of the persons, but are now in his kingdom, and God over a much smaller number in His kingdom. Both God and Satan would have eternal power in their kingdom, and the division between Heaven and Hell would mean God would not

ever have a victory over evil. The god Edward believed in would have no problem with tormenting the lost; his god would take great pleasure in tormenting, and, according to Edward, the saints in Heaven will watch with pleasure and satisfaction.

**(3) THE GRAPHIC VERSION OF HELL:** The sinners will be tormented in the parts of their bodies that sinned.

"In short, whatever member of the body sinned, that member would be punished more than any other in hell...In Christian literature we find blasphemers hanging by their tongues. Adulterous women who plaited their hair to entice men dangle over boiling mire by their...hair." William Crockett, "Four Views on Hell" page 46.

4. There is no way that this version of Hell could be harmonized  
Vine, "The immaterial, invisible part of man."

**(4) SATAN WILL BE DOING THE TORMENTING VERSION OF HELL:** Satan and his angels will be doing the tormenting, but they could only be executing the will of God that the lost be tormented for they could not torment the souls that had been in the lost without God letting them. This view was believed by most in the Dark Age, and by most Jonathan Edwards preachers who often speak of "the devil Hell" as though Hell was a place that belonged to Satan. Most Protestants have now abandon the view of Satan and his demons doing the tormenting, but I remember that this was believed by most when I was a child, and was what most Protestants believed at that time. Many painting in museums and churches show Satan and his demons roasting those in Hell, and tormenting them in every way the painters could think up. **Satan and his angels are never punished**; in this version of Hell Satan and evil spirits are forever over "Hell," and will forever be able to torment most of the souls that were in mankind. Instead of being punished, they will have forever triumphed over God, and will forever have a kingdom of their own where they will work their evil on souls as they please to and as it gives them pleasure.

**(5) GOD WILL BE DOING THE TORMENTING VERSION OF HELL:** Satan and his angels will be tormented by God just as all souls of the lost of mankind will. There has been a major change by many Protestants from Satan doing the tormenting to God doing the tormenting.

**(6) THE METAPHORICAL VIEW OF BOTH HEAVEN AND HELL:** We are not told what Heaven and Hell will literally be like. This view of Hell is that we are told in pictures that tell us Heaven will be a place of beauty more than anything on this earth, and that Hell will be worse than anything on this earth. Because we cannot understand what Heaven will really be like, we are given the picture of a city with gold streets and pearl gates to picture for us its great beauty and value, but it will not literally be made of gold, pearls, or of anything that we have on this earth. The metaphorical view of is Hell is pictured as a place of fire; being burned in fire is one of the worst pains we know of, but it will not literally have fire as we know it, or literal darkness as we know it. In this view none of the literal torments of the Jonathan Edwards Version are possible, for they are all things of this earth that will not be in Hell. This version of "Hell" seems to be growing rapidly, for it is looked on as a way to make God less evil, but in fact it does not for whatever would be symbolized by being tormented by eternal fire would be just as bad as being eternally tormented by literal fire, and God would still be the one doing the eternal torment.

**(7) BILLY GRAHAM'S MENTAL ANGUISH VERSION OF HELL:** This version of Hell **changes Hell from a place to a state of mind**. Billy Graham said, "Could it be

that the fire Jesus talked about is an eternal search for God that is never quenched? That, indeed, would be hell. To be away from God forever, separated from His Presence," *The Challenge: Sermons from Madison Square Garden*, 1969, page. 75. He makes Hell be only a state of mind. In "The World To Come," page 300, Isaac Watts makes the worm be the conscience of a person eating on himself for all eternally. A survey by US News, January 2000, page 47, says 53 percent of Americans believe Hell to be only mental anguish. This is an attempt by some to lessen the negative effect of Hell making God cruel and sadistic, but the attempt is a complete failure. Replacing physical torment with mental anguish does nothing to change Hell by making the torment be less. Mental anguish can be worse than physical pain, and it would still be unbearable torment without end. Billy Graham, who is an orthodox Protestant, would in no way been called orthodox by Calvin or Jonathan Edwards, nor would many others that believe Hell is only mental anguish as he does. The old orthodox is some times the very opposite of the new orthodox. **In the mental anguish version of Hell for sins after death, Hell is not a place but a state of mind, of anguish caused by separation from God, the sinner punishes himself after death; it is not God that punishes him**, but where are all the sinners that are punishing themselves? If they are not in Heaven or Hell, where are they? Alexander Campbell: "The sinner's suffering by mental agony, produced by sin, greater than could be caused by material fire," "Five discourses on Hell" 1848. This version of Hell that is believed by Billy Graham, Alexander Campbell, and over 53 percent of Americans is a totally difference Hell than the orthodox Hell of Calvin.

**(8) THE ETERNAL SINNING VERSION OF HELL: sin is self-perpetuating and the sinner cannot stop sinning even when tormented in Hell for it; therefore God must keep tormenting them without end.** This version of Hell is just another attempt to justifier God for tormenting for all eternity for the sins committed in this lifetime. Some protestant believe that the sins in this lifetime are not enough to be tormented for all eternity, but the souls that were in the lost person that sins in this lifetime, these souls will keep on sinning after they are in Hell and will never stop sinning; therefore, the tormenting of these souls by God will never stop.

- If it were true that the sinner could never stop sinning after death then would it not be true that the sinner can never stop sinning in this lifetime; therefore, no one could ever be saved?

Alexander Campbell: "We do not maintain that men are punished eternally for sins committed in this life only. The analysis of the sufferings of a future retribution, which we have just given, is itself sufficient evidence of this fact; for the indulgence of voluntary depravity is itself both sin and punishment. As a consequence of past sins, the sinner has formed the habit of sinning. It is a law of man's nature, that habit creates both a tendency to certain acts, and a facility in their performance. As the result of the habit of sinning, formed in this life, a tendency to repeat acts of sin is carried on by the sinner into a future world; and every such act repeated in that world not only perpetuates, but increases the tendency to further acts of the same kind: and thus, as by every repeated act the tendency to sin is increased, and as every act also brings with it its own punishment, so, by the laws of man's mental and moral nature, the sinner's progress in both sin and suffering in a future world, is like that of a falling body, which increases its velocity as the square of the distance increase through which it falls. There is, therefore, just as little probability that a sinner, left to himself in a future world, should repent and turn to God, as that a falling body should arrest itself in its downward course, and ascend to the elevation from which it fell...surely the assumption that our doctrine supposes that God punishes sinners eternally for sins committed

in this brief and frail life is wholly gratuitous." "Five discourses on Hell," page 65, April 9, 1848, Daniel Davies Publisher.

Is he saying the millions that live and die without ever hearing about God are harden sinners and that not a one would ever repent? Human nature is such that it can change; even the very bad can and do change in this lifetime. Is he saying God will change human nature in such a way that no one will be able to change, not one of the many millions will be able to repent? Will God deliberately change all so that they cannot stop sinning; therefore, He can torment them for all eternally? This version of Hell makes even the worse sinners able to repent and change in this lifetime, but after death all sinners will go on sinning with not one of them will ever be able to stop. It makes there be no end to sin.

Not many members of the Christian Church or the church of Christ any longer believe as Alexander Campbell, but it is now being taught by many Protestants.

This version of Hell was widespread and preached extensively years ago, but because of extensive assaults on it even by orthodox Protestants, it is seldom heard today.

**(9) C. S. LEWIS'S THE ALMOST PLEASANT HELL:** In Great Divorce C. S. Lewis pictures Hell as not black, but only a little gray almost pleasant place where the souls in it can take bus trips into Heaven for the day and return to Hell. See "The Destruction Of the Finally Impenitent" by Clark H. Pinnock at: [http://www.abccoggc.org/jrad/volume2/issue1/jrad\\_v02.1\\_art2.htm](http://www.abccoggc.org/jrad/volume2/issue1/jrad_v02.1_art2.htm) - There is an almost constant rationalizing of the doctrine of Hell to make the God of Hell a less evil God, even making immaterial souls take bus trips.

**(10) PROTESTANT TRADITIONALIST VERSIONS OF HELL:** Most who say they are orthodox and traditionalist believes the souls that had been in the lost persons will be kept alive with some kind of punishment, but beyond this there is little agreement among them. Some believe much as did Jonathan Edwards and Calvin, that there will be torment for the souls that are in Hell beyond anything that we can now know of. There are others Protestants who utterly repudiate both Calvin's and Edward's Hell; they believe that there will be some kind of eternal punishment, but it may be nothing more than a little mental anguish, or just being deprived of all good. Others are at all points between the two, even when they are in the same denomination. In those who call themselves "traditionalists," there are wide ranges of views; yet, they all say they are orthodox and traditionalist! Orthodox is a big blanket, and growing bigger all the time. Even so, few if any who are orthodox and traditionalist believe the same, and there is a world of difference in what is orthodox in the Protestants churches. Many who say they are orthodox do not believe in once saved always saved, infant baptism, Augustine's view on predestination, the millennium, and countless other differences in what is traditional and orthodox. Although they cannot agree among themselves over what is traditional, they attack all who do not believe in one of their many versions of "Hell" for not being orthodox or traditional, nonetheless accept many as being orthodox who believes in an entirely different "Hell," and even accept Premillennial, which has many who do not believe in any version of Hell, or believe that Hell will be on this earth, and will last for only a short time.

**(11) PROTESTANT PREMILLENNIAL VERSIONS OF HELL:** From all the information I can find there are many more Protestants who believe in some form of Premillennial teaching than not. Premillennial variations found in the Protestants churches are pre-tribulation, mid-tribulation, post-tribulation, partial-rapture, many mini-raptures, already past rapture, the tribulation period, historic Premillennial, Post Millennialist, Dispensationalist, and many more. Many of the Premillennial versions of



Hell are somewhat similar to either the Seventh-Day Advent Version of Hell, or the Church of God Version of Hell. Many of the Premillennial versions of Hell are far from being what is thought of as being orthodox, but most all Premillennialists are thought of as being Protestant, orthodox and traditional.

### **Unorthodox In Orthodox Churches**

It may come as a surprise to many that **there may be more who say that are orthodox Protestants who do not believe Hell to be eternal torment than there are orthodox Protestants who do believe Hell to be an actual real place of eternal torment.** When US New says 53 percent of Americans believes Hell to be only mental anguish, many of that 53 percent are orthodox Protestant, and this 53 percent is in addition to the many Protestant Premillennialists who do not believe Hell to be a place of eternal torment. When some say that is only Jehovah's Witnesses teaching, they seem to be blind to the fact that this is the teaching of by many of the orthodox Protestants, and the number of orthodox Protestants that do not believe in the Jonathan Edwards or Calvin versions of Hell is now greater then the number that do. Much of what is accepted as orthodox today would have been called heresy 200 years ago by most all Protestant Churches. It came as a surprise to me, as I am sure it will be to many, that many orthodox Protestants believe none of the saved will go to Heaven, but will live on this earth for eternity. Many Protestant Premillennialists believe this. It may also come as a surprise to many that those who say they are orthodox Protestant, but do not believe Christ to be God, but is a created being that did not exist before His birth. Many believe Him to be a chosen one by God, and that He is now in Heaven, but will come back to earth, set up the kingdom of God in Jerusalem, and will rule the kingdom, which will always be on this earth. It seems to be OK to not believe in Christ as being equal with God, but not OK not to believe God to be crueller than any other being and will torment the souls that were in the lost forever.

**(12) REALIZED ESCHATOLOGY - THE A. D. 70 VERSION OF HELL:** I have found it difficult to pen down just what they believe. This Protestant version of Hell seem to be that death is the end of those who are not faithful, and for unbelievers there will never be a resurrection. The second coming of Jesus was in A. D. 70, the resurrection day was also in A. D. 70 when the Old Testament Saints where resurrected, there is no Judgment Day to come, no day that the earth will end. All the Old Testament faithful was resurrected in A. D. 70, which they believe to have been the second coming of Christ, and after A. D. 70 the Judgment Day of each person is the day of their death, (1) the death of the lost is their end, they will never to be resurrected, (2) at the moment of their death all believers are resurrected to eternal life. This seems to be their general teaching, but I am sure that are many variations within Realized Eschatology.

**(13) THE "SUDDEN REALIZATION" VERSION OF HELL:** A Protestant version that is somewhat like the Roman Catholic Purgatory. When the lost stand before God at the judgment they will suddenly realize how good God is and will repent. Eventually, some say in a short time, other a longer time, they will be admitted into Heaven, but they may not have all the privileges of Heaven that those that obeyed Christ will have. This is just another attempt to make God less evil then most orthodox Protestant versions of Hell makes Him; no passage says a person can repent after death.

**(14) REPHAIM VERSION OF HELL - ONE OF THE PROTESTANT VERSIONS OF HELL:** A version of Hell that is Protestant, but in no way can it be

called orthodox or traditional although most who believe it call themselves both orthodox and traditional. God, angels, and man (after death) are disembodied energy being capable of thought and speech without the need of a body. This version of Hell is Protestant; as far as I have been able to find no one teaches it but those who are called orthodox Protestants, but it cannot be called traditional or orthodox. Rephaim is in the Hebrew Old Testament eight times, and is translated “dead” seven times, and “deceased” one time in the King James Version; it is defined in some Lexicons as "departed spirits," "shades," "shadows," "ghosts," "name of the dead in sheol."

### **THREE OF THE EIGHT ARE IN ISAIAH**

#### **This is a book of many symbols, much like Revelation**

(1) Isaiah 14:9-11 *"Sheol from beneath is moved for you to meet you at your coming: it rises up the **dead** (Rephaim) for you, even all the chief ones of the earth; it has raised up from their thrones all the kings of the nations. All they shall answer and say unto you, Have you also become weak as we: have you become like unto us? Your pomp is brought down to Sheol, and the noise of your viols: the worm is spread under you, and worms cover you."* This is a description of the fall of Babylon, and it has nothing to do with an immortal something that was in a person, but after the person's death whatever "it" is "it" is, sheol *"rises up the dead"* it. In this metaphor the past dead nations, nations that no longer existed were surprised to see a nation as strong as Babylon joining them. If the souls of the dead were alive, why would the dead in sheol that are not dead be surprised to see another soul after it had left the person it was in join them when the souls that were in all that die would join them? It would make no sense if they were surprised to see more souls joining them. Even the trees join in with the dead nations and talk (14:8). Only in a metaphor can past nations that are dead, that no longer exist, and trees talk (Isaiah 14:8).

In this passage Rephaim (one word) is translated:

- *"The dead"* (two words) in both the King James and the New King James.
- *"The spirits of the dead"* (five words from one word) in the New American Standard even though "ruach" (spirit) is not in the Hebrew they added it. There is no way to get "spirit" from "rephaim," but the translators needed to put immortal spirits in the Bible and added it.
- *"The spirits of the departed"* (five words from one word) in the New International Version. It also added spirits even though spirits is not in the Hebrew.
- *"The ancient dead"* (three words from one word) in the Revised English Bible even though there is not a word in the Hebrew in this passage that is even remotely kin to "ancient."

(2) Isaiah 26:14 *"They (the nations) are **dead** (Rephaim), they shall not live; they are deceased, they shall not rise; therefore have you visited and destroyed them, and made all remembrance of them to perish."* This is about nations that did not remember God. It has nothing to do with an *"immaterial, invisible part of man"* after death. It is hard to believe this passage is used to prove that a person has an immortal immaterial, invisible part of a person, for if it were speaking of this something in a person, then that something is dead, deceased, shall not rise (no resurrection), and all remembrance of that something in a person has been made to perish. If this were an immortal soul, it would be nothing like the immoral soul of today's theology, it would teach there is no life or resurrection

after death for the immortal soul, but this passage is used anyway to prove that the soul is alive after death in either Heaven or Hell.

(3) Isaiah 26:19 *"Your dead shall live; my dead bodies shall arise. Awake and sing, you that dwell in the dust; for your dew is as the dew of herbs, and the earth shall cast forth the **dead** (Rephaim)."* Isaiah is speaking of the nation of Israel that was dead, they were slaves in bondage to another nation because they had left God, now they had repented and were being restored as a nation. He is not speaking of the resurrection of any individuals Jews.

- In Isaiah 26:14, which is speaking of nations, the nations are dead and shall not rise (shall not be restored).
- In Isaiah 26:19, which is speaking of Isaiah, it shall live, shall arise (shall be restored).
  - If these were speaking of individuals, as Robert Morey in "Death and The Afterlife," on page 79 says he would have these individuals both *"shall not rise"* and *"shall rise."*

Note: the King James Version in both Isaiah 14:9; 26:14 and 26:19 changed the Hebrew proper name, Rephaim, to *"the dead,"* the New American standard changed it to *"the spirits of the dead"* in 14:9, and *"departed spirits"* in 26:14 and 26:19. Why did they change what God said; the Hebrew does not say *"the dead," "spirits of the dead"* or *"departed spirits"*; neither one is a proper noun, Rephaim is a proper noun, and there is no authority for changing it. Isaiah 26:19 is speaking of the nation of Isaiah, not of departed spirits. The New International Version says "spirits of the departed" 14:9 when neither "spirit" nor "departed" is in the Hebrew. Is not this just another attempt of the translators to change God's word to put their view into the Bible, even if they had to change the proper noun God used into some thing other than a proper noun?

#### **FIVE OF THE EIGHT ARE IN THE POETICAL BOOKS**

1. Job 26:5-6 *"They that are **deceased** (rephaim) tremble beneath the waters and the inhabitants thereof. Sheol is naked before God, and Abaddon ("Destruction" New International Version) has no covering."*
2. Psalm 88:10-12 *"Will you show wonders to the **dead** (rephaim)? Shall they that are deceased arise and praise you? Shall your loving kindness be declared in the grave? Or your faithfulness in destruction?"*
3. Proverbs 2:18-19 *"For her ("adulteress" New American Standard Version) house sinks down to death, and her tracks lead to the **dead**; (rephaim) none who go to her return again, neither do they reach the paths of life."*
4. Proverbs 9:18-19 *"But he knows not that the **dead** (rephaim) are there; that her (the foolish woman or adulteress) guests are in the depths of Sheol."*
5. Proverbs 21:16 *"The man that wandered out of the way of understanding shall rest in the assembly of the **dead** (rephaim)."*

All five refer to the lost, and speak of their death, deceased, destruction, dead, not ever attaining unto the paths of life again, resting with the dead. The dead are simply spoken of as being dead; nothing is said about a soul being alive after the death of the person. **There is nothing in any of the five passages above that say anything about a soul being alive in Heaven, Hell, or Abraham's bosom at any time, not before or after the judgment; they are an undeniable contradiction to the orthodox doctrine of being alive and going to Heaven or Hell at death.**



**What do many believe?** These passages are used to prove all the dead; both the good and the evil souls are **now** "*Rephaim*." Many who believe the souls that were in the dead go immediately to Heaven or Hell at death use it although it would make the soul not be in Heaven or Hell where they believe the immaterial, invisible something that is now in a person will be after the person is dead.

1. The Protestant version is that the dead are now alive in Heaven or Hell.
2. The after judgment version is that the dead are now alive in hades with some on the good side of hades and some on the bad side, but both use these passages and have the dead being in four places simultaneously, (1) Abraham's bosom, (2) Heaven, (3) Hell, (4) *Rephaim*.
3. The *Rephaim* version is that the souls of both the good and the bad are together and exist only as shades or shadows not in Heaven or Hell. Yet, those who believe the Protestant version or the newer after judgment version of Hell sometimes use "*Rephaim*" to prove "Hell" even though it would put all the souls that were in the dead together, and not where they believe these souls to be, **and definitely nothing like the immortal soul of today's theology**. The attack on Hell that is coming from many in most all churches is forcing them to take views not many Christians believe. The *Rephaim* version seems to be used only by those who are trying to prove a person has an immortal soul, but are hard pushed to find any passage to prove it.

Which way do they go? "*Rephaim*" is used by Protestants in a way that does not agree with what they believe and teach; Protestants believe that the saved will be in their eternal home with Christ in Heaven at death, but step away from this belief and say at death both the saved and unsaved are together, and have only a weak shadowy existence, and will have this shadowy existence unto the resurrection. Even if we did grant that *Rephaim* is the "*immaterial, invisible part of man*" after death, it would contradict their beliefs about the "soul" being in Heaven or Hell. It makes all the dead be "shades" "shadows." Anyway you look at it, the eight times *Rephaim* is used it refutes the belief of going to Heaven at death and does to support it. Are they so desperately in need of proof that a person has an immaterial, invisible something in them that can never die that they reach for anything, even if it is far from what they believe and want to find?

Robert Morey, an orthodox Protestant, has written one of the most accepted and used books in defense of the doctrine of Hell that has come out in recent years. In his book he makes an argument for Hell which I think shows just how desperate he is for any kind of proof. In "Death And The Afterlife," On page 79 he said from the meaning of *Rephaim*, when the body dies, man enters a new kind of existence. He then will exist as a spirit creature, and experiences what angels and other spirits experience. Just as angels are disincarnate energy beings and are composed only of mind or mental energy, and are capable of thought and speech without the need of a body, when man dies, he becomes a disembodied energy being, and is capable of thought and speech without the need of a body. This is nothing more than a desperate attempt to prove that the "*immaterial, invisible part of man*" has some kind of life somewhere before and without the resurrection. **Not a one of the eight passages where *Rephaim* is used says anything about a *Rephaim* being like God and angels. Not one of the eight, or any passage in the Bible says God and angels are nothing but thoughts.** He must have made that up out of thin air and hoped you would not see it is not in any of the eight passages. I

wonder if he sees how low he is making God if God were like the Rephaim in the eight passages? That he is making God be only "shades," "shadows," "ghosts," "name of the dead in sheol."

1. **He has made God, angels, and the souls that are in mankind be nothing more than "energy beings" after the judgment to be nothing more than mental thoughts with no substance.** Although he did not mention God, he has reduced God to being nothing more than thoughts, an "energy being." Morey's God has no body, no substance of any kind; therefore, Morey's Heaven can exist only in the mind of God; it cannot be a real place; he must some how make God, angels, and souls all have the same thoughts, or the Heaven of each being would be an entirely different Heaven if their thoughts were not exactly the same thoughts. Any being, angels, demons, saved souls, and lost souls would each make their own Heaven or Hell in their thoughts, if any one being had different thoughts they would have a different Heaven or Hell.
2. **He has made God weak.** Morey has made souls and angels be disembodied energy being capable of thought and speech without the need of body and they are described as *"Are you also become weak as we: have you become like unto us?" "God is a Spirit"* (John 4:24); Morey has spirits without bodies described as weak and being nothing more than mental thoughts, which according to him would include God being described as weak, and being nothing more than mental thoughts. Is his God just weak mental thoughts, is that what your God is like?
3. **He has made the only difference in a soul after the death of the person and God to be only a difference in intelligence.** He says both are nothing but mind.  
Thomas Jefferson in a letter to John Adams in 1820 said, "To say that God, angels, and the human soul, are immaterial, is to say they are nothing. At what age of the church the heresy of immaterialism crept in, I do not know; but a heresy is certainly is—Jesus taught nothing of it."
4. **He has made God limited.** According to Morey, God does not have any substance. He is only thoughts without a body. This has not entered the mind of most who believe a person now has an immortal spirit in him, and if it did most would reject it, but their belief that an immortal spirit is now in a person means a soul, God, and all heavenly being are nothing more than thoughts without a body. Robert Morey and others who try to prove a person now has an immortal spirit him has been pushed into this belief. The belief that a person has a dual nature dictates what they can believe about the nature of God. They believe the immortal spirit that is now in a person cannot now be seen for it has no substance; therefore, because God is spirit, then He can have no substance; He can be only a mind with no body.
5. He has developed Plato's doctrine that the body is a prison to the soul, which is set free by the death of the body, far beyond what Plato ever did. To put the soul (an "energy being" "mind") back in a body at the resurrection would be to put it back in a prison.
6. Also, Morey's Hell could only be mental anguish. There would be no body to torment. He has made it impossible for Hell to be anything more than mental pain. Only something in the mind of souls that are nothing but mind. None of the other "orthodox Protestant" version of Hell could be possible; therefore, what most Protestants have believed for centuries was wrong.

7. He has made Paul not know what he was talking about when he said, *"It is sown a natural body; it is raised a spiritual body...there is also a spiritual **body**"* (1 Corinthians 15:44). He cannot believe in the resurrection. How could he when he has made a person's soul after death be composed only of "mind," just as he says the angels and God now are composed only of mind? There could not be a mortal that *"must put on immortality"* (1 Corinthians 15:54), for his "energy being" is now just as immortal as it will always be, and even before the death of the person it is now like God and angels now are. There cannot be a resurrection of any kind of body, not one in the image of Adam, or in the image of Christ. Not the earthly body, or the new spiritual body for there will be no body, nothing but "mind." There cannot be a resurrection of the "mind or mental energy," for at death this "mind or mental energy" will be just as it will always be; therefore, **there could not be any kind of resurrection.**

**What is their no substance soul and Heaven?** What could it be if it has no substance? God made all things out of nothing. If the soul has no substance while it is in a person, it will still be nothing after it leaves the person. Are they saying God made nothing out of nothing? And this God who made nothing out of nothing is Himself nothing.

### **HEAVEN IS A REAL PLACE**

*"For Christ did not enter **a holy place** made with hands, **a mere copy of the true one**, but into **heaven itself**, now to appear in the presence of God for us"* (Hebrews 9:24; 8:5). The holy place made with hands was a real place that was a copy of the true holy place; a real place could not be a copy of something that did not exist, which was only a thought in the mind that has no substance. Christ entered "INTO HEAVEN ITSELF." If Christ and God were only thoughts with no substance, and Heaven was only something in their minds, it would mean a thought entered into the thoughts that were only in the mind of the thought. He makes this and many other passages to be pure nonsense. *"In My Father's house are many dwelling places; if it were not so, I would have told **you**; for I go to prepare a place for **you**"* (John 14:2-3). Thoughts do not have a house with dwelling places; Christ went to prepare a place for "**you**" not for thoughts only. **Heaven is a real place with real dwelling places for a real "you."** You cannot prepare a place in a place that is not a place.

NOTE: I have tried to give the views of the majority in each in the above Protestants versions of Hell. In each of them, there are many individuals and/or small groups who believe in a variation of that believed by the majority.

Summary: Protestants that believe in Hell are contradictory as to what and where Hell will be.

- Some believe Hell to be a lake of fire and brimstone.
- Some believe Hell will be banishment from the presence of God.
- Some believe Hell to be only mental anguish.
- Some believe God will not only be doing the tormenting, but He will have great pleasure in it.

- Some believe God will give most of mankind to Satan to torment, as he wants to.
- Many believe a version of Hell that makes God be infinite cruel by creating million foreknowing He was creating them with no chance to not be in Hell.
- Some believe many other contradictory versions of Hell.

### **EIGHT OTHER VERSIONS OF HELL**

**(1) Church of Christ, Christian Church: The Abraham's bosom, or the after judgment Hell, A newer version of Hell:** This version is based almost entirely on an interpretation of Luke 16:19-31 (see chapter eight, part one). Most members of the church of Christ, the Christian Church and some Protestants believe it although it is not generally accepted as being orthodox or traditional Protestant. In this version all who do not obey Christ will go to Hell, but not unto after the coming of Christ and the judgment; and no one goes to Heaven before the judgment (no instant rapture). According to this version, at death all are taken to an intermediate holding place where the lost are tormented, and the saved are rewarded in a place sometimes called "Abraham's bosom." Instead of all being in Heaven and Hell unto the second coming of Christ, all are either on the good or on the bad side of hades, and Christ will take them out of hades at His coming, and judge them a second time to see whether He made a mistake the first time and put them on the wrong side of hades. A baby who has not come to the age of accountability is not lost and will go to the good side of hades. After the judgment God will personally do the tormenting of all the souls of the lost for eternity, and Satan and his angels and all the bodiless souls will be tormented together.

This view has two places where God is going to torture the lost; (1) in one side of hades that is a temporary place of torture, and will last only unto the second coming of Christ, (2) and "Hell" which will be a permanent place where God will torture most of mankind without end. No one's deathless soul is now in Heaven or Hell and it will not be unto after the resurrection and judgment. This is the view was I taught from the time I became a Christian, and I believed it a long time. I have many books and tracts in which well-known preachers and teachers, such as H. Leo Boles, E. M. Zerr, B. W. Johnson, and many others who teach this view; but lately it seems to be dying out in the church, and is being replaced by going immediately to Heaven or Hell at death without the Resurrection or Judgment, particularly at funerals where preachers often say the bodiless soul that were in the dead person is now in Heaven. Most all think of and speak of their loved ones as now being in Heaven with Jesus, not in Abraham's bosom unto the judgment.

"When a 'faithful' member dies, he or she does not 'go' to heaven or hell. The person is not 'sentenced' by Christ to heaven or hell until 'Judgment Day'...There will be a resurrection of both the righteous and the unrighteous (Acts 24:15)."

[http://bible-the-real-world.awardspace.com/html/church\\_of\\_christ.html](http://bible-the-real-world.awardspace.com/html/church_of_christ.html)

**(2) Edward Fudge version: The short Hell, God will torment the lost in Hell for a short time, then Hell will end:** He uses the name Hell as if it was a Bible name, but thinks it will last for only a limited time, and will end with the total destruction of the souls in it. He may have Hell and the wrath and fury of God at the judgment confused (1982 edition). Roger Dickson believes the duration of Hell will fit the crime, and then will end. It will be short for some souls, and longer for other. He says, "After the stripes have been given, then the destruction occurs, for which there is no reverse" page 162ff, "Life, Death, And Beyond." Is he renaming the Judgment Day, and calling it "Hell?" If I understand him right, he thinks the lost will go to Hell, but the not so bad will not be

tormented as long as the very bad. After the "punishment matches the crime" he says they will then be destroyed (page 163). (1) *"Shall be beaten with many stripes"* (Luke 12:47). This is used to prove there will be an end after the stripes. He seem to think, *"Beaten with few stripes"* could not be as long as *"beaten with many stripes;"* therefore, could not take forever; some would be tormented longer than others, but the torment will end with death for all. (2) This short Hell is different from the Church of God short Hell in that it will not be on this earth, and there will be no second chance, it will end with death from which there will be no resurrection.

F. LaGard Smith, a teacher of Bible at Lipscomb University in his book, "After Life, A Glimpse of Eternity Beyond Death's Door," also teaches there is a Hell, but a Hell that will end, no one will be tormented without end. He says on page 191 that sooner or later there is a point that the punishment in Hell will end.

*"Beaten with few stripes"* is in a parable addressed to those of that day, not an actual event after the resurrection and Judgment Day of God beating with a whip (Luke 12:41; 12:49-53). In the Law of Moses God limited *"many stripes"* to 40 lashes, never more than 40 (Deuteronomy 25:3; Luke 12:47; Acts 16:23; 2 Corinthians 11:24). According to him the stripes will end, but with many the *"many stripes,"* which was no more then 40 is used by those that believe Hell is endless torment to prove that God will forever give not only the 40, but stripes without end, an uncountable number of stripes to those in Hell. In the parable in Luke 12:47-48 both the *"beaten with few strips"* and the *"beaten with many stripes"* are changed to "beaten with an endless uncountable number of blows given by God to a countless number at the same time He is burning them in the lake of fire; this change that puts the both the *"few stripes"* and the *"many stripes"* in Hell must be made to make the stripes go on being given by God for eternity and never stop, for if the *"few stripes"* were not an endless number and God ever stopped His beating, Hell would have ended. If there were a Hell that had no end, after the *"few stripes"* reached a number that no man could count, the stripes would have just begin. All the details that make up any of the parables cannot be taken literally. The point to parables is that they all teach a lesson. The lesson to this parable is that to whoever much is given much will be required, we are to use whatever ability we have whether much of little. More is required in this lifetime of the person that has much ability than of the person that has little ability, but even the person that has little ability must use what he or she has. Nothing is taught in this parable about any punishment after the judgment.

Death and only death is the wages of sin; there is no passage in the Bible that says a bodiless soul will be in "Hell" for a short time any more than there is one that says anyone will be in a "Hell" that has no end. The lake of fire is not a real literal lake of fire, it is a symbol picture of death, any living being cast into a lake of fire would be dead almost instantly. John clearly said the lake of fire *"is the second death"* (Revelation 20:8), not a short time for some but longer of others. Their punishment is not being tormented by God unto they have paid for their sins and then the torment will end; their punishment is an eternal punishment, an eternal death (Matthew 25:46). A place called "Hell" does not exist in the Bible, not a short Hell, or an eternal Hell.

For those that believe in an endless Hell, *"few stripes"* presents a problem. As Robert A. Taylor said in "Rescue From Death," if a persons that receives the *"few stripes"* received but one stripe a year, after a trillion years that person would have received a trillion stripes with trillions of years without end yet to come. There is no way that a

countless number of trillions could be call a “*few stripes.*” “The traditional view of Hell is fundamentally a nightmare beyond comprehension,” “Rescue From Death,” page 99.

This short Hell were God will torment for a while and then the lost will pay the wages of sin, death, is taught by Timothy J. Barnett in “Endless Hell Ended,” 1987, and by many others as a way to make God be less evil then many of the orthodox Protestant versions of Hell.

#### FATE OF THE UNSAVED

- According to the Bible
  - Death – Resurrection – Judgment – Second death
- According to Fudge
  - Death – Resurrection – Judgment – Hell – Second death

During the Judgment there most likely will be fear and regret when the lost see what they have lost by not being a Christian. Fudge then adds a place between the Judgment and the second death that is not in the Bible, names it “Hell” and says God will torment the lost, some with more torment, some with less torment before the second death.

#### DEATH, PAIN, AND TORMENT

Natural death can be painless or with much pain. A person can die in their sleep with no pain, or suffer for years and die slowly.

Violent death is the same. It can be quick and painless or death can come slowly with much pain. Two persons killed with a boom; one is blown to bits instantly with no time for pain, the other one is hurt badly and takes hours or even days to die with much pain.

After the judgment, death, not torment, is the punishment, the black darkness of endless nothing. There is nothing said about some dying will little pain and other dying with much suffering. Not anything about God tormenting any after their resurrection and before their second death, not for a short time or a longer time, nothing about tormenting them in a place called Hell or any other place.

**(3) Christadelphians version of Hell:** This version says those who never heard the Gospel will never be raised. Death is the end of them. Only those who heard the Gospel will be raised at the second coming of Christ, and judged to see whether they were faithful. The faithful will have eternal life on Earth, which will be restored to be like Eden before Adam sinned. The unfaithful of those who heard the Gospel, and were raised will be annihilated by the second death.

**(4) Church of God version of Hell (and others):** According to this version both Heaven and Hell will be on this earth. After the resurrection of earthly bodies on this restored earth, all will be given a second chance to accept Christ. Most will, but the few who will not accept Christ will suffer the second death. Their torment will end in death from which there will never be a resurrection. The saved will be raised and live on the earth restored to be the way it was before Adam sinned, with a body like Adam before he was put out of the garden. No one will ever be in Heaven. I have not been able to find how they think Adam's body was different before he was put out of the garden than it was after. Many Premillennialists who are in most Protestant churches believe this version of Hell or one that is very similar to it.

**(5) Universalist version of Hell, The "age lasting" Hell:** This Hell will last for only an age; then all will be saved. Universalist calls it a time of "attitude adjustments," or "age-during correction." They do not see it as God torturing people in a literal lake or

anything like that, they see it as simply a time when God will be correcting or teaching them further unto they are fit for His kingdom. All, even the most evil, will eventually end up in Heaven. See chapter nine, “Universalist – The ‘Age Lasting’ Hell.”

**(6) Seventh Day Advent version of Hell:** They believe that at the second coming of Christ the unrighteous will be kill, the righteous will be taken back to Heaven for a 1,000 years. During the 1,000 years only Satan and his angels will inhabit the earth. At the end of the 1,000 years Christ will return to earth with the saved, and the unrighteous will be raised for judgment. Satan gathers his angels, and will the help of the resurrected unrighteous attempt to interfere with the judgment, they will be destroyed in a military battle that will take place outside of Jerusalem in the same way Sodom was turned into ashes; they will never be in Hell. The judgment and destruction of the lost will take place on this earth. Their Hell will be on this earth and will last only unto those in it are burned too ashes, the second death. The saved will live forever with earthly bodies on a restored earth on which there will be no evil. They believe they will live forever on all this earth, not just in Jerusalem, much as we now do, they will build houses, plant crops, and meet together each Sabbath Day. No one will be in Heaven after the 1,000 years.

Just as with the Church of God version of Hell, many Premillennialists who are in most Protestant churches also believe this version of Hell, or one that is very near the same. The number of those who are called Protestant but do not believe any of the orthodox Protestant versions of Hell is large and growing.

**(7) Latter-day Saints version of Hell (Mormons):** They believe there will be three Kingdoms, Celestial, Terrestrial, and Telestial Kingdoms. According to Mormons all spirit were once in Heaven, some spirits were judged worthily to come to earth where they will end up in three states of “glory.” The highest, the Celestial Kingdoms will always live on this earth with cities, houses, animals, can have children and all things much as we now have. The two lower Kingdoms, the Terrestrial and Telestial Kingdoms will not be on this earth, but they do not seem to know or do not tell outsiders just where they will be, but they will not in Heaven where they were before they came to earth or on earth; those in these two Kingdoms will not be allowed to have children. All will be raised from the dead except for the sons of perdition, the once faithful Mormons, but become apostates and left the Mormon Church; I have not been able to find if they yet have any revelation about what will be their fate other then they will have no glory. Those who are not Mormons can go no higher then the lower Telestial Kingdom, which seems to be a very low state of glory; they will not be able to be on this earth, not able to have children, and will not be in Heaven were they were at one time before they came to earth.

The Latter-day Saints Millennium is unlike any other version of the Millennium. They have both mortals and resurrected immortal living together on earth having children, building houses, and doing most all things that normal people do now.

**(8) The grave is Hell version (Jehovah’s Witnesses)**

- Jehovah’s Witness do not believe in the resurrection of the lost; when the lost die, they are dead forever.
- Jehovah’s Witness do not believe the lost will be judged after they are resurrected.
- Jehovah’s Witness do not believe there will be a second death for the lost. The first death is the total end of them and they will never be resurrected.

- Jehovah's Witness believe the grave is Hell, and all go to it at death. There is no knowledge or torment in this Hell, just sleep or death. Some from many different groups believe this version of Hell. They get support mostly from the older translations like the King James Version, and most who believe it think the newer translations that translate only Gehenna into Hell are wrong. They believe Gehenna is a trash dump, not Hell. The Hell they believe in is going on now with all the dead in it, both the good and the bad are asleep in the grave, and will wake up at the Resurrection. All are unconscious, and there is no torment of the wicked or reward of the righteous in "Hell" where all the dead, both the good and the bad now are. In this version, Hell will end at the resurrection, and there will be no Hell after the resurrection and judgment. Hell is the "common grave of mankind" where all people go when they die and they are not conscious there. This version is nothing more than a renaming of sheol and hades. In today's English Hell has come to mean a place of eternal torment after death, and to translate hades into Hell is an untrue translation. The grave is Hell was not the intentions of the translators who first put the word "Hell" into the Bible, the grave is Hell is not the way it would have been understood by English speaking people when it was first used by the translators or the way it is understood today by most that are not Jehovah's Witnesses.
- Jehovah's Witness believe that only 144,000 chosen people will ever enter Heaven and they will be changed to a spiritual body to live in Heaven where they will forever live and help Jesus govern the church that will forever be on this earth. At the end of the Millennium all that has not been made perfect during the Millennium, or did not just cease to exist at death will be destroyed in Gehenna. All but the 144,000 that have been made perfect will live forever on this restored earth.

A. B. Robinson, September 1996 (A Jehovah's Witnesses): "We do not have the word 'hell' in the NWT. We translate gehenna as gehenna, hades as hades and sheol as sheol. By doing this we can get the true import of these words. Gehenna is a garbage dump and sheol and hades often refer to the grave. We believe everyone who dies goes to 'hell' or sheol (hades). The dead are unconscious, asleep if you will (Ecc 9:5,19 and 1 Thes 4:13-16) and will remain such until they are resurrected. We also believe that 'hell' will be emptied, as is clearly stated in Rev 20:13. The persons who were in hell, both the righteous and the unrighteous (Acts 24:15) will be resurrected and judged. Those who are deserving of it will then be thrown into the lake of fire, the second death (Rev 20:14, 15)."

Brian Holt in an e-mail to me said, "JW's do not have the word 'hell' in the NWT," then he said in the e-mail that everyone who dies goes to Hell. If Hell is not in their Bible, how do they know all the dead are now in Hell?

#### “THAT IS WHAT JEHOVAH’S WITNESSES TEACH”

I have been told that what I believe "is what Jehovah's Witnesses have been teaching for years." One person said to me, "You believe the same thing Jehovah's Witnesses believe. Why don't you join them and leave us alone?"

Clark Pinnock said, "**It seems that a new criterion of truth has been discovered which says that if Adventists or liberals hold any view, that view must be wrong.** Apparently a truth claim can be decided by its association and does not need to be tested by public criteria in open debate. Such an argument, though useless in intelligent discussion, can be effective with the ignorant who are fooled by such rhetoric." Four Views on Hell, page 161.

The problem with this is (1) I do not believe as they do that the grave is Hell. (2) That most all denominations, whether they are occults, liberals, or whatever, teach many



things that the Bible teaches, and many that the Bible does not teach. Nothing is right or wrong because a denomination teaches it, not even right or wrong if the Jehovah's Witnesses denomination teaches it. It is right if the Bible teaches it, or wrong if the Bible does not teach it. Catholic, Baptist, Jehovah's Witnesses, Church of God, and all others each teach many things that the Bible teaches, and each one teaches many things that the Bible does not teach. Anything is right if the Bible teaches it even if the Jehovah's Witnesses teach it, and wrong if the Bible does not teach it. **Jehovah's Witnesses teach adultery is a sin; is it wrong to teach that adultery is a sin because Jehovah's Witnesses teach it to be?** To say, "That is what the Jehovah's Witnesses teach," is said for the same reason the Baptist says, "That is water salvation," or "That is Campbellism." **Their real problem is not that one of the occults teach it, but that they have no other answer, and know that they can turn many off just by saying, "That is what Jehovah's Witnesses teach," just as the Baptist did with, "That is water salvation."** They could not show that a person can be saved without baptism; therefore, they would say, "You believe in water salvation" for they know this would make others prejudice and not believe the Bible. Now the same thing is being done to anyone who does not believe in Hell by saying, "You are nothing but a Jehovah's Witnesses," **even though what I believe is far from what the Jehovah's Witnesses teach,** they believe there is a Hell, but it is going on now, and I do not believe the Bible says anything about any kind of Hell; not one that is going on now, or one that will be at any time after death.

The Moslem religion believes in eternal torment; can we say it is wrong because those who believe in eternal torment believe something the Moslems teach? No, it is wrong because the Bible does not teach it.

Why? What is the real reason they say that is Jehovah's Witnesses teaching? I think one reason is that they just do not want to deal with it. Do not want to take the time. Another reason is the same reason the Baptist call us "Campbellism" and say, "You believe in water salvation." The truth is that if Jehovah's Witnesses did believe as I do (they do not, but even if they did) as long as the Bible teaches it, I would not care if it were what they believed, but would say that it is great that they believe the Bible on that point, and would wish that they believed the Bible on all points. If you made two lists, one a list of things any denomination believes that is not in the Bible, and a list of things it believes that is in the Bible, both lists would be long. The persons who say "That is Jehovah's Witnesses teaching" believes many of the same things that would be on the list of things the Jehovah's Witnesses believes.

Some of the many things Jehovah's Witnesses teach that I do not believe.

1. Jesus was not the Son of God.
2. The Millennium.
3. Only 144,000 will go to Heaven.
4. All the rest of the saved will live forever on this earth for all eternity.
5. They don't believe in blood transfusions.
6. Hell is the grave and all the dead are now in Hell. Unfortunately, it is not true that they do not believe in Hell, but believe in a Hell that is now going on. The Hell they believe in is not the God Slandering Hell that many Protostend believe in, but they do believe in Hell, just not one of the many orthodox Protestant versions of Hell although many Premillennialists who are called orthodox Protestants believe as they do, that Hell is the grave.

Unto the resurrection death is death, not any kind of life, or any kind of Hell anyplace.

**If, "That is what Jehovah's Witnesses believes" makes anything wrong, it is such a broad argument that there is nothing in the Bible that is not destroyed by it, for there is no Bible teaching that is not believed by many false religions.**

**Probable origin of this version of Hell:** Sheol is translated Hell in the King James Version thirty-one times, and grave thirty-one times. It puts all in Hell or the grave together, both the good and the bad, and the grave is a place that those in it know nothing where they will be only unto the resurrection. If one believes the mistranslation of the King James Version, then he or she must believe the grave is Hell version of Hell for it is clearly taught in the Old Testament of the King James Version. The Jehovah's Witnesses and others who believe this version have all the proof they need in the mistranslations in the King James Version even though it was not the intention of the translators to teach a Hell with both the saved and lost in it with no pain that will end at the resurrection; I cannot see anyway that a person that believes the King James Version just as it is would not be forced believe in the same Hell that the Jehovah's Witnesses believes in, their Hell is clearly taught in it.

### **THREE CATHOLIC VERSIONS OF HELL**

**(1) The Medieval Dark Age Medieval Catholic version of Hell:** The soul being immortal came from Greek philosophy, and was brought into the church by some of the church fathers, by Augustine more than most others. The doctrine of Hell came soon after the immortal soul doctrine along with Purgatory, the sale of indulgences, Limbo, worship of Mary and saints, Nether World, Holy Water, the rosary, forbidding Priest to marry, the crucifix, Monks and Nuns, forbidding eating of meat on Friday, and many other teaching; and was fully developed by the Dark Age Catholic Church before the Protestant Reformation. It seems to be that in the past they believed that only a very few, the very bad, will go to Hell, which they believe is a real place, at their death with no judgment, but most Catholics will go to Purgatory at death. A few of the very good will go to Heaven at their death with no judgment (an instant rapture). At death most Catholic will go immediately to Purgatory, which seems to be a limited version of Hell, unto they have suffered enough to pay for their own sins, or unto their love ones have paid all they can, then they go to Heaven. How long a person will be in Purgatory is sometimes taught to be a short time, and sometimes a very long time to those who have no one to win indulgences for them. It has brought enormous wealth to the rich Catholic Church from the poor who paid what little they had, and even done without food to help a loved one. The Catholic Purgatory gives no hope for heathens, heretics, or those not baptized. The Catholic Doctrine of Purgatory (1) makes a few go to Heaven or Hell at death, (2) makes all other Catholics get to Heaven as soon as they (not Christ) have suffered enough to pay for their own sins, (3) leaves no dead Christians that will not already be in Heaven to be resurrected at the second coming of Christ. They, not Christ, will have suffered unto they have paid in full for their own sins, or others have paid enough money to free them from Purgatory. An example of the Catholic teaching on the selling of indulgences that was common before the time of Martin Luther as given by John Tetzel, a Dominican monk who said as soon as the money is given, "The soul escapes from purgatory, and flies liberated to heaven," and "The Lord no longer reigns...He has given all power to the pope." As quoted by F. LaGard Smith of Lipscomb University in "After Life" pages 223-224.

S. M. Brown: "Medieval Europe," pages 348-259, 1932. "Hell is wide without measure, and deep and bottomless; full of incomparable fire, for no earthly fire may be compared therewith; full of stench intolerable for no living thing on earth might endure it; full of unutterable sorrow for no

mouth may, on account of the wretchedness or the woe thereof, give an account not tell of it. Yea, the darkness therein is so thick that one may grasp it, for the fire there gives no light, but blinds the eyes of them that are there with a smothering smoke, the worst of smokes. And nevertheless in that same black darkness they see black things as devils, that ever maul them and afflict and harass them with all kinds of tortures; and tailed drakes, horrible as devils, that devour them whole and spew them out afterwards before and behind. At other times they rent them in pieces and chew each gobbet of them, and they afterwards become whole again, such as they previously were, to under go again such bale with recovery, and full well they see themselves very horrible and dreadful; and to increase their pains the loathsome hell-worms, toads, and frogs that eat out their eyes and nostrils, and adders and water-frogs, not like those here, but hundred times more horrible, sneak in and out of the mouth, ears, eyes, navel ever yet thickest. There is shrieking in the flame and chattering of teeth in the snowy waters. Suddenly they flit upon the heat into the cold, nor ever do they know of there two which is worst for them, for each is intolerable...And this same wan hope is their greatest torment, that none have any hope of any recovery, but are sure of ever ill, to continue in woe, world without end, even in eternity. Each chokes the other, and each in another's torment, and each hates another and him self as the black devil; and as they loved them the more in this world, so the more shall they hate them there. And each curses another, and gnaws off the other's arms, ears, and nose also." As quoted by Robert L. Whitelaw in "The Last Resurrection," pages 61-62.

This is the "Hell" that was taught by the Catholic Church in the Dark Age, but there is nothing like it in the Bible. It came from pagan teaching.

### **(2) The new Catholic version of Hell:**

Pope John Paul II, "Hell is not a punishment imposed externally by God, but the condition resulting from attitudes and actions which people adopt in this life...So eternal damnation is not God's work but is actually our own doing...More than a physical place, Hell is the state of those who freely and definitively separate themselves from God, the source of all life and joy." In a statement made to his general audience, July 28, 1999. -- "The soul in the OT means not a part of man, but the whole man as a living being. Similarly in the NT, it signifies human life: the life of an individual conscious object (Matt 2:20; 6:25; Luke 12:22-23; 14:26; John 10:11,15, 17; John 13:37; Acts 27:10, 22; Phil 2:30; 1 Thess 2:8). Recent exegetes...have maintained that the NT does not teach the immortality of the soul in the Hellenistic sense of survival of an immortal principle after death" The New Catholic Encyclopedia, article "Soul, Human, Immortality of, In The Bible."

There are other high up Catholics who have made statements like this, but I see no use in adding more when you have this from the Pope who is the top person in the Catholic Church who's word is law. Maybe this is why two of their English Bible translations do not have the word "Hell" in them, and who knows how many other Catholics translations in other languages do not; however, because it has been the official doctrine for centuries, and the decrees of councils and Popes, the Roman Catholic Church cannot officially not teach Hell is a place of eternal torment without giving up completely their claim of infallibility. Protestantism has not made this claim of infallibility and many are giving Hell up.

**(3) The Nether World: is this a new (third) Catholic version of Hell?** More and more in today's writing, the Neither World is being used as if it is a Bible place that is clearly taught in the Bible; but I have yet to read where anyone told where it is in the Bible. Do both the Nether World and Abraham's bosom now exist at the same time? If so, how are they different? I have heard the same preachers who are not Catholic preach one at one time, and the other at another time. The American Heritage Dictionary says, "NETHER, Located beneath or below; lower or under: the nether regions of the earth."

**Where did this world that is located beneath or under this world come from?** It is not in the Bible; therefore, how could anyone know about it? It came from the Catholic Church. Like Hell, they mistranslated it from hades to get it into the Bible. **Both Hell and Nether World were mistranslated from the same word (hades) and both from the same passage.** See Acts 2:27

*"For you will not abandon my soul to the **Nether World** (hades)." New American Bible.*

*"Because thou wilt not leave my soul in **hell** (hades)," Douay-Rheims, also Psalm 16:10.*

Both are Catholic translations.

**The Nether World is a new name being put into the Bible by the same people (the Catholic Church) who put Hell into it, and it is being put into the Bible in the same way, by mistranslating the same word they mistranslated to put in Hell.**

1. First: hades was mistranslated Hell in Catholic translations.
2. Second: the same word in the same passage is now mistranslated Nether World in some Catholic translations.

**It worked for them the first time, so they tried it a second time.** When they need to prove Hell, they use one mistranslation; and when they need to prove the Nether World, they use another mistranslation of the same word in the same passage.

The Nether World and Universalist version of Hell, the "age lasting" Hell are very singular in many ways. Both have those who are not worthy of being in Heaven going through some kind of punishment, but will end up in Heaven. The main different is that Catholics believe some are too evil to ever be saved, and will always be tormented by God, but in the "age lasting" Hell taught by Universalists all will end up in Heaven.

**The Bible version of Hell:** There is no Bible version of Hell. Both the name Hell and the concept, a place where God will forever torment most of mankind was not known about in Old or New Testament times. Christ or Paul used neither the place nor the name. An eternal place of torment for souls was not known about by anyone unto long after the last page of the Bible.

### **WHICH HELL DO YOU BELIEVE IN?**

Most versions of Hell are based on the belief that:

- A person has some part of them self that is immortal from birth and is not subject to death.
- That death is not death, the dead are more alive then the living, *"You shall not surely die."*

(1). **Some believe Satan is the tormenter.** According to Jonathan Edwards and most Hell fire preachers, Satan will be doing the tormenting of all that are in Hell forever.

(2). **Some believe God is the tormenter.** Today many believe God will be doing the tormenting.

(3). Some denominations believe **Hell will be on this earth.**

(4). Others believe **Hell will only last for a while**; but will end with all that are in Hell being saved and going to Heaven.

(5). Some believe **Hell will only last unto the ones in it have paid for their sins**, and then they will be destroyed.

(6). Some believe **Hell is hot.**

(7). Some believe **Hell is cold.**

(8). Some believe **Hell is dark.**

(9). Some believe **Hell is Metaphorical**, it is not literally hot, cold or dark; we cannot understand what it is really like, and are given pictures to tell us how bad it is.

- (10). Some believe **Hell is only mental anguish.**
- (11). Some believe **Hell is a place of separation from God** without any torment from God.
- (12). Some believe **Hell is under the earth.**
- (13). Some believe **Hell is who knows where.** Most, but not all, now realize there is not a place of torment under the earth, and have moved it. Now who knows where they think Hell is, maybe somewhere out in space.
- (14). Some believe **Hell exists now**, and the lost dead are now being tormented in it.
- (15). Some believe **Hell will not exist unto after the judgment.**
- (16). Some believe **Hell now exists with the angels that sinned in it**, but no person will be in Hell unto after the judgment.
- (17). Some believe that although God is omnipresent (present in all places at the same time), nevertheless **God is not present in Hell.** They believe those in Hell are separated from God, they believe death is separation from God, and the second death is an eternal Hell, and at the same time they believe God is there tormenting them and gives them life. All life comes from God. He would have to be present and not present at the same time. The lost would be separated from God, and not separated from God simultaneously, for God would be wherever they were separated from Him if He were doing the tormenting.
- (18). If you go back in time 50 or 100 years, most all preachers were teaching "Hell" to be a place of "fire and brimstone." Today "fire and brimstone" is almost never used by preachers or in today's theology. Do you believe in the "Hell" of today or the "Hell" of 100 years ago?

**There is no majority view of Hell** today as there was in the Dark Age; no matter what view of Hell a person has that view is only a small part of those that believe in Hell, If a person believes one of the many versions of Hell, they must disbelieve all the other versions; therefore, every one that believes in Hell disagrees with the vast majority that believe in Hell. **Everyone that believes in Hell is in conflict with most others that also believe in Hell.** Believes in Hell are becoming more divided as time goes by; it is not possible for more than one version of Hell to be the truth; therefore, all the other versions, the majority that believe in Hell, are vain worship (Matthew 15:9).

#### **DIVISIONS OVER WHAT WILL BE IN HELL?**

What part of a person will be in Hell? It has been believed by most that it is a bodiless soul that will be in Heaven or Hell, but now many are saying no it is not the soul but a bodiless spirit that is the immortal part of a person, that the soul is not immortal; therefore, (1) some say it is a soul that is now in a person that will be in Heaven or Hell, (2) but others now say, not so, it is a spirit that will be in Heaven or Hell. Not only are there many divisions on what Hell is, there are also divisions on which immaterial, bodiless being will be in it. One of the many examples of those that have switched from believing the soul is immortal to the spirit being the immortal something in a person is Robert L. Kramer in 'Present Truth,' volume 10, page 12.

#### **DIVISIONS OVER WHEN A SOUL OR A SPIRIT WILL BE IN HELL?**

When will a soul or a spirit be in Hell? At death, or not unto after the resurrection and judgment? Many say Hell begins at death; many say no soul or spirit will be in Hell unto after the judgment; the strange thing is that there are many that say a soul at one time, then the same person will say a spirit at another time.

#### **HELL HAS BEEN MOVED**

Pagan philosophers mostly believed the soul was somewhere underground unto it was reincarnated. The first time Hell is used in the King James Version, it is on this earth, and is the punishment and scattering of the nation of Israel (Deuteronomy 32:22-26). "Though they dig into Hell" (Amos 9:27 King James Version). Most of the "church fathers," and the Church in the Dark Age, believed Hell was underground. In the Middle Age Hell was inside of the earth as it is in, "The Divine Comedy" by Dante Alighieri. Both the Catholic Church and the "Apostle's creed," which is used by many Protestants says Christ descended into Hell at His death; and preached to the souls in prison. Many encyclopedias and lexicons still say this.

The New Oxford American Dictionary says, "hell 'hel' a place regarded in various religions as a spiritual realm of evil and suffering, often traditionally depicted as a place of perpetual fire beneath the earth where the wicked are punished after death."

When I was a child, I heard repeatedly that the Devil (a name used by many to be a name of Satan) lived under the ground, and he would get you if you were bad. Now almost no one believes Hell is under ground; it has been moved to some dark place on the backside of some far away no one knows where place. Most who believed Hell to be under the earth also believed the earth will end at the coming of Christ; I have never heard them explain how the earth will be destroyed, but the Hell that is under ground (inside of the earth) will last forever. O-well, one is as good as another and one place is as good as any other for there is no Bible teaching for any of them, they are all man made and believing any of them is to believe a lie. *"But in vain do they worship me, teaching as their doctrines the precepts of men"* (Matthew 15:9). The only sure thing is that what men believe about Hell is that Hell is always changing to suit the times and the denominations.

#### **BELIEVERS IN HELL MUST**

**Must do away with death.** If death is real, if when God said death, God meant what He said, then Hell cannot be.

**Must prove that men are now immortal.** Must prove that there is an immaterial, invisible something in a person that has no substance, and this something that no one knows what it is, is now just as immortal as it will be after the judgment; and this who know what this "soul" is that Christ will save; and it, not the person, will be in Heaven. If a person is now mortal, he cannot now be immortal.

**Must make words like destroy, perish, die, death, lost be used only with a theological sense.** If they are used, "In the fair, stipulated, and well-established meaning of the terms," then Hell cannot be.

**Must prove that Hell is in the Bible, both the name and the particular place they call Hell.** If they do not prove there is a Hell, but teach it, they have added to the Bible.

**Must prove that the "nehphesh" animals have in Genesis 1:20; 1:21; 1:24; 1:30; 2:19 is mortal, but the same "nehphesh" men have in Genesis 2:7 is immortal.**

#### **FROM WHERE DID HELL COME?**

**It came from pagan philosophers,** and was brought into the church along with Purgatory, the sale of indulgences, Limbo, worship of Mary and saints, Nether World, Holy Water, the rosary, forbidding Priests to marry, the crucifix, forbidding eating of meat on Friday, candle-burning, and many other teachings; and was opposed by such men as Luther, Tyndale, Moses Lord, E. D. Slough, Ashley Sidney Johnson, Elias Smith, and many others. It came into the church in the Dark Age from Pagan Greek philosophers and writers like Dante Alighieri (1265-1321), "The Divine Comedy," and Milton's "Paradise Lost." They added things like Satan has a red suit, horns, and pitchfork and is



forever tormenting the damned. Aligheri was a pagan who believed the teaching of Plato on the soul being immortal, and his book "The Divine Comedy" is basically Plato's view of the soul. This view of Hell was adopted in the Middle Age Church to create fear of leaving the church. The church in the Dark Age, and the translators of the King James Bible were more influenced by this Pagan philosophy and writers of that time than they were from the teaching of God.

(1). **Hell and other pagan teaching were brought into the Bible by reinterpreting four words fifty-seven times** in the King James Version, but much fewer times in later translations, and none at all in many translations. The American Standard Version, which many say is the most accurate translation ("This honored version of 1901, long held to be the most accurate translation in the English language" Star Bible catalog, page 3, 1996), uses it 13 times; and even then has a footnote that says, "Gr. Gehenna" or "Gr. Tartarus."

Growler 1995 Encyclopedia ASPS: "In Greek Mythology, Hades is the underworld ruled by the god of that name, who is also known as Pluto; in Norse Mythology, Hel is a cold and shadowy subterranean realm." Both Hel and Hell are from the same root word- "Kel."

The American Heritage Dictionary, page 2108 says, "KEL-1. O-grade from kal 1. A Hell, from Old English Hell, Hell; B HEL, from Old Norse Hel, the underworld, goddess of death."

Compton's 1995 Encyclopedia, "Hell and Hades." "There is no fully developed teaching about Hell in the New Testament, though there are frequent mentions of it. Only in the course of later church history was it elaborated into official church doctrine."

Encyclopedia Britannica, Volume 2, page 402, "Old English. Hel, a Teutonic word from a root meaning 'to cover.'"

Encyclopedia Americana, Volume 14, page 81, "Much confusion and misunderstanding has been caused through the early translators of the Bible persistently rendering the Hebrew Sheol and the Greek Hades and Gehenna by the word hell. The simple transliteration of these words by the translators of the revised editions of the Bible has not sufficed to appreciably clear up this confusion and misconception."

Wikipedia, the free Encyclopedia: "The modern English word Hell is derived from Old English hel, helle (about 725 AD to refer to a nether world of the dead) reaching into the Anglo-Saxon pagan period, and ultimately from Proto-Germanic \*halja, meaning "one who covers up or hides something". (3) The word has cognates in related Germanic languages such as Old Frisian helle, hille, Old Saxon hellja, Middle Dutch helle (modern Dutch hel), Old High German helle (Modern German Hölle), and Gothic halja. (3) **Subsequently, the word was used to transfer a pagan concept to Christian theology and its vocabulary.**" From the article "Hell."

"We assume that the word 'Hell' is a Bible word chosen by God to reveal his will. It is neither an O. T. nor N. t. word, but rather the word chosen by Bible translators to translate, Sheol (Grave), Hades (Unseen world), Gehenna (Valley of Hinnom) and Tartarus (The abode of angels that sinned). Thus one word is chosen to translate four different places and ideas. The word 'Hell' therefore came to have a meaning beyond the concept involved in each word, but borrowing certain aspects from each and adding the idea of everlasting conscious torment for a soul which cannot die." Dyrel Collins, "Immortality: Only In Christ," Star Bible Publications, church of Christ

Csonka said, "Every good Bible student know Hades is not Hell" Truth Magazine, 1995, page 17. Then why do so many in the Lord's church teach it is?

The Dictionary of New Testament Theology: "The word Gehenna does not occur in the LXX or Greek literature...In contrast with later Christian writings and ideas, the torments of hell are not described in the NT...Neither does the NT contain the idea that Satan is the prince of Gehenna, to whom sinners are handed over for punishment." Volume 2, page 208-209.

Clinton D. Hamilton, who believed in Hell, said, "The New Testament is loaded with metaphors that describe Hell," and then he says Gehenna is one of the metaphors. On the

page before he said that Gehenna is not used in secular Greek literature, not used in the Septuagint, and not by Josephus in the last part of the first century in any of his writings. When he said they did not use Gehenna, he is using it to mean Hell; therefore, he is saying Hell was not used by any of the above, neither is it in any of the Apocryphal books.

(2). **Not in vocabulary:** Heaven and Earth are named together about 30 times, and each is named separately 100's of times, but not one time is Hell named in the Bible, or even spoken of. Why? No doubt, it would have been if Hell was real and there is such a place. We are told not to swear by Heaven or Earth (Matthew 5:34), but today men swear by Hell more than both Heaven and Earth together. Why were they not told not to swear by Hell? It was because Hell is a word that was not in their vocabulary? No word with the meaning of today's English Hell was used in the ancient writing as a swear word, or any other way; no such word was in their vocabulary, and they knew of no such place. **The concept of the place called Hell, or the name Hell is not in the Bible, and does not occur in any writing of either the Hebrews or the Greeks unto long after the Bible. The Old Testament Hebrew, or the New Testament Greek has no word that is even close to today's English word "Hell."** It did not exist unto long after the last book of the Bible was written.

**How do we know about this place called Hell? Where did Hell come from?** Not by faith that comes by hearing God's word. It is from the doctrines and precepts of men (Matthew 15:9). It was not used in the first century because it was a place they knew nothing about. The word "Hell" is of Saxon origin about the 3rd to 5th century A. D. and originally was any covered over place such a roof or a grave. The nearest thing I can find to the English word Hell is in Greek Mythology and Norse Mythology (According to Socrates, Plato and other Greek philosopher), was a shadowy subterranean realm somewhere under the earth where souls went unto they could be reincarnated; but this shadowy place was far from being as terrible or as dreadful a place as today's Hell is, and "souls" would only be in it unto they were reincarnated into a new earthly bring. This underground place did not have the name Hell, and is nothing like the Hell that grew out of it in the Dark Age.

"Three hundred years or so ago the word 'Hell' was commonly used to refer to any dark or foreboding place. A grave could be referred to by that term without readers or hearers automatically envisioning 'the lake of fire, which is the second death' (Rev. 20:15). The hole dug in the ground to receive the body of a deceased loved one is certainly a foreboding place. A prison, dungeon, lunatic asylum, or a valley such as the valley of Hinnom outside of Jerusalem with equal propriety could be spoken of as 'Hell' three or four hundred years ago. That is no longer so...in our time 'Hell' has a fairly settled meaning...its use conjures up visions of the awesome lake of fire judgment reserved for sinners" Russell Boatman, Dean at Saint Louis Christian College, Christian Church, "What The Bible Says, The End Time," College Press, page 305.

"Hell has entirely changed its old harmless sense of dim under-world: and that meaning, as it now does, to myriads of readers...it conveys meanings which are not to be found in any of the New or Old Testament words for which it is presented as an equivalent" Canon Farrar, Excursus II, "Eternal Hope."

A doctrine as terrible as Hell must not be assumed, but demonstrated by unquestionable proof. Such proof is not in the Bible. Heaven is in the Bible over 600 times, but Hell not one time. Why? The Bible is full of warnings. Paul warned that many "*shall not inherit the kingdom of God*" (1 Corinthians 5:9), but he never said anyone



would "go to Hell." **Paul said he declared the whole counsel of God (Acts 20:27); yet not one time (even in the King James Version) did he use the word Hell.** Why?

T. L. Andrews said our English word Hell has come to mean the eternal abode of the sinner where this tormenting punishment takes place? Florida College Lectures, 1997, page 168.

When? The English word Hell did not exist in Paul's time; it therefore come to mean the eternal abode of sinners long after the New Testament; and came from man, not God. Therefore, Paul or the Bible could not, and did not use it.

**If Hell had been a real place, which was known about in the time of Christ, others of that time would have known about it and used its name, but none did.** Gehenna was the name of a real place near Jerusalem (the city dump), which the people near Jerusalem would know about, and they have would understand what Christ was saying when He used its name as a place of destruction. The rest of the world would not know about Jerusalem's trash dump, or know what its name was, and would not have understood. If Paul had used the name Gehenna in Rome or in writing to Gentiles, it is unlikely that any would have known what or where Gehenna was. When the Greek philosophy about the underworld was brought into the church by the "church fathers," what Christ had said about Gehenna was made to order for them to misuse, which they did by changing "Gehenna" into "Hell." Gehenna was soon mistranslated into Hell. Whatever is not taught in the Bible cannot be a Bible doctrine. If it is the doctrine of man, is it not sinful to teach it as God's word?

Hell is not a Bible word. It is a word chosen by Bible Translators to translate four Bible words, sheol, hades, Gehenna, and Tartarus. Not one of the four has the meaning of Hell as it is used today. Not only is there no Hebrew or Greek word for Hell, but also at first even the English word Hell did not mean a place of torment after death as it does today; like many English words it has had a radical change of meaning. In Old English it was a covered place. A farmer would say, "I helled my potatoes" meaning he put them in a hole and covered them to keep them from the cold. Helling a house meant to cover it with a roof. Helmet, a covering for the head is derived from the same word. Hell was never the best translations of hades, but formerly it would have been acceptable in Old English. It is not an acceptable translation of hades in modern English, and has been abandoned by many of the newer translations. When the King James Version was made, the doctrine of Hell was completely developed, and the translation of sheol and hades into Hell were a mistranslation. Most likely a deliberate mistranslation for in 1611 it had taken on the modern meaning of a place of torment after death.

Those who believe in Hell use the word as if both the place and the name are used repeatedly in the Bible. Their proof texts are metaphors, parables, and symbolical language as is found in the book of Revelation. If there were a place as terrible as Hell, why is it never spoken of in clear words that the common person could not misunderstand? If Hell were real, it would be strange if a doctrine as important as Hell would have been would have to depend on an interpretation of a parable or symbolical language.

(3). **Not in early creeds**, the two earliest creeds, The Apostles Creed, traditionally ascribed to the 12 Apostles, and the Nicean Creed, 325 A. D., were both doctrinal statements saying what those that used them believed, but neither one contained the concept of Hell.

(4). **Today's preaching – versus – first century preaching.** Heaven is taught throughout the Bible (used about 635 times in the New American Standard Bible), but

there is nothing about today's Hell. Adam was warned that he would die if he ate, but not that he would go to Hell. Moses warned about death to those who did not keep the law, but he said nothing about Hell. The Bible is as silent as a tomb on it. **It is beyond belief that there would not be many clear and unmistakable warning about Hell if there were such a place. There are many clear and unmistakable warning that the wages of sin is death, but not a one about Hell or an eternal life of torment.**

### **HOW HELL WAS PUT INTO THE BIBLE AND IS BEING KEPT IN THE BIBLE**

"Jesus said it (Hell) was a place where 'the fire...never shall be quenched...Hell is further described as a place where" Whitlock, Seibles Road Church of Christ bulletin, August 9, 1998.

Christ did not say anything about Hell, but was using Gehenna as a metaphor of destruction; but Whitlock changed the name Gehenna that Christ used to another name - Hell, and in the same sentence he quotes only a part of a sentence used by Christ, adds to it, and makes it all one sentence. In doing so he has put the word Hell into the mouth of Christ, but when he make Hell be a real place he must deny that Gehenna is a metaphor.

1. He changes one proper noun into another proper noun, but does not tell us from where he got the proper noun "Hell."
2. He makes Christ say something He did not say.
3. He says, "Hell is further described as a place where," but he did not say where it is described as a place. Hell is not described as a place, or is not described in any other way in the Bible.

This is the very way the words of Christ were first misused by some of the so called church fathers in about the third century and after, long before it was mistranslated into any Bible translation. Unto after the end of the second century only a few of the "church fathers" taught that men have an immaterial, invisible part of a person that is immortal, and it was not unto later that Hell came into being. The so called "church fathers" learned just as we do, from the Bible or from the teaching of men, neither they nor their writing were not inspired; the half converted "church fathers" looking for a way to put their philosophy learned from men into Christianity used the words of Christ in the same way Whitlock did. The church fathers had to have a place to put their immortal soul, which had come from the Greek philosophy. Very often statements like the one John Benton made in "How Can a God of Love Send People to Hell?" page 44, 1985, that the same word aionios, (eternal) is used to describe both Heaven and Hell when nothing is said about Hell or Gehenna in the Matthew 25:46. Dr. Bert Thompson said both Heaven and Hell are described with the exact same terminology in the Bible. "Reason and Revelation," July 2000. The sad thing is that many will believe such a statements without question. How could anyone make a statement like this, "Both Heaven and Hell are described with the exact same terminology in the Bible." There is no way he could not know "Heaven" is used hundreds of times, but "Hell" is not used even one time in the Greek. The truth is that aionios, (eternal) is not used in any passage with sheol, hades or Gehenna, not in any passage that any of the three words that are translated Hell in the King James Version. Dr. Thompson did not give one passage where Hell is described with the same terminology as Heaven. There is not one.

Summary: In Pagan and Greek philosophy (Plato, Socrates and others), souls went to a place underground to "a cold and shadowy subterranean realm" unto they could be reincarnated. They believed in the soul being immortal and would be reincarnated, but they did not believe in Hell, a place of everlasting torment before or after the judgment

was unknown to them; and they had no word for it. The doctrine of Hell, as is believed today, became fully developed in the medieval Dark Age. Tyndale and many others in the Protestant reformation fought the Catholic Church teaching that most go to Purgatory to be purified on their way to Heaven, but "Hell" was accepted without Purgatory by most Protestant churches. It was preached in all its terror by the Jonathan Edwards type of Hell fire preacher and many Gospel preachers a few years back, with Satan tormenting the lost from the time of their death. Today it is almost never preached or written about by Gospel preachers; but when it is, it is almost always toned down from the Jonathan Edwards type of Hell fire preaching; it is now God, not Satan, who will be doing the tormenting.

**Another change:** In the same way the King James Version changed Gehenna into Hell, it also changed the proper noun "Passover (Pasha in Greek)" into "Easter." "Pasha" is in the New Testament twenty-nine times. Twenty-eight times the King James Version translates it Passover. Only one time (Acts 12:4) is it translated Easter, which according to Webster's New World Dictionary came from "Eastre" which is the Anglos Saxon goddess of the dawn. There is no way the King James translators could not have known Pasha is not Easter; this is another deliberate change where a Proper Noun was changed into another Proper Noun, which they know had a completely different meaning; one more time the translators were willing to change God word to put something they believed into the Bible when it was not there. Most other translations have corrected this change.

**Both changing Gehenna into Hell and Passover into Easter are deliberate changes, both to put heathen teaching into the Bible.**

**If Gehenna is a metaphor, what is it a metaphor of?** Present day preachers make it be a metaphor of a place unknown unto long after the last page of the Bible was written. **But** (after they change it's name) **they continuously use it as if it is a real place, not as a metaphor.**

**Can one metaphor have several other metaphors that are metaphors of it?** After saying Gehenna was a valley that was used as a place of refuse where fires were always needed to consume, Hamilton said Jesus took the term and applied it to the place of eternal torment, C. Hamilton in Truth Commentaries, 1 Peter, page 385. This is a typical example of how even well-educated men who know how Christ used Gehenna, but they are compelled to use the mistranslation of the King James Version to prove their belief. Then he said Hell is represented by several metaphors. (1) He said Gehenna is a metaphor, (2) and then he said this metaphor (Gehenna) is represented by several metaphors. He has one metaphor that has several other metaphors that are metaphors of it. Then on the same page he said, Gehenna, Hell, means the place of punishment in the next life. First, he says Gehenna, a valley used for the destruction of the unwanted city garbage, is a metaphor of Hell, and then on the same page said Gehenna is Hell! Which one does he think Gehenna is, (1) a metaphor, (2) or a real place? It comes down to what is the real thing, and what is the metaphor. He said all three, (1) Gehenna, (2) the lake of fire, (3) and the second death, are all three metaphors of Hell. Then how could any of them be Hell if all three are metaphors of Hell? How could he say Hell-Gehenna is a real place when he has just said it is a metaphor? His problem is that he knew Gehenna was the city dump (a real place), but needed to change it into another real place, namely Hell. After saying all three are metaphors of Hell, he then says both the lake of fire and the

second death are metaphor of Gehenna-Jerusalem's trash dump. He said Hell is called the second death, and the lake of fire on page 385; but he did not give one verse where either one is called Hell for there is not one. When was Gehenna changed into Hell? When was one place changed into another place? When did a place of destruction of unwanted trash become a place of eternal torment and damnation? The second death is not a metaphor of anything. If the second death is only a metaphor, then the first death would also have to be only a metaphor; or there would not be the first and the second, but two different and unlike things. The Bible speaks of two deaths, the first and the second, if the first death is death but the second death is eternal life being tormented by God then it is not death; the second death is a real death, just as real as is the first death; both the first and second death are both an end of life, neither the first or the second death are life in another form or place; as the first death deprives a person of all psychical life and is the final end of the earthly existence, so the second death is the final end of existence after the resurrection to judgment. He changed Gehenna into Hell, and used it over and over as if it were a Bible name for a real place (but not the name of the city dump). He has done what many do, he has taken the name of a particular place (the city dump), and made it into another particular place, which does not exist in the Bible; and then changed the second death into a metaphor of the place he has made to make the second death into life to keep it from being death. **He has taken a thing (death-the second death), and then changed this thing (death) into a place, and named this place he had made out of a thing "Hell."** This seems to be a long round about way to change death into Hell where there is no death.

IF GEHENNA IS A METAPHOR, IT IS NOT A REAL PLACE, IT IS NOT HELL. How could he know Gehenna is a metaphor of Hell? If it is, then he would have to know about Hell from some other place, for he could never know Gehenna was a metaphor of a place called Hell if the Bible said nothing about that place. We would never be able to understand a metaphor if it were about somewhere far out in space which we know nothing about if we are not told by revelation that there is such a place. This is just what he is doing if he cannot know there is a Hell from another part of the Bible. From where did he learn of Hell? From where did he learn its name? Maybe from the very badly mistranslated King James Version, and the theology he has heard all his life, but not from any revelation from God, for there is not a word in the Bible that has the meaning of today's English word Hell. He says in one breath that Gehenna is a metaphor of Hell and in the next breath it is not a metaphor, but that it is Hell. He and most others that believe in Hell say Gehenna is a metaphor of Hell. **But if Gehenna, the city dump, is a metaphor of Hell, why is this metaphor of Hell translated into Hell? If it is a metaphor of Hell, in what passage is "Hell" to be found? Without changing Gehenna into Hell, there is nowhere that Hell can be found in the Bible.** They seem to be between a rock and a hard place. They know Gehenna is a metaphor, but if it is a metaphor then they have no place to get the name of Hell; yet, they tell us it is a metaphor, and then tell us it is not a metaphor, but that they know it is an actual real place of eternal torment even if they cannot tell us what passage they know this from.

Here is a strange statement for one who believes Hell is found in revelation from God. Hamilton quotes Henry Thayer who said, "**Gehenna, the name of a valley on the S. and E. of Jerusalem...**which was so called from the cries of little children who were thrown into the fiery arms of Moloch...an idol having the form of a bull. The Jews so abhorred the place after these horrible sacrifices had been abolished by King Josiah...that they cast into it not only all manner or

refuse, but even the dead bodies of animals and of unburied criminals who had been executed. And since fires were always needed to consume the dead bodies, that the air might not become tainted by the putrefaction, it came to pass that the place was called Gehenna tou puros" A Greek-English lexicon of the New Testament, page 111. **Thayer said Gehenna is a valley that is near Jerusalem; if it is a valley on this earth, it could not be Hell that is not on this earth.**

Hamilton said the concept of hell is derived from a valley south and east of Jerusalem. Truth Commentaries, 1 Peter, page 385. Who does he think had this "concept," man or God? Is he saying God or man had this concept from the misuses of a valley on this earth? When was this "concept"? A big part of the Old Testament was past history before the Jews so abhorred the place, page 385. Was it just a late afterthought with God, which he derived from man's misuse of a valley? **He overlooked the fact that "Hell" is in the King James Version before the "Jews so abhorred the place after these horrible sacrifices."** He said (1) Hell was unknown in much of the Old Testament and (2) "the concept of Hell is derived" by man. Do you see what he has done? **Hamilton has taken what Thayer said about the origin of the name of a real valley that is "S. and E. of Jerusalem," then he changed the name of this real valley from Gehenna to Hell, and then applied what Thayer said in his lexicon about the valley of Gehenna that is on this earth to the origin to his Hell, which Hamilton says is a place not on this earth. He completely changed what Thayer said about the name of a valley on this earth to make it be proof of what he needed, but did not have. Thayer says where the name of a valley near Jerusalem (Gehenna) is derived from, but where is Hell (as we use the word today) derived from, either the name or the place? The answer is clear that it came from pagan philosophy, and was brought into the church by the so-called church fathers, and became fully developed in the dark ages (the Hellenistic period) as a place where God forever torments. Neither the place of eternal torment that is taught today, nor its name is not in the Bible.**

If Gehenna were a metaphor of Hell, a place of eternal torment, it would be a very poor one, for **Gehenna the city dump was a place of destruction with no torment; but Hell, as it is taught today, is a place of torment with no destruction. In the time of Christ Gehenna was a real place of destruction on this earth. No one hearing Christ would have understood Gehenna to be a place of torment that is not on this earth.**

Summary: **Step after step after step**

- First step: Many teach and believe that Gehenna was the valley outside of Jerusalem (the city dump).
- Second step: The name is changed to the name of another place, but not a place near Jerusalem. Changed from "Gehenna" near Jerusalem to "Hell" who knows where it is, but not near Jerusalem, not on this earth.
- Third step: Then the place of destruction, which is near Jerusalem named Gehenna is changed into a place of torment that is not on this earth and renamed Hell, and the very words (mistranslated words) of Christ are used to make Him be speaking of their Hell. Christ is made to be speaking of a place not of this earth, and not the Gehenna near Jerusalem. With this kind of reasoning anything can be proved. **The valley that was called "Gehenna" by Christ is not the place that is called "Hell" today.**
  - The real valley called Gehenna that is near Jerusalem, a place where nothing living was thrown into it and no one was tormented in it, is nothing like the Hell of today.

- Even if the teaching of Christ were changed to make what He said be a metaphor, no one could know what it was a metaphor of without God making known that there is a place called Hell. No place in the Bible is a place named Hell made known; there is absolutely no revelation from God about Hell, not one word.
- If it were made into a metaphor, it would be a metaphor of a place where there is no life and no torment.

Major changes must be made to the Bible to teach a person now has an “*immortal immaterial, invisible part of a person*” that will be tormented in Hell.

**(1). Destroy what? Psukee-a living creature that is repeatedly applied to both animals and persons that can and does die must be changed to a formless, no substance being that cannot die that animals do not have. A mortal living being (psukee) must be changed to an immortal being.** How did the translators know when it was one and when it was the other? The same word is used four times in Matthew 10:28-39 and is translated soul two times, and life two times, and in Matthew 16:25-39 it is used four times, and in the King James Version it is also translated soul two times and life two times, but life all four times in the American Standard Version. In verse 39 Christ says, “*He that finds his life (psukee-life) shall lose it; and he that loses his life (psukee-life) for my sake shall find it.*” Although the translators have tried to make it sometimes refer to a person, and sometimes to only a part of a person, it always refers to the whole person, not just to something that is only temporary in a person. When it refers to God, it is referring to all of God, not just an immortal something in Him. When both *nehphesh* in the Old Testament and *psukee* in the New Testament are used with reference to God, angels, man, or animals, it is always a living being, not just a part of a living being.

**(2). Destroy where?** Gehenna, a place where there was destruction but no torment, must be changed to a place where there is torment but no destruction. **Christ said destroy in Gehenna, but this must be changed to torment in Hell.**

**(3). The name Gehenna** must be changed to another name, Hell. The name of the city dump of Jerusalem, a real place, must be changed to the name of another place which those who have made the change say is a place that is not on this earth. Many who say they speak where the Bible speaks and are silent where the Bible is silent make all these changes. **Gehenna is the only word translated Hell in many translations. If the name Gehenna were not changed to the name Hell, there would be nothing about "Hell" in the Bible.**

**(4). The fire of Gehenna** that destroyed trash must be changed to the fire of "Hell" that never destroys. Our earthly bodies cannot be burned forever in a literal fire without destroying them. Both our bodies and the fire would have to be changed in such a way that it would be something other than the bodies we now have, and it could not be literal fire as we know it. Would it not mean God would make new bodies, and then forever burn these new bodies in place of the bodies we now have?

**(5). Death must be changed to life for the lost to have eternal life in Hell.** “*The wages of sin is death*” (Romans 6:23). “*But for the fearful...their part shall be in*

*the lake that burns with fire and brimstone; which is the second death"*  
(Revelation 21:8).

Nowhere does the Bible say there is such a place as Hell, and it is up to those who teach it to prove there is such a place in the Bible. This they have not, and cannot prove.

(1). Not one passage that says most of mankind will be given to Satan to forever torment for his pleasure.

(2). Not one passage that says most of mankind was made by a sadistic and fiendish God who knew before He made them that He would forever torment them.

## USE OF FIRE IN THE NEW TESTAMENT

### Consumed Or Not Consumed

Fire is always used for destruction, never for preservation. Fire always destroys and never preserves anything.

- Burning of unfruitful trees and useless chaff of wheat by John the Baptist (Matthew 3:4-12).
- Burning of trash in the city dump-Gehenna.
- Burning of tares at the end of the age (Matthew 13:24-50).
- Burning of unfruitful branches (John 15:6). Unfruitful trees (Luke 3:9).
- Land that bears thorns and thistles is to be burned. To get rid of the thorns. Those that fell away are likened or compared too thorns and thistles that are destroyed by fire, not tormented by fire (Hebrews 6:1-7).
- God is a consuming fire. (Hebrews 12:29) See Luke 9:54.
- *"Every tree that brings not forth good fruit is hewn down, and cast into the fire."* (Matthew 7:19). These trees are cast into the fire for the purpose of being consumed, the application in verse 20 and 21 is that those who do not bring forth good fruit are hewn down and cast into the fire, like the trees they are to be consumed, not forever tormented. Fire dose not torment trees, it destroys them.
- Sodom-punishment of eternal fire was being eternally destroyed by fire, not eternally burning, not eternally being destroyed but never destroyed (Jude 7; 2 Peter 2:6).
- The heavens shall pass away, be dissolved, and the earth and the works that are therein shall be burned up (2 Peter 3:7-14). The lost are of the world, which will pass away (1 John 2:16-17).
- 2 Thessalonians 1:7
- Lake of fire, which is the second death (not preserved alive) (Revelation 21:8; 2:11).

Fire is never used by God to torment, but for destruction. *"Gather his wheat (the saved) into the garner, but He will burn up the chaff (the lost) with unquenchable fire"* Matthew 3:12. Tares and bad fish are burned to get rid of them, **not to torment forever, or as some say "to burn in Hell forever"** Matthew 13. Theology teaches the exact opposite of the Bible that the chaff will not be burned up, but will be tormented forever, but not burned up, not consumed and destroyed as the farmer does the chaff.

- Farmer: Burns up chaff to destroy it.
- God: Burns up sinful to destroy them.
- Fisher: Burns bad fish to get rid of them. (There is no parallel if you say, "torment them." It would make God be using very poor metaphors, for the ones God used do not teach torment, and would not make sense.)

- Tares are burned up, the wheat is saved (Matthew 13:30)
- Lost are burned up, the faithful are saved. Does the farmer burn up the tares to torment them, or to destroy them?

When tares are cast into a furnace of fire they are burnt up. Like the chaff that is totally consumed in the furnace, there is no suggestion of life beyond the burning in the lake of fire.

**Furnace of fire** in the Old Testament, destruction, not eternal torment or preservation, Psalm 21:9; Malachi 4:1-3; Daniel 3:13-27; Psalm 12:6.

**Consumed or not consumed:** Those who believe a person has a soul that is immortal also believe a person's soul can never be consumed. How is consumed used in the Bible. Is a consuming fire one that burns up (consumes), or one that is forever burning, but cannot consume what it is burning? Why would God use "consumed" if it were a soul that cannot be consumed?

1. Leviticus 10:2: *"And fire came out from the presence of the Lord and consumed them, and they died before the Lord."*
2. Exodus 3:2-5: The burning bush was *"not consumed."* This was so unnatural of fire that Moses said, *"I must turn aside now, and see this marvelous sight, why the bush is not burnt up."*
3. Exodus 15:7 *"You do send forth your burning anger, and it consumes them as chaff."* When chaff is consumed by fire the chaff no longer exists.
4. Exodus 32:10: *"Now therefore let me alone, that my wrath may wax hot against them, and that I may consume them; and I will make of you a great nation."* "Destroy" in New American Standard Version. They would no longer exist.
5. Exodus 32:12: *"Wherefore should the Egyptians speak, saying, For evil did he bring them forth, to slay them in the mountains, and to consume them from the face of the earth? Turn from your fierce wrath, and repent of this evil against your people."* They would have been completely removed from the face of the earth.
6. Leviticus 9:23-24: The fat was on the altar. Fire comes forth and consumed it. The consumed fat no longer existed.
7. Psalm 37:20: *"They shall consume; in smoke shall they consume away."*
8. Hebrews 12:29: *"For our God is a consuming fire."*
  - "Consumed," "died," "destroy," and "burnt up" are the same.

#### **USE OF TORMENT IN THE NEW TESTAMENT**

Those who teach the sinner will be tormented forever in Hell use:

1. The symbolic language in the parable of the rich man, which must be made literal for it to support their teaching. (Luke 16:23; 24; 25; 28).
2. The symbolic languages of Revelation, which also must be made literal, but even then it does not support this teaching.
  - a. Revelation 9:5: Locusts out of the pit torment those who have not the seal of God tormented for five months. Believers in Hell do not believe the torment in Hell will be for only five months.
  - b. Revelation 11:10: *"Tormented them that dwell on the earth."* A symbolical picture of something on this earth, not in Hell. *"Tormented them that dwell on the earth"* is changed to "Tormented them that dwell in Hell" as Hell is not believed to be *"on the earth."*



- c. Revelation 14:10, 11: Worshipers of Babylon tormented. Babylon: "Roman Empire and its pagan religions that were the persecutor of the church" (See Hailey, Wallace, and Ogden above).
  - d. Revelation 18:7 10, 15: Babylon tormented. *"In one hour God is she made desolate...for has judged your judgment on her."* This is an evil nation on this earth, not the lost in "Hell," although it is often misused to prove "Hell."
3. Revelation 20:10: The devil tormented by being cast into the lake of fire, which is the second death. *"Day and night,"* as long as there is day and night, unto the ages of ages.
  4. Torment is used in non-symbolical language in the New Testament, but it is never applied to the lost after Judgment Day. Matthew 4:24; 8:6; Mark 8:6, 18:34; Hebrews 11:37; 1 John 4:18. Those that teach unconditional immortality uses only the symbolic language passages to prove torment in Hell. Yet in their preaching they frequently use it literally, saying God will forever torment the lost, and then say they are "speaking where the scriptures speak, and keeping silent where the scriptures are silent."

Demons tormented (Matthew 8:29; Mark 5:7; Luke 8:28) Knowles on page 203 in "What the Bible says about Angels and Demons" said, "Demons Believe in Hell," and he uses *"before the appointed time"* in Matthew 8:29, as his proof. *"To torment us before the appointed time?"* The question is **when and what** torment is being spoken of. What is *"the appointed time?"* The only torment in this is what the demon's thought Christ was going to do to them **then at that time, at the time they were talking with Christ ("before the appointed time")**, not in Hell. (Torment "...2, to agitate or upset greatly 3, to annoy, pester, or harass" American Heritage Dictionary). They asked Christ if He came to torment (harass) them at that time. Nothing is said about Hell or **torment at the appointed time** (at the judgment), or **torment after the appointed time** (after the judgment), but many read it in; **the demons did not ask Christ if he were going to torment them at the judgment** (at the appointed time) **but was Christ going to torment them at the time he was talking to them** (*"before the appointed time"*). How does he find Hell or the Demons believing in Hell in this passage?

Thomas P. Connelly in "A Debate On The State Of The Dead" makes the argument that demons are the departed souls of dead men. For this to be true, (1) it must first be shown that men do have an immortal something in them and it lives after the death of the person, (2) and second, contrary to the Protestant theology that the lost goes to Hell at death, and contrary to the Abraham's bosom view, that the lost are not on the bad side of hades, but they are not now in Heaven, Hell, or Abraham's bosom, but that the lost dead are now alive and are on this earth; it would have to be shown that are now roaming around on this earth. If the lost were in Hell, it would make them (1) able to leave Hell and return to earth, (2) or to never have been in Hell.

As was said at the first of this chapter, those who believe in the Pagan doctrine of an immortal soul from birth and Hell have no plain statement. **That they must make figurative language, metaphors and symbolic passages into literal statements shows the weakness of their belief**, that it is from man and not from God. They must make parables, and figurative language to be superior over plain statements. What is clear language must be made to agree with what they think is said in the symbolic language.

**Both the Old Testament and the New Testament are completely silent on today's concept of a place where God will unending tormenting most of mankind. The doctrine of God eternality tormenting most of mankind with a torment worse than any torment than we can even know has turned more away from God, and driven more into infidelity than all other errors combined. How can anyone believe it is not a sin to add such a place to God's word? What do they think God will say at the judgment to those who attribute such an evil teaching to Him? Does not attributing this evil to God make them a sinner?**

## **CHAPTER FIVE**

### **Sheol, Hades, Gehenna, Tartarus**

In the King James Bible, there are four words translated Hell (sheol, hades, Tartarus, and Gehenna), even though they are not synonymous, and these four places are not the same place. Most Bible students now admit that sheol, hades and Tartarus should never have been translated into Hell, but many still hold onto the badly mistranslated King James Version, and Gospel preachers and Bible teachers do little or nothing to teach the truth. Many, who do all they can too correct any lesser error just do not seem to care about this one.

#### **(1) SHEOL IN THE OLD TESTAMENT**

Sheol, this one place is given two different and contradictory translations in the King James Version. **It is translated into two places that are entirely different places; two places from the same word, two place that have absolutely nothing in common.** From the same word (1) a place where those in it are dead and know nothing and have no pain, (2) or another place where the dead in it are anything but dead, and the undead know pain beyond anything that we can know.

1. Grave, (translated from sheol—a common noun) a burial place for the dead that is on this earth where there is no work, nor device, nor knowledge, now wisdom (Ecclesiastes 9:10), a place of rest in the dust (Job 17:13-16).
2. Hell, (also translated from sheol—but changed to a proper noun) a place of eternal torment for souls, which at the time of the translation was mostly thought to be a large subterranean place deep in the earth, but now Hell is thought by most that believe in the orthodox version(s) of Hell to be some place not on this earth; whether deep under the earth, or some place out in space, we are told it is a place of endless torment in fire to deathless souls that have no rest, that God will never stop tormenting these souls.
  - **"Hell," a proper noun, as it is used today is not a thirty-first cousin to grave, a common noun, yet both grave and Hell are translated from the same word, the same common noun in the Hebrew Old Testament.** A place for the dead, and a place for those that can never be dead! There is no way to say the grave and Hell have anything in common; no way the King James translators could have thought this one word means both grave and Hell; there would have been no way they could know when the same word in one place was a grave (a common noun) for the dead that is on this earth, and when the same word (sometimes in the same passage) was an entirely different place (a proper noun), a place of torment that is not on this earth for those who can never be dead?

Sheol in the King James Version is translated grave 31 times, Hell 31 times, and pit 3 times. The American Standard Version used the untranslated Hebrew word "sheol." The New International Version translated it "grave" 63 times, "death" 1 time, and "depths" 1 time. The New Century Version and others also translated it grave. The American Standard Version and other newer translations knew Hell as used today (a place of eternal punishment after the resurrection) was not right, but did not translate it "grave." They left the Hebrew word not translated; maybe they thought it would make their translation unacceptable if they translated it, and it most likely would have. Neither sheol nor hades have any meaning in English, and it leave every one free to use any theological definition they want.

Hamilton said, "Contrary to popular opinion it does not mean Hell as we use this term" Truth Commentaries, 1 Peter, page 384.

**"There does not seem to be a very clear distinction in the O. T. between the final destiny of the good and the evil. They all alike go to the grave"** Baker Encyclopedia of the Bible, "SHEOL," Volume 1, page 953.

The reason for there being no distinction in the Old Testament is that both the good and the evil do go to the grave, and neither the good or the bad will not come out of the grave unto the resurrection.

The Hebrew word "sheol" is left not translated all sixty-five times it is used in the American Standard Version, New American Standard Version, and many others. A Hebrew word that is not translated in an English translation does not help the English reader understand what was said, but it is better than mistranslating it as the King James Version did and teaching a lie. Why do many translations translate all other words and leave this one not translated? Was the reason that if sheol were translated, it would be contrary to what the translators believed, or is it an attempt to side step the question and not have to deal with it. Were the translators afraid that if they told us the truth their translation would not be accepted?

### ALL SIXTY-FIVE TIMES SHEOL IS USED IN THE OLD TESTAMENT IN SEVEN TRANSLATIONS

SHEOL in the Old Testament			ASV	NIV
	KJV	NKJV	NASV	2010 Update
1. Genesis 37:35	grave	grave	Sheol	grave
2. Genesis 42:38	grave	grave	Sheol	grave
3. Genesis 44:29	grave	grave	Sheol	grave
4. Genesis 44:31	grave	grave	Sheol	grave
5. Numbers 16:30	pit	pit	Sheol	grave
6. Numbers 16:33	pit	pit	Sheol	grave
7. Deuteronomy 32:22	Hell	Hell	Sheol	death
8. 1 Samuel 2:6	grave	grave	Sheol	grave
9. 2 Samuel 22:6 (1)	<b>HELL</b>	<b>SHEOL</b>	Sheol	grave
10. 1 Kings 2:6	grave	grave	Sheol	grave
11. 1 Kings 2:9	grave	grave	Sheol	grave
12. Job 7:9	grave	grave	Sheol	grave
13. Job 11:8 (2)	<b>HELL</b>	<b>SHEOL</b>	Sheol	grave
14. Job 14:13	grave	grave	Sheol	grave
15. Job 17:13	grave	grave	Sheol	grave
16. Job 17:16 (3)	<b>PIT</b>	<b>SHEOL</b>	Sheol	death
17. Job 21:13	grave	grave	Sheol	grave
18. Job 24:19	grave	grave	Sheol	grave
19. Job 26:6 (4)	<b>HELL</b>	<b>SHEOL</b>	Sheol	death

20.	Psalm 6:5		grave		grave		Sheol		grave	
21.	Psalm 9:17		Hell		Hell		Sheol		grave	
22.	Psalm 16:10	(5)	HELL		SHEOL		Sheol		grave	
23.	Psalm 18:5	(6)	HELL		SHEOL		Sheol		grave	
24.	Psalm 30:3		grave		grave		Sheol		grave	
25.	Psalm 31:17		grave		grave		Sheol		grave	
26.	Psalm 49:14		grave		grave		Sheol		grave	
27.	Psalm 49:14		grave		grave		Sheol		grave	
28.	Psalm 49:15		grave		grave		Sheol		grave	
29.	Psalm 55:15		Hell		Hell		Sheol		grave	
30.	Psalm 86:13	(7)	HELL		SHEOL		Sheol		grave	
31.	Psalm 88:3		grave		grave		Sheol		grave	
32.	Psalm 89:48		grave		grave		Sheol		grave	
33.	Psalm 116:3	(8)	HELL		SHEOL		Sheol		grave	
34.	Psalm 139:8		Hell		Hell		Sheol		depths	
35.	Psalm 141:7		Grave's		Grave		Sheol		grave	
36.	Proverbs 1:12	(9)	GRAVE		SHEOL		Sheol		grave	
37.	Proverbs 5:5		Hell		Hell		Sheol		grave	
38.	Proverbs 7:27		Hell		Hell		Sheol		grave	
39.	Proverbs 9:18		Hell		Hell		Sheol		grave	
40.	Proverbs 15:11		Hell		Hell		Sheol		death	
41.	Proverbs 15:24		Hell		Hell		Sheol		grave	
42.	Proverbs 23:14		Hell		Hell		Sheol		death	
43.	Proverbs 27:20		Hell		Hell		Sheol		death	
44.	Proverbs 30:16		grave		grave		Sheol		grave	
45.	Ecclesiastes 9:10		grave		grave		Sheol		grave	
46.	Song of Solomon 8:6		grave		grave		grave#		grave	
47.	Isaiah 5:14	(10)	HELL		SHEOL		Sheol		grave	
48.	Isaiah 14:9		Hell*		Hell		Sheol		grave	
49.	Isaiah 14:11	(11)	GRAVE		SHEOL		Sheol		grave	
50.	Isaiah 14:15	(12)	HELL		SHEOL		Sheol		grave	
51.	Isaiah 28:15	(13)	HELL		SHEOL		Sheol		grave	
52.	Isaiah 28:18	(14)	HELL		SHEOL		Sheol		grave	
53.	Isaiah 38:10	(15)	GRAVE		SHEOL		Sheol		grave	
54.	Isaiah 38:18	(16)	GRAVE		SHEOL		Sheol		death	
55.	Isaiah 57:9	(17)	HELL		SHEOL		Sheol		grave	
56.	Ezekiel 31:15	(18)	GRAVE		HELL		Sheol		grave	
57.	Ezekiel 31:16		Hell		Hell		Sheol		grave	
58.	Ezekiel 31:17		Hell		Hell		Sheol		grave	
59.	Ezekiel 32:21		Hell		Hell		Sheol		grave	
60.	Ezekiel 32:27		Hell		Hell		Sheol		grave	
61.	Hosea 13:14		grave		grave		Sheol		grave	
62.	Hosea 13:14		grave		grave		Sheol		grave	
63.	Amos 9:2		Hell*		Hell		Sheol		grave	
64.	Jonah 2:2	(19)	HELL*		SHEOL		Sheol		grave	
65.	Habakkuk 2:5		Hell		Hell		Sheol		grave	

KJV, King James Version; == NKJV, New King James Version, == ASV; American Standard Version, == NASV; New American Standard Version, == NRSV; New Revised Standard Version, == NIV; New International Version

#Song of Solomon 8:6 is the only time grave is used in place of sheol in the New Revised Standard Version.

\*Margin reads "or the grave" in Isaiah 14:9, Amos 9:2, and Jonah 2:2 in the King James Version.

Note: even though sheol, hades, and grave are capitalized in some translations, they are common nouns and should not be capitalized.

The Jewish Publication Society called "Torah" transliterates sheol all 65 times.

**There are nineteen changes** in the King James and the New King James (See (1) to (19) in the above chart). If there were a way to know when to translate sheol into Hell, and when not to, the translators of the only two of the major translations that have Hell in

the Old Testament should have known, and should be in agreement. Are they? The New King James Version takes Hell out of many passages where it is in the King James Version. When they translated a common noun (sheol-grave) into a proper noun (Hell), they did not agree often. Men never agree on what they want when they change the word of God.

If the translators of the New American Standard Version had been honest with their reader they would have translated sheol; it looks as if they were afraid to tell us the truth, but were did not want to lie by translating sheol into Hell so they used the Hebrew word knowing that many of there readers would understand sheol and Hell to the same place.

"The uniform substitution of 'sheol' for 'the grave,' 'the pit,' and 'hell,' in places where these terms have been retained by the English Revision, has little need of justification. The English Revisers use 'Sheol' twenty-nine times out of the sixty-fore in which it occurs in the original. No good reason has been given for such discrimination. If the new term can be fitly used at all, it is clear that it ought to be used uniformly" Preface to the American Standard Bible.

**Obviously, if "sheol" means "Hell" it should never have been translated "grave" in the King James, or any other translations, for they are different places. It is also obvious that it cannot mean both.**

W. E. Vine: "First, the word means the state of death. ' For in death, there is no remembrance of thee: in the grave who shall give thee thanks' (Ps 6:5; cf. 18:5). It is the final resting place of all men: 'they spend their days in wealth, and in a moment go down to the grave' Job 21:13...second, 'sheol' is used of a place of conscious existence after death" "Vine's Complete Expository Dictionary Of Old And New Testament Words," page 227.

If, as he said, sheol is both:

1. Sheol is a place with no conscious existence where there is no remembrance after death-W. E. Vine.
2. Sheol is a place of conscious existence after death-W. E. Vine.

He could not (or anyone) ever know for sure when sheol was used the first or second way in any verse. How could they? Does everyone just use the one they want to? **Although he is Protestant, this is not anything like the orthodox Protestant version of all going to directly to Heaven or Hell at death.** He seems to have abandoned the orthodox Protestant view, and made many of the dead be in the grave.

How does he think the same place could be both **a place of death with no remembrance**, and at the same time **a place of life with conscious existence**, but not life in Heaven or Hell? He is speaking of conscious existence in sheol-the grave after death; therefore, he is saying the orthodox Protestant view of all being transported instantaneous to Heaven or Hell at death is not true. He tries to prove the second with Genesis 3:7-35 "*I will go down to sheol in mourning for my son*" New American Standard Version. The New Century Version says, "*unto the day I die.*" "*You will not abandon my soul to Sheol; neither will thou allow your holy one to undergo decay*" (Psalm 16:10 New American Standard Version). "*And lie silent in the grave*" (Psalm 31:17 New International Version). "*As heat and drought snatch away the melted snow, so the grave snatches away those who have sinned*" (Job 24:19 New International Version). "*So MAN lies down and does not roused from their sleep. If only you would hide ME in the grave*" (Job 14:12-13 New International Version). It is man that lies down in sleep, not an immaterial something that is in a person unto the death of the person; Job wanted God to hide him ("me") in the grave, not just his body while the real Job was in Heaven; just as the snow is consumed by heat, the grave (sheol) consumes the bodies in it. In the very verses W. E. Vine uses to

prove his second use of the word, God could not be saying the first any clearer. **In these passages and others, it is so certain and undeniable that sheol is the grave that many (like W. E. Vine) had to create a new sheol. A different gospel is preached with two sheols (or hades). One for the body to "sleep" in from death unto the resurrection, and one for the bodiless soul (or the living dead) to "live" in from death unto the resurrection; and then a third place must be added for the lost souls to be tormented in forever after the Judgment Day.**

Summary: The King James translators tried to put the preconceived belief of Hell in the Bible by mistranslating sheol, but could not consistently conceal the truth in all 65 times sheol is used. If they had:

1. **They would have put all mankind in Hell:** They found it impossible to translate sheol into Hell every time it is used. If they had been consistent in their mistranslation, they would have put the righteous in Hell. All go to sheol at death. Even with all their mistranslating, they sometimes ended up with the righteous in Hell.
  - a) Jacob goes to Hell (sheol). Genesis 37:35 *"For I will go down to Hell (sheol) to my son mourning."*
  - b) Job prayed to go to Hell (sheol) (Job 14:13). He was praying to go to the grave where his suffering would end, not to a place where his suffering would be increased many times over and would last forever. **The translators of the King James Version know it would have been absurd to have job praying to go to Hell.**
  - c) *"My soul is full of troubles: and my life draws nigh unto the Hell"* (sheol-grave in King James Version). Psalm 88:3. Sheol (the grave-a quiet place of unconsciousness sleep where both the righteous and the wicked go) is the nearest thing to today's Hell that the translators could find, and then could translate it Hell less than half the time. For the thousands of years of the Old Testament, God told no one about a place called Hell.
2. **They would have made a resurrection from Hell:** They would have caused themselves a problem by making some be resurrected from Hell. (1 Samuel 2:6; Job 21:23:32; 30:23; Psalm 30:3; 49:15; 86:13; Hosea 13:14; Nahum 1:14). **All go to sheol. If sheol were Hell, any resurrection, even at the second coming of Christ, would have to be a resurrection from Hell. "But God will redeem my soul from the power of the Hell"** (sheol-translated grave in King James Version) Psalm 49:14-15.
3. **They would have made those in Hell completely unconscious** with *"no work, nor device, nor knowledge, nor wisdom, in Hell (sheol-grave) where you go"* (Ecclesiastes 9:10). Did they know that a person with no knowledge would not know he was being tormented?

#### **WHERE ARE THE DEAD?**

(1) **According to the King James Version:**

- (a) It sometimes puts all the dead in sheol (the grave) with none in Heaven or Hell.
- (b) It sometimes put the dead in Hell.
- (c) It sometimes puts past nations in both sheol and Hell.
- (e) It puts none of those in sheol (grave) in Heaven, not even David, Abraham, or Job.

(d) It sometimes puts all the dead in Hell. If sheol is Hell as it is translated in the King James Version, all instantly go to Hell at death and none to Heaven. Even Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob went to the Hell of the King James Version and their spirit could not have "*returned to God.*" In trying to put the evil persons in Hell, they had trouble keeping the good out of it. The King James translators did put the name Hell in the Bible by mistranslating, but could not put in today's concept of Hell.

(2) **According to the Old Testament** (most translations): All the dead are in the grave. The way sheol is used in the Old Testament it cannot be made to fit the Catholic, or Protestant versions of Hell for if all go to sheol at death, no one could go to Heaven or Hell at death. The Hebrews believed that all, both good and evil together went to sheol (the grave) when they died. Examples: "*You shall bring down my gray hairs with sorrow to the grave*" (Genesis 37:35; 42:38; 44:29). "*O that you would hide **me** in the grave*" (Job 14:13). Not one of the sixty-five times "sheol" is used does it teach the Protestant version of Hell.

"Nowhere in the Old Testament is the abode of the dead regarded as a place of punishment or torment." The Interpreter's Dictionary of the Bible, page 788.

(3) **According to most Protestants and Catholics:** Everyone will be in Heaven or Hell before and without the resurrection. Not all together in sheol, many Protestants put all, even everyone that lived under the Old Testament in Heaven or Hell instantly at death. **If a bodiless "soul" was in all living person and it goes to Heaven or Hell at death, no "soul" had ever been in sheol or Abraham's bosom or ever will be.** There would be no time when they could be. All the passages in the King James Version where the translators translated sheol sometimes grave and sometimes Hell would be worse than meaningless; they would be untruthful,

- For the King James Version puts **all**, both the good and the evil together,
  - Sometimes **all** together in the grave.
  - Sometimes **all** together in Hell.

Sheol is translated "*down to the grave*" one time and "*down to hell*" two times in the same passage (Ezekiel 31:15-17). Why such inconsistency? The Septuagint, a Greek version of the Old Testament made in the third century B. C. translated the Hebrew "sheol" into Greek "hades." These Hebrew scholars put all (both the righteous and the unrighteous) together in hades (grave), just as both are together in sheol in the Hebrew Old Testament. Did the King James translators know more about the Hebrew language than the Hebrews? Why did they tell God He was wrong when He put both together in one place - sheol? The reason is obvious; they had to put some in Hell. They did a poor job of it for by their mistranslating they put some of those in sheol in Hell, but could not put some in Heaven. They had to leave them in sheol where God put them for they could not translate sheol into Heaven in any passages when they had translated it Hell.

(4) **According to many Protestants:** All return to God in Heaven at death, both the saved and the lost. At death the spirit of all "*will return to God who gave it*" (Ecclesiastes 12:7). **If a bodiless spirit or soul is the only part(s) of a person that lives after the death of the person, and "*The spirit returns to God who gives it,*" then the soul never goes to sheol or hades; therefore, if there were a place under the earth called "sheol" no person ever goes to it.** Sheol could not be the receptacle, or the place of abode of disembodied spirits if the disembodied spirits returns to God in Heaven at death, at the moment they become disembodied. **No bodiless soul could be in Hell if at death all return to God in Heaven.** Today's theology repeatedly makes the Bible speak of a

place that does not exist. Nevertheless, we are repeatedly told the saved souls go to Heaven at death, and the lost souls go to Hell at death. The same preachers put the dead in three places simultaneously.

1. The spirit of all returns to God.
2. Or does all the dead go to sheol, which is believed by many to be somewhere under the earth.
3. Or does all the souls of the saved go directly to Heaven at death, and the souls of the lost go directly to Hell at death.

(5) **According to the Abraham's bosom version:** Nor can sheol be made to fit the after judgment view. No soul will be in Heaven or Hell at death, not unto after the resurrection and judgment. In this view Hell is a place where only the evil will go only after the judgment, but no soul will be in Hell unto after the judgment, and no soul in the Old Testament times was in Hell before or after the death of the person it was in. Therefore, if sheol were Hell, none would go directly to it at death; therefore, no one in the Old Testament could have gone to sheol at death. But, even when it is completely contradictory to their view, most that believe the after judgment version of Hell use the mistranslation of sheol into Hell in the Old Testament of the King James Version to prove there is a Hell, and that (1) some of the souls of the dead were alive in sheol, (2) and some of the souls of the dead were alive in Hell in the Old Testament times. Can they not see how inconsistent they are being with their own view?

It seems as if no one today believes what the Old Testament says about sheol. Not even the translators of the King James Version; they believed as most Protestants of their time did that all the lost are in Hell, and all the saved are in Heaven; therefore, no one was in a place called sheol or Hell despite the fact that their translations puts the dead in both.

(6) **According to the Bible:** In both the Old Testament and the New Testament the dead are all asleep, and will be asleep unto the Resurrection.

### (2) HADES in the New Testament

Hades is the same word in Greek as sheol is in Hebrew (Psalm 16:10-Acts 2:27). It is used eleven times and mistranslated "Hell" in the King James Version.

#### **The way hades is mistranslated in eight translations**

	KJV	NKJV	RSV	ASV	NIV	Phillips	Revised English	American Bible
Matt 11:23	Hell	hades	hades	hades	depths	dead	hades	death
Matt 16:18	Hell	hades	hades	hades	hades	death	death	death
Luke 10:15	Hell	hades	hades	hades	depths	dead	hades	death
Luke 16:23	Hell	hades	hades	Hell	Hell	dead	hades	dead
Acts 2:27	Hell	hades	hades	grave	grave	hades	death	Nether World
Acts 2:31	Hell	hades	hades	grave	grave	hades	death	Nether World
1 Cor 15:55	grave	hades	death	death	death	death	death	death
Rev 1:18	Hell	hades	hades	grave	grave	grave	hades	Nether World
Rev 6:8	Hell	hades	hades	hades	hades	grave	hades	Nether World
Rev 20:13	Hell	hades	hades	hades	hades	grave	hades	Nether World
Rev 20:14	Hell	hades	hades	hades	hades	grave	hades	Nether World

**Not even the New King James would go along King James with this bad translation of translating "hades" into Hell.** Even in 1 Corinthians 15:55 where the King James translated it grave, the New King James left hades untranslated.

	Hell	Grave	Death	untranslated
King James Version	10	1	0	0
New King James Version	0	0	0	11
American Standard Version	0	0	1	10
Revised Standard Version	0	0	2	9
New International Version	1	2	1	5   depths 2



The translators believed in Hell, but could not get away from grave every time. The one time the King James translators did not try to put their Hell into the Bible; they translated it grave. If they had translated hades into Hell in 1 Corinthians 15:55, as they did in the other ten passages, it would have said, "O Hell, where is your victory?" They had to change "Hell" to "grave" because it is obvious that Paul is speaking of victory over death, not victory over Hell.

The New American Bible (Catholic) removed Hell, but added a new place, the Nether World that is not a translation, but a change of one place into another place despite the fact that in their earlier translation they changed the same place, hades, into Hell.

- In the same passage in some translations Catholics put the dead in "Hell."
- Then in the same passage in other translations put the dead in "The Nether World."

They changed hades into two altogether different places, Hell and Nether World.

In the New Testament there are only two words the translators did not want to or would not translate into English words; therefore, they transliterated them (translated the letters of the Greek alphabet into English letters). They are baptizo (immersion) and hades (grave). Baptizo, if translated into English it would be "immersion," which would not have fit into the theology of the King James translators. Many uphold and even use the mistranslation of hades into "Hell" in the King James Version, and the non-translation in the American Standard Version of both hades and sheol. Both are common nouns, which some use as if they were proper nouns (names of particular place) to have a biblical name for their non-biblical place. If any other word had been put into the Bible, as was the word Hell, there would have been sermon after sermon and articles after articles showing it was a mistranslation, just as there has been on baptism. Although the translators of the New International Version believed in Hell, they were honest enough to translate sheol correctly, but would not translate hades in four of the eleven times it is used. In many translations the Greek word hades was put into many English versions without translating it, for if it had been translated, it would not fit with the belief of the translators, or the belief of those they wanted to sell copies of it to; but there is a correct translation, and even the King James Version had to translate it correctly one time. They do not want to translate hades, for them it would not say what they want it to say; therefore, the Greek word hades is either mistranslated into Hell in the King James; or is left untranslated in many others. The problem was made because the translators did not want their readers to understand hades the way it was by Greek speaking people. **Do you think God give us a revelation we could not understand, or that he used a word we cannot translate or understand in our own language? If He did, He would be saying nothing to us.** The right translation of sheol and hades is grave, and we can understand it. In the Old or New Testament, no one used or understood hades to be Hell. The Hebrew "sheol," or the Greek "hades" have no meaning in English; therefore, English-speaking people would not understand them. Proper names like Jerusalem, New York, and Gehenna are the same in most languages, and should not be translated, but common nouns must be translated to be understood, not left untranslated or transliterated. Both sheol and hades are common nouns, and need to be translated just as all other common nouns were.

1. Baptizo transliterated into baptism because the translators believed in sprinkling, and would not translate it.

2. Hades mistranslated into "Hell" because the translators believed the wages of sin is an eternal life of torment, and sinners instantly went to "Hell" at death, not to the grave.
3. Hades left untranslated into many English translations because the translators did not want it understood and would not translate it.

### (3) GEHENNA

See Chapter four for notes on the four occasions that Christ used Gehenna.

### (4) TARTARUS

**Are these angels now in Tartarus or Hell? Why are these angles used to prove Hell?** 2 Peter 2:4 is the only time this word is used. Tartarus in the Greek was changed to Hell in the King James Version. *"For if God spared not angels when they sinned, but cast them down to Tartarus ("Hell" in the King James Version), and committed them to pits of darkness, to be reserved unto judgment"* (2 Peter 2:4). *"And angels that kept not their own principality, but left their proper habitation, he has kept in everlasting bonds under darkness unto the judgment of the great day"* (Jude 6). Whatever and wherever Tartarus is, it is the place where the angels that sinned **are now being kept unto the Judgment Day**. Neither Peter nor Jude says anything about these angels being in fire, or pain, or being tormented by God, but those who believe in Hell most always add them after the place where these angels **now are** has been changed from Tartarus to Hell, and then change it from angle to persons that God is tormenting. As far as we know, no man will ever be in Tartarus and it will last only *"unto the judgment,"* it has no relevance to the doctrine that God will forever torment the lost after the judgment; all mankind now go to the grave—hades, not to Tartarus. If, as many teach, the angels are now being tormented in Hell, why bring them out of torment for judgment only to put them back into torment?

Jude 6, 2 Peter 2:4 **"UNTO the judgment,"** not "after the judgment," for these angels are being kept in Tartarus **now** and will be kept there **unto** the Judgment Day. The place where these fallen angels are now at is changed into the place where some think these angels will be after the judgment. Many do not believe anyone will be in Hell unto after the judgment, but the King James Version is mistranslated to say these angels are **now** in Hell before and without the judgment. Does not using this passage to prove "Hell" show the willingness of those that use it to make any change needed to prove it?

The orthodox Protestant view is inconsistent:

- It put lost in Hell now without the judgment.
- But the angles that sinned are being kept in Tartarus unto the judgment; they are not now in Hell.

The orthodox view has the lost in Hell before the angles that sinned will be there, even though the King James Version says the everlasting fire was first made for the angles (Matthew 25:41).

Those who believe in Abraham's bosom think that the lost will not be in Hell unto after the Judgment, but use this passage to teach these angles are now in Hell despite the fact that Jude 6 says nothing about Hell.

- This passage says where these angels are **now** but it says nothing about where they will be after the Judgment Day, or about where lost men will be, and **it says nothing about a place called Hell.**
- **"Pits of darkness, reserved for judgment"** changed to already judged and in Hell, and darkness changed to fire.

- **Changed, and then moved:** "Tartarus" is changed to "Hell," and then is moved from where these angels are now unto where many think they will be after the judgment.

Note: This is a difficult passage to understand, and just as difficult to use, as many do, as the base of any theology in the light of the other passages on the angels that sinned. It is not my purpose to go into Demonology, but I think it is safe to say the angels that sinned are the demons of the New Testament. Just what the *"everlasting bonds"* are ("chains" King James Version) is difficult to say, but they are not chains of iron as we think of chains being. *"Your adversary the devil as a roaring lion, walks about seeking whom he may devour"* (1 Peter 5:8). *"His (Satan) ministers also fashion themselves as ministers of righteousness"* (2 Corinthians 11:14). Since both Satan and his angels are still deceiving people, it is obviously that they are only in bonds (limited) in what they can do, that there is a limit to what they can do? These angels were *"delivered into chains of darkness, to be reserved unto judgment."* God also bounds Satan. In tempting Job, he was allowed to go so far and no farther. He has the power to tempt us, but not the power to make us do anything we do not want to. *"Be sober, be watchful: your adversary the devil, as a roaring lion, walks about seeking whom he may devour"* (1 Peter 5:8). *"And no marvel for even Satan fashions himself into an angel of light"* (2 Corinthians 11:14). Space will not allow a long discourse on demons, but most likely they are the angels that sinned, and they are bound (limited) in what they can do just as Satan is, but it is nowhere said that God is **now** tormented Satan, demons or fallen angels in a place called Hell. If the King James Version were right, and they were now in Hell, not walking *"about seeking whom he may devour"* on earth, it would be great for us for then they could not tempt us, but they still do.

#### **SATAN HAS NEVER BEEN OR WILL NEVER BE IN HELL**

#### **SATAN NEVER HAS BEEN IN SHEOL, HADES, OR GEHENNA**

When he is first seen in Genesis 3 he is on this earth. When God asked Satan when he had been, Satan said, *"From roaming about on the earth and walking around on it"* (Job 1:7). He is seen standing at the right hand of evil men (Psalms 109:6; Zechariah 3:1). Not one place in the Old Testament is he said to be in sheol (the grave), or any place of fire or torment. In the New Testament he is, *"As a roaring lion, walks about seeking whom he may devour"* (1 Peter 5:8). In the temptation of Jesus Satan is seen to be the ruler of this world (Matthew 4:1-11). Not unto the death of Christ was it said, *"Now the ruler of this world shall be cast out"* (John 12:31). He stills, *"Disguises himself as an angel of light"* (2 Corinthians 11:14), and still has the power to tempt us, but does not seem to have the power over nations that he had before. Satan will be cast into the lake of fire (Revelation 20:10) alone with death and hades (Revelation 20:14) *"which is the second death"* (Revelation 21:8). **Not one time, before the earth was made, while the earth exist, nor after the earth will be destroyed is Satan ever said to be in a place called "Hell." His kingdom is this world.**

**Forever in Jude:** In speaking of the angels that sinned (verse 6), Jude used "aidion," which is used only one other time in the New Testament in Romans 1:20 where it is applied to God. If, as some assume aidion always means eternal as eternal is used today (never an end), why is it never used with reference to the "eternal soul"? *"He has kept in everlasting (aidion) bonds under darkness unto the judgment of the great day."* This **"everlasting"** (aidion) will last only *"unto the judgment of the great day"*; therefore, it is clearly not endless for it will end at the judgment.

- In the very next verse Jude changes from aidion when speaking of angels to aionios (age) in verse 7 when speaking of Sodom suffering the punishment of eternal (aionios-age) fire. In verse 7 he used "aionios" the adjective form of the noun "aion." In verses 12 and 25 he used the noun "aion" (age).

- Why, if the writers of the New Testament had a word that always had the same meaning as eternal does today, why did they never use it with reference to man?
- If, as some say without any authority, aidion means endless and aionios means age, then endless would be applied only to one time to God (Romans 1:20), and one time to angels (Jude 6), never to man. If aidion did mean endless, then throughout the New Testament "endless" is strictly avoided as descriptive of mankind or any *"invisible immaterial part of a person."*

**Just as they did with Gehenna, the King James translators changed one proper noun, the name of one particular place that now exists, into another proper noun, the name of another particular place that many believe will not exist unto after the judgment.**

1. **Gehenna**, a proper noun is the name of a particular place, **has been changed into Hell**, another proper noun, the name of another particular place where some think angels plus evil men will go to after the judgment.
2. **Tartarus**, a proper noun is the name of a particular place, **the place where the angels that sinned are now at, has been changed into Hell**, another proper noun, the name of another particular place, but not a place or name that is in the Bible, changed into a completed difference place.
3. **Are there two "Hells?" One Hell that now is where these angels are now at, and one Hell that some believe will not be unto after the judgment?** According to the King James Version, these angels are in one Hell now before they are judged; but they will come out of it at the Judgment Day, be judged and go into another Hell. They did what they had to do to put the name Hell into the Bible. That a group of men who were as learned in languages as the translators of the King James Version were would do this shows how far they were willing to go to put Hell in the Bible. When we know that they were wrong, as many do, but use and teach their mistranslation to others, do we not sin? Do elders sin when they let such teaching go on and do nothing?
4. **One word changed to five words, "Cast them down to Hell" is translated from one Greek word, "Tartarus."** It looks as if the translators did not know what to do with this word, but they knew where they wanted the angels to be and put them there; but they used five English words to translate one Greek word to move these angels from Tartarus to "Hell" where they wanted them to be—not one of the five, "(1) cast (2) them (3) down (4) to (5) Hell," is not even close to the meaning of "Tartarus."

#### **SATAN AND DEMONS TO BE DESTROYED**

*"That through death he might bring to naught (nothing) him that had the power of death, that is, the devil"* (Hebrews 2:14) American Standard Version. *"That through death he might destroy him...that is the devil"* King James Version. Brought to nothing, destroyed by being cast into the lake of fire (Revelation 20:10), which is the second death (Revelation 21:8). Also Matthew 25:41. The bruising of the head of Satan can only mean his utter destruction (Genesis 3:14-15).

**Demons know they had a time coming to be destroyed.**

- *"Have you come to destroy (apollumi) us?"* (Mark 1:24)
- *"Have you come to destroy (apollumi) us?"* (Luke 4:34)

- *“Have you come to torment (barutimos) us before the time?”* (Matthew 8:29). Strong’s word 928, “trouble.” “From word 926, be...made alarmed or agitated; by impl. To hasten anxiously.” In Matthew’s account of this they were asking Christ if He had come to trouble or agitate them before the Judgment Day, not if He had come to physically torment them.
- *“For if God spared not angels when they sinned, but cast them down to Tartarus and committed them to pits of darkness, **to be reserved unto judgment**”* (2 Peter 2:4).
  - They were asking if He had come to torment them before the appointed time of their destruction, before the Judgment Day for which they were being reserved for judgment (2 Peter 2:4).
    - *“There will also be false teachers among you...bringing **swift destruction** upon themselves* (2 Peter 2:1).
    - *“There (the false teachers) **destruction** is not asleep”* (2 Peter 2:3).
    - *“Did not spare angels when they sinned...**reserved for judgment**”* (2 Peter 2:4).
    - *“When He brought a flood upon the world of the ungodly”* (2 Peter 2:5).
    - *“He condemned the cities of Sodom and Gomorrah to **destruction**”* (2 Peter 2:6).
    - *“But these...will in the destruction of these creatures also **be destroyed**”* (Peter 2:12).

Many say it is a sin to change God's word, but despite this have made many changes in it.

1. Changed a common noun (sheol-grave) into a proper noun (**sheol** changed into **Hell**).
2. Changed another common noun (hades-grave) into a proper noun (**hades** changed into **Hell**).
3. Changed a proper noun (Gehenna) into another proper noun (**Gehenna** changed into **Hell**).
4. Changed another proper noun (Tartarus) into another proper noun (**Tartarus** changed into **Hell**).
5. Changed **Gehenna** that existed then into the **Hell** that they think will not exist unto after the Judgment Day.
6. Changed "**Tartarus**" a **prison** that existed then into the **Hell, a place of torment** that they think will not exist unto after the Judgment Day, then changed who is in it, the angels that sinned are changed unto both the angels and men that sinned.

#### **The three proper nouns that are changed into another proper noun in the King James Version.**

1. **Gehenna** changed into **Hell**.
2. **Tartarus** changed into **Hell**.
3. **Pasha** (Passover) changed into **Easter** (Acts 12:4).

#### **The two common nouns that are changed into the same proper noun in the King James Version.**

- A common noun (sheol-grave) changed into a proper noun (**sheol** changed into **Hell**).
- A common noun (hades-grave) changed into a proper noun (**hades** changed into **Hell**).
- A common noun (hades-grave) changed into a proper noun (**hades** changed into **Nether World**).
  - "Hades" is changed into "Nether World" in some of the newer translations of the Catholic Church. In the same passage (Acts 2:27) they used to change hades into Hell in older translations.

#### **NO NAME FOR HELL IN BIBLE**

Neither sheol nor hades are a proper name, Hell is a proper name; therefore, sheol or hades is not Hell. There are many graves, but we are told there is only one Hell.

Gehenna is a proper name; Hell is a proper name that is not a translation of Gehenna; the name Hell did not exist unto long after the New Testament, did not exist when the name Gehenna was used in the Bible. The name Hell is not in the Bible and cannot be put

into it without a deliberate mistranslation, a deliberately changing one name for another name.

Summary: **Gehenna, sheol, hades, and Tartarus are often used to prove an eternal life of torment in Hell, but they did not have the meaning that Hell has today, and should have never been translated Hell. Those who use this mistranslation of sheol into Hell are changing the Bible.**

## **CHAPTER SIX**

### **The Sixty-Five Sheol Passage The Eleven Hades Passages**

**Outline of chapter six:**

#### **THE SIXTY-FIVE TIMES SHEOL IS USED AS TRANSLATED IN THE KING JAMES VERSION**

- (1) DOWN INTO A PIT IN THE EARTH** (In 3 passages)
- (2) THE NATIONS IN SHEOL** (In 18 passages)
  - **Nations in the grave** in 4 passages
  - **Nations in Hell** in 14 passages
- (3) INDIVIDUALS IN SHEOL** (In 18 passages)
  - **The good in the grave** in 11 passages
  - **The bad in the grave** in 7 passages
- (4) BOTH THE GOOD AND BAD IN THE GRAVE** in 9 passages
- (5) BOTH THE GOOD AND BAD IN HELL** (In 17 passages)
  - **The good in Hell** in 9 passages
  - **The bad in Hell in only 8 of the 65 passages that have sheol.**

#### **HADES IS USED ELEVEN TIMES IN THE NEW TESTAMENT.**

- Hades in the three passages that have reference to the death of Christ.
- Hades in the one passage that have reference to death.
- Hades in the two passages that have reference to the destruction of cities or countries.
- Hades in the five symbolic passages.

#### **THE WAY SHEOL IS TRANSLATED IN THE KING JAMES VERSION**

The only word that is translated Hell in the Old Testament is translated Hell in the King James Version only 31 of the 65 times it is used, and only 19 of the 65 times it is used in the New King James Version. In most cases the King James translators put the wicked in Hell, and the just in the grave even though most Protestants do not agree with the King James Version, and believe the just go directly to Heaven at death, not to sheol. The Hebrew Old Testament has them all in the grave (sheol). Almost all other translations have removed Hell from the Old Testament (American Standard Version, New American Standard Version, Revised Standard Version, New Revised Standard Version, New International Version and most others), but as long as the King James and New King James Versions are used, those who are new in Christ, and those who still need milk and not solid food will be misled by them.

**Sheol is not used with eternal in any of the sixty-five times it is used in the Old Testament, and there is no eternal torment in any of them.**

**WHEN SHEOL IS TRANSLATED GRAVE THERE ARE:**

- **18 passages with dead nations that no longer existed are spoken of as being in the grave (sheol)** Deuteronomy 32:22; Psalm 9:17; Isaiah 5:14; 14:9; 14:11; 14:15; 28:15; 28:18; 57:9; Ezekiel 31:15; 31:16; 31:17; 32:21; 32:27; Hosea 13:14; 13:14; Amos 9:2; Habakkuk 2:5.
- **18 passages with the good in the grave (sheol)** Genesis 37:35; 42:38; 44:29; 44:31; 2 Samuel 22:6; Job 14:13; 17:13; Psalm 16:10; 18:5; 30:3; 49:15; 86:13; 88:3; 116:3; 139:8 Isaiah 38:10; 88:10 Jonah 2:2.
- **13 passages with the good and bad both in the grave (sheol)** 1 Samuel 2:6; Job 7:9; 11:8; 26:6; Psalm 6:5; 89:48; 141:7; Proverbs 1:12; 30:16; 39:16; Ecclesiastes 9:19; Song Of Solomon 8:6; Isaiah 38:18.
- **16 passages with the bad in the grave (sheol)** Numbers 16:30; 16:33; Psalm 55:15; Proverbs 5:5; 7:27; 9:18; 15:14; 15:24; 23:14; 27:20; Psalm 31:17; 49:14; Job 17:16; 21:13; 24:19 1 Kings 2:6; 2:9. Of these 16 passages only 8 have the bad in the grave, not Hell and only 8 have the bad in Hell, 8 of the 65 times sheol is used
  - Sheol is not represented as a place where God torments in fire in any of the sixty-five passages, but today Hell always means eternal torment in fire; all that believe the King James Version believe a lie in thirty-one passages.
  - Everlasting or eternal is not in any of the sixty-five passages.

In the King James Version one Hebrew word is translated into three words that have completely different meaning. The thirty-four times it is translated grave and pit are a hole in the ground for the dead, but according to today's theology the thirty-one times it is translated Hell is not a place on this earth; the dead are in a place where no one is dead, or will ever be dead, this thirty-one are a place or eternal life, but the other thirty-four are not.

- The dead are in a pit on this earth three times.
- The dead are in the grave on this earth thirty-one times.
- The dead are not on this earth, and are not dead thirty-one times.

That the translators of the King James Version translated sheol into Hell less than half the time shows they found it not to fit with their theology. They made one place "sheol" be three different places, grave, pit, and Hell. **They did not, and most today who believes in Hell do not believe the grave and Hell to be the same place. How did the translators know when the same word was one place that is on this earth (grave), or when it was another place that is not on this earth (Hell)? Where did that get the authority to say God used the same Hebrew word with two entirely different meaning even when it is in the same passage, sheol was made to be two completely different places.** To translate the same word, sometimes in the same passage, both grave—a common noun, and then changed this common noun into a proper noun, Hell, is like translating the same word into white thirty-one times and black thirty-one times. Is it that they could not find a way to put their view, the Protestant view, into the Bible and had to settle for the best they could, even if it was not what they believed, even if it did not always put all the saved in Heaven immediately after death, or did not put all the lost immediately in Hell? There is nothing in the Hebrew that would make it mean one place (grave) in one passage, and another completely different place (Hell) in another; they

picked the passages where they thought they could put their Theology in the Bible and get away with it.

- Sheol is translated pit three times.
- Sheol is translated grave thirty-one times.
- Sheol is translated Hell thirty-one times.

### **THE THIRTY-ONE "GRAVE" TRANSLATIONS**

It is hid from those who use the King James Version that "grave" in these thirty-one passages is the same word that is translated "Hell" in thirty-one passages and "pit" in three passages. Did the translators do this deliberately? **The definition of death by today's theology is that death is only separation of an immortal soul from God. If that were right, then the separated soul could not be in sheol (the grave), for if it were then it could not be in Hell where they believe it to be.** If those in sheol were alive, sheol would have to be two places.

1. One place where the righteous dead in sheol would be in Heaven.
2. Another place where the unrighteous dead in sheol would be in Hell.

### **WHERE ARE THE DEAD?**

#### **According to the Old Testament**

**Where the dead are depends on which translation you use.**

1. The King James Version used the same word to put the dead in both the grave and Hell at the same time without and before the judgment, and by putting the dead in the grave, it destroyed the Protestant view that **all** the dead are in Heaven or Hell and none are in sheol.
2. The American Standard Version and many others leaves sheol not translated, and put **all the dead in sheol** with none in Heaven or Hell before the resurrection.
3. The New International Version translated sheol into grave, and puts **all the dead in the grave**, both the good and the bad; this translation also puts none of the dead in Heaven or Hell before the resurrection and Judgment Day.

I read the Bible for many years without seeing this so I can understand how many read it and cannot see through their theology, and cannot see what God has so clearly said, that not now or at the judgment we can have no excuse for not understanding and believing His word. No excuse for teaching something in His name, which is in opposition to what God did say.

### **THE THIRTY-ONE "HELL" TRANSLATIONS**

In the Hebrew, sheol is a common noun as is grave in English (**sheol** a common noun in Hebrew = **grave** a common noun in English). How can a common noun be translated into a proper noun (**sheol** a common noun in Hebrew = **Hell** a proper noun in English)? It is against all rules of translation to change a common noun into a proper noun.

The King James Version left it a common noun thirty-four times, but thirty-one times they changed it into a proper noun. The same word, which is a common noun, is translated into two common nouns, grave and pit, and one proper noun, Hell. Which one did they think it is, common or proper? How did they know when they should change this common noun to a proper noun? They put Hezekiah, a godly king in the grave (Isaiah 38:10) but put the wicked in Hell (Psalm 9:17) despite the fact that God used the same word (sheol-grave) for where both would be after their death.



The New American Standard Version did not translate it, but used the Hebrew word in the English translation; however, they capitalized the common noun as if it were a proper noun.

The New International Version translates the common noun "sheol" into the common noun "grave" sixty times and into the common noun "death" five times and did not capitalize it.

In none of the sixty-five passages where sheol is used is it said to be a place of fire or torment. It is said to be a place of silence and darkness, but never fire. Sheol is never used with the word eternal or everlasting, and sheol will be destroyed (Hosea 13:14).

### **HOW SHEOL IS TRANSLATED ALL SIXTY-FIVE TIMES IN THE KING JAME VERSION**

- Bad individuals in a pit, a hole in the earth in 3 passages.
- Nations in the grave in 4 passages.
- Nations in Hell in 14 passages.
- Good individuals in the grave in 11 passages.
- Bad individuals in the grave in 7 passages.
- Both good and bad individuals in the grave in 9 passages.
- Both good individuals in Hell in 9 passages.
- Bad individuals in Hell in only 8 of the 65 passages that has sheol.

#### **(1) DOWN INTO A PIT, A HOLE IN THE EARTH** (In 3 passages)

(1) Numbers 16:30 *"But if the Lord make a new thing, and the earth open her mouth, and swallow them up, with all that appertain unto them. And they go down quick into the **PIT** (sheol-Hell)." They and all that belong to them fell into the pit in the ground. It is undeniable that the "pit" is a hole in the ground that they fell into. Does anyone think this hole in the ground is Hell? The translators of the King James Version did not seem to. They went down into sheol alive, their earthly bodies alive with all their belongings fell into the hole in the ground, which was their grave. Can the earthly body go alive to a place for an immaterial soul? Can anyone take all their earthly belongings with them to Hell or Heaven? This simply says they were buried alive, and that all their belongings were buried with them, not that they took their belongings with them to Hell. Physical things, such as all their belongings and weapons of war (Ezekiel 32:26-27) are put in graves, but not in "Hell." Neither could they have taken their things to the bad side of hades that many believe in, or a subterranean chamber under the earth where some think all the dead go.*

(2) Numbers 16:32-33 *"And the earth opened her mouth, and swallowed them up, and their houses, and all the men that appertained unto Korah, and all their goods. They and all that appertained to them, went down alive into the **PIT** (sheol-Hell), and the earth closed upon them: and they perished from among the congregation." It was their earthly bodies that went into their grave (sheol) while they were alive; they had not died unto the earth closed upon their bodies, "they perished from the midst of the assembly." Do any that believe in Hell think they went to Hell while their bodies were alive? It was not their immortal souls that went to Hell, or to either side of a subterranean chamber under the earth; God called this hole in the ground in which they were buried alive, sheol, not Hell.*

(3) Job 17:13-16 *"If I wait, the **GRAVE** (sheol-Hell) is mine house: I have made my bed in the darkness...They shall go down to the bars of the **PIT** (sheol-Hell), when our rest together is in the dust." The dead rest in the dust in bed in darkness, a description of being asleep in the grave, but definitely not a description of being awake in Hell or*

Heaven; both Korah and Job went to sheol, not to Heaven or Hell. The same word in the same context is translated both grave and pit.

## (2) THE NATIONS IN SHEOL (In 18 passages)

### Nations in the grave (In 4 passages)

**Passages that are speaking of the destruction of nations and says nothing about the destruction of any individuals, nothing about where any individual will be after death.**

**In the King James Version,**

- **Four of the sixty-five passages with sheol that puts the nations in the grave.**
- **Fourteen of the thirty-one passages that translated sheol into Hell that puts the nations in Hell.**
  - Do some evil nations die and go to the grave, but other evil nations are tormented in an eternal Hell? Do nations of this earth go to a place of torment that most now believe to be not on this earth?

**These eighteen passages have nothing to do with individuals; although what is said in these passages do not in anyway fit with today's theology of "Hell," they are often changed from speaking of nations to speaking of individuals to prove a place of eternal torment for individuals,** mostly by the Jonathan Edwards type of Hell fire preacher who take them out of their context of speaking about the end of nations, and make them be speaking of lost individuals that they will have no end, but will live forever being tormented by God.

- Changed from **the end of** nations.
- To the **endlessness** of individuals.

(1) Isaiah 14:11 *"Your pomp is brought down to the **GRAVE** (sheol), and the noise of your viols: the worm is spread under you, and the worms cover you."* In the same context in the King James Version sheol is translated:

1. **Hell** in Isaiah 14:9, is the nation of Babylon being tormented in Hell?
  2. **Grave** in Isaiah 14:11, or is Babylon a dead nation that no longer existed?
  3. **Hell** in Isaiah 14:15, or did the translators change there mind again and bring Babylon back from the grave only to be tormented in Hell?
- According to the theology of today "Hell" and "grave" are two completely difference places, two places that have nothing in common, they are not synonyms, yet they are translated from the same word in the same passage. When translators are this irresponsible there is no way that their reader can know when they are reading what God said or what the translators wanted them to read.

In all three it is Israel's *"taunt against the king of Babylon"* (Isaiah 14:4), and is speaking of the destruction of Babylon, and Babylon joining the other dead nations in the grave (Isaiah 14:9-10). They do not seem to know whether they wanted to put Babylon in "Hell" or in the "grave." How inconsistent could they be? They were just as inconsistent throughout the Old Testament. *"Maggots are spread out as your bed beneath you, and worms are your covering"* New American Standard Bible. The worms that eat the body are in the grave, not maggots in Heaven or Hell; Babylon was dead and in its grave.

(2) Ezekiel 31:15 *"Thus says the Lord God; 'In the day when he went down to the **GRAVE** (sheol) I caused a mourning.'"* See notes on Ezekiel 31:16 where sheol is translated "Hell."

(3) And (4) Hosea 13:14 *"I will ransom them from the power to the **GRAVE** (sheol); I will redeem them from death: O death, I will be your plagues; **O GRAVE** (sheol), I will be your destruction."* This is God redeeming the nation of Israel from captivity, not individual Jews being resurrected from the grave. The whole chapter is about the nation of Israel; God brought them out of captivity in Egypt (Hosea 13:4). *"It is your destruction, O Israel, that you are against me, against your help. Where now is your king that he may save you in all your cities, and your judges of whom you requested, 'Give me a king and a prince'? I gave you a king in My anger, and took him away in My wrath"* (Hosea 13:9-11). *"O Israel, return unto Jehovah your God; for you have fallen by your iniquity"* (Hosea 14:1). The translators did not believe any one would be redeemed, individuals or nations, from Hell; therefore, they have the redeeming being from the grave; if they had translated sheol into Hell they would have had Hell being destroyed by God (*"O sheol I will be your destruction"*), but the Hell they believed in could not be destroyed, and no one could ever be redeemed from it.

Because 1 Corinthians 15:54 says, *"Then shall come to pass the saying that is written,"* many think Paul quoted Hosea 13:14 in 1 Corinthians 15:55, but it is difficult to see how *"Death is swallowed up in victory. O death, where is your victory? O death where is your sting?"* is a quotation from *"O death, I will be your plagues; O grave I will be your destruction"* (Hosea 13:14). Hosea was speaking of Israel rebellion being their plagues and destruction. Paul was speaking of death being swallowed up in victory by the resurrection at the second coming of Christ.

- Hosea was speaking of **the destruction** of Israel.
- Paul was speaking of **the victory** of the faithful.
- **Neither Hosea nor Paul was speaking of eternal torment after death.**

Hebrew parallelism:

*"I will ransom them (the nation of Israel) from the power to the **GRAVE** (sheol)"*  
*"I will redeem them (the nation of Israel) from death"*

#### Nations in Hell in 14 passages

(1) Deuteronomy 32:22 **God's anger toward Israel.** *"For a fire is kindled in mine anger, and shall burn unto the lowest **HELL** (sheol) ("To the depths of Sheol" New Revised Standard Version), and shall consume the earth with her increase, and set on fire the foundations of the mountains."* Hundreds of years from Genesis to Deuteronomy had passed, and it was not unto the seventh time sheol is used before the King James translators thought they could put the Hell they believed in into the Bible. But, what does this passage say? Jeshurun forsook God (32:15).

- They (Israel) provoked God to jealousy with strange gods (32:16).
- They (Israel) sacrificed unto devils (32:17).
- They (Israel) moved God to jealousy with that which is not a god, and provoked Him to anger (32:21).
- In God's anger, a fire is kindled which would burn to the lowest sheol (grave), and shall consume the earth (32:22).

This fire is on earth, and shall (figuratively) consume the earth, not torment individuals in Hell. Deuteronomy 32:23-26 says:

The "how" of this burning *"unto the lowest hell (grave-sheol),"* is described in Deuteronomy 32:21-26 in a way that it could not be the "Hell" that is believed in by

many today, but is God's anger with the nation of Israel. This is almost a repeat of Leviticus 26:14ff of what would happen to Israel if they did not obey God.

- Verse 21 *"I will provoke them (Israel) to anger with a foolish nation."*
- Verse 22 *"And consumes the earth with it yield."*
- Verse 23 *"I will heap disasters upon them (Israel)."*
- Verse 24 *"They (Israel) shall be wasted with hunger, devoured with pestilence."*  
See 2 Samuel 24:13-15; Exodus 9:15; 2 Chronicles 21:14
- Verse 24 *"And the teeth of beasts I will send upon them (Israel), with the venom of crawling things of the dust."*
- Verse 25 *"The sword will destroy outside."*
- Verse 26 *"I would scatter them (Israel) afar, I would make the remembrance of them (Israel) to cease from among men."*
  - *"For they (Israel) are a nation lacking in counsel, and there is no understanding in them"* (Deuteronomy 32:28).

**All this, including the fire unto the lowest grave, is God's punishment to the nation of Israel at that time. All these punishments are those that can only be inflicted on the living, not on an immaterial, invisible part of a person that has no substance. There is not one word about any individual, or about anyone burning in Hell after death, or nothing is said about anything after the judgment at the second coming of Christ.** If it were a Hell, there would be beast, poison serpents, swords, etc. in Hell. Suckling babies would be destroyed in Hell.

If "*lowest Hell*" spoken of in this passage were the "Hell" that is taught today, was Israel forever tormented by God in this "*lowest Hell*"? Or was Israel in captivity for a period of time, then came out of captivity, and was restored as a nation? See Psalm 86:13 below where in the King James Version David says he was delivered out of the "*lowest Hell*." Had David literally been in Hell and delivered out of it before his death, or had David been delivered from death and the grave (sheol), or had the nation of Israel literally been in Hell, or had Israel had been in exile (the lowest grave) and delivered out of it and had returned to their homeland? How many Hells did the translators believe in?

#### **MORE THAN ONE HELL!**

*"Unto the lowest hell"* King James Version

*"Unto the lowest Sheol"* American Standard Version

If there were a lowest Hell there would be other Hells above it. Some that believe in Hell has changed this to the lowest level of Hell in an attempt to keep from having more than one Hell, but according to the King James Version there is a lowest Hell; therefore, must be one or more Hell's above the lowest Hell. It is undeniable that according to the King James Version there is more than one Hell, the lowest Hell with other Hells above it or it could not be the lowest.

**From Genesis to Deuteronomy, centuries had passed before the King James translators first put Hell in the Bible although sheol had been used often. Hundreds more years passed before the New King James translators translated sheol into Hell the second time.**

**Five out of the first thirty-six:** The New King James Version translates "sheol" into Hell only five times out of the first thirty-six times "sheol" is used.

- The first 6 times sheol was used it was not translated Hell.

1. **The 7th time sheol is used is the first time it is translated "Hell" and then it is the nation of Israel that is in "Hell", not individuals, Deuteronomy 32:22.**
  - The next 12 times sheol was used it was not translated Hell.
2. **The 20th time sheol is used is the second time it is translated "Hell"** where the wicked nations that forget God "*return to sheol*" Psalm 9:17. Psalm 9:17-20 is speaking of nations that forget God and are judged by Him. Centuries has passed from when Adam sinned and was put out of the garden before the King James translators thought they had found a second place where it was safe to put "Hell" in the Bible. Did it not mean Hell in eighteen of the first twenty times sheol is used? Did it mean "grave" a place on this earth for centuries and then the same word was changed to "Hell," a place not on this earth? How did a word that is:
  - A place where there is no life or torment
  - Be changed to a place of eternal life in torment?
    - A place that is on this earth
    - Be changed to a place not on this earth?

Grave and Hell (as the word is used today) have nothing in common; how did the translators get the two completely different words out of the same Hebrew word?
3. **The 28th time sheol is used is only the third time it is translated "Hell"** Psalm 55:15. **THIS IS THE FIRST PASSAGE WHERE IT IS AN INDIVIDUAL THAT IS PUT IN HELL (SHEOL, GRAVE) IN THE KING JAMES VERSION.** The first two times it was nations that the translators put in Hell, not people.
4. **The 33rd time sheol is used is only the fourth time it is translated "Hell"** Psalm 139:8. Then it is David who said, "*If I make my bed in hell, behold, You are there.*" Did David believe he would be in Hell, and that God would also be there? Is there a bed in the Hell that is taught today where there will be no rest day or night? The just will make the bed in sheol, will sleep in the grave unto the resurrection, but the just cannot make there bed in the Hell that is taught today.
5. **The 36th time sheol is used is only the fifth time it is translated "Hell"** Proverbs 5:5. In thirty-one times sheol is used before this is either translated grave or pit. **Even in "Hell's Bible," the King James Version, the translators did not think sheol means "Hell" in thirty-one of the first thirty-six times it is used, and did not translate it "Hell."**

(2) Psalm 9:15-17 *"The nations have sunk down in the pit which they have made...The Lord is known by the judgment which he executes: the wicked is snared in the work of his own hands ... The wicked shall be turned into **HELL** (grave-sheol), and all the nations that forget God" ("return to Sheol" New American Standard Bible, Psalm 9:15-17).* The same thing will happen to both the wicked persons and the nations that forget God. They both will go to sheol, the grave. Does anyone some think evil nations live in torment in Hell after the nations no longer exists on this earth, or that the most evil nations do not have some good people in them that would not be in Hell? Both will be in the grave, both will be dead, not both in eternal tormented in Hell. According to the American Standard Version the wicked are the wicked nations. *"The wicked shall be turned back unto sheol, even all the nations that forget God."* Psalm 9:15-20 is speaking of the nations that forget God. There is no threat of after-death punishment of nations or individuals in this passage.

(3) Isaiah 5:14 *"Therefore my people (Israel) are gone into captivity, because they have no knowledge: and their honorable men are famished, and their multitude dried up with thirst. Therefore, **HELL** (grave-sheol) has enlarged herself and opened her mouth without measure."* Because Israel had left the Lord, the nation went into captivity. See Proverbs 27:20 above. Their captivity was a grave (sheol) to them as a nation; grave is used as a metaphor of their captivity, their death as a nation, a literal grave cannot enlarge herself. Can anyone tell me why the translators put the nation of Israel in Hell; does a nation in captivity make Hell be on the earth, and make Hell end when the captivity of that nation ends?

(4) Isaiah 14:9 *"**HELL** (sheol "grave" in margin of King James Version) from beneath is moved for thee to meet you at your coming: it stirs up the dead (rephaim) for you, even all the chief ones of the earth; it has raised up from the earth; it has raised up from their thrones all the kings of the nations. All they shall speak and say unto you, Are you also become weak as we? Are you become like unto us?"* This is a symbolical deception of the fall of Babylon, and says nothing about where any individual person will be after their death. In this metaphor, the past dead nations were surprised to see a nation as strong as Babylon joining them. If the souls that had been in the persons that are dead, if these souls were alive in sheol, why would they be surprised to see other the souls that had been in other persons joining them when all would? Isaiah 26:14 *"They (the Nations) are dead, (rephaim) they shall not live; they are deceased, they shall not rise; therefore has you visited and destroyed them, and made all remembrance of them to perish."* This is about nations that did not remember God. It has nothing to do with an immortal immaterial something that was in a person after death being tormented by God after the death of the person. Because dead nations (not dead souls) are speaking in verse 9, the King James Version translated it Hell, but verse 11 has worms and worms feed on dead bodies not an immaterial immortal souls; therefore, they translated it "grave." This parable where dead nations speak is not to be taken literally any more than the parable before it where the trees speak (Isaiah 14:8). If it were taken literally, it would be a completely different Hell than any Hell that is taught today, a Hell where God "visited and destroyed them, and made all remembrance of them to perish." God destroyed nations, but in the Hell that is taught today the soul that had been in anyone can ever be destroyed. If this were speaking of souls in Hell, these souls were destroyed and all remembrance of them perished; how did the translators think they could get the Hell they believed in out of this passage?

(5) Isaiah 14:15 *"Yet you shall be brought down to **HELL** (grave-sheol)."* See Isaiah 14:9 above. The picture of maggots and worms covering the king of Babylon (Isaiah 14:15), and warriors lying with their swords under their heads (Ezekiel 32:27) is a picture of the grave, and is far from what the Hell is that is taught today.

(6) (7) Isaiah 28:15 and Isaiah 28:18 *"Wherefore hear the word of the Lord, you scornful men, that rule this people which is in Jerusalem. Because you have said, we have made a covenant with death, and with **HELL** (grave-sheol) (**Hell changed to sheol in New King James Version**) are we at agreement; when the overflowing scourge shall pass through, it shall not come unto us."* Isaiah 28:18 *"And your covenant with death shall be disannulled, and your agreement with **HELL** (grave-sheol) (**Hell changed to sheol in New King James Version**) shall not stand; when the overflowing scourge shall pass through, then you shall be trodden down by it."* When the "overflowing scourge"

(army) passed through, many would die, but they thought they could escape death and the grave. This is the nation of Israel that had made a covenant with some and thought they were safe from them, but were not; it is not about any soul that had been in any person being tormented in Hell.

(8) Isaiah 57:9 *"And you went to the king with ointment, and did increase your perfumes, and did send your messengers far off, and did debase yourself even unto **HELL** (grave-sheol) (**Hell changed to sheol in New King James Version**)."* See Isaiah 57:8-13 and notes on Proverbs 15:24 above. Israel is spoken of as a woman who is unfaithful to her husband (God). Ultimately this leads to the death of any nation. Does anyone believe nations will be forever tormented in Hell; does anyone believe the nation of Israel is or has ever been in eternal torment in an eternal Hell? Nothing is said about a soul that had been in any person being in Hell.

(9) Ezekiel 31:16 In this chapter God is saying to Egypt about Assyria, *"I made the nations to shake at the sound of his fall, when I cast him down to **HELL** (grave-sheol) with them that descend into the pit: and all the trees of Eden, the choice and best of Lebanon."* This chapter of Ezekiel is about a nation, Assyria, which God had cast down and it was no more, not souls being tormented in Hell, see notes on Isaiah 14:9-20 above.

(10) Ezekiel 31:17 *"They also went down into **HELL** (grave-sheol) with him unto them that be slain with the sword; and they that were his arm, that dwelled under his shadow in the midst of the heathen."* The nations around Assyria also perished.

In the same context, the King James Version translated the same Hebrew word both Hell and grave.

- **Sheol translated grave** in Ezekiel 31:15. Assyria is a dead nation in the grave.
- **Sheol translated Hell** in Ezekiel 31:16. The nation of Assyria is alive and being tormented in Hell.
- **Sheol translated Hell** in Ezekiel 31:17. The nation of Assyria is alive and being tormented in Hell.

**In the same passage the King James Version put the same nation (Assyria) in both the grave and in Hell at the same time.** Ezekiel 31:15-17 *"Thus says the Lord God; in the day when he went down to the **grave** (sheol-Hell) I caused a mourning: I covered the deep for him, and I restrained the floods thereof, and the great waters were stayed: and I caused Lebanon to mourn for him, and all the trees of the field fainted for him. 16. I made the nations to shake at the sound of his fall, when I cast him down to **HELL** (grave-sheol) with them that **descend into the pit**: and all the trees of Eden, the choice and best of Lebanon, all that drink water, shall be comforted in the earth beneath. 17. They also went down into **HELL** (grave-sheol) with him unto them that be slain with sword; and they that were his arm, that dwelt under his shadow in the midst of the heathen (Hebrew-nations and nations in many translations)."*

(11) Ezekiel 32:21 *"The strong among the mighty shall speak to him out of the midst of **HELL** (grave-sheol)."* Egypt will join the other mighty nations in **sheol** (the grave). Ezekiel is talking about nations that have gone out of existence, not bodiless souls. In this metaphor dead nations have the power to speak. *"They have come down and they lie with the uncircumcised, with those killed by the sword. Assyria is there with her whole army; she is surrounded by the graves of all her slain, all who have fallen by the sword. Their graves are in the depths of the pit and her army lies around her grave. All who had*

*spread terror in the land of the living are slain, fallen by the sword” (Ezekiel 32:21-23 New International Version).*

(12) Ezekiel 32:26-27 *“There is Meshech, Tubal, and all her multitude: her graves are round about him: all to the uncircumcised slain by the sword, through they caused their terror in the land of the living. And do they not lie with the mighty that are fallen of the uncircumcised, which are gone down to **HELL** (grave-sheol) with their weapons of war: and they have laid their swords under their heads, but their iniquities shall be upon their bones.”* Swords under their heads refer to the ancient practice of burying the weapons of warriors with them. Their weapons of war could be under their heads in the grave, but not taken by souls to Hell after the persons had been killed, or to a subterranean chamber for souls someplace under ground. Those who believe in Hell do not believe any belongings from this life can be taken to Hell; those who believe souls of the dead are storied in a chamber do not believe they have their weapons. It was those that were killed by the sword that were in the grave with their weapons under their head; they have gone down to the grave with their swords under their heads, not down under the earth to Hell. Not many now believe Hell is under the earth as those did when the King James Version was made.

(13) Amos 9:1-4 King James Version: *“I saw the Lord standing upon the altar; and he said,*

1. *Smite the lintel of the door, that the posts may shake:*
2. *And cut them in the head, all of them;*
3. *And I will slay the last of them with the sword:*
4. *He that flees of them shall not flee away,*
5. *And he that escapes of them shall not be delivered.*
6. *Though they dig into **HELL** (grave-sheol), thence shall mine hand take them;*
7. *Though they climb up to heaven, thence will I bring them down;*
8. *And though they hid themselves in the top of Carmel, I will search and take them out thence;*
9. *And though they be hid from my sight in the bottom of the sea, thence will I command the serpent, and he shall bite them:*
10. *And though they go into captivity before their enemies, thence will I command the sword, and it will slay them; and I will set mine eyes upon them for evil, and not for good.”*

Amos 8 and 9 is speaking of God punishing the nation of Israel for their sins, not tormenting souls in Hell after their death. *“Have I not brought up Israel from the land of Egypt...And I will destroy it from the face of the earth” (Amos 9:7-10).* There was no place where Israel could flee from God. Even if they dug into the grave (sheol) God would find them. Many of the graves were caves or a room dug out of rock and sealed up. Does anyone think that a living person, or a nation can dig into the place where they say the “immaterial invisible” souls that were in the lost are being tormented after the death of the person it had been in? **Does anyone seriously believe any living person can literally dig into Hell?** The King James Version has Israel digging into Hell to try to avoid the wrath of God. Can “souls” in Hell run away, and can souls in Hell be slain with the sword? Will there be a sword in Hell? This is Israel that because of their unfaithfulness cannot find a place to hide from His wrath, not even by hiding in a grave or pit. The very idea of the nation of Israel or individuals digging down into the earth into



the Hell that is taught today is absurd, just as ridiculous, and unreasonable as Israel digging into a chamber under the earth where God has souls stored.

E. M. Zerr: "As a general comment on this and several verses following. It should be stated that *them* and kindred pronouns stand for the people Israel who have been so unfaithful to God...Hell and heaven are used figuratively because they are opposite terms, and denote the complete presence of God no matter where a man might flee" Amos 9:1-2, Bible Commentary, volume 4, page 314, Gogdill Foundation Publications, 1955.

E. B. Pusey: "Mount Carmel, which rises abruptly out of the sea, with depths of that ocean which it overhangs. Carmel was in two ways a hiding place. 1) Through its caves (some say 1,000, some 2,000) with which it is perforated, whose entrance sometimes scarcely admits a single man; so close to each other, that a pursuer would not discern into which the fugitive had vanished...a whole army of enemies as of nature's terrors, could hide themselves in those rock-clefts...2) Its summit, about 1800 feet above the sea, is covered with pines and oaks, and lower down with olive and laurel trees. These forests furnished hiding places to robber-hordes." From Albert Barnes Notes on the Old Testament, Amos 9:3, 1953. Not even Mount Carmel could not hide Israel from God.

There was no place Israel could hide from God. It is beyond understanding as to how the translated thought they could change sheol into Hell and make this passage teach the Hell they believed in, a place where God will forever torment bodiless souls, not the nation of Israel. All ten of these places are places where Israel could not run to hide from God, even diggings into Hell (grave) is to hide from God. One more time, if this were Hell it would be nothing like the Hell the translators were trying to put into the Bible. Who would think that anyone would dig into Hell even if they could?

(14) Habakkuk 2:5 *"Yea also, because he transgress by wine, he is a proud man, neither keeps at home, who enlarges his desire as **HELL** (grave-sheol), and is as death, and cannot be satisfied."* Habakkuk is a book of prophecy about Chaldea. Chapter 2:4-17 Chaldea conquered many nations. *"He enlarges his appetite like Sheol...He also gathers to himself all nations"* Habakkuk 2:5 New American Standard Bible. They were like a man intoxicated with power, and their desire to conquer and rule other all other nations was as the grave (sheol) that can never be satisfied. See Proverbs 27:20. Again there is absolutely nothing about eternal torment after death, or about anything after death in this passage even despite the fact that sheol-grave was changed to Hell by the King James Version.

If, as some teach, sheol is a place somewhere underground where the souls of the dead are kept, then when sheol is used 18 times in reference to nations, would not dead nations still exist and are being kept in sheol (someplace underground) with the souls of the dead? How could the same common noun be both a grave for dead nations and some kind of underground warehouse for living souls?

### (3) INDIVIDUALS IN SHEOL (In 18 passages)

#### The good in the grave in 11 passages

(1) Genesis 37:35, 42:38, 44:29, and 44:31 WHO OR WHAT WAS GOING WHERE? *"You shall bring down my gray hairs with sorrow to the **GRAVE** (sheol)."* The only word translated Hell in the Old Testament is sheol; the first three times sheol is used, if it means Hell is Jacob saying the immaterial, no substance soul that was in his son is being tormented in Hell, and when Jacob dies the immaterial soul that is in him will leave him and go down to "Hell to be with the soul that was in his son?" No, he is saying he will go down to the grave mourning the death of his son; he was not saying he expected to go to eternal torment in Hell. The King James translators know that Hell

would not teach what they wanted to teach. They did not want Jacob in **Hell**. This and many others times they know they could not translate sheol into Hell.

If Jacob's soul was going to Heaven at death, why did he say it was going **down** to his son **in sorrow**? If it was going to Heaven, he should have said it was going **up** to his son **rejoicing**. Those today who speak of going to Heaven always speak of going **up**, never **down**, and never speak of there being **sorrow** in Heaven. According to today's theology it is the soul that was in a person that goes to Heaven or Hell when the person dies; if it was the soul that was in Jacob that went "down" to sheol (the only word in the Old Testament that is translated Hell), did the soul that was in Jacob go "down" to the grave, "down" to Hell, or "down" to Heaven? Is it any wonder that most translations have taken "Hell" out of the Old Testament?

- (2) Genesis 42:38 *"Then will you bring down my gray hairs with sorrow to the **GRAVE** (sheol)."*
- (3) Genesis 44:29 *"You will bring down my gray hairs with sorrow to the **GRAVE** (sheol)."*
- (4) Genesis 44:31 *"Shall bring down the gray hairs of your servant our father with sorrow to the **GRAVE** (sheol)."*

Some say that the "grave" is the abode of departed spirits. My question to them is where did they learn that a grave is a place for living "souls" or "spirits"? A grave is a place for a dead person, not a living soul or spirit. **There is not one passage in the Bible that speaks of "departed spirits" and certainly not one that speaks of living "departed spirits" being in a grave.** This term come out of thin air. They manufacture this term and use it as if it were Biblical, and expect all others to accept their manufactured term without question when the same persons tell us, "Souls that were in the dead are not in the grave, they are now alive in Heaven or Hell."

(5) Job 14:13 *"O that you would hide **me** in the **GRAVE** (sheol), that you would keep **me** secret, until your wrath be past, that you would appoint me a set time, and remember **me!**"* Hell as it is taught today's is incomparably worse than the suffering Job wanted relief from. The translators did not dare to make this Hell for them they would have Job asking to go to Hell for relief from his sufferings; it would have made this passage be absolute nonsense, and completely impossible to harmonize with the Hell of today. *"There is none like him in the earth, a perfect and an upright man"* (Job 1:8) asking to go to "Hell" to escape his sufferings. Those who believe in Hell teach the sufferings in it are much worse than anything in this life. Job certainly would not have wanted to escape from the painful time he was having by going to a place much more painful, a place where there would be no end to suffering. *"Why died I not from the womb? Why did I not give up the ghost when my mother bare me? Why did the knees receive me, or why the breasts, that I should suck? For now should I have lain down and been quiet; I would have slept; then had I been at rest ... There the wicked cease from troubling: and there the weary are at rest"* (Job 3:11-17). Beyond any doubt, Job did not know about or believe in Hell as it is taught today. Job did not want to go to today's Hell and be tormented. **Why is it that no preacher who believes in "Hell" never speaks of "Hell" in the way Job spoke of sheol? The answer is simple, sheol did not mean a place of torment, but a place of rest, and those who preach "Hell fire" today just do not believe Job.**

(6) Job 17:13 *"If I wait, the **GRAVE** (sheol) is my house: I have made my bed in darkness. I have said to corruption, you are my father: to the worm, you are my mother, and my sister. And where is my hope? As for my hope, who shall see it? They shall go down to the bars of the **PIT** (sheol), when our rest together is in the dust."* It was clear

even to the King James translators that Job was not saying Hell was going to be his bed. He gives a description of the corruption and maggots of the grave. An undeniable statement that the grave was to be his house, not Heaven, Hell, or Abraham's bosom; he had no thought of a soul that was in him being eternally alive and being tortured in the Dark Age Hell, but all of both the good and the bad are resting in the dust. Death is never said to be a gateway to Heaven. It is described as a place of darkness and forgetfulness. In the same passage they translated the same word, sheol, into both grave and pit.

- Verse 13: "*If I wait, the **grave (sheol) is my house***" A house is an abode, not a place of torment.
- Verse 13: "*I have made my **bed in darkness.***" The darkness of the grave. Is a place of fire or darkness?
- Verse 14: "*I have said to **corruption**, you are my father.*" Corruption is in the grave.
- Verse 14: "*To the **worm**, you are my mother, and my sister.*" The worms that eat dead bodies are in the grave.
- Verse 16: "*They shall go down to the bars of the **pit** (sheol-Hell), when our **rest together is in the dust.***" There is no rest in the "Hell" that is taught today, and I know of none that think "Hell" is in the dust of the earth (Job 17:13-16).

(7) Psalm 30:3 "*O lord, you have brought up my soul from the **GRAVE** (sheol): you have kept me alive, that I should not go down to the pit.*" David was not saying he had been dead and the soul that is in him was in Hell and bought out of Hell. God had saved him from his foes and death; therefore, saved him from going to the grave. A soul did not come back from Hell. He was expressing his gratitude for his recovery and being saved from death, not being brought back from Heaven or Hell. "*You have kept me alive, that I should not go down to the pit*" and "*you have brought up my soul from the grave*" is Hebrew dualism where the same thing is said in two ways. In verse nine David said, "*What profit is there in my blood, if I go down to the pit? Will the dust praise you? Will it declare Your fullness?*" The dust of the dead is in the grave. This is Hebrew dualism where the same thing is said in two ways. David was not dead, but was giving thanks to God for saving him and keeping him alive said:

1. "*O lord, you have brought up my soul from **the grave** (sheol).*"
2. "*You have kept me alive, that I should not go down to **the pit** (bohr).*"

Grave (sheol) and pit (bohr) are parallel. What is the meaning of pit (bohr) in the Old Testament; it is used 69 times and in the King James Version is translated pit 42 times, dungeon 13 times, well 9 times, cistern 4 times and fountain 1 time. All except maybe fountain, which would have been better translated well or cistern, means a hole in the ground (a grave, pit, or well which was dug by man, or a natural pit-hole), not a place where an immaterial, invisible something that is in a person would go down to, and not a chamber someplace under ground where all deathless souls are kept together unto the resurrection, or a chamber that has two sides, one side for the saved souls and one side for the lost souls.

**PIT** (bohr), which is used in Hebrew parallelism or dualism as being parallel in meaning to **GRAVE** (sheol) is a hole in the ground, and was a pit or well that was sometimes dug by man.

"Cast him (Joseph) into some **pit** (bohr)" Genesis 37:20

"Cast him into this **pit** (bohr)" Genesis 37:22

"Cast him into a **pit** (bohr): and the **pit** (bohr) was..." Genesis 37:24

"Reuben returned unto the **pit** (bohr); and behold, Joseph was not in the **pit** (bohr)" Genesis 37:29

"Should put me into the **dungeon** (bohr)" Genesis 40:15

"Brought him hastily out of the **dungeon** (bohr)" Genesis 41:14

"The captive that was in the **dungeon** (bohr)" Exodus 12:29  
 "Open a **pit** (bohr), or if a man shall dig a **pit** (bohr)" Exodus 12:33  
 "The owner of the **pit** (bohr) shall make" Exodus 21:34  
 "Nevertheless a fountain or **pit** (bohr)" Leviticus 11:36  
 "And **wells** (bohr) dug" Deuteronomy 6:1  
 "In high places, and in **pits** (bohr)" 1 Samuel 13:6  
 "Came to a great **well** (bohr)" 1 Samuel 19:22  
 "Brought him again from the **well** (bohr)" 2 Samuel 3:26  
 "The water of the **well** (bohr) of Bethlehem" 2 Samuel 23:15  
 "Drew water out of the **well** (bohr)" 2 Samuel 23:16  
 "In the midst of a **pit** (bohr) in time" 2 Samuel 23:20  
 "Slew them at the **pit** (bohr) of the shearing house" 2 Kings 10:14  
 "The water of his **cistern** (bohr)" 2 Kings 18:31  
 "The water of the **well** (bohr) of Bethlehem" 1 Chronicles 11:17  
 "Drew water out of the **well** (bohr) of Bethlehem" 1 Chronicles 11:18  
 "Slew a lion in a **pit** (bohr)" 1 Chronicles 11:22  
 "Dug many **wells** (bohr)" 2 Chronicles 26:10  
 "**Wells** (bohr) dug" Nehemiah 9:25  
 "He made a **pit** (bohr), and dug it" Psalm 7:15-16  
 "Them that go down into the **pit** (bohr)" Psalm 28:1  
 "That I should not go down into the **pit** (bohr)" Psalm 30:3  
 "Out of an horrible **pit** (bohr)" Psalm 40:2  
 "Them that go down into the **pit** (bohr)...like the slain who lie in the grave" Psalm 88:4-5  
 "You have laid me in the lowest **pit** (bohr)" Psalm 88:6  
 "Them that do down into the **pit** (bohr)" Psalm 143:7  
 "As those that go down into the **pit** (bohr)" Proverbs 1:12  
 "Drink waters out of your own **cistern** (bohr)" Proverbs 5:15  
 "Person shall flee to the **pit** (bohr)" Proverbs 28:17  
 "To the sides of the **pit** (bohr)" Isaiah 14:15  
 "That go down to the stones of the **pit** (bohr)" Isaiah 14:19  
 "Prisoners are gathered in the **pit** (bohr)" Isaiah 24:22  
 "The waters of his own **cistern** (bohr)" Isaiah 36:16  
 "They that go down into the **pit** (bohr)" Isaiah 38:18  
 "To the hole of the **pit** (bohr)" Isaiah 51:1  
 "As a **fountain** (bohr) cast out" Jeremiah 6:7  
 "Into the **dungeon** (bohr)" Jeremiah 37:16  
 "Cast him into the **dungeon** (bohr)" Jeremiah 38:6  
 "And in the **dungeon** (bohr) there was no" Jeremiah 38:6  
 "Had put Jeremiah in the **dungeon** (bohr)" Jeremiah 38:7  
 "They have cast into the **dungeon** (bohr)" Jeremiah 38:9  
 "The prophet out of the **dungeon** (bohr)" Jeremiah 38:10  
 "Down by cords into the **dungeon** (bohr)" Jeremiah 38:11  
 "Took him up out of the **dungeon** (bohr)" Jeremiah 38:13  
 "Into the midst of the **pit** (bohr)" Jeremiah 41:7  
 "Now the **pit** (bohr) wherein Ishmael" Jeremiah 41:9  
 "Cut off my life in the **dungeon** (bohr)" Lamentations 3:53  
 "Out of the low **dungeon** (bohr)" Lamentations 3:55  
 "With them that descend into the **pit** (bohr)" Ezekiel 26:20; 31:16  
 "With them that go down to the **pit** (bohr)" Ezekiel 26:20; 30:16; 31:14; 32:24; 32:25; 32:29; 32:30  
 "With them that go down into the **pit** (bohr)" Ezekiel 32:18

“Set in the sides of the **pit** (bohr)” Ezekiel 32:23

“Sent forth your prisoners out of the **pit** (bohr)” Zechariah 9:11

In Psalm 30:9 David spoke of going down to the pit, but used gath, which is translated much the same way as bohr, pit 13 times, ditch 2 times, grave 1 time, corruption 4 times and destruction 2 times in the King James Version.

“That I should not go down to **the pit** (bohr)” verse 2

“You have brought up my soul (Nshahmah—life) from **the grave** (sheol)” verse 3

“When I go down to **the pit** (gath)” verse 9

Sheol, bohr and gath are also used by in Isaiah 38:17-18. “Behold, for peace I had great bitterness: but you have in love to my soul (nshahmah—life) delivered it from **the pit** (gath) of nothingness (foot note—destruction—New American Standard Bible) for you have cast all my sins behind your back. For **the grave** (sheol) cannot praise you, death cannot celebrate you: they that go down into **the pit** (bohr) cannot hope for your truth”

His life was delivered from the pit of corruption, the grave for the grave cannot praise God; the pit of corruption and the grave are the same, corruption is in the grave, but there could be no corruption in a chamber someplace under ground where an immaterial, incorruptible something that had been in a person was stored.

“Yet shall you plunge me **in the ditch** (gath)” Job 9:21

“I have said to **corruption** (gath), you are my father” Job 17:14

“Deliver him from going down **in the pit** (gath)” Job 33:28

“Is fallen **into the ditch** (gath)” Psalm 7:15

“Down **into the pit** of destruction (gath)” Psalm 55:23

“Soul” as it is used today (an immaterial immortal something that is in a person) would have no need to be delivered from the grave, a pit of corruption, where a soul would never be if it were not subject to death or corruption.

Summary: Bohr is used in Hebrew parallelism or dualism as being parallel in meaning to grave (sheol); it is a hole in the ground and was sometimes dug by man. Both bohr and gath are a pit, dungeon or well, a real place on this earth that the living can go down into and come up out of as Joseph when he was cast into a pit; David was asking God not to let him die or be killed, and go down to the pit; they are not a place where bodiless souls are put; they are not a subterranean chamber someplace under ground where all immaterial, bodiless, living, but totally unconscious and unaware of anything souls are kept together, not God’s warehouse where He keeps both the unconscious souls of the saved and the unconscious souls of the lost together unto the resurrection; or not a chamber that has two sides, one side for the conscious souls of the saved, and one side for the conscious souls of the lost that are in torment. It is used in Hebrew dualism in verse 2 as parallel in meaning to sheol—grave.

(8) Psalm 88:3 “And my life draws nigh unto **the GRAVE** (sheol).” He thought he would soon die and be in the grave, not his soul would soon be in Hell. This is one of the good guys, but he clearly indicates that he was expecting to be in sheol soon; therefore, sheol was not translated Hell. He asked, “Will you show wonders to the dead? Shall they that are deceased arise and praise you? Shall your loving kindness be declared in the grave? Or your faithfulness in destruction? Shall your wonders be known in the dark? And your righteousness in the land of forgetfulness?” (Psalm 88:10-12). It is certain that this righteous man did not think his soul would be alive in Heaven, or conscious any place after death, and this Psalm is a prayer for deliverance from death; he was asking to be saved from the darkness of death, not from the light of Heaven. “I am counted among

*those who go down to the pit*" (Psalm 88:4), the word pit in Psalm 88:4 is the same word used in Genesis 37:20 where Joseph's brothers were going to put Joseph after they had killed him.

(9) Isaiah 38:9-12 *"A writing of Hezekiah king of Judah, after his illness and recovery: I said in the cutting off of my days, I shall go to the gates of **the GRAVE** (sheol): I am deprived of the residue of my years... You do make an end of me."* King Hezekiah, a godly king of Israel when he was ill had thought he would die and go to the grave before he was old, but the Lord heard his prayer and said, *"Behold, I will add fifteen years to your life"* (Isaiah 38:5). He was given fifteen years before he went to the grave (sheol), not fifteen years before he when to Hell. If sheol had been translated Hell in this passage, he would have said he expected to go into eternal torment in Hell. Everyone can see why the translators did not choose to translate this "sheol" into "Hell."

(10) Isaiah 38:16-18 King Hezekiah continues by asking God, *"Restore me to health, and let me live...for **the GRAVE** (sheol) cannot praise you, death cannot celebrate you: they that go down into the pit cannot hope for your truth."* No distinction is made of the dead. Neither the good or bad dead can praise God, both are asleep. If the souls that were in the good dead are living in Heaven, why could these immaterial souls not praise God? Those who go down to the pit (the grave) are asleep, and they know nothing; they cannot hope for God's truth while they are asleep. (1) Death, (2) pit, (3) and grave (sheol) are used interchangeably in this passage. If the faithful goes to Heaven at death, why was Hezekiah earnestly praying not to go to Heaven?

(11) Psalm 49:15 *"But God will redeem my soul from the power of **the GRAVE** (sheol) for he shall receive me."* Like the above this Psalm seems to be speaking of life being prolonged or saved from the grave, not a return to life after death. The translators did not believe God would redeem soul any from Hell. If the writer of this Psalm was speaking of being redeemed from sheol after his death, and sheol had been translated Hell, then this passage would be saying the writer of this Psalm would have expected to be in Hell and then to be redeemed from it. It was his life (nshahmah) that was saved from the grave; those that believe there is an immaterial soul in us do not believe a deathless soul will ever be in a grave.

#### **The bad in the grave in 7 passages**

(1) 1 Kings 2:6 *"And let not his hoar head go down to **the GRAVE** (sheol) in peace."* No soul could have peace while it was being burned by Satan, or burned by God with a fire many times hotter than any fire on earth, and tormented far worse than any torment known to anyone. The Hell preached today is not a place of peace. In 1 Kings 2:6-9 David is telling Solomon not to let Joab die peacefully because of the evil he had done; David is instructing Solomon to see that justice was done to Joab. There is nothing about something in Joab being forever tormented in Hell in this. David knew Solomon had the power to bring Joab down the grave, but no one has the power to send a soul to the "Hell" that is preached today, but to make this teach their theology, they seem to be more than willing to give Solomon the power to send the soul that was in Joab to Hell.

(2) 1 Kings 2:9 *"But his hoar head bring you down to **the GRAVE** (sheol) with blood,"* see notes on 1 Kings 2:6 above. A man can shed the blood of another man and bring him down to the grave, but only God could say a soul was going to Hell if there were a Hell.

(3) Job 21:13 *"They spend their day in wealth, and in a moment go down to **the GRAVE** (sheol)." "Together they lie sown in the dust, and worms cover them" 21:26.* They *"go down to the grave,"* not something that was in them goes to somewhere out in space, or who knows where. Any torment in the grave (sheol) has to be read into this passage. The New International Version says, *"And they go down to the grave in peace."* In Job 3:17-19 Job gives a picture of sheol—the grave with the wicked at rest that is nothing like today's teaching of the soul or all being in Heaven, or tormented in Hell; there is nothing said about the wicked after the grave, nothing about Heaven or Hell. *" There the wicked cease from raging, and there the weary are at rest. The prisoners are at ease together; they do not hear the voice of the taskmaster. The small and the great are there, and the slave is free from his master."* They all sleep; Job would be out of his torment.

(4) Job 24:19-20 *"Drought and heat consume the snow waters: so does **the GRAVE** (sheol) those which have sinned...the worm feasts on them."* All are consumed by the grave just as heat consumes the snow is a far cry from torment in a Hell where we are told that the souls of those that have sinned are never consumed; as in 21:13 above Job said nothing about anything about any kind of life for anyone beyond the grave; therefore, how is it that this passage has often been used to prove torment in Hell? Did Job need Jonathan Edwards to tell him that the souls of those that sinned are not consumed in the grave but are in Hell, a place of endless torment where they will never be consumed, that the heat of Hell will never consume them *"as heat consumes the snow"*?

(5) Psalm 31:17 *"Let me not be ashamed, O Lord; for I have called upon you: let the wicked be ashamed, and let them be silent in **the GRAVE** (sheol)." This is David asking God to let his enemies that were trying to kill him die. The translators knew David was not asking God not to let souls in Hell cry out in pain as they were being tormented. He was asking for the end of the wicked, not for them to be silent when they are being tormented in Hell. *"Let the wicked be...silent in the grave,"* there are no cries of anguish by the wicked; most who believe in Hell believe that it will be anything but silent, but that there will be eternal yells from the pain; those who believe in Hell teach that the souls of the wicked will be weeping, wailing and gnashing their teeth, there is nothing silent about weeping and wailing. According to the view of the Hell that many believe in makes David be asking God to torment many, but most of those who believe in eternal torment in Hell would condemn anyone who prayed in church and ask God to forever burn most in the hot fires of the Hell they believe in.*

(6) (7) Psalm 49:14 *"Like sheep they are lain **in the GRAVE** (sheol); death shall feed on them"* Also Hebrew dualism. Although this is speaking of the wicked, no one believes sheep will be tormented in Hell; therefore, the translators could not put them in Hell as they usually did with the wicked; sheep do go to sheol—the grave just as the dead of mankind and all animals, but not to a chamber under the earth where many believe all the dead go (called by some "the place of the dead" or "the holding place of souls"); they believed an immortal soul is the part of a person that will always be the same, not consume or decay away with the swelling of the dead body, they had to put both decaying bodies and sheep in the grave; if sheol was a chamber where the souls that are in all, both the good and the evil were together this passage would put sheep and all living being in it. *"And the upright shall have dominion over them in the morning; and*

*their beauty shall consume in the GRAVE* (sheol)." No matter how much beauty a person may have when living, that beauty will consume in the grave; they will swell up and decay in the grave. "And their form shall be for Sheol to consume, so that they have no habitation" (New American Standard Bible). If this were souls in Hell, they would have an eternal habitation, and sheol could not consume a soul if it were immortal; "their form" is their bodies, which are consumed in sheol—the grave.

#### (4) BOTH THE GOOD AND BAD

IN THE GRAVE in 9 passages

(1) 1 Samuel 2:6 "The lord kills and makes alive: he brings **down to the GRAVE** (sheol), and brings up." If they had translated this Hell, they would have the Lord brings up from Hell, but they believed no one could come out of Hell and have a second chance after they were in Hell; therefore, they did not use Hell. Coming out of Hell would completely upset their theology.

A typical Hebrew parallelism:

- "The Lord brings death and makes alive."
- "He brings down to the grave and raises up" (New International Version).

(2) Job 7:9 "As the cloud is consumed and vanishes away: so he that **goes down to the GRAVE** (sheol) shall come up no more." **All** go down to the grave. They could not have translated this into Hell for then they would have put **all** in Hell together, both the good and the bad. Neither do they believe any immortal soul in "Hell" will vanish away as bodies in the grave do; there is no torment of the bodies that are vanishing away in the grave.

(3) Psalm 6:5 "For in death there is no remembrance of you: **in the GRAVE** (sheol) who shall give you thanks?" David is not saying that only these in Hell have no remembrance of God, but that none of the dead have any remembrance, or none can give Him thanks. If the souls that were in the bad were in Hell and the souls that were in the good in Heaven or Abraham's bosom, then the souls of both the bad and the good would have a remembrance of God. Could anyone's soul be in Heaven and have no remembrance of God, or the souls that are being tormented in Hell had no remembrance of the God who is tormenting them? If this had been translated Hell, it would have put the souls that were in **all**, both the good and the bad in Hell with no remembrance of why they were there, or of the God that was tormenting them. **This statement is a flat contradiction of today's theology of an immortal soul that is only a part of a person.** That the dead are unconscious is so strongly stated in this passage that those who believe the dead are conscious have a hard time with it.

This is shown in the Connelly-Field "Debate On The State Of The Dead" when Thomas P. Connelly said, "The desire expressed here is for salvation, in view of the fact that there is no chance of salvation in the grave; those who go to the grave unprepared give God no thanks, they do not remember the Lord, the term remembrance being used in the sense of obedience."

It was David who did believe in God that would have no remembrance of God when he was in the grave, not someone who went to the grave not believing in God. David was not, as Connelly said, someone who went "to the grave unprepared." David was asking God to save him from death "for in death there is no remembrance of You."

Connelly's statement on Psalm 146:3-4 again shows the dilemma of those who do not want to believe God. "Put not your trust in princes, nor in the son of man, in whom there is no help. His breath goes forth, he returns to his earth; **in that very day his thoughts perish.**" Connelly said, "The term thoughts in this text, as is evident not only from the word used in the Septuagint, but



from the context, means designs or purposes. We are exhorted not to trust in man, for though he may design to bless us, he is destined to die, when his purpose must fail--they must perish."

The Christian Church, in which Connelly is an Evangelist, believes no one can change God's word, but he changes "thoughts" into "purpose" when they are completely different words in the Hebrew and the word "thoughts" never means "purpose," and is never translated "purpose," but he had to find a way to make the dead have thoughts even if he had to change the Bible. Connelly-Field "Debate On The State Of The Dead."

(4) Psalm 89:48 *"What man is he that lives and shall not see death? Shall he deliver his soul (life-nehphesh) from the hand of **the GRAVE** (sheol)?"* He makes no distinction between the righteous and the unrighteous, at death all go to the grave. This is another Hebrew dualism that is used throughout Psalm; in this dualism the grave and sheol are synonymous terms. A person cannot keep himself from death and the grave; he was speaking of his life (nehphesh) that he could not be kept from the grave, not an "immaterial invisible" something that cannot die and will never go to the grave. If this grave (sheol) were Hell, then no person could keep himself from Hell, not even the righteous. All die and go to the grave (sheol), but no one believes all go to Hell. Although this Psalm is speaking of all, both the good and the bad, all can see why the translators did not translate sheol into Hell in this passage, for they believed the righteous will keep their souls from Hell, but why did the translators make the writer of this Psalm say no one can keep their "soul" (that the translators believed could not die) from the grave? A soul that cannot die, but cannot be kept from the grave makes this passage as it is translated in the King James Version be nonsense. It was his life that he could not keep from the grave, not an immortal soul that would never be dead and never in the grave.

(5) Psalm 141:7 *"Our bones are scattered at **the GRAVE'S** (sheol) mouth, as when one cuts and cleaves wood upon the earth."* Will the bones of the immaterial souls that are in Hell be scattered at the mouth of Hell and not be in it? Whatever David means by grave's mouth, he is not saying that the inside of the grave (sheol/hades) has two sides, one side for the good and one for the bad. Even the King James translators did not think so and translated it grave, not Hell. Bones can be scattered only at the mouth of a grave (many grave were caves), but not at the mouth of Hell, and not at the mouth of any kind of holding place that is inside the earth for immaterial souls that have on bones. There is nothing about torment or an immortal soul in this Psalm.

(6) Proverbs 1:12 *"Let us swallow them up alive as **the GRAVE** (sheol): and whole, as those that go down into the pit."*

(7) Proverbs 30:16 *"**The GRAVE** (sheol) says not 'It is enough.'" No matter how many die, the point will never be reached when no more can die.*

(8) Ecclesiastes 9:10 *"Whatsoever **your** hand finds to do, do it with **your** might; for there is no work, nor device, nor knowledge, nor wisdom, **in the GRAVE** (sheol), whether **YOU** go."* In the same chapter Solomon says, *"The dead know not anything"* (Ecclesiastes 9:5). *"His breath departs, **he** returns to the earth; in that very day **his** thoughts perish"* (Psalm 146:4). *"The dead do no praise the Lord, nor do any that go down into silence, but **we** (those who are alive) will bless the Lord"* (Psalm 115:17). Those in the grave know nothing, and will know nothing unto the resurrection; A Hell or a Heaven where souls that are in them **know nothing** and **does nothing**, neither good or bad would not be the Hell or the Heaven the Catholics or the Protestants believe the souls of the dead to now be living in; a Hell where those in it have no knowledge would be a place of torment where those being tormented would not have any knowledge that they

were in torment. Solomon is not speaking in figurative language. A more positive statement that the dead are now unconscious could not be made; "*whether you go,*" not "whether an immaterial something in **you** goes." It could not be said any plainer that death is death, and no part of anyone is alive before the resurrection; that after death no part of a person has thoughts or knows anything; if there were an immortal soul living in a person, and it had any thoughts after it had left the person it was in, it's thoughts would not be the thoughts of the person; it is always speaking of the person being in sheol and not having any thoughts, never a soul after it has left the person it was in.

(9) Song of Solomon 8:6 "*Love is as strong as death; jealousy is cruel as **the GRAVE** (sheol).*" No distinction is made of the good or the bad. The bad and the good are the same to the grave, it takes everything from all, and without the resurrection that was made known by Christ, and there never would be any life for anyone.

**(5) BOTH THE GOOD AND BAD ARE BOTH IN HELL** (In 15 passages)

**Both in Hell in King James Version**

**The good in Hell in 9 passages**

(1) 2 Samuel 22:6 "*When the waves of death compassed me, the floods of ungodly men made me afraid; The sorrows of **HELL** (grave-sheol) (Hell changed to sheol in New King James Version) compassed me about; the snares of death prevented me.*" Up to the time of David, Hell is used in the King James Version only one time. **From Genesis one to the time of David in 2 Samuel, over three thousand years had passed before the second time the word Hell was put into the King James Version, but even then the New King James takes it out.** 2 Samuel 22:5-6 is David speaking about troubles and fears he had, including fear of death, for he was running from Saul who was trying to kill him. It is difficult to see why the King James Version put Hell in this passage, for when they did it is far from being what those who believe in Hell believe. Was David running from Saul because he thought Saul would send him to the grave, or would send him to Hell? Even those who believe in Hell do not believe Saul could have sent David to it. **There is nothing in it about anything after death, or after the Judgment Day.** "*The sorrows of **Hell** (grave-sheol) compassed me about*" and "*the snares of death prevented me*" are Hebrew dualism.

Matthew Henry: "This is expressed figuratively. He was surrounded with death on every side, threatened to be overwhelmed, and saw no way of escape" Matthew Henry's Commentary, page 357. David thought his death and the grave were near, not that he was soon going to Hell.

(2) Job 11:8 "*It is as high as heaven; what can you do? Deeper than **HELL** (grave-sheol) (Hell changed to sheol in New King James Version); what can you know?" "They are higher than the heavens-what can you do? They are deeper than the depths of the grave-what can you know" New International Version. This is one of Job's comforters, Zophar. God said, "*My wrath is kindled against you and against your two friends, because you have not spoken of Me what is right as My servant Job has*" (Job 42:7). Can the words of Job's friends, which God says are not "*right,*" be used to prove any truth? **What is both higher than the heavens, and deeper than the depths of the grave? The mysteries of God, and the limits of the almighty (11:7).** All though Job's friend might not have been speaking what was right, there still is nothing in what they said about anything after death, nothing about an immortal soul, or nothing about anything after the judgment. In this, as in all the sixty-five uses of sheol, there is no torment after death.*

(3) Job 26:6 "***HELL** (grave-sheol) is naked before him, and destruction has no covering.*" When a person who believes in the Hell that is taught today reads the King

James Old Testament, he or she finds a Hell that is totally difference and contradictorily to what they have been taught. The passages where sheol was mistranslated to put Hell in the Bible describe a place very unlike the Hell that is now believed in by many, and the wrong people are sometimes in it, sometimes while they are still living.

(4) Psalm 16:10 *"For you will not leave my soul in **HELL** (grave-sheol) (Hell changed to sheol in New King James Version): neither wilt you suffer your Holy One to see corruption."* This is used in Acts 2 and is about Christ. The translators put most of the saved in the grave, not in Hell, but this says his soul was not left in sheol. The translators were in a dilemma in this passage.

1. They could not put a "soul" (as the word is used today—an invisible, immaterial, something that has no substance) in the grave, which would be to admit that a soul could be dead.
2. Or they had to put Christ in Hell. If Christ were alive in Hell, He was alive and never was dead; therefore, there was no resurrection of Christ. Did God raise Christ from the dead, or did God just take the living Christ who was not dead out of Hell? Christ paid our debt, which was death, not eternal torment.

This is Hebrew dualism where the same thought is given in two ways.

1. *"For you will not leave my soul in **Hell** (grave-sheol)."*
2. *"Neither wilt you suffer your Holy One to see corruption."* Corruption is in the grave, not in "Hell." God raised Christ from the dead. He did not take a living Christ out of Hell.

(5) Psalm 18:5 *"I will call upon the Lord, who is worthy to be praised: so shall I be saved from mine enemies. The sorrows of death compassed me, and the floods of ungodly men made me afraid. The sorrows of **HELL** (grave-sheol "grave" in margin of King James Version) (Hell changed to sheol in New King James Version) compassed me about: the snares of death prevented me. In my distress I called upon the Lord, and cried unto my God; he heard my voice out of his temple, and my cry came before him even into his ears."* This is David saying about the same thing that he said in 2 Samuel 22:5-6. See notes there. This is Hebrew dualism where the same thing is said in two ways. *"The sorrows of sheol compassed me about"* and *"the snares of death prevented me"* are two ways of saying the same thing. If Hell were a place of eternal torment after death, and David had been compassed about by it, he would not have been alive on earth to write this. This is one of the good guys who came near unto death and was saved *"from mine enemies,"* from sheol—was saved from death and the grave, not came near unto Hell.

(6) Psalm 86:13 *"For great is your mercy toward me: and you have delivered my soul from the lowest **HELL** (grave-sheol)." (Hell changed to sheol in New King James Version). (Footnote in King James Version: "Or, grave"). Neither the Catholic, Protestant nor the after judgment versions of Hell believe that a person can go to the Hell they believe in and come back to live on Earth. The writer of this Psalm is thanking God for saving his life from the grave, not for bring his soul back from eternal torment in Hell, but for bring him back from a place (near death) where he had been and was delivered from it while he was alive in the body; the next verse plainly indicate that his deliverance was from *"arrogant men have risen up against me, and a band of violent men have sought my life,"* but God had delivered him from death and the grave (sheol) by their hands. The New Revised Standard Version says, *"You have delivered my soul (life-nephesh) from the depths of Sheol"* (grave). **At the time David was writing this he had***

not been to the Hell that is taught today, and could not have been delivered from it, for the today's Hell is a place of eternal torment from which none will ever be delivered. It is no wonder that the New King James took "Hell" out of this passage.

**If this passage were believed as it is translated in the King James Version, using the words "soul" and "Hell," as they are used and understood today it would teach:**

1. **A soul would be in Hell and be tormented when the person it had been in is still living on earth, before the death of the person.**
2. **A soul can come back from Hell.** A soul in Hell can be delivered from Hell! Also 1 Samuel 2:6; Psalm 16:10: 30:3 49:15; 88:3.
3. **There is more than one Hell.** If there were a "lowest hell," there would have to be one or more Hells above it. Does anyone believe that are many Hells?
4. **The soul of the righteous can be in Hell.** The soul of David would have had to be in Hell while David was alive if it was delivered from Hell.
5. **Souls are in Hell before the Judgment Day.**

In trying to put Hell in the Bible, they made a mess of things, a mess that no one believes, not even the translators that made the mess. In the next verse it is clearly indicated that this is deliverance from a threat of death from those who sought his life. "*O God, arrogant men have risen up against me, and a band of violent men have sought my life (nehphesh)*" (New American Standard Bible).

In this Psalm the beliefs of the translators give them only two choices. They had to:

- Put a soul that could not be dead in the grave.
- Or put a soul in Hell.

There choice was to put a soul in Hell, even if it was David's soul in Hell before his death.

(7) Psalm 116:3 "*The sorrows of death compassed me, and the pains of **HELL** (grave-sheol) (Hell changed to sheol in New King James Version) gat hold upon me: I found trouble and sorrow. Then called I upon the name of the Lord; O Lord, I beseech thee, deliver my soul.*" The writer could see that death and the grave may be close. When they translated sheol into Hell, did they not put the righteous in Hell before he died? While he was still living did he pray that his soul be taken out of Hell, when according to today's teaching his soul would not have been in Hell while he was still living? The New King James Version did not think so and changed Hell to sheol. His trouble and sorrow were in this life, and he called upon the name of the Lord to deliver him from death and the grave, he thought his death was near at the hands of those that sought his life, not to deliver him from Hell when he was not in Hell, when he had not died.

(8) Psalm 139:8 "*If I ascend up into heaven, you are there: if I make my bed in **HELL** (grave-sheol), behold, you are there.*" He is saying God is everywhere; He is omnipresent. There is nowhere one can go away from God for He can reach into the grave and raise the dead. The King James Version makes God be in Hell, but if He were, then those in Hell would not be away from the presence of God and death would not be a separation from God as some teach they are. Sleep is used as a metaphor of death throughout the Bible. "*If I make my bed in Sheol*" (Hell in the King James Version), those who believe in Hell do not believe those in Hell will have a bed and sleep. If David had made his bed in Hell, this would be saying one of the good guys was asleep in Hell? See GATHERED TO HIS PEOPLE - WAKENING UP AT THE RESURRECTION in chapter three on the use of sleep in the Bible.

- Also 2 Samuel 22:5-6; Psalm 18:3-6 David was in fear of death (not in fear of Hell as is translated in the King James Version), and was running from Saul who was trying to kill him. Also Psalm 86:13; 116:3-4; Jonah 2:2.
- Most of the times when sheol is referring to the good it is translated grave. See Genesis 37:35; 42:38; 44:29-31; Job 14:13; 17:13-16; Psalm 49:15 etc.

(9) Jonah 2:2 *"And said, I cried by reason of mine affliction unto the Lord, and he heard me; out of the belly of **HELL** (grave-sheol) ("grave" in margin of King James Version) (Hell changed to sheol in New King James Version) cried I, and you heard my voice."* In the belly of the great fish was a dark covered place as the grave is but it was nothing like a place of torture in fire brimstone. Jonah was not dead, and neither the Catholics, Protestants, nor the after judgment versions of Hell believe that a person can be in Hell before his death, or that he can come back to this world from Hell. For 374 years (from 1611 to 1985) the readers of the King James Version were told Jonah was in Hell, then the New Kings James Version came along and said not so, he was in sheol. This passage is as are many others; it is difficult to see how the King James translators thought they could get their view of "Hell" out of it even when they mistranslated it.

1. **No one believes Hell is in the belly of a great fish.**
2. **No one believes a living person in the flesh can ever be in Hell?**
3. **No one believes that anyone that does go to Hell will ever come out of it to live on this earth?**

**But the King James Version makes all three of these to be true. Did the translators believe what they made that translation say? Does any one that believes in Hell believe what they made it say?**

### **THE BAD IN HELL**

#### **In only 8 of the 65 passages that have sheol**

(1) Psalm 55:15 is the third time sheol is translated Hell and the first time that it is people that are in Hell, the first two was the nation of Israel in captivity, not in Hell. *"Let death seize upon them, and let them go down quick into **HELL** (sheol-grave in the margin of the King James Version): for wickedness is in their dwellings, and among them."* David is asking that they die and go to **sheol** (the grave) quickly. He is not asking that their souls be tormented in Hell forever. Those who believe in the after judgment Hell do not believe the souls of the wicked go quickly to Hell after the death of the person it was in, but some are desperate enough for proof of Hell that they use this and other verses like it. Though this is the twenty-ninth time sheol is used, it is only the eighth time it is translated Hell is in the New King James Version. Numbers 16:29-33 is similar, *"If these men die the death of all men, or if they suffer the fate of all men, then the Lord has not sent me. But, if the Lord brings about an entirely new thing and the ground opens its mouth and swallows them up with all that is theirs, and they descend alive into **sheol** (grave-sheol, **pit** in King James Version), then you will understand that these men have spurned the Lord. Then it came about as he finished speaking all these words, that the ground that was under them split opened; and the earth opened its mouth and swallowed them up, and their households, and all the men who belonged to Korah, with their possession, So they (people, not soul) and all that belonged to them went down alive to **sheol** (sheol-grave-pit in King James Version); and they perished from the midst of the assembly"* New American Standard Bible. If they had translated this sheol into Hell, it would have put Hell in a hole in the ground and on this earth; if Hell is eternal torment

then this hole is still some place on this earth, and this earth will have to last for eternity if Hell were on the earth and Hell last for eternity.

- Psalm 55:15 *"Let death seize upon them, and let them go down quick into **Hell** (sheol) for wickedness is in their dwellings."*
- Psalm 32:17 *"Let the wicked be ashamed, and let them be silent in the **grave** (sheol)."*

The King James translators did not know whether they wanted the wicked (1) in the grave (2) or in Hell; the two most certainly are not the same place. Did they divide up the dead and (1) put some in Hell, (2) some in the grave, (3) and some in a hole in the ground? Sheol is translated grave, Hell, and pit at random.

Hebrew dualism where the same thing is said in two ways is used throughout Psalm and Proverbs. Sheol is used in dualism repeatedly.

Typical Hebrew parallelism or dualism is used ten times of the sixty five times sheol is used.

(1) Psalm 30:3 – **saved from the grave = a person was kept alive**

1. *"O lord, you have brought up my soul from the GRAVE (sheol):*
2. *You have kept me alive."*

(2) Psalm 55:15 – **death = grave**

1. *"Let death seize upon them,*
2. *And let them go down quick into HELL (sheol-grave)."*

(3) Psalm 89:48 – **shall not see death = delivered from the grave**

1. *"What man is he that lives and shall not see death?*
2. *Shall he deliver his soul from the hand of the GRAVE (sheol)?"*

(4) Psalm 116:3-4 – **sorrows of death = pains of the grave**

1. *"The sorrows of death compassed me,*
2. *And the pains of HELL (sheol-grave) gat hold upon me."*

(5) Proverbs 5:5 – **down to death = grave**

1. *"Her feet go down to death:*
2. *Her steps take hold on HELL (sheol-grave)."*

(6) Proverbs 7:27 – **the grave = death**

1. *"Her house is the way to HELL (sheol-grave),*
2. *Going down to the chambers of death."*

(7) Proverbs 9:18 – **the dead are there = the depths of the grave**

1. *"But he knows not that the dead are there;*
2. *And that her guests are in the depths of HELL (sheol-grave)."*

(8) Proverbs 15:10-11 – **shall die = grave and destruction**

1. *"He that hates reproof shall die.*
2. *HELL (sheol-grave) and destruction are before the Lord."*

(9) Isaiah 38:18 – **grave = death**

- *"For the GRAVE (sheol) cannot praise you,*
- *Death cannot celebrate you."*

(10) 1 Samuel 2:6 – **kill and make alive = down to the grave and bring up**

- *"The lord kills and makes alive:*
- *He brings down to the GRAVE (sheol), and brings up."*

(2) Proverbs 5:5 *"Her feet go down to death: her steps take hold on HELL (grave-sheol)."* Through out the poetry books, a statement is made and then for emphasis will be repeated in a different way.

1. *"Her feet going down to death" is repeated for emphasis*
2. *"Her steps taking hold on sheol (the grave)."*

Adultery had the death penalty under the Law (Leviticus 20:10-16); they were stoned to death (John 8:3-11); even today many die from Aids and other incurable sexual diseases. In Proverbs 1:11-12, it was the victims of the evil women; therefore, the King James Version puts the victims in the grave; but in Proverbs 5:5, it is the evil women; therefore, the King James Version puts her in Hell even though they had to translated the same word into two completely difference places, even though they had to make the same word be both a common noun (grave) and a proper noun (Hell), even though the same word (sheol) cannot be both. Proverbs 5 is about prostitutes, and it says of those that go to them, *"And you groan at your latter end, when your flesh and your body are consumed"* (Proverbs 5:11). Note: some commentaries say this is a metaphor about Israel being unfaithful to God by worshipping other gods and going into captivity.

(3) Proverbs 7:27 Another Hebrew dualism where the same thing is said in two ways. Going down to the chambers of death is the same as the way to the grave (sheol). Proverbs 7 is a comparison of keeping God's commandments, or not keeping them pictured as being enticed by an adulteress woman.

1. *"Her house is the way to sheol"*

2. *"Going down to the chambers of death."*

*"Do not let your heart turn aside to her ways, do not stray into her paths. For many are the victims she has cast down, and numerous are all her slain. Her house is the way to the grave, descending to the chambers of death"* (Proverbs 7:25-27).

(4) Proverbs 9:18 *"But he knows not that the dead are there; and that her guests are in the depths of HELL (grave-sheol)." Proverbs 9 is a comparison of wisdom and folly with folly pictured as a wicked woman, and those who come to her dying a premature death.*

1. *"The dead are there"*

2. *"Her guests are in the depths of sheol (the grave)" is a repeat of the same thing.*

(5) Proverbs 15:11 *"Correction is grievous unto him that forsakes the way: and he that hates reproof shall die. HELL (grave-sheol) and destruction are before the Lord."* The grave and destruction is not a picture of Hell as it is painted by today's theology where none that are in Hell shall ever die or be destroyed. "Sheol and Abaddon" are used together two times, in Proverbs 15:11 and 27:20, "grave and destruction" translated "Death and Destruction" both times in the New International Version.

(6) Proverbs 15:24 *"The way of life is above to the wise, that he may depart from the HELL (grave-sheol) beneath."* May keep from an early death, keeping the Law would keep one from going to the grave early. The way to live a long life was to keep the law and keep from all the cursing for not keeping it. *"All these blessings"* and *"All these curses"* in Deuteronomy 28 were in their lifetime and often brought a premature death. Even under the New Covenant the wrath of God is on the sinner now in this life (Romans 1:18; 2 Peter 2:9). Protestants do not believe that any soul will depart from Hell once they are there. See Psalm 18:3-6 and Psalm 55:15, yet in an attempt to put Hell into the Bible the King James translators repeatedly had the souls of some in Hell before the death of the person the soul was in, and some souls departing from Hell. The writers of Psalm, Proverbs, and all the Old Testament believed God would in their lifetime reward the righteous, and He would punish the evil even with premature death.

(7) Proverbs 23:14 *"You shall beat him with the rod, and shall deliver his soul (life-nephphesh) from HELL (grave-sheol)." A child that is not punished when it does wrong will not keep the law, and may be punished even with death (see note on Proverbs 15:24 above). "You shall beat him with the rod, and deliver (save) his life from the grave."*

Moses in Deuteronomy 28 set before them life or death, a long good life if they obeyed God, or a short bad life and death if they did not. See chapter seven, "All these Blessing, All these Cursing."

(8) Proverbs 27:20 "**HELL** (grave-sheol) *and destruction are never full.*" "*And he that hates reproof shall die* (Proverbs 15:24). *Hell (grave-sheol) and destruction are before the Lord*" (Proverbs 15:10-11). The grave and destruction are associated together. No matter how many die, as long as time goes on, there will be room for more. In Proverbs 30:16 the translators translated the same thought as grave. "*The grave (sheol)...says not 'It is enough.'*" This is not saying Hell is so large a place that it can never be filled. This passage is like the other 64 passages that have sheol in them, nothing is said about God tormenting souls in Hell.

Mr. Stuart, who believes in "Hell" said, "The inconsistency with which they have sometimes rendered the word Sheol, in the same connection and with the same sense, is a striking circumstance which cannot but be regarded with some wonder by an attentive inquirer."

Conclusion: (1) If sheol is rightly translated "grave" (2) or if, as some believe, sheol means "a state of the dead" where all the dead are all kept together in some kind of shadowy existence, either way:

1. Sheol is not a place where God torments after death.
2. Sheol is not Hell.

Note: There are four other words in the Hebrew Old Testament that are translated "grave" in the King James Version (kvooraf, kehver, shahagath, bgee), but to my knowledge none of them are used by anyone to prove there is any kind of life in the grave.

**Passages from which the New King James Version removed "Hell" that was in the King James Version.** The New King James Version took Hell out of thirteen of the thirty-one times it is in the King James Version. It changed the way sheol was translated in the King James Version 19 of the 65 times sheol is used. It also changed the three words used in the King James Version Old Testament to four words, pit, grave, Hell, and sheol.

CHANGES	KJV	NKJV	MORE CHANGES	KJV	NKJV
(1) 2 Samuel 22:6	Hell	Sheol	(1) Job 17:16	Pit	Sheol
(2) Job 11:8	Hell	Sheol	(2) Ezekiel 31:15	Grave	Hell
(3) Job 26:6	Hell	Sheol	(3) Isaiah 14:11	Grave	Sheol
(4) Psalm 16:10	Hell	Sheol	(4) Isaiah 38:10	Grave	Sheol
(5) Psalm 18:5	Hell	Sheol	(5) Isaiah 38:18	Grave	Sheol
(6) Psalm 86:13	Hell	Sheol	(6) Proverbs 1:12	Grave	Sheol
(7) Psalm 116:3	Hell	Sheol			
(8) Isaiah 5:14	Hell	Sheol			
(9) Isaiah 14:15	Hell	Sheol			
(10) Isaiah 28:15	Hell	Sheol			
(11) Isaiah 28:18	Hell	Sheol			
(12) Isaiah 57:9	Hell	Sheol			
(13) Jonah 2:2	Hell	Sheol			

The New King James Version removes much of the foundation on which the belief in Hell was built, and the American Standard Version and most others removed the foundation completely from the Old Testament, but the belief now still stands without it.

**After looking at the sixty-five passages where sheol is used in the Old Testament, there is only one conclusion that we can come to, death really is death for both the good and the evil, and there is no life for anyone, or any immortal something in anyone before the resurrection.**



- **There is no hint of an eternal life of torment after death, or after the judgment in any of the sixty-five passages.**
- **The Old Testament does not contain today's concept of Hell.**
- **There is no word in the Old Testament Hebrew that even comes close to the meaning that Hell has today.**

Two definitions:

1. Webster's New World Dictionary, "A place in the ground where a dead body is buried. Any place where a dead body is laid or comes to rest."
2. Today's theology, "A place where the living that can never be dead are tormented forever by Satan or by God."

**How did the translators get two words, grave, and Hell, with such a vast difference in meaning from the same Hebrew word?** It is as if the same word (sheol) means "white" in thirty-four passage and "black" in thirty-one passages. **To mistranslate the way the King James translators did is not only a bad translation, it is sinful to so misuse God's word, both sinful for the translators and sinful for those who know it is wrong, but use it anyway and do not speak out about what they know to be wrong.** What will they say to God at the judgment?

L. Ray Smith: "I do not even contend that this is bad scholarship. This is NO scholarship at all. This is nothing less than FRAUD-a Christian HOAX! Show me where else in historic academia we find such reckless abandonment of the facts? I am not contending for my personal preference in translating the scriptures, but to merely translate accurately and consistently what we find in all the Hebrew and Greek manuscripts."

Often, the person who teaches sheol is somewhere beneath the surface of the earth, and the souls of all the dead all to sheol, will at other times teach all souls go to Heaven or Hell when the person dies. The Old Testament teaching of all the dead being asleep in sheol, the grave is in direct contradiction to today's teaching of all souls going directly to Heaven at death, yet many teach both depending, I guess on what their needs are at any given time, but most seem to be unaware of what they are doing, unaware that they are changing back and forth between the TWO CONTRADICTORY TEACHINGS.

The English "Hell" of today ----- versus - sheol of the Old Testament  
 A place of remorse and suffering -- versus -"forgetfulness" Ps 88:11-12  
 A place of endless fire ----- versus -"darkness" Job 10:21  
 Of torment with shrieks and groans -versus -"silence" Psalm 115:17

#### AN EXAMPLE OF THE CONFUSION THAT EXIST ON WHERE THE DEAD ARE

Roger E Dickson, on page 69 of "Life, death and Beyond" said, "The word sheol refers to the unseen state of existence where the souls and spirits of the dead are hidden from the living," and on page 71 he says, "Both righteous and unrighteous are there until the final resurrection." But on page 64 he said our spirits returns to God and are now present with the Lord in Heaven and when Jesus returns He will bring our spirits from Heaven. Are spirits now in sheol unto the resurrection, or now in Heaven before the resurrection? Many that believe there is now an immortal soul/spirit that is in us have the same confusion on where souls now are.

#### HADES IN THE NEW TESTAMENT (Used 11 times)

The Greek word hades in the New Testament corresponds to sheol in the Old Testament. Hades is used in the Septuagint Version, a translation of the Old Testament into Greek, sixty of the sixty-five times where sheol is used. It is used in the New Testament when the Old Testament is quoted (Psalm 16:10; Acts 2:27). **Hades does not**

**have any reference to a soul being in anyone in any of the eleven passages where it is used. Nor does hades have any reference to torment in Hell.** An examination of every passage where hades is used in the New Testament shows that not one of them says anything about everlasting conscious torment, or of eternal punishment. Not a one of them says anything about what will be after the Judgment Day. Hades is to be emptied at the resurrection at the second coming of Christ; therefore, it is only temporary, and it could not be an eternal place where God will torment all the souls that were in the lost without end as it is in the King James Version.

- Hades used with reference to the death of Christ (3 passages)
- Hades used with reference to death (1 passage)
- Hades used with reference to the destruction of cities or nations (2 passages)
- Hades in the symbolic passages (5 passages)

#### **HADES IN THE THREE PASSAGES THAT HAS REFERENCE TO THE DEATH OF CHRIST**

(1) Matthew 16:18 *"And I say also unto you, that you are Peter, and upon this rock I will build my church: and the gates of **Hell** (the grave-hades) shall not prevail against it." "And the gates of **hades** shall not prevail against it"* New King James Version. The grave is pictured as a fortified city with gates as many cities at that time had; the believers were told pray that their flight be not on a Sabbath for then the gates of the city would be closed and would hold them in (Matthew 24:20). The fortified gates of death were unable to hold Christ in the grave, and will be unable to hold the dead in Christ, they will be resurrected and have the victory over death. Death and the grave will *"not prevail against it"* – the church, which is all that are in Christ. Only the church, those who are in Christ will not suffer the second death, the gates of hades will not prevail against Christians.

"Death shall neither destroy the organic church which is in the world, nor the members thereof which go down into the grave." J. W. McGarvey, *The Fourfold Gospel*, Standard Publishing Company, page 412.

- *"And the gates of **Hell** shall not prevail against it"* King James.
- *"And the gates of **hades** shall not prevail against it"* New King James.

Which translation do you believe? There is no way that both could be right. **According to today's theology Hell and hades are two entirely different places**, but these two translations are in conflict with each other on the place all through the New Testament.

(2) Acts 2:27 *"Because you will not leave my soul in **Hell** (the grave-hades), neither will you suffer your Holy One to see corruption."* Hades is the Greek translation of the Hebrew sheol. In Acts 2:27, hades is a translation of sheol from Psalm 16:10. Only the King James Version translates hades into Hell. Most translations, even the New King James Version, have not translated hades into Hell. Many would not translate it; therefore, left the Greek word untranslated in the English translation. This does not help the English reader who does not know Greek; but it was left not translated in many versions of the Bible because those who believe the soul is immortal and believe in Hell do not want neither sheol in the Old Testament, or hades in the New Testament to be translated.

- In Acts 2:29 *"tomb"* is used as a synonym to *"hades"* in verse 27. *"Sepulcher"* in King James Version.

(3) Acts 2:31 *"He seeing this before spoke of the resurrection of Christ, that his soul was not left in **Hell** (the grave-hades); neither his flesh did see corruption." "That His*

*soul was not left in hades*" New King James Version. This is a quotation of Psalm 16:10. If His soul (Hebrew-nehphesh--Greek-psukee) *"was not left in hades (the grave),"* then His soul, the part of Him that cannot die according to those who say the soul is immortal, was in the grave (hades), if not, it could not have been left in the grave or taken out of the grave, if Christ was never in the grave He was never dead; therefore, this passages would makes no sense; if, as the King James Version and many teach, Christ was alive in "Hell" He was never dead and there was no resurrection.

Christ was resurrected and did not see corruption, but David did; David *"both died and were buried, and his tomb is with us unto this day"* (Acts 2:29). If David were living at this time, and he was not in the tomb then Peter had no point or argument, and what he said had no meaning. *"From the day that the fathers fell asleep"* 2 Peter 3:4. This shows that David is still asleep, along with all other's that *"are fallen asleep"* 1 Corinthians 15:6. To say that David is not dead, or he has been raised is to say the resurrection is passed, and Christ was not the *"first fruits"* 1 Corinthians 15:20, or the *"first born"* Colossians 1:18, Revelation 1:5. To say that David was never dead is to make his resurrection impossible. Jesus was in His grave until God resurrected Him, and David will be in his grave until the resurrection. David and all who have died except Christ are still in the grave (in sheol-hades), and will be unto the Resurrection.

#### **HADES IN THE PASSAGE THAT HAS REFERENCE TO DEATH**

(4) 1 Corinthians 15:55 *"O death (thanatos), where is your sting; O grave (hades), where is your victory?"* It is so obvious that a place of torment after death is not what Paul was speaking of that even the King James translators could not translate this into Hell, see Revelation 20:13-14 below. This is the only time in the King James Version that hades is translated grave. The New American Standard and many others translate both "thanatos" and "hades" into "death" only in this passage. *"Death (thanatos) is swallowed up in victory. O death (thanatos), where is your victory? O death (hades), where is your sting? The sting of death (thanatos) is sin"* (1 Corinthians 15:54-56). "Thanatos" was translated into death in many places, but this is the only time "hades" was translated "death." Why the inconsistency? Was it not because if death is only separation of a living immortal soul from God, the separated living soul could not be in the grave; if this living soul were in the grave, then it could not be in Hell where many believe it to be.

This is believed by many to be a quote from Hosea 13:14 where the King James Version translated "sheol" into "grave," not "death." *"I will ransom them from the power of the grave (sheol); I will redeem them from death; O death, I will be your plagues; O grave (sheol), I will be thy destruction."* The whole chapter of Hosea 12 is about the nation of Israel; God redeeming the nation of Israel from captivity, restoring or resurrecting the nation, not individual Jews being resurrected from the grave then or at the second coming of Christ. 1 Corinthians 15:55 is speaking of the victory over death by individuals that are in Christ at the resurrection. Neither Hosea 13:14 or 1 Corinthians 15:55 does not say anything about endless torment, or what will happen to those who are not saved.

1. Restoring or resurrection of a nation (living Jews) from captivity (Hosea 13:14).
2. Resurrecting to eternal life all individuals that are asleep in Christ (1 Corinthians 15:55).

#### **HADES IN THE TWO PASSAGES**

## THAT HAS REFERENCE TO THE DESTRUCTION OF CITIES OR NATIONS

(5) Matthew 11:23 *"And you, Capernaum, which are exalted unto heaven, shall be brought down to **Hell** (grave-hades): for if the mighty works, which have been done in you, had been done in Sodom, it would have remained until this day."* A city to be brought down to the grave and remain no more just as Sodom did not remain.

(6) Luke 10:15 *"And you, Capernaum, which are exalted to heaven, shall be thrust down to **Hell** (grave-hades)." They were favored more than most cities by seeing and hearing Christ "exalted unto heaven," but because of their unbelief they were brought down to the grave. Capernaum ceased to exalt and was covered by sand of Galilee's seashore, its grave. ). "Shall go down unto Hades (grave)," only the dead go to the grave, these cities died, they did not now exist, they are dead, not alive in Hell. Not even those who believe in Hell believe cities will go to Heaven or Hell, yet they use this passage to prove that the souls that are now in lost individuals will go to Hell at the death of the individual the soul is in just as the King James translators sends Capernaum to Hell. Cities do cease to exalt (brought down to hades-the grave), as both Capernaum and Sodom have been. There is nothing said about eternal torment of cities or nations. **Just as Capernaum was never literally in Heaven, neither was it ever literally in "Hell."***

*"And you, Capernaum, which are (present tense) exalted to heaven, shall be (future tense) be brought down to the grave."* I know of no one who believes Capernaum, was at the time Christ was speaking (present tense), was in Heaven with God, but this city would be (future tense) brought down to Hell to be with Satan, yet this is what this passage says as it is in the King James Version and would have to be saying if it proved "Hell." It was not brought down to Hell or to an subterranean some place under the earth, it was brought down to the grave, a dead city that does not now exist anyplace.

Albert Barnes, who believes in Hell, admits that in this passage Hell does not mean Hell. He said, "This does not mean that all the people should go to hell; but that the city which had flourished so prosperously, should lose its prosperity, and occupy the lowest place among cities. The word hell is used here, not to denote a place of punishment in the future world, but a state of desolation and destruction as a city" Barnes Notes on Matthew 11:23.

### HADES IN THE SYMBOLIC PASSAGES

(7) Luke 16:23 *"And in **Hell** (grave-hades) he lift up his eyes, being in torments, and seeing Abraham afar off, and Lazarus in his bosom."* This is one of the first passages many use to prove there is torment after death. See "The Intermediate Bosom" in chapter eight for notes on this parable.

(8) Revelation 1:18 *"I am he that lives and was dead; and behold, I am alive for evermore, Amen: and have the keys of **Hell** (grave-hades) and of death."* Many do not believe Hell will exist unto after the judgment, but they make Him be saying He has the keys to a place that does not yet exist.

What this passage does not and does say:

- It does not say that Hell exists now, or will it will exist after the judgment, most all who believe in Hell do not believe Christ will use the keys to open Hell and take out any who are in it. They believe that once a person is in Hell, he or she is there forever; most do not believe what is said in the King James Version.
- It does say that Christ will use the keys to take all out of the grave (hades) at the resurrection and Judgment Day.

(9) Revelation 6:8 *"And I looked, and behold a pale horse: and his name that set on him was Death, and **Hell** (grave-hades) followed with him. And power was given unto them over the fourth part of the earth, to kill with sword, and with hunger, and with death, and with the beasts of the earth."* This is a symbolic passage of a judgment on this earth where some on this earth was killed.

1. Some on this earth are killed with the sword.
2. Some on this earth are killed with hunger.
3. Some on this earth are killed with death.
4. Some on this earth are killed with beasts of the earth.

But to prove Hell this symbolic passage is taken out of context and made literal, but if it were literal then this killing is moved from earth to Hell, which is believed to be a place of torment after death, then it:

1. Is killing the living before their death by starving to death soul in Hell that cannot die?
2. Is killing souls in Hell with beasts of the earth, which is definitely not what anyone I know of believes. If those in Hell will be killed with the sword and with hunger, how can they be tormented forever?
3. If this were made literal, then death and Hell would have power over only one fourth of mankind. Will the other three fourths live forever without dying and never go to Hell? If so, then they had no need of the death of Christ to save them from death or Hell.

**Even for those who believe in Hell, it must be difficult to imagine death literally riding on a horse, and Hell, which is a place literally following the horse;** but without badly mistranslating there is nothing about Hell in Revelation 6:8. The New King James Version has hades, not Hell, following death; which do you believe, Hell or hades (grave) was following death?

- A place (Hell) following a horse – would be the same as:
- A place (New York) following a horse – only in symbolic language can a place follow a horse.
  - If Hell has all the dead in it, it would be many times larger than New York, which would make it difficult for such a large place to literally be following a horse.

(10) Revelation 20:13 *"And the sea gave up the dead which were in it; and **death and Hell** (hades-footnote in King James Version says "the grave") **delivered up the dead which were in them: and they were judged every man according to their works."*** Will the "Hell" that is taught today give up those who are in it? If made literal, this also would not be today's theology; those in this "Hell" are dead, not alive in torment. This passage makes a distinction between the dead in the sea and the dead in the grave (hades). If hades were a place where all the dead go, the good to one side of hades (Abraham's bosom) and the lost to the other side of hades, all the dead would be in hades and none in the sea. Neither the Catholics or Protestant versions of Hell believe any will be delivered out of Hell, but the way the King James Version is translated it is undeniable that **all** that are in Hell do come out of Hell when this passage is made literal, and many do make it literal when they are trying to prove Hell is real.

(11) Revelation 20:14 *"And death and **Hell** (grave-hades) were cast into the lake of fire. This is the second death."* **Neither is it believed Hell will be cast into the lake of fire; it is believed Hell is the lake of fire.** If the Lake of Fire were Hell, then the King

James Version would have Hell being cast into Hell, but John says it is death and the grave that are being cast into the lake of fire, not Hell cast into Hell. **The grave, not Hell, will deliver up the dead at the coming of Christ.** The victory of death over mankind will have ended (See I Corinthians 15:55 above). **Most all that use this mistranslation in the King James Version do not believe what the King James Version says, that Hell will deliver up those in it, for if it did their Hell would not be eternal.** This mistranslation in the King James Version makes Hell end at the resurrection.

Dr. George Campbell: "It is very (interesting) that neither in the Septuagint version of the Old Testament, nor in the New, does the word hades convey the meaning which the present English word hell, in the Christian usage, always conveys to our minds" Diss. vi, page 181.

### **A MAJOR DISAGREEMENT**

Conscious in sheol-hades, or conscious in Heaven or Hell; some believes and teach two contradictory beliefs at the same time.

1. **Conscious in sheol-hades.** A disembodied soul in sheol that will be transmigrated back to the person it was in at the judgment. It is believed by many that sheol is a place where all souls they were in the dead go to after the death of the persons they were in, that this place is under the Earth or who knows where, but if all souls were in this place under the earth they are not in Heaven or Hell.
2. **Or conscious in Heaven or Hell.** A living soul in Heaven or Hell, which will leave there and come back to Earth for judgment, then go back to Heaven or Hell after the judgment. If the souls that were in the dead are in Heaven or Hell, they are not in sheol.

Both cannot be right, but I have heard preachers say one at one time, then the other at another time. Did they just forget what they had said the first time? If they prove one, they disprove the other. They spend much time and use many passages of scripture to prove both. Which one do they believe? **Many that believe the Protestant version work hard to prove there is consciousness in sheol but why? If the souls that were in the lost go directly to Hell, and those in the saved go to their eternal home in Heaven at death, then the immortal souls cannot be in sheol. A soul could not be in two places at the same time. If they did prove the souls of the dead are alive in sheol, they would prove that these souls are not in Hell or Heaven. Are they trying to disprove their own belief? How can they not see how inconsistent they are?**

Summary of chapter six: **To translate sheol, Gehenna, hades, or Tartarus into Hell is a total perversion of the truth, and is an intentional mistranslation. If we use it or teach it, can there be any hope for us? The God slandering doctrine of Hell is a very different gospel (Galatians 1:9). It is certainly more different than anything that was preached in Paul's time.**

## **CHAPTER SEVEN**

### **A STRANGE AND UNEXPLAINABLE SILENCE THE SILENCE OF THE OLD TESTAMENT ON PUNISHMENT AND LIFE AFTER DEATH**

**In the Old Testament the penalty for disobedience is always in this lifetime; there is no allusion made to any punishment or rewards after this lifetime. The punishments were temporal, not endless but limited punishments, not punishments in the hereafter, but were always in this lifetime, THE ULTIMATE PENALTY FOR SIN WAS DEATH.**

## FROM ADAM TO MOSES

(1) **Adam:** God told Adam in the day he ate he would die. The day he ate was the beginning of the dying process, "*Dying you shall die.*" The death that came into the world by Adam's sin is the same death that he died for eating, a physical death. His punishment was that he had to work to live with the earth bringing forth thorns, and dying, all the things he suffered was earthly sorrows and punishments with not a word about punishment of any kind after his death. It was not the death of Adam's "soul," an inward immortal never dying something that was in Adam that could not die, but this deathless "soul" would die anyway if Adam did eat. He was not told that after his death his "soul" that would live after he was dead would be subjected to endless torment in Hell, but endless torment is almost always read into this. There is no suggestion that a part of Adam would die and a part of him would never die. The complete silence of any punishment after death would be unthinkable if the doctrine of Hell were true.

(2) **Cain:** His sin was the first murder, which by most is believed to be the greatest of all sins. What was his punishment? Today he would be told that his "soul" would go to Hell if he did not repent, but his punishment was that he, not a soul, was to be a fugitive and a vagabond in his lifetime on the earth. Not one word about any punishment of anything after his death. The punishment for anyone who killed Cain would be **seven times greater** than the punishment of Cain. How could anything be seven times greater than today's Hell?

(3) **The flood:** The people had become so evil that God destroyed them. Only eight were saved. What was their punishment? Read the Bible. It was death. There is no mention of any punishment after their death. They were not told they had lost their souls, or that their soul would go to Hell after they were dead. Their punishment was not something that would be after the flood; it was the flood and their death. "*And the Lord was sorry that He had made man on the earth, and He was grieved in His heart. And the Lord said, 'I will blot out man whom I have created from the face of the land'*" (Genesis 6:6-7 New American Standard). "*And all flesh died that moved upon the earth, both birds, and cattle, and beasts, and every creeping thing that creeps upon the earth, and every man: all in whose nostrils was the breath of the spirit of life, of all that was on the dry land died. And every living thing was destroyed that was upon the face of the ground, both man, and cattle, and creeping things, and birds of the heavens; and they were destroyed from the earth*" (Genesis 7:21-23). The same thing happened to "every man" also happened to every beast; they died, the souls that were in them were not eternally tormented after they had died. If the punishment of Hell awaited the souls that were in all those who drown in the flood, the punishment of drowning that was given to them utterly pales into insignificance when it compared to an eternal life of torment for the souls in Hell, yet absolutely nothing is said to them about eternal punishment after death.

*"I establish my covenant with you, and with your seed after you; and with every living creature (soul-nehphesh) that is with you, the birds, the cattle, and every beast of the earth with you; of all that go out of the ark, even every beast of the earth. And I will establish my covenant with you; neither shall all flesh be cut off any more by the waters of the flood; neither shall there any more be a flood to destroy the earth"* (Genesis 9:9-11). "Every living creature," both of beast and man were destroyed, not forever tormented; the flood killed them all.

*"For this they willfully forget, that there were heavens from of old, and an earth compacted out of water and amid water, by the word of God; by which means the world that then was, being overflowed with water, perished (apollumi)"* (2 Peter 3:5-6 American Standard Version). **"Was destroyed"** New American Standard Bible. Nothing was said to them about endless torment for souls, or any torment after death.

(4) **The destruction of Sodom and Gomorrah:** Genesis 13 and 14: These cities were literally burnt up (Psalm 11:6; Isaiah 34:9), not still burning with the people walking around in torment. Their end was complete total destruction, and is an example of the total destruction that is coming to the ungodly at the judgment. Sodom did not just suffer a lost of "will being," but was completely and forever totally destroyed *"by burning them to ashes and made them an example of what is going to happen to the ungodly"* (2 Peter 2:6). Peter adds in the next chapter that the earth will be *"burned up."* The earth has been stored up for fire *"being reserved against the day of judgment and destruction of ungodly men"* (2 Peter 3:7-13).

(5) **Abraham:** God's promise to Abraham was, *"And as for you, you shall go to your fathers in peace; you shall be buried at a good old age"* (Genesis 15:15). *"And Abraham breathed his last and died in a ripe old age, an old man satisfied with life; and he was gathered to his people. Then his sons Isaac and Ishmael buried him"* (Genesis 25:8-9). In no place was a soul that was in Abraham promised eternal life in Heaven, or any kind of life after death.

(6) **From Adam to Moses:** For about twenty-five centuries, from Adam to Moses, Lot's wife, Pharaoh, building of Babel, etc., punishment was always in this life, not for souls after death.

## THE LAW OF MOSES

### ALL THESE BLESSING, ALL THESE CURSING

*"Now it shall be, if you will diligently obey the Lord our God, being careful to do all His commandments which I command you today, the Lord your God will set you high above all the nations of the earth. And all these blessing shall come upon you and overtake you, if you will obey the Lord your God"* (Deuteronomy 28:1-2). *"Moses was instructed in all the wisdom of the Egyptians"* (Acts 7:22); therefore, he knew of their teaching of some kind of life after death, but he did not put a word of it in the Law.

**All these blessings** of the Law were for them in this lifetime, not for souls after death (Deuteronomy 28:11). **Not one word about a blessing after death.**

- God would set Israel high above all nations (Deuteronomy 28:1).
- Blessing in the city and in the country (Deuteronomy 28:4).
- Blessing in children, cattle, and the ground (Deuteronomy 28:5).
- Blessing in full barns (Deuteronomy 28:8).
- Blessing in all they set their hand to do (Deuteronomy 28:8).
- The Lord would establish them as a holy people to Himself (Deuteronomy 28:9).
- All nations would see and be afraid of them (Deuteronomy 28:10).
- They would abound in prosperity, in children, and the fruit of the land (Deuteronomy 28:11-12).
- They would lend to many nations and not borrow, be the head and not the tail (Deuteronomy 28:12-13).

**All these curses** of the Law if they did not keep it were on them in this lifetime (Deuteronomy 28:18-19). **Not one word about a curse on souls after this lifetime.** *"But it shall come about, if you will not obey the Lord your God, to observe to do all His*



*commandments and His statutes with which I charge you today, **that all these curses shall come upon you and overtake you**" (Deuteronomy 28:15).*

- Cursed in the city and the country (Deuteronomy 28:16).
- Cursed in your basket and kneading bowl (Deuteronomy 28:17).
- Cursed in their children, the produce of their ground, the increase of their herd (Deuteronomy 28:18).
- Cursed when they come in and when they went out (Deuteronomy 28:19).
- Confusion, rebuke, in all they did unto they was destroyed (Deuteronomy 28:20).
- Cursed with pestilence until they were consumed from the land (Deuteronomy 28:21).
- Smite with consumption, with fever, with inflammation, with fiery heat, with the sword, with blight, with mildew, and pursued unto they perished (Deuteronomy 28:22).
- The heaven over their head as bronze and the earth under them as iron (Deuteronomy 28:23).
- The rain on their land made as power and dust unto they were destroyed (Deuteronomy 28:24).
- Defeated before their enemies and their carcasses shall be food for birds (Deuteronomy 28:25-26).
- Smite with boils of Egypt, with tumors, with scab, with an itch, which cannot be healed, with blindness, madness, and bewilderment of heart (Deuteronomy 28:27-28).
- They would not prosper and would be oppressed and robbed continually (Deuteronomy 28:29).
- Their wives would be violated, and they would build a house and not live in it, plant a vineyard but not use it (Deuteronomy 28:30).
- Many more curses if they did not obey the Lord (Deuteronomy 28:31-68). Those who came out of Egypt and provoked the Lord died in the wilderness. Death was their punishment, not eternal torment after death (Numbers 14; Hebrews 3:16-19).

*"I declare unto you this day, that **you shall surely perish; you shall not prolong your days in the land...I have set before you life and death, the blessing and the curse. So choose life in order that you may live, you and your descendants, by loving the Lord your God, by obeying His voice, and by holding fast to Him; for this is your life and the length of your days, that you may live in the land which the Lord swore to your fathers**" (Deuteronomy 30:18-20). This is a promise to them of a long life in the land the Lord had given to them, or a short life and death if they did not keep His word, not of any thing after death. "So they, and all that appertained to them, went down alive into Sheol: and the earth closed upon them, and they **perished** from among the assembly" (Numbers 16:33). "As for any person who does any work on this same day, that person I will destroy from among his people" (New American Standard Version, Leviticus 23:30). Throughout the Old Testament perish and destroy means dying, and has nothing to do with any kind of torment for souls after death. It would be past comprehension that God would give them such detail of what would happen to them in their lifetime and say nothing of the unending pain He was going to forever heap on the soul that were in them if after they were dead Hell awaited the souls.*

Edward White: "One of the first phenomena which draws attention in the Pentateuch is the omission, both in the historical and perceptive portions of it, of any mention of the immortality of the soul. If this view of man's nature were true in our time, it was true from the beginning, and true in the time of Moses. And if it were as important as it is supposed to be now, it was equally important then. Yet no single indication of it is discoverable in the writings of Moses...There is but one tolerable explanation of this silence. Moses was withheld by divine control from teaching what was not true; a doctrine which was radically opposed to the fundamental facts of man's sin and mortality, on which redemption proceeds" Life In Christ, Third Edition, page 148, 1878.

The fifth commandment is the *"first commandment with promise"* (Ephesians 6:2). What was the promise? Was it that a soul would be rewarded in Heaven? No, it had nothing to do with life after death, but life on earth before death, *"That your days may be*

*prolonged, and that it may go well with you on the land which the Lord your God gives you" (Deuteronomy 5:16).*

### UNDER THE JUDGES AND KINGS

Both under the Judges and later under the Kings, the history of the Jews is one of rebellion against God followed by defeat and captivity. When they repented and turned back to God, they came out of exile and prospered.

Thomas Thayer: "The entire history of the Jewish people as a nation, and as individuals, from generation to generation, shows with what exactness the threatening of the law was fulfilled in judgment. When they were obedient, the Lord prospered them, and rewarded them with fruitful seasons, with increasing wealth and power, and made them superior to their enemies. But, when they were rebellious and wicked, then followed adversity, defeat, captivity, and all the physical calamities threatened in the Law. But, all this while we have not one syllable of an endless woe, which is to be added to all the other woes. In no instance of rebellion against God, not when their corruption and idolatry were at the highest reaches of crime and blasphemy, do we find them threatened with the torments of a hell beyond the present life." "Origin And History Of The Doctrine Of Endless Punishment"

All the blessings and all the punishments of the Law were physical in their lifetime. Punishment or reward after death is not promised. For thousands of years throughout the Old Testament, God warned of punishments in this lifetime if anyone did not keep the Law, but not one warning that anyone has a "soul" in them that would "go to Hell" after they were dead. Death (mooth) is used hundreds of times, and except the few times it is used in a symbolic passage, it always means an actual physical death. The concept of Heaven is in the Old Testament, but only as the dwelling place of God (Psalm 11:4; 33:13-14), and of angels (Genesis 21:17; 22:11; 28:12). Heaven in the Old Testament was not a place where any person would ever expect to be, not a place where a soul that was in them would live forever; there is no description or promise of a resurrection to life in Heaven after death as there is in the New Testament, no promise of immortality to any individual. The God of Israel was a God who would protect them, give them blessings in this lifetime, and give them a long lifetime if they were faithful to Him, and punish them only in this lifetime if they were not. *"The dead do not praise the Lord, nor do any who go down into silence; but as for us (the living), we will bless the Lord from this time forth and forever"* (Psalm 115:17-18); today's belief of many that a soul that has gone out of the dead goes to Heaven after the death of the person it was in cannot be read back into their beliefs; death was the end of both blessing from the Lord and praising the Lord.

The savior they looked for was **a human person like David** (not the Son of God) **who would restore Israel as a nation as David did**, and he would make Israel again be superior to other nations. When the multitudes saw Jesus make bread as Moses did (John 5:14-66) they said, *"This is of truth the Prophet who is to come into the world,"* and *"were intending to come and take Him by force, to make Him king."* When Jesus made known unto them that He had not come to set up a political kingdom of Israel, but His kingdom was an entirely different kind of kingdom, *"As a result of this many of His disciples withdrew, and were not walking with Him anymore"* (John 6:66). He was not the earthly king they were looking for that they thought would restore the earthly kingdom of Israel. Even after His death and resurrection, His apostles still thought the Christ they and all Israel looked for would restore the nation of Israel to their land and rule national Israel in his lifetime, that He would be a human king only of Israel only in his lifetime as David had (Acts 1:6). **A resurrection to immortality and life in Heaven**

was a new teaching by Christ (2 Timothy 1:10), and was unknown in the Old Testament. The word resurrection is used forty-one times in the New Testament but not once in the Old Testament.

One of the great difficulties with the eternal torment view is the profound silence of the Old Testament about it. How could God have warned Israel in detail about punishments in this life, droughts, plagues, and other punishments, and not say one word about an eternal Hell which would be the worst of all punishments? The **total silence** of the Old Testament for thousands of years about endless torment for souls is proof that it does not exist.

***"I WILL SING...WHILE I HAVE MY BEING" Psalm 145:2***

Hebrew dualism, saying the same thing in two ways.

- *"I will praise the Lord while I live"*
- *"I will sing praises to my God while I have my being"*

To live was to have being, not to live was to not have being.

***"IN MY FLESH SHALL I SEE GOD" Job 19:25-27***

In "Reason and Revelation" May 2000, Dr. Bert Thompson used this question that Job asked to prove a person has a part in him or her that will live after the death of the person. If I understand Dr. Thompson right, he is saying Job said without his body he would see God. Job said, *"Even after my skin is destroyed, yet from my flesh I shall see God; whom I myself shall behold, and whom my eyes shall see and not another."* He is reading into this passage that Job is saying he has a immaterial something living in him that cannot die, and reading in that it is not Job, but only this immaterial no substance something that was in Job that will see God.

**What was Job really saying?** Job and his three friends were unaware of the decisions made between God and Satan to let Satan tempt Job as we know now when we read this book. Job had much but lost everything, and his friends and wife was telling him it was because he had sinned, and he was then in his life time being punished for, as it is taught in the Law, God punished those that sinned and rewarded those that keep His word. Much of Job's book is made up of speeches by his three friends accusing Job of sin because of what had happened to him, and that he was at that time being punished for something he had did, and Job's response to them accusing him of sin. They had no revelation of punishment after death and his three friends said nothing to him about any punishment after his death; the only punishment they said anything about was the punishment they thought Job was already receiving at that time for something they thought he had did. Earlier in Job's third response he had said, *"For there is hope for a tree, when it is cut down, that it will sprout again, and its shoots will not fail. Though its roots grow old in the ground, and its stump dies in the dry soil, at the scent of water it will flourish and put forth sprigs like a plant."* For a tree that has been cut down Job sees hope that it will live again. *"But man dies and lies prostrate. Man expires, and where is he? As water evaporates from the sea, and a river becomes parched and dried up, so man lies down and does not rise. Until the heavens be no more, he will not awake nor be aroused out of his sleep."* He sees hope of life for a tree cut down, but for a person he sees no hope of life (Job 14:7-12). In Job's time, what would be understood by *"until the heavens be no more"*? In the Old Testament the heavens were thought to be forever, their end was not known about. See Psalm 89:29, 148:6. In his hopelessness he could see hope for a tree cut down, but for person after death he could see no hope *"until the heavens be*

*no more,*" which he may have thought would never be. This is one of the many expressions of hopelessness that are throughout his speeches. He sees a person as dead, not as being alive.

In his fifth speech in chapter 19, Job seems to be at his lowest level of hope, but in his hopelessness he may see a ray of hope. *"And as for me, I know that my Redeemer lives, and at the last He will take His stand on the earth."* His Redeemer shall manifest Himself as Job's vindicator; there is nothing said about any resurrection. Many see Christ as being the redeemer Job was speaking of, but there is no revelation that had been given at this time from which Job could know about Christ being the redeemer, or that God his redeemer would ever leave Heaven and come down to this earth as Christ did. God was seen as the redeemer and deliverer of those that kept His law, Christ and the Holy Spirit being God had not been revealed to them. See Psalm 19:14; 78:35; Proverbs 23:11; Jeremiah 50:34. Over and over Israel sinned, and went into bondage and God their Redeemer delivered them when they repented. Even in the time of Christ, the Jews thought their Christ would be a man like David, a redeemer of their nation from Rome, not a redeemer of individuals from eternal death.

R. L. Harris, as quoted by Homer Hailey said, "The primary meaning of the root [ga'al, to redeem; go'el, redeemer] is to do the part of a kinsman and thus to redeem his kin from difficulty or danger...There is the very common usage prominent in the Psalms and the prophets that God is Israel's Redeemer who will stand up for His people and vindicate them." "A Commentary On Job," Religious Supply, Inc. page 176.

*"Even after my skin is destroyed, yet in my flesh I shall see God,"* the translators had difficulties with understanding what the Hebrew says in this passage, the King James says, *"in my flesh,"* the Revised Standard says, *"from my flesh."*

"This is a stupid error in our version, which fortunately, is rare enough in the ASV; but there is no doubt of it here. The proper rendition here is, '**In my flesh,** I shall see God,' as properly rendered in the AV, the new RSV, and in the Douay." James Burton Coffman, "Job" page 175, Abilene Christian University Press.

The Revised English Bible translates this passage, *"But I know that vindicator lives and that he will rise last to speak in court: I shall discern my witness standing at my side and see my defending counsel, even God himself, whom I shall see with my own eyes, I myself and no other."* Is the fulfillment of this after God his redeemer had delivered and vindicated Job? (Job 42:5), *"I know of you only by report, but now I see you with my own eyes, therefore I yield, repenting in dust and ashes"* The Revised English Bible. His three friends and his wife accused Job of sin, but he knows he had not sinned, and God, his redeemer, lived and in the end he would be vindicated. In the end of the book of Job God his redeemer vindicated him, and Job saw God standing at his side"; *"day"* in the King James Version is not in the Hebrew, it was added by the translators. *"And the Lord blessed the latter days of Job more than beginning, he had 14,000 sheep, and 6,000 camels, and 1,000 female yoke of oxen, and 1,000 female donkeys. And he had seven sons and three daughters. And he named the first Jemimah, and the second Keziah, and the third Keren-happuch. And in all the land no women were found so fair as Job's daughters; and their father gave them inheritance among their brothers. And after this Job lived 140 years, and saw his sons, and his grandsons, four generations. And Job died, and old man and full of days"* (Job 42:12-17). God his defending counsel and redeemer had vindicated him.

*“O Lord, You did plead my soul’s (nehphesh) case; You have redeemed my life”* (Lamentations 3:58). This was said while the writer was living. Just as with Job, God was his defending counsel and delivered him.

It is difficult to read Job and the Old Testament and not read into it things that were not made known unto the New Testament, or things that we have been taught by the theologies of today that are not in the Bible. The concept of Heaven is in the Old Testament, but only as a place where God and angels are, not as a place where the just would ever be and where they would live forever. Job would never have said he or any person would be in Heaven; the resurrection and immortal life in Heaven was not made known before Christ made it known. All the rewards and punishments in the Old Testament were in this lifetime, not after death. The teaching of Christ cannot be read into the words of Job, Daniel, or anyone in the Old Testament.

Job or no one will literally see God while they are in the flesh; the nearest anyone has come to seeing God was Moses when he saw God’s backside, but not His face (Exodus 33:20-23; see Exodus 3:6). The dead are sown with a natural body and raised with a spiritual body (1 Corinthians 15:44) in a moment (1 Corinthians 15:52). Immortality was brought to light through the gospel (2 Timothy 1:10), Job did not have the gospel; Job could not have known anything about life without end after death.

*“Even after my skin is destroyed, yet from my flesh I shall see God”* (Job 19:26). In the light that no person has ever seen God, this seems to be saying after his afflicted skin that was covered with boils will have been destroyed by being replaced with an unafflicted skin without boils as it later was, yet in his flesh he would see God as his redeemer and vindicator standing by his side.

ALBERT BARNES: His notes on this are many pages; I have taken excerpts from what he says, read all he says if you have his book. “For I know that my Redeemer liveth - There are few passages in the Bible which have excited more attention than this, or in respect to which the opinions of expositors have been more divided. ...The Hebrew word, גָּאֵל g o'el, is from גָּאָל ga'al, 'to redeem, to ransom.' It is applied to the redemption of a farm sold, by paying back the price, Lev 25:25; Rut 4:4; Rut 4:6 to anything consecrated to God that is redeemed by paying its value, Lev 27:13 and to a slave that is ransomed, Lev 25:48-49. The word גָּאֵל go'el, is applied to one who redeems a field, Lev 25:26; and is often applied to God, who had redeemed his people from bondage, Exo 6:6; Isa 43:1...**The meaning of this word would be met, should it be understood as referring to God, coming forth in a public manner to vindicate the cause of Job against all the charges and accusations of his professed friends;** or to God...‘I know that my Redeemer live's,' he will have peace. And that he shall stand - He will stand up, as one does who undertakes the cause of another...**There is clearly no necessary reference in this word to the resurrection. The simple meaning is, "he shall appear, or manifest himself, as the vindicator of my cause"**...At the latter day - The word "day" here is supplied by the translators... The meaning is, that however long he was to suffer, however protracted his calamities were, and were likely to be, he had the utmost confidence that God would at length, or at some future time, come forth to vindicate him. The phrase, ‘the latter day,’ has now acquired a kind of technical meaning, by which we naturally refer it to the day of judgment. But there is no evidence that it has any such reference here...The words does not necessarily imply any visible manifestation - though such a manifestation would not be forbidden by the fair construction of the passage. I say they do not necessarily imply it” Job, pages 324-328, Baker Book House, 1955.

## WHAT ABOUT ENOCH AND ELIJAH?

Did either one go to Heaven?

## ELIJAH 2 Kings 2:9-18

There are three heavens spoken of the Bible.

- First heaven, the air around us, “the birds of heaven,” and “the dew of heaven.”
- Second heaven(s), the heavens that God created in Genesis 1:1, where the stars are. *“The heavens declare the glory of God; and the firmament shows his handy work”* (Psalms 19:1).
- Third Heaven, where the throne of God is.

A whirlwind is in the first heaven, it picks up things from the earth and always puts them back down on the earth; it never takes anything into the second or third heaven. Elijah was moved from a place of danger to another place. The sons of the prophets thought that God had moved Elijah to the mountains or some valley and wanted to go look for him (2 Kings 2:16). Elisha knew before hand that God was going to move Elijah (2 Kings 2:9), and knew God that God had moved Elijah to a safe place and did not want prophets who were at Jericho to go look for him. They thought he had been cast by the whirlwind *“on some mountain or into some valley”* (2 Kings 2:16), they may have thought he would be in need of help. Neither Elisha nor the prophets thought Elijah was in Heaven; the prophets looked for him on this earth where they thought the whirlwind might have taken him, *“fifty men searched three days but did not find him”* (2 Kings 2:17). Elisha did not tell the prophets that Elisha was in Heaven, and they surely would not have sent fifty men looking for him if they thought he was in Heaven; it is beyond doubt that Elisha and the prophets thought the whirlwind had put Elijah down someplace on earth, not that it took him to Heaven.

Thirteen years after the whirlwind had taken him up a letter came from Elijah the prophet to Libnah (2 Chronicles 21:10-12); there was no mail deliver from Heaven.

**It was Elisha the person that was taken away by the whirlwind, not an immaterial soul or a spirit that was in him that was taken to Heaven by a whirlwind.** Those that believe there is an immaterial soul in a person that leaves that person at their dead do not be an immaterial soul can be taken anyplace by a whirlwind; it was his mantle (2 Kings 2:14) that fell from his body (not fell from his soul) when he was up in the air. **Nothing is said about Elijah being translated to Heaven without dying.**

As has already been said about many other passages, this passage say nothing about a soul, but it is repeatedly used to prove the soul that had been in Elisha went to Heaven at that time

“The ancients of Elijah’s day would not have known of ‘heaven’ as we know it from later Scripture.” F. LaGard Smith, “After Life, A Glimpse of Eternity Beyond Death’s Door,” page108, David Lipscomb University.

If this were saying God took Elijah to Heaven it makes the Bible contradict the Bible. According to the teaching of many,

- God took Elijah to Heaven.
- But no man has ascended into Heaven but Christ (John 3:13).
- Therefore: if Elijah went to Heaven the Bible contradicts the Bible.

To put it in syllogistic form:

1. Elijah was a man.
2. No man has ascended into Heaven but Christ (John 3:13).
3. Therefore: Elijah has not ascended into Heaven.

In the New Testament, the Spirit of the Lord caught away Philip (Acts 8:39-40), but after Philip was *caught away* from the Eunuch he, “*Found himself at Azotus; and as he passed through he kept preaching he gospel to all*” (Acts 8:40).

#### ENOCH

Genesis 5:21-24: “*Enoch lived sixty-five years, and became the father of Methuselah. Then Enoch walked with God three hundred years after he became the father of Methuselah, and he had other sons and daughters. So all the days of Enoch were three hundred and sixty-five years. Enoch walked with God; and he was not, for God took him.*” Took him where and how? This is used by some to teach that (1) God took Enoch to Heaven; (2) by others that God took the soul that had been in Enoch to Heaven.

- “*And he was not.*” What dose that mean? If taken purely literal then it is saying Enoch did not exist after that, but no one I know of believes that.
- “*For God took him.*” Took him where? To Heaven is added. It says God took Enoch, somehow, someplace, not that God took the soul that was in Enoch to Heaven; dose any one believe God took the flesh and blood body of Enoch to Heaven?

Genesis 5:

1. Adam died, verse 5.
  2. Seth died, verse 8.
  3. Enosh died, verse 9.
  4. Kenan died, verse 14.
  5. Mahalalel died, verse 17.
  6. Jared died, verse 20.
  7. Enoch was not...God took him, verse 24.
  8. Methuselah died, verse 27.
  9. Lamech died, verse 31.
- When these died their bodies existed where they died. Is this saying Enoch’s body did not exist on earth for God took it to Heaven?

Hebrews 11:4-13 list five people and in verse 13 says, “*These ALL DIED in faith.*”

1. Abel “*died in faith*” Hebrews 11:4.
  2. Enoch “*died in faith*” Hebrews 11:5.
  3. Noah “*died in faith*” Hebrews 11:7.
  4. Abraham “*died in faith*” Hebrews 11:8.
  5. Sarah “*died in faith*” Hebrews 11:11.
- “*These ALL DIED in faith*” verse 13. All five that were named in verses 5-11 all “*died in faith.*” Not only four of the five “*died in faith.*”

The word that is translated “*was translated*” in Hebrews 11:5 is “*metatitheemi.*” It is used only six times in the New Testament.

1. “*And were carried (metatitheemi) over into Sychem*” Acts 7:16.
2. “*That you are so soon removed (metatitheemi) from him*” Galatians 1:6.
3. “*The priesthood being changed (metatitheemi)*” Hebrews 7:12.
4. “*By faith Enoch was translated (metatitheemi)*” Hebrews 11:5.
5. “*Because God had translated (metatitheemi) him*” Hebrews 11:5.
6. “*Turning (metatitheemi) the grace of our God into*” Jude 4.

Has Enoch or anyone already been taken to Heaven?

- "No one has ascended into heaven, but He who descended from heaven, even the Son of Man" (John 3:13).
- Peter says of David, "That he both died and was buried...for David ascended not into the heavens" (Acts 2:29-34).
- "But now has Christ been raised from the dead, **the first-fruits of them that ARE ASLEEP**...in Christ shall **all be made alive**. But each in his own order: Christ the first fruits, **then they that are Christ's at His coming**" (1 Corinthians 15:20-23).
- Jesus "abolished death, and brought life and immortality to light through the gospel" (2 Timothy 1:10). Neither eternal life, or going to Heaven was known about in the Old Testament.
  - a. **To say that Bible say Enoch was taken to Heaven is to make the Bible contradict the Bible.**

No person has yet gone to Heaven and will not before the resurrection and judgment. See "BUT AS TOUCHING THE RESURRECTION OF THE DEAD" Matthew 22:31-33 in chapter one.

### A COMMON DESTINY FOR ALL

*"For I have taken all this to my heart and explain it that righteous men, wise men, and their deeds are in the hand of God. Man does not know whether it will be love or hatred; anything awaits him. It is the same for all. There is one fate for the righteous and for the wicked; for the good, for the clean and for the unclean; for the man who offers a sacrifice and for the one who does not sacrifice. As the good man is, so is the sinner; as the swearer is, so is the one who is afraid to swear. This is an evil in all that is done under the sun, that there is one fate for all men. Furthermore, the hearts of the sons of men are full of evil and insanity is in their hearts throughout their lives. Afterwards they go to the dead. For whoever is joined with all the living, there is hope; surely a live dog is better than a dead lion. For the living know they will die; but the dead do not know anything, nor have they any longer a reward, for their memory is forgotten. Indeed their love, their hate, and their zeal have already perished, and they will no longer have a share in all that is done under the sun. Go then, eat your bread in happiness, and drink your wine with a cheerful heart, for God has already approved your works. Let your clothes be white all the time, and let not oil be lacking on your head. Enjoy life with the woman whom you love all the days of your fleeting life which He has given to you under the sun; for this is your reward in life and in your toil in which you have labored under the sun. Whatever your hand finds to do, do it with all your might; for there is no activity or planning or knowledge or wisdom in Sheol where you are going" (Ecclesiastes 9:1-10).*

The revelation given in the Old Testament was that those who kept God's word would have a long life without any of the curses given by Moses for those who did not keep His word. As there was no revelation given of a resurrection of the dead to immortality in Heaven, the writer of Ecclesiastes is telling it as it was revealed to them, after death it was the same for all, all go to the grave, not one went to Heaven (John 3:13), not even David (Acts 2:34).



Hastings' Dictionary of the Bible: "The idea of a life to come is in many portions of the OT conspicuous by its absence. **There is nothing anywhere that will compare with the NT conception of 'eternal life'**" page 546.

Jewish Encyclopedia: "The belief that the soul continues its existence after the dissolution of the body is a matter of philosophical or theological speculation rather than of simple faith, and is **accordingly nowhere expressly taught in Holy Scripture**" "Immortality of the Soul," Kaufmann Kohler, Volume 6, page 566.

International Standard Bible Encyclopedia: "We are influenced always more or less by the Greek, Platonic idea that the body dies, yet the soul is immortal. **Such an idea is...nowhere found in the Old Testament**" Volume 2, page 812, 1960.

Wikipedia Encyclopedia: "The concept of an immaterial soul separate from and surviving the body is common today but **was not found in ancient Hebrew beliefs.**"

W. T. Berger: "For man to endure unending pain (characterized by fire) is a doctrine so awful to contemplate, that it is reasonable to conclude it would be revealed to man from the beginning, and so revealed that he could by no possibility misapprehend the consequences of sinning against his Maker; and we might expect to find the terrible sentence reiterated from time to time throughout the Scriptures, especially upon occasions of aggravated sin and wickedness" *The Wages Of Sin And Everlasting Punishment*, 1886.

Walter Balfour: "First. If their belief was the same as in our day, why did they never express themselves as people now do in books, sermons, and common conversation? No one can deny the wide difference in the language used, or that the difference is proof that the new language had its origin in new views concerning the future. An unscriptural doctrine always give rise to unscriptural language; for the words of Scripture are the very best which could be chosen to express the will of God to man. If the doctrine were of God, the words of Scripture would be sufficient to express it. As we do not find this new phraseology in the Bible, we infer that the doctrine it was introduced to teach is not there. Second. **How is it to be accounted for that the fears and feeling and exertions of good people, under the old dispensation, were so different from the fears and feelings and exertions of Christians in our day, about saving men from hell? I do not find that they express any fear of hell, and it is fair to conclude that they had none.** I find no examples of their fears about their children, their relations, their neighbors, or the world at large, going to eternal misery. As to their feelings, I do not find a sigh heaved, a tear shed, a groan uttered, a prayer offered, or any exertions made, as if they believed men were exposed to endless misery. We see parents, and others, deeply affected at the loss of their children and friends by death; we see pious people grieved on account of their disobedience to God's laws; but we find no expression of feeling arising from the belief that such persons would lift up their eyes in endless misery. Now, is it not strange that all this should be the state of the fears and feelings of good people, if they believed such misery was to be the portion of the wicked? The whole race of mankind was swept from the earth by a flood, Noah and his family excepted; but does this good man deplore, in any shape, that as many precious souls should be sent to hell? God also destroyed the cities of the plain. Abraham interceded that they might be spared, but used no argument with God that the people might not go to hell to suffer eternal misery. If Abraham believed this doctrine, it is possible he should have failed to urge it as an argument that all those wicked persons must go to hell, if God destroyed them? No notice is taken of the very argument, which, in our day, would be most urged in prayer to God, if anything similar was to take place. All who have read the Old Testament know what vast numbers were cut off in a day, by war and pestilence, and other means; yet do you ever hear it deplored by a single individual, as is often done in our day, that so many were sent out of the world to eternal misery? If, in short, this doctrine was then believed, a dead silence and the most stoical apathy were maintained even by good men about it...Under the Old Testament dispensation the sinful condition of the heathen nations is often spoken of. But do we ever find the inspired writers representing those nations as all going to eternal misery, or did they use similar exertions to save them from it as are used in the present

day? If the doctrine of eternal misery was known and believed in those days, is it not unaccountable that so many ages should pass away before God commanded the gospel to be preached to every creature, and before those who knew their danger should use exertions to save them from it? If the doctrine be false, we may cease to wonder at this; but if it be true, it is not easy to reconcile these things with the well known character of God, and the feelings of every good man. What an immense multitude of human beings, during four thousand years, must have lived and died ignorant that such a place of misery awaited them!" "An Inquiry Into The Scriptural Import Of The Words, Sheol, Hades, Tartarus And Gehenna" 1854.

The Law of Moses offered no atonement of reconciliation, if it had, the death of Jesus would not have been needed. Then Jesus, our High Priest, would not have presented his sacrifice to the Father, and would not have brought both (1) **life** and (2) **immortality** to light through the Gospel (2 Timothy 1:10); a resurrection of a person to life after death and immortality was not reviled in the Old Testament. Life beyond death that Christ gives to those that obey Him was not known about before He came; if it had been known before Christ, He would not have been the one that brought it to light, whoever made a resurrection to eternal life and immortality known in the Old Testament would have been the one that brought them to light. Eternal life and immortality is not inherent by birth, or did not come by the Law, but it came:

1. "Through Jesus Christ" (Romans 6:23; 5:21)
2. "Through the gospel" (2 Timothy 1:10)

#### A MYSTERY

In Paul's writing a mystery was something that was not known, but is now known. The church in which both Jews and Gentiles are both reconciled to God in one body was a mystery that was "*hidden from the past ages and generations, but has now been manifested to His saints*" (Colossians 1:25-28); nothing about the church was known about in the Old Testament, but is now known; it was not known that the Gentiles that the Jews looked down on would be "*fellow-heirs, and fellow-members of the body, and fellow-partakers of the promise in Christ Jesus through the gospel*" (Ephesians 3:3-7). They looked for a person like David to restore the kingdom of Israel, as David did in his lifetime, but thought He would be a person that would also die just as David did. Paul speaks often of this mystery that was not known before Christ, but is now known (Romans 11:25; 16:25; 1 Corinthians 2:7; 15:51; Ephesians 1:9; 3:3; 3:4; 3:9; 5:32; 6:19; Colossians 1:26; 1:27; 2:2; 4:3; 2 Thessalonians 2:7; 1 Timothy 3:16). **A part of the mystery, the gospel, that was not known, but is now known is the resurrection of the dead to immortality**, that some will sleep, and at the coming of Christ will be resurrected changed to a new immortal body, and some will not sleep, but will be alive at His coming, and they too will be changed to an immortal body (1 Corinthians 15:50-53) was a mystery that was "*hidden from past ages and generations,*" but made known in the Christian age.

Kenny Boles, a teacher at Ozark Christian College in "The Life to Come" page 271, College Press, quotes a number of passages, and says these references portray sheol as simple the place of the dead. He changes "grave" ("graves" when speaking of the graves of all the dead) from many graves in many places, to just one place where all the dead are at, which he called the place of the dead. It seems that he is putting all the dead in one place (one grave); does he think they are not completely dead (wherever he thinks that place of the dead to be)? Is he saying a person is in two sheols, one where the body is after death, and another where something other than the body is at after death; or dose he

think souls are alive in this place of the dead, which would be a second sheol? “The place of the dead” is not a translation of “sheol,” and is not in the Bible, where did he get it from, what is he trying to prove by it? On page 275 he says the destruction throughout the Old Testament came in the form of physical death, and that this destruction by physical death is a preview of an eternal life of torment in Hell!!! Death is a preview of life!!! How could death in any way be a preview of an eternal life of torment? Both adding some kind of existence or life after death, and making the death that all die, both the saved and the lost be a preview of an eternal life of torment in the Old Testament is nothing but a weak attempt to prove both (1) an immortal soul that lives after the death of the person it was in, (2) and Hell to be taught in the Old Testament.

Summary: OLD TESTAMENT REWARD OR PUNISHMENT.

1. *“If you consent and obey, you will eat of the best of the land:*

2. *But if you refuse and rebel, you will be devoured by the sword”* (Isaiah 1:19-20).

**From the first page to the last page of the Old Testament, God warns no one of an eternal life of torment after death if they were not faithful to Him; in the entire Old Testament it is not one time said that when a person an animal dies that a soul (nehphesh) that was in either one will go to Heaven or have any kind of life after death.** If God inflicted a punishment on those under the Old Testament, which those under it were never told would be the wages of their sins, a punishment of eternal suffering for the soul that was in them after they were dead, when in *“the law given through Moses”* (John 1:17) God warned only of punishment in this life time, but said nothing about eternal punishment, and nothing about the Hell that He was going to eternally torment the soul in, then would He not be inflicting a punishment unjustly?

#### **BETWEEN THE TESTAMENTS**

There was about 400 years between the Old and New Testaments in which the Jews came into contact with many pagan teaching and some writers use many pages on the influence of writing on the New Testament. Whatever some of the Jews may or may not have believed about the pagan immortal soul, it had no influence on the revelation that came from God in neither the Old nor New Testaments. The Pharisees believed in some form of a pagan resurrection, but it was not the resurrection of the whole person to life in the ages to come that was brought to light by Christ; Matthew 22:28 point to them believing in a resurrection back to life on this earth as it now is where there would be husbands, wives, and children, a resurrection to life as it now is. Some forms of immortality of something that is in a person that would live in the under world after the death of the person it is in is taught in pagan writing and some of the writing between the Testaments, but none of the writing by uninspired persons between the Testaments or any other time did not have any influence on what is taught in the Old Testament or the New Testament. It was not unto years after the New Testament that some of the so-called “church fathers” brought this and other uninspired pagan teaching into the church. It is a very long way from the teaching of the Old Testament of all going to the grave (sheol) where there is no knowledge, no life, or worship of God, *“no activity or planning or wisdom”* (Ecclesiastes 9:10), and the New Testament teaching of Christ on immortality—life without end in Heaven.

#### **THE SILENCE OF THE NEW TESTAMENT ON BEING ETERNAL TORMENTED BY GOD AFTER DEATH**

Just as there is nothing in the Old Testament about God eternally tormenting after death, there is nothing in the New Testament. A resurrection and immortality for those in Christ is taught, but these were not known about before being made known by Christ. A resurrection and judgment followed by the second death is also new to the New Testament and were not known about under the Old Testament.

Gehenna was used on four occasions by Christ, and recorded in three of the four Gospels, and James, writing to the twelve tribes, used Gehenna one time. In the rest of the New Testament Gehenna was not used, as Gentiles would not understand it; and the people not living near Jerusalem would not know what Gehenna was, that it was the name of the trash dump of Jerusalem. Just as most who read this would not know the name of the trash dump of London. John did not use Gehenna in his Gospel for when he wrote the destruction of Jerusalem was passed, and most believe he wrote to Gentiles, and Paul was an apostle to the Gentiles; neither John nor Paul used Gehenna. **Every time Christ used Gehenna, on all four occasions it was spoken to the Jews in or near Jerusalem.** Gentiles are not once threatened with destruction in Gehenna.

Today, those who believe in Hell are always warning unbelievers about going to Hell if they do not believe. Acts covers about thirty years of preaching, but not one time is anything said about Hell. Paul said he did not keep back anything that was profitable (Acts 20:20), and that he declared the whole counsel of God (Acts 20:27), yet he did not say anything about Hell in any of his letters. In about thirty years of preaching to many in many countries, he never told anyone that they had an immortal something in them and it would be forever tormented by God in Hell if they did not believe. Why? He certainly would not have omitted such a doctrine as Hell. Today it is preached as a most profitable teaching, and the fear of Hell is used to keep many going to church. Paul did not declare anything about Hell for the same reason he did not declare anything about Purgatory; there are no such places; he did use and apply to the lost words like destruction, death, destroy, consume, burned, devour, end, and perish about 80 times.

PAUL: The whole counsel of God declared by Paul.

- *“Those who practice such things are **worthy of death**”* (Romans 1:32).
- *“All who have sinned without the Law **will also perish** without the Law”* Romans 2:12).
- *“You are slaves of the one whom you obey, either of **sin resulting in death**, or of obedience resulting in righteousness”* (Romans 6:16).
- *“For **the outcome of these things is death**”* (Romans 6:21).
- *“For the **wages of sin is death**”* (Romans 6:23).
- *“For if you are living according to the flesh, **you must die**”* (Romans 8:13).
- *“For the word of the cross is to **those who are perishing** foolishness”* (1 Corinthians 1:18).
- *“For we are a fragrance of Christ to God among those who are being saved and **among those who are perishing**: to the one an aroma **from death to death**, to the other an aroma from life to life”* (2 Corinthians 2:15-16).
- *“And even if our gospel is veiled, it is veiled to **those who are perishing**”* (2 Corinthians 4:3).
- *“The one who sows to please his sinful nature, from that nature **will reap destruction**”* (Galatians 6:8 New International Version).
- *“Which is a sign **of destruction** for them, but of salvation for you”* (Philippians 1:28).
- *“Whose **end is destruction**”* (Philippians 3:19).
- *“And these will pay the penalty of **eternal destruction**”* (2 Thessalonians 1:9).
- *“For **those who perish**, because they did not receive the love of the truth so as to be saved”* (2 Thessalonians 2:10).

- “And it ends up **being burned**” (Hebrews 6:8).
- “But a certain terrifying expectation of judgment, and **THE FURY OF A FIRE WHICH WILL CONSUME THE ADVERSARIES**” (Hebrews 10:27).
- “But we are not of those who shrink **back to destruction**” (Hebrews 10:39).

JAMES:

- “Then the lust, when it has conceived, bears sin: and the **sin, when it is full grown, brings forth death**” (James 1:15).
- “Who is able to save and to **destroy**” (James 4:12).
- “Will **save him from death**” (James 5:19 New International Version).

PETER:

- “Bringing upon themselves swift **destruction**” (2 Peter 2:1)
- “And their **destruction** slumbers not” (2 Peter 2:3).
- “But these, as creatures without reason, born mere animals **to be taken and destroyed**, railing in matters whereof they are ignorant, shall in their destroying surely **be destroyed**” (2 Peter 2:12).
- “By the same word have been stored up for fire, being reserved against the day of judgment and **destruction of ungodly men**” (2 Peter 3:7).
- “Which the ignorant and unstable distort, as they do also the other scriptures, **unto their own destruction**” (2 Peter 3:16).

JUDE:

- “Like creatures without reason, by these things **they are destroyed**” (Jude 10).

JOHN:

- “He that overcomes shall not be hurt of the **second death**” (Revelation 2:11).
- “But for the cowardly and unbelieving and abominable and murderers and immoral persons and sorcerers and idolaters and all liars, **their part will be in the lake that burns with fire and brimstone, which is the second death**” (Revelation 21:8).

Summary: Under the Old Testament the punishments were always in their lifetime with no punishment or threat of punishment after death. Under the New Testament the punishment “*is the second death*” after the resurrection and judgment.

If the lost have a soul in them and this soul shall be forever tormented in Hell, it is only reasonable to believe there would be many warning anyone about it, but there are none. The Hell that is preached today was not a part of the teaching of the apostles and early church. The same strange silence on torment after death that is found through out the Old Testament is also through out the New Testament. Did God just forget to warn of the awful place some are always preaching about?

Those that believe in Hell, try to prove it by their interpretation of metaphors and symbols, for they have not one plain statement in the whole Bible. (1) The name they give it (Hell) is not in the Bible. (2) The place they preach about is not in the Bible under any name. Its origin is Pagan to the core.

With no revelation from God about Hell, how could we: (1) Know about it. (2) Know what it is. (3) Know its name. (4) Know souls will be torment in it. (5) Know it will last forever. (6) Know who or if anyone will be in it. (7) Who told us these things? God has given us not one word of revelation on it.

### **GOD WAS NOT SILENT ON THE FATE OF THE LOST**

The apostles did tell what would be the fate of the unbelieving, but the words they used are very different than what is preached today. Most churches would throw a preacher out if he preached the lost would be destroyed, perish, die, death, or end. Death is very different than everlasting life in Hell (see chapter two, "Life and Death"). The words used to describe the fate of the lost are miles apart from much of today's preaching.

**Some of the none symbolic Greek words used in the New Testament to describe the fate of the lost are:**

**(1) Death** "*For the wages of sin is death*" (Romans 6:23). See chapter two "Life or Death." **Death is death, not everlasting life with torment; life and death are opposites, not two kinds of life.** Unconditional immortality makes both life and death into life in a different place.

#### **DEATH HAS BEEN CHANGED TO BE LIFE**

1. It makes death be eternal life in Hell, but only for "*the invisible, immaterial part of a person.*"
2. It makes the only difference in life and death is the place where "*the invisible, immaterial part of a person*" will have eternal life. Neither one means to be dead. The souls that were in both the saved and the lost unto their death will be alive and have eternal life; the souls just will not live at the same place.
  - It makes life be life in Heaven for Plato's immortal soul that will be freed from the body at the death of the body.
  - It makes death be eternal life in Hell for a soul that is now in you.

Death deprives us of all life. It does not give more life than we now have. It is not just a continuation of life in a different form. The resurrection restores the life of the person that death took away. The resurrection will be persons returning to life from death, not a return of the undead to still being undead, as we are told "souls" now are before the resurrection. The resurrection is our only hope of life after death. A change from one state of being to another state of being, moving from one place to another place, is not a resurrection.

- Moving from earth to Abraham's bosom, and then moving from Abraham's bosom to Heaven is not a death or a resurrection.
- After the death of the person, a soul moving from the person it is now in to Heaven or Hell is not a death or a resurrection.
  - Today's theology says the soul that is now in a person does not die; it just changes it's address; changes from being in a person to being in Heaven or Hell.
  - Those who hold the position that souls are now alive and goes to Heaven or Hell after the death of the person it is now in often say they believe in the resurrection of the dead even when both are not possible. If a soul is alive any place after the death of the person, that soul is not dead, and if it is not dead it cannot be resurrected from the dead. If the pagan deathless immortal soul doctrine were true it would make the Bible doctrine of the resurrection of the dead be pure folly. If to believe Plato's deathless soul gospel over Christ's resurrection of the dead is not a different gospel, it would not be possible to have a different gospel.

**Death is the big problem for unconditional immoralists.** Innate immortality says whether it is a sinner or saint, the immortal soul that is in a person cannot die, and it cannot be subject to death. **They must prove that death is eternal life, that death is not death,** that death is only a change from one kind of life to another kind of life, but if they did, then they would have proven that Christ could not have died, and that He has not been raised from the dead. Unconditional immoralists have taken all resurrections, both

of Christ and ours out of the Gospel. Without the resurrection death is the end of life for persons, and means our utter destruction.

The immortal soul doctrine says death is not the enemy Paul thought it to be (1 Corinthians 15:26), but the friend Plato and Greek philosophy thought it to be. **In Greek philosophy the preaching of the resurrection was foolishness for to them death is not dead; it is a gateway to a better life for a soul that is now in you. In today teaching death has replaced the resurrection by making death be the gateway to a better life in Heaven for “the invisible, immaterial part of a person” (W. E. Vine) without the resurrection.**

A. Campbell: "The words of the Bible contain all the ideas in it. These words, then, rightly understood, and the ideas are clearly perceived. The words and sentences of the Bible are to be translated, interpreted, and understood according to the same code of laws and principles of interpretation by which other ancient writings are translated and understood; for, when God spoke to man in his own language, He spoke as one person converses with another-IN THE FAIR, STIPULATED, AND WELL-ESTABLISHED MEANING OF THE TERMS. This is essential to its character, as a revelation from God; otherwise, it would be no revelation, but would always require a class of inspired men to unfold and reveal its true sense to mankind." "The Christian System," page 3, Gospel Advocate, 1970.

In today's teaching that there is an immortal something in a person is not subject to the death, and death cannot be used "**In the fair, stipulated, and well-established meaning of the terms.**" Therefore, death must be changed to be life, for whatever “it” is that is in a person “it” cannot be dead.

1. "The END of these things is death" Romans 6:21
2. "Whose END is destruction" Philippians 3:19
3. "Whose END is to be burned" Hebrews 6:18
4. "Sin, when it is full-grown, brings forth DEATH" James 1:15
5. "Sin unto DEATH" Romans 6:16
6. "Wages of sin is DEATH" Romans 6:23
7. "For if you live according to the flesh, you must DIE" (Romans 8:13)

**By the way they translated these words the world's greatest scholarship is collectively seen in the translations as to the meaning of (1) death (2) apollumi (3) apolia (4) olethros (5) phthiro (6) phthora (7) kataphileo (8) exolothreuo (9) katargeo, (10) phtherio, (11) destroy and (12) apothneesko The translators chose words that to the average mind convey the end of life, not life in another location.** The Bible is not a physics textbook, and does not give a scientific definition of annihilation, but God could not have been any clearer on what will happen to the lost, and the translators of most versions give us a true translation of the above words. God could have used words that means separation from God but alive and in torment, eternal life in torment, deathless, but instead He used death, die, destruction, destroy and perish.

Robert Dozier gives us a true picture of the way many try to prove these scholars wrong. He said, "The scripture in Mt. 10:28 is translated 'destroy.' But I don't want to believe that, as it contradicts my preconceived ideas. So I go to the lexicon and find out if the translators and translation is correct. I know little of the language compared to the translators, but I do find out that the Greek word translated 'destroy' is defined by the lexicons. The first definition is, 'to destroy' but that won't work for me. If I accept that, the translators are correct. Also included in the definition is 'to put off of the way entirely.' That is just not precise enough. Next is 'abolish' but that is not much better than destroy. Then, 'put an end to.' Nope, that may be the worst yet! Then 'ruin.' Finally! Something I can work with! I am not saying that James or others are consciously or deliberately trying to avoid the meaning of words or discredit the scholarship of the translations, but if we start out with a false

premise and then try to defend it, we can find ourselves making some unreasonable arguments and claims along the way. That all the translators made huge blunders over and over regarding the end of the lost is such a claim. The men who wrote the lexicons rendered it 'destroy' in our Bible, and defined it the same way, but if that won't fit our idea, we must point out their error and be thankful that they left us one word in a lexicon to grasp at. **While the word 'annihilation' is not in our scripture, the words translated are much closer to it than they are to 'never ending conscious torment.'** that's for sure...Even the rendering of 'ruined' doesn't help that much. It may neutralize that text from being one that favors annihilation, but it sure doesn't teach 'never ending conscious torment.'" Robert Dozier-James Johnson Debate on eternal punishment at: <http://www.religiousdebates.org/debates/0044/index.html>

**But, what do lexicons mean by "ruined"?** A book that is burned up is "ruined." As a book it does not exist anymore. It has been destroyed; the ashes are not the book. A school teacher has a good reputation, and then everyone finds that she is working at a house of prostitution at night. Her good reputation is "ruined," it is destroyed and it does not exist anymore.

Al Maxey: "As one examines the many biblical examples of God's dealings with the wicked, it will be quickly perceived that *not one single time* in all of recorded biblical teaching is the punishment for sin against God ever declared to be *torture*. The ultimate punishment, instead, is always declared to be *death*. Thus, if indeed God's final punishment for the wicked *is* endless torture, as some maintain, it is a fate *completely without biblical precedents*. Nowhere in Scripture does God ever use torture as divine punishment for man. Not even once!" Reflections, Issue 46, June 6, 2003.

Curtis Dickinson: "It will be noted that in each case the thing that threatened was DEATH, not incessant torture. The types and shadows in no instance teach the idea of an immortal soul or eternal spirit being tortured as the punishment for sin. In ALL cases they show the penalty for sin to be death of the person...If God intended for us to understand something other than total death for the wicked, certainly He could have found the means in the marvelous Greek language to express such. Instead He used the plainest terms indicating destruction of the whole man." "What The Bible Teaches About Immortality And Future Punishment," pages 20-21, 1984.

**(2) Apollumi** Used 92 times in the New Testament. In King James Version, it is translated (1) *Destroy* 19 times, (2) *Destroyed* 7 times, (3) *Perish* 25 times, (4) *Perished* 8 times, (5) *Lost* 13 times, (6) *Lose* 18 times, (7) *Die* 1 time, (8) *Be marred* 1 time (perished in American Standard Version).

**All from the same Greek word: "Bottles perish"** (apollumi) (Matthew 9:17). **"Lose** (apollumi) his reward" (1 Peter 1:7). The Heavens and Earth **"shall perish"**; (apollumi see 2 Peter 3:10). Even those who believe in eternal torment do not believe these things will be tormented forever, but they will come to an end: yet, when the same word is used for people (Romans 2:12, 1 Corinthians 1:18, 2 Corinthians 2:15, 4:3), some teach their soul will not and cannot come to an end; but after they are dead, a soul that is in them must live forever in torment. **It would be hard to say any plainer that "apollumi" means to perish, to come to an end, to be destroyed than the King James Version says it.** "Slain" and "perished" (apollumi) are used interchangeability in Acts 5:36-37.

Liddell and Scott: "To destroy utterly, to murder, to kill, to lay waste; from ollumi, to destroy, to consume, to make an end of, to perish, to come to an end, to die."

1) **To destroy (apollumi) is to kill.** Matthew 2:13; 12:14; 21:41; 22:7; 27:20; Mark 3:6; 9:22; 11:18; 12:9; Luke 11:51; 17:27; 17:29; 19:47; 20:16; Jude 5; 2 Peter 3:6

2) **To perish (apollumi) is to die,** Matthew 8:25; Mark 4:38; Luke 8:24; 13:33; 15:17; John 18:14; Acts 5:37; 1 Corinthians 10:9; 15:18; Hebrews 11:31. **Perish must be changed to live.** When it is the body that perishes, as in Mark 4:38 *"Teacher, do you not*



*care that we are perishing (apollumi),*" even those who say to perish does not mean to die when it is speaking of a soul must admit that when the same word is applied to the body of a person or to a tree, it means the person and the tree unquestionably dies. **They want the body that perishes to be dead, but a soul that perishes to be alive** Most admit it is actual death when it refers to the earthly body being destroyed or perishing, but say it means to preserve alive forever when it refers to a "soul" being destroyed or perishing. *"Theudas was slain"* Acts 5:34-36. A Pharisee, named Gamaliel said Theudas died (was slain). *"Judas...also perished."* Both *apollumi* (perished) and *slain* are same thing, both means to die, to be dead; neither Theudas who was slain, nor Judas who perished, was alive and being tormented. It must first be assumed mankind has a "soul" in them that will not die when the person it is in stops living, then the meaning of any word must be change if it would be in conflict with what have been assumed. However, they see that it cannot be changed to preserve alive in the many times the same words are used when it refers to the earthly body being dead. The same questions must be asked again, how do they know it must be changed, and how do they know what it must be changed to, or when to change it? What new revelation do they have? How would those who Paul was writing to know when Paul used it one-way, or when he used it the other way?

3) ***"In like manner perish (apollumi)."*** *"Now there were some present at that very season who told him of the Galileans, whose blood Pilate had mingled with their sacrifices. And he answered and said unto them, Think you that these Galileans were sinners above all the Galileans, because they have suffered these things? I tell you, No: but, except you repent, you shall all in like manner perish (apollumi). Or those eighteen, upon whom the tower in Siloam fell, and killed them, think you that they were offenders above all the men that dwell in Jerusalem? I tell you, No: but, except you repent, you shall all likewise perish (apollumi)"* (Luke 13:1-5). Both groups were persons, not souls, that literally died; the Galileans, whose blood was mingled with the sacrifices were dead, not alive and in torment, and all who do not repent will literally likewise perish (*apollumi*), will literally die, not literally live forever in torment. It is the person that does not repent that will die, not a deathless soul that cannot die; to change this from a person to a soul that cannot die makes this passage be complete nonsense. *"Killed"* and *"perish"* have the same meaning in this passage. **They were being told that all who do not repent would likewise be killed just as those whom blood was mingled with the sacrifices were killed; they will literally lose their life (after the judgment, not their earthly life).** The fate of the persons who do not repent will be destruction; it is persons that will perish, there is nothing about a deathless soul that cannot perish in this. It is not as is often changed and preached from this "except you repent, your soul shall likewise perish" it is *"except you repent, you shall all likewise perish"*

2 Peter 3:6 ***apollumi-perished.*** The world before the flood *"perished"* (2 Peter 3:6). When the Lord comes, the heavens *"shall pass away...shall be dissolved...burned up"* (2 Peter 3:10). *"To be dissolved...shall be dissolved"* (2 Peter 3:12). *"The elements shall melt with fervent heat"* (2 Peter 3:12). Just as those who *"perished"* (2 Peter 3:6) when the flood came, the lost *"perished"* with the world that then was, the lost *"Shall...surely be destroyed"* (2 Peter 2:12). Peter could not have said any clearer that the heavens and the lost will both come to the same end at the same time at the Judgment Day. Theology says, "Not so Peter, God can destroy the heavens and the earth, but He cannot destroy the immaterial, invisible, what ever the deathless soul is that is in a person for our theology

says "it" is immortal; therefore, He must torment this immaterial "it that is in a person." "Burned up" in 2 Peter 3:10 is from the Greek word "katakaio." The same thing that happened to the chaff and tares will happen to the earth and those who perish. "He will burn up (*katakaio*) the chaff" (Matthew 3:12; Luke 3:17). He will neither eternally torment, nor remake the chaff. "The tares are gathered and burned (*katakaio*)" (Matthew 13:40).

"Pass away" in 2 Peter 3:10 is from the Greek word "parerchomai." There is nothing about being made new or restored in the word *parerchomai*.

- Both the flower of the grass and the rich shall "pass away" (*parerchomai*) (James 1:10).
- The fast was now already "passed" (*parerchomai*) (Acts 27:9).
- "Heaven and earth shall **pass away** (*parerchomai*) but my words shall **not pass away** (*parerchomai*)" (Luke 21:33). "How can anyone read this and say the earth will last as long as His word, that the world will not pass away, but the world will be made new and be the permanent home of the saved and Christ after the Judgment Day?"
- "But the day of the Lord...in which the heavens shall pass away" (*parerchomai*). (2 Peter 3:10).

"In the beginning, Lord, you founded the earth, and the heavens are the work of your hands; they will **perish** (*Apollumi*), but you will remain" (Hebrews 1:11). In this passage "perish" and "remain" are opposites, that which perishes will not remain, that which remains will not perish; the heavens and the earth will perish, God will remain.

- One will perish
- One will remain

If the earth and the heavens will never pass away:

- If they will remain as long as Christ, then perish and remain would both be the same, both would remain forever.
- The heavens and the earth that perishes would last as long as God that remains.

**The question is, what would the Greek people in the time of the New Testament understand by the one word all ninety-two times that *apollumi* is used, and is there a word in English that would be understood in the same way?** Would it not be unreasonable to continually say that any will perish or be destroyed if the wicked are forever preserver alive in suffering, and are preserved from ever perishing or from being destroyed?

### **To lose something OR to destroy something**

These are two completely different and unlike things, yet they are translated from the same Greek word, *apollumi*.

Were the translators trying to make *psukee*—life into something that is only lost but not destroyed? Something that is lost is the same as it was before it was lost, but something that is destroyed no longer exists. If you lose something you no longer have what you lost, but the lost thing still exist. If a person loses a soul that was in them, would not that person still be a person without a soul, and the lost soul still be a soul without being in a person? Destroyed had to be changed to "lose" to put Plato's immortal soul into the Bible.

If you lose your life (*psukee*) your life (*psukee*) would be destroyed (*apollumi*), it would be you that would be destroyed (*apollumi*), not some immaterial something that is in you that you lost, but that something still existed just as it existed before you lost it, and it would

still be the same unchanged immaterial something that was in you before you lost it.

"For what shall a man profited, if he shall gain the whole world, and lose (apollumi—destroy) his life (psukee), or what shall a man give in exchange for his life (psukee)" (Matthew 16:26)? If a person becomes very rich, but destroys (apollumi) their life (psukee), after the resurrection that person will have lost ever thing. This passage is speaking of life (psukee) being destroyed (apollumi), not an immaterial something being that is in a person lost by the person for taking the worlds riches in exchange for this deathless soul. **It is life (psukee) that is being destroyed (apollumi) by putting the world ahead of Christ.**

By translating (1) life into soul and (2) destroy into lose, what Christ said was changed from:

- (1) The person that loves the world will destroy his or her life.
- (2) Changed it to the person that loves the world will lose the soul that is in them, but not destroy it for it is deathless and when the person that lost it is dead, it will go on living without the person that lost it.

Luke makes it as clear as it can be that it is the person that will be destroyed, not something in a person, "For what is a man profited if **he gains the whole world, and loses (apollumi—destroys) or forfeits himself**" (Luke 9:25)? The translators were not able to change Luke 9:25 from the person being lost to an immortal something that no person knows what is really being lost. If whatever a "soul" is, if it were being tormented in "Hell" "it" would know where it was, only the person that lost it would not know where it was or anything that was happening to whatever "it" is.

If the soul is something in a person that will be alive after the person is dead, would that not make it be the soul that had lost the person it was in? All this is to show how completely fool less they made Christ by trying to put Plato's immortal soul into the mouth of Christ.

(3) **Apolia** a noun derived from apollumi and is used 20 times. In the King James Version it is translated (1) *Destruction* 5 times, (2) *Waste* 2 times, (3) *Perdition* 8 times, (4) *Perish* 1 time, (5) *Damnation* 1 time, (6) *Damnable* 1 time, (7) *Pernicious ways* 1 time, (8) *To die* 1 times.

- "**Waste** (apolia) of the ointment" (Mark 14:4)
- "Vessels of wrath fitted to **destruction** (apolia)" (Romans 9:22)
- "**Money perish** (apolia)" (Acts 8:22 King James Version) "**Your silver perish** (apolia) with you" (American Standard Version). If perish (apolia) means that Simon is going to have an eternal life of torment, then his silver that will perish (apolia) with him is going to have an eternal life of torment.

These things will come to an end, not be tormented for eternity.

Apolia is used of the destruction, (1) of things in this present time, and (2) thing after the second coming of Christ. Most that believes in innate immortal admit that when it is

speaking of things, or of a persons in this present time that destruction is destruction; the same word has to be given completely different meaning to make innate immortal possible when after the judgment is being spoken of destruction is not destruction; if you destroy something, that something does not then exist in another higher state of being; but this is just what those who believe in unconditional immortality believe will happen.

### **Philippians 3:19 apolia destruction**

- *"Whose END is DESTRUCTION (apolia)"* King James Version, New King James Version, and New American Standard Version.
- *"Whose END is PERDITION (apolia)"* American Standard Version. (A Latin word in an English translation! WHY?).
- *"Their END is DESTRUCTION (apolia)"* Revised Standard Version and New Revised Standard Version.
- *"Their DESTINY is DESTRUCTION (apolia)"* New International Version.
- *"Their DOOM is DESTRUCTION (apolia)"* William's New Testament.
- *"They are HEADING FOR DESTRUCTION (apolia)"* Revised English Bible.
- *"Men...for UTTER DESTRUCTION (apolia)"* Phillips New Testament.
- *"Their COMPLETION is DESTRUCTION (apolia)"* The Christian Bible.
- *"In the END they will be DESTROYED (apolia)"* Beck.
- *"Whose END is DESTRUCTION (apolia)"* Living Oracles by Campbell, MacKnight and Doddridge. Gospel Advocate Co.
- *"Their END is DESTRUCTION (apolia)"* McCord's New Testament Translation, Freed Hardeman Press.

Put the translators of the major translations together, and you have hundreds of the most learned men on the New Testament Greek. Most if not all the translators of these translations did not believe a soul could be destroyed, and most if not all of them believed in Hell, but they did not translate apolia into "torment." If all of them translate a word in a way that disproves something those who did the translating believed in, there could be no stronger proof of the way that word should be translated. This is just what happened with the word "destruction." **Some of the world's best scholarship says apolia is their utter destruction, their end, their doom, their destiny, and completion even when they did believe a soul that is in a person can be destroyed, and that a soul will not come to an end. There is no way God could have said it any clearer or stronger.** Some are openly saying God is wrong when they teach a soul that is in the lost will have no end, or completion, or doom; but it will have an endless life in extreme pain and anguish. Men are driven to absurd reasoning when they try to avoid plain Bible teaching. **How could their END be destruction if they will never come to an END? How could their end be DESTURCTION if they will never be DESTROYED? How could there be LIFE after the SECOND DEATH without a resurrection from the second death?**

### **Philippians 1:28 apolia-destruction**

- *"Which is a sign of DESTRUCTION (apolia) for them, but of SALVATION for you"* New American Standard Version.
- *"A sure sign to them that DESTRUCTION (apolia) is in store for them and SALVATION for you"* Revised English Bible.
- *"Evidence of their DESTRUCTION (apolia), but of your SALVATION"* New Revised Standard Version.
- *"A clear omen to them of their DESTRUCTION (apolia), but of your SALVATION"* Revised Standard Version.
- *"A sign to them that they will be DESTROYED (apolia), but that you will be SAVED"* New International Version.
  - It is "you" that will be saved, not a deathless soul that dwells in you unto your death.

This clearly says the wicked will be destroyed and the righteous saved, and the only way anyone can get around it is to use the word destroy with a theological meaning that it does not have in English or Greek. Both the destruction and the salvation of the person are at the Judgment Day. Paul is not telling the Philippians that their enemies are going to be destroyed, or go away in this life, or that their salvation will be in this life.

- If the souls that were in the lost are now in Hell, what more *"destruction is in store for them"* at the resurrection and judgment? (Revised English Bible).
- If the souls that were in the saved are now in Heaven, what more salvation will there be for these souls at the resurrection and judgment?

### **Matthew 7:13 apolia-destruction**

- *"For the gate is wide, and the way is broad that leads to **DESTRUCTION** (apolia)." Christ literally said those on the broad way will be destroyed; He could not have said any stronger that they will cease to exist, yet destruction is twisted to mean eternal life for deathless souls that are in the persons in the broad way, destruction is twisted to be life for souls that can never be destroyed.*

### **2 Peter 2:1 apolia-swift destruction**

- *"And bring on themselves **SWIFT DESTRUCTION** (apolia)"* New King James Version.
- *"Bringing **SWIFT DESTRUCTION** (apolia) upon themselves"* New American Standard Version.

### **Hebrews 10:39 apolia-destruction**

- *"But we are not of those who shrink back and are **DESTROYED** (apolia), but of those who believe and are **SAVED**"* New International Version.
- *"But we are not among those who shrink back and so are **LOST** (apolia), but among those who have faith and so are **SAVED**"* New Revised Standard Version.
- *"But we are not those who turn back and are **LOST** (apolia). We are people who have faith and are **SAVED**"* New Century Version.
- *We are not among those who draw back and **PERISH** (apolia), but among those who have faith and **LIVE**"* New American Bible (Catholic).
- *"But we are not among those who shrink back and are **LOST** (apolia); we have the faith to preserve our **LIFE**"* Revised English Bible.
  - Once more, it is the person's life that is saved, not a thing is said about the life of a soul being saved or lost

**2 Peter 3:7 apolia-destruction** The destruction by fire of (1) *"the ungodly"* and (2) *"the heavens that now are, and the earth"* will **both** be at:

- *"DAY of JUDGMENT and **DESTRUCTION** (apolia) of ungodly man"* American Standard Version, New American Standard Version, Revised Standard Version, New International Version, and Living Oracles by Campbell.
- *"DAY of JUDGMENT and **DESTRUCTION** (apolia) of the Godless"* New Revised Standard Version.
- *"DAY of JUDGMENT and **PERDITION** (apolia) of ungodly men,"* King James Version, and New King James Version. Perdition is a Latin word, which means, "utter destruction."
- *"DAY of JUDGMENT when the godless **WILL BE DESTROYED** (apolia)"* Revised English Bible.
- *"DAY of JUDGMENT and **DESTRUCTION** (apolia) of ungodly people"* Amplified Bible.
- *"DAY of JUDGMENT and **DESTRUCTION** (apolia) of godless men"* McCord's New Testament Translation, Hardeman College.
- *"The DAY of JUDGMENT, the DAY when godless men **WILL BE DESTROYED** (apolia)"* New American Bible.
- *"Are being kept for the JUDGMENT DAY AND THE **DESTRUCTION** (apolia) of all who are against God"* New Century Bible.

**In 2 Peter chapter 3 the destruction of the both earth, and the destruction of ungodly men is the same. What happens to one will happen to the other. Both the earth and the ungodly persons, not souls, are to be destroyed by fire at the same**

**time, on the Day of Judgment.** If the same word in the same sentence was used with two different meanings there would be no way anyone could know the writer was saying God will destroy (apolia) the earth but will torment (apolia) men. God could not have said any clearer that He will destroy both? Do you believe God or man?

**"Passes away...abides forever"** 1 John 2:17. This is a contrast showing that the world with those who are of the world shall pass away, but

- *"He that does the will of God **abides forever.**"*
- Those who are of the world shall pass away with the world, and **shall not "abides forever."**

The world *"shall pass away...be dissolved...be burned up...dissolved...shall melt with fervent heat"* (2 Peter 3:10-11). The unsaved are *"not of the Father, but is of the world, and the world passes away"* (1 John 2:17). There is no way to say any stronger or clearer that the lost persons shall pass away (come to an end) just as the world will come to an end. ***"But the heavens that now are, and the earth, by the same word have been stored up for fire, being reserved against the day of judgment and destruction of ungodly men"*** (2 Peter 3:7). Both are destroyed *"in the day of,"* not one (the earth) destroyed *"in the day of,"* and one (the lost) being destroyed for all eternity but never destroyed; not that they will be just as undestroyed after a million years of being destroyed as they were at it's beginning, and God will be forever destroying them for all eternity, but He will never be able to get the job done. Not the destruction of one and the everlasting torment of the other one, but it is the same destruction of both at the same time. **The destruction of the earth and the ungodly is on the Judgment Day; the theology of today says, "Not so, the soul that are in a sinner will have no destruction, but it live forever in torment for it can never be destroyed."**

**John 3:16 apolia-perish** *"should not perish, (apolia) but have eternal life."* This verse certainly teaches that God sent His Son that a person may have eternal life, not just a reward to those who are born with eternal life. It does not teach that a person is born with a soul that cannot die, and this part of a person had eternal life before Christ came, and without the death of Christ. John 3:16 teaches those who believe on Christ will have life, and those who do not will have death, not life without end in Hell. It is life or perish in John 3:16, not Heaven or Hell; not a word is said about Hell in John 3:16. *"Perish"* does not mean "death."

**Acts 8:20 apolia-perish** *"may your silver perish (apolia) with you"* (Acts 8:20). The **same thing** that happens to the silver happens to the person (*"perish with you"*), both the silver and the person will perish together. Is the silver being tormented **with the person**, or did both perish?

The King James and New King James translators try to cover this up by using "perdition." Apolia is translated "perdition" Eight times in the King James Version, and comes from the Latin Bible used by the Catholic Church, not from the Greek. Does this show the unwillingness of the translator's to translate it honestly? Were they trying to hide its true meaning; if not, **why did they translate this Greek word into a Latin word in an English translation?** Was it because they did not want it understood by their English readers that could not read Latin? Perdition in Latin is not a synonym for endless torture; perdition means "utter destruction," but not many English readers would know this. It hides the true meaning from all who do not understand Latin but nonetheless lets the translators say they did not mistranslate it. Apolia is translated "perdition" in both the King James Version and the American Standard Version in John 17:12; Philipians 1:28;

2 Thessalonians 2:3; 1 Timothy 6:9; Hebrews 10:39; Revelation 17:8; 17:11. In 2 Peter 3:7 the King James Version says, "perdition," and the American Standard Version says, "destruction." The New Revised Standard Version, New International Version, and most other translations have been more truthful to the English readers and taken the Latin word "perdition" out and replaced it with "destruction."

(4) **Olethros** is used 4 times and translated **destruction** all 4 times.

2 Thessalonians 1:9 *"Who shall be punished with everlasting destruction (olethros) from the presence of the Lord."* **We are told clearly and exactly:**

- (a) **What the punishment is: everlasting destruction.** Not souls punished with everlasting torment, but persons **punished with everlasting destruction.** *"Punishment, even eternal destruction."* American Standard Version, 2 Thessalonians 1:9. *"And these will pay the penalty of eternal destruction"* New American Standard Version.
- (b) Also when it shall be: (2 Thessalonians 1:10) *"when He shall come"* (not "forever in Hell"). *"At the revelation of the Lord Jesus from heaven with the angels of his power"* (2 Thessalonians 1:7).

Two views of 2 Thessalonians 1:9.

One view): **The everlasting destruction comes from the presence of the Lord.** The "everlasting destruction" comes *"from (apo) the presence of the Lord and from the glory of His power"* New King James Version. This destruction is the penalty for sin (death) to those who are not in Christ and are not saved by His death.

Henry Thayer said, "Destruction proceeding from the (incensed, wrathful) countenance of the Lord, 2 Th 1.9" A Greek-English Lexicon of the New Testament, page 59.

In Jeremiah 4:26, the origin of the destruction is from God. In Isaiah 2:10; 2:19; and 2:21 the Septuagint, a Greek version of the Old Testament made in third century BC, has the same Greek words (*"from the presence of the Lord"*) used by Peter in Acts 3:19 where it is used as proceeding from the Lord.

- *"And fire came out FROM THE PRESENCE OF THE LORD and consumed them, than they died before the Lord"* (Leviticus 10:2).
- *"Fire also came forth FROM THE LORD and consumed the two hundred and fifty men"* (Numbers 16:35).
- *"We would see a sign FROM (apo) you"* Matthew 12:38. A sign that came FROM (apo) Christ, not a sign that was "forever away FROM the presence of Christ."
- *"So there may come seasons of refreshing FROM (apo) THE PRESENCE OF THE LORD"* (Acts 3:19).
- *"Everlasting destruction FROM (apo) THE PRESENCE OF THE LORD and from the glory of His power"* (2 Thessalonians 1:9 New King James Version).
- *"And suffer many things FROM (apo) the elders"* (Matthew 16:21 New American Standard). Christ suffered many things FROM (apo) the elders, not many things that were "forever away FROM the elders."
- *"So all the generations FROM (apo) Abraham unto David are fourteen generations"* (Matthew 1:17)
- *"He is risen FROM (apo) the dead"* (Matthew 14:2).

A second view): **The destruction is to be sent away from the presence of the Lord.** Unconditional immoralists add "away" from the presence of the Lord. They want this destruction to be only souls that had been in the lost being sent *away* from the presence of God, but without the souls being destroyed, as if there were such a place, to be banished to some place where God is not there. To be *away* from the presence of God is to be nowhere at all. Not to be; to have no existence at all anywhere. For souls to be alive

anywhere is to be where God is (Psalm 139:7-9) with God sustaining the life they have, for there can be no life that is not sustained by God. There cannot be a place where there is life *away* from the presence of God. Today's theology denies the omnipresence of God by saying there is a place where God is not present, then says the souls that were in mankind can forever live there without God being there to sustain the life of these souls. The destruction comes from God. It is "*destruction from the presence of the Lord,*" not "being sent *away* from the presence of the Lord," it is not persons or souls that live forever with out God with out destruction.

Both Acts 3:19 and 2 Thessalonians 1:9 have the identical words, "*from (apo) the presence of the Lord.*" A sign, many things, destruction, and seasons of refreshing are all things that came from God, not things that were **sent away from** God to exist forever away from His presence. Apo is used many times in the New Testament and never means away.

**Two passages that are used to prove torment of a soul in Hell after the death of the of the person it was in,** 2 Thessalonians 1:8-9 and Revelation 14:10-11. Where is Hell? 2 Thessalonians 1:9 is used to prove Hell is away from the presence of God, and that death, the wages of sin for souls that are not dead is separation from God. Yet, when Revelation 14:10-11 is made literal to prove Hell, when this torment is made be literal torment, it make this torment to be in Heaven in the presence of the Lord, not in Hell, not separation from the presence of the Lord.

1. "***In the presence of the Lord***" Revelation 14:10-11
2. **Or away (which is added) "*from the presence of the Lord*"** 2 Thessalonians 1:9

Those who believe in Hell use both to prove Hell; both "from" and "in" the presence of the Lord are where the torment of Hell will be, they clearly contradict themselves. Is Hell in Christ's presence or away from His presence? They have it both ways with souls both (1) separated from God, but being tormented by Him even though they are separated from Him, (2) and at the same time in the presence of God being tormented by God.

Robert Peterson commenting on 2 Thessalonians 1:9 in "Hell on Trial" said:

- Peterson: A person **exists** but remains excluded from God's good presence.
- Paul "*Who shall be punished with everlasting **destruction** from the presence of the Lord.*"

Peterson changed "*everlasting destruction*" to everlasting "exists." The English "destruction" or the Greek word "olethros," from which it is translated, does not mean to exist. Nothing can exist and be destroyed at the same time; from what dictionary does Peterson find destruction to mean exists.

- Anything that exists has not been destroyed.
- Anything that has been destroyed does not exist.

**Destruction has been changed to exist** in some faraway place where God does not exist. Who made this place? Did God make it and then abandoned it to exist on it own just as the souls that were sent there must exist on their own, and they must sustain their own life without the help of God who is not there? **Where is the revelation from which anyone could know destruction means to exist away from God and without God?** Those that teach eternal torment know that if destruction is destruction, then those who are destroyed do not exist any longer and cannot be tormented; therefore, they must change destruction to exist. They must say to God, "Not so God, even despite the fact that You said they will be destroyed, souls cannot be destroyed." This is an example of how far Peterson and all who believe this heathen teaching are willing to go to save their theology. **Being permanently apart from God makes life impossible; it makes to exist**



**in any way impossible.** How can anyone who says he or she “speaks where the Bible speaks, and is silent where the Bible is silent” change “*everlasting destruction*” into “*everlasting torment*” still say they do not change God’s word, when even a child can see they have changed it? God is made to be like a man that sets out to destroy a house by tearing it down, but works on it all his lifetime, and not one part of the house is destroyed. They have God spending eternity destroying a soul after a soul that once was in a person but left the person it was in, but God will never destroy any part of that soul. "Destroy" and "torment" are different things and cannot be made to be the same thing. *"For yourselves know perfectly that the day of the Lord so comes as a thief in the night. When they (those of the world) are saying, Peace and safety, then sudden destruction (olethros) comes upon them, as travail upon a woman with child; and they shall in no wise escape. But you, brethren, are not in darkness, that day should overtake you as a thief"* (1 Thessalonians 5:2-4). The sudden destruction, which "they shall in no wise escape" is on "*the day of the Lord,*" "*that day*" not eternal existing in torment after "*the day of the Lord.*" Also 1 Timothy 6:9; 2 Corinthians 5:1-5.

Roger E. Dickson: "2 Thessalonians 1:9 should thus be translated that 'these shall be punished with destruction that has unending result.' The word 'destruction' means something is terminated, that the action of destruction would not continuously go on forever and ever...The result of the destruction would continue forever. In other words, those destroyed would not come back into existence. Taken literally, they are destroyed" "Life, Death and Beyond" Biblical Research Library, Volume 11, 1998, page 160, Star Bible Publications, Inc.

**(5) Phthiro** is used 8 times and is translated (1) *Destroy* 2 times, (2) *Corrupt* 4 times, (3) *Corruption* 2 times. "If any man **destroys** (phthiro) the temple of God, God will **destroy** (phthiro) him" 1 Corinthians 3:17 New American Standard Version. Against all rules of interpretation, the same word is used in the same sentence with two completely different meanings; this same word is changed to be, "If any man **destroys** (phthiro) the temple of God, God will **torment** (phthiro) him." Why such inconsistency? Do those who have their own theory change the Bible to keep their theology?

**(6) Phthora** is used 9 times and is translated (1) *Corruption* 7 times, (2) *Perish* 1 time, (3) *Destroyed* 1 time.

- "All which things are to **PERISH** (phthiro) with the using" (Colossians 2:22 American Standard Version). Things are not going to be tormented, but will come to an end. Yet, when the same word is used in reference to a person, some say, "Not so, a soul that is in a person cannot perish; and not even God can destroy it, for a soul is eternal and therefore cannot be destroyed."
- "Beast, made to be taken and **DESTROYED** (phthiro)" (2 Peter 2:12) King James Version).
- "Shall **UTTERLY PERISH** (kataphileo) in their own **CORRUPTION** (phthiro)" (2 Peter 2:12) King James Version. "**DESTROYED**" New American Standard Version.
- "But these, like unreasoning animals, born as creatures of instinct to be captured and **KILLED**, (phthiro) reviling where they have no knowledge, will in the **DESTRUCTION** (kataphileo) of these creatures also be **DESTROYED** (phthiro)" New American Standard Version. This is changed to say animals will be killed (phthiro), but souls will be tormented (phthiro). When this passage is changed, the same word must be given two completely different interpretations in the same sentence to keep animals from having souls.

**(7) Kataphileo** is used 2 times and is translated *Utterly perish* 1 time in 2 Peter 2:12, *Corrupt* 1 time in 2 Timothy 3:8.

- "But these (men, not souls) as natural brute beast made to be taken and destroyed...**SHALL UTTERLY PERISH** (kataphileo) in their own **CORRUPTION** (phthiro)" King James Version. Both evil men and beast shall utterly perish.

- "But these (men), as creatures without reason, born mere animals to be taken and **DESTROYED** (kataphileo)...shall in their (men) destroying surely be **DESTROYED** (phthiro)." (At end of world). American Standard Version.
- "But these (men), like unreasoning animals, born as creatures...to be captured and killed...will in the **DESTRUCTION** (kataphileo) of these creatures also be **DESTROYED** (phthiro)" New American Standard Version.
- "These people, however, are like irrational animals...born to be caught and **KILLED** (phthiro) and when these creatures are **DESTROYED** (kataphileo), they (men) also will be **DESTROYED** (phthiro)" New Revised Standard Version.
- "They, creatures of instinct, born only to be caught and are like brute beast, creatures of instinct, born only to be caught and **DESTROYED** (kataphileo) and like beasts they (men) too will **PERISH** (phthiro)." New International Version.
- "These (men) (like unreasoning wild animals born to be captured and **DESTROYED** (phthiro), ranting in their ignorance) will also be **DESTROYED** in their destroying." Hugo McCord, New Testament Translation, printed by Freed-Hardeman College.
- "Animals...destruction...(men) shall be **UTTERLY DESTROYED** (kataphileo)" Living Oracles, A Campbell, Gospel Advocate Co.

"Truth Commentaries" on 2 Peter 2:12 changes what Peter said about the same thing shall happen to these men that happened to the beast, and tried to side step by saying they only act as if they are of the same nature. **Nothing is said about a person and beast having the same nature, he added that, but Peter said that they both will have the same end, both will "be destroyed"** American Standard Version. The writer could not get around this so he changed what Peter said from both beast and corrupt men having the same end, to both having the same nature; and then he said they do not even have the same nature, but only act as if they do? The same end is not the same thing as "same nature." From where did he get same nature? Is he not a county mile from what Peter did say? Does he think only the "nature" of a person or beast is to be destroyed (phthira), but only one will be alive after their nature is destroyed (Psalm 49:20)?

**(8) Exolothreuo** is used only one time. "And it shall be, that every soul (psukee-life-living being) that shall not hearken to that prophet, shall be **utterly destroyed** from among the people" (Acts 3:23). It is the "psukee" (living being, person) that shall be "utterly destroyed," not a deathless soul that shall be "utterly tormented from among the people." If this were speaking of immaterial no substance "it" that is in a person unto the death of the person, the very thing many say is immortal from birth and cannot be destroyed would be "utterly destroyed." In Acts 3:22-23 Peter is speaking of anyone who will not hear Christ shall be "utterly destroyed," not some immaterial deathless something that is in them forever preserved alive. Not only shall they that do not hearken to Christ be destroyed, they are to be "utterly destroyed."

- "To destroy utterly; extirpate—complete extermination" Thayer's Greek-English Lexicon.
- "To slay wholly" Vine's Expository Dictionary of New Testament Words
- "Exterminate: utterly destroy" The Analytical Greek Lexicon.

G. A. Adams: "**Exolothreuo is found in this one passage. This is the strongest word in Greek for the action of God towards man in his evil. There is not a shade of modification from the idea or absolute eradication. The word means clearly 'the wiping out of existence.'** Even the translators used an adjective, 'utterly' to convey the idea of eradication. It clearly refers to all those who reject Christ as being eradicated." "The Judgment," page 25.

When the strongest words in the Greek language that signify destroy or destruction are made to mean an everlasting existence in torment; there cannot be a grosser misinterpretation of language.

**(9) Katargeo** is used 27 times. Translated (1) *Abolished*, (2) *Vanish away*, (3) *Bring to naught* (nothing), (4) *Do away with*, (5) *Destroy* (6) *Destroyed*, (7) *Be done away*, (8) *Ceased*, (9) etc.

- Death "**SHALL BE ABOLISHED** (katargeo)" (1 Corinthians 15:26). No one thinks death will exist forever in torment. If only something that is in a person, not the person, is going to be immortal and it is already immortal and deathless, then there would be no death to be abolished.
- Knowledge "**SHALL VANISH AWAY** (katargeo)" (1 Corinthians 13:8). Not be tormented.
- "**God SHALL BRING TO NAUGHT** (katargeo) *both it and THEM*" (1 Corinthians 6:13). GOD WILL BRING TO NAUGHT (bring to nothing) BOTH (1) THEIR BELLY (2) AND THEM. "*Do away with both*" New American Standard Version. "*Destroy both*" New Revised Standard Version. Their belly will go back to the dust from which it came and cease to be just as they will. God will bring to nothing "*both it (their belly) and them.*"
- "*That through death he might BRING TO NAUGHT* (katargeo) *him that had the power of death, that is, the devil*" (Hebrews 2:14), Satan is to be brought to nothing, not forever tormented. How? By being cast into the lake of fire (Revelation 20:10) "*which is the second death*" (Revelation 21:8). God made Satan, man, and all that was made out of nothing, Satan, and all lost men will return to nothing. Satan, death, the Law, and the belly shall all be brought to nothing, not eternally tormented.
- "**HAVING ABOLISHED** (katargeo) *in his flesh the enmity, even the law of commandments*" (Ephesians 2:15). No one thinks the law of commandments is being tormented forever. It was brought to naught (nothing), vanished away, was abolished just as Satan and all the lost will be. **The same word is used for the end of death, knowledge, the belly, Satan, the Law of Moses, and the lost. Whatever happens to one happens to the others.**

**(10) Phtherio**, "*You are a temple of God...If any man destroys* (phtherio) *the temple of God, God will destroy* (phtherio) **him**" (1 Corinthians 3:16-17 New American Standard Bible). Both times the same word is used, destroy means destroy if it is a person destroying his or her body that is a temple of God, or God destroying the person who destroyed his or her temple, nothing is said about eternal torment and nothing about tormenting a soul that cannot be destroyed. The unconditional immortality doctrine must change "*God will destroy him,*" to "*God will never destroy but will torment the soul that was in him forever;*" to keep this passage from completely destroying their teaching they cannot let destroy mean destroy.

- "*If any man destroys* (phtherio) *the temple*"
- "*God will destroy* (phtherio) *him*" (1 Corinthians 3:16-17)
  - Destroy means destroy if it is man destroying the temple, or God destroying the man; man does not torment the temple, he destroys it, God destroys man for destroying the temple.

**(11) Destroy** like death, is used in a way it is not used in any English Dictionary, or is not used in everyday language by us or the world, but only by some in their special theological way. The English word "destroy" never means "torment." If the Greek word did, then "destroy" would be a very bad mistranslation. None of the Bible translations translate it "torment."

If, as many teach, destroy means banishment to Hell, then it means the same for all the creatures named in Genesis 7:21-23 where all mankind was destroyed along with all living beings not in the ark. "*Destroyed*" in King James Version, "*blotted out*" in the New

American Standard. I know many that say destroy means only a lost of well-being, not death, but I know of no one who believes all living creatures never die, only have a lost of well-being.

**(12) Apothneesko** is used 110 times and is translated die, dying, died, dead, death, perished: Apothneesko always means die or dead.

- “*Christ **died** (apothennsko) for us*” (Romans 5:8).
- “*For as in Adam all **die** (apothennsko)*” (1 Corinthians 15:22).
- “*So then, brethren, we are debtors, not to the flesh, to live after the flesh: for if **you** live after the flesh, **you shall die** (apothennsko): but if by the Spirit **you** put to death the deeds of the body, **you shall live**” (Romans 8:12-13)*
- “*For not one of us **lives** for himself, and not one **dies** (apothennsko) for himself; for if we **live**, we **live** for the Lord, or if we **die** (apothennsko), we **die** (apothennsko) for the Lord; therefore whether we **live** or **die** (apothennsko), we are the Lord's. For to this end Christ **died** (apothennsko) and **lived** again” (Romans 14:7-9). Paul is speaking of life now on earth, being alive or being dead, if we live to preach Christ or if we die, are put to death because we believe in Christ, to say die means being alive makes nonsense of this passage just as it does in all the passages where die (apothennsko) is used.*

It is “**you**” that will live or die, not an immortal soul that cannot die. Paul is speaking of a death (the second death) that only those who live after the flesh shall die, but those who put to death the deeds of the body shall not die, but you shall live (Revelation 2:11). To die (apothennsko) never means to live, it never means to live forever in torment, “*for if **you** live after the flesh, **you shall die** (apothennsko).*” Only believers are promised eternal life; not one passage ever says nonbelievers will ever have eternal life in Hell, or any other place, many passages say they will die.

**(13) The devouring, consuming, destroying fire** Hebrews 10:27: “*But a certain terrifying expectation of judgment and the fury of a fire that will consume the adversaries*” (New American Standard Version). Some have made the wicked into a burning bush that is not consumed (Exodus 3:2), and have put out the consuming fire of God (Hebrews 12:29). Therefore, God is no more a consuming fire. They use consume by fire to mean to burn up (see 1 Kings 18:38; Leviticus 9:24; Deuteronomy 28:38), except when it is God consuming the evil, for then it would not fit with their teaching. Therefore, consume must be used with two different meanings; (1) consume means consume when it is a thing that has been burn up, (2) but consume is changed to eternal torment if it is a person. Consume has never meant torment, not if it is a thing that has been consumed by fire, not if it is a person that has been consumed.

- “*Judgment and fiery indignation, which SHALL DEVOUR the adversaries*” King James Version.
- “*Judgment, and fiery indignation which WILL DEVOUR the adversaries*” New King James Version.
- “*Judgment, and a fierceness of fire which SHALL DEVOUR the adversaries*” American Standard Version.
- “*Judgment and the fury of a fire which WILL CONSUME the adversaries*” New American Standard Version.
- “*Judgment, and a fury of fire which WILL CONSUME the adversaries*” Revised Standard Version.
- “*Judgment, and a fury of fire that WILL CONSUME the adversaries*” New Revised Standard Version.
- “*Judgment and of raging fire that WILL CONSUME the enemies of God*” New International Version.
- “*Judgment and a fierce fire which WILL CONSUME God's enemies*” New English Bible.
- “*Judgment, of a fierce fire which WILL CONSUME God's enemies*” Revised English Bible.
- “*Judgment and the fierce fire which WILL DESTROY those who oppose God*” Today's English Version.
- “*Judgment and the fire of God's indignation, which WILL CONSUME all that sets itself against him*” Phillips Modern English.

- "Judgment and a flaming fire TO CONSUME the adversaries of God" New American Bible.
- "Judgment, and of a fiery indignation, which SHALL DEVOUR the adversaries" Living Oracles, Campbell.
- "Judgment and fierceness of fire which is READY TO CONSUME the enemies" McCord's New Testament Translation, Freed-Hardeman College.

The fury of fire is at the judgment; it is a consuming, devouring, destroying fire, not an everlasting tormenting fire that cannot consume. There is a big difference. The adversaries of God will be judged, and will be devoured, consumed, destroyed by the lake of fire, which is the second death, and they will never be raised again. It is a death from which there will never be a resurrection.

### **HOW FIRE IS USED IN THE OLD TESTAMENT TO CONSUME NEVER TO TORMENT**

Consumed by fire in the Old Testament: Literally it was a complete destruction of the person or whatever was consumed, not an eternal burning but with no destruction, not an eternal burning fire that tormented and never consumed. "God is a consuming fire" would be understood in the time of the New Testament just as it was used in the Old Testament, complete destruction of whatever was consumed.

Old Testament: literally consumed-burnt up, completely destroyed by fire.

- "For the Lord your **God is a consuming fire**" Deuteronomy 4:24.
- "Then fire came out from before the Lord and **consumed** the burnt offering and the positions of fat on the altar...And fire came out from the presence of the Lord and **consumed** them, and they died before the Lord" (Leviticus 9:24-10:2).
- "Fire also came forth from the Lord and **consumed** the two hundred and fifty men who were offering the incense" (Numbers 16:35).
- "So I will send fire upon the wall of Gaza, and it will **consume** her citadels" (Amos 1:7). "And it will **consume** her citadels" (Amos 1:14).
- "But I will send a fire on its cities that it may **consume** its palatial dwellings" (Hoses 9:14).
- "Then the fire of the Lord fell, **and consumed the burnt offering** and the wood and the stones and the dust, and licked up the water that was in the trench" 1 Kings 18:38.
- "And Elijah answered and said to the captain of fifty. 'If I am a man of God, let fire come down from heaven and **consume** you and your fifty.' Then fire came down from heaven and **consumed** him and his fifty" (2 Kings 1:10).
- "Now when Solomon had finished praying, fire came down from heaven **and consumed the burnt offering and the sacrifices**" 2 Chronicles 7:1.
- "Fire goes before Him, and **burns up** His adversaries" Psalm 97:1-3.
- "Let sinners **be consumed** from the earth" Psalm 104:35.
- "And they will be **completely burned** with fire in their place" 2 Samuel 23:7.
- Also Ezekiel 28:18; Malachi 4:1.

New Testament: completely destroyed at the judgment, a complete and total end, just as the fire consumed the burnt offering (1 Kings 18:38), and the fifty people were consumed (2 Kings 1:10).

- "For our **God is a consuming fire**" (Hebrews 12:29).
- "For if we sin willfully after that we have received the knowledge of the truth, there remains no more a sacrifice for sins, but a certain fearful expectation of judgment, and **a fierceness of fire which shall devour the adversaries**" (Hebrews 10:26-27). "Consume" New American Standard.
- "**Turning** the cities of Sodom and Gomorrah **into ashes** condemned them with an overthrow, having made them an example unto those that should live ungodly" (2 Peter 2:6).
- "Whose end is **to be burned**" (Hebrews 6:4-8).
- "Lord, do You want us to command fire to come down from heaven **and consume them?**" (Luke 9:54), as Elijah called fire down from Heaven and consumed the captain and his fifty men (2 Kings 1:1-15).

- *"But the day of the Lord will come like a thief, in which the heavens will pass away with a roar and the elements will **be destroyed with intense heat**, and the earth and its works will be **burned up**. Since all these things are to be destroyed in this way, what sort of people ought you to be in holy conduct and godliness, looking for and hastening the coming of the day of God, because of which the heavens **will be destroyed by burning, and the elements will melt with intense heat!**" (2 Peter 3:10-13).*

### **The devouring, consuming, destroying fire of God**

**The chaff** (Matthew 3:11-12): Those who responded to Christ are the wheat. The chaff is the useless parts of the wheat; those who do not respond to Christ are *"burned up."* Peter used the same words when he said the world and its works will be *"burned up"* (2 Peter 3:10). Neither the world nor the chaff will be tormented forever.

**Weeds, tares, and bad fish** (Matthew 13:30-50): Both the wheat and the tares (the children of the devil) exist together in the world, but at the end of the age God will burn the tares and save the wheat. In the parables both the tares and bad fish represent people.

**Dry branches** (John 15:1-10): Jesus is the vine. Any branches that do not bear fruit are cut off. The dry dead branches are cast into the fire and burnt up. When dead lifeless branches are burnt up, the branches do not exist, there is nothing left but ashes. *"If a man abide not in me, he is cast forth as a branch, and is withered; and they gather them and cast them into the fire, and they are burned"* (John 15:6). A man that does not abide in Christ is burned and ashes are not immortal souls in eternal torment. Unless someone can find a way to torment ashes, this teaching of Christ makes eternal torment impossible.

**Hebrews 10:29:** On the Judgment Day, when all the saved and the lost will most likely be able to see what Heaven will be like, and the lost to know that they are going to die; and know there will not be another resurrection, that they have forever missed being in Heaven, forever cut off from all the pleasure that will be derived from a life without an end; it will be a death very much sorer than physical death. It is not said that the *"sorer punishment"* is to be tormented forever, but some read this into it, and teach it as if it is a Bible truth; and that everlasting torment in Hell is the only *"sorer punishment"* that is possible. **To die forever after the judgment is a much sorer punishment than to die only unto the resurrection and judgment when all will be raised from the dead.** When we die, that death is not endless for there will be a resurrection, but the second death will be without end, for there will never be a resurrection from it.

**Hebrew 11:31:** Rahab *"perished not with them that were disobedient."* If we know what happened to those who were disobedient then we will know what did not happen to her. *"And they utterly destroyed everything in the city, both man and woman, young and old, and ox and sheep and donkey, with the edge of the sword"* (Joshua 6:21). To perish is to be utterly destroyed, not to have eternal life, and be tormented forever. **The same thing happened to both an ox and a man. Both perished. Both were utterly destroyed with the edge of the sword. Both were dead, only Rahab was alive.** Hebrews 11:31 is often used to teach that ox, sheep, and donkeys, *"Were utterly destroyed with the edge of the sword,"* but the souls that was in the persons who was disobedient will live forever in torment for souls are immortal from birth and can not be *"utterly destroyed."*

**Romans 9:22:** *"Vessels of wrath fitted unto destruction."* Many of today's preachers do not like the way God said this and change it to, "Vessels of wrath fitted unto an eternal life of torment;" after all they have been taught that an immortal soul cannot be destroyed.

The response I get more than all others combined is, "If there is no Hell, then it does not make any difference what we do." Most will do anything they can to live. Those who are sick do all they can to live a little longer. Only a few, who must not be right in the head, would not care if they did not live. Those who teach Hell are like a drowning man reaching for a straw; they reach for anything to save their theology. This theology belittles the death of Christ. God thought it important enough to give His only Son. Christ gave His life that we could live, but some say His gift of life to us is not important if there is no Hell to be tormented in. To die is O.K. with them. This is the same as saying, "If the soul that is in me will not go to Hell, then I do not care if I die and it does not go to Heaven, for I only want it to go to Heaven to keep from it going to Hell." Fear of Hell has made many hypocrites who go to church and think that they are Christians, but it has never made one true Christian. Never saved one person, but the fear of Hell have made many hypocrites, and will go on making them as long as it is taught. Anyone who goes to church because they fear Hell, and would not go without this fear is a hypocrite, not a Christian. Would they cheat on their wife, lie, and steal if it were not for fear they would be found out? If it is not from love of God, going to church for any other reason will do no good. If one is not a Christian because of the love of God and the hope of eternal life, he cannot be a Christian because of the fear of there being something in him that will go to Hell. The Lord does not add anyone to the church because of fear of the nonexistence pagan Hell. Some would say, "Has not the fear of Hell made many Christian?" No, the believing of Satan's lie over God has made many be lost even while they think they are saved. No one can be frightened into Heaven, or get to Heaven by believing Satan's lie; if a hypocrite professes to be a Christian others will see his or her lack of love and faith and be turned from Christ. Hellfire preaching is the gospel of fear used by men like Jonathan Edwards; it cannot save, it deceives.

The Judgment Day will be a fearful day for the lost (Hebrews 10:26-31). Maybe more fearful than anything a person has ever known. We will all stand before the judgment seat of God, both those who have not obeyed the Gospel, and those that have not remained faithful will face God's wrath at the judgment.

Summary: **It would not be possible to say any clearer that evil men will be killed, utterly perish, be utterly destroyed just like and with the animals and things at the end of the world. All the right words, both in the Greek and in the English translation are used to show evil men will die, come to an end. It could not be said any stronger or clearer. On the other hand, none of the words used so often today are used, an undying soul, an immortal soul to save, everlasting torment, eternal Hell, your soul is going to Hell when you die, etc. these words, which are used repeatedly from today's pulpits would be an absolute must to prove today's teaching of Hell, but they are totally absent in the Bible.** There is not anything that shows there is now a deathless something in a person that will live forever in torment if the person sins. **The parables and metaphors Christ used clearly show destruction, not torment.** Did the Holy Spirit do a poor job of choosing words when He was guiding into all truth? Luckily He has some with their theology to help Him out lest the new convert understand the English words the way they are translated. Is it not unreasonable to make words in the Bible have a meaning attached to them that is unlike their use in any other book in the world?

## THE WRATH OF GOD

*"Vengeance belongs unto me, I will recompense, and again, the Lord shall judge His people. It is a fearful thing to fall into the hands of the living God"* Hebrews 10:30-31. See Romans 2:1-16; 1 Thessalonians 1:10. The Day of Judgment will be a fearful day to the lost, a day when they must give an account to God. The theology of many makes it essential that the wrath of God keeps the fire of Hell hot, and forever tormenting the souls that are in the lost in extreme pain and anguish. The Bible does not one time say His wrath will mean God will inflict everlasting pain and anguish on a soul because it had been in a person that was lost because the person sinned.

**1) Wrath of God in this life: Many of the scriptures on the wrath of God is his wrath on the sinner now in this life** (Romans 1:18; 2 Peter 2:9). Sodom was destroyed. It was totally annihilated with all that were in it. In the flood all life not in the ark was totally destroyed, annihilated, abolished, not tormented. Throughout the Old Testament God's wrath has been in the life time of the people, cities, and nations that disobey Him; they were destroyed by fire, sword, wars, floods, famines, pestilences, but never forever tormented. Capernaum was thrust down to the grave. It does not exist today. (Note: 2 Peter 2:9 says too different things in the translations. The King James and others say the unjust **are reserved** unto the Day of Judgment to be punished, the American Standard and other say the unrighteous **are now kept under punishment** unto the Day of Judgment).

**2) Wrath of God "in the day of judgment."**

- *"Wrath in the day of wrath and revelation of the righteous judgment of God...but unto them that are factious, and obey not the truth, but obey unrighteousness, shall be wrath and indignation, tribulation and anguish, upon every soul (psukee-person) of man that worked evil...in the day when God shall judge the secrets of man"* (Romans 2:5-16 American Standard Version).
- *"For if we sin willfully after that we have received the knowledge of the truth, there remains no more a sacrifice for sins, but a certain fearful expectation of judgment, and a fierceness of fire which shall devour the adversaries. A man that has set at naught Moses law died without compassion on the word of two or three witnesses: of how much sorer punishment, think you, shall he be judged worthy, who has trodden under foot the Son of God, and has counted the blood of the covenant wherewith he was sanctified and unholy thing, and has done despite unto the Spirit of grace? For we know him that said, vengeance belongs unto me, I will recompense, and again, the Lord shall judge his people. It is a fearful thing to fall into the hands of the living God"* (Hebrews 10:26-31).
- *"And inasmuch as it is appointed unto men once to die, and after this comes judgment"* (Hebrews 9:27).
- *"Much more then, being now justified by his blood, shall we be saved from the wrath of God through him"* (Romans 5:9).
- *"Inasmuch as he has appointed a day in which he will judge the world in righteousness by the man whom he has ordained"* (Acts 17:31).
- Also 1 Thessalonians 1:10; 5:9

**3) Wrath of God after the judgment:** There is not one word about the wrath of God after the Judgment Day is over. **Many mix the first two together, and misapply most of them to their Hell after Judgment Day**, which they must prove at all cost. Is it that they want them burning in Hell while we are in Heaven? **Nothing is said about God tormenting anyone after the Judgment Day is over, or about His wrath after that day, but it is taught as if it were a gospel fact.** God's wrath will be on the Judgment Day (Matthew 16:27; Luke 14:4; John 5:27-29; Acts 17:31; 1 Corinthians 4:5; 2 Timothy



4:1; 4:8; 2 Peter 3:7; Malachi 4:1-3). **What does the Bible say about God's wrath after the judgment is over? Not one word.**

### THE TYPES OF THE JUDGMENT

**The types and shadows all teach death, not an eternal life of torment. The punishment for sin is always death.**

**1. The flood** 2 Peter 2:5: Eight lived; but for the rest of mankind there was the supreme punishment of death, not an eternal life of torment. Genesis 6:17-7: 23 *"And God said unto Noah, The **end** of all flesh is come before me... **and behold, I will destroy them with the earth...**And I, behold, I do bring the flood of waters upon the earth, to **destroy** all flesh, wherein is the breath of life, from under heaven; everything that is in the earth **shall perish...**And all flesh that moved on the earth **perished**, (died, King James Version) birds, and cattle and beasts and every swarming thing that swarms upon the earth, and all mankind; of all that was on the dry land, all in whose nostrils was the breath of the spirit of life **died**. Thus, He **blotted out** (was destroyed, American Standard Version) every living thing that was upon the face of the land, from man to animals to creeping things and to birds of the sky, and they were **blotted out** from the earth; and only Noah was left (alive) and they that were with him in the ark" (New American Standard Version). **Died, perished, was destroyed, blotted out, and not left alive was literally the end of them, all in whose nostrils was the breath of the spirit of life died.** Does anyone think *"birds and cattle and beasts and every swarming thing..."* etc., did not die when they died, and they are now living in some third world somewhere with these evil men that did not die when they died? The flood is a type of the judgment. **The wicked will literally perish, die, be blotted out, and not be left alive; and only the saved will "remained" alive.** *"For this they willfully forget, that there were heavens from of old, and an earth compacted out of water and amidst water, by the word of God; by which means the world that then was, being overflowed with water, **perished**: but the heavens that now are, and the earth, by the same word have been stored up for fire, being reserved against the **day of judgment and destruction of ungodly man**" (2 Peter 3: 5-7). Just as those outside of the ark were all destroyed by the flood and none, animals or man, were left alive and tormented, all those outside of Christ will be destroyed. There is no question or doubt that destroy, perish, die, and end was the end of all life at the time of the flood. **This is an example (type) of the judgment to come. Only those in the ark (Christ) will be left alive.****

**2. Sodom and Gomorrah** Jude 7: *"Are set forth as an example, suffering the punishment of eternal fire" (American Standard Version). God "**Condemned them to extinction and made them an example of what is coming to the ungodly**" (2 Peter 2:6 New Revised Standard Version). These cities were literally burnt up, not still burning with the people walking around in torment. **Their end (extinction) was complete total destruction and eternal; and is an example of the total destruction that is coming to the ungodly at the judgment. Sodom has ceased to exist. So thorough was its destruction that its location is not known.** Some believe it was under what is now the Dead Sea, some that it was other places. **The annihilation, end, destruction, extinction of the ungodly will be total and eternal, just as it was of Sodom and Gomorrah. They will cease to exist.** *"By turning the cities of Sodom and Gomorrah to ashes he condemned them to extinction and made them an example of what is coming to the ungodly" (2 Peter 2:6 New Revised Standard Version). God "condemned them to**

*extinction,*” they were reduced to ashes and the fire went out is also a part of the example of what will happen to the ungodly. The fire did not preserve them in eternal torment, but eternally destroyed them, “*condemned them to extinction.*” Where is the revelation that changes this example of total destruction by a fire that went out when the destruction was complete into an example of destruction that will never be complete, and the fire will never go out?

- “***Turning the cities of Sodom and Gomorrah into ashes*** condemned them with an overthrow” (2: Peter 2:6).
- “*Sodom and Gomorrah...are set forth as an example, suffering the punishment of eternal fire*” (Jude 7).
  - Peter and Jude were speaking of the same destruction. The punishment of eternal fire and being turned into ashes both are speaking of these cities being totally destroyed by the fire that turned them into ashes. Ashes are not alive and cannot be tormented in Hell; these cities do not now exist alive in torment in Hell.

2 Peter 2:6:

- “*And if by turning the cities of Sodom and Gomorrah to ashes **HE CONDEMNED THEM TO EXTINCTION** AND MADE THEM AN EXAMPLE OF WHAT IS COMING TO THE UNGODLY*” New Revised Standard Version.
- “*And turning the cities of Sodom and Gomorrah into ashes condemned them with an overthrow, HAVING MADE THEM AN EXAMPLE UNTO THOSE THAT SHOULD LIVE UNGODLY*” American Standard Version.
- “*He condemned the cities of Sodom and Gomorrah to destruction by reducing them to ashes, HAVING MADE THEM AN EXAMPLE TO THOSE WHO WOULD LIVE UNGODLY THEREAFTER*” New American Standard Version.
- “*He condemned the cities of Sodom and Gomorrah by burning them to ashes, AND MADE THEM AN EXAMPLE OF WHAT IS GOING TO HAPPEN TO THE UNGODLY*” New International Version.
- “*And turning the cities of Sodom and Gomorrah into ashes, condemned them to destruction, MAKING THEM AN EXAMPLE TO THOSE WHO AFTERWARD WOULD LIVE UNGODLY*” New King James Version.
- “*And God also destroyed the evil cities of Sodom and Gomorrah by burning them until they were ashes. HE MADE THESE CITIES AN EXAMPLE OF WHAT WILL HAPPEN TO THOSE WHO ARE AGAINST GOD*” New Century Bible.
- “*And He condemned to ruin and extinction the cities of Sodom and Gomorrah, reducing them to ashes (AND THUS) SET THEM FORTH AS AN EXAMPLE TO THOSE WHO WOULD BE UNGODLY*” The Amplified Bible.
- “*God reduced the cities of Sodom and Gomorrah to ashes, condemning them to total ruin AS AN OBJECT LESSON FOR THE UNGODLY IN FUTURE DAYS*” Revised English Bible.

If Sodom and Gomorrah are an example of what is going to happen to the ungodly, how could the ungodly have an eternal life of torment? These cities were both reduced to ashes, and when there was nothing more to burn, the fire went out. They are an example of extinction, of total destruction, not of eternal torment.

What is Sodom an example of?

“*Condemned them too extinction*” -- Sodom -- or too an eternal life of torment?

“*Condemned them too extinction*” -- ungodly - or too an eternal life of torment?

Does anyone think Sodom, a city, is now being tormented in Hell today? If it is not, then how is it an example of being tormented in Hell?

**Will there be degrees of punishment in Hell?** See (9) MORE TOLERABLE, the judgment of cities in chapter eight, part four.

#### **THE NOTHING CAN BE DESTROYED ARGUMENT**

In his reply to my article "From Where Came Hell" Csonka said, "They (bottles, gold, and sheep...spirits) would be in a state of detriment and not annihilation" (Truth Magazine, 1995, page 17). He makes broken bottles, and our spirits after death have the same "state." Will the bottles be "annihilation" after the earth is destroyed and return to the nothing God make all thing from, or will they still be in the same "state" as our spirit? Does he think earthly bottles will be in Heaven? All the elements (atoms) in a tree came from the soil, and were created from nothing when God made the earth; and when a tree is burnt, the elements go back to the earth. The elements in a tree existed before the tree did, and will exist after the tree unto the end of the earth (Peter 3:12). Does he think that a tree was a tree before the seed came up? Does he think that a body that has decayed in the ground and gone back to the elements that had been in the ground for thousands of years before the person was born is still a person? Is the ashes of those that were burned at the stake are still the persons; if the ashes are still the persons, how is it that many believe only a bodiless soul (that according to Robert Morey a soul is "thoughts only," is immaterial and has no substance) that is in a person will be in Heaven? But worst of all, does he think the all wise and all knowing God could not have used symbols that taught what He wanted to teach, that when God compared the lost to a tree that is burnt up that God could not burnt up a person? He is saying matter cannot be destroyed, not even when it is burnt up, it just changes back to the base elements from which the bottle was made; therefore, a soul can never be destroyed. **What base elements does he think a soul (an "immaterial, invisible part of man") is made of that it will go back to at the death of the person it had been in? When something burns up, are the ashes that remain conscious and in torment?** When a bottle changes back to the base elements, it is no longer a bottle; what does he think a soul is if it has changed from a soul back to its base elements, and what does he think are the base elements of a soul that he believes has no substance? Is he saying only the materials of which souls are made are in existence? A bottle has substance, but according to today's theology a soul has no substance. He is making a comparison of something he says has no substance with the substance of a bottle that was destroyed, but is no longer a bottle. Is he saying only the base element of a soul that has no base element, and has no substance, is in Abraham's bosom? He has made death be nothing but "a loss of well being," or "a loss of all the quality of life." Therefore, life can be nothing but "well being." The elements of tree and the elements that a person are made of existed before the tree or the person, and they will exist after they return to the earth from which they came, but they were not a person before his or her birth, and are not a person after his or her death. The elements that make up my body existed from the time God made the earth out of nothing, but I did not exist before my birth. If a dead body is burned, the smoke and ashes remain, but are the ashes still the person? The base elements of all things were made out of nothing and will go back to nothing at the end of the world; therefore, his argument, that nothing can be destroyed is not true for all things will be destroyed. When anyone tries to prove an error, they have to fall back on human wisdom and misusing or changing God's word. With all love and respect, this is one of the most far out arguments I have ever heard. He must have needed something very badly with which to prove his teaching. **The impact of the teachings of**

**Christ in these parables is so strong that some would make the words of Christ be saying nothing just to get away from it.** If a tree cannot be destroyed, then Christ the master teacher is saying nothing. Christ is made to be just a "vain babblers," speaking things that cannot be; for if they do not, then their Hell could not be.

The same science that tells us nothing can be destroyed also tells us that nothing can be created out of nothing. This science does not realize that the God that made all things out of nothing can send that which He made out of nothing back to nothing. **Those who use the nothing can be destroyed argument to prove a person has a part that cannot be destroyed may give God the power to create out of nothing, but they denies Him the power to destroy what He has created out of nothing.** If all the elements that were in a person's body existing after his death proves that person is still alive somewhere, it would also prove that person was alive somewhere before his birth for all the elements in the body also existed before the birth. The elements are not a person after death any more than they were a person before birth. **But, why are they using elements of this earth to prove something about souls that they say are not made of elements of this earth?** This is like a drowning man reaching for a straw. Adam was not created unto the sixth day, but the dust from which he was created existed before the sixth day, before Adam, but the dust was not Adam (Genesis 2:7). After he sinned he was told, *"For you are dust and to dust you shall return"* (Genesis 3:19). The same dust that existed before Adam was not Adam, and after Adam the same dust existed, but it was not Adam.

Csonka said, "Five of these passages are parables that do not describe what will literally happen; but, explain in the closest terms the things that will take place in the spiritual parallel." Csonka, "Truth Magazine," 1995, page 16.

Unless a tree is tormented, there is no close parallel to the teaching of eternal torment.

- If trees that are burnt up by the farmer are **destroyed**;
- And the lost that are burnt up by the Lake of Fire are **destroyed**; there is a parallel. It is the end of both.

But- - - - -

- If trees that are burnt up by the farmer are **destroyed**;
- And the lost that are burnt up by the Lake of Fire are **not destroyed but tormented**; if one (a tree) is destroyed, and the other one (a lost man) is not destroyed, there is no parallel. It is the end of one but not the other.

Summary: When we burn up something, are the ashes in conscious torment? Skins, bottles that perish (Matthew 9:17), moths destroyed cloth (Luke 12:33), foods that perished (John 6:27) are not in conscious torment after they are destroyed or perished, yet traditionalists use these to prove conscious torment after death because these materials are not annihilated. By using the same logic, the bodies of beasts are not annihilated after their death for all the elements of their bodies still exist; therefore, they are now just as conscious as people are, for none of the elements of their bodies has not been destroyed, they still exist. When a persons house burns to ashes, that persons does not have a house, the house he or she did have does not exist anymore; to say nothing can be annihilated; therefore, the earthly body of a person cannot be annihilated is nothing more than a deceptive play on words.

We are told, "That which thinks and remembers cannot be matter; therefore, a person must have a soul, which is composed of some other substance." Animals can think and

remember, some of them can think and remember very well; therefore, animals "must have a soul, which is composed of some other substance."

### **THE JUSTICE OF GOD**

The argument of some is that God would not be a just God if He did not punish the sinner. They then jump from justice demands punishment to Hell being the only way God can punish the sinner; most of the time without any kind of an attempt to prove there is a Hell. They are so indoctrinated that they assume the only kind of punishment there could be is their Hell, and are blind to what God does say. The question is how do they know the punishment will be in Hell when there is not one word about it in the Bible? There is much on the punishment being death, but nothing on it being souls being tormented by God in Hell. Death is the worst kind of punishment, but some cannot see it as a punishment because they are so blinded by their Hell theology.

### **SUMMARY**

**It is almost beyond belief that many, if not all of the major translations of the Bible made by men who believed in eternal torment, that none of these words are ever translated torment. Not one time is it said that God or Satan will torment anyone forever; but it is said repeatedly, using many different words (death, die, perish, destroyed, and destruction) that God will destroy those who are not His children.**

**Neither the name, nor a place called "Hell" is not in the Bible in the Greek New Testament, or the Hebrew Old Testament. It was put into the Bible in the Dark Ages by mistranslating. It changes the God of love into an evil god of infinite horrors. It is a gospel and a god that is very different that the Gospel and the God of the Bible (Galatians 1:8-9).**

**Christ said, "*But in vain do they worship me, teaching as their doctrines the precepts of men*" (Matthew 15:9). Could a doctrine that changes what God said, "*The wages of sin is death*" (Romans 6:23) to, "*The wages of sin is an endless life being endlessly tormented by God*" be anything but vain worship?**

## **CHAPTER EIGHT**

First Resurrection And Second Death

An Immortal Soul or Resurrection of the Dead

The interpretation of figurative language, metaphors, and symbolic passages

**Part 1: The rich man and Lazarus.** The intermediate bosom

**Part 2: Israel's destruction,** her weeping, gnashing of teeth, outer darkness, Matthew 24 - Preterits Eschatology - Realized Eschatology - The A. D. 70 Doctrine - The day of the Lord - 2 Peter 3

**Part 3: The symbolical pictures of Revelation versus a literal interpretation** - Souls under the altar - The smoke of their torment goes up forever and ever - The Lake of Fire

**Part 4: Forever and ever** of the King James Version - **Eternal**

Those who believe in the Pagan doctrine of an immortal soul from birth and Hell have no plain statements. **That they must reinterpret figurative language, metaphors, and symbolic passages into literal statements shows the weakness of their belief** that it is from man and not from God. Parables and figurative language are made to be superior over plain statements. The clear language must be changed to agree with what is thought to have been said in the symbolic language; therefore, **many literal passages must be made figurative to keep them from being in conflict**. Many of the metaphors about the destruction of Israel have been discussed in the first seven chapters. This chapter is a look at some of the symbolic passages that are often changed into literal statements.

-----

## **PART ONE**

### **The Interpretation Of Figurative Language Metaphors And Symbolic Passages**

#### **THE INTERMEDIATE BOSOM: THE RICH MAN AND LAZARUS**

Luke 16:19-31

Does hades have a good side and a bad side? This parable is one of the most used scriptures to prove both (1) that persons have something that has no substance in them and it goes to Heaven or Hell, (2) or when the person it is in dies that this something that is in the person leaves the person and goes into a holding place unto the resurrection. If this were a literal story and not a parable, as many believe it is, it would be both in conflict with and a contradiction of the belief that a soul leaves the person it was in and that soul at once goes to Heaven or Hell at the death of the person; if that soul went to Abraham's bosom it would be positive proof that soul does not instantly go to Heaven or Hell.

Many realizing that the Orthodox teaching that there is something in a person that goes to Heaven or Hell at death is not from the Bible, and "it" will not be in Heaven before and without a resurrection and judgment, knew they had to have an intermediate or third place that is not Heaven or Hell to put immortal souls (if there were immortal souls) from death unto the resurrection. Is the best they can do is to try to make a parable into a true story, making Abraham's bosom into a holding place unto the resurrection? In doing this, they must set aside the plain teaching on death and the resurrection as if they did not exist. Making this into a real story, and not a parable may be a life or death struggle with them, for the Bible gives them nowhere for a living soul to be living in before the resurrection, There is no other place, and they need to make this into a real place. If they do not, they have a living soul with nowhere for it to be living in before the resurrection and judgment. They cannot have it in Heaven or their Hell unto the resurrection, but they must have somewhere to keep it. They cannot even agree among themselves, for some say it is a parable, and some say, "No it is a true story." Many that think it is a parable will use it as if it were a true story; they say it teaches the same thing either way. "Notes On The Parables Of Our Lord" by R. C. Trench is ranked as one of the best on the parables. He not only says this is a parable, but on page 17 says parables are not to be made the first sources to teach a doctrine. To go from the clear to the obscure has been recognized as the law of Scriptural interpretation, but this has been forgotten by those looking for an argument to sustain a weak position, and often invent for themselves

support in parables. On page 162 Trench says it is most important to keep in mind that this parable has as its central thought the rebuke of unbelief. Nevertheless, this parable is used as the first and only source to teach a doctrine that is not found in any other part of the Bible.

Some that believe in Hell often point to Luke 16 to prove there is torment after death, but when pushed, most of them will admit hades is not Hell, but they need to prove there is torment in Hell; therefore, use the torment of the rich man in hades in this parable and hope in some way to transfer the torment in hades to torment in Hell. **Even if this were a true story and not a parable, it may prove that there is torment before the resurrection, but it would prove nothing about what will be after the resurrection, or that there will even be a Hell after the resurrection;** yet, Luke 16 is one of the most used passages to try to prove there is a Hell, and that there is torment in Hell even though there is nothing about Hell in the parable. They are desperately looking for proof of Hell, which they cannot find. It says nothing of Heaven, Hell, or a soul. The complete silence of the scriptures about the dead being anywhere before the resurrection other than the grave is a deathblow to the doctrine of an immortal soul; **Those who make this parable into a literal story and are trying to prove the Abraham's bosom view, or to prove Hell, use it to put aside hundreds of plain passages of scripture.**

#### PARABLES IN LUKE 15 AND 16

1. The lost sheep (Luke 15:3-7).
2. The lost coin (Luke 15:8-10) not called a parable.
3. The lost son (Luke 15:11-32) "*a certain man*" not called a parable.
4. The unjust steward (Luke 16:1-13) "*a certain rich man*" not called a parable.
5. The rich man and Lazarus (Luke 16:19-31) "*a certain rich man*" not called a parable.
  - Four of the five are not called a parable.
  - Three of the five begin with "*a certain...man.*"
  - Two of the five have "*a certain rich man.*"
  - No one makes the other four be a true story, but they desperately need the rich man and Lazarus to be a true story to have proof of their doctrine.

Five "*a certain*" in a row.

1. "*A certain man*" (Luke 14:16).
2. "*A certain man*" (Luke 15:11). No one questions these two being a parable.
3. "**A certain rich man**" (Luke 16:1). And no one questions this being a parable.
4. "**A certain rich man**" (Luke 16:19). Why do many question this being a parable?
5. "*And a certain beggar named Lazarus*" (Luke 16:20).

**Christ used "*a certain*" 18 times, and all 18 are in parables** (Matthew 18:23; 21:28; 31:23; 22:2; Mark 12:1; Luke 7:41; 10:30; 10:31; 10:33; 12:16; 13:6; 14:16; 15:11; 16:1; 16:19; 16:20; 19:12; 20:9). No one questions that the other 16 times "*a certain*" is used as being in parables, only the two in this parable to make them fit with the literal view, but it is **desperately needed** for this not to be a parable for it to be proof of the doctrine of Hell, **even if it makes the passage contradict what is believed about Hell.**

The objection of some is that it is not called a parable. More than half, 15 of the 26 parables in Luke are not called a parable. The three parables before this one that are a part of the series of five parables all spoken to the Pharisee and Scribes in the same speech are not called parables, but no one questions them being parables. The objection of others is that parables do not use proper names. "*And he took up his parable, and said, 'From Aram has Balak brought me, the king of Moab from the mountains of the East: come, curse me Jacob, and come, defy Israel'*" (Numbers 23:7). Not one but **five proper names**

are used in one parable. "*Satan*" (Mark 4:14) and "*the son of man*" (Matthew 13:37) are used in parables, also Ezekiel 23:1-4.

This is the last in a series of five parables, all spoken to the Pharisee and Scribes, all in the same speech. All five have people, but no one takes the people in the first four to be actual people, but fictitious people used to teach the Pharisees to whom these five parables were spoken.

1. A man with a hundred sheep (Luke 15:3-7).
  - "*Both the Pharisees and scribes began to grumble...and he told them this parable*" (Luke 15:2-3).
2. The woman with two coins (Luke 15:8-10).
3. Two sons and a father (Luke 15:11-32).
4. The cunning servant (Luke 16:1-17).
5. Rich man, Lazarus, Abraham's bosom (Luke 16:14-31).
  - "*Now the Pharisees...were listening to all these things...and He said to them*" (Luke 16:14-15).

**Those who make this parable into a literal story do not accept the main part of it as being literal.** They do not accept Abraham's bosom as being a literal place, but as a symbolic place; his literal bosom had turned to dust many years before, and there would not be room for even one person in Abraham's literal bosom; therefore, if part of it cannot be literal none of it can be literal, if it is a true story then all of it must be literal. It is a symbolic picture or a true story? It cannot be a mixture of the two; it cannot be part literal and part a true story. Does anyone believe Lazarus was literally carried to Abraham's literal bosom by angels?

Many want to make this a true story and not a parable to use it to prove Hell, but the only part they want to be a true story is the one word "torment" even though it is clear that the "torment" in this parable is not in Hell; the rich man was not in Hell and Lazarus was not in Heaven.

#### **IF THIS WERE A TRUE STORY AND NOT A PARABLE**

If one attempts to explain all the elements as though they are literal, the difficulties of making this be a true story will be seen.

**If this were a true story** for those that believe the newer version of Hell, that no one will be in Hell before the judgment day, the rich man being in a conscious state before the resurrection, judgment, and second death would not prove there was an immortal soul that had been in the rich man when he was alive would not prove eternal torment or anything that is to be after the judgment day (nothing is said about a soul after that soul had left the dead rich man that it had been in when rich man was alive), it speaks about two men, the rich man and Lazarus, not about two souls that had been in the two man before their death, not about two souls that are now in Abraham's bosom.

**If this is a true story, it is in direct conflict with Christ and Paul.** Christ said, "*For you shall be recompensed in the resurrection of the just*" (Luke 14:14); but if this is a true story, their recompense is in "Abraham's bosom" immediately after death before the resurrection. What will happen after death? Christ said, "*For the hour comes, in which all that are in the tombs (not in Abraham's bosom) shall hear his voice, and come forth: they that have done good, unto the resurrection of life; and they that have done evil, unto the resurrection of judgment*" (John 5:28-29). If hades is not the grave, **no one will be in the tombs when Christ comes.** Paul said, "*There is laid up for me a crown of righteousness, which the Lord...shall give me at that day*" (2 Timothy 4:8).



**If this is a true story** it would make Christ be against Christ in this teaching and His teaching in Matthew 12:15; Mark 3:24-25; Luke 14:17-18. The resurrection keeps getting in the way of the immortal soul doctrine, for it seems to be more than just a little difficult to have a resurrection of something that is alive and not dead.

- If all go to Heaven or Hell instantly after death, no one will be in the tombs when Christ comes.
- If all go to Abraham's bosom, or the bad side across the gulf, no one will be in the tombs when Christ comes.

**If this is a true story** it makes the judgment a mockery and an empty show. All would be judged instantly after death. The souls that were in the wicked would now be being punished, and the souls that were in the saved would now be being rewarded before the Judgment Day; therefore, both punishment and reward would begin immediately after death without the judgment, not at the resurrection.

**If this is a true story**, it makes the resurrection useless and not needed by making souls that were in believers be rewarded because the person it was in was a believer, before and without the resurrection. No one would be dead. It makes void the teaching of Christ about the resurrection of the dead at His coming. Not only would the resurrection be useless, but also a lie for souls were alive any place then souls could not be resurrected. The souls would be as alive as they will ever be and at the second coming of Christ, no soul will be in the grave to "*come forth*" (John 5:28-29). They would have to "come back" from somewhere, but it would not be a resurrection of the dead. (1) "Abraham's bosom," if made to be a real place in a true story, (2) and the teaching of going directly to Heaven or Hell after death, both makes a resurrection impossible and not needed. **A living soul coming back from Abraham's bosom, or from Heaven for the judgment would not be a resurrection of the dead.** Any doctrine which makes the dead not be dead, and those who are asleep are not asleep, makes a resurrection an impossibility and useless. **If this is a true story and not a parable, it is an undeniable contradiction of the Protestant view that all souls goes directly to Heaven or to Hell after the death of the persons they were in.**

**If this is a true story** it makes the wages of sin being death not possible. There would be no real death; to be dead would be to be alive in another form. It is used to show the nature of punishment after death in Hell. **Even if it were a true story, it says nothing about anything after the judgment or about Hell. It does not mention a soul, Heaven, or Hell, but is used to prove all three. It does not mention Jesus, God, the judgment, or the resurrection.**

**If this is a true story** it would be an actual description of the intermediate state, which must be true in ever detail, such as praying to Abraham, able to see and hear those in torment. The soul of the saved would receive it's reward or punishment immediately after the death of the person it was in, and the soul of the lost would receive it's reward or punishment immediately after the death of the person it was in before and without the resurrection and Judgment Day.

1. If Abraham; Bosom is figurative
2. Hades must also be figurative

**If this is a true story** it is when the rich man had brothers living on earth, not after the judgment; therefore, could not be used to prove that is a Hell after the judgment by those who believe the Abraham bosom version, for they teach no soul will be in Hell unto after Judgment Day; according to then no one in Hell will have brothers living on the earth.

**If this is a true story** those who believe there is an immortal soul that is in a person, and only it (whatever they believe a soul to be) will live after the death of the person believe the rich man and Lazarus to be two bodiless immortal souls after the death of the person that they were in. **This is the point they want to make, that a person has an immaterial something in them that lives after the death of the person.** Do they think one immaterial immortal soul would want another immaterial soul to bring it a drop of water?

1. They tell us the "soul" of both the saved and the lost are in hades.
2. They tell us at the death of the person "*the spirit returns to God*" (Ecclesiastes 12:7).
  - They have the "soul" in hades, and the "spirit" in Heaven at the same time.

**If this were a true story** the souls in Abraham's bosom would be able to hear and see the souls on the other side of the gulf. The gulf must be narrow enough to be in speaking distance. Could parents be in joy while they watched their children in agony? Could anyone be happy and have peace while they could hear the cries of anguish of those on the other side? Would you be happy if you were confined in a place for centuries where you had to see the agony, and hear the screaming of some of your loved ones; would that be a reward for anyone; but if this is a true story then you will see and hear their agony and screaming? Even most who believes this to be a parable do not believe the good and the bad dead can talk to each other, or that the dead can now come back and talk to the living, as the rich man wanted Lazarus to do. According to the way Revelation 6:9-10 is used by those that use this passage to prove Hell, Hell is a Lake of Fire with the lost souls in the lake, and the saved souls sitting on the shore watching their torment, and the souls on the shore would be asking God to torment those in the lake more.

**If it were a true story** it is the one place in the Bible where the veil is drawn aside and we can see what it is like after death. We can even hear the conversation of souls on the other side of death, and it was given to unbelievers, the Pharisees and Scribes. Luke 15 and 16 is a discourse to them, not to the Apostles.

**If this were a true story** we have a biblical example of praying to a Saint and to a person as if he were God, which we are forbidden to do. If after death anyone can pray to Saint Abraham, why do most who are orthodox teach we cannot pray to Saint Abraham or any other saint?

#### **THIS PARABLE HAS ELEMENTS THAT COULD NOT BE TRUE IN A TRUE STORY**

(1) **If this is not a parable**, and if the rich man and Lazarus are real people, **Then Abraham is also a real person, but he is now in the place of a God.** Is he a God? No, for this is a parable, not a true story. **If it were a true story it would make Abraham, not God, the source of reward after death. God or Christ is not mentioned in the parable.** If taken literally, Abraham is put into a position of being a God, which he never was, is not, and never will be. Coffman said the element of Abraham presiding over paradise forces one to seek an analogy, "Commentary On Luke," Abilene Christian University Press, page 385. Lazarus in the bosom of the God Abraham can have no parallel in reality; it is a parable, not a true story. It cannot be both. It cannot have both an allegorical and a literal meaning. If it did, how would one be different than the other?

- Abraham is **not** a God. This is figurative language, not a true story.
- Abraham's bosom is **not** a place. This is figurative language, not a true story.

- Abraham's bosom is **not** literally the home of the saved after death. This is figurative language, not a true story. Many died before Abraham was born. They could not have gone to Abraham's bosom, a place where Abraham presided over before Abraham was born, before Abraham's bosom could have existed; but those who believe in Abraham's bosom view believe all the saved in the Old Testament went to it; therefore, Abraham's bosom could only be symbolic language.

(2) **Many regard this as a parable, but they reason and draw conclusions from it as though it were a literal true story.** They go both ways as it suits them.

"No reason why Luke 16:19-31 should be viewed only as a parable," Samuel Csonka, Guardian Of Truth, January 5, 1995, page 16.

This article by Csonka in the Guardian of Truth says it is a parable, but it's author thinks it is also a true story both at the same time! It could not be both, and the article says it is a parable. It cannot, as many say, "mean the same thing" if it is a parable that it would if it is a true story. **It must be 100% a true story, or 100% a parable.** It cannot be a mixture of the two. **If it is a literal true story, every detail must be true and have a literal true meaning.** Those who say it is a true story find parts of it that will not fit into what they believe, and always try to make these parts be a metaphor or parable. Abraham's bosom had literally turned to dust long before Jesus gives this parable. If his bosom is used symbolical, and is not his literal bosom, the rest of the account must also be symbolic, and this is not the literal experience of the two men after they died. In a metaphor, one part of it is never figurative with another part literal. If Abraham's bosom is figurative, then Lazarus in his bosom must also be figurative and not a real person, otherwise, a real person would be in a figurative bosom. We cannot make any part of a metaphor be a literal statement just because we want it to be, or we need it to be to prove something we want to prove. If "*Abraham's bosom*" is a real place, where is Abraham? In his own bosom! If Abraham's bosom is a real place where souls go after the death of the persons they were in, where is it, and why do we not read of it in any other passage; if it is not the grave, Heaven, or Hell, where is it? If this were a true story, both the rich man and Lazarus died, but they did not die, neither one would be dead, it this was Lazarus himself that was alive, or a soul was alive that had been in Lazarus before Lazarus died, either one would be alive before and without the resurrection, just as alive as it would be possible for them to be if either one were resurrected. If this were a true story it would make the resurrection 100% useless.

E. D. Slough, evangelist, church of Christ: "We want to know if this was a real experience, and if it teaches the condition of the dead. Let it be remembered, then, according to the philosophy that they are 'spirits.' Will you tell me how you reason that a 'spirit's tongue' can be cooled with water? 'Oh' you say, 'that represents'—**hold on, no representations go in a real circumstance.** If you say it is real, stay with it. This policy of making it half literal and half figurative, just because there is an end to gain, is a nature 'fakir' in theology. It, therefore, represents nothing if it is a real circumstance, as you affirm. How could Lazarus carry a drop of water on his '**spiritual**' finger? You say, 'Oh, that doesn't mean literal water.' Well sir, it does or you do not mean what you say, I care not who you are. But reason with me. How could a *spiritual tongue* be cooled with a drop of water? 'Oh,' you say, 'that must not be pressed too literal,' **no, not too literal, but just a literal as in any real circumstance. If it was a literal fact, then the details, which make it up are literal fact also. And to deny that it to deny your position.** Here is a stubborn fact. The narrative say the rich man did call on Abraham to send Lazarus. That he wanted Lazarus to dip his finger in water. And he wanted Lazarus to put that water on his tongue. And the reason was that he was tormented in the flame. That very portrait, if it be a real circumstance, will compel every one of you to admit

that the torment of the intermediate state is produced by fire. How do you like it? Then stop saying it is a sort of compunction of conscience. For understand, conscience was never known to call for water to cool it. Get that? It will no doubt be granted willingly, that for a real circumstance, the peculiar incidents connected with it here make this the most remarkable and phenomenal case on record. For we would be forced to concede that the spirit craved water, that it gets thirsty or feverish, and that it asked a favor of Abraham instead of God, that it was God who rendered the verdict and cast him in prison, that Abraham has no right or jurisdiction in the matter, and a hundred other things that make this narrative an absolute mystery, if it be a real circumstance." "The Indictment Of Eternal Torment—The Self-negation Of A Monstrous Doctrine," page 262, F. L. Rowe, Publisher, 1914. On line at: [www.robertwr.com/EternalTorment.htm](http://www.robertwr.com/EternalTorment.htm)

(3) This is the only parable in which some try to make an allegory literal, but only the parts of it they want to be literal for they do not want the whole story to be literal. It would teach things they do not believe. It would teach that the souls that are in the many (the poor) will be saved, and that the souls that are in the few (the rich) will be lost. What about Abraham? He was very rich. It is not said the rich man was evil or sinful, just rich; but those who teach innate immortal have a real person in torment before the judgment, before he is judged and found guilty. It is not said Lazarus was good and faithful, or even that he knows of God, just that he was poor, as are millions; but being rich is not sinful, and being poor will not save. **Not one good thing is said about Lazarus, not one bad thing about the rich man.** There is nothing negative said about the rich man, and nothing positive about Lazarus in their lifetime, but they have Lazarus who they say is a real person being rewarded before being judged; but if this was a true story, was it Lazarus or the soul that was in Lazarus unto Lazarus died that was in Abraham's bosom? After all, according to the immortal soul doctrine, people are not in Heaven, Hell, or Abraham's bosom, only souls are, only the soul that was in a person will live after the death of the person it was in.

(4) It would teach that the soul that had been in the rich man, would be in a supernatural state (not of this earth); therefore, would have a much greater knowledge of supernatural things than we now have, it would believe or know that it could come back to earth and teach the living, the rich mans brothers. This is not what most believes, but it would greatly support the spiritualist who says they can call the dead back.

(5) What bodies would the rich man or Lazarus have when their earthly body was still in the grave? They will not have a "*spiritual body*" unto the resurrection (1 Corinthians 15:44). Do disembodied spirits that have no body and are "immaterial, invisible" have human body parts? The rich man has "*eyes*" and "*tongue*." Lazarus has a "*finger*." Abraham has a "*bosom*." Is there a third kind of body, which has these earthly parts? What would a "spirit" or "soul," which does not have an earthly body want with water? Only in speaking in a metaphor can it be said that God or any spiritual being has a human part, or to want water. How could an "immaterial, invisible part of man" have body parts or want water, if this were a true story and not a parable? It would make this "immaterial, invisible part of man" very material.

(6) If the rich man were a real person in torment, God would be unjust to be tormenting him without his knowing why. If he knew why he was being tormented, he would have known that Lazarus could not come to take his torment away by bring him water.

(7) The rich man wanted Lazarus to go to his brothers *"from the dead."* How could Lazarus *"go to them from the dead"* (Luke 16:30) or *"rise from the dead,"* (Luke 16:31) if he were not dead but were alive in Heaven or Abraham's bosom?

(8) If this were not a parable it would only teach what would be in the intermediate state from death unto the judgment; there is nothing in it that would teach eternal torment after the Judgment Day. Nothing is said about Heaven, or anyone or any soul being in Heaven or Hell.

Al Maxey: "To fabricate a theology of disembodied spirits and Hadean holding cells and everlasting torture of the wicked from this passage is an unconscionable abuse of biblical interpretation and should be rejected by all disciples intent upon discerning and declaring Truth rather than perpetuating the tedious tenets of paganistic Tradition" Reflections, Issue #28, April 4, 2003.

Adam Clarke: "Let it be remembered that by the consent of all (except the basely interested), no metaphor is ever to be produced in proof of a doctrine. In the things that concern our eternal salvation, we need the most pointed and express evidence on which to establish the faith of our souls." Clarkes Notes on Matthew 5:26.

R. C. Trench: "The parables are not to be made first sources of doctrine. Doctrines other wise grounded may be illustrated, or even further confirmed by them; but it is not allowable to constitute doctrines first by their aid. For from the literal to the figurative, from the clearer to the more obscure, has ever been recognized as the law of Scripture interpretation. This rule, however, has been often forgotten, and controversialists, looking around for arguments with which to sustain some weak position, often invent for themselves supports in these" Notes On The Parables Of Our Lord, page 17, 1948.

Luke 16:19-32 – Very similar – Isaiah 14:9-20.

1. Both the rich man and king of Babylon go there after death.
2. Both represent nations.
3. Both are represented as being alive.
4. Both found person(s) to speak with.
5. Both are not to be taken literally.

**Summary: the three conflicting views. Three different gospels Galatians 1:6-9.**

1. Luke 16 is used to prove at death the body dies, and the spirit or soul (?) goes to hades or Abraham's bosom unto the resurrection.
2. At death the soul or spirit of all goes to Heaven or Hell.
3. Ecclesiastes 12:7 is used to prove that the spirit of **all** came from God at birth, both the saved and the unsaved, and at death **all** spirits go back to God.

Which one do you believe? All three cannot be true. Many who believe a soul that was in the dead goes to hades to be with the rich man in torment or to be in *"Abraham's bosom"* also believe and teach when a soul leaves the person it was in that soul goes directly to Heaven to *"be with the Lord."* They seem not to be able to see that they are making the immortal soul that was in the dead go immediately to Heaven or Hell after the death of the person; therefore, they have made this that they teach as a true story impossible. No soul could be in *"Abraham's bosom"* and in Heaven simultaneously. How many of the three conflicting gospels do you believe? Does the orthodox view not know what the orthodox view is? If the soul of the dead goes to Heaven or Hell at death, why did Luke say the rich man was in hades; hades and Hell are not the same place, yet this is one of not the most used passages to prove the souls that were in the lost go to eternal torment in Hell at death. **Do those who believe the Abraham's bosom view forget that they teach no one will be in Heaven before the judgment? Yes, they almost always**

**do at funerals and have the dead person, not a soul, looking down at their own funeral.** Those who teach dead loved ones are in Heaven looking down at us almost always make Lazarus in Abraham's bosom be in Heaven, and the rich man to be in Hell; do they think Abraham is literally in Heaven, and Lazarus is literally in Abraham bosom in Heaven with those in Hell literally asking Abraham to send those in his bosom down to Hell with water?

---

E. D. Slough, evangelist, church of Christ: "Useless, perhaps, to point to Johnson...and hundreds of other learned men who select this parable to prove an immediate entrance at death into joy or sorrow. Never seemingly able to discover the impossibility of making it accommodate itself to such requirement. No wonder they become utterly nonplussed when the discrepancies involved in such a course are brought squarely to their attention through other scriptures. This fact has been tested time and time again with the same result—that of quibble and evasion pure and simple" "The Indictment Of Eternal Torment—The Self-negation Of A Monstrous Doctrine," page 254, F. L. Rowe, Publisher, 1914. On line at: [www.robertwr.com/EternalTorment.htm](http://www.robertwr.com/EternalTorment.htm)

### THE RICH MAN

This is an allegory of the Jews who were rich in God's blessing. Israel was spiritually rich (see Romans 9:3-5). All Luke 16 is on the subject of stewardship. The Jews failed to share with the Gentiles giving them only the crumb, and most of the Jews failed to believe in Christ. The Gentiles were spiritually poor. This parable is a satire condemning the Jewish nation, the Scribes, and Pharisees. Christ used one of their own uninspired fables that those He was speaking to would know about (see Josephus and others), which He changed only slightly as the base of this parable to show the end of the Jewish nation as God's chosen people. See Matthew 21:43-45; 24:2; Luke 13:28; Matthew 23:1-39. Throughout much of the Old Testament Israel did not obey God, and they rejected Christ; therefore, were rejected by God. Israel is no longer His chosen people. Their torment was being without God and rejected by Him, and as a nation Israel is dead and in hades, the grave. When they reject Christ there was no comfort for them, no water to cool their tongue (Luke 16:24).

---

A picture of the rich Jews and the poor Gentiles is given in Matthew 15:22-27. *"And behold, a Canaanitish women came out from those borders, and saying, have mercy on me, O Lord...But he answered and said, I was not sent but unto the house of Israel. But, she came and worshipped him saying, Lord help me. And he answered and said, 'It is not good to take the children's (Israel's) bread and cast it to the dogs (Gentiles).' But she said, 'Yea, Lord: for even the dogs eat of the crumbs which fall from their masters' table.'" He gives her the crumbs and healed her daughter.*

*"And I say unto you, that many shall come from the east and the west, and shall sit down with Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, in the kingdom of heaven: but the sons of the kingdom shall be cast forth into outer darkness: there shall be the weeping and the gnashing of teeth" (Matthew 8:11-12). "Therefore say I unto you, the kingdom of God shall be taken away from you, and shall be given to a nation bringing forth the fruits thereof" (Matthew 21:43). "O Jerusalem...your house is left unto you desolate" (Matthew 23:37-38).*

"Odunaomai" is used only four times in the New Testament, and is translated "tormented" in the King James Version in Luke 16:24 and 25, but is translated "in anguish" both times in the American Standard Version. It is used only two other times and was translated "sorrowing" in the King James Version.

Odunaomai as it is translated in the American Standard Version in the only four times it is in the Greek New Testament.

1. "Behold, your father and I sought you sorrowing (odunaomai)" (Luke 2:48).
2. "For I am in anguish (odunaomai) in this flame" (Luke 16:24).
3. "But now here he is comforted, and you are in anguish (odunaomai)" (Luke 16:25).
4. "And they all wept sore, and fell on Paul's neck and kissed him, sorrowing (odunaomai) mort of all for the word which he has spoken, that they should behold his face on more" (Acts 20:37-38).
  - a. Does anyone believe either Mary or the elders at Miletus were tormented? By the way it was translated the King James translators did not, but they saw in it's use in Luke a way to add eternal torment by making odunaomai have two completely difference meaning.

**The anguish** (or sorrowing– not torment) **of the rich man was Israel's sorrowing because of being rejected by God as a nation.** Sorrowing, anguish, and distressed are emotions or strong feeling that a person has within himself, not something that comes from without.

Young's Literal translation: "And having cried, he said, Father Abraham, deal kindly with me, and send Lazarus, that he may dip the tip of his finger in water, and may cool my tongue, because I am **distressed** (odunaomai)" in this flame. And Abraham said, Child, remember that thou did receive -- thou -- thy good things in thy life, and Lazarus in like manner the evil things, and now he is comforted, and thou art **distressed** (odunaomai)" (Luke 16:24-15).

This parable is about those who were rich in God's blessing, and those who were poor in God's blessing, not a literal story about a person who was a beggar. "Ptokos" is used thirty-four times in the New Testament, and is always translated "*poor*" except in this parable and Galatians 4:9 where it is mistranslated "*beggar*" in the King James Version, and translated "*poor*" in the New American Standard.

- "And given to the poor (ptokos) Matthew 26:11.
- "A certain poor (ptokos) widow" Mark 12:42.
- "Preach the gospel to the poor (ptokos)" Luke 4:18.
- "Contribution to the poor (ptokos) saints" Romans 15:26.
- "As poor (ptokos), yet making many rich" 2 Corinthians 6:10.
- "And a certain poor (ptokos) man named Lazarus" Luke 16:20 New American Standard.

This parable is about the Jews who were rich in God's word and the rest of the world that was poor (ptokos), in spiritual poverty, "*having no hope and without God in the world*" (Ephesians 2:12).

Dr. Gill, an orthodox Protestant who believed in the intermediate state of the dead, in his commentary of Luke said, "*The rich man died*: It may also be understood of the political and ecclesiastical death of the Jewish people, which lay in the destruction of the city of Jerusalem, and of the temple, and in the abolition of the temple worship, and the whole ceremonial law: a Loammi was written upon their church state, and the covenant between God and them was broken; the gospel was removed from them, which was as death...their civil power and authority, were taken away from them by the Romans." Many orthodox writers say the same.

### LAZARUS

Lazarus is the Gentiles, the people in spiritual poverty who had only the crumbs of God's blessing (see Matthew 15:21-26), but become the seed of Abraham-the church. Lazarus (the Gentiles) becomes rich in God's blessing by the Gospel. Christ says, "*The kingdom of God shall be taken away from you, and shall be given to a nation bringing forth the fruits thereof*" (Matthew 21:43). "*That the blessing of Abraham might come on*

*the Gentiles through Jesus Christ*" (Galatians 3:14). See Matthew 8:11-12; Luke 8:28; Acts 8:46; 26:23; Romans 2:28-29; 9:3-5; 9:8; 3:26-29; 4:28; Philippians 3:3; Romans 11:7; Ephesians 2:12-13). **In the parable Lazarus (the church) is now in Abraham's bosom where the Jews (the nation of Israel) once were.** *"Now we, brethren, as Isaac was, are children of promise"* (Galatians 4:28). *"For we are the circumcision, who worship by the spirit of God"* (Philippians 3:3). *"For he is not a Jew who is one outwardly; neither is that circumcision which is outward in the flesh: but he is a Jew who is one inwardly; and circumcision is that of the heart"* (Romans 2:29). *"And if you belong to Christ, then you are Abraham's offspring, heirs according to promise"* (Galatians 3:29). Paul calls the church *"a new creation"* *"the Israel of God"* (Galatians 6:15-16). **Every person who is now a Christian is the seed of Abraham, and an heir of the promise made to Abraham.**

### ABRAHAM

Abraham was the father of the Jewish Nation, which was the chosen nation, the nation that was in covenant relationship with God (Galatians 3:6-22; Romans 9:8). The blessing of Abraham came to the Gentiles through the Church. Israel does not now by birth have the blessing of Abraham, and are not now God's chosen people; therefore, are *"in anguish, and sees Abraham afar off, and Lazarus in his bosom."* Israel is not now in covenant relationship with God; the Church is now the *"sons of Abraham"* (Galatians 3:7), are now the chosen people. *"So then they that are of faith are blessed with the faithful Abraham"* (Galatians 3:9). Israel has been *"broken off,"* or *"cast off"* (Romans 11). **The church is now "the Israel of God,"** is now figuratively in Abraham's bosom, is now God's chosen people (Galatians 6:16; also 1 Peter 2:9-10; Hebrews 12:22).

### THE GULF

The rejection of Christ cut Israel off from Abraham and the blessing of God. One cannot reject Christ and worship God. Without believing in Christ and His resurrection, there is a gulf between God and Israel. One cannot go back to the Law as some Jews in Paul's time tried to do. As long as they reject Christ, there is not "a drop" of spiritual comfort for them in Christianity. Those that believe in Christ can give no comfort, no hope of salvation to them that do not believe whether they are Jews or Gentiles. The Law of Moses, which Israel gloried in, died at the death of Christ. *"Having blotted out the bond written in ordinances that was against us, which was contrary to us: and he has taken it out of the way, nailing it to the cross"* (Colossians 2:14). *"Be not entangled again in a yoke of bondage"* (Ephesians 2:11-22). Also Acts 15:24. We cannot cross the gulf and go back to the Law (Galatians 5:1). *"That which Israel seeks for, that he obtained not; but the election obtained it"* (Romans 11:7). The only way any person can become a child of God today is by being born again. The Law is dead and will never be restored. The nation of Israel can never be restored. The only way any Jew could ever again be a child of God is to believe the Gospel and be baptized into Christ. *"By **their** unbelief **they** (branches-plural, Jews, not nations-plural) were broken off,"* and Gentiles (plural Gentiles, not plural Gentiles nations) were grafted in. *"And **they** (individual Jews) also, if **they** continue not in **their** unbelief, shall be grafted in: for God is able to graft **them** (branches-plural Jews-not plural nations of Israel) in again"* (Romans 11:17-24).

The rich man (Israel) went to the grave (hades). Israel is no longer God's chosen people. Lazarus, the Gentiles believers are now in Abraham's bosom, are now in a covenant relationship with God, not in the grave. Abraham's bosom is not a division of



hades, not one side of hades – the grave. Many draw a circle and make one side of it be where the rich man is and the other side where Lazarus is with a gulf between the two sides. This circle is in the back of most Bibles printed by Star Bible and, and in many tract and books printed by members of the church of Christ.

### **THE FIVE BROTHERS**

Christ was telling the Pharisees and scribes they would not believe even when He rose from the dead (See Trench "Notes On The Parables" page 162). In the parable Abraham tells the rich man that if their own scriptures cannot convince them of their error, neither would they be persuaded if one rose from the dead. Christ did rise from the dead, but few Jews believed on Him. After the judgment there will be none alive on earth to be persuaded by one sent back from the dead.

Judea and his five brothers became six of the twelve tribes. Some believe five brothers are used to identify the rich man as Judea to the Pharisees to whom He was speaking this parable.

### **PART TWO**

#### **SCRIPTURES ABOUT THE DESTRUCTION OF ISRAEL THAT ARE MISAPPLIED TO HELL**

##### **Israel's destruction, her weeping, gnashing of teeth, outer darkness**

Many of the passages spoken by John the Baptist and by Jesus about Israel's rejection of Christ and its destruction are misapplied to Hell. Matthew 24 is often misused to prove Israel will be restored, and Christ will return to earth and rule the world forever from Jerusalem, and that the saved will forever live on this earth, not in Heaven.

- The Jews that came to John the Baptist, Matthew 3:7-12.
- The Samaritan woman, John 4:20-23.
- Six parables condemning Israel.
  1. Israel, the fruitless fig tree, Luke 13:6-9
  2. The rich man and Lazarus, Luke 16:19-31.
  3. The two sons, Matthew 21:28-32.
  4. Israel the husbandman, Matthew 21:33-45.
  5. The marriage feast, Matthew 22:1-14.
  6. The narrow door, Luke 13:24-30.
- Weeping and gnashing of teeth and outer darkness.

##### **Judgment of Israel Matthew 21-25:**

- Cleaning of the Temple, Matthew 21:12-16.
- The fig tree Matthew, 21:18-22.
- Israel's rulers question Christ's authority. Parable of the two sons, Matthew 21:23-32.
- Parable of the wicked husbandman who Christ will destroy and give the vineyard to another, Matthew 21:33-41.
- The stone Israel rejected made head of the corner; the stone will scatter as dust. The kingdom taken from Israel and gave to another, Matthew 21:42-46.
- Parable of the marriage feast. His armies destroyed those invited and invited others, Matthew 22:1-14.
- Seven woes on Israel leaders, how can they escape the judgment of Gehenna; all these things shall come upon this generation, Matthew 23:13-36.
- Israel's house left desolate, Matthew 23:37-39.
- The questions and Christ's answer, Matthew 24:1-51.
- Parable of the fig tree. This generation shall not pass away, till all these things be accomplished, Matthew 24:32-34.

- Israel the unfaithful servant, Matthew 24:45-51.
- Unprofitable servant cast into outer darkness Matthew 25:30.

### THE JEWS THAT CAME TO JOHN THE BAPTIST

*"But when he saw the **Pharisees and Sadducees** coming to his baptism, he said unto them, you offspring of vipers, who warned you to flee from the wrath to come? Bring forth; therefore, fruit worthy of repentance: and think not to say within yourselves, we have Abraham to our father: for I say unto you, that God is able of these stones to rise up children unto Abraham. **And even now the axe lies at the root of the trees: every tree; therefore, that brings not forth good fruit is hewn down, and cast into the fire. I indeed baptize you in water unto repentance; but he that comes after me is mightier than I, whose shoes I am not worthy to bear: he shall baptize you in the Holy Spirit and in fire: whose fan is in his hand, and he will thoroughly cleanse his threshing floor; and he will gather his wheat into the garner, but the chaff he will burn up with unquenchable fire"** (Matthew 3:7-12). John was the Elijah that was to come (Matthew 17:11; 11:10). Cutting down a tree or forest is a common symbol of judgment and destruction of cities and nations in the Old Testament (Isaiah 10:34; Jeremiah 46:22-23; 22:7-8; Ezekiel 31:3-14). The warnings of John the Baptist are that Israel is on trial and the axe that would destroy them was already at the tree. Matthew 24 states how and when the ax fell.*

Adam Clarke said this is, "The desolation which was about to fall on the Jewish nation."

Lightfoot: "By the axe being now laid to the root of the tree, may fitly be understood, first, the certainty of their desolation; and second, the nearness, in that the instrument of their destruction as already prepared, and brought close to them; the Romans that should ruin their city and nation, being already master and rulers over them."

B. W. Johnson: "*Think not to say...we have Abraham to our father.* They believed that Abraham's race was to be saved, if all else was destroyed...'The axe is laid at the root of the tree' a sign that the tree is to be cut down. The tree meant is the Jewish nation. *Every tree.* A fruitless fig tree was afterward made by our Lord to representative of the whole Jewish nation (Luke 13:6)." Also, Matthew 3:10-12 "*And with fire.* The term fire is used in verse 10, and there means a destroying agency; it is used again in verse 12 in the same sense; it is used in verse 11, also, the intervening verse, and must be used in exactly the same sense as in the other two verses. It cannot mean a curse in verses 10 and 12, and a blessing in verse 11, without a word of explanation. It is strange, therefore, that all commentators should not agree that the baptism of fire is a baptism of trial and suffering. **There were two classes before John. Some would repent and be baptized finally in the Holy Spirit; there were others who would remain impenitent, and be baptized in the awful trials that would come upon Israel"** B. W. Johnson, "The People New Testament With Notes," 1889, Gospel Light Publishing Company.

Micah Redding: In context, Jesus was talking about how the centurion showed more faith than anyone in Israel. And he says this to make a statement: the kingdom was being accepted by gentiles (and prostitutes and tax collectors!) before it was being accepted by the Jews. The Jews placed great value in their heritage from the patriarchs. Being a descendent of Abraham meant you were in the kingdom. But a time would come when the Jews would suddenly realize the kingdom had passed them by, and (being outside the kingdom) they would find themselves separated from the patriarchs they had valued so much. Instead, gentiles would be "feasting with Abraham" in God's kingdom. Jesus is simply prophesying that with his fellow Jews rejecting him, gentiles were going to be the ones who would accept his message. The Jews would find themselves in "outer darkness" (away from the feast and light of God). And they would respond with tears and anger: "weeping" and "gnashing of teeth"...Jesus is ALWAYS referring to Jews when he talks about "weeping and gnashing of teeth" and "outer darkness". He NEVER said this would happen to anyone but the Jews." Church of Christ, "There Is No Hell (part 4)" at:

## THE SAMARITIAN WOMAN

*“Sir, I perceive that you are a prophet. Our fathers worshipped in this mountain; and you say, that in Jerusalem is the place where men ought to worship. Jesus said unto her, Woman, believe me, the hour comes, when neither in this mountain, nor in Jerusalem, shall you worship the Father. You worship that which you know not: we worship that which we know, for salvation is from the Jews. But the hour comes, and now is, when the true worshippers shall worship the father in spirit and truth: for such does the Father seek to be his worshippers”* (John 4:20-23). Worship under the Law required both (1) the temple in Jerusalem (2) and the Levitical Priesthood. Both were destroyed in A. D. 70; now there would be no way to know who was a Levite even if there were any living. **God cannot be worshiped by the Old Testament Law without both (1) the temple in Jerusalem, (2) and the Levitical Priesthood. He is now worshiped any place where there are believers.**

## SIX PARABLES CONDEMNING ISRAEL

**(1) Israel, the fruitless fig tree** (Luke 13:6-9): *“And he spoke this parable; A certain man had a fig tree planted in his vineyard; and he came seeking fruit thereon, and found none. And he said unto the vinedresser, behold, these three years I came seeking fruit on this fig tree, and found none: cut it down; why does it also cumber the ground? And he answering said unto him, Lord, let it alone this year also, till I shall dig about it, and dung it: and if it bear fruit thenceforth, well; but if not, you shall cut it down.”* **Barren national Israel would be cut down.** *“And seeing a fig tree by the way side, he came to it, and found nothing thereon, but leaves only; and he said unto it, Let there be no fruit from you hence forward forever”* (Matthew 21:18-19; see John 1:11). The point of this parable is clear, if Israel did not bear fruit it would be cut down – destroyed; John the Baptist had declared that the axe was already at the root of the tree.

**(2) The rich man and Lazarus** (Luke 16:19-31): See "Part one" of this chapter.

**(3) The two sons** (Matthew 21:28-32): Christ speaking to *“the chief priests and the elders”* of Israel said, *“But what do you think? A man had two sons, and he came to the first and said, Son, go work today in the vineyard. And he answered and said, I will, sir; and he did not go. And he came to the second and said the same thing. But, he answered and said, I will not; yet he afterward regretted it and went. Which of the two did the will of his father? They said, the latter. Jesus said to them, Truly I say to **you** the tax-gatherers and harlots will get into the kingdom of God before **you**. For John came to **you** in the way of righteousness and **you** did not believe him; but the tax-gatherers and harlots did believe him; and **you**, seeing this, did not ever feel remorse afterward so as to believe him.”*

**(4) Israel, the husbandman** (Matthew 21:33-45): Still speaking to, *“The chief priests and the elders”* Jesus said, *“Hear another parable: there was a man that was a householder, who planted a vineyard, and set a hedge about it, and dug a winepress in it, and built a tower, and let it out to husbandman, and went into another country. And when the season of the fruits drew near, he sent his servants to the husbandman, to receive his fruits. And the husbandman took his servants, and beat one, and killed another, and stoned another. Again, he sent other servants more than the first: and they did unto them in like manner. But, afterward he sent unto them his son, saying, they will reverence my son. But the husbandman, when they saw the son, said among themselves, this is the heir;*

come, let us kill him, and take his inheritance. And they took him, and cast him forth out to the vineyard, and killed him. When; therefore, the lord of the vineyard shall come, what will he do unto these vine-growers? They say unto him, **he will miserably destroy those miserable men, and will let out the vineyard unto other vine-growers, who shall render him the fruits in their seasons,** Jesus said unto them, did you never read in the scriptures, the stone which the builders rejected, the same was made the head of the corner: this was from the Lord, and it is marvelous in our eyes? **Therefore say I unto you, the kingdom of God shall be taken away from you, and shall be given to a nation bringing forth the fruits thereof.** And he that falls on this stone shall be broken to pieces: **but, on whomsoever it shall fall, it will scatter him as dust.** And when the chief priests and the Pharisees heard his parables, **they perceived that he spoke of them"** The vineyard is the nation of Israel with it's rulers, the messengers are the prophets and apostles, the Son was Jesus. The kingdom was taken from Israel and given to the church made up of all nations. Israel beat and killed many of the prophets, and killed the Son of God, and they were scattered as dust in A. D. 70 when no Jews were left in Jerusalem or the country around it. Most Millennialists admit that this refers to the Jewish rejection of Christ; **the kingdom was taken from the Jews and given to the Gentiles at the death and resurrection of Jesus,** but Millennialists think it will be taken from the Gentiles and given back to the Jews.

**(5) The marriage feast** Matthew 22:1-14: Also still speaking to, "*The chief priests and the elders*" Jesus said, "*And Jesus answered and spoke to them again in parables, saying, The kingdom of heaven may be compared to a king, who gave a wedding feast for his son. And he sent out his slaves to call those who had been invited to the wedding feast, and they were unwilling to come. Again, he sent out other slaves saying, Tell those who have been invited, Behold, I have prepared my dinner; my oxen and fattened livestock are all butchered and everything is ready; come to the wedding feast. But, they paid no attention and went their way, one to his own farm, another to his business, and the rest seized his slaves and mistreated them and killed them. But, the king was enraged and sent his armies, and destroyed those murders, and set their city on fire. Then he said to his slaves, the wedding is ready, but those who were invited were not worthy. Go therefore to the main highways, and as many as you find there, invite to the wedding feast. And those slaves went out into the streets, and gathered together all they found, both evil and good; and the wedding hall was filled with dinner guests. But, when the king came in to look over the dinner guests, he saw there a man not dressed in wedding clothes, and he said to him, Friend, how did you come in here without wedding clothes? And he was speechless. Then the king said to the servants, Bind him hand and foot, and cast him into the outer darkness; in that place there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth. For many are called, but few are chosen.*" The Jews killed the prophets God send to them, the Gentiles were brought into the kingdom, and they and their city were destroyed.

**(6) The narrow door** Luke 13:24-30: "*Strive to enter in by the narrow door: for many, I say unto you, shall seek to enter in, and shall not be able. When once the master of the house is risen up, and has shut the door, and begin to stand without, and to knock at the door, saying, Lord, open to us; and he shall answer and say to you, I know you not where you are; then shall you begin to say, we did eat and drink in your presence, and you did teach in our streets; and he shall say, I tell you, I know not were you are; depart*

*from me, all you workers of iniquity. There shall be weeping and the gnashing of teeth, when you shall see Abraham, Isaac, Jacob and all the prophets in the kingdom of God and yourselves cast forth without. And there shall come from the east and the west, and from the north and the south, and shall sit down in the kingdom of God. And behold, there are last who shall be the first, and there are first who shall be last"* This is about the coming rejection of Israel, and the Gentiles being accepted into the kingdom of Heaven, which is the church. Not about some being cast out of Heaven, which is what it would be if the weeping and gnashing of teeth were in Hell. **Israel was the "sons of the kingdom" ("children of the kingdom" King James Version) that was cast into outer darkness, not those who never believed. The Jews, who were then the children of the kingdom, were cast out of the light into the darkness of the world without the light of God's revelation, and they are no longer God's chosen people. "O Jerusalem...behold your house is left unto you desolate"** (Luke 13:34-35). Those who believe in Hell leave out the rest of what Christ said in the next two versus when He says the Gentiles will come into the kingdom, and verse 30 the Gentiles who were last become first. If this weeping and gnashing of teeth, casting out, and the Gentiles coming in were after the judgment, (1) the Gentiles would be coming into the kingdom in Heaven after the judgment, (2) and "*and yourselves cast forth without*" would be Jews being cast out of Heaven after the judgment.

*"Therefore say I unto you, the kingdom of God shall be taken away from you (the Jews), and shall be given to a nation bringing forth the fruits thereof"* (Matthew 21:43).

#### **WEEPING AND GNASHING OF TEETH**

Both are used in the Old and New Testament.

1). **Weeping** for miseries and grief, both for personal miseries, and miseries and grief as a nation are used to often to list them, use any good concordance. It is used in the New Testament the same way it was in the Old Testament. See Matthew 2:18; Mark 5:28; Luke 7:38; 8:52; John 11:33; 20:11 Acts 9:39; 21:13; Philippians 3:18; James 5:1. The weeping is the Jews when they see Israel being cast out as God's chosen people, and Jerusalem and the Temple being destroyed, and the end of their national identity. See Matthew 24, Daniel 9, and 10. Two parables in Matthew 13 have the tares and the bad fish gathered out of the kingdom "*at the end of the age,*" there will be both weeping and gnashing of teeth. The "*end of the age*" was the end of the age that then was, the Jewish age.

2). **Gnashing of teeth** shows anger and rage of the persons gnashing their teeth, not pain, and is used in both the Old and New Testament. "*They hiss and gnash the teeth*" Lamentations 2:16; Psalm 35:16; Micah 3:5. Used the same way in the New Testament. "*And they gnashed on him with their teeth*" (Acts 7:54). Those who stoned Stephen were angry with him, not in pain; they were not dead, and they were not in Hell, they were alive and on this earth. If gnashing of teeth were in Hell, as many teach it is, whom are they going to gnash with their teeth, each other? Does anyone believe some in Hell will be angry with others in Hell, and will gnash on them with their teeth? The gnashing of teeth is the anger and rage of the Jews towards those doing the destroying (the Roman army), and maybe even toward God for letting the destroying be happening. **Gnashing of teeth is because of anger or rage. It is not because of the person doing the gnashing of his or her teeth are being tormented in Hell. In the Bible in both the Old and the New Testament, gnashing of teeth is always because of anger of the person doing the**

**gnashing. It is misused today to show those being tormented in "Hell" are gnashing their teeth because of their own pain.**

- In the Old Testament: Gnashing of teeth is because of violent anger and rage on the part of the one that is doing the gnashing.
- In the New Testament gnashing of teeth is rage and anger on the part of the ones doing the gnashing (Acts 7:54). Weeping and gnashing of teeth to describes a reaction to being rejected, the weeping is because of being rejected (Matthew 8:12; 22:13; 25:30).
- Gnashing of teeth is changed and used by those who believe in Hell and made to be a person in Hell gnashing his or her teeth because of pain.

Weeping and gnashing of teeth are two different things, which are sometimes both are found together, but most often they are not together. That either one will be in Hell is an assumption that is preached over and over. Could an immaterial, invisible something that had been in a person gnash its teeth on another immaterial, invisible something that has been in another person?

**The Centurion Gentile** Matthew 8:5-13: *"And when he was entered into Capernaum, there came unto him a centurion, beseeching him, and saying, Lord, my servant lying in the house sick of the palsy, grievously tormented. 7 And he said unto him, I will come and heal him. And the centurion answered and said, Lord, I am not worthy that you should come under my roof; but only say the word, and my servant shall be healed. For I also am a man under authority, having under myself soldiers: and I say to this one, Go, and he goes; and to another, Come, and he comes; and to my servant, Do this, and he does it. And when Jesus heard it, he marveled, and said to them that followed, Verily I say unto you, I have not found so great faith, no, **not in Israel.** And I say unto you, that many shall come from the east and the west, and shall sit down with Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, in the kingdom of heaven: **but the sons of the kingdom shall be cast forth into the outer darkness: there shall be the weeping and the gnashing of teeth.** And Jesus said unto the centurion, Go your way; as you have believed, (so) be it done unto you. And the servant was healed in that hour."* Where Matthews says, "sons of the kingdom" were cast forth Luke says, "and yourselves cast forth without" (Luke 13:24-30). At that time the Jews were the sons of the kingdom and because to their rejection of Christ were "cast forth without." After seeing the faith of this Gentile, Jesus says the Gentiles will sit in the kingdom, and the sons (Jews) will be cast forth. The same as at the marriage feast (above), the Jews, because they rejected Christ as their king, they were cast out of the kingdom. The church, not Israel, is now God's kingdom. Those who teach Hell read the prophecies of Christ about the judgment of Israel in AD 70 and move the weeping and gnashing of teeth to be souls weeping in Hell after the Judgment Day is over. They have not found one passage that says anything about the lost after the judgment. Nothing can happen to nothing. After the second death there could be nothing said, for there will be nothing to say anything about. There is this life, then the first death, a resurrection to life from the first death, then the second death for the lost, but nothing is said about a third life for the lost after the second death. They need something to prove eternal life in their Hell, and try to make it look as if weeping and gnashing of teeth could only be because of God is eternally tormenting souls in Hell; although both weeping and gnashing of teeth are used throughout the Old Testament and those who believe in Hell do not believe weeping and gnashing of teeth in the Old Testament have any reference to a time of punishment after the Judgment Day, but they assume that in the New Testament both are used in reference to punishment in Hell after the Judgment Day. Weeping and gnashing

of teeth has a reference to Hell only when they want or need them to. **Even according to those who believe in Hell, no one is cast out of Heaven, but if *this "weeping and the gnashing of teeth"* is changed and made to be after the judgment in Hell, it is the *"sons of the kingdom"* that are (1) weeping and gnashing their teeth (2) and are cast into the outer darkness. In using this passage to prove the outer darkness is Hell it makes some be in Heaven, but it makes them be cast out of Heaven into Hell after the judgment. If *"and yourselves cast forth without"* is cast into Hell where those who believe in Hell say the *"weeping and gnashing of tenth"* will be, then this makes those from the east and west go to Heaven after the Judgment Day. If this were after the coming of Christ, it would have some going into Heaven, and some being cast out of Heaven after the kingdom has been delivered up to God; therefore, after the judgment. This is more than those trying to prove Hell want to prove, for they do not think any will be cast out of Heaven after the judgment, and no one who is in Heaven after the judgment will go to Hell, so why is this passage used in a way that makes it prove there will be some cast out of Heaven into Hell after the judgment?**

Summary:

- If *this "weeping and the gnashing of teeth"* is changed and made to be in Hell after the judgment, then it is the *"sons of the kingdom"* that are:
  - Weeping and gnashing their teeth.
  - Are cast into the outer darkness.
  - If the *"weeping and the gnashing of teeth"* is because of being in Hell, then the *"sons of the kingdom"* would have to be in Hell.
- Then after the judgment, *"Many shall come from the east and the west, and shall sit down with Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, in the kingdom of heaven."*
  - If this were after the judgment, where will they come from? From Hell or where?
- Whether this is (1) the Jews that rejected Christ, (2) or Christians that become unfaithful and are cast out of the light of the word of God into the darkness of the world without God, there is no way that a person not with a white robe washed white by the blood of Christ could be in the kingdom after it has been delivered up to God in Heaven, therefore; this is speaking of something in the life time of a person while he or she is alive, not of something after death or after the resurrection.

J. W. McGarvey on Matthew 8:12: ***"And I say unto you, that many shall come from the east and the west, and shall sit down with Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, in the kingdom of Heaven*** (Jesus here predicts the conversion of the Gentiles, since that fact is suggested to him by the faith of this centurion. The east and the west represent the extreme points of the compass in the directions in which the world was most thickly inhabited. But Jesus refers rather to spiritual separation than to geographical distances—Mal. i. 11; Isa. xlix. 19; Jer. xvi. 19; Zech. viii. 22.) 12 But The Sons Of The Kingdom (The child of anything in Hebrew phraseology expressed the idea of special property which one has in the thing specified, as, for instance, children of disobedience (Eph. ii. 2). Jesus here means, then, the Jews, to whom the kingdom belonged by hereditary descent—Rom. ix. 4) ***shall be cast forth into the outer darkness: there shall be the weeping and the gnashing of teeth.*** (In this paragraph Christ's kingdom is set forth under the simile of a great feast, a familiar simile with Jesus (Matt. xxvi. 29; Luke xxii. 30). The Jews were accustomed to speak of the delights of the Messianic kingdom as a feast with the patriarchs (Luke xiv. 15), but lost sight of the fact that Gentiles should share in its cheer and fellowship (Isa. xxv. 6). Marriage feasts and other great feasts of the Jews were usually held in the evening. Inside, therefore, there would be joy and light and gladness, but outside there would be

darkness and disappointment, tears and bitter self-reproach (Matt. xxv. 10-13). The despised outcasts should be brought in and placed at the festal board, while the long-invited guests-the natural and fleshly heirs of Abraham's invitation-would be excluded (Matt. xxi. 43)" The Fourfold Gospel, page 272, Standard Publishing Company, 1914, church of Christ.

J. W. McGarvey on Luke 13:28-30: "*There shall be the weeping and the gnashing of teeth, when you shall see Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, and all the prophets, in the kingdom of God, and yourselves cast forth without. 29 And they shall come from the east and west, and from the north and south, and shall sit down in the kingdom of God. 30 And behold (little as you may think it), they are last who shall be first, and they are first who shall be last. (A familiar proverb of Christ's (Matt. xix. 30; xx. 10), to be interpreted by such passages as Matt. xxi. 31 and Rom. ix. 30, 31. The Jew who thought the Gentile had no hope at all, and that he himself was sure of salvation, would be surprised to find that his opinion was the very reverse of the real fact as time developed it.)*" The Fourfold Gospel, page 490, Standard Publishing Company, 1914, church of Christ. **The Jews were cast forth out of the kingdom, cast out as Gods chosen people, but nothing is said about casting into "Hell."**

B. W. Johnson on Matthew 8:12: "***But the children of the kingdom.*** The Jews, the natural children of Abraham, the 'Father of the faithful,' heirs of the promises made to him. **Cast out** because they rejected the Messiah, in whom all the promises center. **Into outer darkness.** The history of the Jews for 1,800 years has been a fulfillment of this passage." The People's New Testament With Notes, Gospel Light Publishing Company, church of Christ.

H. Leo Boles on Matthew 8:11-12: "The '*sons of the kingdom*' were the Jews; they were heirs of the kingdom according to the promise; to them it was first offered, and it was because they rejected it that they were to '*be cast forth into the outer darkness.*' While the Jews rejected Christ as their Messiah, the Gentiles would accept him as their Savior; this prophecy of Jesus has literally been fulfilled. These Jews were '*sons of the kingdom*'...while at the same time others, Gentiles, shall be enjoying a feast with Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob. '*The weeping and the gnashing*' represent intense suffering; they shall weep because they have lost their favor with God, and shall gnash their teeth because others have obtained it." A Commentary On The Gospel According To Matthew, 1954, Gospel Advocate Company, church of Christ.

James Burton Coffman on Matthew 8:10-12: "The centurion's faith contrasted sharply with the lack of it in the Jewish leaders who, although they should have been the first to recognize Christ and believe on him, were nevertheless his carping critics and sworn enemies. Jesus' first comment was directed toward that shameful and tragic condition. It was, then and there, announced by Jesus that the Gentiles would be received into the kingdom of God and that many '*sons of the kingdom,*' that is, Jews, would not enter." Commentary on the Gospel of Matthew, Firm Foundation Publishing House, page 105, 1968, church of Christ.

Adam Clarke on Matthew 8:12: "*'I have not found so great faith, no, not in Israel.'* - That is, I have not found so great an instance of confidence and faith in my power, even among the Jews, as this Roman, a Gentile, has shown himself to possess...'*Many shall come from the east and west'* - Men of every description, of all countries...The rabbins represent the blessedness of the kingdom of God under the notion of a banquet..."*With Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob'* - In the closest communion with the most eminent followers of God..."*Shall be cast out into outer darkness'* - As the enjoyment of that salvation which Jesus Christ calls the kingdom of heaven is here represented under the notion of a nuptial festival, at which the guests sat down in a reclining posture, with the master of the feast; so the state of those who were excluded from the banquet is represented as deep darkness; because the nuptial solemnities took place at night. Hence, at those suppers, the house of reception was filled with lights...so they who were admitted to the banquet had the benefit of the light; but they who were shut out were in darkness, called here outer darkness, i.e. the darkness on the outside of the house in which the guests were; which must appear more abundantly gloomy, when compared with the profusion of light within the guest-chamber."

Adam Clarke, Albert Barnes, R. C. H. Lenski, Pulpit Commentary, and many others say Christ is speaking about the Jews being put out of the kingdom for rejection Christ,



and the Gentiles coming into the kingdom, the church, but because of their desperate need for proof of the doctrine of Hell they try to make this have a hidden double meaning,

(1) The clear meaning: Israel will no longer be God's chosen people.

(2) The hidden meaning: God is going to forever torment most of mankind in Hell.

There is absolutely no hidden meaning, nothing about Hell, eternal torment, or anything after the judgment in this passage.

R. C. H. Lenski on Matthew 8:12: "As the physical descendants of Abraham the Jews were, indeed, the first heirs of the Messianic covenant and kingdom. The only trouble was that they failed to inherit. John 8:37-41 states why. Although they were beyond question *'the sons of the kingdom'* because they were *'Abraham's seed'* and thus the potential heirs, they forfeited their inheritance of the kingdom by unbelief."

John Wesley on Matthew 8:12: "Many from the farthest parts of the earth shall embrace the terms and enjoy the rewards of the Gospel covenant established with Abraham. But the Jews, who have the first title to them, shall be shut out from the feast. Luke xiii, 29." Founder of Methodist Church.

Although many of the wisest preachers and writers whose writings have stood the test of time like J. W. McGarvey, B. W. Johnson, James Burton Coffman, H. Leo Boles, Adam Clarke, Lightfoot, R. C. H. Lenski, John Wesley, and many others say the *"weeping and gnashing of teeth"* is speaking of the Jews being rejected as God's chosen people, some still misuse this as did Stephen Wiggins in the Firm Foundation, 2006, page 6. Gehenna is not in any of the passages with *"weeping and gnashing of teeth."* If he did any study it would be difficult to believe he did not know the weeping and gnashing of teeth has no reference to "Hell." The use of this passage is just a desperate attempt to find a passage that teaches eternal torment?

**The three times "outer darkness" is used by Christ** (Matthew 8:12; 22:13; 25:30) are in three parables, which refer to God's dealing with the Jews being cast out as God's chosen people into the world without the light of God's word, and their destruction as a nation, but has been misused and changed to be souls in Hell that are in outer darkness. Darkness is being in the world without Christ, Colossians 1:12-13; Acts 26:18; 1 Peter 2:9; John 10:27; when the Jews rejected Christ they were cast out as God's chosen people into *"outer darkness."*

**The other times "weeping and gnashing of teeth" is used by Christ** (Matthew 13:42; 13:50; 22:13; 24:51; 25:30; Luke 13:27-28) are also about the Jews being cast out as God's chosen people, and have also been changed to be immaterial, bodiless souls in Hell that are weeping and gnashing their teeth because that are being tormented by God; none of the passages mention Gehenna although they are often used to prove there is a place called "Hell." In Matthew 13:39 and 13:50 the Greek is the end of the *"age,"* not the end of the world, the end of the age that then was, the Jewish age when they were cast out as God's chosen people. To those who thought they were and would always be God's chosen people, being told that they would be cast out was no small thing.

1. Matthew 13:41 and 13:50: In parables about the kingdom of Heaven Christ used "*weeping and the gnashing of teeth*" is when, "*So shall it be in the end of the age: the angels shall come forth, and sever the wicked from among the righteous and shall cast them into the furnace of fire: there shall be weeping and the gnashing of teeth.*" Many believe "*the kingdom of Heaven*" to be the church and the "*end of the age*" to be the Jewish age.
2. Matthew 22 is also a parable of the marriage feast that was given to the chief priests and elders of the Jewish people where those that were bidden did not come to the wedding and were destroyed, which seems to be speaking of the Jews rejecting Christ.  
 Who and when was those in the highways invited to the wedding? The innovation is now open to all who will come to Christ, but after the kingdom is delivered up to God (1 Corinthians 15:24), (1) no one will be invited to the wedding, (2) and no one in the kingdom will be found to be not worthy (Matthew 22:8).  
 Who was the wedding guest that did not have on a wedding-garment? In the kingdom, the church, there are many hypocrites, but they are not "arrayed in white garments" (Revelation 3:4-5). After the judgment, no one in the kingdom that has been delivered up to God will be found not to have on a wedding-garment and be cast out of Heaven; no one not in Heaven at that time will be invited, therefore; whether it is about (1) Israel rejecting Christ (2) or about the church, this parable of the kingdom is about something before the second coming of Christ; those that were bidden but did not come were destroyed, not tormented without end by God.
3. Matthew 24 is about the destruction of Jerusalem and ends with the parable of the evil servant that after he has been cut asunder "*there shall be the weeping and the gnashing of teeth*" (Matthew 24:51).
4. In Matthew 25:30 the unprofitable servant is also Israel.

Both "*outer darkness*" and "*weeping and gnashing of teeth*" are used only by Christ, and are a reference to Him being rejected in this lifetime, not about torment in Hell.

#### **Weeping and gnashing of teeth**

**Or**

#### **Wages of sin is death**

God says the "*wages of sin is death,*" not an eternal life of weeping and gnashing of teeth for a soul in Hell that will go on forever for there would be no death if the lost weep

and gnash their teeth for eternally because of being tormented by God. We would never be able to know that this weeping will be in Hell but:

**First:** Many say that there is a Hell, but there is not one word about it in the Bible.

**Second:** Then they tell us that this weeping shall be in Hell. How could they know this when in every passage it is used in the weeping is on this earth before the judgment day, there is not one passage that says there will be weeping in "Hell"?

Some of the words used by Christ to describe the Jews: blind guides, hypocrites, murderers, adulterous, transgressors, faithless, perverse, fools, generation of snakes. **"O Jerusalem, Jerusalem...behold, your house (the temple Christ had just left) is left unto you desolate"** (Matthew 23:38).

*"That which Israel seeks for, that he obtained not; but the election obtained it, and the rest were hardened"* (Romans 11:7). Whatever Israel did not obtain, **the elect had obtained it, past tense at the time Paul wrote this.** It was not something that would be obtained by Israel, or anyone at A. D. 70, or at the second coming of Christ. How are Jews, Gentiles, or anyone saved today, only by the Gospel? I was saved when I heard the Gospel and obeyed it; all that are saved are saved in the same way. **"For I am not ashamed of the gospel, for it is the power of God for salvation to everyone who believes, to the Jew first and also to the Greek"** (Romans 1:16). Neither a Jew, nor a Greek can be saved without believing in Christ and obeying the gospel. Today a nation cannot be saved as a nation, not Israel, or any other nation. Individuals must believe and obey the Gospel; there is no other way. **"But if some of the branches were broken off,** ("some of the branches," plural, are individuals Jews, not "some of the nations" were broken off) **and you, being a wild olive, was grafted in among them** (among some of the branches, the Jews that believed and were not broken off, Paul was one of the Jews that believed; the individuals Gentiles that believed were grafted in)...**Well; by their unbelief they were broken off, and you stand by your faith...for if God spared not the natural branches** (individuals Jews), **neither will he spare you** (individuals Gentiles, not nations). **Behold then the goodness and severity of God: toward them that fell** ("them" is plural, individuals, not nations), **severity; but toward you, God's goodness; otherwise, you also shall be cut off.** **And they** (individuals Jews, not plural nations) **also, if they continue not in their unbelief, shall be grafted in"** (Romans 11:17-24). Many of the believers in the early church were Jews. Paul was a Jew, and he said, **"Even so than at this present time also there is a remnant according to the election of grace"** (at the time Paul was writing this some Jews believed) (Romans 11:4). Salvation is always available to anyone of any nation if they will accept Christ. The law was only a shadow of that which was to come. Israel cannot be restored as a nation without restoring the shadow, including restoring animal sacrifice, etc.

Dr T. W. Brents: "There is individuality about the Christian religion that cannot be dispensed with. Those who accept Christ must do it as individuals, not as a nation. Each one must come to Christ on his own individual faith. He can come in no other way. In this way he can come now; and this is the only way a Gentile, or anyone else can come. The Jews were broken off for unbelief, and they must come in faith. This opportunity they have now, and have always had—they need not expect, or wait for any thing more." Gospel Sermons, page 329, 1918, Gospel Advocate Publishing Co.

**"Woe unto you! For you build the tombs of the prophets, and your fathers killed them. So you are witnesses and consent unto the works of your fathers: for they kill them, and you build their tombs. Therefore, also said the wisdom of God, I will send unto them prophets and apostles; and some of them they shall kill and persecute; that the blood of**

*all the prophets, which was shed from the foundation of the world, may be required of this generation; from the blood of Abel unto the blood of Zechariah, who perished between the altar and the sanctuary: yea, I say unto you, it shall be required of this generation"* (Luke 11:47-51).

**(1) THE LORD'S LAMENT OVER JERUSALEM WHEN HE WAS ON THE ROAD TO JERUSALEM** Luke 19:41-44: When Jesus drew nigh Jerusalem He wept over the city, and tells His disciples of the destruction of it in language that is similar to what He said in Luke 21:5-33. *"And when he drew nigh, he saw the city and wept over it, saying, 'If you had known in this day, even you, the things which belong unto peace! But, now they are hid from your eyes. For the days shall come upon you, when your enemies will throw up a bank about you, and surround you, and hem you in on every side, and will level you to the ground and your children within you; and they shall not leave in you one stone upon another; because you did not recognize the time of your visitation'"* (Luke 19:41-44 New American Standard Version). The Romans did surround Jerusalem, put up a bank against the wall to go over it, and did not leave one stone upon another.

Dr. Lange in his commentary on Matthew page 416: "The Lord mourns and laments over His own ruined Jerusalem...His whole pilgrimage on earth was troubled by distress for Jerusalem, like the hen which sees the eagle threatening in the sky, and anxiously seeks to gather her chickens under her wings. With such distress Jesus saw the Roman eagles approach for judgment upon the children of Jerusalem, and sought with the strongest solicitations of love to save them. But in vain! They were like dead children to the voice of maternal love."

**(2) IN AN ADDRESS TO THE SCRIBES AND PHARISEE AT JERUSALEM:** In Matthew 23 Jesus gives seven woes to the scribes and Pharisees (Matthew 23:13, 15, 16, 23, 25, 27-29), then He ends the address with, *"Verily I say unto you, all these things shall come upon this generation. O Jerusalem, Jerusalem that kills the prophets, and stones them that are sent unto her! How often would I have gathered your children together, even as a hen gathers her chickens under her wings, and you would not! Behold, your house is left unto you desolate"* (Matthew 23:36-38). None of the many commentators that I have read say *"this generation"* is anything but the generation that Christ was speaking to, but on the same day in Matthew 24:34 He again said, *"This generation shall not pass away, till all these things be accomplished."* But many of the same commentators say the second use of *"this generation"* means "this race" and Christ was not speaking of that generation, not in the life time of those He was speaking to, but of the human race that will not pass away until He comes in judgment at the end of the world. **All the woes in Matthew 23, and all the signs of Matthew 24 were to come upon that generation, before that generation passed away.**

*"All these things shall come upon this generation."* Christ used *"generation"* twenty-five times in reference to the Jews of his day; nine of the twenty-five are in Matthew (Matthew 11:16; 12:39; 12:41; 12:42; 12:45; 16:4; 17:17; 23:36; 24:24). *"But first he (Christ) must suffer many things and be rejected of this generation"* (Luke 17:25; also Mark 8:12; 8:12; 8:38; 9:19; 13:30; Luke 7:31; 9:41; 11:29; 11:30; 11:31; 11:32; 11:50; 11:51; 16:8; 17:25; 21:32). "Genea," the Greek word from which *"generation"* is translated never means "race" as the Millennialists contend that it does in Matthew 24:34.

- *" This generation shall not pass, till all these things be fulfilled"* King James.
- *"I tell you this: the present generation will live to see it all."* New English Bible.
- *"Remember this! All these things will happen before the people now living have all died"* Today's English Version.

- **"The present generation will not pass away, till all this happens"** Moffatt's Translation.
- **"I tell you in solemn truth that the present generation will certainly not pass away until all this has taken place"** Weymouth's Translation.
- **"This generation will not disappear till all this has taken place"** Phillips Translation.
- **"All these things will take place before this present generation passes on"** Modern Language Bible.
- **"The present generation will not pass away until all this takes place"** New American Bible.
- **"The present generation will not pass away, till all this happens"** James Moffat.

**"THIS GENERATION,"** was the generation of Jews in the time of Christ, not a generation of today.

- John the Baptist: **"O generation of vipers, who warned you to flee from the wrath to come?"** (Luke 3:7).
- Christ: **"O generation of vipers, how can you, being evil, speak what is good?"** (Matthew 12:34).
- **"But to what shall I liken this generation? It is like children sitting in the market places, who call out to the other children, and say, We played the flute for you, and you did not dance; we sang a dirge, and you did not mourn"** (Matthew 11:16-19; Luke 7:31-33).
- **"The men of Nineveh shall stand up with this generation at the judgment, and shall condemn it because they repented at the preaching of Jonah; and behold, something greater than Jonah is here"** (Matthew 12:41).
- **"The Queen of the South shall rise up with this generation at the judgment and shall condemn it, because she came from the ends of the earth to hear the wisdom of Solomon; and behold, something greater than Solomon is here"** (Luke 12:42).
- Likened to a man from which an unclean spirit went out but returned with seven other spirits that were more wicked. **"This is the way it will also be with this evil generation"** (Luke 12:43-45).
- **"Why does this generation seek for a sign? Truly I say to you, no sign shall be to this generation"** (Mark 8:12).
- **"An evil and adulterous generation seeks after a sign; and no sign will be given it, except the sign of Jonah"** (Matthew 12:39; 16:4).
- **"O unbelieving and perverted generation, how long shall I be with you? How long shall I put up with you?"** (Matthew 17:17; Mark 9:19; Luke 9:41).
- **"Therefore also said the wisdom of God, I will send unto them prophets and apostles; and some of them they shall kill and persecute; the blood of all the prophets, which were shed from the foundation of the world, may be required of this generation; from the blood of Abel unto the blood of Zechariah, who perished between the altar and the sanctuary: yea, I say unto you, it shall be required of this generation"** (Luke 11:49-51).
- **"You serpents, you generation of vipers, how can you escape the judgment of Gehenna?"** (Matthew 23:33).
- **"All these things shall come upon this generation"** (Matthew 23:36).
- **"Truly I say unto you, this generation shall not pass away till all these things be accomplished"** (Matthew 24:34).
- **"Truly I say to you, this generation shall not pass away until all these things take place"** (Mark 13:30). That generation passed away long ago.
- **"But first He must suffer many things and be rejected by this generation"** (Luke 17:25).
- **"Be saved from this perverse generation"** (Acts 3:40). This was said before A. D. 70
- **"That you may prove yourselves to be blameless and innocent, children of God above reproach in the midst of a crooked and perverse generation"** (Philippians 2:15).

If *"this generation"* means "this race" or "this nation" as some Millennialists teach, are there forty-two "races" spoken of in Matthew 1:1-17? *"So all the generations from Abraham unto David are fourteen generations (not fourteen races or nations); and from*

*David unto the carrying away to Babylon fourteen generations; and from the carrying away to Babylon unto the Christ fourteen generations."*

The use of "**you**" clearly identified the "*generation*" Jesus was speaking to in Matthew 24. When speaking to His disciples Jesus said:

- "Do **YOU** not see all these things? Truly I say to **YOU**, not one stone here shall be left upon another" Verse 2.
- "See to it that no one misleads **YOU**" Verse 4.
- "**YOU** will be hearing of wars and rumors of wars" Verse 6. Not someone today will hear of wars.
- "See that **YOU** are not frightened" Verse 6.
- "They will deliver **YOU** to tribulation and will kill **YOU**, and **YOU** will be hated by all nations" Verse 9.
- "When **YOU** see the abomination of desolation which was spoken of through Daniel the prophet, standing in the holy place" Verse 15. "When **YOU** see Jerusalem compassed with armies" Luke 21:20. Not when someone today sees this. Jerusalem compassed with armies, which were spoken of by Daniel (Daniel 9:27) was to be in their time and seen by them.
- "Even so **YOU** too, when **YOU** see all these things, know **YOU** that He is nigh, even at the door" Verse 33. Not when someone today sees all these things.
- "I say unto **YOU**, this generation will not pass away until all these things take place" Verse 34.
- "For this reason **YOU** be ready too; for the Son of Man is coming at an hour when **YOU** do not think He will" Verse 44.

Millennialists must change generations to a nation with many successive generations, thereby making God to have used the wrong word.

**(3) THEN AN ADDRESS TO HIS DISCIPLES ON THE MOUNT OF OLIVES OVERLOOKING JERUSALEM:** Matthew 24:1-51. There have been thousands of speculations made on Matthew 24 over the centuries, and it may have been abused more than most other passage.

**THE CONTEXT OF MATTHEW 24:** It is in the midst of passages about Israel.

- **The Two Sons** (Matthew 21:27-32) Israel believed not Christ.
- **The Wicked Husbandman** (Matthew 21:33-46). (a) "He will miserably destroy those miserable men" (b) The stone, Christ, rejected by Israel and Israel "scattered as dust."
- **The Marriage Feast** (Matthew 22:1-14) "They that were bidden (Israel) was not worthy."
- **The Seven Woes** (Matthew 23:1-36) "All these things shall come upon this generation." Pronounced upon the scribes and Pharisees of His day.
- **Their House (the Temple) left desolate** (Matthew 23:27-39).
- **Not One Stone Upon Another** (Matthew 24:1-2) The Temple to be destroyed.
  - Their question about what He had just said (Matthew 24:3).
  - His answer (Matthew 24:4-31).
- **The Fig Tree** (Matthew 24:32-36) "This generation shall not pass away, till all these things be accomplished."
- **Israel The Unfaithful Servant** (Matthew 24:45-25:30).

#### **MATTHEW 24**

Matthew 24:1-2: "And Jesus went out from the temple, and his disciples came to him to show him the buildings of the temple, but he answered and said unto them, see you not all these things? Verily I say unto you, there shall not be left here one stone upon another, that shall not be thrown down." The stones were the "buildings of the temple." **These words are the reason for the questions by his disciples, and the reason for the discourse that followed.** The purpose of this discourse was not to give His disciples signs of His coming at the end of the world, but to give them signs of the destruction of Jerusalem, to warn believers in that generation of the coming destruction of Jerusalem,

and to give them a sign for them to flee from the destruction coming in their lifetime. *"But when you see Jerusalem surrounded by armies, then recognize that her desolation is nigh"* (Luke 21:20; Matthew 24:15). At the second coming there will be no signs, no one will flee to the mountains.

Matthew 24:3: *"And as he sat on the Mount of Olives, the disciples came unto him privately, saying, tell us"*

Matthew 24:3:

Question one: *"Tell us, when shall **these things** be?"*

Question two: *"And what shall be the sign of your coming, and of the end of the age?"* Except for the bad translation of the King James Version (*"end of the world"*), no one would see the end of the world in these two questions. The Greek says, *"end of the age"* (aion), not *"end of the world"* (kosmos). Not even the New King James Version would go along with the King James Version on this bad translation.

- *"And of the end of the age,"* New King James Version, New International Version, New Revised Standard Version.
- *"And of the completion of the age,"* Alfred Marshall, *"Parallel New Testament In Greek And English."*
- *"And of the full end of the age,"* Young's Literal Translation.
- *"And the conclusion of this state,"* Alexander Campbell, *"The Living Oracles."*
- *"Of the age, viz. the Jewish economy,"* Adam Clarke.

Mark 13:4:

Question one: *"Tell us, when shall **these things** be?"*

Question two: *"And what shall be the sign when **these things** are all about to be accomplished?"*

Luke 21:6-7:

Question one: *"When therefore shall **these things** be?"*

Question two: *"And what shall be the sign when **these things** are about to come to pass?"*

Question two as given in the three parallel accounts. All are the same question.

1. Matthew *"And what shall be the sign of your coming, and of the end of the age?"*
2. Mark *"And what shall be the sign when **these things** are all about to be accomplished?"*
3. Luke *"And what shall be the sign when **these things** are about to come to pass?"*

*"**These things**"* were the things Christ had just said, *"And Jesus said unto him, 'Do you see these great buildings? There shall not be left here one stone upon another, which shall not be thrown down.'* And as he sat on the Mount of Olives over against the temple, Peter and James and John and Andrew asked him privately, *'Tell us, when shall **these things** be?'"* (Mark 13:2-3). The disciples, thinking of what the Lord had said, asked two questions, which they supposed both would be at the same time.

**(1) When shall these things You speak of be.**

**(2) And what shall be the sign that these things are about to come to pass?**

Neither in what Christ said, nor in the question the disciples asked there is no reference to the second coming. Or to a great tribulation thousands of years after *"these thing."* At the time they asked these questions they did not believe or know that Jesus would be put to death, or that he would be going back to Heaven and coming a second time. The disciples still thought the Christ would restore the earthy kingdom of Israel, just as all the Jews did.

1. *"And they understood none of these things, and this saying was hidden from them, and they did not comprehend the things that were said"* (Luke 18:34; 19:11; 24:21-27; John 16:16-18; 20:9).

2. When they asked these two questions they did not know or believe Christ would die and be resurrected from the dead, or know or believe anything about the second coming of Christ or the Judgment Day.
3. On the day of His resurrection they did not know it was the resurrected Christ they were talking to and said to Him, "*But we hoped (past tense) that it was he who should **redeem Israel***" (Luke 24:21). Hoped that Christ was the one the Jews looked for to redeem Israel from Rome, and restore it as a nation as it was under David.
4. Forty days after He was raised from the dead they still did not understand therefore, they still did not expect Christ to go away and return to earth a second time at the end of the world; they expected Him to restore the kingdom to Israel "*They therefore, when they were come together, asked him, saying, Lord, do you at this time restore the kingdom to Israel?*" (Acts 1:6).

**At the time they asked this, they did not believe just as the Jews did not believe that their messiah would be killed, but they believed that He would set up an earthly kingdom of Israel. How could they be asking about His second coming when they did not know there would be a second coming? Millennialists must make the disciples be asking a question about the second coming of Christ that the disciples did not understand about or believe at that time, but they must have the disciples asking questions about the millennial and the rapture to make this chapter teach their view.** I have never seen where any Premillennialists explain how the disciples could know anything about the rapture, or the thousand years when the same disciples did not know that Christ was to die, and be raised from the dead and forty days later ascend to Heaven. From where do they think these disciples had this knowledge? **TO MAKE "THESE THINGS" BE THINGS THAT HAS NOT YET CAME TO PASS WOULD MAKE THE DISCIPLES BE ASKING ABOUT THINGS THEY KNEW NOTHING ABOUT.**

**(1) SIGNS OF THE THINGS THAT WERE TO COME TO PAST THAT CHRISTIANS WERE WARNED NOT TO BE FOOLED BY**

Matthew 24:4-15: "*And Jesus answered (His answer was to the questions the disciples had asked about the destruction of the temple, not about His second coming) and said unto them, Take heed that no man lead you astray. For many shall come in my name, saying, I am the Christ; and shall lead many astray. And you shall hear of wars and rumors of wars; see that you are not troubled: for these things must needs come to pass; but the end is not yet. For nation shall rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom; and there shall be famines and earthquakes in divers places. But, all these things are the beginning of travail. Then shall they deliver you up unto tribulation, and shall kill you: and you shall be hated of all the nations for my name's sake. And then shall many stumble, and shall deliver up one another, and shall hate one another. And many false prophets shall arise, and shall lead many astray. And because iniquity shall be multiplied, the love of many shall wax cold. But, he that endures to the end, the same shall be saved. And this gospel of the kingdom shall be preached in the whole world for a testimony unto all the nations; and then shall the end come. When; therefore, you see the abomination of desolation, which was spoken of through Daniel the prophet, standing in the holy place (let him that reads understand).*"

**(2) NATURAL DISASTERS TO ISRAEL AND ROME**



**(a) Wars and rumors of wars** (Matthew 24:6; Mark 13:7-8; Luke 21:9-10) with nations and kingdoms rising against each other (Matthew 24:7). There were many conflicts and battles before A. D. 70 in which thousands of Jews were killed. In one battle with the Syrians about 5,000 Jews were killed. From A. D. 66 to 70 there were many wars and rumors of wars. Many thousands were killed in the many wars in the 5 years before the destruction of the temple and Israel in A. D. 70.

B. W. Johnson: "The Jewish war began in A. D. 66, and ended five years after. During this period all the Roman Empire was filled with commotion. Nero, the emperor, was overthrown by Galba; six months after, Galba was overthrown by Otho; a few months after, Otho was overthrown by Vitellius; a little later, he was overthrown by Vespasian. All of these but the last, who ascended the throne shortly before Jerusalem was destroyed, died violent deaths... Tacitus, the Roman historian, says of this period: 'It was full of calamities, horrible with battles, rent with seditions, savage in peace itself.'" "The People's New Testament With Notes," Gospel Light Publishing Company, 1889.

From the writing of Josephus we learn that the Jews were divided into parties fighting among themselves, and Jews killed others Jews in numbers far greater than those killed by the Roman soldiers, and villages of Syria and elsewhere were burnt to the ground in the five years of war before the Romans laid siege to Jerusalem. During the siege many more Jews were killed by warring bands of Jews in Jerusalem, and Josephus says the Jews suffered far more from one another inside the walls of the city than from the Romans outside. Thousand more were killed by bands of robbers.

Matthew Henry: "When Christ was born, there was a universal peace in the empire... From the time that the Jews rejected Christ, and he left their house desolate, the sword did never depart from their house, the sword of the Lord was never quiet, because he had given it a charge against a hypocritical nation and the people of his wrath, and by it brought ruin upon them." Matthew 24:6, Zondervan Publishing House, 1721.

**(b) Famines in various places** (Matthew 24:7; Mark 13:8; Luke 21:11): In the years between the death of Christ and the destruction of Jerusalem there were severe famines, especially in the area of Jerusalem. Paul took up a contribution for the poor among the saints at Jerusalem (Romans 15:25; 1 Corinthians 16:1-4) which many churches took part in. Agabus signified by the Spirit that there would be a great famine over the entire world, which came to pass in the days of Claudius, and the disciples sent relief unto the disciples in Judea (Acts 11:28-29).

**(c) Pestilences** (Matthew 24:7 King James Version): Pestilences tend to come with famine. There was a great one in AD 40 in Babylon when many Jews died, and many more fled because of it, another one in AD 65 in Rome when many died. I have seen no history that tells how many died by wars, famines, pestilences, and earthquakes in the years before the destruction of Jerusalem (before A. D. 70), but no doubt it was hundreds of thousands. During the siege of Jerusalem, but before the fall, the dead from famines and pestilences filled all the room for burial within the walls of the city. Josephus claims 600,000 more bodies were thrown out of the gates of Jerusalem and left without being buried.

**(d) Earthquakes in divers places** (Matthew 24:7): The earthquakes are spoken of as a dreadful judgment against the nation of Israel, *"But all these things are the beginning of travail"* (Matthew 24:8).

George P. Holford: "Of these significant emblems of political commotions, there occurred several within the scene of this prophecy, and, as our Savior predicted, in divers places in the reign of Claudius there was one at Rome, and another at Apamea in Syria, where many Jews resided. The earthquake at the latter place was so destructive, that the emperor, in order to relieve the

distresses of the inhabitants, remitted its tribute for five years. Both these earthquakes are recorded by Tacitus. There was one also, in the same reign in Crete that is mentioned by Philostratus, in his Life of Apollonius, who says, that 'there were others at Smyrna, Miletus, Chios, and Samos; **in all which places Jews had settled.**' In the reign of Nero there was an earthquake at Laodicea. Tacitus records this also. It is likewise mentioned by Eusebius and Orosius, who add that Hieropolis and Colose, as well as Laodicea, were overthrown by an earthquake. There was also one in Campania in this reign (of this both Tacitus and Seneca speak) and another at Rome in the reign of Galba, recorded by Suetonius." "The Destruction Of Jerusalem," 1805.

Some cities of Israel were totaled destroyed by both earthquakes and robbers before the destruction of Jerusalem. I have not found an estimate of how many Jews died by earthquakes, but like both the famines and the pestilences, without doubt many more thousands died in the earthquakes before A. D. 70. Dr. Philip Schaff says there is scarcely another period in history so full of corruption, vice, and disaster as the six years between Neronian persecution in A. D. 64 and the destruction of Jerusalem in A. D. 70, History Of the Christian Church, New Schaff-Herzog Encyclopedia of Religious Knowledge.

**For many years the earthquakes, famines, wars, and pestilences of Matthew 24 have repeatedly been misused, and have been made into a sure sign that Christ is coming soon and the end is at hand by many writers of fiction. THERE WILL BE NO EARTHQUAKES, FAMINES, WARS, OR PESTILENCES AT THE SECOND COMING OF CHRIST**

### **(3) PERSECUTION FIRST FROM JEWS**

#### **AND THEN ROME, AND THE SPREAD OF THE GOSPEL**

**(a) "But all these things are the beginning of travail" (Matthew 24:9).**

**(b) Christians would be deliver up, killed and hated by all the nations** (Matthew 24:9). The persecution of believers came first from the Jews. Acts 4:3; 4:18; 4:21; 5:18; 5:28; 6:12-14; 7:58-60; 8:1; 8:3; 9:1-2; 12:1-5; 13:44-51; 14:2; 14:19; 17:5-8; 17:13; 26:9-10; Paul was one of the persecutors, and then he was one of the persecuted. *"Five times I received from the Jews thirty-nine lashes. Three times I was beaten with rods, once I was stoned...I have been in...dangers from my countrymen"* (2 Corinthians 11:24-26). *"For you also suffer the same things of your own countrymen, even as they did of the Jews; who both killed the Lord Jesus and the prophet, and drove out us"* (1 Thessalonians 2:14-15). It was soon followed by the persecution of Nero of believers, which began about A. D. 64. After the fire in Rome Nero attempted to clear himself by blaming it on the Christians. He then persecuted the Christians with such cruelty that even many of his fellow Romans was taken back by his cruelty. *"But before all these things, they shall lay their hands on you, and shall persecute you, delivering you up to the synagogues (synagogues were Jews, not Rome) and prison, bringing you before kings and governors for my name's sake"* (Luke 21:12). See Hebrews 10:32-34. Both the persecution of Christians from the Jews, and the persecution from Rome before A. D. 70 were severe. I have just touched the hem of the garment.

**(c) Many shall stumble, deliver up one another, and hate one another** (Matthew 24:10). As a result of the persecutions the weak stumbled. *"And brother will deliver up brother to death, and a father his child; and children will rise up against parents, and cause them to be put to death. And you will be hated by all on account of My name...and a man's enemies will be the members of his household"* (Matthew 10:22-36). **NO ONE WILL DELIVER UP ANYONE OR CAUSE ANYONE TO BE PUT TO DEATH AT THE SECOND COMING OF CHRIST.**

**(d) Many false prophets** (Matthew 24:11). See 2 Peter 2:1; 1 John 4:1; 2:18; Galatians 1:7. Many false teachers saying they are the Christ (Matthew 24:5). Josephus says that they did come about the time of the end of Jerusalem.

*“But whenever they persecute you in one city, flee to the next; for truly I say to you, you will not finish going through the cities of Israel until the Son of Man comes”* (Matthew 10:23). **NO ONE WILL PERSECUTE ANYONE AND NO ONE WILL FLEE TO ANOTHER CITY AT THE SECOND COMING OF CHRIST.**

J. W. McGarvey: “It is a coming, which was to take place before all the cities of Israel should be evangelized, and hence the reference must be, we think, to the providential coming to destroy the Jewish nationality” New Testament Commentary, Matthew and Mark, page 92.

H. Leo Boles: “It would take place before all the cities of Israel should be evangelized, hence it would mean the coming of Christ to destroy the Jewish nationality” The Gospel According To Matthew, page 230, Gospel Advocate, 1954.

**Lightning** *“For just as the lightning comes from the east, and flashes even to the west, so shall the coming of the Son of Man be”* (Matthew 24:27). For the way *“lightning”* was used of in the Old Testament for God's angry and judgment see Exodus 19:16; 2 Samuel 22:7-15; Isaiah 30:27. It is also used symbolically in Revelation of judgments in Revelation 4:5; 11:19; 16:18. The false prophets saying they were the Christ were only seen by some. The coming of Christ in judgment on Israel with the total destruction of Israel as a country was seen in the entire known world just as lightning in the east is seen in the west.

**(e) Many disciples will fall away, but those who remain faithful shall be saved** (Matthew 24:13-14).

**(f) The gospel shall be preached to the whole world** (Matthew 24:14). The persecution against the church in Jerusalem scattered the saints abroad, and they went about preaching the word everywhere. (Acts 8:1-4). The gospel was preached throughout the world, as it was known before A. D. 70. *“The word of the truth of the gospel, which is come unto you; even as it is also in all the world”* (Colossians 1:6); and *“The hope of the gospel which you heard, which was preached in all creation under heaven”* (Colossians 1:23). Paul says to the Romans, *“Your faith is proclaimed throughout the whole world”* (Romans 1:8). In Romans 10:18 he said, *“Their voice has gone out into all the earth, and their words to the ends of the world.”* “World” as it is used in the New Testament is all the civilized world of that day, the entire known world. See Luke 2:1 where a decree went out from Augustus *“that all the world should be registered.”* All the world was the Roman Empire, not the entire world as we now know it. *“A great famine over all the world”* (Acts 11:28). *“Now there were dwelling at Jerusalem Jews, devout men, from every nation under heaven”* (Acts 2:5). The devout Jews came from all over the world to Jerusalem for Pentecost, and when Pentecost was over, they returned to all nations under heaven and took the Gospel with them. *“The mystery...has been made known to all the nations”* (Romans 16:25-26).

**The warning was that amines, wars, pestilences, false Christs, false prophets, earth quakes, persecutions, or falling away were not to be taken as a sign of the end, they were things that were to happen before the end did come, but today this passage is used by many to prove any national or international calamities are a sign that the end of the world is coming promptly.**

**(4) THE TRUE SIGNS OF THE END**  
**THAT THE DISCIPLES WERE TO WATCH FOR**

### **Then comes the end of the nation of Israel**

(a) **Then comes the end when they see the Romans in Jerusalem.** *"When; therefore, you see the abomination of desolation, which was spoken of through Daniel the prophet (Daniel 9:27), standing in the holy place" (Matthew 24:14-15).* The parallel passage in Luke 21:20 says, *"But when you see Jerusalem compassed with armies, then know that her desolation is at hand."* **THERE WILL BE NO ARMIES COMPASSING AROUND JERUSALEM TO SEE AT THE SECOND COMING OF JESUS.** In the Old Testament the worship of other gods is an *"abomination"* (Deuteronomy 7:25; 12:31; 17:3). The Romans worshiped many gods. The idolatrous army of Rome in Jerusalem was an *"abomination of desolation"* to them. Daniel speaks of an *"abomination of desolation"* at a time when the regular sacrifices were abolished because of Israel going into captivity (Daniel 12:11; 9:27).

(b) *"Then let them that are in Judaea flee unto the mountains"* (Matthew 24:16). The sign the disciples were to look for was the Roman army around Jerusalem. After going through the country around about Jerusalem and destroying the cities, and after killing many thousand of the Jews, Cestius Gallus came to within one mile of Jerusalem, then after about four days entered the city, but fled with many Jews pursuing him. **The disciples were to flee unto the mountains when they saw all the above signs because of the great tribulation coming upon Jerusalem at that time.** If this passage were speaking of the second coming of Christ, as many Premillennialists say it is, why were Christians told to flee from Jerusalem to the mountains when they tell us that Christ will be coming to Jerusalem, and that He will rule from Jerusalem? In Luke Christ is speaking of the coming destruction of Jerusalem and tells the disciples, *"But watch at every season, making supplication, that you may prevail to escape all these things that shall come to pass, and to stand before the Son of man"* (Luke 21:36). They did watch and escaped the tribulation by fleeing to the mountains beyond the cities of Israel.

George P. Holford: "After this disaster had befallen Cestius, the more opulent of the Jews (says Josephus) forsook Jerusalem as men do a sinking ship. And it is with reason supposed that on this occasion many Christians, or converted Jews, who dwelt there, recollecting the warnings of their divine Master, retired to Pella, a place beyond Jordan, situated in a mountainous country, whither (according to Eusebius, who resided near the spot) they came from Jerusalem, and settled, before the war (under Vespasian) began. Other providential opportunities for escaping afterwards occurred, of which, it is probable, those who were now left behind availed themselves; for it is a striking act, and such as cannot be contemplated by the pious mind without sentiments of devout admiration, **that history does not record that even one Christian perished in the siege of Jerusalem.** Enduring to the end faithful to their blessed master, they, gave credit to his predictions, and escaped the calamity. Thus were fulfilled the words of our Lord, Matt. 24. 13. 'He that shall endure unto the end (i. e. of the scene of this prophecy) shall be saved,' i. e. from the calamities which will involve all those who shall continue obstinate in unbelief." "The Destruction of Jerusalem."

Adam Clarke: "It is very remarkable that not a single Christian perished in the destruction of Jerusalem, though there were many there when Cestis Gallus invaded the city; and, had he persevered in the siege, he would soon have rendered himself master of it; but, when he unexpectedly and unaccountably raised the siege, the Christians took that opportunity to escape." Commentary on Matthew.

At the second coming of Jesus no one will see the Roman army, and no one will flee to the mountains. Premillennialists believe and teach that the rapture will be at the time of this great tribulation; therefore, the saints could not flee to the mountains for they would

be "up in the sky with Christ" in the rapture, but Jesus clearly told them to flee to the mountains when the tribulation begins. Christians were to (and did) flee from Jerusalem; from the very place Premillennialists say Christ will come to and set up His kingdom.

That this is not the second coming of Christ is shown by the fact that both living and dead believers did not meet the Lord in the air in A. D. 70 (1 Thessalonians 4:15-17), but that only the living believers that were in Jerusalem were to flee to the mountains, not to meet Christ, but were to flee to escape the Roman army.

#### **INSTRUCTIONS AND WARNING TO THE DISCIPLES**

Matthew 24:17-20: *"Let him that is on the housetop not go down to take out the things that are in his house: (18) and let him that is in the field not return back to take his cloak. (19) But woe unto them that give suck in those days! (20) And pray you that your flight be not in the winter, neither on a Sabbath; for then shall be great tribulation, such as has not been from the beginning of the world (aion-age) until now, no, not ever shall be. (22) And except those days had been shortened, no flesh would have been saved: but for the elect's sake those days shall be shortened. (23) Then if any man shall say unto you, Lo, here is the Christ, or, Here, believe it not. (24) For there shall arise false Christs, and false prophets, and shall show great signs and wonders; so as to lead astray, if possible, even the elect. (25) Behold, I have told you beforehand. (26) If; therefore, they shall say unto you, Behold, he is in the wilderness; go not forth: Behold, he is in the inner chambers; believe it not. (27) For as the lightning comes forth from the east, and is seen even unto the west; so shall be the coming of the Son of man. (28) Where so ever the carcass is, there will the eagles be gathered together."*

*"For then shall be great tribulation, such as has not been from the beginning of the world (aion-age) until now, no, not ever shall be."* This is speaking of the Jewish age, not all time, not of the destruction of the flood before the Jewish age, and not speaking of any war after the end of the Jewish age. Daniel 12:1 says, *"And there will be a time of distress such as never occurred since there was a nation until that time."* Daniel vision about Israel and Michael was speaking only of Israel, and should be understood as "since there was a nation of Israel." It is speaking only of the wars and captivities of Israel, not of other nations, not anything before Israel was a nation, or after the destruction of Israel. **"Not ever shall be"** would have no meaning if it were after a tribulation, which would be after the end of the world.

**(a) Those in Jerusalem were to flee without taking time to take things from their house,** and those in fields were not to take the time to return to their house for things (Matthew 24:18-19). *"But when you see Jerusalem surrounded by armies, then recognize that her desolation is at hand. Then let those who are in Judea flee to the mountains, and let those who are in the midst of the city depart, and let not those who are in the country enter the city"* (Luke 20:20-21).

No one, saved or lost, will be able to flee to the mountains to escape at the second coming of Jesus. The saved will not want to, and the lost will not be able to escape the judgment. Neither will there be armies surround Jerusalem at the second coming of Christ. Nevertheless, Millennialists attempt to make this be an army of Satan surrounding Christ and His saints in the Millennial Kingdom. Would those who were with Christ in Jerusalem be told to flee to the mountains to escape the army of Satan? If they were, it would give Satan more power than Christ has, for He would not be able to protect them from Satan.

The saints that were to flee to the mountains would be in the mountains at the time of rapture, not raptured to Heaven where the Millennialists say they will be. Although this is a key passage to the Millennia theory it is an undeniable contradiction to the rapture theory.

**(b) Woe unto them that have a small child** (Matthew 24:29). Those with a child would have hardships in fleeing to the mountains, but at the end of the world this will be no problem. Joy, not woe to those who will be caught up to meet Jesus in the air.

**(c) They were to pray that it not be in the winter, or not be on a Sabbath for the gates of Jerusalem were closed, and no one could depart from the city** (Matthew 24:20). Because the streams were then impassable from the heavy rains, the cold wet weather would be hard on those who were fleeing. The gates of Jerusalem have never been closed after A. D. 70, and it will be no problem if the gates of Jerusalem, or any city was closed at the second coming, nor will impassable streams or cold weather be a problem at the second coming.

**(d) There would be a greater tribulation than had been from the beginning of the age** (aion-age) (Matthew 24:20-22). Not the beginning of the world as the King James Version says, the beginning of the Jewish age.

**(e) There would be many false Christs and prophets that would show great signs** (Matthew 24:23-27). But, when Christ came in judgment on Israel He was seen by all through His judgment. False Christs and prophets will not be a sign of His second coming at the end of the world.

**(f) Where so ever the dead body of Israel was (the carcass) the eagles would gather** (Matthew 24:28). The Jewish nation was a dead and rotting carcass with its birds of prey.

- First: many false Christs.
- Second: Christ coming seen by all. Christ coming in judgment on Israel, which was the destruction and tribulation of Jerusalem.
- Third: Then the dead carcass of Israel.

That Christ being seen by all is the coming of Christ in judgment on Israel, and not at His second coming is shown by it being between the false Christs and the dead carcass of Jerusalem.

*"For these are days of vengeance, that all things which are written may be fulfilled"* (Luke 21:22). Jeremiah ends his prophecy made in Gehenna (valley of Topheth) outside of Jerusalem with, *"Thus says the Lord of hosts, the God of Israel, 'Behold, I am about to bring on this city and all its towns the entire calamity that I have declared against it because they have stiffened their necks so as not to heed My words'"* (Jeremiah 19:15).

#### **HINDERANCES TO FLEEING THE TRIBULATION FIRST CENTURY OR TODAY?**

Hindrances to flight from Jerusalem in A. D. 70 that will not be hindrances at the second coming (Or at the Rapture if there were one).

**(a) "Let him that is on the housetop not go down."** Most first century houses in Jerusalem had flat roofs, and were used as sleeping places. Today there are almost none with flat roofs. Anyone on the housetop was not to take time to go in the house to take anything.

**(b) Not on the Sabbath.** The gates would be closed, and no one would be able to leave the city. Today there are no gates. The Law forbids going more than a Sabbath Day

journey, which is less than a mile, and others Jews might have stopped them for breaking the Sabbath Law.

**(c) Not in the winter.** Travel would be hard then, but not today with today's ways of travel.

**(d) Having a small child** (Matthew 24:19). This would make the fleeing from Jerusalem hard.

***"For the days shall come upon you when your enemies shall cast up a bank about you, and compass you round, and keep you on in on every side"*** (Luke 19:43-44). Then the common way that was used by the Romans to take a walled city was to build an embankment next to the wall for the army to walk up to the top of the wall. Today's cities, not even Jerusalem, do not have walls, as they would be useless with modern planes and explosives.

***"And except those days had been shortened, no flesh would have been saved: but for the elect's sake those days shall be shortened."*** After Jerusalem was completely destroyed, the cities of Israel that had not been destroyed before Jerusalem was also destroyed. If the Roman army had kept going, the fateful Jews beyond the mountains where Christians had fled to would have also been destroyed. No flesh saved would not make sense if it were applied to the second coming of Christ as it is by many Millennialists.

Luke 21:24 ***"And they shall fall by the edge of the sword, and shall be led captive into all the nations: and Jerusalem shall be trodden down of the Gentiles until the times of the Gentiles be fulfilled."*** In A. D. 70 all the Jews that were in Israel that was not killed were led captive into all the nations. The siege of Jerusalem was at the time of the Passover when millions of the most faithful from all over were within the walls of the city. **If this were speaking of the millennium, who is going to fall by the sword, and who is going to be led captive at the coming of Christ?**

George P. Holford: "Of the Jews destroyed during the siege, Josephus reckons not less than **one million and one hundred thousand**, to which must be added, above **two-hundred and thirty-seven thousand who perished in other places, and innumerable multitudes who were swept away by famine, and pestilence, and of which no calculation could be made.** Not less than two thousand laid violent hands upon themselves. Of the captives the whole was about **ninety-seven thousand.**" "The Destruction of Jerusalem." He also says that at this time bands of robbers and murderers plundered the other towns and slew the resistance of many of the towns.

"The Roman leaders endeavored to strike terror to the Jews and thus, cause them to surrender. Those prisoners, who resisted when taken, were scourged, tortured, and crucified before the wall of the city. Hundreds were daily put to death in this manner, and the dreadful work continued until, along the Valley Jehoshaphat and at Calvary, crosses were erected in so great numbers that there was scarcely room to move among them. So terrible was the visited that awful imprecation uttered before the judgment seat of Pilate: 'His blood be on us, and on our children Matthew 27:25'" "The Great Controversy," 1911, The nation of Israel sowed a cross and reaped thousands of crosses.

Adam Clarke: "No history can furnish us with a parallel to the calamities and miseries of the Jews: rape, murder, famine, and pestilence within: fire and sword, and all the horrors of war, without. Our Lord wept at the foresight of these calamities; and it is almost impossible for any humane person to read the relation of them in Josephus without weeping also" Commentary on Matthew.

Josephus: "Now the seditious at first give orders that the dead should be buried out of the public treasure, as not enduring the stench of their dead bodies. But afterwards, when they could not do that, they had them cast down from the walls into the valleys beneath." (The Wars Of The Jews Or

The History Of The Destruction Of Jerusalem, Book 5.12.3). "And indeed the multitude of carcasses that lay in heaps one upon another was a horrible sight, and produced a pestilential stench, which was a hindrance to those that would make sallies out of the city, and fight the enemy: but as those were to go in battle-array, who had been already use to ten thousand murders, and must tread upon those dead bodies as they marched along, so they were not terrified, nor did they pity men as they marched over them." (The Wars Of The Jews Or The History Of The Destruction Of Jerusalem, book 6, page 1). This is only a small sample of the pages in Josephus's history of the destruction of the Jews as a nation, of the wars of the Jews with the Romans before, during, and after the destruction of Jerusalem, of the famines, pestilence, and earthquakes through out all Israel unto the entire nation was destroyed. It is not for those with a weak stomach.

*"Verily I say unto you, there shall not be left here one stone upon another"* (Matthew 24:2). Titus wanted to save the temple and give command that it be not destroyed, but Christ had said it would be. It was set on fire against the command of Titus, and the gold melted and the soldiers pried the stones apart down to the foundation stones looking for the gold; not one stone was left on another. In Luke's account of this (Luke 19:41-44) Christ says the temple would be even with the ground with not one stone upon another. After the destruction of Jerusalem one could not know by looking at the spot that the temple had been on it. A Moslem Mosque, called the Dome of the Rock, is now on the spot where the temple was.

B. W. Johnson: "Other great temples are in ruins, but their ruins indicate their former splendor. The Parthenon, the Acropolis, the temples of Karnak, Luxor, and Baalbec are examples; but to find even the foundations of the Jewish temple it is necessary to dig beneath the modern city. It has entirely disappeared from the face of the earth, and a Mahometan mosque stands on the spot where it stood.", The People's New Testament With Notes, Matthew 24:2, 1891.

Josephus: "Daniel also wrote concerning the Roman government, and that our country should be made desolate by them." "Antiquities of the Jews" 10.11.7.

**In their books of fiction the coming millennium tribulation is often based on Matthew 24, which has already come in A. D. 70 before that generation passed away (Matthew 24:34). *"For then shall be great tribulation, such as has not been from the beginning of the world (aion-age)."*** The purpose of this discourse by Christ was not to give his disciples signs of His coming at the end of the world, but signs of the destruction of Jerusalem, to warn believers in that generation of the coming destruction of Jerusalem, and to give them a sign for them to flee from the destruction coming in their lifetime (Matthew 24:21).

### **THE CARCASS OF ISRAEL**

*"Where so ever the carcass is, there will the eagles be gathered together"* Matthew 24:28.

John Lightfoot: "I wonder and can any understand these words of pious men flying to Christ, (in the rapture) when the discourse here is of quite a different thing: they are thus connected to the forgoing: Christ shall be revealed with a sudden vengeance; for when God shall cast of the city and people, grown ripe for destruction, like a carcass thrown out, the Roman soldiers, like eagles, shall straight fly to it with their eagles (ensigns) to tear and devour it." Matthew 24:28 "A Commentary on Matthew."

**Not Jerusalem only, but all the nation of Israel was destroyed, and all the land that was the nation of Israel was taken over by other people. The nation of Israel came to an end.** The Jewish religion was centered round and totally dependence on the



sacrifices, which could only be performed at the Temple, and only by the Leviticus priesthood. Both came to an end and have not been restored to this day.

#### **IMMEDIATELY AFTER THE TRIBULATION AND DESTRUCTION OF JERUSALEM AND ALL ISRAEL**

Matthew 24:29-31: *"But immediately after the tribulation of those days the sun shall not give her light, and the stars shall fall from heaven, and the powers of the heavens shall be shaken: (30) and then shall appear the sign of the Son of man in heaven: and then shall all the tribes of the earth mourn, and they shall see the Son of man coming on the clouds of heaven with power and great glory. (31) And he shall send forth his angels with a great sound of a trumpet, and they shall gather together his elect from the four winds, from one end of heaven to the other."*

Matthew 24:1-28 is speaking of the destruction of Jerusalem. Then in the next verse Christ says, *"But immediately after the tribulation of those days,"* and He gives a list in verses 29-31 of things that are to happen then, immediately after the tribulation and destruction of Jerusalem, not at His second coming, not after a tribulation that is to be at the end of the world. Then in verses 32-44 He gives us the parable of Israel the fig tree in which His coming was *"nigh, even at the doors."* These verses are highly symbolic of something that took place immediately after the destruction of Jerusalem. In symbolic language the sun is a great ruler on this earth, and the stars are lesser rulers. There were no rulers or teachers in Israel immediately after the destruction of Jerusalem and all the cities of Israel. All was darkness for Israel. *"And then shall all the tribes of the earth mourn"* (see Matthew 10:23 where the coming of Christ is in judgment on Israel before the Apostles had gone over the cities of Israel). In the next parable, Christ is, *"Nigh, even at the doors,"* and *"this generation shall not pass away till all these things be accomplished."* Though not literally, Christ did come in judgment in the destruction of Jerusalem. If this were at the judgment when all will be raised from the dead for judgment by Christ, I find it difficult to see how any could think that Christ will not give forth His light at the Judgment, and what would be the stars that shall fall from Heaven? If this were literal, stars could not fall on the earth, even one star would be many times bigger than the earth. If verses 30 and 31 were speaking of the second coming, they would be out of place for the second coming was not *"immediately after the tribulation of those days"* (verse 29), and not in the *"generation that shall not pass away till all these things be accomplished"* (verse 34). Many teach that the things in Matthew 24 are events that are happening today, but if so, there would some very old people be living today.

**The "great tribulation" of Matthew 24:21 is now past history, not something still to come.** *"But immediately after the tribulation of these day the sun shall not give her light, and the stars shall fall from heaven, and the powers of the heavens shall be shaken"* (Matthew 24:29). Jesus used the same symbolic language to describe the fall of Israel that Isaiah used to describe the fall of Babylon (Ezekiel 32:7-9), and is commonly used in the Old Testament. *"For the stars of heaven and their constellations will not flash forth their light; the sun will be dark when it rises, and the moon will not shed its light"* (Isaiah 13:10). Luke added, *"And upon the earth distress of nations"* (Luke 21:21). **The sun being darkened was immediately after the tribulation Christ was speaking of, which was in A. D. 70, not a tribulation yet to come after the second coming of Christ. Most Millennialists move the sun being darkened from "immediately after the**

**tribulation,” and make the darken be in the tribulation, not something that comes “after the tribulation.”**

- Darkened “*immediately after the tribulation,*” the tribulation of verses 1-28 in A. D. 70.
  - Not darkened **during** the tribulation as Premillennialists teach. They must change the time of the sun being darkened.
1. The same figurative language of the sun, moon and stars being darkened, or falling from heaven is also used:
    - Of the fall of Judea (a national judgment) in Jeremiah 4:1-28
    - Of the fall of Israel (Amos 8:6-9; 8:18-20)
    - Of the fall of Israel (Zephaniah 1:14-18).
    - Of the fall of the Nations (Joel 3:15-16; 2:31)
    - Of the fall of Egypt (Ezekiel 30:3-4; 32:7-8; Isaiah 19:1)
    - Of the fall of Babylon (Isaiah 13:10-20)
    - Of the fall of Edom (Isaiah 34:4-6)
    - Of the city of Arier in Israel (Isaiah 29:5-6)
    - Of the fall of "My people" (Isaiah 51:5-6)
  2. Also see Joel 2:1-31; 30:31; Haggai 2:6-7; Amos 8:9; Jeremiah 15:9 46:7; 49:23-24; Isaiah 17:12-13; 19:1; 47:20; 64:3; Daniel 7:2-17; Exodus 19:16; 13:21-22; 14:19-31; Psalm 18:13; 104:3; Ezekiel 34:4; Nahum 1:3. **NONE BELIEVES THE SUN BEING DARKENED IN THE JUDGMENT OF GOD ON THESE NATIONS WAS A LITERAL DARKING, OR THAT IT WAS THE END OF THE WORLD. This was familiar language to those Jesus was speaking to, and they would have understood him to be speaking of the fall of a nation, not of the end of the world.** It is similar to that in Deuteronomy 23:22-28 and both are a judgment on Israel.
  3. Compare Matthew 24:29-30 to the fall of Egypt. *"And when I extinguish you, I will cover the heavens, and darken their stars; I will cover the sun with a cloud, and the moon shall not give its light. All the shining lights in the heavens I will darken over you and will set darkness on your land, declares the Lord God. I will also trouble the hearts of many peoples, when I bring your destruction among the nations"* (Ezekiel 32:7-9). As far as these nations were concerned the lights went out.

Matthew 24:30: *"Then shall appear the sign of the Son of Man in Heaven."* It was the “*sign*” of the Son of man that was to appear, not the second coming of Christ. *"In Heaven"* is where the Son of Man is, not where the sign would appear; if the sign were in Heaven, it would appear to no one on earth. The sign of the Son of Man that did appear was the destruction of Israel. The sign proves that the man Israel rejected is the Lord, and that He is the ruler over all nations, and He has the power to destroy the nations that reject Him. The whole system of worship of the Law, worship that required both Jerusalem and the Temple had ended, and is no longer acceptable to God.

In speaking of God's coming in judgment on Egypt Isaiah said, *"The oracle concerning Egypt. Behold, the Lord is riding on a swift cloud, and is about to come to Egypt"* (Isaiah 19:1; also Jeremiah 4:13; Ezekiel 30:3-4). This is not God literally riding a cloud into Egypt, but is figurative language of His coming in judgment on Egypt. When they saw Jerusalem destroyed, they were seeing Jesus coming in judgment on Israel. Jesus told the high priest, *"You shall see the son of man sitting at the right hand of power, and coming on the clouds of Heaven"* (Mark 14:62). The high priest did not literally see Jesus in Heaven, but he and all Israel did see the coming of Jesus in judgment on Israel.

Foy E. Wallace Jr.: “The signs in the heavens, the darkening sun and falling stars, refer to the falling of Jewish dignitaries, casting down of authorities and powers, long established, and signified

the darkness that settled upon the Jewish state, the sun of the Hebrew temple was darkened, the moon of the Jewish commonwealth was as blood, the stars of Sanhendrin fell from their high seats of authority...The sign of the Son of man in the heaven was a signal, the evidence of divine visitation and intervention in the downfall of the Jewish authorities and in all the transpiring events. The mourning of all the tribes of the earth refers to the lamentation of the Jewish families all over the world because of the destruction of their city and their temple and their state. The coming of the Son of man in the clouds of heaven is not a reference to the second coming of Christ but to the coming foretold by Jesus to Caiaphas in Matthew 26:64: 'Hereafter shall you see the Son of man sitting on the right hand of power and coming in the clouds of Heaven.' Jesus told Caiaphas that he would see it, he would be living witness to these event." "The Book of Revelation," page 354.

Russell Boatmen: "At a public forum in which chapter 24 of Matthew and chapter 20 of Revelation were under discussion my respondent stoutly contended that Mt. 24:29 could not possibly refer to the fall of Jerusalem. He read the verse slowly and with deliberate emphasis and added, 'They (the sun, moon and stars) are still up there.' That scored points with the Premillennialists. But by the same rule we would have to rewrite Old Testament history. Isaiah's and Ezekiel's prophecies, noted above, could not then refer to the downfall of the nations to whom they were directed. The sun, moon and stars 'are still up there.' And the land of Edom is trodden by caravans of tourists year after year, who see no streams of pitch, no brimstone, no smoke going up for ever and ever. If the Bible is allowed to be its own interpreter, when read in the light of the prophecies couched in the same language style, and even using the same metaphors, Mt. 24:29 will be readily recognizable as fulfilled in the destruction of Jerusalem, 70 A. D." What The Bible Says The End Time, page 145, College Press Publishing Company, 1980.

*"And then shall all the tribes of the earth mourn."* When their country was destroyed, the Jews that were in other parts of the earth would mourn. The word translated "earth" is "gee," and in the King James Version is translated "land" forty-one times, "ground" eighteen times and "country" two times.

- "Gee" is translated land in Matthew 2:6; 2:20; 2:21; 4:15; 9:26; 11:24; 14:34; 27:45; Mark 4:1; 6:47; 6:53; 15:33; Luke 4:25; 5:3; 5:11; 5:24; 8:27; 14:35; 21:23; John 3:22; 6:21; 21:8; 21:9; 21:11; Acts 7:3; 7:4; 7:4; 7:6; 7:11; 7:29; 7:33; 7:36; 7:40; 13:17; 13:19; 13:19; Hebrews 8:9; 11:9; Jude 5.
- "Gee" is translated "ground" in Matthew 9:29; 13:8; 13:23; 15:35; Mark 4:8; 4:20; 4:26; 8:6; 9:20; 24:35; Luke 8:8; 8:15; 22:44; John 8:6; 8:8; 12:24; Acts 7:33.
- "Gee" is translated "country" in Matthew 9:31 and Acts 7:3.

Had it been translated "land" in Matthew 24:30, *"And then shall all the tribes of the land (gee) mourn"* most of the confusion would not have existed. See Zechariah 12:11-12. It is easy to see why all Israel would have mourned when their country and worship was destroyed, but not why there would be mourning at the coming of Christ.

*"And he will send forth His angels with a great trumpet, and they will gather together His elect from the four winds, from one end of the sky to the other"* (Matthew 24:31). Still speaking in figurative language Jesus is saying He will send His messengers into all the world with His Gospel, and gather them to Him in His kingdom, the church. Angels is from the Greek "angelos," which is translated "messengers" in James 2:25 (also Matthew 11:10; Mark 1:2; Luke 7:24; 7:27; 9:52); the messengers Rahab received and sent out another way were men, not heavenly being; Jesus did not jump from the destruction of Jerusalem to His second coming. Just as there was not literally a "great trumpet" that was heard in Egypt and Assyria (Isaiah 27:13), there was not literally a "great trumpet" after the fall of Jerusalem. *"And they will gather together His elect from the four winds, from one end of the sky to the other,"* is figurative language meaning from all over the

earth, just as is *"from east and west, and from north and south"* (Luke 13:29 also see Matthew 24:14). All the saved, *"His elect"* are now gathered together in His kingdom, the church.

Those in the first century would understand *"blood, fire, vapor and smoke"* to be used as it was in the Old Testament (Acts 2:19; Joel 2:28-32), but would never have understood it to be referring to a nuclear war as many Millennialists apply it. Christ used the symbolic language of the Old Testament as it was used in the Old Testament, as those hearing Him would have understood, not something in today's newspapers. Literally, that day was an ordinary day; the moon was not literally turned into blood, but spiritually it was an earth-shaking event. Even the Millennialists, who say all scripture must be interpreted literally, do not believe the moon will ever literally be turned to blood.

**The Son of Man seen coming in His kingdom.** *"Truly I say to you, there are some of those who are standing here who shall not taste death until they see the Son of Man coming in His kingdom"* (Matthew 16:28). The parallel passage in Mark says, *"Truly I say to you, there are some of those who are standing here who shall not taste death until they see the kingdom of God after it has come with power"* (Mark 9:1). His kingdom came in Acts 2; therefore, Christ was seen coming in His kingdom in power and glory in A. D. 30. Christ came both in the coming of His kingdom and in judgment on Israel, but neither one was a visible coming as the second coming that will be seen by all, when both all the living and all the dead will see Him. The problem many have when they read Matthew 24 is that they see only His second coming, and therefore must interpret much of Matthew 24 to be speaking of the end of time. Neither His coming in His kingdom in A. D. 30, nor His coming in judgment on Israel in A. D. 70 was the second coming when the saved will put on immortality and forever be with Him.

**Coming of Christ before His disciples had gone through the cities of Israel.** Matthew 10:16-23 *"Behold, I send you forth as sheep in the midst of wolves: be you therefore wise as serpents, and harmless as doves. But beware of men: for they will deliver you up to councils, and in theirs synagogues they will scourge you; and before governors and kings shall you be brought for my sake, for a testimony to them and to the Gentiles. But when they deliver you up, be not anxious how or what you shall speak: for it shall be given you in that hour what you shall speak. For it is not you that speak, but the Spirit of your Father that speaks in you. And brother shall deliver up brother to death, and the father his child: and children shall rise up against parents, and cause them to be put to death. And you shall be hated of all men for my name's sake: but he that endures to the end, the same shall be saved. But when they persecute you in this city, flee into the next: for verily I say unto you, You shall not have gone through the cities of Israel, till the Son of man be come."*

#### AFTER TITUS CAME ADRIAN

##### All of Israel was destroyed.

G. Holford: *"In the reign of Adrian,"* say Bishop Newton, *'nine hundred and eighty-five of their best towns were sacked and demolished, five hundred and eighty thousand men fell by the sword, in battle, besides, an infinite multitude who perished by, famine, and sickness, and fire; so that Judea was depopulated,* and an almost incredible number of every age and of each sex, were sold like horses and dispersed over the face of the earth'— Newton, vol. I, page xviii.) The war which gave rise to these calamities happened about forty-four years after the destruction of Jerusalem." The Destruction of Jerusalem.

*"Therefore, behold, the days come, says Jehovah, that it shall no more be called Topheth, not the Valley of the son of Hinnom, but the valley of slaughter: for they shall bury in Topheth, till there be no place to bury. And the dead bodies of this people shall be food for the birds of the heavens, and for the beasts of the earth; and none shall frighten them away. Then will I cause to cease from the cities of Judah, and from the streets of Jerusalem, the voice of mirth and the voice of gladness, the voice of the bridegroom and the voice of the bride; for the land shall become a waste"* (Jeremiah 7:32-34).

G. Holford: "After the destruction of Jerusalem seventeen hundred Jews who surrendered at Macherus were slain, and of fugitives not less than three thousand in the woods of Jardes. Titus having marched his army to Caesarea, he (Titus) there, with great splendor, celebrated the birthday of his brother Domitian; and according to the barbarous manner of those times, punished many Jews in honor of it. The number who was burnt, and who fell by fighting with wild beasts, and in mutual combats, exceeded two thousand five hundred." The Destruction of Jerusalem.

Adam Clarke lists some that were killed at other places. "The inhabitants of Caesarea, above 20,000. At Scythopolis, above 13,000. At Ascalon, 2,500. At Ptolemais, 2,000. At Alexandria, 50,000. At Joppa, when taken by Cestius Gallus, 8,400. In a mountain called Asamon, near Sepporis, above 2,000. At Damascus, 10,000. In a battle with the Romans at Ascalon, 10,000. In an ambush near the same place, 8,000. At Japha, 15,000. Of the Samaritans, on Mount Gerizim, 11,600. At Jotapa, 40,000. At Joppa, when taken by Vespasian, 4,200. At Tarichea, 6,500. And after the city was taken, 1,200. At Gamala, 4,000, besides 5,000 who threw themselves down a precipice. Of those who fled with John, of Gischala, 6,000. Of the Gadarenes, 15,000 slain, besides countless multitudes drowned. In the village of Idumea, above 10,000 slain. At Gerasa, 1,000. At Machaerus, 1,700. In the wood of Jardes, 3,000. In the castle of Masada, 960. In Cyrene, by Catullus the governor, 3,000. Besides these, many of every age, sex, and condition, were slain in the war, who are not reckoned; but, of those who are reckoned, the number amounts to upwards of 1,357,660, which would have appeared incredible, if their own historian had not so particularly enumerated them." Clarke's Commentary on Matthew. The unknown number that was destroyed throughout the country by pestilence, famine, earthquakes, and robbers throughout the reign both before the destruction of Jerusalem, during the destruction, and the years after it must be added to this. Also, Adam Clarke says most of those taken captive "above seventeen years old were distributed through the Roman provinces, to be destroyed in their theaters by the sword, and by the wild beasts."

John Calvin: "For within fifty years the city was destroyed and the temple ruined, **THE WHOLE COUNTRY WAS REDUCED TO A HIDEOUS DESERT.**" "Commentary on a Harmony of the Evangelist, Matthew, Mark, and Luke." All Israel, the whole nation, not just the temple was totally destroyed, "reduced to a hideous desert."

David Chilton: "Let Him be Crucified! Let Him be Crucified! His blood be on us, and on our children!" the apostates had cried forty years earlier (Matthew 27:22-25); and when it was all over, more than a million Jews had been killed in the siege of Jerusalem; close to a million more were sold into slavery throughout the empire, **and whole of Judea lay smoldering in ruins, virtually depopulate.** "The Great Tribulation" 1987, Dominion Press.

Josephus: "The countryside, like the city, was a pitiful sight, for where once there had been a multitude of trees and parks, there was now an utter wilderness stripped bare of timber; and no stranger who has seen the old Judea and the glorious suburbs of her capital, and now beheld utter desolation, could refrain from tears or suppress a groan at so terrible a change. The war had blotted out every trace of beauty, and no one who had known it in the past and came upon it suddenly would have recognized the place, for though he was already there, he would still have been looking for the city" The Jewish War.

Josephus: "The Dead Sea too was filled with corpses which the river (the Jordan River) carried down to it by the thousands."

*"And except these days had been shortened, no flesh would have been saved: but for the elect's sake those days shall be shortened" (Matthew 24:22). If the war had gone on it would have reached beyond Israel unto Pella and other cities in the mountains where many Christians were that had left Israel; but it was stopped before it reached them. "No flesh" will be saved at the second coming. "Flesh and blood cannot inherit the kingdom of God" (1 Corinthians 15:50). That the days were shortened, and some flesh was saved proves this is not speaking of the second coming of Christ.*

**(5) HE (CHRIST) IS NIGH, EVEN AT THE DOORS:** Matthew 24:32-44

*"Now from the fig tree learn her parable: when her branch is now become tender, and puts forth its leaves, you know that the summer is nigh; (33) even so you also, **when you see all these things, know you that He is nigh, even at the doors. (34) Verily I say unto you, this generation shall not pass away, till all these things be accomplished. (35)** Heaven and earth shall pass away, but my words shall not pass away. (36) But of that day and hour knows no one, not even the angels of heaven, neither the Son, but the Father only. (37) And as were the days of Noah, so shall be the coming of the Son of man. (38) For in those days which were before the flood they were eating and drinking, marrying and giving in marriage, until the day that Noah entered into the ark, (39) and they knew not until the flood came, and took them all away; so shall be the coming of the Son of man. (40) Then shall two men be in the field; one is taken, and one is left; (41) two women shall be grinding at the mill; one is taken, and one is left. (42) Watch; therefore: for you know not on what day your Lord comes. (43) But know this that if the master of the house had known in what watch the thief was coming, he would have watched, and would not have suffered his house to broken through. (44) Therefore be you also ready; for in an hour that you think not the Son of man comes." This makes it clear that all Jesus had said before this applies to the destruction of Jerusalem, not to His second coming for "this generation" has long ago passed away. **"All these things"** are the things He has just told them, **things that those Christ was speaking to would see in their life time** (wars, famines, pestilences, earthquakes, the abomination of desolation, the great tribulation, false prophets, sun and moon darkened, Son of Man coming in the clouds, stars falling from Heaven); all these things did come on that generation; when they saw the signs coming to pass, they know that the end of the temple and Israel was at hand. Although we are to watch and always be ready, we are not given any signs as they were that we can see and know that His coming is soon, not even that it will be in our lifetime, or in the next thousand or ten thousand years. Commentaries on verses 35-44 are divided on whether this is speaking of the coming of Christ in judgment on Israel or His second coming. It is unlikely that Christ would have changed from speaking of judgment on Israel in verse 34, then His second coming in verse 35, and back to judgment on Israel in verse 40 with nothing to show He changed. He was speaking to His disciples at this time (Matthew 24:1), and telling them they were to watch for the signs He gave them of His coming in judgment on Israel; He tells them it will be in there generation, but does not specify the exact date, the hour, or the day when His coming on judgment on Israel would come. We are given no signs to watch for as they were; nevertheless, we are always to be ready for His second coming.*

- Just as Sodom did not know the day of there coming destruction (Luke 17:26-37).
- Just as those in the days of Noah did not know when the flood was coming (Matthew 24:37-39).

- No one knew when the end of Israel was coming. It came at the time when the devout Jews from all over were in Jerusalem; they were assembled from the whole country for the feast of unleavened bread.

**"All these things"** are the things He told them to watch for before the destruction of Jerusalem in 70 A. D., not at the second coming of Jesus. Luke says, *"But when **these things** begin to come to pass, look up, and lift up your heads; because your redemption draws nigh"* (Luke 21:38). This redemption draws nigh to those of that generation. It was a redemption from the persecution of the Jews. *"This generation shall not pass away, till **all things** be accomplished"* Luke 21:32. Not the redemption of the U. S. from Russia, or any other redemption today.

- **"But before all these things,**
  1. *They shall lay hands on **you*** (those Christ was speaking to),
  2. *And shall persecute **you**,*
  3. *Delivering **you** up to the synagogues and prisons"* Luke 21:12.
- *"This generation shall not pass away, till **all things** be accomplished"* Luke 21:32, Matthew 24:34.
- *"As for **these things** which you behold (The temple and how it was adorned) the days will come, in which there shall not be left here one stone upon another, that shall not be thrown down"* Luke 21:5; Matthew 24:1-2.
- *"When therefore shall **these things** be? And what shall be the sign when **these things** are about to come to pass?"* (Not one stone upon another) Luke 21:7; Matthew 24:3.
- *"And when **you** shall hear of wars and tumults, be not terrified: for **these things** must needs come to pass first; but the end is not immediately"* Luke 21:9; Matthew 24:6.
- *"But when **these things** begin to come to pass"* Luke 21:28.
- *"Even so **you** also, when **you** see **these things** coming to pass"* Luke 21:31.
- *"But watch **you** at every season, making supplication, that **you** may prevail to escape **all these things** that shall come to pass"* Luke 21:36.
- *"When **you** see **all these things**, know **you** that he is nigh, even at the doors. Verily I say unto **you**, **this generation shall not pass away TILL ALL THESE THINGS BE ACCOMPLISHED"*** Matthew 24:33-34.

Matthew 24:34-36 is a key to understanding all that came to pass before it, all that has been said up to this point must come to pass before **"this generation"** would pass away. Not at the second coming of Jesus at the end of the world. A generation is about 40 years. It is the same *"generation"* spoken of in Matthew 23:36. *"Heaven and earth shall pass away, but my words shall not pass away"* (Matthew 24:35). Is *"heaven and earth"* literal or figuratively? He had assured them that the end of Jerusalem was coming, now He assured them that His word would come to pass, that heaven and earth would pass away, but not His word; the end of Jerusalem was sure. He seems to be speaking of the end of the Jewish heaven and earth, the end of their nation, not the end of the world; Heaven itself will never past away; to make this be a literal passing away of *"Heaven and earth"* would make Heaven itself come to an end. Israel's sun, moon, and stars would be darkened, the holy city and temple alone with the priesthood would all be gone, which would make keeping the Law and worship according to the Law both impossible, their heaven and earth did pass away, but Heaven will never pass away.

Adam Clarke: **"But of that day and hour,** here, is translated season by many eminent critics, and is used in this sense by both sacred and profane authors. As the day was not known, in which Jerusalem should be invested by the Romans, therefore our Lord advised his disciples to pray that it might not be on a Sabbath; and as the season was not known, therefore they were to pray that it might not be in the winter; Matthew 24:20," Commentary on Matthew 25:36.

At the time Christ was speaking in Matthew 24 the disciples did not understand that Christ was to die and be resurrected, they thought He would be a king of Israel on the throne of David, and that His kingdom would be on this earth; they would not have been able to understand this if it were about His second coming. Just as Noah warned them of the flood to come, Israel was warned of the destruction to come, but just as they did not believe Noah, Israel did not believe Christ, *“And as were the days of Noah, so shall be the coming of the Son of man. For as in those days which were before the flood they were eating and drinking, marrying and giving in marriage, until the day that Noah entered into the ark, and they know not unto the flood came, and took them away; so shall be the coming of the Son of man. Then shall two men be in the field; one is taken, and one is left; two women shall be grinding at the mill; one is taken and one is left. Watch therefore: for you know not on what day your Lord comes”* (Matthew 24:37-44). All that did not watch and flee when the sign was given was destroyed just as those who did not enter into the Ark. At the second coming of Christ no one will be left in the field, all the dead will be resurrected, and all the living will be changed (1 Corinthians 15:51-52).

*“That day and hour knows no one...but the father only”* (Matthew 24:38). At that times the Father in Heaven, who knows all things, would have known the time of the coming of Christ in judgment on Jerusalem. *“Christ Jesus, who, although He existed in the form of God, did not regard equality with God a thing to be grasped, but emptied Himself, taking the form of a bond-servant, and being made in the likeness of men. Being found in appearance as a man, He humbled Himself by becoming obedient to the point of death, even death on a cross”* (Philippians 2:6-7). He was *“made a little lower than the angels”* (Hebrews 2:7).

The Christians of that day did not know the season when the end would come, but was told to pray that it be not in the winter season, nor did they know the day, but were told to pray that it not be on a Sabbath Day. *“But watch you at every season, making supplication, that you may prevail to escape all these things that shall come to pass, and to stand before the Son of man”* (Luke 21:36; Matthew 24:42-44; Mark 13:35-37). The Christians did watch and did escape all these things, all the things He has just warned them about what was coming to Israel; but no one will escape the judgment to come. Just as Noah warned of the destruction of the world, but did not give the exact time, and all went on with their lives and did not pay attention to the warning, the warning of Christ were not heeded by the Jews, and the end came when they were not looking for it. As in the flood only the evil was destroyed and the righteous saved, the unbelieving Jews were destroyed, and the believers were saved; *“two men in the field; one will be taken, and one will be left.”*

Josephus the Jewish first century historian, recorded concerning the year 70, *“Thus were the miserable people persuaded by these deceivers, and such as belied God himself; while they did not attend, nor give credit to the signs that were so evident and did so plainly foretell their future desolation; but, like men infatuated, without either eyes to see, or minds to consider, did not regard the denunciations that God made to them.”*

John Lightfoot (1859): *“This generation shall not pass. Hence, it appears plain enough that the foregoing verses are not to be understood of the last judgment but, as we said, of the destruction of Jerusalem.”* A Commentary of The New Testament, Volume 2, page 320.

John Wesley (1754): *“This generation of men now living shall not pass till all these things be done—The expression implies that great part of that generation would be passed away, but not the whole. Just so it was; for the city and temple were destroyed thirty-nine or forty years after.”*



Matthew Henery: "As to these things, the wars, seductions, and persecutions, here foretold, and especially of the ruin of the Jewish nation; 'This generation shall not pass away, till all these things be fulfilled (Mt 24:34); there are those now alive that shall see Jerusalem destroyed, **and the Jewish church brought to an end.**" One Volume Commentary on the Whole Bible.

James D. Bales: "And the destruction of the whole Jewish economy was the fulfillment of the rest of it (Joel's prophecy of the last days Acts 2:16-21). If there was one thing the Jew felt sure of it was that Jerusalem was the favored city of God, and that its future supremacy among the nations was as certain to come as the sunrise. Its sacrifices would always be acceptable offered on the altars by the sons of Levi. Now we see the national life of Israel forever ended; the temple forever closed; the sacrifices become useless; the priesthood forgotten; and Israel no more to God than any other nation...If you could think of a pious Jew having gone to sleep three years before Christ was crucified and then wakened in a few years after the destruction of Jerusalem, what an utter bewilderment he would have! All that he supposed to be permanent was gone, and in place of it a company of men preaching God's love to all men, worshiping in all places, and claiming earthly dominion in none. He would well say this in indeed what Joel said to us" The Hub Of The Bible Or Acts Two Analyzed, page 70, Lambert Book House, 1960.

### **(6) ISRAEL THE UNFAITHFUL SERVANT**

Matthew 24:45-51

*"Who then is the faithful and wise servant, whom his lord has set over his household, to give them their food in due season? (46) Blessed is that servant, whom his lord when he comes shall find so doing. (47) Verily I say unto you, that he will set him over all that he has. (48) But if that evil servant shall say in his heart, My lord terries; (49) and shall begin to beat his fellow-servants, and shall eat and drink with the drunken; (50) the lord of that servant shall come in a day when he expects not, and in an hour when he knows not, (51) and shall cut him asunder, and appoint his portion with the hypocrites: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth."* Like all parables, all that are in them are not to be taken literally. They teach a lesson which is the main point of the parable. The point of this one is that Israel had been unfaithful and a judgment was coming.

### **(7) UNPROFITABLE SERVANT- OUTER DARKNESS**

Matthew 25:30; 8:12; 22:13

Chapter 25 is a part of the same discourse in chapter 24; it was divided by man and makes it easy for English reader to see a change of subject which dose not exist.

**It was the "unprofitable servant" and "sons of the kingdom" that were cast into outer darkness, not the ones who never believed, not the lost for they were never in the kingdom.** The Jews who rejected Christ were cast out of the light, no longer to be God's chosen people, into the darkness of the world without the light of God's revelation. Christ said many (the Gentiles) shall *"came from the east and the west, and shall sit down with Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, in the kingdom of heaven; but the sons of the kingdom shall be cast forth into outer darkness: there shall be the weeping and the gnashing of teeth."* This says nothing about there being outer darkness in Hell. Fire and darkness do not go together. *"O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, that kills the prophets, and stones them that are sent unto her! How often would I have gathered your children together, even as a hen gathers her own brood under her wings, and you would not! Behold, your house is left unto you desolate"* (Luke 13:33-34). Their house without God in it is darkness. God and His light are now in the Church.

### **(8) THE WRATH IS COME UPON THEM TO THE UTTERMOST**

*"And all the people answered and said, His blood be on us and on our children!"* (Matthew 27:25). *"For you also suffered the same things of your own countrymen, even*

as they did of the Jews; who both killed the Lord Jesus and the prophets, and drove out us, and please not God, and are contrary to all men; forbidding us to speak to the Gentiles that they may be saved; to fill up their sins always: **but the wrath is come upon them to the uttermost**" (1 Thessalonians 2:14-16). This was written about A. D. 53, just a few years before the destruction of the nation of Israel in A. D. 70.

### **(9) MORE TOLERABLE**

Christ spoke of the Day of Judgment for lands or cities. More tolerable for Sodom and Gomorrah than for the cities that did not receive those He sent out (Matthew 10:14-15, Mark 6:11, Luke 10:10-12). More tolerable for Sodom and Gomorrah than for Chorazin, Bethsaida, and Capernaum (Matthew 11:21-24, Luke 10:10-12). **When are cities and nations judged? When is their day of judgment to be? "And you, Capernaum, will not be exalted to heaven, will you? You shall descend to Hades"** (Matthew 11:23). It was a great city, but it would go down to hades-the grave. Today, there are only a few ruins of Capernaum. They went from greatness (exalted to heaven) to non-existence (hades-the grave). Individuals, not nations, or cities will be judged at the judgment at the second coming of Christ. Matthew 24 is of the judgment of Jerusalem (Matthew 23:36-38). **All these cities have had a day of judgment, and were brought down to the grave. The day of judgment for them is past.** The destruction of Sodom was quick and soon over. The destruction of Jerusalem, which saw and rejected Christ was long and drawn out with much more suffering; therefore, much less tolerable. The Day of Judgment for a city or a nation is the time when God will cause it to be destroyed. The Old Testament is full of God's judgment of cities and nations. **The destruction of the cities that rejected Christ and his apostles were worse (Matthew 24:21) than the destruction of those in the Old Testament.** The destruction of Sodom was quick and soon over. The destruction of Jerusalem, which saw and rejected Christ was long and drawn out with much more suffering; therefore, much less tolerable. The Day of Judgment for a city or a nation is the time when God will cause it to be destroyed. The Old Testament is full of God's days of judgment on nations and cities; nations are not now burning in an eternal Hell.

Homer Hailey: "Punished by death and destruction, neither Sodom nor Gomorrah ever again became a living city. Rather, the two joined as one became a symbol of total destruction as used by Moses and the prophets (Deuteronomy 29:23; Isaiah 1:9; 3:9; Jeremiah. 49:18; Amos 4:11; Zephaniah 2:9), By Jesus (Luke 17:29), and by the apostles (II Peter 2:6; Jude 7; Romans 9:29)." "God's Judgments and Punishments of Nations and Individuals" page 30.

Ron Halbrook: "From that day until this day, Sodom and Gomorrah have symbolized God's fierce hatred of all immorality...The grave of Sodom and Gomorrah is not covered with fertile soil bearing grass, forests, and crops like other cities of antiquity, No, its grave is covered by the Salt Sea, the Dead Sea...God has utilized this symbol of his wrath over and over throughout the history of the world...Sodom represents brazen evil followed by the judgment of God from which none can escape...Thus, Sodom symbolizes utter ruin and desolation...When God rained 'brimstone and fire' upon Sodom, He literally turned the city 'into ashes.'" "Sodom and Gomorrah..." page 594, Guardian of Truth, October 3, 1991.

**"As an example"** Jude 7: If they are an example, what do they teach if it is not that those who suffer the punishment of eternal fire will no longer exist.

- "They were overthrown in the wilderness" - They died in the wilderness (1 Corinthians 10:5).
- "Fell in one day three and twenty thousand" - Twenty-three thousand died in one day (1 Corinthians 10:8). Not "Twenty-three thousand were eternally tormented in one day."
- "Some of them made trial, and PERISHED by the serpents" - Those bit by the serpents died, they were not eternally tormented by the serpents (1 Corinthians 10:9).

- "Some of them murmured, and PERISHED by the destroyer" - They were killed (1 Corinthians 10:10).
- "Unto the day that Noah entered into the ark, and the flood came and DESTROYED them all" (Luke 17:27). They died in the flood, not still being tormented by it.
  - "Perished" and "destroyed" means death, not torment.

Will there be a resurrection and judgment of cities? If so, will the individuals of these cities be judged as individuals, or as a part of the cities or both? If cities will be judged at the Judgment Day at the coming of Christ, then God would be condemning people for where they live, not for what they did, or did not do themselves. **BUT, EITHER WAY** (1) If this is God's Judgment Day on their cities when they were destroyed, (2) or even if God did judge cities in the Judgment Day at the coming of Christ, there is nothing said about an immortal soul, or about God tormenting any city, or anyone in Hell; it is clearly said, "*It shall be more tolerable for Tyre and Sidon IN the day of judgment,*" not "It shall be more tolerable for Tyre and Sidon IN Hell after the day of judgment was over." Hell is read into it. If the judgment were "*in the Day of Judgment,*" it could not be in Hell after the Day of Judgment is over; nothing is said about any torment of cities or people after the Day of Judgment; there is absolutely nothing said about Hell, or God tormenting without end in this passage.

**Will there be degrees of punishment in Hell?** Christ spoke of the Day of Judgment for lands or cities.

1. More tolerable for Sodom and Gomorrah than for Chorazin, Bethsaida, and Capernaum (Matthew 11:21-24, Luke 10:10-12).
2. More tolerable for Sodom and Gomorrah than for the cities that did not receive those He sent out (Matthew 10:14-15, Mark 6:11, Luke 10:10-12).

There is no mention of eternal punishment of any individual, and no mention of Hell in any of these passages. The punishment spoken of is a punishment of cities and took place **in the day when God judged and destroyed them, not in Hell. Hell or eternal punishment is not mentioned in any of these passages.** Those who believe in Hell read it in. **When are cities and nations judged? When is their day of judgment to be?** "*And you, Capernaum, will not be exalted to heaven, will you? You shall descend to Hades*" (Matthew 11:23). It was a great city but would go down to hades-the grave. Today, there are only a few ruins of Capernaum. They went from greatness to non-existence. From exalted to heaven to the grave (hades). "*Shall go down unto Hades (grave),*" only the dead go to the grave, these cities died, they did not now exist, they are dead, not alive in Hell.

**Another passage that is sometimes used to teach there be degrees of punishment in Hell.** When will the many or few stripes be? The master "*will come on a day when he does not expect him, and at an hour he does not know, and will cut him in pieces*" (Luke 12:46). **This will be when the master comes,** (1) whether this is speaking of His coming in judgment on Israel (2) or His coming in judgment on the world. Nothing is said about the stripes being in Hell, but Hell is read into it. If the stripes will be given forever, the few would last as long as the many; therefore, they would be the same. A few would not be a few if God will be forever giving them; both few and many would be a countless and forever growing number of stripes. There would be no difference in the few and the many for both would last forever and have no end, both would be a countless number of stripes. Many and few are not specific as to how many, but both are a limited number of stripes;

therefore, could not last forever. Neither God forever using a whip and putting stripes on most of mankind nor Hell is in this passage, but both are read into it.

Anyone must reject many plain statements of the Bible to believe man has an immortal soul that will forever be tormented in Hell. **The Bible does not support today's Hell fire preaching. It flatly opposes it.**

**(10) DAUGHTERS OF JERUSALEM** Luke 23:27-31

When Jesus was being led to be crucified *"there followed him a great multitude of the people, and of whom men who bewailed and lamented him. But, Jesus turning unto them said, **Daughters of Jerusalem, weep not for me, but weep for yourselves, and for your children.** For behold, the days are coming, in which they shall say, blessed are the barren, and the wombs that never bare, and the breasts that never give suck. Then shall they begin to say to the mountains, fall on us; and the hills, Cover us. For if they do these things in the green tree, what shall be done in the dry?"* Even at the time of His death and sufferings, the great tribulation that were coming to Israel was on His mind. See Hosea 19:7-8 where they cry to the mountains to cover them in the destruction of Samaria, which is an Old Testament expression of wanting to escape destruction.

**(11) "YOUR HOUSE IS LEFT UNTO YOU DESOLATE"**

Matthew 23:38; Luke 13:35

God left the temple. *"**And behold, the veil of the temple was torn in two from top to bottom**"* (Matthew 27:51). As it is sometimes said today when an entertainer has finished, "God has left the building." After they put to death their savior, God gives them forty years to repent, but the book of Acts is a history of the *"generation of vipers"* persecuting and putting to death those who God sent to save them. They brought upon themselves retribution of such severity that it was as if they had killed all the prophets God had sent to turn Israel from their sin (Matthew 23:34-35).

SUMMARY:

- Christ came when He set up His kingdom (Matthew 16:28; Mark 9:1) on the day of Pentecost (Acts 2).
- Christ came in judgment on Israel in A. D. 70.
- But, neither of these is His coming in person at the end of this age (1 Thessalonians 3:13-18).
- The destruction of the temple put an end to the worship of Israel, the destruction of their genealogical records put an end to their identity, and an end to their existence as a nation.

The Gospel According to John was written after A. D. 70, after the destruction of Israel and Jerusalem. Therefore it has no reference to (1) weeping and gnashing of teeth, (2) coming from the east and west and sitting down with Abraham in the kingdom, (3) or outer darkness. To the Samaritan woman Christ did say that God would be worshiped not in Jerusalem, but in spirit and truth (John 49-26), but said nothing to her about the coming end of Jerusalem.

**THE A. D. 70 DOCTRINES**

The A. D. 70 doctrine is that all the passages that speak of the second coming were fulfilled in A. D. 70, also called Preterit Eschatology, Realized Eschatology, Fulfilled Eschatology, Covenant Eschatology.

**Four points that must be proven for the A. D. 70 doctrines to be true**

- (1) That the Law and the Jewish age did not end unto 40 years after the death of Christ; that the Old Covenant and the New Covenant overlapped for 40 years.
- (2) That all that died before A. D. 70 was resurrected from the dead in A. D. 70.
- (3) That the resurrection is passed, and all the saved go to Heaven at the moment of death.
- (4) That there will be no Judgment Day for the lost after the judgment they say took place in A. D. 70.

**Was A. D. 70 the second and final coming of Christ? Or is the second coming of Christ and the judgment of all yet to come?**

1. According to Realized Eschatology the second coming of Christ was an invisible coming in A. D. 70, and He will not come again. There will be no resurrection and Judgment Day to come for all at the coming of Christ.
2. According to Realized Eschatology the resurrection was when all the Old Testament saints were resurrected in A. D. 70. The "Judgment Day" was when the Jewish age ended in A. D. 70.
3. According to Realized Eschatology after A. D. 70 all that dies in Christ go to their eternal reward at the moment of death.
4. According to Realized Eschatology the Great Commission given in Matthew 28:18-19 has been completely fulfilled therefore, it is not for us today.
5. According to Realized Eschatology the old heavens and earth have passed away, and the new heavens and earth are now here.
6. According to Realized Eschatology all the New Testament was written before A. D. 70, and there is no revelation about anything that will happen after A. D. 70; therefore, there is no revelation about when or even if the earth will ever end. They must deny the vast amount of evident that much of the New Testament (including Peter's letters and Revelation) was written after A. D. 70 for if just one book was written after that date the Preterit Eschatology could not be true. Early writers, Eusebius, Irenaeus, Clement, Origin, and others say Revelation was written in the reign of Domitian, which was years after A. D. 70.
7. According to Realized Eschatology the Great Tribulation and Armageddon are both past.
8. According to Realized Eschatology death and hades were thrown into the Lake of Fire in A. D. 70.
9. According to Realized Eschatology Satan has been put in the Lake of Fire. Max King, "The Spirit of Prophecy," page 356, 1971.
  - o Their teaching is that in A. D. 70 Jesus moved all the righteous dead to Heaven, and cast the Devil and his angels, and the wicked dead into the Lake of Fire. If Satan were cast into the Lake of Fire, which is the second death, where does evil and temptations come from today?
10. According to Realized Eschatology all prophecy, including all of the Book of Revelation has already been fulfilled.
11. According to Realized Eschatology all New Testament writer believed that the coming of Christ was to be in their lifetime.
12. According to Max King the resurrection was not a resurrection of the dead, but was, "The expected eschatological resurrection of the children of God from the Old Covenant to the New Covenant." The Spirit of Prophecy, second edition, page 309.

He said the resurrection was only a change from the Old Testament to the New Testament, this change was in A. D. 70. According to him there is to be no resurrection of the dead, no coming of Christ when all the dead will be raised.

What the early non-inspired writers said years after A. D. 70 about "the last days" and the second coming of Christ--from Florida College Annual Lectures, Almon L. Williams, 1986, page 217.

- Isnatius: "These are the last times."
- Barnabas: "Wherefore let us take heed in these last days."
- Clement: "Herein He speaks of the day of this appearing, when He shall come and redeem us, each man according to his works. And the unbelievers shall see His glory and His might: and they shall be amazed."
- Clement: "But you know that the day of judgment comes even now as a burning oven, and the powers of the heaven shall melt, and the earth as lead melting on the fire, and than shall appear the secret and open works of man."
- Polycarp: "Now He that raised Him from the dead will raise up also...Whoever shall pervert the oracles of the Lord to his own lusts and say there is neither resurrection nor judgment, that man is first-born of Satan."

There was revelation given in the Old Testament on the establishment of the kingdom (Micah 4:1), and the resurrection of Christ was given in types and shadows as Moses lifting up the serpent in the wilderness (John 3:14), but few if any understood, and the doctrine of the resurrection, life, and immortality, which Christ taught, were new, were unknown about by anyone before Christ. The words, resurrection, immortal, and immortality are not in the Old Testament in the King James Version or the American Standard Version. The resurrection was new to the heathen world, which believed in a deathless soul that is now immortal and that had no need for a resurrection. The first coming of Christ, His suffering and rejection, His death and resurrection were told about in the Old Testament; but there is nothing about His second coming in it; the second coming of Christ, the resurrection, the judgment of all at His second coming and the promise of life after death in Heaven was new to the New Testament. Of all the religions, Christianity alone has a day coming in which all the dead will be resurrected from the dead.

**The New Testament clearly teaches that the second coming, the resurrection of all, and the judgment of all have not come.** All the lost will awake from the dead, and the saved will awake to eternal life at the same time. **It will be a resurrection of the dead, not as realized eschatology teaches, death after A. D. 70 is only a change from the old law to the new law, from the Old Testament to the New Testament, which would not be a resurrection, and it would make a resurrection of the dead impossible.**

*"For we will all stand before the judgment seat of God"* (Romans 14:10).

*"For we must all appear before the judgment seat of Christ, so that each one may be recompensed for his deeds in the body, according to what he has done, whether good or bad"* (2 Corinthians 5:10).

*"He has been manifested to put away sin by the sacrifice of Himself. And inasmuch as it is appointed for men to die once and after this comes judgment, so Christ also, having been offered once to bear the sins of many, will appear a second time, apart from sin, to them that wait for him, unto salvation"* (Hebrews 9:26-28).

*“For if we go on sinning willfully after receiving the knowledge of the truth, there no longer remains a sacrifice for sins, **but a terrifying expectation of judgment and the fury of a fire which will consume the adversaries**” (Hebrews 10:26-27).*

*“But the heavens that now are, and the earth, by the same word have been stored up for fire, being reserved **against the DAY OF JUDGMENT and destruction of ungodly men**” (2 Peter 3:7).*

John 5:28-29: *“For **an hour is coming**, in which **all** who are in the tombs will hear His voice, and will come forth; those who did the good deeds to a resurrection of life, those who committed the evil deeds to a resurrection of judgment.” All, both the good and the evil will **be resurrected from the dead in the same hour, not some over two thousand years apart from A. D. 70 to now and still counting; and not changed from one form of life to another form of life immediately after death without a resurrection.***

Philippians 3:20-21: *“For our citizenship is in heaven, from which also we eagerly wait for a Savior, the Lord Jesus Christ; who will transform the body of our humble state into conformity with the body of His glory, by the exertion of the power that He has even to subject all things to Himself.”* When our body will be transformed into conformity with His body is at His coming from Heaven, not at our death. Christ does not come from Heaven ever time a person dies. That there will be a resurrection and judgment of all at the second coming of Christ is discussed throughout this book and in the review below.

#### **A REVIEW OF "THE RESURRECTION OF THE DEAD"**

**By Samuel Dawson**

**A web page in which Samuel attempts to prove from 1 Corinthians 15 that the Old Testament does teach that the dead in Christ has been resurrected, and that this resurrection was in A. D. 70.** Dawson said he thinks I inadvertently give the Old Testament's teaching of the subject short shrift. Then said you can be a good guy and do that because he has done exactly the same thing. Below is an examination of how he thinks I give the Old Testament teaching of the resurrection short shrift.

He points to restoring of the nation of Israel as a nation as being a resurrection, but the restoring or resurrection of Israel as a nation is not the resurrection of the New Testament. Bring the nation of Israel out of captivity is not the resurrecting of even one person to eternal life or immortality. It was not even a resurrection of a nation to immortality or to eternal life. Not one person was resurrected from the dead in A. D. 70, not even Abraham or David. **It is not even close to being the resurrection taught in the New Testament.** *“Behold, I will cause breath to enter you that you may come to life.”* Ezekiel 37:5 is speaking of a nation being restored as a nation, the people of Israel were already alive but in captivity, it was the nation that was being restored to their land and coming to life as a nation many years before A. D. 70, this is not of the resurrection of a single person that was dead; there is nothing in it about anyone or any nation being given immortality. **The resurrection taught in the New Testament is not the resurrection of a nation (restoring that nation only for a short time), but is the resurrection of individuals to eternal life, and there is nothing like it in the Old Testament.** There is nothing in 1 Corinthians 15, or any of the New Testament about the resurrection of fleshly bodies at the coming of Christ. No one put on immortality in A. D. 70, and no one's corruptible (fleshly) bodies were changed to incorruption, and **all that were living in A. D. 70 was still subject to death and all died, all Christians still die; death was**

not *"swallowed up in victory"* (1 Corinthians 15:54), as it will be at the coming of Christ. **If Paul were not speaking of a resurrection that will come after this lifetime, then when he said, "Then they also that are fallen asleep in Christ have perished," then they had perished** (depicting a process that had pass before Paul wrote this, **not an on going process**; they had perished– died before he wrote, not were perishing– dying at the time he wrote) (1 Corinthians 15:18).

1. He was speaking of some Corinthians that had died past tense.
2. These Corinthians that had died was dead present tense at the time Paul was writing this letter in about A. D. 57.
3. But these dead Corinthians would be raised, future tense, with a spiritual body at the coming of Christ.

**Paul was not speaking of restoring a nation, or a resurrection that had passed, or a resurrection that was taking place at that time, but of the resurrection to life and immortality of individuals, those in Christ that die before He comes, a resurrection that will not take place unto the coming of Christ.** At the coming of Christ, all the saved that have died (*"fallen asleep"*) *"the dead in Christ shall rise,"* and all the living saints will be changed, **both at the same time** shall be caught up to meet the Lord in the air and shall *"ever be with the Lord"* (1 Thessalonians 3:14-17); this did not happen in A. D. 70, and those who are fallen asleep are not yet with Christ. **Paul says the resurrection of those who are asleep in Christ, and putting on immortality by those who are living will both be at the same moment, both in the twinkling of an eye.** Realized eschatology says, "Not so Paul, the resurrection of the Old Testament saint was in A. D. 70, but there will be no resurrection for us as we will be changed at the moment of death, both are not in the same moment." **If all were transformed (receives a "spiritual body" in which they will dwell in both (1) immediately (2) and for eternally at the moment of death) then nothing is resurrected; there would be no resurrection for anyone after A. D. 70. According to them, the only resurrection in the Bible was at A. D. 70 and it is passed. There will be no resurrection and Judgment Day for anyone. "Faithful is the saying: For if we died with him, we shall also live with him...Hymenaeus and Philetus, men who concerning the truth have erred, saying the resurrection is past already" (2 Timothy 10-19). Israel was not delivered or restored in A. D. 70, but was judged and destroyed. There is nothing in 1 Corinthians 15, Matthew 24, or any passage about Israel being resurrected or restored in A. D. 70.**

On page 6 he said, *"Behold, I will cause breath to enter you that you may come to life."* Ezekiel 37 refers to the death of Israel, then he said, *West is absolutely right that the word resurrection isn't there, but what word should we call the process whereby Israel was dead, and God's purpose was to bring them to life.* Dawson needs to see that when the Old Testament speaks of restoring or resurrecting a nation to life as a nation that would die again, it is not speaking of the resurrection to eternal life or even a resurrection of one dead person in A. D. 70. (1) Not one dead person was restored to life and given immortality. (2) There is no promise that anyone would ever be given immortality in the Old Testament. No nation, not even Israel, will ever be given immortality; but the saved individuals of all nations will at the resurrection. **How can he not see that the resurrection or restoring of Israel as a nation for only a short time in Ezekiel 37 is nothing like the resurrection of individuals to immortality Paul was**



**speaking of in 1 Corinthians 15?** When Israel was restored as a nation after the seventy-year captivity in Daniel, it was not even the same individuals in "the resurrection" of the nation that was in Israel before the captivity from which the nation was resurrected. One group of Jews went into the captivity, and Israel died as a nation, another group of Jews came out of the captivity when Israel were restored or resurrected as a nation.

- Not one dead Jew was resurrected.
- Not resurrected to life on this earth, or resurrected to life in Heaven.

The many restorations of Israel as a nation from captivity in the Old Testament, which was one hundred percent physical earthly restoring of a nation, is not the resurrection to eternal life for those who are in Christ, **not the resurrection OF THE DEAD** in 1 Corinthians 15. **Israel went into captivity and was restored or resurrected as a nation, past tenses, many times in the Old Testament, but not one dead person was resurrected to eternal life in any of the resurrections or restoring of Israel as a nation; there is nothing said in any of Israel's resurrection or restoring as a nation about any person ever being resurrected or given immortality; not ever David or Abraham was resurrected in any of them. IF THE RESURRECTION WERE ONLY RESTORING A NATION AS A NATION, THEN IT IS NOT A RESURRECTION OF DEAD PERSONS, AND THE DEAD HAS NO HOPE OF LIFE AFTER DEATH.**

Page 89: Samuel said, "*We all shall not sleep, but we shall all be changed*" is a time statement; by, "*We shall not all sleep,*" he says Paul affirmed that not all of those in Corinth were going to die physically before the resurrection happened.

**(1) If Paul were saying not all would die physically before the resurrection happened in A. D. 70,**

**(2) Then he was also saying all those in Corinth and all living Christians would be changed from physical bodies to spiritual bodies when the resurrection did happen in A. D. 70. Living Christians was not changed at that time, and both Christians and non-Christians still had physical bodies after A. D.70 just as they did before A. D 70, and all still have physical bodies today. This teaching would have made the church on earth go out of existence on earth in A. D. 70 for all Christians would have been changed from earthly bodies to spiritual bodies. No one will have the spiritual body before the resurrection; All living Christians living in A. D. 70 lived on with an unchanged physical body, some lived for years after A. D. 70, without having been changed to a "spiritual body." Read this that he called a "time statement" in the context, "*Behold, I tell you a mystery: We all shall not sleep, but we shall all be changed, in a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump: for the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed. For this corruptible must put on incorruption, and this mortal must put on immortality. But, when this corruptible shall have put on incorruption, and this mortal shall have put on immortality, then shall come to pass the saying that is written, Death is swallowed up in victory*" (1 Corinthians 15:51-53). Samuel was right when he said this is a time statement, but the "time" is when "*the trumpet shall sound.*" At the sound of the trumpet two things happen in the same moment:**

1. "*The dead shall be raised incorruptible,*" all those in Christ that die before Christ comes,
2. AND those that are alive when Christ comes "*shall be changed.*"

- **Both (1) the living, (2) and the dead, even those that were already dead when Paul wrote this shall be changed in the same moment, both the living and the dead in the same twinkling of an eye, both the living and the dead at the sound of the same trumpet, and both in the same moment.**
- **All living Christians will be changed from physical bodies to spiritual bodies in the same moment that the dead are resurrected with spiritual bodies.**
- **Both will them be the same with spiritual bodies, but will not have earthly bodies.**

If this had happened in A. D. 70, there would have been no Christians for the Romans to put to death; there would have been no church left on this earth. He changed, "*and we shall all be changed*" to "not all of those in Corinth were going to die physically before A. D. 70 when the resurrection would happened" with nothing happening to those who were alive in A. D. 70, they would not take part in the resurrection, they would not "*all be changed in a moment;*" in other words according to him the living Christians were not resurrected at all; they lived without any change, just as they lived before A. D. 70. If I understand him, he says the living Christians in Corinth were not going to be "*all be changed in a moment,*" but each one changed in a different moment, the moment of their death, which for many of them would not be in A. D. 70, and that he thinks each Christian is changed to a spiritual body at a different moment than all other Christians. On page 57 he again changed the "we" to "them" in the "*we shall all be changed in a moment;*" the "we" change to "them" to only being the Old Covenant faithful being taken from the unseen Hadean state into the presence of Christ would be changed in the twinkling of an eye. It seems that Paul's "*we that are live*" must be changed to "them that are dead." "*Behold, I tell you a mystery. We shall not all sleep, but we (them?) shall all (only all of "them," not "we") be changed in a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump*" (1 Corinthians 15:51). Does he think the first "we" is us but the second "we" them? If the first "we" is "them," some of the "them" did not all sleep, then some of the Old Covenant faithful was alive when Paul was writing this in A. D. 67 or 68, the Old Covenant faithful were alive before A. D. 70.

*"But, some one will ask, how are the dead raised? And with what manner of body do they come"* (1 Corinthians 15:35). Paul was reassuring the Corinthians that the Corinthians that had "*fallen asleep in Christ*" had not perished, that their hope of the resurrection did not depend on them being alive at the time of the resurrection (1 Corinthians 15:18-19). Dawson asked who were these "dead ones," then said they were the same Old Covenant dead ones Paul discussed throughout the chapter. **Then he said when we change who the "we" were, we totally miss the time element in Paul's teaching. Then he changed the "we" from "we" to "them"; he changes from the ones Paul was writing to at Corinth about those in Corinth about there loved one who had fallen asleep "*in Christ*" to those who had been dead for many years before Christ; he changed the "we" to "them," to Abraham and all the Old Testament saints.** He *totally miss the time element in Paul's teaching* by changing the "we" from those who were alive at the time Paul was writing to them, to those who had been dead for many years. The "dead ones" (he added "ones," "dead ones" is not in the Greek) are the loved ones of the Corinthians that had fallen asleep in Christ, not Old Testament saints who are not even mentioned in 1 Corinthians 15. On pages 85 -88 he attempts to

make the "*natural body*" be Old Testament Israel and the "*spiritual body*" be the new Israel; when he makes Israel be the "*natural body*" and the church be the "*spiritual body*," **he takes the resurrection of the dead out of I Corinthians 15, any resurrection, even Old Testament saints, all individual persons being resurrected is taken out of 1 Corinthians 15 and replaced with Old Testament Israel and the Church**; he sometimes has dead Old Testament saints be resurrected in A. D. 70 and sometimes Old Testament Israel already resurrected when Paul was writing 1 Corinthians 15 before A. D. 70. In about A. D. 57, 13 years before A. D. 70, he has the old Israel being sown a natural body, it is being raised a spiritual body. Paul said, "*And as WE HAVE borne the image of the earthly* (Adam, 15:45 a natural or earthly corruptible body), *WE SHALL also bear the image of the heavenly* (Christ, a spiritual incorruptible body)" (1 Corinthians 15:49). He changes the "*we have borne*" to "is being sown" and "*we shall also bear the image*" to "is being raised." Then changes "*we*" (us) to "it" (Israel). He changes from Israel (a nation) being raised to Old Testament saints, but he has no resurrection for the Corinthians that had fallen asleep, he seems to have taken them completely out of 1 Corinthians 15.

On page 77 he said, Paul Literally, asked, "How are the dead ones being raised?" 1 Corinthians 15 was written about 13 years before A. D. 70, – 13 years before he says Christ came, 13 years before he says the Old Covenant saints were raised he has Paul asking, "How are the dead ones being raised"? Did he forget that he had used, "***Then they that are Christ's at His coming,***" and he applied this to the resurrection of the Old Covenant faithful? Did he forget that he had applied, "*Behold, I tell you a mystery. We shall not all sleep, but we* (them-Old Testament saints-Dawson) *shall all* (them-Old Testament saints-Dawson) *be changed in a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump*" (1 Corinthians 15:51). Yet, he has them being raised 13 years before the moment, before the twinkling of an eye. On page 85 he said, "Literally, it (Israel) is "*is being sown a natural body, it is being raised a spiritual body.*" Is he is not saying both that (1) Old Covenant saints were being sown (were dying at the time Paul was writing) with a natural body, (2) and Old Covenant saints were being raised with a spiritual body about 13 years before he says Christ came a second time, about 13 years before he says the resurrection occurred. Does he really believe Old Covenant saints were being sown with a natural body in about A. D. 57 when Paul was writing this? "Presently '*is being raised*'" is used on page 91 and throughout the 110 pages. He puts *is being raised* in quotation marks, but who was being quoted? Not Paul, he said, "*Shall be raised incorruptible*" (future tense) (1 Corinthians 15:52). Presently "*is being raised*" (present tense) is in no translation but his and then it puts the resurrection as taking place 13 years to soon for the Realized Eschatology view that the resurrection took place in A. D. 70.

#### **DEAD ONES**

"One" is translated from eight different words in the Greek, Wigram's Greek Concordance, page 915.

1. Alleelon—not used in 1 Corinthians 15
2. Hem—not used in 1 Corinthians 15
3. Heteros—used two times in 15:40
  - a. "*The glory of the celestial is **one** (heteros).*"
  - b. "*There is **one** (heteros) glory of the sun.*"
4. Mis—not used in 1 Corinthians 15

5. Tikto—used 5 times, translated “*some*” in most translations. Of the many times it is used throughout the New Testament, mostly it is translated “*some*,” a few times it is translated “*one*” as in Luke 11:1, “*After He had finished, one (tikto—mostly translated some—“some (tikto) of His disciples said to Him.” He or they were alive, not “dead ones.” Never translated “dead ones,” not “the ‘dead ones’ of His disciples.”*
  - a. “*But some (tikto) are fallen asleep*” 15:6. Some of the more than five hundred that had seen Christ after His resurrection had died, not some of the Old Testament “dead ones” had died.
  - b. “*How say some (tikto) among you that there is no resurrection*” 15:12. These “dead ones” that were saying there is no resurrection were still alive and among the Corinthians. If this was the Old Testament saints then these “dead ones” were alive and were saying there will be no resurrection of the dead.
  - c. “*For some (tikto) have no knowledge*” 15:34. This was not “dead ones” that was still alive, not dead Old Testament saints, it was some that was alive at the time Paul was writing this.
  - d. “*But some one (tikto) will say*” 15:35. Also this was not “dead ones” that were still alive and able to “say.” Why did they translated tikto into two words, why did they add the “one” that is not in the Greek in only one of the five times tikto is used in 1 Corinthians 15? Even so, “*some one will say*” would be a living “one,” when Paul was writing this as a “dead one” cannot say anything, it is a living “*some one*” that was living when Paul was writing.
  - e. “*It may chance of wheat, or of some (tikto) other kind*” 15:37. Was wheat “dead ones” the Old Testament saints that were being resurrected?
6. Toutous—not used in 1 Corinthians 15
7. Ireenee—not used in 1 Corinthians 15
8. Alleelon—not used in 1 Corinthians 15

**Of the many times death and dead are used in 1 Corinthians 15, not one of the eight words that are sometimes translated “one” is used with dead. “Dead ones” is not in 1 Corinthians 15 or the New Testament. To put “one” after dead is an addition.** “Dead” in 1 Corinthians 15:16 is from “nekros.” It is used many times through out the New Testament, but it never has any of the eight Greek words that are translated “one” after it, never “nekros (dead) heteros (one),” never “dead ones.” Matthew 11:2, “*The dead (nekros) are raised up,*” not “The dead (nekros) ones (heteros) are raised up.” “Ones” is never put after “dead” in the Greek.

#### **BUT WHAT IS THEIR POINT?**

I Corinthians 15 is speaking of:

1. The dead Christ that was resurrected.
2. Some of the more then 500 that saw the resurrected Christ were dead at the time Paul wrote this (1 Corinthians 15:6).
3. The saints at Corinth that both had become saints after the resurrection of Christ, and had died were dead, but they were not dead Old Testament saints (1 Corinthians 15:18).

4. The resurrection of all saved dead at the coming of Christ, (1 Corinthians 15:35-58).

If you add the "one" and say the "dead ones" of the more than 500 that had seen the resurrected Christ, or the "dead ones" of the saints at Corinth, 1 Corinthians 15 still says nothing about Old Testament saints that were going to be resurrected in A. D. 70.

Is it not strange that of the many times dead, death, or die is used in the New Testament they only change it to "dead ones" in a few. In the many translations of the Bible made by men who were some of the worlds best scholars in New Testament Greek, not one adds "ones" after dead, death, or die. He adds it to make it prove what he wants to prove; any one could prove anything by adding what they want. 1 Corinthians 15 completely destroys the A. D. 70 doctrine.

On page 99 he quotes Christ saying 6 times of those who believe Him, "*I will raise him up at the last day*" (John 6:39; 6:40; 6:44; 6:54; 11:24; 12:48). Who does he believe Christ is saying He will rise up? Those that heard and believed Him, or Old Testament faithful? It is so obvious that Christ is speaking about those that believed Him that I cannot understand why He used this to prove that the Old Testament faithful was being raised in A. D. 57 when Paul wrote 1 Corinthians, or "*at the last day,*" which Dawson says was one of the 365 days in the year of A. D. 70? If such a grand thing as the coming of Christ and the fulfillment of a prophecy was on a day in A. D. 70, would it not be strange that there was not much more said about it? Also strange that no one knows the day in A. D. 70 that Christ came? Christ is saying this to **all that believed Him**, not just to the Jews that believe Him. Dawson says the Old Covenant had a last day, but the New Covenant will not have a last day. Christ was not speaking of the last day of the Old or the New Covenant. He was speaking of the last day of the earth, "*The day of the Lord*" spoken of in 2 Peter 3:10 (see "The Day Of The Lord" below). Both John and Revelation (and other New Testament books) were written after A. D. 70.

1 Corinthians 15:45-49: On page 87 he changes the "*natural*" and "*spiritual*" to the Old Testament faithful being changed from natural Israel to spiritual Israel as the result of the gospel, and this is in about A. D. 57 when Paul said this, before A. D. 70, which he says is when the second coming of Christ was, and before when Dawson says the resurrection of the Old Testament faithful ones did take place. How he could think that "*the first man Adam became a living soul*" is speaking of the Old Testament faithful is beyond my understanding. There is nothing in this passage about Adam being Israel. "*Then the Lord God formed man (Adam) of the dust from the ground, and breathed into his (Adam) nostrils the breath of life; and man (Adam) became a living soul*" (Genesis 2:7). Adam was the first man, not the nation of Israel. Adam was the natural man made "*of the earth,*" not Israel. Both Adam and Christ (when He was on earth) were "a man," Israel was a nation. Christ is (present tense) "*the second man is of heaven*" (1 Corinthians 15:47). By pointing out that this is present tense, he is saying that "*the second man is of heaven*" cannot be Christ, that the "*second man*" of heaven is the Old Testament faithful ones. If this is not what he is saying, then I cannot understand what he is saying; is he not saying that Christ is not of heaven, present tense in A. D. 57; is he not saying the Old Testament faithful ones, not Christ, was "*the second man of heaven*" 13 years before their resurrection in A. D. 70? This seems to me to be nothing more than a desperate attempt to make the resurrection be passed even if he has to use something that was, present tense,

13 years to soon for it to be speaking of something that was to be, future tense, in A. D. 70.

On page 92 and others pages, it seems to me that **he basis his whole argument on all that believes the resurrection is yet to come must also believe the resurrection is to be a physical resurrection out of the dust.** He is taking what some men teach and making it into the teaching of the Bible for his argument depends on it. **There is nothing in 1 Corinthians 15 about a physical resurrection out of the dust. He is attempting to prove this is speaking of the resurrection of Old Testament saints just because it is not speaking of the resurrection of bodies out of the dust. Try as hard as I can, I cannot see how he sees the resurrection of Old Testament saints just because it is not speaking of earthly bodies when there is nothing in the chapter that says anything about Old Testament saints, nothing about the nation of Israel, or nothing about earthly bodies being raised.** It could not be said any clearer that the body is, "*Sown in corruption (sown a physical body of dust) it is raised in incorruption (not raised a physical body of dust)*" (1 Corinthians 15:42). **He makes a physical resurrection a must for his argument, but there is nothing in the New Testament that teaches a physical body of dust is to be raised at the second coming of Christ.** He repeatedly accused others of believing in *a physical resurrection out of the dirt*, although we cannot read that interpretation back into Isaiah, but then on the same page (page 92) quotes Isaiah, "*Your dead shall arise. Your dead will live; their corpses will rise, you who lie in the dust, awake and shout for joy, for your dew is as the dew of the dawn, and the earth will give birth to the departed spirits*" (Isaiah 26:19). Then says the resurrection of those lying in the dust sounds identical to Daniel 12:2, which says, "*And many of those who sleep in the dust of the ground will awake.*" When he said no serious student of the prophets believes a physical resurrection of a physical body is depicted in Isaiah 25 he was right. Just as Ezekiel's valley of bones coming to life in Ezekiel 37 is figuratively language of the nation being restored to life as a nation, Isaiah 26:19 is figuratively language of a physical resurrection of the dead nation of Israel that had turned to dust, Israel is the dead nation that is being restored to life from the dust and would live again as a nation; this resurrection of Israel was long past before A. D. 70, even long before Christ; neither Ezekiel, Daniel, or Isaiah is teaching the resurrection to eternal life that is taught in the New Testament that was not known about unto Christ made it known; nevertheless, he attempts to somehow use Isaiah to prove Paul was not speaking of the resurrection of the dead at the coming of Christ, but that Paul was only speaking of the resurrection of the Old Testament faithful in A. D. 70. **Dose he not make the only resurrection in the New Testament be only the restoring of the nation of Israel, which was totality destroyed in A. D. 70, not restored to life in A. D. 70? IN A. D. 70 ISREAL WAS NOT RESTORED OR RESURRECTED AS A NATION; IT WAS DESTROYED AS A NATION, THERE WAS NO RESTORING OR RESURRECTION. ISREAL WENT INTO A GRAVE AS A NATION, A MULTITUDE OF INDIVIDUALS WENT INT GRAVES, BUT NO NATION OR INDIVIDUALS CAME OUT OF GRAVES IN A. D. 70. THERE WAS NO RESURRECTION OF A NATION OR INDIVIDUALS.** For all mankind, life went on just as it was before A. D. 70. Persecutions of the Church by Israel stopped, but the persecutions by Rome went on just as it was. The persecution of the church did not stop in A. D. 70 as J. Russell and others that teach the A. D. 70 doctrine teaches that it did.

*“He was taken up; and a cloud received Him out of their sight... This same Jesus, who was received up from you into heaven, shall so come in like manner as you behold him going into heaven”* (Acts 1:11). He was seen coming in judgment on Israel in A. D. 70, but no one seen Him coming in person. *“In my Father's house are many mansions; if it were not so, I would have told you; for I go to prepare a place for you. I go to prepare a place for you. And if I go and prepare a place for you, I come again, and will receive you unto myself; that where I am, there ye may be also”* (John 14:3).

**“DEATH IS SWALLOWED UP IN VICTORY”** (1 Corinthians 15:54)

Throughout 1 Corinthians 15, Paul speaks of death and resurrection from the dead. What is the death and resurrection he is speaking of? The A. D. 70 doctrine says this is speaking of the death and restorations of Old Testament Israel and the Law of Moses, not our death and resurrection. How did Paul use death and resurrection in 1 Corinthians 15?

- Christ **died** and was buried and raised on the third day and appeared too many (1 Corinthians 15:3-6). It was Christ that died for our sins and was resurrected, not Israel died and was resurrected on the third day.
- **Death** had taken some of the above five hundred persons that Christ appeared to after His resurrection (1 Corinthians 15:6). Nothing about Israel in this.
- Christ is preached that He has been raised from the **dead**, but if there is no resurrection Christ has not been raised; therefore, Christ is dead and their faith in Christ is useless (1 Corinthians 15:12-16). Not Israel died and resurrected.
- The Corinthians that had **died** (fallen asleep in Christ) had perished if there will not be a resurrection for THEM (1 Corinthians 15:18-19). Not Israel died and had perished.
- Christ has been raised from the **dead**, the first fruits of them that are **dead** (are asleep). Just as Christ was **dead** and resurrected, those who are asleep in Christ will be resurrected (1 Corinthians 15:20; 15:23). Nothing about Israel dying and being resurrected.
- All Adam's descendant's **die** (all mankind), the resurrection of all (all shall be made alive) will come by Christ (1 Corinthians 15:21-22).
- Christ was raised the first fruits, raised from the **dead**, them all that belong to Christ at His coming will also be raised from the **dead** (1 Corinthians 15:23). Still nothing about Israel dying and being resurrected.
- Then comes the end when Christ shall deliver up the kingdom, the church, to God and the last enemy, **death**, will be abolished (1 Corinthians 15:24-26). Death was not destroyed in A. D. 70.
- If the **dead** (those who are asleep in Christ) are not to be raised then living godly is of no use, do anything you want to for **death** will soon bring you to an end (1 Corinthians 15:29-34). If this were about Israel dying and being resurrected, their sins did not bring Israel to an end.
- How are the **dead** raised, with what kind of body? (1 Corinthians 15:35-49).
  - The earthly body of corruption is put in the ground; an incorruption body is raised.
  - The earthly body is put in the ground in dishonor; it will be raised in glory.
  - The earthly body is put in the ground in weakness; a body is raised in power.
  - The earthly body is put in the ground a natural body; it is raised a spiritual body. The earthly body (natural body) is first, then the spiritual body at the resurrection of the dead.
  - As **we have** borne the image of the earthly (Adam) **we shall** bear the image of the heavenly (Christ). The image of Adam is not the natural nation of Israel.
- Not all Christians will **die**, but all, those who are living when Christ returns, and those who are **asleep (dead)** will both be changed in the same moment, in the twinkling of an eye to an incorruptible, immortality body (1 Corinthians 15:50-

54). The living Christians in A. D. 70 were not changed from natural earthy bodies to spiritual bodies.

**From the above it is clear that Paul said nothing about Old Testament Israel in 1 Corinthians 15.** After the second coming of Christ and the resurrection and judgment, only then will there be no more death, it will be swallowed up in victory (1 Corinthians 15:54-58).

*"But thanks be to God, who gives us the victory through our Lord Jesus Christ. Wherefore, my beloved brethren, be you steadfast, unmovable, always abounding in the work of the Lord, forasmuch as you know that your labor is not vain in the Lord"* (1 Corinthians 15:57-58, American Standard Version). **Throughout chapter 15 Paul is speaking to the Corinthians about THEIR resurrection, not the resurrection of Israel.** *"But we do not want you to be uninformed, brethren, about those who are asleep, so that you will not grieve as do the rest who have no hope. For if we believe that Jesus died and rose again, even so God will bring with Him those who have fallen asleep in Jesus. For this we say to you by the word of the Lord, that we who are alive and remain until the coming of the Lord, will not precede those who have fallen asleep. For the Lord Himself will descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of the archangel and with the trumpet of God, and the dead in Christ will rise first. Then we who are alive and remain will be caught up together with them in the clouds to meet the Lord in the air, and so we shall always be with the Lord"* (1 Thessalonians 4:13-17). **The Christians who were alive in A. D. 70 were not at that time changed from physical to spiritual bodies, they were not caught up "to meet the Lord in the air."** Although it is difficult to know if Dawson believes it will be the nation of Israel restored as a nation, or if he believes the faithful persons of the Old Testament was to be resurrected in A. D. 70. Although the two are not even close to being the same thing, he seems to say one at one time and the other at another time, but he seems to believe it will be Israel being restored as a nation. I believe Dawson was not trying to prove anyone alive was changed to a spiritual body in A. D. 70, but was trying to prove the dead Old Testament saints were resurrected and changed in A. D. 70, and after that time all saints are changed at the time of their death; that both the dead saints and the living saints will not be *"caught up together with them in the clouds to meet the Lord in the air,"* caught up at the moment of death; which would not be a resurrection, but would make death be a change from one form of life to life in another place without ever being without life, not ever being dead; therefore, no one after A. D. 70 cannot be resurrected from the dead for this doctrine makes all be changed instantly from one kind of life to another kind of life and none would ever be dead. **He is trying to prove there was one resurrection of all the Old Testament faithful in A. D. 70, then no one dies, they are just changed to another kind of life.** If this is not what he is trying to prove, then I cannot understand what he is saying.

Max King said, "The eternal kingdom was possessed (Heb. 12:28) and the new heaven and earth inherited." "The Spirit of Prophecy" page 239.

The "new heavens and new earth" is not life on earth after the destruction of Jerusalem in A. D. 70, for after Israel's destruction Christians were still persecuted, and the world is still full of evil and death today just as it was before A. D. 70. It is the same world that existed before Israel was destroyed; we are now in the image of Adam, not in the image of Christ. All, even Christians, suffer and die, death has not been abolished. **The A. D. 70**



**doctrine has no place for living Christians being “changed” at the coming of Christ. None were in A. D. 70.**

Christ “*brought life and immortality to light through the gospel*” (2 Timothy 1:10).

**Who can read the history of Israel in A. D. 70 and believe Israel was restored and was not destroyed.**

#### **WHEN DID THE OLD COVENANT END?**

##### **At the death of Christ, or in A. D. 70?**

*"Having been buried with him in baptism, wherein you were also raised with him through faith in the working of God, who raised him from the dead. And you, being dead through your trespasses and the un-circumcision of your flesh, you, I say, did he make alive together with him, having forgiven us all our trespasses; **having blotted out the bond written in ordinances that was against us, which was contrary to us: and He has taken it out of the way, nailing it to the cross; having despoiled the principalities and the powers, he made a show of them openly, triumphing over them in it. Let no man therefore judge you in meat, or in drink, or in respect of a feast day or a new moon or a Sabbath day**" (Colossians 2:12-15). I know of no way anyone could say any clearer that the Law of Moses was blotted out and nailed to the cross **at the death of Christ**, not in A. D. 70. Paul wrote this when he was in prison at Rome, about A. D. 62, before Realized Eschatology says the Old Covenant Law ended, but at that time Paul said, “*He has taken it out of the way*” (past tense). The message of Hebrews, which was written before A. D. 70, is that the New Covenant replaced the Old Covenant with a new and better sacrifice, a new priesthood, new sacraments, a new tabernacle or temple (John 1:14; John 2:19; Corinthians 3:16; Ephesians 2:21). Preterits tell us that there was an over lapping of the two, that the Old Covenant was not nailed to the cross, and it did not end unto A. D. 70, that the Old Covenant had not been replaced by the New Covenant when Hebrews was written. Paul said, “*He (Christ) takes away the first in order to establish the second*” (Hebrews 10:9). Taking away the Law and establishing a new covenant is the subject of Hebrews 10.*

Dawson used “*The abomination of desolation*” (Matthew 14:15; Daniel 9:27) to prove the resurrection took place in A. D. 70. Christ came in judgment on Israel at that time just as He did in judgment on nations in the Old Testament. I cannot understand how he gets a resurrection out of “*The abomination of desolation,*” or as Luke puts it, “*When you see Jerusalem compassed with armies*” (Luke 21:20). Luke then adds, “*Then know that her desolation is at hand.*” The “*Abomination of desolation*” was the armies that **destroyed** Jerusalem, not restored it. **How can a restoring of Old Testament Israel be gotten out of “the abomination of desolation” that destroyed Jerusalem?**

Christ came in judgment on Israel at that time just as He did in judgment on nations in the Old Testament.

- On Israel (Zephaniah 1:14-18).
- On the Nations (Joel 3:16-16).
- On Egypt (Ezekiel 30:3-4; 32:7-8; Isaiah 19:1).
- On Babylon (Isaiah 13:10-20).
- On Edom (Isaiah 34:4-6).
- On Arier in Israel (Isaiah 29:5-6).

Israel was destroyed in the Jewish war with Rome, which lasted for about five years and ended in A. D. 70. **Judgment did come on Israel in that generation** (Matthew 23:36), **and Israel was destroyed in that judgment, but there is not one thing said**

**about the resurrection of anyone or any nation; nothing is said about the resurrection of the Old Testament saints when the nation was destroyed.** A resurrection in A. D. 70, the only resurrection there will ever be had to have been in A. D. 70 for realized Eschatology to be true; it is based entirely on a resurrection that is not in the Bible and did not happen.

"The Galatians letter is an indignant protest against and refutation of Judaizing teachers" B. W. Johnson, *The People's New Testament With Notes*, Volume 2, page 163.

Speaking to Jews (Galatians 2:14-15) Paul said, *"Even we believed on Christ Jesus, that we might be justified by faith in Christ, and not by the works of the law"* (Galatians 2:16), and *"You are severed from Christ, you who would be justified by the law; you are fallen away from grace"* (Galatians 5:4). This was written in about A. D. 57 when the law would have been in effect if there had been an overlapping of the Old and New Covenants unto A. D. 70, and keeping the law would have been justified, would even have been required at the time Galatians was written.

Sam and I have been in communication with each other a few times by e-mail, and I have thought of him as being a friend that I have not seen in person; I think the things he had written in the past are among the best books I have. He says on page 2 he is not disparaging me, as I am only saying what most believed, that the subject of the resurrection is predominantly or exclusively a New Testament subject, and that he believed the same thing until 2005. My prayer is that he will see that Realized Eschatology is not the truth before it is too late.

**Israel had not obtained, but the elect had** (Romans 11:7). Paul was put to death in Rome before A. D. 70, yet he said the elect had obtained what Israel had not. What had the elect obtained? Being grafted in the olive tree—being accepted by God as His chosen. **In A. D. 70 Israel was not grafted in, it was totally destroyed.** This was written before A. D. 70 and the elect had obtained before when the A. D. 70 doctrine says Christ was to come; this passage is not speaking of a coming of Christ at any time.

If, as Max King claims, the A. D. 70 view was believed and taught by the New Testament writers, when was it lost? For many centuries no one believed it or knew anything about it, then Max King found it, and the Bible was reinterpreted drastically to fit around his view.

In "Last Thing and Covenant Eschatology" in his answer to a question, "What is your understanding of, 'no marrying and giving in marriage.'" Samuel says this is only speaking of the command given by Moses that a brother is to *"perform the duty of a husband's brother"* that *"the name of his dead brother may not be blotted out from Israel"* (Deuteronomy 25:5-10). The brother of the dead husband did not marry his brother's wife; **there was no marrying and giving in marriage** (Luke 20:32-35). Moses did not command the brother who may have had a wife to take a second wife; if the brother had had 10 or more brothers that died, according to Samuel he would have had many wives. *"In the resurrection"* he changed to "after A. D. 70," and says that after A. D. 70 marriage is optional, not mandatory. **Christ did not say marriage would be optional after the resurrection; He said that there would be NO marriage after the resurrection.** *"But they that are accounted worthy to attain to they age, and the resurrection from the dead, neither marry, not are given in marriage: for neither can the die any more: for they are equal to the angels; and are sons of God, being sons of the resurrection"* (Luke 20:27-40). Now Christians both marry and die. After the coming of Christ and the resurrection the saved will not marry or die; marriage will not be

“optional.” Where did he find that marriage would be “optional” after the resurrection when Christ says there would be no marriage or death? A. D. 70 is long passed, but we still have both marriage and death.

He used Mark 10:29-30 to prove that in “*the age to come*” we will have house, etc. Christ said,

1. “*There is no man that has left house, or brethren, or sisters, or mother, or father, or children, or lands, for my sake, and the gospel’s sake, but he shall receive a hundredfold, now in this time, houses, and brethren, and sisters, and mothers, and children, and lands, with persecutions;*”
2. *And in the age to come eternal life*” (Mark 10:29-30).

Samuel changes having “land” etc. “*now in this time*” to having them in the “*age to come*” in an attempt to prove the saved will have them after the resurrection, which he says is now passed. Jesus divides what the believer will receive into two time periods, (1) the present life time (2) and the future after this life time. In the present time periods those who have left all for Christ, “*Shall receive a hundredfold, now in this time, houses, and brethren, and sisters, and mothers, and children, and lands, with persecutions.*” It is difficult to understand how the believers will have a hundredfold more unless He is speaking of spiritual brethren and sisters in the church; neither after A. D. 70, or now Christian do not literally have a hundredfold more, “*Houses, and brethren, and sisters, and mothers, and children, and lands, with persecutions.*” It will be with persecutions. All who live godly will have persecutions in this life. (2) “*And in the age to come eternal life.*” Both marriages and persecutions will have ended in the age to come.

#### THE GRACE THAT IS TO BE BROUGHT UNTO YOU

In 1 Peter 1:10 Peter speaks of the grace to come to them. In 1:13 he speaks of, “*The grace that is to be brought unto **you** at the revelation of Jesus Christ.*” In A. D. 70 nothing happened to the living, life went on with persecutions and death.

In summary: According to Realized Eschatology there is no resurrection to come at the coming of Christ, no Judgment Day at His coming, no second death. According to the Bible any life after death depends wholly on the resurrection of the dead at the coming of Christ (Luke 14:13-14; 1 Thessalonians 4:16; 1 Corinthians 15:51-55).

#### 2 PETER 3

2 Peter 3:3-4: The mockers were saying, “*Where is the promise of his coming, for from the day that the fathers fell asleep, all things continue as they were **from the beginning of the creation?***” The creation is the creation of the world, not Israel. Peter’s reply to them was the they willfully forget that the earth that was that was created out of water was destroyed by water (destroyed before there was a Jewish nation, before Abraham the father of all Jews), and the world, not Israel, is now being reserved against the day of judgment and destruction of ungodly men, it will be “*burned up,*” it is to “*be dissolved,*” and “*the elements shall melt with fervent heat.*” **Both the destroying by water and by fire are a destroying of the world, not just a part of it, not just the nation of Israel; THERE WAS NO NATION OF ISRAEL WHEN THE WORLD WAS DESTROYED BY WATER.**

**WORLD**– 2 Peter 3:6 is from “*kosmos*,” which is in the Greek about 185 times and in the King James Version it is translated “world” all but one time in 1 Peter 3:3 where it is translated “adorning.” It is used to mean this planet earth, never the Jewish age that was

from Moses to the death of Christ. It is always a place, never an age which is always a period of time.

- *"All the kingdoms of the world (kesmos)"* (Matthew 4:8).
- *"Go you into all the world (kesmos)"* (Matthew 14:9).
- *"For God so loved the world (kesmos)"* (John 3:16).
- *"The savior of the world (kesmos)"* (John 4:42).
- *"God that made the world (kesmos) and all things"* (Acts 17:24).
- *"From the foundation of the world (kesmos)"* (Hebrews 4:3).

Kesmos is never translated "age." Peter is not speaking of "the end of the age" as Matthew is in Matthew 24:3.

**EARTH**—2 Peter 3:7; 3:10; 3:13 is from "gee." Gee is in the Greek New Testament about 242 times and in the King James is translated "earth" about 184 times, "land" 39 times, "ground" 18 times, "country" 2 times, and "world" 1 time. It is used to mean this planet earth, or some particular part of this earth.

### THE ENTIRE WORLD

- *"I am come to send peace on earth (gee)"* (Matthew 10:34). Not just in Old Testament Israel.
  - *"Call no man your father upon the earth (gee)"* (Matthew 23:9).
  - *"Went and dug in the earth (gee)"* (Matthew 25:18). He did not dig in Old Testament Israel.
  - *"To lead them out of the land (gee) of Egypt"* (Hebrews 8:9).
  - *"That you may live long on the earth (gee)"* (Ephesians 5:6). According to Realized Eschatology Old Testament Israel was about to end when Paul said this.
  - *"For this they willfully forget, that there were heavens from of old, and an earth (gee) compacted out of water and amidst water, by the word of God; (the heavens and earth that was created by God, the "water" the literal earth was compacted out of was literal water, Old Testament Israel was not "compacted out of water and amidst water") by which means the world (kesmos) that then was, being overflowed with water, perished (the world in the time of Noah was overflowed with literal water, not one nation (Israel) that did not exist at that time); but the heavens that now are, and the earth (gee), by the same word have been stored up for fire, being reserved against the day of judgment and destruction of ungodly men" (2 Peter 3:5-7). A person has to be hard up for proof has to take "the heavens that now are, and the earth (gee)," out of context to make it be only one nation, the nation of Israel that did not exist unto long after the flood, and it does not exist now; there is nothing said about Israel in this passage. **In this passage earth (gee) is used two times and world (kesmos) one time. Realized Eschatology says that only one of the three it is used figuratively, and this one time it does not mean the whole world.***
1. *"Were heavens from of old, and an earth (gee) compacted out of water and amidst water."*
  2. *"By which means the world (kesmos) that then was."*
  3. *"But the heavens that now are, and the earth (gee)."*

- There is no way anyone could know two were literally speaking of the whole world, but only one of the three was figuratively speaking of only a part of the whole world.

**All of the world unless some particular part of the earth is named.**

- *"The land (gee) of Sodom"* (Matthew 11:24).
- *"Land (gee) of Gennesaret"* (Matthew 14:34).
- *"Land (gee) of Judah"* (Matthew 2:6).
- *"All the land (gee) of Egypt"* (Acts 7:11).

**ELEMENTS** – 2 Peter 3:12 shall melt: Elements (stoikion) is used seven times.

- *"And the elements (stoikion) shall be dissolved with fervent heat"* (2 Peter 3:10).
- *"And the elements (stoikion) shall melt with fervent heat"* (2 Peter 3:12).
- *"Were held in bondage under the elements (stoikion) of the world (kesmos)"* (Galatians 4:3).
- *"Howbeit at that time, not knowing God, you were in bondage to them that by nature are no gods: but now that your have come to know God, or rather to be know by God, how turn you back again to the weak and beggarly elements (stoikion) whereunto your desire to be in bondage over again?"* (Galatians 4:8-9). It was Gentiles that did not know God ("not knowing God") that were in bondage to the gods that are not gods, then turned from the weak and beggarly elements of the world (kesmos) to God, but desired to be in bondage to the world again; not Jews that turned from Christ back again to the Law.
- *"Take heed lest there shall be any one that makes spoil of you through his philosophy and vain deceit, after the tradition of men, after the rudiments (stoikion) of the world (kesmos), and not after Christ...If you died with Christ from the rudiments (stoikion) of the world (kesmos) why as though living in the world (kesmos) ..."* (Colossians 2:8-20). It was the rudiments (elements) of the world (kesmos) that they died to, elements of the world (kesmos) that they were living in, not Old Testament Israel that they had died to (past tense) before A. D. 70, before Realized Eschatology say the Law died in A. D. 70.

**In 2 Peter 3, it is the heavens that shall pass away and the earth (gee) that shall be burned up in the day of the Lord, nothing is said about it being only a particular part of the earth, nothing is said about Israel.**

- *"By which means the world (kesmos) that then was"* (2 Peter 3:6). Israel did not exist at the time of the flood. It was the world (kesmos) that then was, not Old Testament Israel that did not exist unto many years after the world perished by water.
- *"But the heavens that now are, and the earth (gee)"* (2 Peter 3:7). The earth that now exists that will perish by fire. "Earth" cannot be changed to be only one of the many nations that are on the "earth (gee)." **If this were speaking of only Israel and not the whole earth, then it would be saying Israel would be destroyed, not restored.**
- *"But the day of the Lord will come as a thief: in the which the heavens shall pass away with a great noise, and the elements shall be dissolved with fervent heat, and the earth (gee) and the works that are therein shall be burned up"* (2 Peter 3:10). *"In the beginning God created the heavens and the earth"* (Genesis 1:1). *"For by Him all things were created, both in the heavens and on earth"*

(Colossians 1:16). The heavens, which *“the heavens shall pass away with a great noise, and the elements shall be dissolved with fervent heat”* is the universe that was created. **Both the “heavens” (the stars) and the “earth” passing away cannot be reduced down to just one nation on the earth, and then changed from that nation being destroyed to just Israel being restored.** Israel is not even mentioned in this passage, restoring a nation or restoring the earth is not mentioned, so how is it made to be the restoration of, not the destruction of Israel?

- *“But according to his promise, we look for new heavens and a new earth (gee), wherein dwells righteousness”* (2 Peter 3:13). 2 Peter was written after A. D. 70, but even if it had been written a few years before A. D. 70, it would have been written years after the beginning of the New Covenant; *“But according to his promise, we look for new heavens and a new earth (gee), wherein dwells righteousness”* could not have been the New Covenant they say would replace the Old Covenant in A. D. 70. The New Covenant was a reality at the time 2 Peter was written, not something that they did not already have, but were looking for it to come.

#### **Fate of the ungodly in 2 Peter**

- **Burned to ashes:** Sodom was turned into ashes as example to those who live ungodly (2 Peter 2:6). Sodom was *“burned to ashes.”*
- And the earth **“shall be burned up.”**
- And *“have been stored up for fire”* (2 Peter 3:7, 10).
- *“The heavens shall pass away.”*
- *“The elements shall be dissolved with fervent heat.”*
- *“The heavens being on fire shall be dissolved.”*
- *“And the elements shall melt with fervent heat”* (2Peter 3:10-12).

In the same passage Sodom was literally destroyed by fire and the earth and heavens will be literally destroyed by fire. One is not a literal destruction by fire, and the other a figuratively destruction. The *“water”* cannot be literal and the *“fire”* made figuratively in the same sentence (2 Peter 3:6), just as the wicked were literally destroyed by water the wicked will literally be destroyed by fire.

- **Destruction** of ungodly men (2 Peter 2:1; 3:7).
- **Destroyed:** *“To be taken and destroyed...shall in their destroying also be destroyed”* (2 Peter 2:12). *“They are like brute beast (animals–Strong 2226), creatures of instinct, born only to be caught and destroyed, and like beast they too will perish”* New International Version.
- **Blackness of darkness** has been reserved (2 Peter 2:17).
- **Perished** (2 Peter 3:6).
- **Destruction:** The day of judgment and destruction of ungodly men (2 Peter 3:7).
- **Perish** (2 Peter 3:9).
- **Destruction:** Some *“wrest, as they do also the other scriptures, unto the own destruction”* (2 Peter 3:16).

#### **2 Peter 3:7 in eight translations**

1. *“The heavens shall pass away with a great noise, and the elements shall melt with fervent heat, the earth also and the works that are therein shall be burned up. Seeing than that all these things shall be dissolved”* King James Version.

2. "The heavens **shall pass away** with a great noise, **and the elements shall be dissolved** with fervent heat, **and the earth and the works that are therein shall be burned up**. Seeing that these things are thus, **all to be dissolved**" American Standard Version.
3. "The heavens **will pass away** with a roar, **and the elements will be destroyed** with intense heat, **and the earth and its works will be burned up**. Since all these things are **to be destroyed** in this way" New American Standard Version.
4. "And then the heavens **will pass away** with a loud noise, **and the elements will be dissolved** with fire, **and the earth and everything that is done on it will be dissolved**. Since all these things are **to be dissolved** in this way" New Revised Standard Version.
5. "**The heavens will disappear** with a roar; **the elements will be destroyed** by fire, **and the earth and everything in it will be laid bare**" New International Version.
6. "The heavens **will pass away** with a terrible noise and the heavenly bodies **will disappear** in fire, **and the earth and everything on it will be burned up**. And so since **everything around us is going to melt away**" The Living Bible.
7. "The skies **will disappear** with a loud noise, everything in them will **be destroyed** by fire, **and the earth and everything in it will be burned up**. In that way everything **will be destroyed**" New Century Version.
8. "In that day the heavens **will vanish** in a tearing blast, the very elements **will disintegrate** in heat and the earth and all its works **will disappear**. In view of the fact that all these things are to **be dissolved**" J. B. Phillips.

If this passage does not say the heavens (the sky) and the earth shall pass away, all be dissolved, be burned up, will disappear, disintegrate, there is no way God could have said the heavens (the sky) and the earth will not be after the day of the Lord? **There is no way to read the earth will be restored to be the way it was before Adam sinned in this passage; "disappear," "melt away," "vanish," "be destroyed," "be dissolved," "pass away," "burned up," does not mean "be restored;"** not one nation, Israel, being restored or not the earth and sky being restored. For the elements to be destroyed means the atomic particles of which the elements are made will be destroyed; the chemical elements, oxygen, hydrogen, etc. "*will be dissolved with fervent heat*" (2 Peter 3:10). All this creation that God made from nothing will return to nothing.

Hebrews 1:10-12 says in the beginning Christ made the heavens and the earth, they are the works of His hands, **they shall perish, but Christ shall remain**. It is the same heavens and earth that Christ made that shall perish, this is not speaking of just one nation that has already come to an end.

- 2 Peter 3:10-12 says on the day of the Lord, "*The heaven shall pass away with a great noise, and the elements shall be dissolved with fervent heat, and the earth and the works that are therein shall be burned up.*" It comes down to, "Did God know how to say what He meant to say, or did He mean to say 'be restored' when He said "*shall pass away*"?"
- Revelation 20:11-15 speaking in apocalyptic language of the final judgment that will be on the day of the Lord says, "*The heaven fled away; and there was found no place for them.*" After the heavens have fled away (not after just one nation that has already been destroyed long before the Judgment Day) then, on the same day the resurrected dead are judged. On that day, after the heaven have fled away into the nothingness from which they came, the resurrected persons, both saved and unsaved will stand before the throne and be judged "*out of the things which were written in the books, according to their works*" (Revelation 20:12).

If the second coming of Christ is passed, and all end time prophecy has been fulfilled as Realized Eschatology teaches, then life will go on forever on the earth as it is now for, according to them, nothing is said in the Bible about the earth ending, or the victory over death when death will have been abolished, or the end of evil.

The fire is just as literal as the water; if one is figurative language the other must also be. *"By which means (water) the world that them was...perished; but the heavens that now are, and the earth, by the same word have been stored up for fire."* If the "fire" is spiritualized to be something other than real fire then the "water" must also be spiritualized to be something other than real water; therefore, the story of the ark must also be figurative language; therefore, there were no real ark and no real flood.

Figurative language of the sun, moon and stars being darken, and the stars falling from heaven are used of the fall of Judea (a national judgment) in Jeremiah 4:1-28, and *"The sun shall not give her light, and the stars shall fall from heaven, and the powers of the heavens shall be shaken"* (Matthew 24:29). Compare Matthew 24:29-30 to the fall of Egypt. *"And when I extinguish you, I will cover the heavens, and darken their stars; I will cover the sun with a cloud, and the moon shall not give its light. All the shining lights in the heavens I will darken over you and will set darkness on your land, declares the Lord God. I will also trouble the hearts of many peoples, when I bring your destruction among the nations"* (Ezekiel 32:7-9). However, Peter speaks of the utter destruction, passing away, disappearing, disintegrating, being dissolved of *"the elements"* on the day of the Lord; not just being darken, or not giving their light. He is not using figurative language of the passing of a nation, but giving a literal description of the earth and the heavens, the same earth and heavens that God created out of nothing, passing away in one day.

Whichever way you make this (1) a figurative description of the end of a nation, (2) or a literal description, as a literal description of the end of the heavens and earth in the day of the Lord, **it is a description of the end of something, not the restoring, or making something better.** The earth being restored is not in this passage; in it the earth is destroyed, not restored. **There is not a word about the earth or Israel being restored and made better in 2 Peter 3.**

*"You, Lord, in the beginning did lay the foundation of the earth, and the heavens are the works of your hands: they shall perish; but you continues: and they all shall wax old as does a garment; and as a mantle shall you roll them up, as a garment, and they shall be changed; but you are the same, and your years will not come to an end"* (Hebrews 1:10-12). There is no way the writer of Hebrews could have said any stronger that:

(1) The Earth, not Israel, was made by the Lord in the beginning, a lone time before that was an Israel.

(2) And the same earth made the in the beginning by Lord will end, **that the earth and the heavens the Lord made will perish.**

(3) But Jesus will have **no end.**

Realized Eschatology says all prophecy has been fulfilled; therefore, according to them, this has already been fulfilled, and the earth and the heavens have already perished. The earth and the heaven *"shall perish."*

BUT

Jesus *"will have no end."*

*"They shall perish; but you continues."*



The A. D. 70 doctrine takes the contrast between the earth and heavens ending and Jesus never ending out and says, “No, one will be changed and continue and the other will continue without changing.”

All ungodly man will be destroyed on the day of the Lord, not just the ungodly Jews in A. D. 70 when Israel was destroyed. Is there anyone that can look at the world today and cannot see that the ungodly have not yet been destroyed, that death has not been destroyed?

Summary:

- It was the **world (kesmos)** that was brought into being (“*and an earth compacted out of water and amidst water*”) by the word of God (2 Peter 3:5).
- It was the same **world (kesmos)** that was destroyed by water, all the world, not just one nation that had not come into exists at the time the world was destroyed (2 Peter 3:6).
- It is the **world (kesmos)** that now is that is stored up for fire at the Day of Judgment and destruction of ungodly men (2 Peter 3:7).
- The same **world (kesmos)** (this earth) that was created in 2 Peter 3:5 is the same world (kesmos) that will be destroyed by fire in 2 Peter 3:6.

**The fire is just as literal as the water. Nothing is said about Israel, or about the end of an age (arion) in 2 Peter 3. It was real water that floated a real boat that destroyed the whole world (kesmos), not just one nation that did not exist at that time, ISRAEL WAS NOT DESTROYED BY THE FLOOD. It will be real fire that will destroy the world (kesmos), not just the end of an age (arion) for one nation.**

### **ACTS 17: PAUL AT ATHENS**

#### **His sermon on Mars Hill to Gentiles, not Israel**

J. Russell in “The Paroussia,” page 153 does his best to makes “world” in Acts 17:31 be only Israel, not the world, and the judgment in that passage be only the judgment on Israel in A. D. 70, not the judgment on the world at the second coming of Christ. In Acts 17 oikoumenee is translated world two times, kosmos is translated world one time, gee is translated earth two times. From the context and that Paul was preaching to Gentiles, not Jews, it is unmistakable that he is speaking of the world, not a part of the world, not of Israel. Paul was not in Israel and was not preaching to Jews.

*“And when they did not find them, they began dragging Jason and some brethren before the city authorities, shouting, ‘These men who have upset the **WORLD** (oikoumenee) have come here also” (Acts 17:6).*

*“Now while Paul was waiting for them at Athens, his spirit was being provoked within him as he was observing the city full of idols. So he was reasoning in the synagogue with the Jews and the God-fearing Gentiles, and in the market place every day with those who happened to be present. And also some of the Epicurean and Stoic philosophers were conversing with him. Some were saying, ‘What would this idle babbler wish to say?’ Others, ‘He seems to be a proclaimer of strange deities,’—because he was preaching Jesus and the resurrection. And they took him and brought him to the Areopagus, saying, ‘May we know what this new teaching is which you are proclaiming? For you*

are bringing some strange things to our ears; so we want to know what these things mean.’ (Now all the Athenians and the strangers visiting there used to spend their time in nothing other than telling or hearing something new.

So Paul stood in the midst of the Areopagus and said, ‘Men of Athens, I observe that you are very religious in all respects. For while I was passing through and examining the objects of your worship, I also found an altar with this inscription, TO AN UNKNOWN GOD. Therefore what you worship in ignorance, this I proclaim to you. The God who made the **WORLD (kosmos)** and all things in it, since He is Lord of heaven and **EARTH (gee)**, does not dwell in temples made with hands; nor is He served by human hands, as though He needed anything, since He Himself gives to all people life and breath and all things; and He made from one man every nation of mankind to live on all the face of the **EARTH (gee)**, having determined their appointed times and the boundaries of their habitation, that they would seek God, if perhaps they might grope for Him and find Him, though He is not far from each one of us; for in Him we live and move and exist, as even some of your own poets have said, ‘For we also are His children.’ Being then the children of God, we ought not to think that the Divine Nature is like gold or silver or stone, an image formed by the art and thought of man. Therefore having overlooked the times of ignorance, God is now declaring to men that all people everywhere should repent, because He has fixed a day in which He will judge the **WORLD (oikoumenee)** in righteousness through a Man whom He has appointed, having furnished proof to all men by raising Him from the dead.’ Now when they heard of the resurrection of the dead, some began to sneer, but others said, ‘We shall hear you again concerning this.’” 17:16-32:

Oikoumenee is used in the Greek 15 times and has reference to the world all 15 times, not to one nation, not to just a part of the world. In these 15 passages “would” is not from “aion” (age) as it is many times in the King James Version.

1. “Have turned the **world** (oikoumenee) upside down” (Acts 17:6).
2. “In the which he will judge the **world** (oikoumenee)” (Acts 17:31).
3. “Whom all Asia and the **world** (oikoumenee) worships” (Acts 19:27).
4. “Among all the Jews throughout the **world** (oikoumenee)” (Acts 24:5).
5. “Shall be preached in all the **world** (oikoumenee)” (Matthew 24:14).
6. “That all the **world** (oikoumenee) should be taxed” (Luke 2:1)
7. “Unto him all the kingdoms of the **world** (oikoumenee)” (Luke 4:5).
8. “Which are coming on the **earth** (oikoumenee)” (Luke 21:26).
9. “Dearth throughout all the **world** (oikoumenee)” (Acts 11:28).
10. “There words unto the ends of the **world** (oikoumenee)” (Romans 10:18).
11. “The firstbegotten into the **world** (oikoumenee)” (Hebrews 1:6).
12. “For not unto angels did he subject the **world** (oikoumenee) to come” (Hebrews 2:5).
13. “Which shall come upon all the **world** (oikoumenee)” (Revelation 2:10).
14. “Which deceiveth the whole **world** (oikoumenee)” (Revelation 12:9).

15. *"Kings of the earth and of the whole world (oikoumene)"* (Revelation 16:14).

He was not speaking of the judgment of Israel in A. D. 70, the judgment of Israel was not in a day; there was no resurrection of the dead and changing the bodies of the living to spiritual bodies; the "world" was not judged in A. D. 70.

### NO PLACE FOR A RESURRECTION OF THE UNJUST IN THE A. D. 70 TEACHING

Most who believe the A. D. 70 teaching believe the just dead of the Old Testament was resurrected in A. D. 70, and the saved who have died after that time go to Heaven at the moment of death, but I have not found where they believe any unjust were resurrected in A. D. 70, or will be resurrected from the dead for judgment; no place for the second death after the resurrection in there teaching; no place for a resurrection or judgment that comes to them after death.

- ***There shall be a resurrection both of the just and unjust*** (Acts 24:15). ***"A resurrection"*** of both, not two resurrections, not one resurrection of the saved, and later another resurrection of the lost, which according to the A. D. 70 doctrine a resurrection and judgment of the lost will never come.
- ***"He has appointed a day in which he will judge the world"*** (Acts 17:31). ***"A day"*** not only the just, and not only Israel, but in the same day Christ is going to judge the entire world. That day has not yet come.
- ***"If so be that it is a righteous thing with God to recompense affliction to them that afflict you, and to you that are afflicted rest with us, at the revelation of the Lord Jesus from Heaven with the angels of his power in flaming fire, rendering vengeance to them that know not God, and to them that obey not the gospel of our Lord Jesus who shall suffer punishment, even eternal destruction from the face of the Lord and from the glory of his might, when He shall come to be glorified in His saints, and marveled at in all them that believe (because our testimony unto you was believed) in that day"*** (2 Thessalonians 1:6-10).
- ***"He that rejects me, and receives not my sayings, has one that judges him: the word that I speak, the same shall judge him in the last day"*** (John 12:48).
- ***"Do not marvel at this; for the hour is coming, in which all who are in the tombs shall hear His voice and shall come forth; they that have done good, unto the resurrection of life; and they that have done evil, unto the resurrection of judgment"*** (John 5:28-29). The judgment is clearly said to take place after the resurrection, not at death.
- ***"I solemnly charge you in the presence of God and Christ Jesus, who is to judge the living and the dead"*** (2 Timothy 4:1).
- ***"Who shall give account to him that is ready to judge the living and the dead"*** (1 Peter 4:5). The dead had not been judged, but were still to be judged (future tense); they were not already judged at the moment of death and translated from this world to Heaven or Hell.
- ***"For we shall all stand before the judgment-seat of God"*** (Romans 14:10).
- ***"For we must all be made manifest before the judgment-seat of Christ; that each one may receive the things done in the body, according to what he had done, whether it be good or bad"*** (2 Corinthians 5:10). The Corinthians that had fallen asleep in Christ (1 Corinthians 15:20), both the just, and the unjust must be resurrected to stand before the judgment seat. That there was such a resurrection and judgment in A. D. 70 is pure fiction; there is nothing about it in the Bible, nothing in Josephus or any history we have of that time.
- ***"Every idle word that men shall speak, they shall give account thereof in the day of Judgment"*** (Matthew 12:36).
- ***"He that rejects me and receives not my words has one that judges him. The word that I have spoken, the same shall judge him in the last day"*** (John 12:48).

- "God now commands all men everywhere to repent because he has **appointed a day** in the which **He will judge the world** by righteousness by that man whom he has ordained, whereof he has given assurance unto all men in that he has raised him from the dead" (Acts 17:30-31).
- "For if we go on sinning willfully after receiving the knowledge of the truth, there no longer remains a sacrifice for sins, but a terrifying expectation of judgment and **the fury of a fire which will consume the adversaries**. Anyone who has set aside the Law of Moses dies without mercy on the testimony of two or three witnesses. How much severer punishment do you think he will deserve who has trampled under foot the Son of God, and has regarded as unclean the blood of the covenant by which he was sanctified, and has insulted the Spirit of grace? For we know Him who said, '**vengeance is mine, I will repay**' and again, '**the Lord will judge His people.**' It is a terrifying thing to fall into the hands of the living God" (Hebrews 10:26-31).

### **THE RESURRECTION ON THE LAST DAY THE DAY OF THE LORD**

All this in one day, the day Christ comes, the day of the Lord.

1. The second coming of Christ (2 Peter 3:10).
2. The resurrection and judgment of the righteous (Acts 24:15; John 5:28-29; 6:40-41).
3. The resurrection and judgment of the wicked (John 12:48).
4. The final judgment (Acts 17:31; 2 Thessalonians 1:6-10).
5. The total destruction of the lost (2 Peter 2:12; 3:7).
6. The second death (Revelation 2:11).
7. Death will be abolished (1 Corinthians 15:24-16).
8. The saved forever with the Lord (1 Thessalonians 4:14-17).
9. The kingdom will be delivered up to God (1 Corinthians 15:24-26).
10. Christ will bring the lawless one to an end by the appearance of His coming (2 Thessalonians 2:1-9).
11. "Wrath in the day of wrath and revelation of the righteous judgment of God" (2 Thessalonians 1:7-10).
12. The total destruction of the earth and the heavens that were made from nothing, and that will return to nothing (2 Peter 3:7-11).

#### (1) ON THE DAY OF THE LORD

#### **THE SECOND COMING OF CHRIST**

*"But the day of the Lord will come as a thief"* (2 Peter 3:10). No one knows when the *"day of the Lord"* will come, but when it comes, **everyone** on earth, living or dead, will know it. Coming *"as a thief"* shows the unexpectedness of His coming; no one knows what day or year. No one will be resurrected before the day of the Lord comes, all will be resurrected when it comes.

#### (2) ON THE DAY OF THE LORD

#### **THE RESURRECTION AND JUDGMENT OF THE RIGHTEOUS IN THE LAST DAY**

*"There shall be a resurrection both of the just and unjust"* (Acts 24:15). Both the righteous and the wicked will be raised and judged at the same time on the same day, not a thousand years apart. **Most, if not all, who believes Christ came in A. D. 70 do not believe there will ever be a resurrection of the "unjust."**

*"Marvel not at this; for the hour comes in which all that are in the tombs shall hear his voice, and shall come forth; they that have done good unto the resurrection of life; and they that have done evil unto the resurrection of judgment"* (John 5:28-29). All will be raised in the same *"hour."* Not the saved raised, and then the lost resurrected in another resurrection a thousand years later, and not many resurrections at the moment of death or each person. The resurrection does **not** take place at death; there is a day appointed when all the dead will rise (John 5:28-29).

*"And this is the will of him that sent me, that of all that which he has given me I should lose nothing, but should raise it up at the last day. For this is the will of my Father, that everyone that beholds the Son, and believes on him, should have eternal life; and I will raise him up **at the last day**" (John 6:40-41). Not a thousand years before the last day.*

*"We all shall not sleep, but we shall all be changed, in a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump: for the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed" (1 Corinthians 15:51-52).*

1. All will be raised—on the same day in the same moment.
2. All will be changed—on the same day in the same moment.
3. All at the last trump—on the same day in the same moment.

### (3) ON THE DAY OF THE LORD

#### THE JUDGMENT

#### OF THE WICKED IN THE LAST DAY

*"He that rejects me, and receives not my sayings, has one that judges him: the word that I speak, the same shall judge him **in the last day**" (John 12:48). There will be a judgment day after this life for those that "receives not my saying."*

Dr Bert Thompson, Pd. D. on page 42 of "The Origin, Nature, and Destiny of the Soul" falsely implies that those that do not believe in Hell believe that the first death is the end of the lost. This may possible be true of a few, but I have read from many that believe in "annihilation" and do now know even one that believes the first death is the end of the lost. *"The hour comes, in which **all** that are in the tombs shall hear his voice, and shall come forth; they that have done good, unto the resurrection of life; and they that have done evil, unto the resurrection of judgment"* (John 5:28-29). Does he not know there will be a second death of all the "*unbelieving*" after the judgment (Revelation 21:8)? Or did he not see that a death of unbelievers after the "*resurrection of judgment*" would make eternal life in Hell not possible? But what is he trying to prove, if the sinner is forever dead when his body died, or if he is resurrected, judged, and dies the second death, it would still be true that "*the wages of sin is death*" (Romans 6:23), and for there to be a Hell as he is teaching he must change "*the wages of sin is death*" to "*the wages of sin is eternal life.*" According to him there cannot be any kind of death for anyone before or after the resurrection and judgment, just eternal life in Hell, or eternal life in Heaven. He takes death out of the Bible, and makes the second death not be a punishment or a death.

### (4) ON THE DAY OF THE LORD

#### THE FINAL JUDGMENT

Millennialists must divide the judgment into two parts. If it is shown that the judgment of both those in Christ and those who are not in Christ is one judgment of both at the same time on the same day, not separated by a thousand years, it makes their view not be possible. In the passages above the judgment, it is not a broken judgment with the two parts a thousand years apart.

*"He has appointed **a day** in which he will judge the world"* (Acts 17:31). From the time of Adam's sin evil has existed in the world but God "*has appointed a day in which he will judge the world,*" all will stand before Him to be judged. "*If so be that it is a righteous thing with God to recompense affliction to them that afflict you, and to you that are afflicted rest with us, **at the revelation of the Lord Jesus from Heaven** with the angels of his power in flaming fire, rendering vengeance to them that know not God,*

***and to them that obey not the gospel of our Lord Jesus who shall suffer punishment, even eternal destruction from the face of the Lord and from the glory of his might, when He shall come to be glorified in His saints, and marveled at in all them that believe (because our testimony unto you was believed) in that day"*** (2 Thessalonians 1:5-10).

This passage tells:

- **What** is to be done to both.
  - Them that know not God *"Shall suffer punishment, even eternal destruction."*
  - His saints: *"Counted worthy of the kingdom of God"* Verse 5.
- **When** it is to be done to both.
  - *"At the revelation of the Lord Jesus from Heaven...when He shall come to be glorified in His saints...in that day"*

There is no way this passage can be broken apart and made to be speaking of two things that will be a thousand years apart. It is speaking of what will happen to both believers and nonbelievers *"in that day,"* not a thousand years apart. If all the Bible is to be taken literally as the Millennialists say it is, could any passage say any clearer than this one that the resurrection and judgment are simultaneously on the same day?

*"Do not marvel at this; for the hour is coming, in which all who are in the tombs shall hear His voice and shall come forth; they that have done good, unto the resurrection of life; and they that have done evil, unto the resurrection of judgment"* (John 5:28-29).

*"But after your hardness and unrepentant heart treasures up for yourself wrath in the day of wrath and revelation of the righteous judgment of God; who will render to every man according to his works: to them that by patience in well-doing seek for glory and honor and incorruption, eternal life: but unto them that are factious, and obey not the truth, but obey unrighteousness, shall be wrath and indignation, tribulation and anguish, upon every soul of man that works evil"* (Romans 2:5-6). This will be *"in the day when God shall judge the secrets of men, according to my gospel, by Jesus Christ"* (Romans 2:16).

*"For we must all be made manifest before the judgment-seat of Christ; that each one may receive the things done in the body, according to what he had done, whether it be good or bad"* (2 Corinthians 5:10). The Premillennialists timetable has the judgment a thousand years after the day of the Lord. Also Matthew 25:46; Hebrews 10:27; Romans 14:10; 2:5-16; 1 Thessalonians 5:2-3; 2 Peter 2:12; 3:7-11; 2:10; Revelation 2:11; 21:8.

If there were a judgment at death of each person it would make a second judgment on the day of the Lord of the person that had already been judged useless. If, as many teach, a sinner is judged at death, and he or she is found guilty and sent into an everlasting Hell from which he or she can never come out of, will the judgment be repeated a second time and the same sinner found guilty of the same sins a second time and be sent a second time into an everlasting Hell even when, as we are told, he or she were already in Hell from which no one will ever come out of; would a second judgment of a person already in Hell make Hell any hotter or more eternal?

The WHEN:

- At the last trump (1 Corinthians 15:51-55).
- When what is mortal is swallowed up of life (2 Corinthians 5:1-5).
- When the Lord shall descend from Heaven (1 Thessalonians 4:16-17).
- At the coming of the Lord (1 Thessalonians 2:1).

- On that day (2 Timothy 4:7-8).

(5) ON THE DAY OF THE LORD

**THE TOTAL DESTRUCTION OF THE LOST (2 Peter 2:12; 3:7)**

*"For yourselves know perfectly **that the day of the lord** so comes as a thief in the night. When they are saying, peace and safety, then sudden destruction comes upon them...But you, brethren, are not in darkness, that **that day** should overtake you as a thief; for you are all sons of light" (1 Thessalonians 5:2-3, See 2 Peter 3:10). Both "the day of the lord," and the "sudden destruction" are on the same day.*

*"At the revelation of the Lord Jesus from heaven with the angels of his power in flaming fire, rendering vengeance to them that know not God and to them that obey not the gospel of our Lord Jesus; who shall suffer punishment, even **eternal destruction** from the face of the Lord and from the glory of his might, **when he shall come** to be glorified in the saints" (2 Thessalonians 1:7-10). There is no thousand-year gap between the coming of Christ and the destruction of the wicked. Both are "in the day of the Lord."*

*"**But when the son of man shall come in His glory, and all the angels with Him...He shall separate them one from another, as the shepherd separates the sheep from the goats...and these (the goats) shall go away into eternal punishment: but the righteous (the sheep) into eternal life" (Matthew 25:46). No thousand years between the goats and the sheep. Both are at the same time. Both are, "When the son of man shall come in His glory."** Premillennialists cannot explain away this passage and many others that do not fit with their view.*

(6) ON THE DAY OF THE LORD

**THE SECOND DEATH**

The second death is used four times only in Revelation, and is another way of saying the total destruction of the lost (See The Second Death in chapter two). Those who are buried and raised with Christ (Romans 6) in the first resurrection, *"Over these the second death has no power" (Revelation 20:6).*

**First resurrection - Second death**

*"He that over comes shall not be hurt of the second death" (Revelation 2:11, 20:6). The first resurrection is when a person is "born anew...born of the water and the Spirit" (John 3:3-5). "And you did he make **alive** when you were dead...made us **alive** together with Christ (by grace have you been saved), and **raised** us up with him" (Ephesians 2:1-6; Galatians 2:18-19; 3:1). The first resurrection is when, "We were buried therefore with him through baptism into death: that like as Christ was **raised** from the dead" (Romans 6:3-4). "**Having been buried with Him in baptism, in which you were also RAISED up with Him through faith in the working of God, who RAISED Him from the dead. When you were dead in your transgressions and the uncircumcision of your flesh, HE MADE YOU ALIVE together with Him, having forgiven us all our transgression**" (Colossians 2:12-13). It being a resurrection means it is a bring back to life from the dead, not a description of the life of a soul in the intermediate state, not a description of a living soul in Heaven, Hell, or anyplace; Revelation 20 is about a resurrection, not a translation of a living soul from Earth to Heaven or Hell.*

Homer Hailey: "There are only two alternatives, the crown of life—eternal life—or the second death" page 128, Revelation, Baker Book House.

**The all that "overcomes shall not be hurt of the second death," is all that are that have been saved, and all that will be saved and remains faithful, not just some of the**

**saved in a literal 1,000 years.** The second death will be for all that does not *"have part in the first resurrection"* (buried in baptism and raised up with Christ) (Revelation 20:6; 20:15; 21:8).

Death and hades, and any not found written in the book of life are cast into the Lake of Fire; which is the second death (Revelation 20:14-15).

#### **Lake of Fire, which is the second death**

Those that overcome shall inherit and be God's children. For all other, *"Their part shall be in the lake that burns with fire and brimstone; which is the second death"* (Revelation 21:8).

If, as some teach, the first resurrection is the resurrection is a soul waking up in hades, Heaven or Hell, then the first resurrection **would be everyone, saved and lost**, and it would take place at death. They believe both the good and bad wake up in hades immediately after death; therefore, according to what they believe, all, both the saved and the lost would *"have part in the first resurrection,"* even all that do not believe in Christ would have *"have part in the first resurrection."*

**FIRST DEATH** is the end of life. All will die. *"For since by man came death, by man came also the resurrection of the dead. For as in Adam all die, so also in Christ shall all be made alive"* (1 Corinthians 15:21-22). *"It is appointed unto man once to die, and after this comes judgment"* (Hebrews 9:27).

**THE RESURRECTION:** *"For the hour comes in which all that are in the tombs shall hear his voice, and shall come forth"* (John 5:28-29). All that are in the tombs have died the first death; they have no life unto they hear the voice of Christ and are resurrected from the dead, they are dead, not alive before the resurrection. After the appointed death that comes to all, all will be raised from the first death for the judgment at the coming of Christ.

**SECOND DEATH:** Those who are born again, made alive by being raised with Christ through Baptism, and live faithful shall not be hurt of the second death after the judgment. Christ paid the wages of sin for them. All others will pay their own wages of sin, which is death (Romans 6:23). *"But the fearful, and unbelieving, and abominable, and murderers, and fornicators, and sorcerers, and idolaters, and all liars, their part shall be in the lake that burns with fire and brimstone; which is the second death"* (Revelation 21:8). From this death there will never be a resurrection. The results will be eternal.

The Dark Age doctrine of an endless life of torment is not a second death. It is eternal life with torment. **It bears no resemblance to a death.** To feel pain, those in Hell would have to be just as alive as those in Heaven are. Eternal death is not any kind of life.

"As there is a second higher life, so there is also a second and deeper death. And as after that life there is no more death, so **after that death there is no more life**" Afford, quoted by Homer Hailey in "Revelation." The resurrection of all at the coming of Christ makes death be a sleep from which all will awake, but there will be no resurrection from the second death; it will be permanent and everlasting death.

There is no room in *"the day of the Lord"* for one resurrection of a few when He comes, and another resurrection of most of mankind after a thousand years as is taught by many. It makes both be resurrected in *"the day of the Lord."*

*"To him that overcomes, to him will I give to eat of the tree of life...He that overcomes shall not be hurt of the second death...He that overcome shall be arrayed in white garments; and I will in no wise blot his name out of the book of life"* (Revelation 2:7-3:5).



The first resurrection is when a person is born again; the persons that are born again are the only persons that will not be hurt of the second death. The overcoming is in this lifetime, not as the Premillennialists teach that the first resurrection will be at the coming of Christ. Not all persons will eat of the tree of life, not all persons will not be hurt of the second death, not all persons will not have their names blotted out of the book of life.

Wayne Jackson in the Christian Courier said if you substitute "annihilation" for "second death" (Revelation 2:11) you would see that "the second annihilation" is an absurdity (Why did he change the first "death" to "annihilation?"). An absurdity is his changing "death" to "life," and taking out the resurrection that is between the first and second death, and calling the first death that all die "annihilation;" if the first death that all die were "annihilation" no one would be resurrected, all would have been annihilated. According to him, "Over these the second life has no power" (Revelation 20:6), and "He that over comes shall not be hurt to the second life" (Revelation 2:11). What is an absurdity is his doctrine that after the second death a "soul" will have life of any kind separated (without) God being the source of that life; that a "soul" will exist someplace without God who is the only source of life. Death is the absence of life, death is not life anyplace separated from God. In death there is no life, those that are dead are not alive. For a "soul" to be separated from God would be to for that "soul" to be no place, not to exist.

#### (7) ON THE DAY OF THE LORD DEATH WILL BE ABOLISHED

*"Then comes the end, when he shall deliver up the kingdom to God, even the father; when he shall have abolished all rule and all authority and power, for he **must reign**, till he has put all his enemies under his feet. **The last enemy that shall be abolished is death**" (1 Corinthians 15:24-16). For all that overcomes and "shall not be hurt of the second death" (Revelation 2:7), there will be no more death. Many Premillennialists believe Christ is not now reigning, and will not reign unto the thousand years when He will reign on the throne of David in Jerusalem, at which time many of them believe all the saved will be in Heaven, and they will not return to earth unto after the thousand years are over. Is there anyway that death being abolished on the day of the Lord is not a problem for them?*

#### (8) THE DAY OF THE LORD THE SAVED FOREVER WITH THE LORD

*"For if we believe that Jesus died and rose again, even so them also that are fallen asleep in Jesus will God bring with him. For this we say unto you by the word of the Lord, that we that are alive, that are left unto the coming of the Lord, shall in no wise precede them that are fallen asleep. For the Lord himself shall descend from heaven, with a shout, the voice of the archangel, and with the trump of God: and the dead in Christ shall rise first; then we that are alive, that are left, shall together with them be caught up in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the air: and so shall we ever be with the Lord" (1 Thessalonians 4:14-17).*

*"When the Lord shall be revealed from heaven...when he shall come to be glorified in his saints, and to be marveled at in all them that believed...in that day" (2 Thessalonians 1:7-10). Both the "shall be punished" and "to be marveled at in all them that believed" are "when the Lord shall be revealed from heaven...in that day," not two difference days that are a thousand years apart.*

*“And this is the will of him that sent me, that of al that which he has given me I should lose nothing, **but should raise it up at the last day.** For this is the will of my Father, that every one that beholds the Son, and believes on him, should have eternal life; and **I will raise him up at the last day...**No man can come to me, except the Father that sent me draw him: and **I will raise him up in the last day...**He that eats my flesh and drinks my blood has eternal life; and **I will raise him up at the last day**” (John 6:39-55). Being raised on the last day cannot be anything but the resurrection at the coming of Christ on the day of the Lord; all the saved will be resurrected and have life with the Lord for all the coming ages. *“I am the resurrection, and the life; he that believes on me, even if he dies, yet shall he live”* (John 11:25).*

#### (9) ON THE DAY OF THE LORD

##### **THE KINGDOM WILL BE DELIVERED UP TO GOD**

*“Christ the first fruits, after that those who are Christ's **at His coming, then comes the end, when He delivers up the kingdom to the God and father,** when he has abolished all rule and all authority and power. For **He must reign until He has put all His enemies under His feet. The last enemy that will be abolished is death**” (1 Corinthians 15:24-26).*

1. The Kingdom has been already been established, and it will be delivered up to God in the day of the Lord.
  - Not the Kingdom will be established on earth after the day of the Lord.
2. We will have a *“spiritual body”* in Heaven with Christ.
  - Not we will have an earthly body on earth, and Christ will also have an earthly body and rule the earth from Jerusalem for eternally?

#### (10) ON THE DAY OF THE LORD

##### **CHRIST WILL BRING THE LAWLESS ONE TO AN END BY THE APPEARANCE OF HIS COMING**

*“Now we beseech you, brethren, touching the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ...as that the day of the Lord is just at hand...for it will not be, except the falling away come first, and the man of lawlessness be revealed, the son of destruction...And then shall be revealed the lawless one, whom the Lord Jesus shall slay with the breath of his mouth, and bring to nothing by the manifestation of his coming; even he, whose coming is according to the working of Satan with all power” (2 Thessalonians 2:1-9). Who or whatever the lawless one is, he will end on the day of the Lord. Some Premillennialists believe the lawless one to be the “Antichrist.” If they were right, then **Christ will bring the antichrist to an end on the day of the Lord, on the day of his second coming, not a thousand years after the day of the Lord.** Some believe him to be the pope. If so, Christ will bring him to and end **that day.** Whatever *“the lawless one”* is, Christ will bring him or it to and end **on the day** He comes. If “the lawless one” is the “Antichrist” as many Premillennialists believe, the “Antichrist” will come to an end on the day of the second coming of Christ. **What ever or who ever the lawless one is, Christ will bring it to an end on the day of His coming. It or he will not exist for a thousand years after the coming of Christ. If there were a millennium, the lawless one could not be in it.***

#### (11) ON THE DAY OF JUDGMENT

##### **WRATH OF GOD**

A day of wrath, not seven-years or a thousand-years of wrath. *“And to you that are afflicted rest with us, **at the revelation of the Lord Jesus from Heaven with the angels of his power in flaming fire, rendering vengeance to them that know not God, and to them***

*that obey not the gospel of our Lord Jesus; who shall suffer punishment even eternal destruction from the face of the Lord and from the glory of His might, when He shall come to be glorified in His saints, and to be marveled at in all them that believe...in that day" (2 Thessalonians 1:7-10). "Eternal destruction" for the lost is "in that day," and is the same day "when he shall come to be marveled at by them that believed."*

*"Wrath in the day of wrath and revelation of the righteous judgment of God...but unto them that are factious, and obey not the truth, but obey unrighteousness, shall be wrath and indignation, tribulation and anguish, upon every soul of man that worked evil...in the day when God shall judge the secrets of man" (Romans 2:5-16 American Standard Version).*

*"For if we sin willfully after that we have received the knowledge of the truth, there remains no more a sacrifice for sins, but a certain fearful expectation of judgment, and a fierceness of fire which shall devour the adversaries. A man that has set at naught Moses law died without compassion on the word of two or three witnesses: of how much sorer punishment, think you, shall he be judged worthy, who has trodden underfoot the Son of God, and has counted the blood of the covenant wherewith he was sanctified and unholy thing, and has done despite unto the Spirit of grace? For we know him that said, vengeance belongs unto me, I will recompense, and again, The Lord shall judge his people. It is a fearful thing to fall into the hands of the living God" (Hebrews 10:26-31). "And inasmuch as it is appointed unto men once to die, and after this comes judgment" (Hebrews 9:27).*

*"But I would not have you ignorant, brethren, concerning them that fall asleep; that you sorrow not, even as the rest, who have no hope. For if we believe that Jesus died and rose again, even so them also that are fallen asleep in Jesus will God bring with him. For this we say unto you by the word of the Lord, that we that are alive, that are left unto the coming of the Lord, shall in no will precede them that are fallen asleep, For the Lord himself shall descend from heaven, and with a shout, with the voice of the archangel, and with the trump of God; and the dead in Christ shall rise first; then we that are alive, that are left, shall together with them be caught up in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the air; and so shall we ever be with the Lord. Wherefore comfort one another with these words. But concerning the times and the seasons, brethren, you have no need that anything be written unto you. For yourselves know perfectly that **the day of the Lord** so comes as a thief in the night. When they are saying, Peace and safety, then sudden destruction comes open them, as travail upon a woman with child: and they shall in no wise escape. But you brethren, are not in darkness, **that day** should overtake you as a thief" (1 Thessalonians 4:13-5:5). **In this passage the day of the Lord is:***

1. The day of the Lord's coming.
2. The day the living saints will be caught up to meet the coming Lord in the air.
3. The day of the resurrection of those that are fallen asleep.
4. The day the judgment of all take place.
5. The day of the Lord.
6. The day when "the Lord himself shall descend from Heaven."
7. That day.

*"Where is the promise of His coming...But the heavens that now are, and the earth, by the same word have been stored up for fire, being reserved against **the day of judgment and destruction of ungodly men**...But **the day of the Lord** will come as a thief: in the which the heavens shall pass away with a great noise, and the elements shall be dissolved*

*with fervent heat, and the earth and the works that are therein shall be burned up" (2 Peter 3:4-13). All on the same day, there is no thousand years (365,000 days), or no seven years after any of the above. They are all on "that day." "Inasmuch as he has appointed a day in which he will judge the world in righteousness by the man whom he has ordained" (Acts 17:31). Those who believe and teach Premillennial doctrines must deny the clear teaching on the Bible on the day of the Lord.*

*(12) ON THE DAY OF THE LORD*

***The total destruction of the earth and the heavens***

***Which were made from nothing and will return to nothing.***

*"Heaven and earth shall pass away, but my words shall not pass away" (Matthew 24:35; Psalm 102:25-27). "By which means the world that then was, being overflowed with water, perished, but **the day of the Lord** will come as a thief: in which the heavens that now are, and the earth, by the same word have been stored up for fire, being reserved against the day of judgment and destruction of ungodly men...But **the day of the Lord** will come as a thief; in the which the heavens shall pass away with a great noise, and the elements shall be dissolved with fervent heat (The elements are all the things of which the earth is made, the air, the water, etc. These shall be dissolved, burned up), and the earth and works that are therein shall be burned up. Seeing that these things are thus all to be dissolved" (2 Peter 3:7-11).*

**PART THREE**

**THE SYMBOLIC PICTURES OF REVELATION**

**The Interpretation Of Figurative Language**

**Metaphors And Symbolical Passage**

**The symbolical pictures of Revelation versus a literal interpretation.** All the literal passages in the Bible, which use words like death, die, destruction, life, it is insisted that only one word be interpreted figuratively in these passages, not the whole passage, until they come to a book that is figurative, then it is insisted that the figurative be interpreted as being literal. It is a hopeless cause that requires such poor handing of God's word.

**THE FIFTH SEAL - SOULS UNDER AN ALTAR**

**A symbolical picture (Revelation 6:9):** To understand this scripture we must keep it in the context. John was seeing a vision of what was to come to pass after the time he was writing (Revelation 4:1). When we read the symbolism of Revelation, we must remember that the figure symbolizes something that is a word picture, and they are not to be taken literally. We must look for what is symbolized and not make the symbols into something real or literal. The red horse of Revelation 6:3 is not a literal or real red horse. John did not see a literal or real vision of what Heaven is actually like when he saw a view of horses in Heaven or souls under an altar. None of the symbols can be taken literally. **The fifth seal is figurative just as the other seals were. Souls are not literally now living under an altar in Heaven. That the symbolic souls under an altar must be changed into literal unhappy souls that are under a literal altar in Heaven, and they are literally crying out for revenge shows the weakness of this belief.** Even those who believe souls go to their eternal abode in Heaven at death do not believe souls are now living in Heaven in a prison under an altar crying out for revenge, this is definitely not the Heaven that is preached at funerals with the dead loved one smiling down at us, but they are desperate for any passage to prove we now have an immortal soul that goes to Heaven

or Hell at death that they make it literal, even if the souls must be living under an altar, even if it puts a literal altar in Heaven.

Souls under the altar crying out in Revelation 6:9 is similar to Abel's blood that "*cries unto me from the ground*" (Genesis 4:10). Both are figurative and not literal. The fifth seal is only one of six seals in this vision, and cannot be made literal while the others are figurative. Is the 5th seal literal, but the 6th one figurative? Read all six. The 5th seal is taken out of context. Souls under an altar are no more literal than white, red, black, and pale horses running around in Heaven are. Like the horses, they are part of a symbolic picture. But when you take a look at the seven seals, they are all of things that are on this earth, not things that are in Heaven. **In the symbolic picture(s), things of this earth are seen in Heaven that are not literally there.** There are not literally horses in Heaven. Souls under the altar is an allusion to the Jewish altar on which their sacrifices was offered, not to a real altar in Heaven. If this symbolism were made literal, not even those who believe we have a deathless something in us that lives after the death of the person believes what this passage would say, that an immortal immaterial something that was in a person now lives under an altar that is in Heaven.

Homer Hailey, "That the blood of the sacrifices was poured out at 'the base' of the altar (Lev 4:7, 18, 30 et al.). Therefore, when the blood was poured out, it was the life that was being offered. The 'souls' (psuchas), which John saw beneath the altar, was the lives of those who had been sacrificed for Christ." "Revelation, An Introduction and Commentary," Baker Book House, page 194, Hailey was dean of Bible at Florida College.

The life is in the blood, which was under the altar. Psukee is translated "life" about as much as it is "soul." Lives would be a better translation of psukee than "souls?" The blood of the sacrifice was poured at the base of an altar. The life was in the blood (Genesis 9:4, Deuteronomy 12:23). Just as the blood of Abel cried out from the ground for justice (Genesis 4:10), the blood of these who were sacrificed for Christ cries out for justice; it will come at the judgment. This symbol picture is taken from something on this earth before the judgment that we can know about, not a literal picture of something that is actuality in Heaven. Can anyone believe John literally saw those living under the altar on which they were killed, and that this altar where they were killed has been moved from earth and is now in Heaven?

The Protestant version of Hell is that the souls that had been in the lost are now in Hell being tormented by God with more torment than anything we can know, but it has the souls that had been in the saved that Protestants teach are now in Heaven and are now under an altar that has been moved from this earth to Heaven, and the souls that had been in a persons on earth are now in Heaven and are now wanting more torment on other souls they believe are now being tormented in Hell by God. What would you think of some you now know that were seeing many being tormented by some one, if they were asking to see more torment? To make this passage literal to prove torment in Hell would make the souls in Heaven be more heartless than any living person, and would make these souls be completely without any love. They would be seeing the agony and hearing the crying of unceasing anguish of other souls and asking for more.

### **SYMBOLIC PICTURES**

**A literal altar in Heaven?** There cannot be literal souls on a symbolic altar. If the souls are literal, then the altar must also be literal; when one part of the vision is made literal, there is nowhere to stop without making the whole vision literal. What sacrifice is made on this literal altar in Heaven? If the altar were literal, then there would be literal

death in Heaven, for to have a literal sacrifice on the literal altar there must be a literal death of what is sacrificed. What would be the reason for the sacrifice? Not for sin, for there is none in Heaven. Who is making the sacrifice? Do angels have a reason to make a sacrifice? Are those in Heaven confined to the area under the altar? See Genesis 4:10 and Hebrews 12:24. This altar in Heaven is no more literal than: (1) Jesus would have a literal sword coming out of His mouth. (2) A church would be a literal lamp stand. (3) False religion would be a literal harlot riding a beast.

- Do you believe the beast in Revelation 13 is an actual giant sea monster that has seven heads?
- Do you believe the lamb that was slain for our sins was really a sheep?
- Do you believe the dragon in Revelation 13 was a prehistoric flying creature?
  - Of course not, like the altar in Heaven, they are symbolic pictures, not real things in Heaven.

Revelation 6:9; 14:9-11 are symbolic pictures of events that happen in time just as the other symbolic pictures around them are of events that happen in time. To put an altar for sacrifice, or smoke from burning flesh in Heaven is absurd. Just as absurd as making Revelation 12:1, "*A woman arrayed with the sun, and the moon under her feet, and upon her head a crown of twelve stars*" into a literal woman would be. Her head would need to be much larger than the sun to hold a crown with twelve suns in it. They are symbolic pictures; they are not literal or real events, not at the judgment or after it. The end of time is not described unto near the end of the book (see Hailey and Wallace below). To prove Hell, the symbolic pictures of these in time judgments (judgments that take place on the earth before the Judgment Day) are taken out of context, and are moved unto after the end of the earth after the Judgment Day, and they are placed in Hell even when there is no revelation that Hell exists. Those who believe in Hell think these symbolic pictures of in time judgments in Revelations are one of their strongest proofs of Hell. Peterson said, "The book of Revelation paints some of the most graphic pictures of hell found in the Bible" page 93. He takes the visions out of context and makes them be literal by making all the judgment pictures in the book be torment in Hell after the Judgment Day is over. He ends up with such absurd things as Heaven being always full of smoke from the burning bodies of those in Hell. **Although it is agreed by most that the symbolic pictures of Revelation can prove no doctrine, yet "*the smoke of their torment*" is constantly quoted as proof of endless torment (material smoke from an immaterial soul!). The fact that believers in Hell can prove their Hell only by using symbolic passages, metaphors, and parables; and must use these to set aside plain passages that says the wages of sin is death, the lost die, perish, are destroyed shows how utterly groundless their belief in Hell is. The clear statements are the truth, not the misused symbolic pictures.** The Bible does not say yes and no to the same thing. It does not prove both the affirmative and negative. A symbolic picture does not prove the opposite of a clear statement. A symbolic picture of smoke in Heaven does not change "*the wages of sin is death*" to be "*the wages of sin is eternal life for an immaterial soul burning in torment*" with the smoke of their burning going into Heaven for all eternity.

Like most, if not all the symbolic pictures in Revelation, this language is taken from the Old Testament, and it is speaking of judgments on this earth, not in Hell. On the judgment of Edom in Isaiah 34:5-17 it is said, "*It shall not be quenched **night or day; its smoke shall go up forever,***" but after it did it work it went out and the land became a desert inhabited by jackals and other wild things. John says, "*And the smoke of their torment goes up for ever and ever; and they have no rest day and night.*" Both are

symbolic language speaking of an in time temporal punishment on this earth, not of eternal torment in Hell. If *“the smoke of their torment goes up forever and ever; and they have no rest day and night”* were literal, **the torment and smoke would not be in Hell where this passage is used to prove it to be, but both the torment and the smoke would be in Heaven, both would be “in the presence of the holy angels and in the presence of the Lamb”** (Revelation 14:10). *“Day and night”* has to do with time, not eternity; the American Standard Version says, *“Greek, ‘unto the ages of ages’”* which would put the smoke in time, and the smoke would end when time as we know it will come to an end. The smoke would be symbolic picture of something going up *“unto the ages of ages,”* is saying the smoke will be going up in time whatever it is symbolic of will end when time ends; there is no hint that smoke will go up throughout the *“ages of ages.”* *“Unto”* a given time *“the ages of ages”* is not *“ever and ever”* as it is mistranslated in the King James Version.

If this were literal, there may be a thousand or more that are lost for every one that is saved, it would make Heaven be over run with the lost that were being tormented in the present of the holy angels and Christ, and Heaven would be filled with the smoke of their torment; if it is symbolic the lost are not literally tormented in Heaven, and there is no literal smoke from their burning in Heaven. Dose anyone really believe that there will be real smoke as we know it in Heaven?

Charles Welch: “In the clause ‘they have no rest day nor night who worship’...is the present participle denoting they have no rest day nor night while they are worshipping” The Wages of Sin, [www.truthaccordingtoscripture.com/death/Wages-of-sin-6.php](http://www.truthaccordingtoscripture.com/death/Wages-of-sin-6.php). Most, if not all that believe in Hell do not believe those in Hell will be worshipping *“the beast and his image”* or worshipping anything when that are being tormented by God with intense pain in Hell; whatever is symbolize by worshipping of the beast takes place on Earth before the Judgment Day.

*“The smoke of their torment”* is in the third of the seven bowls of the wrath of God poured out *“into the earth”* by seven angels having seven plagues. Revelation 15:1 says, *“For in them is finished (complete) the wrath of God.”* *“Because in them the wrath of God is finished”* New American Standard. According to those who believe in Hell the wrath of God will never be finished. The seven plagues are plagues that take place in time and will be finished in time, not plagues after the Judgment Day that will never be finished.

**A contradiction to their own belief.** In an attempt to find their belief in the Bible, many make the symbolic picture of souls under the altar literal, but when they do it does not say what they want it to say, not even close to what they want it to say.

**(1). Souls under the altar before the judgment does not fit with the Protestant version of Heaven, that all the saved go directly to Heaven at death.** Those who believe that as soon as a person dies the soul that was in them goes to Heaven to be at home with the Lord, but most do not believe souls in Heaven will be shut up and unhappy under an altar crying out for revenge on souls in Hell and/or some still on the earth in a person. If made literal, it does not fit with their belief. If souls go to their eternal home with Christ in Heaven at the death of the persons, why are these souls so unhappy that they cry unto God? Why are they crying to God for judgment and vengeance on souls that are in torment if the souls that were in the lost go to Hell at death and are already being tormented by God? Will souls in Heaven want more vengeance than the awful torment that is believed Hell will be for souls that may have been in their father, mother, brother, or sister?

**(2). Souls under the altar before the judgment does not fit with the after judgment version, that all the saved souls are in Abraham's bosom, and will not be in Heaven unto the Judgment Day.** Many who believe in Abraham's bosom also make this literal, but when they do they have an even greater contradiction of their belief. They have souls in Heaven before the Judgment Day. They have souls that are not in Abraham's bosom, but in prison under an altar in Heaven before the judgment. They do not believe any will be in Heaven before the Judgment, but they have some souls that are now in Heaven under an altar. They have some that are in Heaven, and some that are in Abraham's bosom simultaneously before The Judgment Day. This is inconsistent with their own teaching, particularly on Luke 16. They teach Abraham's bosom with the good and bad sides, then they use this passage and teach that souls are "*under the altar*"; therefore, souls are in two different places before the resurrection. They change from one to the other, and then back to the first, as they need to. If a symbolic passage can be made to prove something they want it to prove by making it literal; they make it literal and use it just as they do Revelation 12:7-9 and other passages in Revelation. In their attempt to prove Hell, they make two symbolic passages literal, (Luke 16:19-31; Revelation 6:9), but if they did prove what they are trying to prove with each of the two passages they would contradict each other.

A drowning man will desperately grab at anything to try to keep his head above water. They have no plain statement that teaches men have an immortal inter something in them that is not subject to death; therefore, they grab at any symbolic language or parable.

B. W. Johnson: "Some persons have turned to the Book of Revelation and hung over its sublime imagery, as if these were literal descriptions of our eternal home; but we must remember that this is a book of symbols, and that this fact will not permit a strict adherence to the letter in seeking the meaning of its glowing visions. Revelation does not aim to teach us, as some have thought, that the ceaseless employment of heaven is eternal singing or praising, but that it is an abode of rapturous joy of which song and praise are the natural expressions. Nor are we to conclude that the heavenly city is literally paved with gold and fenced in with jasper walls and pearly gates, but that it is a splendid and glorious home beyond anything that mortal eye has ever seen." "Christ and the Future Life," 1891.

Commonly accepted rules: (1) A symbolic passage cannot overturn the teaching of a passage that is not symbolic. (2) A symbolic passage cannot be used to build a doctrine on.

#### **REVELATION 14:9-11 WORSHIPERS OF THE BEAST**

*"And another, a second angel, followed, saying, fallen, fallen is Babylon the great, that has made all the nations to drink of the wine of the wrath of her fornication. And another angel, a third, followed them, saying with a great voice, If any man worshipped the beast and his image, and receives a mark on his forehead, or upon his hand, he also shall drink of the wine of the wrath of God which is prepared unmixed in the cup of his anger; and he shall be tormented with fire and brimstone in the presence of the holy angels, and in the presence of the Lamb; and the smoke of their torment doth go up to ages of ages; and they have no rest day and night, who are bowing before the beast and his image, also if any doth receive the mark of his name."* Footnote in the American Standard Version, "*Gr. unto the ages of the ages.*" This smoke goes up "*unto the ages of ages,*" not without end **in** the ages of ages. It is symbolic of something that is before the judgment, not of something that will be after the judgment. The seven angels were told,



*“Go and pour out the seven bowls of the wrath of God upon the earth”* (Revelation 16:1), not in Hell after there will be no earth.

Revelation is a book of figurative language taken from the Old Testament. It was written to people who know the Old Testament, and would be familiar with its symbolisms, but those persecuting them would not understand it. The symbolism in Revelation can be understood by the way it is used in the Old Testament.

### **WHAT OR WHO IS THE BEAST?**

To understand whom the worships of the beast are we need to know what the beast symbolizes. In Daniel, *“beast”* is used to represent a great political empire.

A. M. Ogden says worshipping Babylon is Emperor worship. "The Avenging of the Apostles and Prophets," page 295.

F. E. Wallace: "The name Babylon had come to symbolize the ultimate in corruption, and the fallen Babylon of verse 8 is figurative of the spiritual degradation of Jerusalem-'the faithful city turned harlot.'" "The Book Of Revelation," page 310.

Homer Hailey: "Judgment should motivate and bring men to repentance (Acts 17:30f). But, what judgment is in the divine mind here-the final judgment, or an immediate one? In the light of this exhortation to fear God, give Him glory, and worship Him, it is impossible to make 'the hour of his judgment' refer to the final judgment...but rather, it refers to the hour in which God is to judge Babylon." "Revelation, An Introduction and Commentary," page 307, 1979, Baker Book House.

Ralph F. Brashears said it is not describing the eternal Judgment, but a temporal retribution, figuratively. "The Revelation of the Christian Age," page 276, 1989, Vantage Press.

Most commentaries say this passage is speaks of a judgment that takes place in time before the coming of Christ, and before the Judgment Day. Whether the beast is pagan Rome or the papal power, it is only a small part of those who are not in Christ. It says nothing about all of the lost in John's time or today, and nothing about any of the lost going to Hell. It is not the judgment at the coming of Christ for all the lost will be in that judgment. Those who believe in Hell do not believe anyone will worship the beast nor receive the mark of his name after they are in Hell. If the powers of this world are cast alive into Hell and tormented forever, then the evil powers of this world will exist forever, but even those who believe in Hell do not believe evil world powers will exist forever and be tormented in Hell. Like the seven plagues that followed this was poured *“into the earth”* (Revelation 16:1), this was on this earth before the Judgment Day, not in Hell after the Judgment Day when this earth will have been destroyed.

There are four symbolisms in the passage, each one taken from the Old Testament.

1. **Those that worship the beast shall drink of wine of the wrath of God, which is prepared unmixed in the cup of His anger.** This is an Old Testament expression of destruction. See Jeremiah 25:15-27; Obadiah 16 and 18; Psalm 75:8; Job 21:20; Habakkuk 2:16; Malachi 3:2.
2. **Those that worship the beast shall be tormented with fire and brimstone in the presence of the holy angels, and in the presence of the Lamb.** See *“The Types Of The Judgment”* in chapter seven.
3. **They have no rest day and night.** This is often applied to souls in Hell being tormented forever, but it says nothing about all the lost souls in Hell but about people who are worshipping the beast (Emperor worship or pagan Rome) while they are alive on earth. All four symbolisms in this passage are speaking only about those who are worshipping the Emperor and not God, not about eternal torment in Hell. This is the third of seven angels with seven plagues upon the

earth; after the seventh plague John says, *“For in them is finished the wrath of God.”* Nothing is said about the wrath of God beyond the seven plagues, nothing about wrath that is not on this earth that will never be finished, not a word about eternal wrath in Hell.

4. **The smoke of their torment goes up forever and ever.** Even if Revelation 14:9-11 were literal, it would not be depicting torment, but the aftermath of the destruction that was completed just as the smoke of Sodom that Abraham saw depicted of the total destruction of Sodom. The ascending smoke is a sign of the destruction that has already taken place on this earth, a destruction that had been completed, it would be evidence that the fire had done its work of destruction. Those in Sodom were dead when Abraham saw their smoke ascending. When a city or a person has been turned to smoke, the destruction is past, not forever ongoing. The ascending smoke seen by Abraham became the basis of much of the language of destruction found in the Bible. The smoke is a sign of an utter, complete, and eternal destruction that is passed, not of being eternally tormented by God, Genesis 19:24-28; Isaiah 34:9; 66:24; Jeremiah 17:27; Ezekiel 20:45-50; Revelation 14:9-11; 18:9; 18:18.

**SMOKE IN HEAVEN** Revelation 14:9-11: A symbolic picture of a judgment in the time of Emperor worship or pagan Rome, It is a picture of the destruction of these powers on this earth, not of the torment of individuals in Hell after the coming of Christ, after this earth does not exist. **If this passage were literal, who would worship a beast with seven heads? How many have you ever seen with the mark of this seven headed beast on their forehead? That some would make everything about the beast be a symbolic picture unto it comes to the punishment of those with his mark on their forehead, but then change from symbolic to literal shows how desperate they are for anything that may support the doctrine of Hell.** According to this passage, the torment referred to is occurring on this earth for it is while they are worshiping (present tense) the beast and while there is *“day and night.”* **Where is Hell?** If this passage were literal and is made to be literal picture of Hell, then Hell would be on this earth, and those in it would not have died, but the smoke of the torment of those still living on the earth would go from the earth, and the smoke of those still living on this earth would fill Heaven with smoke. This passage speaks of a limited number when they are living on the earth, only those who worshiped the beast, not all the lost being tormented while that are alive on earth before the resurrection. Young's literal translation of the Bible translates this action in the present tense as "bowing" (i.e. worshiping). These people have no rest while they are still worshiping the beast, no rest while they are still on earth.

- **What is not said is that they are tormented forever.**
- **What is said is that the smoke from their torment (the aftermath of destruction) goes up forever, evidence that God has already destroyed them.**

The same symbolic language that John used is used in Isaiah 34:10 when speaking of the destruction of Edom, *“It shall not be quenched night or day; its smoke shall go up forever.”* Edom was totally and forever destroyed, not forever being tormented. Also in Ezekiel 28:1-19 when speaking of judgment on the King of Tyre, it is symbolic language of earthly judgments that is used both the Old Testament and New Testament taken from the smoke that was seen going up after the judgment and complete desolation of Sodom and Gomorrah.

N. W. Allphin said smoke symbolizes the effects or evidences of fire and the evidences of this destruction will never end. "Visions Unveiled, or The Revelation Explained," page 168, 1985, Star Bible Publications.

Leroy Edwin Froom: "Smoke has aptly been said to be the formless relic of an object that has been consumed or decomposed, by the action of fire. It is but a relic, a vestige, an emblem, a lingering trace of the passing, the drifting aftermath that remains from AN OBJECT THAT HAS BEEN DESTROYED. A perpetual smoke may, therefore, well stand for a perpetual reminder before the universe of an irreparable ruin that has taken place, a burning up that has accomplished its allotted purpose, The same inspired portrayed, it is to be ever remembered, declares that God will 'consume,' 'devour,' 'destroy,' cause to 'perish,' and 'blot out' all the wicked. That dread transaction, or operation, involves and constitutes the 'second death.' The perpetuity intended is not, therefore, of the torment, but of the death following thereafter and caused thereby." "The Conditionalist Faith of Our Father: The Conflict of the Ages Over the Nature and Destiny of Man," volume one, page 409.

In Revelation 18:21 John says there will be a time when Babylon "*shall be found no more at all.*" Revelation 19:3 said the smoke of Babylon goes up forever and ever (Greek – "*unto the ages of ages*").

"No more at all" as it is used in the Book of Revelation.

1. Babylon "*shall be found no more at all*" Revelation 18:21.
2. "*Voice of harpers...heard no more at all*" Revelation 18:22.
3. "*Craftsman...found anymore at all*" Revelation 18:22.
4. "*The voice of a mill shall be heard no more at all*" Revelation 18:22.
5. "*A lamp shall shine no more at all*" Revelation 18:23.
6. "*Voce of bridegroom...shall be heard no more at all*" Revelation 18:23.
  - Being "*found no more at all*" clearly means Babylon will not exist forever in eternal torment.
  - Babylon is fallen (Revelation 18:2),
  - Burned up with fire (Revelation 18:8),
  - The "*smoke of her burning*" was seen (Revelation 18:18).

The smoke of their torment is a symbol, just as are the wine and the cup. "*The smoke of their torment*" cannot be made literal without making the other symbols in the passage literal, which those that use it to teach eternal torment are not willing to do. **This smoke has been changed from those who worship Babylon before the judgment, and has been made to be smoke that is coming from all the unsaved who are being burn in Hell by God after the judgment, even though this judgment scene in Revelation 14:9-11 takes place on this earth before the judgment.** Smoke coming from Babylon before the judgment must be changed to smoke coming from all the souls in Hell after the judgment.

It is the evidences of this destruction, which is symbolized by smoke that will last "*unto the ages of the ages,*" Babylon – an evil world powers will come to an end, not be tormented forever. In Isaiah 34:10 the smoke from Edom will go up forever; the smoke going up is an Old Testament symbol of the destruction of a nation that the Jews reading in the time of John would understand.

- The kings of the earth that committed fornication with Babylon will weep over her (Revelation 18:9). Will kings on the earth weep over a nation in Hell?
- Merchants will buy from her no more (Revelation 18:11-17).
- Shipmasters and mariners will cry and cast dust on their heads when they look upon the smoke of Babylon burning (Revelation 18:17-20). Will shipmasters be able to look on Babylon in Hell?

Adam Clarke: "Her smoke rose up. There was, and shall be, a continual evidence of God's judgments executed on this great whore or idolatrous city; nor shall it ever be restored."

Homer Hailey: "A constant reminder of the punishment for sin...Edom is not burning today, and Heaven is not literally full of smoke. It is the everlasting remembrance of God's victor over evil that is symbolized by the smoke." A Commentary On Isaiah," page 290, 1985, Baker Book House.

The *"everlasting smoke"* is that Babylon will be forever remembered with disgrace and contempt.

Some say, "O. K., if we must put the smoke of Hell in Heaven forever to have our Hell, then we will take this symbol out of context, make it literal, and fill Heaven with the odor from the burning bodies of most of mankind forever."

Smoke in Heaven in chapter 14 is a vision of the fall of beast (Emperor worship or pagan Rome) and her worshipers. In chapter 18 the kings of the earth weep and lament over Babylon (probably symbolisms for Rome that would not be understood by those persecuting them and cause more persecution) when they see the smoke of her burning. *"Babylon, the strong city! For in one hour your judgment has come"* (Revelation 18:10). And in verse 21, ***"Thus will Babylon, the great city, be thrown down with violence, and will not be found any longer."*** Then in 19:3 *"And a second time they said, 'Hallelujah!' her smoke rises up forever and ever"* ("Unto the ages of the ages" eiv touv aiwnav twv aiwnwn). It is clear that this is a vision of a judgment that takes place in time, a judgment on Babylon, it is not the judgment at the coming of Christ.

The same apocalyptic language is used in Isaiah of the judgment of Edom. ***"It shall not be quenched night or day; its smoke shall go up forever"*** (Isaiah 34:10). Edom's fire was not quenched *"night or day"* (Isaiah 34:10), but it did go out, and Edom became a place for wild creatures (Isaiah 35:11-15). *"Day and night"* means there is no let up, no break until the end. The fire of Edom did not burn in the day and go out at night, but it burned *"day and night"* until there was nothing more to burn. The outcome of the unquenchable fire that burned *"day and night"* was permanent destruction, not burning forever. *"From generation to generation it shall be desolate"* (Isaiah 34:10) not "from generation to generation it shall be burning." A person suffering from cancer will suffer "day and night" until the end. *"Day and night"* does not mean "forever." Examples where *"day and night"* were temporary, and means continued day and night as long as they existed, but have ended (Isaiah 34:10; Acts 9:24; 1 Thessalonians 2:9; 3:10). **Both Babylon and Edom are nations that are being judged, not persons being tormented, and I know of no one that believes nations will be in Hell. Yet, when this passage is made literal it proves something that even those using it do not believe.** They must change it from nations before the resurrection and judgment, to people after the resurrection and judgment, and then say they do not believe in changing the Bible.

Those who believe in Hell use 2 Thessalonians 1:9 to prove Hell is away *"from the presents of God,"* and that death is being alive but separation from God. Yet they make Revelation 14:10-11 be literal to prove Hell. In doing so, they make Hell be in Heaven *"in the presence of the holy angels and in the presence of the Lamb."*

Homer Hailey: "Angels who through the ages had watched the unfolding and revealing of God's eternal purpose and the conflict between good and evil, now see the consummation of the purpose and final consequence of evil," Revelation: An Introduction and Commentary, page 310.

Even those who believe in Hell do not believe that any will be tormented in Heaven forever, but when they make this torment be literal torment, they make it literally be in Heaven in the presence of the angels and Christ, not in Hell. **Where do they think Hell**

is? Away *"from the presence of God"* - or - *"in the presence of God."* The same people say both are speaking of Hell.

#### THE LAKE OF FIRE

The *"lake of fire"* in which the Devil is cast is used five times, all five in the Book of Revelation.

(1) LAKE OF FIRE: First time it is used - Revelation 19:20: The beast and the false prophet, two world powers are cast into the Lake of Fire, both are cast into the Lake of Fire before the judgment day. The beast, which is the great heathen world power of that day, the Roman Empire, and the false prophet, *"these two were thrown alive into the lake of fire."* Those that worshiped the beast were not thrown alive into the Lake of Fire, but they were killed with the sword, which came from the mouth of him who sat upon the horse, *"and all the birds were filled with their flesh."* How could birds eat the flesh of souls when Vine tells us that souls are, *"immaterial, invisible"* page 588? The fire was no more literal fire than the beast is a literal beast, and the birds are literal birds that eat the literal flesh of literal people. It is a symbolic picture of total destruction, the end of the beast and the false prophet (world powers). **Those who make this literal have a literal beast being burnt in a literal Lake of Fire. Only the beast and false prophet were cast into the Lake of Fire; the rest (those people who worshiped the world powers) were killed and eaten by birds, they were not cast into the Lake of Fire, not tormented by God in Hell. When this is made into a literal eternal torment to prove there is a Hell, it is not even close to the Hell that is taught today, not even close to the Hell that it is being used to prove.** When something is not taught in the Bible, no passage that is misused to prove it will prove it. They want to make only the lake be literal, but all others things in this passage, the beast, the sword, the birds, etc. must be symbolism for if they were literal the sword that kills and the birds that eat those that have been killed would not fit with today's Hell. Why do they use this passage to try to prove Hell when it is nothing like they say Hell will be? It puts a beast alive in Hell and leaves the people that they say will live forever in Hell not in the Lake of Fire (not in Hell), but they are dead and are eaten by birds, not alive and tormented in Hell. **The "Hell" that is preached today does not have a beast that is alive in it, and it definitely does not have dead people that are not in Hell being eaten by birds.**

The Lake of Fire is used only in the Book of Revelation and is a symbolic picture taken from this earth. Literal fire will not exist after the end of this age (1 Peter 3). Anything cast into a literal Lake of Fire would be totally destroyed, totally incinerated, not alive and be tormented forever. It is a symbol of total destruction, not of eternal torment, not something that will exist after the destruction of the earth. To have their Hell in this passage, they must mix symbols and literal together in the same passage, and only they can tell us what part is literal, and even then they cannot find anything that is close to the Hell that is preached today in it.

Homer Hailey: "The beast is the great heathen world power of that day, the Roman Empire," page 387. Then on page 388 he says, "These 'two were cast alive into the lake of fire that burns with brimstone,' where the harlot had already met her fate, being 'utterly burns with fire'...Because of the expression, 'cast alive,' some writers have concluded that these two are literally individuals who will appear in person before the end of time. But this does not necessarily follow; for 'being cast alive into the lake' indicates that up to the actual time when they were cast into the lake of brimstone and **were brought to final destruction** by His mighty power and judgment, these two personified forces of political and spiritual power were actively fighting against the Lamb. The

Roman Empire and emperor worship backed by the imperial power were now **brought to a final and complete end**, never to rise again" On the same page he says, "The Roman power and the paganism which it supported **are now destroyed forever. The vision of Daniel is fulfilled** (Daniel 7:11), **and in this defeat and destruction is revealed the destiny of all such powers that should ever arise to fight against God and his kingdom.** This is God's guarantee to victory to the saints who lived then and to all who would come after them, even until the end of time. 'And all the birds were filled with their flesh' completes the symbolism of verses 17-18. Not a vestige of the anti-Christian forces were left; **the destruction was complete.**" And on page 398, "The devil, man's great deceiver from the beginning, now reaches his final doom and eternal end. First, he was cast down to the earth (12:9), then into the pit of the abyss (20:3), and now into the lake of fire and brimstone, his ultimate end." When Hailey gets to Revelation 20:11 he said, "**Thus far in the book several scenes of judgment have been described, but none depicted the final judgment.**", "Revelation, An Introduction And Commentary," page 399, chapter 19, Baker Book House.

Foy E. Wallace, Jr. said the lake of fire is a figurative description of complete destruction and annihilation of all persecuting powers opposed to the church (page 434), and then of the complete destruction and annihilation of Satan, and all who are not in the book of life. "The ones who had part in it (the lake of fire) came to the same end as the persecuting beast-a figurative description of complete destruction and annihilation of all persecuting powers opposed to the church whose opposition was crushed." Wallace said, "**One of these passages cannot be considered more or less literal than the other-both were figurative expressions which signified the utter end of the persecuting authorities of heathenism against Christianity.** The phrase cast alive into a lake of fire was equivalent to burned alive, **and it symbolized complete destruction.** The signal triumph of the cause of truth represented by the burning alive of the beast and the false prophet did not symbolize the destruction to the Roman Empire, but of the persecutions waged by the emperors, which the beasts represented. **The lake of fire was not literal any more than the beast was literal. Neither was subject to literal application, both were figurative. The beast symbolized the persecuting power of the Roman Emperor: and casting him into a lake of fire signified the complete defeat of the heathen power he represented in the war against the church.**" The Book Of Revelation, page 397.

Of the final judgment in Revelation 20:14-15, Hailey says, "'He that overcomes shall not be hurt of the second death' (2:11); those that overcome had part in the first resurrection (20:6). Thus far the harlot, the beast, the false prophet, Satan, and now death and Hades, **have been brought to their end in the lake of fire...**There remains only one group to be dealt with: those not found written in the book of life...Of this second death, Alford writes, 'As there is a second higher life, so there is also a second and deeper death. And as after that life there is no more death, so after that death there is no more life.'" The Book Of Revelation, page 403.

A. M. Ogden said the lake of fire in Revelation 19:20 is symbolic of God's fire of destruction coming upon the Roman Empire and its pagan religions that were the persecutor of the church, page 354.

B. W. Johnson on Revelation 19:20: "Here the false prophet, both symbols of the same power, is cast in the lake of fire. **The symbol indicates utter destruction. What is cast into this lake is seen no more.**"

Frank Walton said it is not a literal lake of fire. It symbolizes the total defeat of heathen powers that war against the church. Florida College Lectures 1994, page 176.

Jim McGuiggan in his commentary on Revelation 19:20 said he believes the lake of fire stands for the utter defeat of the enemy.

These commentaries are some of the best, if not the best, and they all say the Lake of Fire is symbolic of destruction or death, not of eternal life in torment. If Revelation 21 is a symbolic picture of the church on earth as the bride of Christ, or if it is a symbolic

picture of the church in Heaven, in either case the Lake of Fire is symbolic, and not a real place. John clearly says in Revelation 21:8 that it is symbolic of the second death. Many who believe that immaterial souls will literally burn in Hell are forced to admit that in Revelation 19:20 the Lake of Fire is symbolic, but insist the same Lake of Fire in chapters 20 and 21 is a real literal Lake of Fire.

**"False prophet" in Hell before the judgment:** In "Hell On Trial" on page 169, Robert Peterson said the *"false prophet"* (Revelation 19:20) are thrown alive into it, and are still there a thousand years later. Then he says Revelation 20:14 speaks of all human standing before God at the Last Judgment. By making symbols literal, he changed nations (false prophets) into people and puts humans, not souls, into Hell before they are judged at the Judgment Day.

**"Devoured" not "tormented"** Even if this symbolical language were made literal, it would teach God would destroy His enemies, not torment them. *"And fire came down out of heaven, and devoured them"* Revelation 20:9, devoured some that were on the earth, as in many other passages that are used to prove torment in Hell, nothing is said about Hell or torment; the Bible language does not suit today's teaching of fire that eternally burns but never devours, fire that never consumes.

**(2) LAKE OF FIRE: Second time it is used is in Revelation 20:10. The devil is cast in with the beast and the false prophet.** Nothing of the physical realm could live in a Lake of Fire. It is a symbolic picture of destruction, not of torment. Just as any living thing of the earthly realm we know, if it were cast into a Lake of Fire it would be totally destroyed, a symbolic picture of the devil being cast into it would be a picture to us of his total destruction, a picture that we could not understand to be anything but total destruction, for if the devil were a flesh and blood being, he would be totally destroyed by a literal Lake of Fire. The devil, the beast, false prophet, death, the grave, and all that are not in the book of life will be totally destroyed. After the resurrection and judgment, no one will be of the physical realm and could not be tormented by a literal Lake of Fire that is of this physical realm. A literal Lake of Fire could not torment a spiritual being, and could have no effective on Satan, or a immaterial "soul" as the word is used today. The devil that is a being not of the earthly realm, a being of the spiritual realm, is cast to the Lake of Fire along with two earthly things, the beast, and the false prophet. It is a symbolic picture of their destruction, not a literal casting of beings of two realms, both earthly and spiritual, into a literal lake of fire, which is of this earthly realm. Things of the earthly and spiritual realms can be mixed in symbolic pictures, but not in reality. If the lake of fire were of the earthly realm Satan could not be cast into it, and if it were of the spiritual realm, the beast and the false prophet could not be cast into it. In Revelation 20:15 and 21:8, John interpreted the figure or symbol he used, and said the symbolic picture of the lake of fire is in reality the second death. **The lake of fire will have the same effect on Satan that it will have on death. "And death shall be no more"** (Revelation 21:4). If it is the end of death, then it is the end of Satan. It is a symbolic picture of the end of both.

**Satan's ministers:** The ministers of Satan, like Satan, shall have an end. *"Whose end shall be according to their works"* (2 Corinthians 11:15).

**Revelation 20:10 is a symbolic picture of the end of Satan, of his being abolished (destroyed), not tormented forever. Hebrews 2:14 is a literal statement of his end. "That through death he might bring to naught (nothing) him that has the power of death,**

*that is, the devil*" (American Standard Version). God made the world and all that is in it out of nothing. It will go back to nothing. Satan also will be brought to nothing. *"So that through death he might **destroy** the one who has the power of death, that is, the devil"* (New Revised Standard Version). In Hebrews 2:14 "naught" (nothing) is translated from "katargeo," which is translated **abolished, vanish away, bring to naught, do away with, destroy, be done way, and ceased.**

- *"That through death he might **bring to naught** (katargeo) him that had the power of death, that is, the devil"* (Hebrews 2:14). *"That through death he might **destroy** (katargeo) him"* King James Version.
- Death **"shall be abolished** (katargeo)" (1 Corinthians 15:26).
- Knowledge **"shall vanish away** (katargeo)" (1 Corinthians 13:8).
- *"God **shall bring to naught** (katargeo) both it (their belly) and **them**"* (1 Corinthians 6:13).
- *"The last enemy that shall be **abolished** (katargeo) is death" **"destroyed"** (katargeo)* King James Version (1 Corinthians 15:26).
- *"The stumbling-block of the cross been **done away** (katargeo)" **"ceased"** (katargeo)* King James Version (Galatians 5:11).
- *"It (the veil) is **done away** (katargeo) in Christ"* (2 Corinthians 3:14).
- **"Having abolished** (katargeo) in his flesh the enmity, even the law of commandments" (Ephesians 2:15). The same word (katargeo) is used for
  - The end of death
  - The end of knowledge
  - The end of the belly and them (the person to whom the belly belonged)
  - The end of Satan
  - The end of Law of Moses
  - And the end of lost
    - Whatever happens to one happens to the others; they all have been or will be brought to nothing (katargeo).

**A death bruise to the head of Satan:** The serpent of Genesis 3 is not said to be Satan, but most all believe it to be Satan working through the serpent, which was *"more crafty than any beast of the field"* (Genesis 3:1). With the first lie, the devil brought death into the world and became the murderer of Adam and Eve; therefore, the murderer of all their seed (John 8:44). He sinned *"from the beginning"* (1 John 3:8). *"He (Christ) shall bruise you (Satan) on the head, and you (Satan) shall bruise him (Christ) on the heel."* See Romans 16:20.

Jamieson, Fausset, and Brown: "Thus, fatal shall be the stroke which Satan shall receive from Christ," Commentary on Genesis 3:15.

J. B. Coffman: "The terminology of this verse is such that it cannot apply to anything in heaven or upon earth except the long spiritual conflict between Christ and Satan," Commentary on Genesis 3:15.

A wound to the heel is not fatal. Satan wounded Christ by sin and death, which he is responsible for being in the world. It made the death of Christ necessary, but Christ rose from the dead and in doing so bruised the head of Satan (Hebrews 2:1). Did a serpent or any other animal have the power to speak, or was it Satan speaking through a serpent? God did speak through an animal (2 Peter 2:1). It looks as if Satan did. See 2 Corinthians 11:3. Christ said the devil, *"Is a liar, and the father of lies"* (John 8:44).

Albert Barnes on John 8:44: "He was a murderer from the beginning. That is from the beginning of the world, or the first records there are of him. This refers to the seduction of Adam and Eve. Death was denounced against sin Genesis ii.17. The devil deceived our first parents and they became



subject of death, Genesis iii. As he was the cause why death came into the world, he may be said to have been a murderer in that act, or from the beginning."

Revelation 20:7, which may be symbolic language and not intended to be taken literally says, *"And the great dragon was thrown down, the serpent of old who is called the devil and Satan, who deceives the whole world; he was thrown down to the earth, and his angels were thrown down with him."* Also see Revelation 12:9.

It is difficult to know what John meant by much of the symbolic language he used in Revelation, but even more difficult to understand if it is made to be a literal non-symbolic book, yet many use a symbolic passage as the base of their faith and make the symbolic override many clear passages.

**(3) LAKE OF FIRE: The third time it is used is in Revelation 20:14 where death and hades are cast into the lake of fire; "and there shall no longer be any death"** (Revelation 21:4). If death and hades come to an end in the lake of fire, all who are not found written in the book of life must also be come to an end. **If all who are not found written in the book of life are not annihilated, death is not abolished** (1 Corinthians 15:26). **The same thing happens to all three** (death, hades, and those that do not have their name in the book of life). **They come to an end.** *"And there shall no longer be any death"* (Revelation 21:4), it came to an end in the Lake of Fire.

Death and hades are nonliving things. They have no life, thoughts, or feelings. They can be destroyed, and can be brought to a final and complete end, but it would not be possible to torment them. They can no more be tormented than a rock, but both will come to an end. Both will be made not to exist. A literal lake of fire could not torment death; what would be the point of casting something abstract (death and hades), something that has no life into the lake of fire if it were a place of torment where there is no death? Death will be *"destroyed"* and *"shall be no more"* (1 Corinthians 15:26, Revelation 21:4), death will not exist and never come to an end, and death cannot be tormented in Hell by God (as it would be tormented if the lake of fire were a place to eternal torment). There is no way the lake of fire in this passage could be anything even remotely like the Hell that is taught today.

**Hell cast into Hell** (Revelation 20:14 King James Version). I have often heard in sermons that the souls that are in the lost will forever be tormented in the lake of fire. Most who believe in Hell teach the lake of fire is Hell, but in the King James Version Hell is cast into the lake of fire, if, as in the King James Version, one place is cast into another place, both cannot be the same place, but both Catholics and Protestants believe they are the same place. Both believe the lake of fire is Hell. Hell being cast into Hell presents an absurd problem for both the Catholic and Protestant versions of Hell. Casting Hell into Hell is another blunder made by the King James Translators trying to put Hell into the Bible; most other translations have corrected this blunder and there is nothing about "Hell" in this passage, and Hell is not in the American Standard Version or most others.

Dr. C. Campbell on Revelation 20:14 said, "If we interpret Hades, 'hell,' in the Christian sense of the word, the whole passage is rendered nonsense. Hell is represented as being cast into hell...**the phrase 'cast into the lake of fire' is a figure of utter destruction. It is simply saying 'death and hell was destroyed.'**"

**Death is also cast into the lake of fire.** (Revelation 20:14) Will the lake of fire be the end of death, but not the end of Hell? Or will death be forever tormented in the lake of fire, which many say is Hell? Death cannot be tormented; this is a symbolic picture of the

end of all three, death, hades, and the wicked? **The lake of fire will abolish death, not torment people.**

**"And Hell delivered up the dead"** Revelation 20:13, **the King James Version has Hell being emptied before the judgment**, but, most who believe in Hell do not believe that any in Hell will ever get out, *"And death and hell delivered up the dead which were in them"* Revelation 20:13 King James Version. Many believe that no one will be in Hell unto after the Judgment Day to be *"delivered up,"* but they use this passage to prove the lost will go to Hell after the Judgment, even though this passage says Hell will be emptied and cast into the lake of fire before the Judgment. **In the King James Version the judgment is after Hell has been emptied. Not only is Hell emptied before the judgment, but also (according to the King James Version) some that were in it before it was emptied will even be found written in the book of life, and some taken out of Hell are never put back into it, but are put in Heaven. ACCORDING TO THE KING JAMES VERSION, THE JUDGMENT WILL NOT TAKE PLACE UNTO AFTER ALL THAT ARE IN HELL HAVE BEEN TAKEN OUT OF HELL; THEN MOST OF THOSE THAT WERE TAKEN OUT OF HELL WILL BE PUT INTO THE LAKE OF FIRE "WHICH IS THE SECOND DEATH."** *"And the sea gave up the dead which were in it; and death and Hell deliver up the dead which were in them; and they were judged every man according to their works"* (Revelation 20:13).

According to the King James Version:

1. *"Hell delivered up the dead"* (Revelation 20:13).
2. Then *"Death and hell were cast into the lake of fire"* (Revelation 20:14).
  - But according to much of today's preaching, Hell will never give up those in it, and the like of fire is Hell!
    1. In the King James Version first Hell is emptied.
    2. Then Hell cast into the Lake of Fire and is burned up!
      - Is there anyone that believes the King James Version?

In trying to put a place of eternal torment in the Bible by mistranslating, the translators made the Bible teach something that they did not believe, and most today that believe in Hell do not believe--that all will be taken out of Hell and some put in Heaven with eternal life, all the others will die the second time. Most other translations, including the New King James Version, have corrected this blunder, but unfortunately this has done little or nothing to correct any of the many Protestant versions of Hell.

**(4 and 5) LAKE OF FIRE: Forth and fifth times it is used. Any not in the book of life will be thrown into the lake of fire (Revelation 20:15). Lake of fire is the second death (Revelation 21:8).** *"Be faithful unto death, and I will give you the crown of life...He that overcomes shall not be hurt of the second death"* (Revelation 2:10-11). *"He that overcomes shall inherit these things; and I will be his God, and he shall be my son. But for the fearful, and unbelieving, and abominable, and murderers, and fornicators, and sorcerers, and idolaters, and all liars, their part shall be in the lake that burns with fire and brimstone; which is the second death"* (Revelation 21:7-8). **Nothing can live in a lake of fire, any life would immediately and completely destroyed making it a perfect symbol for death;** fire is one of the most destructive elements that is known to science, it is a perfect symbol for death, but would be a terribly false symbol for any kind of life, **there is no life that is not completely and quickly destroyed by fire;** the lake of

fire is one of the few symbols that is interpreted for us so that we can have no excuse for not understanding it, the lake of fire *“is the second death,”* not endless life.

- It is life or death, not life or life.
- Death is the opposite of life. Eternal death is the opposite of eternal life.
- Death is not two kinds of life, a better kind of life, or a worse kind of life. If death is really life with a loss of well-being, try substituting “life” for “death,” “He that over comes shall not be hurt of the second life” (Revelation 2:11).

When the second death as used, it is a contrast to life, death is the opposite of life, not endless life in torment being tormented by God.

1. *“Faithful unto death...crown of life”* (Revelation 2:10-11).
2. *“He that has part in the first resurrection; on such the second death has no power”* (Revelation 20:6).
3. *“And if any was not found written in the book of life, he was cast into the lake of fire”* (Revelation 20:15).
4. Water of life given free to all believers, second death for all sinners (Revelation 21:6-8).
5. In Revelation 21:1-8 there is a contrast between life and death. In verses 1-7 it is life with no more death. In verse 8 it is the second death with no more life.
6. In Revelation 22:3 *“Nothing accursed will be found there any more.”* The footnote in the American Standard Version says, *“No more anything accursed.”* Those that are the cursed are not alive somewhere else, there is nowhere else, the accursed has ceased to be, they will not be found any more, they have no access to the tree of life.

#### **What is cast into the lake of fire?**

- (1) **The beast and the false prophet**, which are symbols of two world powers, two nonliving things (Revelation 19:20).
- (2) **The devil** cast in with the beast and the false prophet (Revelation 20:10).
- (3) **Death and hades**, two more nonliving things are cast into the lake of fire (Revelation 20:14).
- (4) **And all who are not in the book of life** (Revelation 20:15).
  - **Four nonliving things** that can come to an end in the lake of fire, but cannot be tormented. (1) The beast (symbol of a world power) (2) The false prophet (3) Death (4) Hades (the grave).
  - **Two living** that will come to an end in the lake of fire (1) The devil (2) Any not in the book of life. For them the wages of sin is death, not the death of the body that comes to all, but the second death.

#### **IT IS THE BOOK OF LIFE – NOT A BOOK OF REWARDS**

The book of life is not a book or rewards for an immaterial soul that was in a person, and that already have life and cannot die, a soul that can never not have life, and that cannot be dead. **The second death** is not just a loss of well being, a loss of privilege, pleasure, or a reward; the second death is death, not life with torment; death is the reverse of life, death is not life. Without having your name in the book of life there will be no hope of life without end in Heaven or any place.

#### **The book of life in the New Testament**

- Philippians 4:3: *“And the rest of my fellow workers, whose names are in the book of life.”*

- Revelation 3:5: He that overcomes will not have his name blotted out of the book of life.
- Revelation 13:8: The beast given authority over all that dwell on the earth all worship the beast that do not have their name in the book of life.
- Revelation 17:8: The beast will go into destruction, and all that dwell on the earth whose name has not been written in the book of life shall wonder.
- Revelation 20:12 and 20:15: There is to be a judgment with all the dead standing before the throne of God, the great, and the small. At this judgment any not found written in the book of life is cast into the lake of fire, which is the second death. **It is either one or the other, (1) either your name is in the book of life, (2) or it is not; if it is not then it will be the second death. It is life or death, not just a reward or a punishment for a soul that cannot be dead.** *“I will give unto him that is athirst of the fountain of the water of **life** freely. He that overcomes shall inherit these things; and I will be his God, and he shall be My son. But for the fearful, and unbelieving, and abominable, and murderers, and fornicators, and sorcerers, and idolaters, and all liars, their part shall be in the lake that burns with fire and brimstone; which is the **second death**”* (Revelation 21:6-8). **Life or death, not life in Heaven or life in Hell, not a reward to a soul that has life, or endless life with punishment to a soul that already has endless life.**
- Revelation 21:27: Nothing unclean, only those that are written in the Lamb’s book of life shall enter in the holy city.
- Luke 10:20: Jesus told His disciples, *“Rejoice that your **names are recorded in heaven.**”*
- Hebrews 12:23: *“You have come...to the general assembly and church of the first-born who are **enrolled in heaven.**”*
- Revelation 22:19: Any that adds to or takes from the words of the book of this prophecy, God shall take away his part from *the “tree of life, and out of the holy city, which are written in this book.”*

**If your name is not in the book of life, there will be no life without end, only death without end.**

### **THE THOUSAND YEARS AND THE LAKE OF FIRE**

In the New Testament many symbols are used and many of them we are told just what they are symbols of. We are given the interpretation in clear plain language. **When we are told exactly what the interpretation is in plain language, we must not change the interpretation of the symbol. The Premillennialists make a symbol (the thousand years) into a literal time. The Bible’s interpretation of the thousand-year reign cannot be accepted by them for if it were it would end the Premillennial doctrine. In the same way those who teach the lake of fire is Hell cannot accept the Bible’s interpretation of what the lake of fire is, the second death, for to them the lake of fire is an eternal life of torment in fire; therefore, the second death cannot be death. The Bible’s own interpretation of what the lake of fire is not accepted, for if it were there could be no Hell.**

#### **THE SYMBOLS - - - -THE BIBLE'S INTERPRETATION**

- (1) THE FIELD ----- IS THE WORLD not a farm, Matthew 13:38
- (2) THE GOOD SEED ---- ARE THE SONS OF THE KINGDOM not a garden, Matthew 13:38
- (3) THE TARES ----- ARE THE SONS OF THE EVIL ONE not weeds, Matthew 13:38
- (4) BOWLS OF INCENSE - ARE PRAYERS OF THE SAINTS not cereal, Revelation 5:8

- (5) THE SEVEN HEADS -- ARE SEVEN MOUNTAINS  
 (6) THE TEN HORNS ---- ARE TEN KINGS not ten trumpets, Revelation 17:12  
 (7) THE WATERS ----- ARE PEOPLES, MULTITUDES, NATIONS not seas, Revelation 17:15  
 (8) SEVEN CANDLESTICKS ARE THE SEVEN CHURCHES Revelation 1:20  
 (9) THE WOMAN ----- IS THE GREAT CITY not a female, Revelation 17:18  
 (10) FINE LINEN ----- IS RIGHTEOUS ACTS OF THE SAINTS not a tablecloth, Revelation 19:8  
 (11) THE DRAGON ----- IS THE DEVIL AND SATAN Revelation 20:2  
 (12) **1,000 YEAR REIGN- IS THE FIRST RESURRECTION** not a kingdom on earth after the second coming of Christ, not a millennial kingdom after the first resurrection, Revelation 20:6  
 (13) **LAKE OF FIRE ---- IS THE SECOND DEATH** not a deathless place of torment.

All die once, sinners will die twice; (1) they die, are resurrected, and judged, (2) then die again never to be resurrected a second time. NOT THE REVERSE—SECOND DEATH IS NOT THE LAKE OF FIRE, the second death is not eternal life in the Lake of Fire as is taught by many, Revelation 21:8.

The interpretation is **only** what it is stated to be. The thousand years is the first resurrection. The thousand years and the Lake of Fire are the two most misused symbols in this book. It is as if God knew they would be misused, and He plainly said what they are symbols of so there could be no excuses to misuse them. *“The lake that burns with fire and brimstone; which is the second death.”* The interpretation given by theology reverses the order and makes the second death be the Lake of Fire and says there is no death in the Lake of Fire. John interpretation of the “lake of fire” is that it is “the second death,” but theology must reinterpret John’s interpretation to make death be something other than death; John’s interpretation of “death” must be interpreted to be eternal life just with a lost of well-being.

- John said, *“The lake of fire is the second death.”*
- Traditionalists say, “No John you are wrong, the Lake of Fire is not a death, the second death is eternal life with a lost of well-being.”

The Bible speaks of two deaths, the first and the second, if the first death is death, but the second death is eternal life being tormented by God, then it is not death; the second death is a real death, just as real as is the first death; both the first and second death is the end of life, neither death is eternal life in another form or place; nothing is said about the lost after the second death, there will be nothing to say anything about.

- “Lake of Fire **which is** (ho estin—that is) *the second death*” (Revelation 21:8).
- “And looking up to heaven, he sighed, and said unto him, Ephphatha, **that is** (ho estin) *Be opened*” (Mark 7:34).
- “It was the Preparation, **that is** (ho estin) *the day before the Sabbath*” (Mark 15:42).
- “For his body’s sake, **which is** (ho estin—that is) *the church*” (Colossians 1:24).
- “A place called Golgotha, **that is** (ho estin) *to say, the place of a skull*” (Matthew 27:33).

The words after ho estin clarifies the words before it. Who would know what Ephphatha means if it had not been clarified by saying it means, “Be opened”?

Those in Christ are now *“kings and priests”* (Revelation 1:6). Are a *“kingdom and priests; and they reign upon the earth”* (Revelation 5:9-10). Those who are baptized into Christ have been raised with Him; they were dead and now have the life He gives and they live with Him. This is the first resurrection, and those who have a part in it will not be subject to the second death after the judgment. All others are dead in that they do not have the life Christ gives, and after the resurrection and judgment they will die the second death. The 1,000’s (plural in the Greek) of years is symbolic of an indefinite time in

which the saints will reign with Christ; the saved reigning with Christ begins after the resurrection of Christ and it will last to His second coming.

Strong lists ten Greek words that are translated **thousand** in the New Testament. Only two of them are used in Revelations.

- Strong's word 5505, "chalias" is used 22 times in the New Testament in the singular. Luke 14:31 used two times; Acts 4:4; 1 Corinthians 10:8; Revelations 5:11; 7:4; 7:5 three times; 7:6 three times; 7:7 three times; 7:8 three times; 11:13; 14:1; 14:3; 21:16. In all of the 22 times it is used **the precisely number of thousands is stated**—ten thousand (Luke 14:31), five thousand (Acts 4:4), "*thousand*" is in the singular. See Wigram Englishman's Greek Concordance of the New Testament, page 800.
- Strong's word 5507, "chiloi" which Strong says is "**plural**" and "**uncertain**" is used eleven times in the New Testament. Thousands (**an indefinite plural**) of years is a long indefinite period of time having no certain or fixed limit. "Chiloi" is used in; 2 Peter 3:8 two times, and in Revelations 11:3; 12:6; 14:20; 20:2; 20:3; 20:4; **20:5**; 20:6; 20:7. See Wigram Englishman's Greek Concordance of the New Testament, page 801.
  - Who knows why the translators changed an indefinite plural (thousands of years--a long indefinite period of time) into the singular (a thousand years--a definite period of time) as it is in most translations, the Greek is plural; (thousands of years, not singular-a thousand years) there is no way that they know the Greek well enough to translate the Bible and not know when a word is singular and when it is plural.
  - "*That with the Lord one day is as thousands (chiloi-plural) of years, and thousands (chiloi-plural) of years as one day*" (2 Peter 3:8).
  - "*They lived and reigned with Christ thousands (chiloi-plural) of years*" (Revelation 20:4).
  - "*The rest of the dead did not come to life unto the thousands (chiloi-plural) of years were completed*" (Revelation 20:5).
  - "*They will be priests of God and of Christ and will reign with Him for thousands (chiloi-plural) of years*" (Revelation 20:6). It has now been about two thousand years that the saved has reigned with Christ and who knows how many more thousands of years it may be unto Christ comes; Christ is now reigning and will reign for thousands (plural) of years.

More on the use of the singular and plural of thousand can be found under "Articles" by Ken Fortier at: <http://www.kenfortier.com/> "A Preliminary Study of the Greek Word Thousand and Thousands."

In all four times the **second death** is used, death is from "thanatos," which is used 118 times in the New Testament. In all 118 death is really death, not eternal life with torment, not alive but separated from God, not alive with only a loss of well being.

- "*You do proclaim the Lord's death (thanatos) till He comes*" (1 Corinthians 11:26).
- "*He was sick nigh unto death (thanatos)*" (Philippians 2:27).
- "*Brother shall deliver up the brother to death (thanatos)*" Matthew 10:21).
- "*Shall not taste of death (thanatos)*" (Mark 9:1).
- "*What death (thanatos) he should die*" (John 12:33; 18:32).
- "*By the death (thanatos) of his Son*" (Romans 5:10).
- "*Second death (thanatos)*" four times in Revelations 2:11; 20:6; 20:14; 21:4.

Thanatos always means death, never any kind of life, but today's theology tells us that John's interpretation of the lake of fire must be reinterpreted, and death changed to eternal life with torment, for there could not be death to a soul that cannot die; therefore, John's interpretation of the lake of fire being the second death must be reinterpreted to be the lake of fire is eternal life with torment for souls.

- Lake of fire– interpreted by John to be the second death.
- Lake of fire– reinterpreted today to be eternal life with torment.

The lake of fire is only a symbol of the real thing (the second death), but many preach and teach it as if there is a real lake of literal fire somewhere, but it is not on this earth, and this fire will last forever. There is not now or ever will be a lake of literal fire. They must turn it around and make the second death be only a metaphor of the lake of fire, and it is not a real death, for the second death cannot be a real death if a "soul" can never die. They also make the second death be only a metaphor of Gehenna (but only after Gehenna has been mistranslated into "Hell"). They do not seem to be able to make up their minds on whether the second death is a metaphor of the lake of fire, or a metaphor of Gehenna after Gehenna has been changed to "Hell."

Changes made by those who say they do not change the Bible.

- The Bible says THE LAKE OF FIRE ----- IS THE SECOND DEATH
- Today many say THE SECOND DEATH - IS THE LAKE OF FIRE
- Today many say THE LAKE OF FIRE ---- IS HELL
- Today many say THE LAKE OF FIRE ---- IS GEHENNA

**FIRE THAT CANNOT BURN UP!  
FIRE MUST BE REINTERPRETED  
TO BE SOMETHING THAT CANNOT BURN UP**

If the lost are never to be destroyed, why did God use throwing them in fire (something that to us always means the death of any living thing, something that no living thing can live in) as a symbol of deathlessness? To teach the everlasting deathless torment, theology had to make a reinterpretation of "fire" to be something that never destroys or consumes, fire had to be reinterpreted into something that will not destroy any living thing, but would forever torment it, it had to be reinterpreted into something that is the opposite of what fire really is, and dose the opposite of what fire does. God is made to use a symbolic picture to teach us that we could never understand without help, made to be unable to teach us without help from men to interpret His word to us and tell us that fire does not burn up; **something that burns up and kills any living thing must be reinterpreted to be something that never burns up and never kills, if not, it would make unconditional immortality not be possible.**

**Death will end after the judgment when death is destroyed.** The end will not come unto Christ *"shall have abolished all rule and all authority and power for he must reign till he has put all his enemies under his feet, the last enemy that shall be abolished is death"* (1 Corinthians 15:26).

- Death will be **"destroyed"** King James Version, New King James Version, New Revised Standard Version, New Century Version, and New International Version.
- Death will be **"abolished"** American Standard Version.

**BRIMSTONE AND FIRE IN NON-SYMBOLIC PASSAGES**

**The brimstone and fire of the second death.** How *"fire and brimstone"* are used in the Bible and in the Book of Revelation.

Fire and brimstone (sulfur rock) were literally rained on Sodom and Gomorrah in Genesis 19:24. **The "fire and brimstone" that destroyed Sodom was rained from Jehovah out of Heaven, not from Hell, and the destroying was persons on the earth, not souls tormented but not destroyed in Hell.** *"Then Jehovah rained upon Sodom and upon Gomorrah brimstone and fire from Jehovah out of Heaven"* (Genesis 19:24; Luke 17:29). Both cities were literally burned up, and were brought to a total end by the fire and brimstone that rained on them. Fire and brimstone are used six other times in the Old Testament (Deuteronomy 29:23; Job 18:15; Psalm 11:6; Isaiah 30:33; 34:9; Ezekiel 38:22), one time by Christ in Luke 17:29 speaking of the total destruction of Sodom. **If the destroying will be "after the same manner," then the fire would be rained from Heaven, not be in Hell, and this fire will destroy, not forever torment those on which it is rained. Most believers in Hell put both the brimstone and the fire in Hell, but in every passage in both the Old and New Testament, it is literal fire and brimstone and is always on this earth, it is never in Hell.** They must move the brimstone and fire from earth to Hell, for they have no scripture that is not symbolic that puts the fire and brimstone in Hell where they want it.

Edom's destruction Isaiah 34:9-10: *"Its smoke shall go up forever; from generation to generation it shall be desolate; none shall pass through it forever and ever."* The fire was literal fire that destroyed, not tormented without end, and it did go out, and today there is no smoke going up. After the fire went out, it became the home for pelicans, hedgehogs, owls, and ravens (Isaiah 34:11). Thorns came up in its fortified towers after the fire went out (Isaiah 34:13). The fire was not quenched, but it went out when there was nothing more for it to burn. The smoke is a symbolic picture showing that the complete destruction was forever.

**It is always a total destruction, never a forever ongoing torment.** Today's preaching of "Hell fire and brimstone" does not fit with the use of fire and brimstone in the Bible. In today's theology the destruction is changed from total destruction into a never ending torment without destruction.

#### **BRIMSTONE AND FIRE IN SYMBOLICAL PASSAGES**

Fire and brimstone are used six times in Revelation as a symbol of total destruction, which is taken from its literal use in the rest of the Bible.

- (1) Revelation 9:17: *"Out of their mouths proceeds fire and smoke and brimstone."* Out of the mouths of horses! This does not sound like the fire and brimstone we are told will be in "Hell?"
- (2) Revelation 9:18: *"The third part of men killed, by the fire and the smoke and the brimstone, which proceeded out of their mouths."* Even most who believes in Hell say this fire and brimstone coming out of the mouth of horses are a symbol of something on this earth before the end of time, something before the coming of Christ, and is not an eternal torment. Believer's in Hell does not believe that a third part of those in Hell will be killed by the fire and brimstone that comes out of the mouths of horses; they believe that a soul that is in Hell can be killed. **Fire and brimstone coming from horse's mouths** is a symbolic picture of destruction and/or death. Does anyone believe this *"fire and brimstone"* that kills is the Hell-fire that torments as preached by Jonathan Edwards? **They do not think Hell comes out of horse's mouths** and want to make only a part of the symbolic language be literal, and they get to pick what part. Most who believe in Hell



believe the first and second occurrences of "*fire and brimstone*" in Revelation is used figuratively, not literally. They only make it be used literally when they think it will prove their Hell, and fire and brimstone coming out of the mouth of horses and killing a third of them that are in Hell is not what they are trying to find.

- (3) Revelation 14:10: Brimstone used in a symbolic picture of Babylon. A part of the same symbolic picture is smoke in Heaven in Revelation 14:11. See (17) REVELATION 14:11 above. **The Bible is its own best interpreter.** Isaiah 34:10 said the smoke of Edom "*shall go up for ever and ever.*" Today, there is no smoke. It is symbolic for a punishment that has eternal consequences, and not a punishment that shall go on forever.
- (4)-(5)-(6) Revelation 19:20; 20:10; 21:8: Three times of the Lake of Fire, which burns with fire and brimstone is the second death. The symbolic use of brimstone and fire depends on its use in the non-symbolical passages for its meaning. In them, it is always a destruction that ends when the destruction is total. Many symbols in Revelations come from the Old Testament. In the Old Testament fire and brimstone always brought a literal death; in Revelations fire and brimstone are used as a symbolical picture of total destruction and death.

#### **PART FOUR**

##### **EVERLASTING OR FOREVER Of The King James Version**

Olam in the Old Testament: "Age, age-lasting, olam" Robert Young, Young's Analytical Concordance To The Bible, page 310. Olam (olamim-plural) in the Hebrew Old Testament is translated everlasting in the King James Version and others, but does not mean without end as eternal in today's English does.

Olam-singer and olamim-plural are used of:

1. A Period of times that had both a beginning and an end. Forever (olam) is used about sixty-five times in the Old Testament for things that have already passed away.
2. Periods of times that had a beginning but the end is obscure or had not yet come.
3. A Period of time that is followed by another period of time; "from olam (age) to olam (age)" and "from olam (age) to olamim (ages), which are often translated "for ever and ever," if "for ever and ever" made senses, which it doesn't, would make there be more than one eternity.

##### **AGES WITH BOTH A BEGINNING AND AN END**

**Some of the things that are "everlasting" or "forever" in the King James Version that was age lasting, not everlasting.**

1. **The Law of Moses**— "*A statute forever (olam-age)*" See Exodus 12:24; 27:21; 28:43; 29:28; 30:21; Leviticus 6:18; 6:22; 7:34; 7:36; 10:9; 10:15; 16:29; 16:31; 17:7; 23:14; 24:3; Numbers 10:8; 15:15; 18:8; 18:11; 18:23; 19:10; Deuteronomy 12:28; 13:16; 15:17; 23:3; 28:40; 29:29; Joshua 4:7; 8:28; 14:9. It lasted for an age (about 1500 years), and was replaced with a better covenant (Hebrews 8:7-14), it had a beginning and an ending; it was not "forever" with the meaning of forever in today's English. Forever in the King James Version is a bad translation of olam, for olam in the Old Testament did not have the same meaning that forever had in 1611.
2. **Jews were to possess the land "forever"** (olam-age) (Genesis 13:15).
3. **Temple rituals to continue forever** (olam-age) (2 Chronicles 2:4). Today there is no temple in Jerusalem, and no rituals in the temple that does not exist.
4. **Levites were to bear the ark forever** (olam-age) (1 Chronicles 15:2). There are no Levites to bear the Ark, and no Ark for them to bear.
5. **Sacrifices were forever** (olam-age) (Leviticus 3:17; 6:18; 7:36; 10:9-15; 16:29; 17:17; 23:14; 24:3; Numbers 10:8; 15:15; 18:8; 19:10).

6. **Circumcision was forever** (olam-age) (Genesis 17:13).
7. **David's throne was forever** (olam-age) (2 Samuel 7:12-13; 1 Kings 9:5).
8. **A slave was a slave forever** (olam-age) (Exodus 21:6; Deuteronomy 15:17) Olam (forever) lasted only to the end of his life.
9. **Jonah's "everlasting"** (olam-age) lasted only three days (Jonah 2:6).

#### **AGES THAT HAD A BEGANNING**

#### **BUT THE ENDING ARE IN THE OBSCURE FUTURE**

**The everlasting (olam) hills** (Genesis 49:26): The hills had a beginning when the earth was made, but their ending is some times in the obscure future.

**The everlasting (olam) covenant of the rainbow** (Genesis 9:11-17): Like the hills, the beginning of the rainbow covenant is known, but its ending is some times in the obscure future, probably both the hills and the rainbow ends at the end of the earth.

Neither is eternal, without beginning or ending. The "olam hills" are not the "eternal hills."

#### **FROM ONE OLAM (age) TO ANOTHER OLAM (age)**

##### **From one age to another age**

##### **Not from one eternally to another eternally**

Old Testament – "from olam to olam" (from age to age) is used twenty-one times. From one period of time to another period of time demands a separation of the two periods—ages; therefore, neither or the two olams could be without a beginning or ending. Two olams would demand that there be more than one olam, more than one age, not more than one eternity.

##### **From olam (age) to olam (age) applied to people or things**

1. *"Thou hast blotted out their (the wicked) name for ever (olam-age) and ever (olam-age)"* (Psalm 9:5).
2. *"He (the king) asked life of Thee, Thou didst give him length of days for ever (olam-age) and ever (olam-age)"* (Psalm 21:4).
3. *"The people praise thee for ever (olam-age) and ever (olam-age)"* (Psalm 45:17).
4. *"Even from everlasting (olam-age) to everlasting (olam-age), you are God"* (Psalm 90:2). "From eternity to eternity"?
5. *"All His precepts are sure. They are upheld for ever (olam-age) and ever (olam-age)"* (Psalm 111:8). From one age to another age, not from one eternity to another eternity.
6. *"Thy law continually for ever (olam-age) and ever (olam-age)"* (Psalm 119:44).
7. *"From this time forth and for ever (olam-age) and ever (olam-age)"* (Psalm 125:2; 131:3).
8. *"I will bless thy name for ever (olam-age) and ever (olam-age)"* (Psalm 145:1).
9. *"I will praise thy name for ever (olam-age) and ever (olam-age)"* (Psalm 145:2).
10. *"He has also established them (the heavens) for ever (olam-age) and ever (olam-age)"* (Psalm 148:6).
11. *"Also established them for ever (olam-age) and ever (olam-age)"* (Isaiah 30:8). *"That it may serve in the time to come as a witness forever (olam-age)"* New American Standard Version.
12. *"Then I will let you dwell in this place, in the land that I gave to your fathers forever and ever"* "from olam to olam" (Jeremiah 7:7). From a long time past to a long time to come, but not forever as the word "forever" is used today.
13. *"And dwell in the land that the Lord has given unto you and to your fathers for ever and ever"* "from olam to olam" (Jeremiah 25:5). If "forever and ever" is for eternity, then the world cannot end for they must dwell in the land for eternity, and then for another eternity. None of them could dwell in Heaven or in Hell, for they would be dwelling in the land on this earth for eternity, and after that eternity dwelling on this earth for a second eternity.
14. *"As the stars for ever (olam-age) and ever (olam-age)"* (Daniel 12:3).

## From olam (age) to olam (age) applied to God

1. "The Lord shall reign for ever (olam-age) and ever (olam-age) (Exodus 15:18).
2. "Blessed the Lord God of Israel for ever (olam-age) and ever (olam-age) (1 Chronicles 16:36).
3. "The Lord is King for ever (olam-age) and ever (olam-age)" (Psalm 10:16).
4. "God is our God for ever (olam-age) and ever (olam-age)" (Psalm 48:14).
5. "Blessed be the Lord God of Israel from everlasting (olam-age) and to everlasting (olam-age)" (Psalm 41:13).
6. "Even from everlasting (olam-age) to everlasting (olam-age) thou art God" (Psalm 90:2) "from olam to olam" - from age to age. "From everlasting to everlasting" would mean one everlasting would have to end for there to be another. Two everlasting are not possible. There cannot be a "from one eternity to another eternity."
7. "The Lord is from everlasting (olam-age) to everlasting (olam-age)" (Psalm 103:17).
8. "Blessed be the Lord God of Israel from everlasting (olam-age) to everlasting (olam-age)" (Psalm 106:48).
  - a. From "everlasting to everlasting," from "one eternity to another eternity"? How could there be from everlasting to everlasting, or from eternity to eternity? Today's concept of eternity seems not to have existed in the Old Testament; they had the concept of one age after another age after another age, but not of today's eternity.

## DAYS OF OLD

If olam means everlasting or eternal, why did the King James Version translate it old and ancient; could it be that they knew eternal, as it is used today, would have made no sense in these passages? **Days of old (olam-age) is duration (a period of time) that has already at some time in the past ended, not endless duration that will never end.**

- (1) "Remember the **days of old** (olam-age), consider the years of many generations" (Deuteronomy 32:7). One word translated into three words.
- (2) "For those nations were **of old** (olam-age) the inhabitants of the land" (1 Samuel 27:8). The same one word translated into two words.
- (3) "The **old** (olam-age) way which wicked men have trodden" (Job 22:15). The same one word translated into only one word.
- (4) "For they have been ever **of old** (olam-age)" (Psalm 25:6).
- (5) "I remembered the judgments **of old** (olam-age)" (Psalm 119:52).
- (6) "Is there anything whereof it may be said, see, this is new? It has been already **of old times** (olam-age) that was before us" (Ecclesiastes 1:10).
- (7) "I held my peace even **of old** (olam-age), and you feared me not" (Isaiah 57:11).
- (8) "And he bare them, and carried them all the **days of old** (olam-age)" (Isaiah 63:9).
- (9) "Then he remembered the **days of old** (olam-age), Moses, and his people" (Isaiah 63:11).
- (10) "The prophets that have been before me and before you **of old** (olam-age)" (Jeremiah 28:8).
- (11) "He has set me in dark places, as they that be dead **of old** (olam-age)" (Lamentations 3:6).
- (12-13) "When I shall bring you down with them that descend into the pit, with the people **of old times** (olam-age), and shall set you in the low parts of the earth, in places desolate **of old** (olam-age)" (Ezekiel 26:20).
- (14) "Let them feed in Basham and Gilead, as in the **days of old** (olam-age)" (Micah 7:10).
- (15) "Then shall the offering of Judea and Jerusalem be pleasant unto the Lord, as in the **days of old** (olam-age), and as in former years" (Malachi 3:4).
- (16) "And they have caused them to stumble in their ways from **ancient** (olam-age) paths, to walk in paths, in a way not cast up" (Jeremiah 18:15).

Olam is used repeatedly where it means an age, but it cannot mean everlasting. To go into them would take many pages. Look up "ever" in any good concordance or Wigram, pages 907-910, Old Testament. A few of them - 1 Samuel 13:13; 2 Samuel 7:13,16,25, 26, 29; 1 Kings 2:33; 2:45; 9:5; 1 Chronicles 17:12, 14, 23, 27; 22:19; 28:4, 7; 2

Chronicles 8:5; Psalm 89:4; Ezekiel 37:25. Olam is used many time for things where both the beginning and end are known; many times where the beginning is known, but the end is unknown; the beginning of God's covenant of the rainbow is known, but not it's end, probability at the end of the earth.

### **AION, AIONS, AND AIONIOS in the New Testament**

**AION** (a noun– the plural is aions) and **AIONIOS** (the adjective form of aion) in the New Testament. Like olam in the Old Testament, aion in the New Testament is also used repeatedly where it means an age, but it cannot mean everlasting. One example is Colossians 1:26.

### **PLURAL AGES—NOT PLURAL ETERNALIES**

- King James Version: *"The mystery which hath been hid from **ages** (aions) and from generations, but now is made manifest to his saints."*
- New King James Version: *"The Mystery which has been hidden from **ages** (aions) and from generations, but now has been revealed to His saints."*
- American Standard Version: *"Even the mystery which hath been hid for **ages** (aions) and generations: but now hath it been manifested to his saints."*
- New American Standard Bible: *"That is, the mystery which has been hidden from the past **ages** (aions) and generations, but has now been manifested to His saints."*
- New Revised Standard Version: *"The mystery that has been hidden throughout the **ages** (aions) and generations but has now been revealed to his saints."*
- New International Version: *"The mystery that has been kept hidden for **ages** (aions) and generations, but is now disclosed to the saints."*
- Young's Literal Translation: *"The secret that hath been hid from the **ages** (aions) and from the generations, but now was manifested to his saints."*

Why did none of the translation use *"forever"*? It was obvious to them that God had kept this mystery hidden for ages, but not for eternities.

**An aion (age) has a beginning** (1 Corinthians 2:7, 2 Timothy 1:9, Hebrews 1:2).

**An aion (age) has an end** (Matthew 24:3, 1 Corinthians 10:11, Hebrews 9:20). Forever and eternally, as they are used today, have no beginning and no end.

### **"WORLD" (Greek-aion) in the King James Version**

It had to be obvious to the translators that there are more than one aion-age, but they hid this from their reader by translating it "this world" and "the world to come." **A period of time (an age) is changed to a place (world)**. "Age, indefinite time, dispensation" Robert Young, "Young's Analytical Concordance To The Bible," page 1073.

(1) Matthew 12:32 *"Neither in this **world\*** (aion-age) nor in that which is to come." "Either in this age, or the age that is to come" New King James Version, New American Standard Version, not "neither in this eternity or that eternity which is to come;" there are not two forevers, one forever that now is, and one forever to come. It is undeniable that the King James Version has two worlds.*

1. The world that we now live in.
2. A world that will be after the world that we are now in.

Does anyone believe that will be another world between this one and the time the saved will be in the place Christ has gone to prepare for the saved in His Father's house in Heaven? Not in this world or the next world makes this passage make no sense if there is not another world after this that the saved will spend some time in before they go to the place prepared for then in the Father's house (John 14:2).

- Not in the age that then was when Christ was speaking.
- Or the age that come after that age.

Does make sense.

(2) Matthew 13:22 *"Care of this **world\*** (aion-age)." Care of this age, not "care of this forever or eternity."*

(3) Matthew 13:39 *"The harvest is the end of the **world\*** (aion-age)." "The end of the forever or the end of*

eternity"? *"The end of the age"* New King James Version, New American Standard Version. If aion had been translated "eternity" in this passage it would have put the harvest at "the end of eternity," not at "the end of the age."

(4) Matthew 13:40 *"So shall it be at the end of this world (aion-age)."* "At the end of this forever or this eternity"? *"The end of this age"* New King James Version, New American Standard Version.

(5) Matthew 24:3 *"At the end of the world\* (aion-age)."* "At the end of the forever or this eternity"? *"The end of the age"* New King James Version, New American Standard Version.

(6) Matthew 28:20 *"Unto the end of the world\*" (aion-age).* "The end of eternity"?

(7) Mark 4:19 *"The cares of this world (aion-age)."* Cares of this age, not "cares of this forever or this eternity."

(8) Mark 10:30 *"In the world\* (aion-age) to come."* "In the forever to come"?

(9) Luke 1:70 *"Since the world (aion-age) began."* Since the age began, not since the forever began.

(10) Luke 16:8 *"Children of this world\* (aion-age)."* This age, not "children of this forever."

(11) Luke 18:30 *"In the world\* (aion-age) to come."* "In the forever to come"?

(12) Luke 20:34-35 *"Children of this world\* (aion-age) marry, and are given in marriage: but they that are counted worthy to attain to that world (aion-age)"* "Children of this eternity"? In this passage aion is used both of this age and the age to come, not of this eternity and the eternity to come, not of another world to come after this world end as it is mistranslated in the King James Version.

(13) Luke 20:35 *"Worthy to obtain that world\* (aion-age)."* "That eternity"?

(14) John 9:32 *"Since the world (aion-age) begin."* "Since the age (aion-age) begin," probably the beginning of the Jewish age. "In the beginning God created the heavens and the earth" (Genesis 1:1). Beginning of what? The beginning of time. Although it seems there may be ages after the earth (Luke 18:30; Mark 10:30), and may have been ages before the earth, this is an age that had a beginning, and is not the beginning of the world, or the beginning of eternity.

(15) Acts 3:21 *"Since the world (aion-age) begin."* Also probably the beginning of the Jewish age, not "Since eternity begin."

(16) Acts 15:18 *"From the beginning of the world (aion age)."* Probably the beginning of the Jewish age, not "from the beginning of the forever."

(17) Romans 12:2 *"From the beginning of the world (aion-age)."* Also probably the beginning of the Jewish age, not "from the beginning of the eternity."

(18) 1 Corinthians 1:20 *"Where is the disputer of this world\*" (aion-age).* "Disputer of this age, not "disputer of this eternity."

(19) 1 Corinthians 2:6 *"Not of the wisdom of this world\*, (aion-age) nor of the princes of this world\* (aion-age)."* "Wisdom of this forever-princes of this eternity"?

(20) 1 Corinthians 2:7 *"Which God ordained before the worlds"* (aions-ages, plural in the Greek, singular in the King James, plural in most translations). Ordained before the eternities? God's wisdom, which had been hidden in past ages, the Law age and others, but has now been made known, was foreordained before the ages, not before the worlds plural, or before eternities plural. *"In hope of eternal life, which God...promised (Genesis 3:15) before the ages (aionios-ages)"* (Titus 1:2). *"Promised before the world began"* (King James), or promised *"before times eternal"* American Standard makes no sense, promised to whom before the world began or before times eternal? Promised to whom before Adam? If eternally has no beginning or ending, when and what promise was made before eternally began?

- *"Before the ages (aions-ages)"* New American Standard and Revised Standard Version.

(21) 1 Corinthians 2:8 *"None of the princes of this world\* (aion-age)."* Princes of this age, not "princes of this eternity."

(22) 1 Corinthians 3:18 *"Seems to be wise in this world\* (aion-age)."* "Wise in this eternity"?

(23) 1 Corinthians 8:13 *"While the world (aion-age) stands."* "While the forever stands?"

(24) 1 Corinthians 10:11 *"The ends of the world\* (aions-ages)."* "The ends of the eternities?" *"Upon whom the ends of the ages are come"* American Standard Version; both "ends" and "ages" are in the plural.

(25) 2 Corinthians 4:4 *"The God of this world (aion-age)."* "The God of this eternity"?

(26) Galatians 1:4 *"From this present evil world\* (aion-age)."* "Present evil forever?" Is this present evil

world to last for an age, or to last for an eternity?

(27) Ephesians 1:21 *"Not only in this **world** (aion-age)." "Not only in this eternity, but also in another eternity"?*

(28) Ephesians 2:2 *"According to the course of this **world** (aion-age)." The course of his age, not "course of this forever."*

(29) Ephesians 3:9 *"The beginning of the **world**\* (aion-age)." This age, not "the beginning of the eternity." Young's Literal Translation says, "And to cause all to see what is the fellowship of the secret that has been hid **from the ages** in God, who the all things did create by Jesus Christ, that there might be made known now to the principalities and authorities in the heavenly places, through the assembly, the manifold wisdom of God, according to **a purpose of the ages**, which He made in Christ Jesus our Lord."*

(30) Ephesians 3:21 *"**World** (aion) without end." The footnote in the New American Standard says, "To all generations of the age of the ages."*

(31) Ephesians 6:12 *"Of the darkness of this **world** (aion-age)." Of this age, not "of the darkness of this eternity."*

(32) 1 Timothy 6:17 *"That are rich in this **world**\* (aion-age)." Rich in this age, not "rich in this eternity."*

(33) 2 Timothy 4:10 *"Having loved this present **world** (aion-age)." Loved this present age, not "loved this present forever."*

(34) Titus 2:12 *"Godly, in this present **world**\* (aion-age)." In this present age, not "in this present eternity."*

(35) Hebrews 1:2 *"By whom also he made the **world** (aions-ages)." Made the ages—plural, not the worlds.*

(36) Hebrews 6:5 *"Powers of the **world**\* (aion-age) to come." " Powers of the age to come, not powers of the forever to come." Will there be another world (another place) to come? This is speaking of another age, another time, not another place.*

(37) Hebrews 9:26 *"Now once in the end of the **world** (aion-age)." In the end of forever, which was more than 1900 years ago? It was in the end of the age of the Law or Jewish age, which lasted from the giving of the law by Moses to the death of Christ, not the end of the world. The sacrifice of Christ was in the end of the age of the Law given through Moses, not in the end of the world.*

(38) Hebrews 11:3 *"The **worlds** (aions-ages) were framed." God made the ages. Did the King James translators think there is more than one earth? "By faith we understand that the ages (aions-ages)." were prepared by the word of God" New American Standard footnote. Plural ages were prepared by the word of God, periods of time, not plural places, or worlds.*

#### **Aionios, the adjective form of aion is translated world three times.**

(39) Romans 16:25-26 *"Kept secret since the **world**\* (aionios-age) began, but now is made manifest...is made known." Since the ages began, not kept secret for all eternity, as eternity is understood today.*

- "For long ages past" New American Standard and New International Version.
- "For long ages" New Revised Standard Version.

(40) 2 Timothy 1:9 *"Which was **given** us in Christ Jesus **before the world**\* (aionios-age) began."*

- "Before times eternal" American Standard Version, footnote "long ages ago." What times does anyone think was before eternity began?
- "Before the ages (aionios-age) began" New Revised Standard Version.
  - The promise of salvation was first given in Genesis 3:15 at the beginning of the first age on earth, the Patriarchal age, which was from Adam to Moses, before the Christian age begin age that Paul was in.

(41) Titus 1:2 *"Which God, that cannot lie, **promised before the world**\* (aionios-age) began." Given or promised to whom before the world began, there was no man before the world began, to whom before everlasting or eternity began? If eternity had no beginning, and will have no ending, how could there be a "before eternity began?" "Before the age began" not before the world or the ages began, by "the age" Paul is probably speaking of before the began of the Christian age that we are now in; Christ lived in the age of the Law, and before the Christian age He began He give the promise of the resurrection to life.*

- \*Translated "age(s)" in the New Revised Standard Version.

In the above there are:

1. **Past age(s)** (not many past worlds, or many past eternity's)
2. **The present age** (not the present world we are now in, or the present eternality)
3. **And age(s) to come** (not a world, or more than one world to come, not a past eternality, or many past eternity's)

There are not worlds past, present, and future. "World" is in the Greek is "*kosmos*" not "*aion*." *Kosmos* (world) is used about 184 times in the New Testament and is never in the plural as *aion* often is, never plural worlds. We speak of "the Stone Age," "the Iron Age." etc. **Age (aion), century, and year are all periods of time. The world is a place. How did the translators get a place-world from aion-age, which is a word that means a period of time, not a place?** The King James Version has both (1) "*world without end*" and (2) "*in the end of the world*" (Ephesians 3:21; Hebrews 9:26). Eternity, as the word is used today, has no beginning; therefore, they could not translate it forever so they change a word that means a period of time that has a beginning and an end to a place, changed to a place that had a beginning and will have an end, changed to a created place that is not eternal. Most translations used "age(s)." If *aion* means forever, what did the translators do when they came to Matthew 24:3? Did they translate it "the end of forever"? No, they could not have an end to eternity; therefore, they change *aion* to "*world*." To most reading "*world*," it means the earth that we live on, in the Greek "*world*" is from "*kosmos*," not "*aion*" or "*aionios*," it is a mistranslation that I cannot but believe the translators know it was a mistranslation, one that most other translations of the Bible have changed. Were they not being less than truthful with their readers? Just as untruthful as they were in the Old Testament where "*olam*" is also translated "*world*" in Psalm 73:12. Despite the fact that they have translated "*olam*" into "everlasting" repeatedly, they could not have the ungodly prosper for "forever." An *aion* (age) in Matthew 24:3 is not a place, not a *world*. When *aion* is translated "*world*," it is a mistranslation that makes those who do not understand Greek to understand something that is 100% different than what God did say.

#### KOSMOS MEANS WORLD, NOT AION

"The word *kosmos*, translated almost uniformly *world*, which is found one hundred and eighty-four times in the New Testament, is in some respects very different from *aion*. **Concerning the word *kosmos*, we would have it noticed, that it is never found in the plural form in the Christian Scriptures. There is but one *kosmos*, though different *aions*, found in this volume.** *Kosmos* denotes the material globe with all its elements—sometimes, the universe; and by a figure called metonymy, which substitutes the thing containing for the thing contained, the human family is often called *the world*...The phrase 'foundation of the world' occurs ten times, and always *kosmos*. **But wherever mere time or continuance is implied, it is always *aion*, and not *kosmos*.**" Alexander Campbell, "The Living Oracles," Appendix 14, 1826, Gospel Advocate Company.

"Let me say to Bible students that we must be very careful how we use the word "eternity." We have fallen into great error in our constant use of that word. There is no word in the whole Book of God corresponding with our "eternal," which, as commonly used among us, means absolutely without end. The strongest Scripture word used with reference to the existence of God, is "unto the ages of the ages," which does not literally mean eternally." G. Campbell Morgan, page 185, God's Methods with Man, 1898, Fleming H. Revel Company.

**PLURAL is changed to SINGULAR.** When the King James translators translated *aions* into "worlds" (Hebrews 1:2; see Ephesians 2:7; Colossians 1:26), they left it in the plural, but when they translated it "*forever and ever*" they changed it to the singular. They could have plural worlds, but they could not have a plurality of forever, or more

than one eternity. Their Hell must last forever (singular), not forevers (plural), and not just **unto** the age of ages.

**How could anyone know "Hell" is everlasting when not one of the four words translated "Hell" in the King James Version is used with aion or aionios. Not one of four words (sheol, hades, Gehenna, Tartarus) is said to be everlasting or age lasting.**

**Aion is used of past ages, the present age, future ages, and in the plural about two thirds of its occurrences in the Bible. Therefore, THERE IS MORE THAN ONE AGE. It follows that eternity is not an acceptable meaning of this Greek word. There cannot be past eternities, a present eternity, and future eternities, neither can there be plural eternities.** An aion (age) is a long period of time that has a beginning and an ending, but it is not an eternity that has no beginning or ending. There are more than one aions, but there can be only one eternity.

How can it be said:

- "This eternity," "that eternity," or "eternities"? There is only one eternity (Luke 16:8; 20:34-35; Romans 12:2; 1 Corinthians 1:20; 2:6-8; 3:18; 10:11; 2 Corinthians 4:4; Galatians 1:4; Ephesians 1:21; 2:2, 7; 3:9; Colossians 1:26; 2 Timothy 4:10; Hebrews 11:3).
- Before eternity" or "eternity began"? Eternity has no beginning (James. 9:32; Acts. 3:21; 1 Corinthians 2:7; Ephesians 3:9).
- "Present eternity," "eternity to come," and "end of eternity?" (Matthew 24:3; 28:20; 1 Corinthians 10:11; 2 Titus 4:10; He. 6:5; 9:26).

In the Bible there is the Patriarchal dispensation (age), and the Law of Moses dispensation (age) (Luke 1:70; Romans 12:2; Colossians 1:26), and the Christian dispensation (age). Age (aion) is applied to the Jewish dispensation (age) that has ended. See Hebrews 9:26; 1 Corinthians 10:11; Matthew 24:3; Luke 1:70. This age will end at the coming of Christ. Eternal life will be given in the age to come (Mark 10:30; Luke 18:30; 20:35; Ephesians 1:21; 2:7; Hebrews 6:5).

**Aion and aionios:** When both the singular and plural are used together in one passage there has to be more than one aion (age). A plural eternity or forever is impossible; aionios refer to periods of time (ages). Unless an age means all of time, there has to be another part(s) of time (another age or ages); an age is not forever, not eternity as the English word "eternity" is used today.

The word "eternal" was first put into the Bible when the Latin Vulgate Version of Jerome was translated into English; **there is no word in the Hebrew or Greek Bible that corresponds to the English word "eternal"**; Jerome translation give aion two difference meaning by translating aion into two different Latin words. If the first English translation had come directly from the Hebrew and Greek, it is unlikely that "eternal" would have ever been in it. Jerome was inconsistent in the way he put eternal into his translation by translating aion into eternal twenty-seven times out of about one hundred twenty-five times that aion is used, nevertheless, his inconsistencies were translated into English, and most later translations copied them.

#### **"TO or UNTO the ages of (the) ages"**

(1) *"The smoke of their torment doth go up **UNTO the ages of ages**"* (Revelation 14:11). If, as some believe, the ages of the ages is eternity after the judgment, then the smoke of their torment, the torment of the devil last **ONLY UNTO the end of time**, but nothing is said about any smoke or torment after the judgment.

(2) *"Her smoke doth come up **UNTO the ages of (the) ages**"* (Revelation 19:3).



(3) “*They* (the devil, the beast and the false prophet) *shall be tormented day and night UNTO the ages of (the) ages*” (20:10). “*Day and night*” belongs to time, not eternity (Revelation 22:5). We do not know what is going on in the mind of Satan, but it is only reasonable to believe that he knows his time will come to an end. Would this not be torment to him? “*The Lord knows how to...keep the unrighteous under punishment unto the Day of Judgment*” (1 Peter 2:9). **Unto** the ages of ages could only mean the time that is before the ages to come, **before any one will be in Heaven, not forever, not during or throughout eternity.** This torment, whether it is literal or figurative torment, **is only said to be “unto the ages of ages,” which is before many believe anyone will be in Hell. It ends at the time they say Hell will begin (“unto the ages of ages”). It says nothing about torment, neither literal torment or figurative torment in the “ages of ages.”** When the Greek says, “*unto the ages of ages,*” it is not “forever and ever.” This is just another attempt of the translators to impose the Greek philosophy of innate immortality on God’s word, and to put an eternal place of torment in the Bible where there is not one.

The superlative degree:

- The song of songs—the best of all songs.
- The book of books—the best of all books.
- The party of parties—the best of all parties.
- The lie of lies—the biggest of all lies.
- The king of kings and lord of lords (1 Timothy 6:15)—the greatest of all kings and lords.
- The ages of ages—does this mean the best age of all ages?
  - “Ages (plural—more than one age) of the ages” (plural—also more than one age).

**The ages to come: “UNTO the ages of (the) ages”** (Revelation 1:6; 2 Timothy 4:18; etc.) **Does eternity have ages?** “*Who shall not receive manifold more in this time, and in the world to come* (aion—the **age** to come) **eternal** (aionios, the adjective form of aion) **life**” (Luke 18:30; Mark 10:30). Life that will have no end will be given at the judgment after the end of the Christian Age (Romans 6:22; Galatians 6:8; Titus 1:2). Christ was speaking of life after the judgment when He said, “*and in the age to come.*” Paul speaking to those in the Christian Age, those that were saved by grace when he said, “**That in the ages (aions) to come** (ages to come after the Christian Age) *he might show the exceeding riches of his grace in kindness toward us in Christ Jesus*” (Ephesians 2:6-7).

There may be no way we can know, but it is possible that there was a time before God made anything, where there was just God, was one age. Then after He made Heaven and all was perfect was another age. After Satan and other angels sinned was another age, and things we know nothing about could be the beginning and ending of many ages before God made the earth. There is no way we can know something God has not revealed to us, and it is unreasonable to think that we with our limited knowledge could know even the hem of the garment when it comes to knowing what an infinite God has done before He made this world, and what He will do throughout all eternity. “*Unto the ages of the ages*” may mean that eternity after the judgment will have “ages.” God does not change, but there is no reason to believe that after the judgment He will just sit and do nothing that could be the end of one age and the beginning of another. In all of time we know anything about, God has used ages that had begins and ends, and there is no reason to believe He cannot or will not always use them. There is no man in Heaven now, but the saved will be in Heaven after the judgment; when all the saved of mankind are in Heaven, will that not be one change from what Heaven is now, it maybe the beginning of

a new age in Heaven. And there could be others changes later that would be the beginning and ending of ages. I do not believe He is a sleeping God who woke up one day and made the world in six days and went back to sleep. What He has done and will do throughout eternity is beyond my imagination, and as He has not revealed it no one can know, but eternity is a long time and it is not reasonable to believe He is now sleeping, and that He will not frequently do many things as great or greater than making the earth; things that will be the beginning of an endless number of new ages. Angels are not self-existing being as God is, they were created by God; therefore, their creation may have been the beginning of an age in Heaven. Heaven itself was created; only God is self-existing, unchanging and without a beginning. All the things that God created that we know about and all the beings, angels and mankind, were not created at the same time, there is no reason to believe that God will not go on creating both new things and new beings.

**PAST AGES, A PRESENT AGE, FUTURE AGES:** If, as many teach, "aion" did mean "forever" or "eternity," then there would be past eternities, present eternities, and future eternities to come, both singular and plural. More than one eternity, as we use the word eternity today, is not passable.

**SINGULAR:**

- **A past age, not a past eternity** (singular) Acts 15:18 *"From the beginning of the aion"* Ephesians 3:9; Colossians 1:26; Luke 1:55.
- **A present age, not a present eternity** (singular) Galatians 1:4 *"From this present evil aion"* Matthew 12:32; 13:22; 13:39; 13:40; 24:3; 28:20; Mark 4:19; Luke 1:70; Luke 16:8; 20:34; John 9:32; Acts 3:21; 15:18; Romans 12:2; 1 Corinthians 2:6; 2:8; 3:18; 8:13; 10:11; 2 Corinthians 4:4; Galatians 1:4; Ephesians 1:21; 2:2; 6:12; 1 Timothy 7:17; 2 Timothy 4:10. The present aion (age) is clearly distinguished from a past aion, or a future aion, not a past or future eternity.
- **A future age, not a future eternity** (singular) Luke 20:35 *"Worthy to obtain that aion."* Matthew 12:32; Mark 10:30 *"In the aion to come."* Luke 18:30; 20:35; Ephesians 1:21; 2:7; Hebrews 6:5.

**PLURAL:** Of the one hundred twenty seven times aion is used in the New Testament sixty two are in the plural, more than one age, not more than one eternity, and in twenty one others that there is more than one age when the plural is implied by "this aion" or "that aion," this age, or that age, not this or that eternity.

- **Past ages, not past eternities** (plural) Colossians 1:26 *"Hid from aions"* Luke 1:33; Hebrews 1:2; 11:3.
- **Present ages, not present eternities** (plural) Hebrews 1:2 *"By whom also he made the aions"* Romans 1:25; 9:5; 11:36; 16:27; 2 Corinthians 11:31; Hebrews 13:8.
- **Future ages, not future eternities** (plural) Galatians 1:5; Philippians 4:20; 1 Timothy 1:17; 2 Timothy 4:18; Hebrews 13:21; 1 Peter 4:11; 5:11; Revelation 1:6; 1:18; 4:9; 4:10; 5:13; 5:14; 7:12; 10:6; 11:15; 14:11; 15:7; 19:3; 20:10; 22:5. It may be that what we think of as eternity as being one endless time period will be an infinite number of aions (ages).
- **Past, present and future ages**, not past, present and future eternities. *"Throughout all ages"* Ephesians 3:21 King James Version.

Singular/singular – age of the age (aiona tou aionos) Hebrews 1:8

Singular/plural – age of the ages (aionos ton aionon) Ephesians 3:21

Plural/plural – ages of the ages (aionas ton aionon) Revelation 20:10, 1 Peter 4:11

In the Bible there are:

1. Aion (age) in the **singular**—65 times
2. Aions (ages) in the **plural**—62 times
3. Aions (ages) in the **past** - plural

4. Aion (age) in the **present** - singular
5. An aion (age) **to come** - singular
6. Aions (ages) **to come** – plural, more than one age is yet to come
7. The **ends** of the aions (ages) – plural – more than one age that ends

If aion means eternity then these passage would be saying:

- “Upon whom the ends of the **eternities** have come” (1 Corinthians 10:11).
- “That He might deliver us from this present evil **eternity**” (Galatians 1:4).
- “Not only in this **eternity** but also in that which is to come” (Ephesians. 1:21).
- “That in the **eternities** to come” (Ephesians 2:7).
- “The mystery, which for **eternities** has been hidden” (Ephesians 3:9).
- “Haven loved this present **eternity**” (2Timothy 4:10).
- “Powers of the **eternity** to come” (Hebrews 6:5).
- “But now in the end of the **eternity** (Hebrews 9:26).
- We understand the **eternities** have been prepared by the word of God” (Hebrews 11:3).

The Greek is "unto the aions of the aions." It is not "ever + ever," not one "ever" added to another "ever" as in the King James Version. It is ages that last **unto**, not a plural of eternities which none can end. "*Forever and ever*" is a contradiction of itself. When a word is plural it can only be finite for only finite things can have the plural; there cannot be more than one infinite eternity. Not more than one forever. There cannot be eternities after eternities. An age or ages will fit into eternity, but eternity will not fit into an age. Eternity is infinitely bigger than an age. Neither can one eternity fit into another eternity, or two eternities exist at the same time. Neither can one eternity come after the end of another eternity.

*For ever (aionas) AND (ton) ever (aionon)*” (Revelation 4:11), “The double plural,” Henry Thayer, “A Greek-English Lexicon Of The New Testament,” page 19. Both Greek words are in the plural; “ever” that is used in the King James Version is singular; there is no plural of “ever” in English; it cannot be translated “for everS and everS.” The “and” that is between the two everS is from “ton” and it never means “and” in the Greek. “For ever and ever” totally changes what the Greek says.

As there is no word in the Hebrew Old Testament for “eternity,” “ages” more than one long period of time followed by more long periods of time might have been the nearest concept the early Hebrew people had to “eternity” as we understand the English word “eternity” today. **Can “olam” or “aion” ever mean eternal as the word is used today?** Endless is not inherent in either of the two words and in over 90% of the times they are used it is unquestionably that they mean a limited time– a time that has ended or will end. When they are applied to God (as in Exodus 3:15; Genesis 21:33) and things that are intrinsically endless, some say it takes on a meaning not inherent in the word itself, but from the thing that is endless, but it is more likely that God was speaking to them using the only words that they would understand, words with nearest concept the early Hebrew people had to an eternity without beginning or end–ages followed by more ages, an endless number of ages one after another after another. The concept we have of eternity was not in the Old Testament and may not have come about unto after the New Testament.

- 1 Timothy 1:17: “**To the King of the ages** (aion), the incorruptible, invisible, only wise God, [is] honor and glory -- to the ages (aion), of the ages (aion)! Amen” Young's Literal Translation.
  - “**Now to the king of the ages**” Alfred Marshall, “Parallel New Testament

In Greek and English.”

- See “The Englishmen’s Greek Concordance” by George V. Wigram, page 20.
- **“Now to the King of the ages”** Recovery Version.
- **“Now to the King of the ages”** Hugo McCord, church of Christ, “McCord’s New Testament Translation,” published by Freed-Hardeman College.
- **“So to the king of all the ages”** “The New Testament In Modern English,” J. B. Phillips.
- **“To the King of ages”** New American Bible, Catholic.
- **“To the King of the ages”** Revised Standard Version, New Revised Standard Version.
- **“He is the King of the ages”** The Living Bible.
- **“Now may the King of the ages”** The Christian Bible.
- Jude 1:25 : *“To (the) only God Savior of us through Jesus Christ the Lord of us (be) glory, greatness might, and authority **before all the age and now and unto all the ages.**”* Alfred Marshall, Parallel New Testament In Greek and English.
  - *“To the only wise God our Savior, [is] glory and greatness, power and authority, **both now and to all the ages! Amen**”* Young’s Literal Translation.
- Hebrews 1:2: *“Through whom (Christ) also **he made the ages.**”*
- Hebrews 11:3: *“By faith we understand **that the ages have been framed by the word of God.**”*
- Revelation 15:7: *“God, who is living **to the ages of the ages.**”*
- 1 Peter 4:11: *“Jesus Christ, to whom is the glory and the power -- **to the ages of the ages.**”*
- Revelation 2:12: *“The blessing, and the glory, and the wisdom, and the thanksgiving, and the honor, and the power, and the strength, [are] to our God -- **to the ages of the ages!**”*
- Revelation 1:6: *“To him [is] the glory and the power **to the ages of the ages! Amen.**”*
- 2 Corinthians 11:31: *“The God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ -- **who is blessed to the ages.**”*
- Romans 16:27: *“To the only wise God, through Jesus Christ, to him [be] glory **to the ages.**”*
- Romans 5:9: *“God blessed **to the ages. Amen.**”*
- Romans 1:25: *“God blessed **to the ages. Amen.**”*

After the coming of Christ, when we are told time will have ended and eternity will have begun, the very next thing is a “day,” a period of time that will have both a beginning and an ending, the Judgment Day. This “day” will be in eternity after time as we know it has end.

Perhaps the most common argument is that “aion” has both (1) a finite meaning and (2) infinite meaning. Unlimited duration when it is speaking God, limited duration of things that have a perishable nature, or a limited duration, as the priesthood of Aaron, the covenant of circumcision, the three days Jonah was in the belly of the whale, etc., that it must take on an infinite meaning when speaking of things not of this earth; the problem

of this seems to be that even when speaking of things not of this earth, of the time after the Judgment Day, even of God (1 Timothy 1:17; 2 Timothy 4:18; and many more times age is used in the plural) Ages being in the plural when speaking of God is hid by most English translations, it would make a plurality of eternities, one eternity after another eternity and more eternities after them, even after the Judgment Day it would make there be eternities after eternities.

1 Peter 1:25: "*The word of the Lord abides for ever (aeon—age).*" God's word—the New Covenant will abide as long as the New Covenant last, to the end of this age—end of the world (age). "*But the things that are revealed belong unto us and to our children for ever (olam-age—Hebrew the same as the Greek aeon-age) that we may do all the words of this law*" Deuteronomy 29:29. The Law belonged to them for an age, but that age has passed away; it was only for that age, not forever. All that is in the New Covenant are ours to do for this age, we will not for take of the Lord's Supper after the end of this age; we will not remember His death "*Till He come*" (1 Corinthians 11:29), not after He comes. The Lord's Supper is now the "*word of the Lord*" that abides for this age, not with out end, not for eternity. Just as the "*word of the Lord*" on keeping the Sabbath Day abided for that age, and it passed away when the age of the Law passed away, "*Go into all the world, and preach the gospel to the whole creation*" (Mark 16:15) will also abided to the end of this age, and will pass away when this age is over. It is most likely that there will always be a "*word of the Lord*" in all ages to come, but not the same "*word of the Lord*" as is in this age or was in pass ages.

"*The word of the Lord remains unto the age*" Marshall's Parallel Greek English New Testament.

"*The saying of the Lord doth remain -- to the age*" Young's Literal Translation.

Alexander Campbell said of aion, "Its radical idea is indefinite duration." An age is always a period of time that can be long or short, but ages always has both a beginning and an ending.

Marvin R. Vincent, "Word Studies In The New Testament" Notes On Olethron Aionion (eternal destruction). "**The word always carries the notion of time, and not of eternity. It always means a period of time.** Otherwise it would be impossible to account for the plural, or for such qualifying expressions as this age, or the age to come. It does not mean something endless or everlasting. To deduce that meaning from its relation to *aei* is absurd; for, apart from the fact that the meaning of a word is not definitely fixed by its derivation, *aei* does not signify endless duration. When the writer of the Pastoral Epistles quotes the saying that the Cretans are always (*aei*) liars (Tit. 1:12), he surely does not mean that the Cretans will go on lying to all eternity. See also Acts 7:51; 2 Cor. 4:11; 6:10; Heb 3:10; 1 Pet. 3:15. *Aei* means habitually or continually within the limit of the subject's life. In our colloquial dialect everlastingly is used in the same way. 'The boy is everlastingly tormenting me to buy him a drum.' In the New Testament the history of the world is conceived as developed through a succession of aeons. A series of such aeons precedes the introduction of a new series inaugurated by the Christian dispensation, and the end of the world and the second coming of Christ are to mark the beginning of another series. Eph. 1:21; 2:7; 3:9,21; 1 Cor 10:11; compare Heb. 9:26. He includes the series of aeons in one great aeon, '*o aion ton aionon*, the aeon of the aeons (Eph. 3:21); and the author of the Epistle to the Hebrews describe the throne of God as enduring unto the aeon of the aeons (Heb 1:8). The plural is also used, aeons of the aeons, signifying all the successive periods which make up the sum total of the ages collectively. Rom. 16:27; Gal. 1:5; Philip. 4:20, etc."

NOTE: Marvin R. Vincent in "Word Studies In The New Testament" list three series of ages—not three series of eternities. The three are:

1. A series of ages that precedes the Christian dispensation.
2. A new series of ages inaugurated by the Christian dispensation.
3. The end of the world and the second coming of Christ are to mark the beginning of another series of ages.

Dr. Edward Beecher, "All attempts to set forth eternity as the original and primary sense of *aion* are at war the facts of the Greek language for five centuries, in which it denoted life and its derivative senses, **and the sense eternity was unknown.**" Christian Union, 1873.

Professor Knapp, author of a Greek New Testament used in many colleges and universities as a textbook. "**The pure idea of eternity is too abstract to have been conceived in the early ages of the world, and accordingly is not found expressed by any word in the ancient languages.** But as cultivation advanced and this idea became more distinctly developed, it became necessary in order to express it to invent new words in a new sense, as was done with the words eternitas, perennitas, etc. **The Hebrews were destitute of any single word to express endless duration...the Hebrews and other ancient people have no one word for expressing the precise idea of eternity.**"

*Aionios* (the adjective form of the noun *aion*) is used 71 times in the New Testament and in the King James Version is translated (1) age, (2) eternal, (3) for ever and ever, (4) course, (5) for ever, (6) evermore, (7) everlasting, (8) world, (9) beginning of the world, (10) world began, (11) world without end. When the Septuagint translation was made in the third century B.C. by the Jews, the Hebrew word "olam" was translated into the Greek word "aionios." Olam in the Old Testament is used repeatedly to mean an age that has a beginning and an ending.

Olam—aionios, for an age, not forever.

- The Law of Moses was forever, King James Version (olam—aionios), but it ended.
- The Jews were to possess the land forever, King James Version (olam—aionios).
- Temple rituals were to continue forever, King James Version (olam—aionios), but they ended.
- Sacrifices were to last forever, King James Version (olam—aionios), but they have ended.
- Circumcision was forever, King James Version (olam—aionios), but it ended when the Law that commanded it ended.
- David's throne was forever, King James Version (olam—aionios), but it ended.

#### **FOREVER—UNTO THE AGES**

(A) "***Unto the ages***" εἰς τοὺς αἰῶνας Wigram ("The Englishman's Greek Concordance," page 19), footnote in American Standard Version "**Gr. *unto the ages.***" Alfred Marshall in "Parallel New Testament In Greek And English" translates εἰς τοὺς αἰῶνας "***unto the ages.***"

1. Luke 1:33 "***Over the house of Jacob forever*** (εἰς τοὺς αἰῶνας-**unto the ages**)."
2. Romans 1:25 "***Who is blessed forever*** (εἰς τοὺς αἰῶνας-**unto the ages**)."
3. Romans 9:5 "***God blessed forever*** (εἰς τοὺς αἰῶνας-**unto the ages**)."
4. Romans 11:36 "***To whom be glory forever*** (εἰς τοὺς αἰῶνας **unto the ages**)."
5. Romans 16:27 "***Through Jesus Christ forever*** (εἰς τοὺς αἰῶνας **unto the ages**)."
6. 2 Corinthians 11:31 "***Which is blessed for evermore*** (εἰς τοὺς αἰῶνας **unto the ages**)."
7. Hebrews 13:8 "***Yesterday, and to day, and for ever*** (εἰς τοὺς αἰῶνας-**unto the ages**)."
  - All seven "forever" are three words in the Greek, not one or two word as in the King James Version.

(B) "***Unto the ages of (the) ages***" εἰς τοὺς αἰῶνας τῶν αἰῶνων is used **twenty-one times in the New Testament**, seventeen times it is applied to God or Christ, one time to

Satan, one time to worshipers of the beast, one time to the great harlot, and one time to those who are in the book of life.

- Alfred Marshall translates it, "***Unto the ages of the ages,***" "Parallel New Testament In Greek And English," page 747. "*To whom (be) the glory unto the ages of the ages. Amen*" Galatians 1:5.
- Adam Clarke translates it, "***To the ages of ages.***"
- Robert Young translates it, "***To the ages of (the) ages.***" Young's Analytical Concordance to the Bible, page 310, and in "Young's Literal Translation."
- Ashley S. Johnson, "***Ages of ages, or ages upon ages***" Founder, and president of the Johnson Bible College.
- Jamieson, Fausset, and Brown, "***Unto ages of ages.***"
- The Amplified Bible, "***Through all the ages of the ages***" Galatians 1:5.
- The Christian Bible, "***For the remaining ages of the ages***" Galatians 1:5.
- New American Standard Version, "***Even to the end of the age***" Matthew 28:20 and in many other passages.
- New Revised Standard Version, "***End of the age***" Matthew 28:20 and others.
- New International Version, "***To the very end of the age***" Matthew 28:20.
  - Strong's word #165, Aion "**An age**" Comp 5550 "A space of time"

**(1) - (17): The seventeen times "*unto the ages of the ages--eiv touv aiwnav tw aiwnwn*" that are applied to God or Christ** from Young's Literal Translation. In the same way that saying God is the God of Israel does not mean He is not also the God of the other nations, to say He is now the God of this age does not mean He was not the God of all the other ages that have been before, and the God of this age, and will not be the God of all ages that shall come after this age. He is the God of Abraham, but also the God of David, and the God of Paul. He is the God of this age; **God is the God of the ages, all the ages, past, present, and future.** There are three main ages that covers all the time of this earth. (1) The Patriarchal Age: From Adam to the giving of the Law, when God spoke directly to men, mostly to the fathers. (2) The Law Age: From the giving of the Law to the death of Christ. (3) The Christian or Church Age: From Christ to the end of this age at end of this world. These ages are often subdivided into smaller ages; for example, the Law is often divided into the Judges, the United Kingdom, and the Divided Kingdom. How many ages there might have been before the earth, and how many there will be after it ends we have no way of knowing, but the Bible speaks often of "ages to come" after this Christian, after the age that we are now in. "*And raised us up with him, and made us to sit with him in the heavenly places, in Christ Jesus: that in the ages (aions) to come he might show the exceeding riches of his grace in kindness toward us in Christ Jesus*" (Ephesians 2:6-7); after the end of the earth it seems that there may be more ages with God over them, He will always be the God of the age that is. **The concept we have of eternity was is not in the Old Testament, and it may not have come about unto after the New Testament; if there is a word in the Greek language that was used in the time of the New Testament with today's meaning of eternity it was not aion-age.**

#### YOUNG'S LITERAL TRANSLATION

**TO CHRIST--"*unto the ages of the ages--eiv touv aiwnav tw aiwnwn*"**

(1) Galatians 1:5: "*To whom is the glory to the ages of the ages. Amen.*"

(2) 2 Timothy 4:18: "*And the Lord shall free me from every evil work, and shall save me to his heavenly kingdom; to whom is the glory to the ages of the ages! Amen.*"

(3) Hebrews 13:21: "Make you perfect in every good work to do His will, doing in you that which is well-pleasing before Him, through Jesus Christ, to whom is the glory **to the ages of the ages!** Amen."

(4) 1 Peter 4: 11: "That in all things God may be glorified through Jesus Christ, to whom is the glory and the power **to the ages of the ages.** Amen."

(5) 1 Peter 5:11: "To Him is the glory, and the power **to the ages and the ages!** Amen."

(6) Revelation 1:6: "To him is the glory and the power **to the ages of the ages!** Amen."

(7) Revelation 1:18: "And he who is living, and I did become dead, and, lo, I am living **to the ages of the ages.** Amen! And I have the keys of the hades and of the death."

(8) Revelation 11:15: "And the seventh messenger did sound, and there came great voices in the heaven, saying, 'The kingdoms of the world did become those of our Lord and of His Christ, and he shall reign **to the ages of the ages!**'"

**TO GOD OR CHRIST OR BOTH--"unto the ages of the ages--eiv touv aiwnav twv aiwnwn"**

(9) Philippians 4:20: "And to God, even our Father, is the glory **to the ages of the ages.** Amen."

(10) 1 Timothy 1:17: "And to **the King of the ages,** the incorruptible, invisible, only wise God, is honor and glory **to the ages of the ages!** Amen."

(11) Revelation 4:9: "And when the living creatures do give glory, and honor, and thanks, to Him who is sitting upon the throne, who is living **to the ages of the ages.**"

(12) Revelation 4:10: "Fall down do the twenty and four elders before Him who is sitting upon the throne, and bow before Him who is living **to the ages of the ages,** and they cast their crowns before the throne."

(13) Revelation 5:13: "To Him who is sitting upon the throne, and to the Lamb, is the blessing, and the honor, and the glory, and the might **to the ages of the ages!**"

(14) Revelation 5:14: "And the four living creatures said, 'Amen!' and the twenty-four elders fell down and they bow before Him who is living **to the ages of the ages.**"

(15) Revelation 7:12: "Saying, 'Amen! The blessing, and the glory, and the wisdom, and the thanksgiving, and the honor, and the power, and the strength, are to our God **to the ages of the ages!** Amen!'"

(16) Revelation 10:6: "And did swear in Him who doth live **to the ages of the ages,** who did create the heaven and the things in it, and the land and the things in it, and the sea and the things in it."

(17) Revelation 15:7: "And one of the four living creatures did give to the seven messengers seven golden vials, full of the wrath of God, who is living **to the ages of the ages"**

These passages may simply be saying, "as long as this creation (age) last, God will be the God of it." Christ will reign as king and priest in the kingdom unto He has abolished all rule and authority, unto He has put all His enemies under His feet. The last enemy to be abolished is death (1 Corinthians 15:20-28). As long as this age lasts, He will reign "unto the ages of ages." At the end of this creation, Christ "shall deliver up the kingdom to God...then shall the Son also himself be subjected to him that did subject all things unto him, that God may be all in all" (1 Corinthians 15:24-28). "Our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ; to him [is] the glory both now, and to the day of the age! Amen" (2 Peter 3:18 Young's Literal Translation).

"I AM"

God does not change with the passing of time, He is always the "I Am." He is now, at anytime we call the past, He is God. At anytime we call the future He is the "I Am" (Exodus 3:14). "Before Abraham was born, I am" (John 8:58). This seems to be saying God is not the God that was the God of the past, or He is not the God that will be the God of the future, He is always the God of now.

Marvin R. Vincent about aion—age: "The word always carries the notion of time, and not of eternity, it always means a period of time" "Word Studies in the New Testament."

Death and the grave will last only "to the age of the ages." After the end of this creation (age) they will not exist. Saying God is the God of this creation from its beginning unto it end is not to say He was not God before its beginning and after its end.



He is the God of this age and all other ages. Revelation 7:12 Saying, *"Amen, the blessing, and the glory, and the wisdom, and the thanksgiving, and the honor, and the power, and the strength, (are) to our God to the ages of (the) ages. Amen."* Also for all ages that have been and will come after the end of this creation (age).

I think this is saying that after this world ends that God will not ever be doing nothing, but that He will always be doing things that have a beginning and an end as great as the creation of this earth, and its end. There will always be things that have a beginning and an end, always be ages. Just as angels may have seen this creation, the saved may see new creations that God will always be doing. The lost, the dead will miss all this. O that I may live in such a way that I will live, and I will always see the great things God will be always doing in all the ages to come. We sometimes think of God too small for we think of Him as only having to do with our world, our creation; and in all eternity before He made this world we think He did nothing and will do nothing after the end of this world. As great as that would make Him, it still would make Him small in comparison with what He is, and makes His power small in comparison with what it is.

***"Unto the ages of (the) ages"***

The other four of the twenty-one

**(18) Revelation 14:11:** *"Unto the ages of (the) ages" is applied one time to worshipers of the beast, not to the beast. "And the smoke of their torment doth go up TO ages of ages; and they have no rest day and night, who are bowing before the beast and his image, also if any doth receive the mark of his name."* Footnote in the American Standard Version, *"Gr. UNTO the ages of the ages."* This smoke goes up UNTO *"the ages of the ages,"* not without an end, not IN *"the ages of the ages,"* not IN any ages after *"the ages of the ages."* The time that (1) those on earth that worship the beast have no rest and (2) the smoke goes up are both explicitly stated to be a limited period, *"UNTO the ages of the ages."* See notes above. Most commentaries say the beast is pagan Rome. No worldly government will last for eternity; will not be IN all the ages that are to come after the world has ended. Would it be possible to make a bigger change in God's word than was made when *"UNTO the ages of the ages"* was changed into two eternities *"forever and ever"*?

**(19) Revelation 19:3:** *"Unto the ages of (the) ages" is applied one time to the great harlot. "And a second time they said, 'Alleluia;' and the smoke doth come up to the ages of the ages"* See notes above on Revelation 14:11.

**(20) Revelation 20:10:** *"Unto the ages of (the) ages" is applied one time to Satan. "And the Devil, who is leading them astray, was cast into the Lake of Fire and brimstone, where (are) the beast and the false prophet, and they shall be tormented day and night to the ages of (the) ages."* See notes above on Revelation 14:11.

**(21) Revelation 22:5:** *"Unto the ages of (the) ages" is applied one time to those who are in the book of life. "And night shall not be there, and they have no need of a lamp and light of a sun, because the Lord God doth give them light, and they shall reign to (TO or UNTO) the ages of (the) ages."* No matter what view you have, this may be one of the most difficult passages in the Bible.

**The most common view:** This is speaking of the saints in Heaven after the judgment. This view would change the reign of the saints to be in the *"ages of Ages"* not *"unto the ages of the ages."* It makes the reign of the saints start after its end. The King James and other translations remove this difficulty by mistranslating.

**Another view:** Christ is both king and priest unto the church. He is our high priest (Hebrews 8:1). *"For He must reign, till he has put all his enemies under his feet"* (1 Corinthians 15:25). When all his enemies are under his feet and the last enemy, death, has been abolished, then He shall deliver up the kingdom to God and be subjected to Him (1 Corinthians 15:23-28). Christ is our high priest (Hebrews 2:17; 3:1; 4:14; 4:15; 5:1; 5:5; 5:10). He is *"a priest forever (aion-age) after the order of Melchizedek"* (Hebrews 5:6). *"A high priest for ever (aion-age) after the order of Melchizedek"* (Hebrews 6:20). *"A priest for ever (aion-age) after the order of Melchizedek"* (Hebrews 7:17). *"You are a priest for ever"* (aion-age) (Hebrews 7:21). Christ is now reigning as our high priest, but will He be our high priest after the judgment when there is no sin; therefore, no need for a priest? *"And did make us kings and priests"* (Revelation 1:6). Those in Christ now reign as kings and priests. *"For you were slain, and did purchase unto God with your blood men of every tribe, and tongue, and people, and nation, and made them to be unto our God a kingdom and priests; and they reign upon the earth"* (Revelation 5:9-10). **All Christians are now kings and priests, and they now reign upon the earth as long as there will be an earth, but will Christians be kings and priests after the judgment when they are not "upon the earth"?** Will there be any need for priests in Heaven? Christ will be our Lord in Heaven, but maybe not our high priest. Christian now reign as kings and priests unto the ages of ages, but whatever we will be in Heaven, it does not look as if there will be any need for priests. In this age, those in Christ have Him as their light (John 8:12; 9:5; 11:10; 12:36) and He shines the same always. There is no nighttime when He shines less. **The reign of those in Christ as kings and priests "unto the ages of the ages" may be over when their eternal life in Heaven begins in the ages of ages. They shall reign unto the ages of (the) ages (22:5) "Unto the ages" is before the time many believe Hell will begin. It is now.**

**A third view:** Most likely the right one. This passage is symbolic, not to be taken literally. The first two views both make the wording be literal, but just as most of this book is in symbols, this may also be symbols, and it is no more to be taken literally than a woman arrayed with the sun (Revelation 12:1), or any of the other symbols in the book.

- Whatever view of this passage you may take, Christians will be *"in the ages to come"* after this age has ended (Ephesians 2:6-7).

That aion means forever when it is used with reference to the life of the believer, and that it takes on a meaning of unlimited time that is totally different than its meaning is without precedent with any other word. I understand that this dual definition came about by learned and faithful believers trying to explain some difficult passages, but it seems to me that it makes more problems than it helps. If God in His revelation to us used a word to sometimes mean a limited time with a beginning and an end, and at other times used the same word to mean an unlimited time without beginning or end, no one could know what He said to us, could not know when this word was limited, or when it was unlimited without an inspired person to tell us.

It is obvious that forever or eternal with the meaning that eternal has today is a total mistranslation. Three days (Jonah 2:6) or a lifetime (Exodus 21:6) is not eternity.

Whatever view you take, this is in a book of symbols that are difficult to understand, and it is unwise to base any doctrine on the interpretation of symbols, and less than unwise to make the interpretation of symbols over rule the plain statements of the Bible.

Kenneth Fortier, a member of the church of Christ says in "Church Doctrine's: Right Or Wrong?" page 28, 2007.

- The Bible says nothing about eternity, as the word eternity is understood today.
- The Bible describes nothing as being eternal, not the world, not the universe.
- Eternity is not a subject of revelation in the Bible; it is a subject of philosophy.

-----  
 "If *aion* sometimes means a limited and sometimes an, unlimited time, then we need a pope, or a church, or human tradition to tell us what it means in each case, and divine inspiration vanishes, and is replaced by corrupt human mentality." Unsearchable Riches, volume 27, page 175.

### ETERNAL

**ETERNAL** (aionios, the adjective of aion) **LIFE:** In about 43 times aionios is the life Christ promised to those who obey Him. "*And in the age (aion) that is coming, life age-during (aionios) life (zoe)*" (Young's Literal Translation) Mark 10:30. "*And a certain ruler questioned him, saying, 'Good teacher, what having done -- shall I inherit life age-during (aionios)?'*" Luke 18:18. "*Upon hope of life age-during (aionios), which God, who doth not lie, did promise before times of ages*" Titus 1:2. Also in Matthew 19:16; 25:46; Mark 10:17; 10:30; Luke 10:25; 18:30; John 3:5; 3:16; 3:36; 4:14; 4:36 5:24; 5:39; 6:27; 6:40; 6:47; 6:54; 6:58; 17:2; 17:3; Acts 13:46; Romans 2:7; 5:21; 6:22; 6:23; Galatians 6:8; 1 Timothy 1:16; 6:12; 6:19; Titus 3:7; 1 John 1:2; 2:25; 3:15; 5:11; 5:13; 5:20; Jude 21.

### What do we mean by "eternality"

Time we understand. Divisions of time that has a beginning and ending as an "age" we can understand. We can only think of eternality in relation to time, of eternality as an elongation of time; in trying to tell what eternality is we often hear, "After a billion years we will have no less time then when we first begin;" we cannot even think of eternality with out thinking of it in relation to time. We can understand ages followed by more ages as was used in the Old Testament, but how do you say how long eternality will be? Can anything or person that had a beginning be eternal? If so, then the definition of eternality we often hear, "Without beginning or ending" could not be right.

If there were no measurement of time, then there could not be "ages to come" after the resurrection and judgment, but the Bible speaks repeatedly of ages to come. Ages have a beginning and ending; therefore, an age last only for a length of time, they are not without both a beginning and an ending.

Campbell Skinner Debate on Everlasting Punishment, "Because there is no word in the English language which fully expresses what that word in its original sense implies. Had it been lawful to have coined a new word to express *aionion* in English, perhaps *agica*, or *age-lasting*, would have been near it...if *aion* means *age*, and its plural *ages*, (which none either will or can deny,) then *aionion* must mean *age-lasting*, or duration to the *age* or *ages* to which the thing spoken of relates," page141. (Note: To aion (age) some add "during" and some add "lasting," "age-during" and "age lasting." Neither one is in the Greek, both are an addition).

Terms that describe the saved after this age. "Everlasting (aionios—age) habitations" (Hebrews 9:15) "*And because of this, of a new covenant he is mediator, that, death having come, for redemption of the transgressions under the first covenant, those called may receive the promise of the age-during inheritance*" Young's Literal translation.

- "Everlasting (aionios—age) consolation" (2 Thessalonians 2:16). "*And may our Lord Jesus Christ himself, and our God and Father, who did love us, and did give comfort age-during, and good hope in grace*" Young's Literal translation.
- "Eternal (aionios—age) inheritance" (Hebrews 9:15). "*And because of this, of a new covenant he is mediator, that, death having come, for redemption of the*

- transgressions under the first covenant, those called may receive the promise of the age-during inheritance” Young’s Literal translation.*
- "An eternal (aionios—age) weight of glory" (2 Corinthians 4:16-18). *“Wherefore, we faint not, but if also our outward man doth decay, yet the inward is renewed day by day; for the momentary light matter of our tribulation, more and more exceedingly an age-during weight of glory doth work out for us --we not looking to the things seen, but to the things not seen; for the things seen [are] temporary, but the things not seen [are] age-during” Young’s Literal translation.*
  - "A building from God, a house not made with hands, eternal (aionios—age), in the heavens" (2 Corinthians 5:1-2). *“For we have known that if our earthly house of the tabernacle may be thrown down, a building from God we have, an house not made with hands -- age-during -- in the heavens, for also in this we groan, with our dwelling that is from heaven” Young’s Literal translation.*
  - *“And to Him who is able to establish you, according to my good news, and the preaching of Jesus Christ, according to the revelation of the secret, in the times of the ages (aionios), having been kept silent, and now having been made manifest, also, through prophetic writings, according to a command of the age-during (aionios) God, having been made known to all the nations for obedience of faith—to the only wise God, through Jesus Christ, to him [be] glory to the ages (aion). Amen.” (Romans 16:25-26).*
  - *“And the God of all grace, who did call you to His age-during (aionios) glory in Christ Jesus, having suffered a little, Himself make you perfect, establish, strengthen, settle [you]; to Him [is] the glory, and the power -- to the ages (aion) and the ages (aion)! Amen” (1 Peter 5:10-11).*

The root word in Greek from which aion (age) comes is oon. It is used eight times in the New Testament, and it always means a period of time, never time without end. Mark 15:8; Acts 7:51; 2 Corinthians 4:11; 6:10; Titus 1:12; Hebrews 3:10; 1 Peter 3:15; 2 Peter 1:12.

---

Words that teach an endless duration that are applied to God and the saved, but are never applied **to the lost**.

TO GOD:

1. Romans 1:23 *"The glory of the **incorruptible** (aphthartos) God."*
2. 1 Timothy 6:16 *"Who only has **immortality** (athanasin)."*
3. Romans 1:20 *"Even his **everlasting** (aidios) power and divinity" Aidos is used only two times in the New Testament and is speaking of God, and in Jude 6 of the everlasting (aidios) bonds that now keep the angles that sinned.*
4. 1 Timothy 1:17 *"Now unto the King eternal **immortal** (aphtharsia), invisible, the only God."*

TO CHRIST:

1. 2 Timothy 1:10 *"Who (Christ) abolished death, **and brought life and immortality** (aphtharsia) **to light**."*
2. Hebrews 7:3 *"Abides a priest **continually** (dieenekes)." "But he, when he had offered one sacrifice for sins **for ever** (dieenekes), sat down on the right hand of God" (Hebrews 10:12). "For by one offering he has perfected **for ever** (dieenekes) them that are sanctified" (Hebrews 10:14).*

3. Hebrews 7:16 *"After the power of an **endless** (akatalutos-indissoluble) **life**." The only time akatalutos-indissoluble is in the New Testament it is applied to Christ.*

TO MAN:

1. 1 Corinthians 9:25 *"Now they do it to receive a corruptible crown: but we an **incorruptible** (aphthartos)."*
2. 1 Corinthians 15:42-44 *"So also is the resurrection of the dead. It is sown in corruption; it is raised in **incorruption** (aphtharsia); it is sown in dishonor; it is raised in **glory**; it is sown in weakness; it is raised in **power**; is sown a natural body; it is raised a **spiritual body**."*
3. 1 Corinthians 15:52-54 *"For the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised **incorruptible** (aphthartos), and **we** shall be changed. For this corruptible must put on **incorruption** (aphtharsia), and this mortal must put on **immortality** (athanasia). But, when this corruptible shall have put on **immortality** (athanasia) then shall come to pass the saying that is written, **death is swallowed up in victory**."*
4. 1 Peter 1:3-4 *"Begot **us** again unto a living hope by the resurrection of Jesus Christ from the dead, unto an **inheritance** (aphtharton) **incorruptible** (aphthartos), and **undefiled, and that fades not away, reserved in Heaven for you** (not your soul)."*
5. 1 Peter 5:4 *"And when the chief Shepherd shall be manifested, **you** shall receive the crown of glory **that fades not away**."*
6. Romans 2:7 *"To them that by patience in well-doing seek for glory and honor and **incorruption** (aththarsia), eternal (aionies) life."*
7. 1 Thessalonians 4:17 *"Then **we** who are alive and remain shall be caught up together with them in the clouds to meet the Lord in the air, and thus **we** shall **always** (pantote) be with the Lord." "Seeing he (Christ) **ever** (pantote) lives" (Hebrews 7:25).*
8. Ephesians 2:6-7 *"And raised **us** up with him, and made **us** to sit with him in the heavenly places, in Christ Jesus: **that in the ages** (aions) **to come** he might show the exceeding riches of his grace in kindness toward **us** in Christ Jesus." Ages, in more than one age to come after this age is gone, not more than one eternity, and not more than one world—King James Version).
  - In the "age" after this age there will be "life" for those in Christ.
  - In all the "ages" after that age there will be "life" for those in Christ.*
9. Luke 20:34-36 *"The sons of this age (aion) marry, and are given in marriage, but they that are accounted worthy to attain to that age (aion), and the resurrection from the dead, neither marry, nor are given in marriage: for **neither can they die any more**: for they are equal unto the angels; and are sons of the resurrection."*
10. 2 Corinthians 4:16-18 *"Wherefore, **we** faint not, but if also our outward man doth decay, yet the inward is renewed day by day; for the momentary light matter of our tribulation, more and more exceedingly an age-during (aionies) weight of glory doth work out for us we not looking to the things seen, but to the things not seen; for the things seen [are] temporary, but the things not seen [are] age-during (aionies)" (Young's Literal Translation).*
11. 2 Peter 1:4 *"That through these **you** may become partakers of the divine nature."*

12. 1 John 3:2 *"Beloved, now are we children of God, and it is not yet made manifest what we shall be. We know that, if he shall be manifested, we (not souls) shall be like him; for we shall see him even as he is."*
13. Revelation 2:7-11 *"To him who over comes, I will grant to eat of the tree of life...Be faithful until death and I will give you the crown of life...He who overcomes shall not be hurt by the second death. "He" the person, not a soul that was in the person.*
14. Acts 26:18 *"That they may receive remission of sins and an inheritance among them that are sanctified."*
- **Every Scripture that speaks of human immortality is always speaking of the person putting on immortality at the resurrection, or the person being changed from mortal to immortal, and never of a soul that is now as immortal as it will ever be.**
  - **Every Scripture that speaks of human immortality is always speaking of the saved, never the lost.**
  - **Not one passage applied athrharsis, aptharton, aidos, athanasia, akatalutos to things of the earth, or to the lost before, or after the Judgment Day.**

## CHAPTER NINE

### UNIVERSALIST - The "age lasting" Hell

Universalist (sometimes called "Restoration" and "Unitarian Universalist") believes that all will end up saved. They believe no soul will end up in Hell, that it is not possible for the soul that is in anyone not even the worst person that ever lived, to not go to Heaven. Whether death is death, or if death is only separation, they believe no one will die or be forever separated from God; therefore, there is no death, no wages of sin, and no second death after the Judgment Day. THERE IS NO DEATH.

There seems to be some who believe in a universal salvation mixed in many denominations, also there are Universalist groups like the "Tentmakers" with the one thing all have in common is the belief in universal salvation. There seems to be two kinds of Universalist. (1) Some who do not believe in any kind of Hell, and that all sins are paid in full in this lifetime. (2) Some who believe there will be a Hell, but a very different Hell than the Protestant versions for it will last only for an "age," and will be more of a disciplinary character than punishment. Both destroy the character of even the worse the sinner and turn them all into them saints.

They do much writing to prove the word that is translated everlasting, eternal, forever, age, and world in the King James Version, is from the Greek word "aion," which means "age." In Matthew 24:3 the King James Version says, *"end of the world,"* but the New King James Version, New American Standard Version, New International Version and many more say *"end of the age."* They have written hundreds of pages to prove that "aion" means "age," and their purpose was to prove that Hell will last for only an age. They may be right in their translation of aion to mean age, but not one of the repeatedly times "aion" is used says anything about Hell, aion (age) is not used in the same passage with any of the four words translated Hell in the King James Version (sheol, hades, Gehenna, Tartarus).

Without proving there is a Hell, and without "age lasting" (aion) being used with any of the four words that are mistranslated Hell, they make a Hell that is "age lasting," with

both a beginning and ending, a Hell that is not everlasting. They have immortal souls in their "age lasting" Hell without proving the lost will be made immortal, and that they will live forever after the judgment.

They believe all those in the age lasting Hell will be saved when the age is over. Although Universalist have told me they do not believe in the soul being immortal, they believe that no one will ever be destroyed, that all will sooner or later end up in Heaven and all will have eternal life; I cannot see how they think all would not be immortal from the day of their birth if no one will ever be destroyed, if no one will ever really be dead, if all will live for eternity.

### **THE BIG PROBLEMS FOR UNIVERSALISM TO BE TRUE THEY MUST PROVE**

**(1) IMMORTALITY: That the lost have a soul in them that is now immortal, or that the soul that is now in the lost will all be made immortal after death, this immaterial something that is in a person cannot die, and it will outlast the "age lasting" Hell. To now have never ending life is as immortal as immortal can be. If the soul that is now in any person will never die, and all souls will live forever in Heaven, how could all souls not have eternal life? How much more immortal could a soul that is in a person already be, or ever be?**

**(2) NO DEATH PRNALTY: Universalist teach that there is no death,** that the souls of all who do not believe on Christ will not perish, but all souls will have eternal life the same as the souls that is in those who do believe (John 3:16). There is no death or destruction in the Universalist system, just eternal life for all souls, it makes no difference what a person may believe or do in this lifetime, after the death of the persons the souls that is in them will have eternal life in Heaven, but only eternal life for the immaterial something that is in a person.

**(3) HELL:** Although some call it a place of an "attitude adjustment," even if it is only "age lasting," and it will be more of a disciplinary character or "attitude adjustments" than punishment, there is nothing about an "age lasting" Hell, or about a time or place of "attitude adjustment" in the Bible; they had have added a time and a place to make possible the salvation of all souls after the persons are death for all souls or spirits that are not saved in this life-time; they have added an "age" after death out of thin air.

#### **(1) IMMORTALITY**

**Universalist must prove that all men now have an immaterial something in a person they call "soul," or that if it is not now immortal that it will be made immortal after the "attitude adjustment," that if all souls are not now immortal then all with be given immortality.**

In the "Debate on the Destiny of the Wicked" between George T. Carpenter of the church of Christ and John Hughes of the Universalist Church, 1875, Hughes said, "The soul, the principle of animal life. The spirit, the 'inward man,' the real man, to be invested in the resurrection with a new, spiritual body; clothed with immortality, to live forever in the spirit world."

Even so, most Universalist seems to be just as unsure of what is in a person that they think has immortality, soul or spirit, as are most Protestants who believe something that is in a person is now immortal and it will not die; therefore, this immortal something that is now in a person (whether this deathless something is a soul or spirit) it must live forever somewhere.

1. Whether a person now has an immaterial something in them that is already immortal.

2. Or that this something that is now in a person will become immortal after the resurrection.

- The "*wages of sin is death*" to no one, not even one person.

Universalist must prove that Christ will give "*eternal life*" to the spirit that is in all, even those who do not come to Him (John 5:40). They know this, and they know that all will not come to Christ in this lifetime; therefore, they have made up an "age" after the resurrection, which is not in the Bible, in which they think the spirit that is now in all the lost will be taught about Christ, and all these spirit will come to Christ.

## **(2) THE DEATH PENALTY MUST BE PROVED NOT TO BE DEATH**

Universalist **must** do away with the Bible teaching on death. There can be no wages of sin, as they believe there is no death. The only real difference with them and unconditional Protestants is where their immortal, no substance, invisible souls or spirits will end up.

- PAUL: "The wages of sin is death."
- MAMY OF THE PROTESTANTS: "The wages of sin is a lost of well being by a deathless soul being separated from God and being forever tormented by Him."
- UNIERSALIST: "The wages of sin is an 'age-during correction' or 'whatever kind of attitude adjustment necessary,' then for the deathless soul Hell will end, and all that underwent the attitude adjustment will be moved from Hell or whatever name they call that place, to Heaven."
  - **Both must make death not be death, both must find a way to change death to life.**

(1) After the death of the person unconditional Protestants put the souls that were in some persons in Heaven and the souls that had been in some persons when to persons were alive are put in Hell, all souls are deathless and now has eternal life.

(2) After the death of the person Universalist puts the souls that were in all before their death are now or they will be in Heaven; all the souls will have eternal life after the person dies.

- Both must do away with death. Both must deny the Bible when it says, "*The wages of sin is death.*"
- Both believe, "*You shall not surely die,*" that from the day of your birth there is a something in you that after your death this something will never be destroyed, and it is not possible for it to die, it must live forever.

**Will the second death make a spirit that is in a person alive, as Universalist believes it will?** They teach after the second death, the spirit that is in all will be made alive. The spirit that is in both the good and the evil will be made alive, and will then be immortal. Universalist believes that when death the last enemy is destroyed, the spirit that is now in a person cannot be dead; they think the end of death must give life to the spirit that was in all dead persons. **The Universalist believes the second death to be the end of death, not the end of the souls that was in sinner; that for death to end, the souls of all the dead persons must be made alive, for they believe that as long as any are dead, or that any can die it cannot be the end of death.** They seem to think that when "*death shall be no more*" (Revelation 21:4) could only mean that the souls of all who had died are raised from the dead, and all that ever lived their souls would have to be alive, for if any were dead it could not be said there is no more death.



**It is the sinner that will die** (Revelation 21:8), **and when there is no more sinners left to die there will be no more death, no more will be dying.** The wages of sin is death. It is the sinner who will be paid the wages of their sin, which is death. Universalist makes death pay the wages of the sin of the sinner, and the sinners pay nothing; **there would then be no difference in a sinner and a saint.** Death is an enemy and will be destroyed, but Universalist make there being "*no more death*" into a gateway to Heaven for the souls that is now in all sinners, and God will forgive all sins of the worst sinner even if they rejected Christ all their life. **Does death mean the end of life, or does death mean the beginning of eternal life?** Death, the last enemy will be abolished (1 Corinthians 15:26); Universalist makes the abolishment of death be a resurrection to eternal life of souls or spirit that they say are not dead, a resurrection of all the deathless, bodiless souls or spirits of all the lost that are now the enemies of Christ. John said of unbelievers and murderers, "*Their part shall be in the lake that burns with fire and brimstone; which is the second death,*" but the Universalist changed this and say it is anyone being dead that will end, and all that have "*their part*" in the lake will be made alive at the death of the Lake of Fire (which they say will be the end of death by which they mean the end of anyone being dead)!

**Death means the end of life, not the beginning of an immortal life,** but they must find a way to do away with the second death. They believe the souls that were in the lost will be someplace, Hell or whatever name they give it, but not in Heaven unto there souls undergo an "attitude adjustments;" then they will have their name in the book of life and never die, that the second death will be the end of death (the death of death, not the death of the sinner); for death to end they believe that life and immortality must be given to the souls that are in all, and death being abolished must means eternal life in Heaven for all souls!

- Universalist believes that the souls of, "*The fearful, and unbelieving, and abominable, and murderers, and fornicators, and sorcerers, and idolaters, and all liars*" will be made alive in Heaven, and that it will be only death, not the spirits of the dead persons, that will be cast into the Lake of Fire, and then the soulst of all will be alive forever when death is brought to an end by being cast into the Lake of Fire.
- The Bible says, "*The fearful, and unbelieving, and abominable, and murderers, and fornicators, and sorcerers, and idolaters, and all liars, their part shall be in the lake that burns with fire and brimstone: which is the second death*" (Revelation 21:8). Both (1) death (2) and the lost are both cast into the same Lake of Fire (Revelation 20:14-15); therefore, if the Lake of Fire is the end of death (Revelation 20:14), it is also the end of the lost that are cast into it (Revelation 20:15; 21:8), and it is undeniable that God says the same thing will happen to both death and the lost persons, both will be cast into the Lake of Fire.

### **(3) THE HELL PROBLEM**

If Universalists call it Hell or something else, they still have a place where the souls that were in all the lost to go after the judgment for an "age;" they have made Hell into an age lasting place where the immaterial souls of all the lost will be unto they are corrected, and then all their immaterial something will go to Heaven. What if some would not repent then? Will God make these souls repent against their will?

Gary Amirault, a Tentmaker Minister in an e-mail to me said, "Most universalists I know who believe in 'age-during correction,' do NOT see it as God torturing people in a literal lake or anything like that, they see it as simply correcting or teaching them further."

G. Jessup: "We can be sure there will be judgment, punishment, corrections, or whatever kind of 'attitude adjustments' necessary for the unbelievers according to their works, and for some it could be very long and painfully excruciating: but forever?"

He did not give one passage from the Bible to prove this "attitude adjustment," and I cannot find where they try to prove there will be an "attitude adjustment" after death in any of their writing. Maybe the reason they do not is that they know there is no proof. If they had proof, I am sure they would put it in bold print. That there will be a second chance after death is opposed to what is taught in the Bible.

**(1) They must prove that the souls that were in all the lost are now alive someplace, or they will be alive wherever and whatever that someplace is, that there is such a place whatever name they give it.**

**(2) That these souls will be there for only an "age" of disciplinary training.**

**(3) And that they all will repent and will end up in Heaven.**

They must disprove the "Hell" that many Protestants believe, but at the same time prove there is some kind of a "Hell" that is "age lasting" and not eternal. As is shown in the above quotation Universalists do not believe any will forever be in the Lake of Fire that they do not believe is a literal Lake of Fire. They do not believe the Protestant view of Gehenna; therefore, they must prove that after death God will torment the souls they believe to have been in all who do not believe in Christ in this lifetime, some for a short time, some will be tormented more, some tormented much more extremely.

G. Jessup said, "We can be sure there will be judgment, punishment, corrections, or whatever kind of 'attitude adjustments' necessary for the unbelievers according to their works, and for some it could be very long and painfully excruciating."

I have not seen where they say why there will be a judgment. Maybe for God to decide how much He will have to torment them, and how much He will torment Satan and his demons to make them repent. Whatever forms the Universalist says the torment will be, physical, mentally, or whatever, it would still be God doing the tormenting.

**Universalist must prove that there will be an "age" of attitude adjustment.** They say there has been many "ages," and will be an "age" after death and before Heaven in which "judgment, punishment, corrections, or whatever kind of 'attitude adjustments' necessary for the unbelievers according to their works" takes place. They reason that there must be such an age for those who do not come to Christ in this life must have a time to come to Him. All must accept Christ, and most do not in this life. It is a made up age, which is not found in the Bible, not one word about it. **Until they prove there will be such an age, they are on a make believe foundation. There is no place called Hell in the Bible, whether it is an age lasting attitude adjustment, or everlasting life with torment.**

- **Protestants changed the second death into eternal life in Hell for the soul or spirit that had been in all those that never believed in God.**
- **Universalist changed the second death into a place where everyone that never believed in God, the souls that were in them will some how be made believers and moved to Heaven with eternal life.**
- **Both Universalist and Protestants must prove the platonic doctrine that all are born with something that is in them that is not subject to death, that mankind has something in them that is immortal that animal do not have.**

Both the doctrine of Hell and the Universalist doctrine that the souls that are in all will be saved are founded on an assumption that a person has an immaterial, invisible, immortal soul in them that cannot die, and this immortal, deathless soul must live forever somewhere.

- **Both must deny that death is a real death because the soul will never die.** Death cannot be the wages of sin for all will have the gift of eternal life; therefore, the soul of no sinner can pay the wages of sin if it is death. Universalist point to Romans 6:23 to prove there is no Hell, but they do not believe it when it says, *"the wages of sin is death."*
- **Both must deny that the penalty of sin is death.** The Protestant does away with death by making death into an eternal life of torment in Hell separated from God; Universalist cannot have death being death or an eternal life separated from God; therefore, they must do away with death. They try to do this by making the end of death mean the soul of all will be given eternal life in Heaven. Both turn death into life, but both do it in different ways. Both make the souls were in the dead living at different places. **For both, if "the wages of sin is death," if death were really death, it would completely destroy both; therefore, both try to destroy death by making death be life for a deathless soul.** Universalist take from the Platonic doctrine that when the soul is set free of the body, the soul will in time return to God, death becomes the instrument of salvation for all.
  - **According to Protestants, the wages of sin is eternal life with torment.**
  - **According to Universalist, the wages of sin is eternal life without torment, even eternal life to those who reject Christ.**
- **Both must deny that die, perish, destroyed, lost, and death are not used with their true meaning,** and must believe that they are only used in a peculiar or theological sense; therefore, they could not be understood without help from someone who is inspired. **Both believe that the soul that is in a person will ever die. According to both, "the wages of sin is death" to the invisible soul of no one.** Just as with innate immoralists, Universalist must redefine many words, life, death, die, dead, destroy, perish, destruction, consumed, kill, end, burned up, and sleep, must **all** be redefined in a way that the world does not use them. See chapter two and three.

#### UNIVERSALIST USE OF "ALL"

The way Universalist use "all" seems to be their main argument.

"But what it really says is IN CHRIST...ALL A-L-L ALL shall be made ALIVE! Then each of the ALL in his own order" (from one of their web pages, "Can this be true?").

They ask questions like: God will have all to be saved (1 Timothy 2:4); can His will be thwarted? Jesus came to save all (John 12:47); will He succeed? Jesus is the savior of the world (1 John 4:14); why don't you believe it? And many more like these. Their thinking seems to be that Christ came to save **all**; and if He does not do it in this lifetime, then after the death of the person He must save the soul that was in the person. This would be great if it was true, but nothing is said about the soul of anyone being saved after his or her death. They know that most do not believe in Christ in this lifetime; therefore, they **must** make **all** believe at some time after death. What will happen after death? Christ says *"For the hour comes, in which **all** that are in the tombs shall hear his voice, and come forth: they that have done good, unto the resurrection of **life**; and they that have done evil, unto the resurrection of **judgment**"* (John 5:28-29). There is nothing said about

anyone being saved after death. The lost are raised to judgment, not to eternal life. *"Now is the acceptable time: behold, now is the day of salvation"* (2 Corinthians 6:2). God loves **all**, and Christ died for **all**, but **all** will not come to Him. He made a person where he or she could choose to, or choose not to. Universalist teaching is that God will show His love to **all** in a way that **all**, even Satan, will love Him. To so overpower the freewill of a person is the same as making them love Him when they could not help it. It would be the same thing as taking their freewill away. This "attitude adjustments" must be strong enough to overpower the spirits that were in the most evil; therefore, they are made to believe even against their will. They make up both (1) this "attitude adjustments," (2) and the place where it takes place because they must have both of them if the souls that were in **all** are to be saved.

**UNIVERSALIST TEACHING OF ALL WILL BE SAVED** makes much of the Bible be foolishness, vain babbling, meaningless, or just an outright lie. It makes:

1. Satan's greatest lie would be no lie, but is the truth. If all will be saved, no one will die. Satan told the truth; but when God said they would die, He is the one who told the greatest lie (Genesis 3).
2. God said, *"The fearful, and unbelieving, and abominable, and murderers, and fornicators, and sorcerers, and idolaters, and all liars; their part shall be in the lake that burns with fire and brimstone; which is the second death"* (Revelation 20:8). Universalist says, "Not so God, all will be saved. None will die the second death, for there cannot be a real second death, the souls that are in all will have eternal life in Heaven."
3. No broad way *"that leads to destruction, and many are they that enter in thereby"* (Matthew 7:13).
4. **No death.** Whatever you think death is, whether death is death, or if death is just a separation from God, no one will be dead; no one will be separated from God. Death could not death. The wages of sin could not be death (Romans 6:23), the wages of sin could not be separation from God. *"The wages of sin is death"* must be changed to some "kind of 'attitude adjustments' necessary for the unbelievers according to their works," which will last for an "age"; but the wages of sin cannot be a real death that will be forever. While this attitude adjustment is going on, the souls that were in the dead persons must be very much alive, just as alive as they will be when it is over; **if the wages of sin is not death, does sin have no wages?**
5. *"But he that obeys not the Son shall not see life"* (John 3:36) must be changed to, "But he that obeys not the Son, even he that denies the Son, the spirit that was in that person that obeys not the Son **shall see eternal life.**"
6. They use *"all made alive"* to teach all the lost will have immortality. When they make *"all made alive"* to be all will be given eternal life at the second coming of Christ, there cannot be a judgment or a second death. All will be saved. No need of a Judgment Day to judge some good and some bad, it is made to be useless for both those who believe in this lifetime, and those who do not believe will be the same, all will be saved. They over look the fact that **the "all" Paul is speaking of are all the saved.** All saints who are asleep in Christ, and **all** saints who will be living at His coming. Nothing is said in that passage about **all** the ones who are not in Christ; they will be raised to judgment, not life at the resurrection; they are

- not **now in Christ**, and they never will have the "life" Christ gives to those who obey Him. Their names are not in the book of life. *"For we are a sweet savor of Christ unto God, in them that are saved, and in them that perish: to the one a savor from death unto death; to the other a savor from life unto life"* (2 Corinthians 2:15-16). Christ will raise them from the dead, but only to be judged and return to the dead *"from death unto death"*; and there will never be another resurrection.
7. Makes parables of Christ not true. They do not teach anything and; therefore, are useless. **There will be no tares.** Christ said, *"I will say to the reapers, Gather up first the tares, and bind them into bundles to burn them; but gather the wheat into my barn"* (Matthew 13:30). Christ was wrong. The tares will not be gathered out of the kingdom and burned at the end of the age (aion-age, not world). The tares will not be turned into wheat and gathered into the kingdom, for they will be burned as Christ said they would be *"at the end of the age;"* burning the tares was to get rid of them by completely destroying them. In this parable these that are represented by the tares will be destroyed like useless weed that are cast into the fire, there is nothing said about tormenting tares that are indescribable, that are fire-proof and cannot be burned. **No bad fish.** All the bad little fishes will be turned into good little fishes; there will be no bad little fishes to burn *"at the end of the age."*
  8. *"I tell you Nay: but, except you repent, you shall all in like manner perish"* (Luke 13:1-5). Universalist says not so Jesus, all souls will be saved; no soul will perish. It can be asked of them as they ask, "Did Christ not know what He was saying; why don't you believe it?" Even they cannot deny that Christ said, *"Except you repent, you shall all likewise perish,"* just as did the Galileans that were killed and their blood mingled with the sacrifices. Why do they not believe Him? How do they change *"perish"* into *"you shall all likewise be saved even if you do not repent"*?
  9. *"Not every one that says unto me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of Heaven; but he that does the will of my Father who is in Heaven. Many will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, did we not prophesy by your name, and by your name cast out demons, and by your name do many mighty works? And then will I profess unto them, I never knew you: depart from me, you that work iniquity"* (Matthew 7:21-23). How could Christ have been so wrong? How could He not know that the Universalist says **all** will enter into the kingdom of Heaven? Why would Christ be telling them that in the Judgment Day after the resurrection not all will enter into the kingdom of Heaven?
    - **Universalist:** **All** that work iniquity will enter into the kingdom of Heaven.
    - **Christ:** **Not all** will enter into the kingdom of Heaven (Matthew 7:21-23). Why do they not believe Him? Why would Christ tell those that *"work iniquity"* to depart from Him? Did He not know all will be saved and all will come to Him?
  10. They must change the words of Christ. *"He that believes and is baptized shall be saved; but he that believes not shall be condemned"* must be changed to, "He that believes and he that believes not shall both be saved." Why do they not believe

Christ? Why do they make, "*Shall be saved,*" and, "*Shall be condemned*" both mean, "*Shall be saved*"?

11. Makes being a Christian and living for Christ be no better than not being a Christian. The souls that are now in all persons are going to end up being saved. Makes taking the Gospel to the lost a waste of time. The souls that are in all are going to be saved anyway, and those who do not hear the Gospel may spend less time in the age lasting Hell and have less torment than will those who hear and reject the Gospel; therefore, taking the Gospel to them may do more harm to most than it will do good. Because most that hear the Gospel will not believe it and will reject Christ, most will be made to suffer longer in the "age lasting attitude adjustment" than they would if the Gospel were not taken to them and they never rejected Christ.

Will Jesus save everyone?

Gary Amorality in an E mail to me June 15,1999, said, "You've taken a big step out of Hell, but you still leave Jesus as a sinner. He didn't accomplish what He came to do...save the world. If He fails in His mission, He can't be the Messiah."

1. God give His Son to save "*whosoever believeth on Him.*" (John 3:16), but they must believe in their lifetime, and many do not. "*Without faith it is impossible to be well-pleasing unto God*" (Hebrews 11:6). God will not raise them and save everyone after He torments them for an age. He will not take away their freewill and make them believe.
2. Paul said they who practice the works of the flesh **shall not** inherit the kingdom of God (Galatians 5:16-24). Universalist says Paul was wrong, they who practice the works of the flesh shall inherit the kingdom of God after they spend some time in some kind of torment having an "attitude adjustments."
3. Christ said, "*He that obeys not the son shall not see life,*" (John 3:36). Universalist says they will see life. How could those who shall not see life, and shall not inherit the kingdom of God have everlasting life in the kingdom they shall not inherit (Matthew 7:21-23)?

**How does Universalist think Jesus is a sinner?** Gary said, "But you still leave Jesus as a sinner." Jesus had no sins of His own and even if He saved no one, not one person, He had no sins, and not giving eternal life to those who do not believe in Him does not make Him a sinner as Gary Amorality said it would.

**Universalist** says God is a God of love, and He will not kill any; all will be saved. They overlook the fact that He is also a just God, and sin must be paid for with death (Romans 6:23). The death of the sinner is just if it be death in this life, or if it the second death at the judgment for **all** who has not had their sins washed away by the blood of Christ; for **all** have sinned; therefore, it is just for them to receive the wages of their sins. If they have not had their sins washed away by the blood of Christ, raised with Christ in baptism, the sinner will die. Death is sure and just for them. Throughout the Old Testament, God destroyed those who rejected Him, as in the flood, or when He ordered the destruction of the Amalekites. He never tormented His enemies. He destroyed them; their life ended. Death was the way God dealt with His enemies then, and the way He will deal with them at the judgment. He will destroy them with death, the second death, not torment them forever or for an age.

Universalist may think this cruel, but it is justice, not cruelly. God would not be God if He were not just? If He had no law, which has a penalty for not keeping it, He could not rule and there would be no sin. There is sin, and its penalty is death.

E. Petavel, D. D.: "In the first place we complain of its relative novelty. It does not appear in the history of doctrine until the beginning of the third century. Barnabas, Clement of Rome, Hermas, Ignatius, Polycarp, Justin Martyr, Theophilus of Antioch, Irenaeus, all the first fathers of the church are Conditionalists. Not one of them taught Universalism. Merely the first slight traces of the doctrine are contained in the writings of Clement of Alexandria." *The Extinction Of Evil*, page 90, 1889.

### **CAN ANYONE BE SAVED WITHOUT THE NEW BIRTH?**

*“Jesus answered and said to him, ‘Truly, truly, I say to you, unless one is born again, he cannot see the kingdom of God...I say to you, unless one is born of water and the Spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God,’”* Where Jesus said “cannot” many make many exceptions, some of which without the new birth would put many more in Heaven then will be there by the new birth.

- One exception: Some say there is an “age of accountability” where all will go to Heaven without the new birth if they die before they reach it. How can anyone even know that there is such an age, or how can anyone know what that age is when nothing is said about it in the Bible? It is added even by those who say they do not add to the Bible, and it puts many in Heaven without the new birth; world wide it would put more in Heaven than the new birth. It would put one in Heaven that died the day before reaching that age, and another in Hell that died the day after. This exception is nothing more than an attempt by those that believe in an immortal soul that is not subject to death to keep billions of children out of the fiery Hell and from being tormented by God. This exception put billions in Heaven without the death of Christ for it claims that the billions will be in Heaven because they have no sins and have no need to be saved by the blood and death of Christ.
- Another exception: Many believe it would be unjust of God to endlessly torment the billions and billions of the world that never know anything about Christ; therefore, never had a chance to believe in Christ and be born again. Even though most of this billions and billions worship other gods they will somehow end up saved in Heaven without the Bible, without the new birth, without having faith in Christ.
  - This one makes it better to live in a part of the world where the Gospel is not known for many more from that part of the world will be in Heaven than will be from where it is well known.
- Perhaps the biggest exception: Universalism believes all that never heard the Gospel and all that did hear it and rejected it will be given another chance after death, a chance that will be so strong that none can reject it, all, even the soul that was in the most evil person will be made to be saved, not one soul will be able to continuer the unbelief of the person it was in, even Satan will be made to saved.
  - This one makes it both (1) OK to do what ever you want to, you will be saved anyway. (2) Of not much if any use to take the Gospel to the lost for they will be saved if you do or if you do not.
    - All are an attempt to make the narrow way more broad (Matthew 7:13).

**End Note**

The Universalist teaching that all the spirits that were in all persons, without exception, will end up saved has had a negative effect on their membership, and they survived by many of the Universalist merging with the Unitarians and became the Unitarian Universalist Association Of Congregations.

Many in the Church of God and Congregation of God also teach there will be "an opportunity for salvation" after the resurrection, but unlike the Universalist, they believe some will reject it, and for those that do there will be the second death, not being eternal tormented by God.

## CHAPTER TEN

### The Results Of Attributing Evil Pagan Teachings To God By Religious People

**This God slandering Dark Age doctrine of Hell makes God evil, cruel, sadistic, and fiendish. By some unknown and twisted reasoning it is assumed that for God to be just He must forever torment the souls of the lost for His justice demands this; how does "God is a just God" demand that there is a Hell, or prove there is a Hell? From the first sin, God's sentence to Adam was not eternal torment but death. Throughout the Bible the sentence for sin is always death, not torment. *"The wages of sin is death."* That His justice demands that He must forever torment the souls that were in unbelievers is without any foundation in His word. To put it pure and simple, it is a doctrine of man and it makes God evil, cruel, and fiendish for if the punishment exceeds the crime by millions of times, it is injustice, not justice.**

If a man should put a single person that had raped and killed his wife in a dark pit and torment him day and night for ten years, most would condemn him to the hottest part of "Hell." Yet, some teach that God made mankind knowing that most of them would be lost, and many millions would never hear His word; yet He knew before He made them that He was going to torment them worse than anything we can imagine, not for ten years, but time without end. It will be God doing the tormenting; God will be the one who makes the fire and keeps it burning forever. Satan or the evil ones will not be tormenting themselves. Many try to justify God for doing more than any man can do, and being more cruel and sadistic than the most evil man could ever be by saying we cannot understand the evil of sin. The God of the Bible is a God of love and justice, not as many make Him, sadistic, fiendish, cruel, evil, and in character much like Satan. It is a certainty (1) that in the Hell that is preached today no one will be corrected by the torment, (2) that no one in Hell will ever be corrected by Hell; therefore, it can only be sadistic and there is no way that endless sadistic torment of most of mankind by God would not make Him sadistic; much of today's preaching makes God both evil and sadistic.

**The Ultimate Evil:** "The idea of never-ending conscious agony is so completely revolting to our instinctive moral and judicial senses that we could fittingly call it the ultimate evil. If we're honest about the matter, this is exactly what it is. After all, is it possible to come up with a worse notion than perpetual fiery conscious misery – with no merciful respite or end to the suffering? The mere idea is so disturbing that it makes it a very hard subject to discuss calmly. How can anyone with an ounce of human compassion contemplate the idea dispassionately when the view of ceaseless torture is so profoundly disturbing?" From chapter eight of: [www.hell-know.net/](http://www.hell-know.net/)

**The Deprived, Revolting Evil:** "To torment a child that dies without ever knowing anything about God or His word forever day and night with a torment worse than any pain we can have on



this earth would not be 'justice,' but sadistic. What kind of a person could love a God who was tormenting his wife and children with more pain than anyone has ever had in this life? When we are in Heaven, do you think we will be singing of God's love and mercy while He is cruelly tormenting most of mankind and many you now love, your wife or husband, your father and mother, your child, your friend? Is there a greater perversion of Scripture than to attribute such characteristics to God? Is it reasonable to believe that the righteous in their glorified state can be indifferent to, and unaffected by, the endless sufferings of countless millions of their fellow beings, among who would probably be found parents, children, husbands, wives, etc.? Is it possible that they will be destitute of deprived of qualities which are considered most lovely and godlike in this life; viz., piety, sympathy, compassion, commiseration for others' woes, etc.? Will insensibility to the woes of the wretched ever become a virtue? Will that which is a vice in this life, become a grace in the glorious future life?" From a web page by "Ron" which is no longer on the net.

Today, many think that the electric chair or hanging of a person who has killed many is inhumane though it takes only a few seconds; but these same people see no inconsistency in believing it is just for God to torment the same person, even if that person has never heard His word, with a torment which they say is much worse than the few seconds would be, and this torment by God will not last only for a few seconds, but for an endless eternity.

**More Cruel And Sadistic Than Any Heathen God:** The Calvin God that is believed in and worshiped by many is a God many times more evil, more cruel, and sadistic than any heathen god. Before the Calvin god made the world, he rigged the outcome and chose to make most of mankind to be lost before he made them. According to Calvin his god even made it impossible for most to believe, but will torment them forever for not believing. The torment by the worshipers of heathen gods soon ended with death of the ones being tormented; but Calvinism teaches their god made most men, many millions, just so he could torment them without end for eternity "for his good pleasure." According to Hell fire Calvin teachers, this torment will be many times worse than any torment by the worshipers of heathen gods; and will never end in the death of those being tormented. How could any person who has an ounce of compassion love and worship such a god?

Those who believe in the Calvin god say this god chose you to be saved, or to be lost before he made the world. If you are one of the few chosen by this evil god to be saved, even if you live in the most out of the way place in the world and never know of God or Christ, when the time comes for you to be saved you will be. You can do nothing about it, and you cannot say no. If you are one of the many he chose before you were born to torment forever, there is no use to send preachers to you; there is no use for you to read the Bible or do anything; there is nothing you or anyone can do. According to Calvin this god made you just because he wants to torment you forever, and he will. Such a god is like a very rich ruler who torments a thousand people "for his good pleasure" and enjoyment, and chose you to make rich and happy. He would not be worthily of your love, but only your contempt. To destroy those who chose to be evil is one thing; but to make them be evil before they were born, and then torment them without end with more pain than they can know in this lifetime for being what he made them to be is not justice. He would be an unjust and evil god. He made them evil and gave them no chance not to be, and then torments them for being what He made them to be. If you put a person who worked in a store in the electric chair for unknowingly short changing a person one cent, your injustice would not equal that of a god that made one person just so he could

torment that person for endless ages. Many say he did this with most of mankind. Most are filled with grief when a loved one or friend has some sickness that makes them suffer, even when they know the suffering will soon end with death. Yet, they worship a god who they believe will take pleasure in the suffering of billions without end; and not only will he take pleasure in it, he will be the one that is tormenting them and making them suffer, and he made them just so he could torment and make them suffer. **Calvin did not get his doctrine from the heathens for the heathens had no doctrine as cruel, as fiendish, as black, or as unjust as his god is.**

**A Scandal Against The Almighty:** "For were a woman to commit a crime against her husband, and he punishes her by holding her hand in the fire until the flesh burned off the bones, he would be pronounced one of the most cruel beings in the world; and if he were to escape justice, he would be hunted as a wild beast; and when brought to trial and condemned, he would be pronounced worthy of thrice the punishment that the law could inflict. And he would have been tried and condemned by men, most of whom, perhaps, believed that God would take that same woman, for that same crime that she had committed against her husband, and put-not only her hand, but her whole self into a Lake of Fire and Brimstone; -not for half an hour-not for a day-not for a year-nor for ten thousand years only, but for all Eternity. Also, that this Burning of her in a Blazing Hell would be so agreeable to the determination of the Almighty that no pity could be excited, no mercy shown; but that there, in that Lake of Fire she should gnash, and groan, and wail Eternally. Oh! How horrid the picture! And what a terrible crime, even in the light of their own actions, to charge God with such cruelty!" John Kent, "Eternal Burning, A Scandal Against The Almighty," 1879.

**A God Of Infinite Horror:** "That God would rise the wicked and give them immortality only to torment them in a devil's hell unendingly is both gross and vulgar, even blasphemous. Such a God is not the one described in the Bible...If the God of heaven subjects innumerable billions to unending and indescribable torment, it can only be seen as the one infinite horror." Leroy Garrett, Restoration Review, November 1990.

**A Mockery Of Truth And A Blasphemy Against Deity:** "My opponent will make an effort to try and demonstrate that our loving, compassionate, merciful God will be content with nothing less than the perpetual, never diminishing, horrific *torture* of the vast majority of mankind. Not only is that *not* what the Scriptures teach, it has the distinct disadvantage of portraying our God as a *Monster* the likes of which the human mind cannot even conceive. It is to proclaim a God foreign to the inspired revelation. Thus, it is a mockery of Truth and a blasphemy against Deity." Al Maxey, Maxey-Thrasher Debate on the Eternal Destiny of the Wicked by two ministers of the church of Christ at: <http://www.zianet.com/maxey/MxThrshr.htm> - I recommend this debate to all members of the church of Christ of which he is a member, and to all who want the truth.

**Worst Than Gods Of Paganism:** "Paganism in its worst forms has never surpassed, if it has equaled, the savage and terrible descriptions which have been given by Christians of their God. The character ascribed to Him; the dreadful wrath and vengeance with which He is moved; the cold and malignant purpose of creation in regard to million of souls; the stern severity and gloom of His government; the horrible and never-ceasing tortures which He will inflict on His helpless, children-all this, and much more of like character, defies the power of language to set it forth in its true light, or to present it in a manner adequate to its shocking revolting reality." Thomas Thayer, "The Origin And History Of The Doctrine Of Endless Punishment."

**Makes The Universe A Theater Of Cursing And Blasphemy:** "What, then, is the doctrine of endless misery? Stripped of all its drapery, it is no more or less than this: That a large part of the human family are doomed to suffer the most intense and indescribable torments as long as God shall exist, without the least hope or possibility of being benefited by their sufferings. In some part of this beautiful universe, God has prepared an awful, dismal, burning hell, and there countless myriads of human beings shall weep and groan, unpitied and unrelieved, while ceaseless ages shall roll; and when ten thousand times ten thousand years shall have passed, they shall have as

long to suffer as if their sufferings had but just began. And, then, to think of the number of the lost to remember that there are on this earth not less than eight hundred millions of human beings, and that out of these there are not more than fifty millions that can be saved, upon the broadest system of partialism; and that, by consequence, there must be more than seventy thousand souls going down to hell every day; and, then, to think of generations that have past, and reflect upon the vast and countless multitudes that must be congregated in that huge reservoir of tears and woe; the very thought bears the lie upon its front. The degree of the punishment outrages all ideas of proportion between guilt and punishment, and the number of the victims shocks all feelings of humanity or mercy. It makes the universe a theater of cursing and blasphemy, rather than a field for the display of the boundless perfections of a merciful and benevolent Creator." I. D. Williamson, *An Examination Of The Doctrine Of Endless Punishment*, 1860.

**God The Tormentor:** Spurgeon, one of the best known of Baptist preachers, said, "When thou diest, thy soul will be tormented alone; that will be a hell for it; but at the day of judgment thy body will join thy soul and then thou wilt have twin hells, thy soul sweating drops of blood, and thy body suffused with agony. In fire exactly like that which we have on earth, thy body will lie, asbestos like, forever unconsumed, all thy veins roads for the feet of pain to travel on, every nerve a string on which the devil shall forever play his diabolical tune of hell's unutterable lament." From his sermon "The Resurrection of the Dead." Like most who believe God will forever torment many billions, he must have some revelation that is not in the Bible to tell him about their suffering. In his day most orthodox Protestants believed the Devil would be doing the tormenting, but today most orthodox Protestants think he was wrong, that God is the one who will be doing the tormenting. The man made "Hell" is forever changing. What was orthodox in his day is no longer orthodox. For many Baptists his truth is no longer truth.

Ebenezer Erskine in "The Judgment," "How shall the adulterer satisfy lust when he lies on a bed of flames? The swearer shall have enough of wounds and blood when the devil shall torture his body and rack his soul in hell. The drunkard shall have plenty of his cups when scalding lead shall be poured down his throat, and his breath draw flames of fire instead of air."

**An Atrocious Slander On God:** Henry Ward Beeches speaking of Michael Angelo's painting, *The Last Judgment* said, "Let anyone see the enormous gigantic coils of fiends and man; let anyone look at the defiant Christ that stands like a superb athlete at the front, hurling his enemies from him and calling his friends toward him as Hercules might have done; let anyone look upon that hideous wriggling mass that goes plunging down through the air-serpents and man and beasts of every nauseous kind, mixed together; let him look at the lower parts of the picture, where with the pitchforks men are by devils being cast into cauldrons and into burning fires, where hateful fiends are gnawing the skulls of suffering sinners, and where there is hellish cannibalism going on-let a man look at that picture and scenes which it depicts, and he sees what were the ideas which man once had of Hell and of divine justice. It was a night-mare as hideous as was ever begotten by the hellish brood it-self; and it was an atrocious slander on God...I do not wonder that men have reacted from these horrors."

Jonathan Edwards: "The world will probably be converted into a great lake or liquid globe of fire, in which the wicked shall be overwhelmed, which will always be in tempest, in which they shall be tossed to and fro, having no rest day or night, vast waves and billows of fire continually rolling over their heads, of which they shall forever be full of a quick sense within and without; their heads, their eyes, their tongues, their hands, their feet, their loins and their vitals, shall forever be full of a flowing, melting fire, fierce enough to melt the very rocks and elements; and, also, they shall eternally be full of the most quick and lively sense to feel the torments; not for one minute, not for one day, not for one age, not for two ages, not for a hundred ages, not for ten thousand millions of ages, one after another, but for forever and ever, without an end at all, and never to be delivered."

Benson: "He will exert all his divine attributes to make them as wretched as the capacity of their nature will admit...They must be perpetually swelling their enormous sums of guilt, and still running deeper, immensely deeper, in debt to divine and infinite justice. Hence after the longest imaginable

period, they will be so far from having discharged their debt that they will find more due than when they first began to suffer." He has God charging interest on the debt of the suffering sinner owes Him at such a high rate that the sinner gets more behind as time goes on. If the punishment exceeds the crime by billions of times would it be justice or injustice?

Dr. E. Beech: "Involves God, his whole administration, and his eternal kingdom in the deepest dishonor that the mind of man or angel can conceive, by the violation of the highest and most sacred principles of honor and right, and on the scale of infinity and eternity" page 225. "The human mind cannot be held back from abhorring such a theory, except by the most unnatural violence to its divinely inspired convictions of honor and right" page 306, Conflict of the Ages.

Troy B. Channing: "The devil must make hell look like a VERY torturous place so that our view of God is altered into a view that is NOT merciful"

**What kind of justice is this?** To fill many books with the most harrowing descriptions of torment would not equal the torment we are told that God will give to the soul that was in just one person for all eternity. After a soul was in someone who never knows of God in their lifetime on earth, when that soul has been in torment in for trillions times trillions of years because the person it was in did not believe in God, we are told that soul will still have eternity with not one second less time to suffer. Those who believe in Hell say, "It is justice." My question to them is how do they know it to be justice, where did God tell this to them? It being justice is something they had to make up to try to justify the heathen Hell, even when it make God be much more evil than Satan. They are saying, "Stepping on a person's lawn may get you a disapproving look, but stepping on God's lawn will get the soul that is in you eternal torment by God." No one could know this without a revelation from God, and there is no such revelation, it is an addition, it is making God evil just to justify their evil teaching.

**Do you wonder where in the Bible they found things like the devil pouring scalding lead down the throat of a soul, and many thousands of like things? The answer is that they are in the same passage where they found Hell, and the same passage where they found the name of Hell. They found them in the teaching of men, not the Bible.**

J. W. McGarvey and E. D. Slough: *"It has been very vehemently argued and insisted upon, that such punishment for sin would be unjust on the part of God, because the penalty would be far beyond the demerits of the sin for which it was inflicted. To inflict punishment such as is described in the Bible upon a human being, and that continuing without end, for the sins which he committed during the brief stay which he experienced here on earth, is out of all proportion, when viewed as a matter of justice. Justice demands that the penalty shall be proportioned to the crime. Well it does look that way; it undoubtedly does. No father would inflict that kind of punishment upon his son for any conceivable offense against the father, it is argued, and I believe that is true. I would hate to see the man that would. He would not be my friend. It would show not only a want of justice, but an audacious rebellion against all sense of the goodness and mercy and love, of which we have already spoken. But now then, whilst it does appear that way; and if I were the Judge I would not give that sentence; if I had the trial of the matter, I am sure that I would not allow that sentence to be passed"* McGarvey's Sermons, page 31. I would like to fill two chapters on that extract from McGarvey's sermons. Here is material for a whole volume. Never was a more formidable argument uttered against the theory we are opposing than this pathetic confession. I wish I had space to demonstrate that God is as good as McGarvey tried to believe him to be. I would that I could cause you to see that McGarvey felt his whole nature revolting against the notion he was defending...McGarvey has used his powers of reason, and his mature judgment, upon this theory of retribution, and he found it repulsive to his soul. That it was, to his judgment, out of all proportion when viewed as a matter of justice. Watts was not infallible, but if that principle he introduced is

correct, *'that God himself has never given revelation contrary to our sense of right or reason,'* then here is one of the ablest defenders of that system who has entered the pulpit in a century, with his fingers emphasizing with emotional gestures to a great audience, in Louisville, Ky., that it is out of all proportion when viewed as a matter justice—and if any one else but God, he would hate to see him, etc. That it would be a rebellion against all we know of the word justice. This coming from so great a scholar as McGarvey makes it the most pathetic and serious. And it makes it more obviously false when presented with a touch of the poet's brush. McGarvey offers an apology for it. How? *'Well, who am I? I am a sinner.'* And therefore the sinner has never learned what justice is, and cannot judge between what would be right and what would be grossly unjust. No. But here, God has not left us in the dark as to the meaning justice, when He has taught it with untiring patience to His weak creatures, and now He asks us to judge if He has not dealt justly with us. McGarvey counted himself no greater sinner than other Christians. The Church of God is supposed to be a holy temple, a righteous people, loving justice and mercy—A fit habitation of God through the spirit, filled with God's thoughts, full of knowledge of God, to which McGarvey has attained a reasonably high degree. And it is to such men as he, as well as all degrees below him, that this punishment, such as he believe the Bible to teach, if executed by a father against a son for any conceivable offence, would be an audacious rebellion against the goodness and mercy of love, And it is to such men, who are capable of sound judgment, that God challenges to show where He is unjust and to use their own power to test Him. Then there must be something out of joint with the theory, charging God with such principles of conduct toward His own creatures, utterly repugnant and audacious to the intelligence of man, when viewed as matters of justice. Surely, that which rebels against the common sense of man could not become a virtue in Heaven. For however frail we may be, there is an inhered sense of right in us, cultivated by our education and associations. And between that sense of right and the idea of endless misery the chasm is so vast and unfathomable that even the mind of McGarvey saw it as span less as eternity. And his judgment crumpled up into that of a defenseless child, saying I don't know how it can be." E. D. Slough, "Indictment Of Eternal Torment—The Self-negation of a Monstrous Doctrine," pages 218-200, 1914, church of Christ. On line at: [www.robertwr.com/EternalTorment.htm](http://www.robertwr.com/EternalTorment.htm)

E. Petavel, D. D.: "The lamentable results of the Platonic doctrine may be seen in the theology of a Tertullian and an Augustine, –theology called orthodox, –which makes the God of love an Executioner whom innumerable victims will curse eternally. Such a doctrine is a burden even to its adherents. It has drawn from them admissions, which we are bound to record. Henry Rogers declared *that 'for his part he would not be sorry to see every child die at the age of four years.'* Albert Barnes admits, with a soul full of anguish that he cannot understand why there are men destined to suffer forever. *'The Gospel,'* says Isaac Taylor, *'fills us with a universal sympathy which sometimes make us regret that it must be true in all its teaching.'* Calvin himself cannot refrain from confessing that the decree of God concerning sinners seems to him horrible...In a word, the traditional dogma conducts to pessimism by making evil eternal. **What has been the result? Extremes meeting, the doctrine of eternal suffering has led to Universalism.** More or less secretly many of the partisans of the traditional dogma, unable to hold it any longer, have quitted their position, to embrace the hope of a universal salvation; while others wander in the penumbra of eschatological skepticism" *The Extinction Of Evil*, page 78, 1889.

## **THE CAUSE OF ATHEISM AND STUMBLING IN MANY Matthew 18:6 A DOCTRINE THAT MAKES ATHEISTS**

**God has been made so cruel, and this doctrine is so unthinkable that it has probably created more atheists, and caused more weak believers to fall away than any other false teaching.** The dread of Hell has caused misery and mental anguish to countless millions; **instead of the horror of Hell turning many to God to escape eternal torment, many millions have been turned away from such an unjust God.** The doctrine of Hell is one of Satan's best tools to turn many away from Christ. Do you

want to give an account to God at the judgment for teaching it? No heathen religion has a god as unjust and fiendish as many "Christians" make their God.

Tim Crosby in "Ministry." "As a child, Robert Ingersoll heard a preacher proclaim the doctrine that God subjects sinners to unending torment in hell. Ingersoll decided that if God were like that, then he hated Him. Later he wrote of this belief that it 'makes man an eternal victim and God an eternal fiend. It is the one infinite horror. **Below this Christian dogma, savagery cannot go.' There are substantial moral and logical difficulties in believing in a God who tortures His enemies forever. Like Ingersoll, thousands of thinking men have turned away from such a God.**"

Edward White: "It cannot be denied that the frightful doctrines on the future of humanity...supported by the general authority of nearly all Christendom for at least fourteen centuries, are regarded with contemptuous skepticism by the bulk of the existing male population of Europe, who assigns these articles of 'the faith' as the chief reason for their ever extending and fierce revolt against Christianity" Life In Christ, page 65, 1878.

George Storrs: "Ye shall not surely die, had its origin with the old serpent, I cannot divest myself of the conviction that the notion that wicked men will be kept eternally alive in torments, and never die, had its origin from the same source, as it appears to be a perfect fac-simile; **and that it was invented to inspire hard thoughts of God and keep men from turning to Him by repentance and faith, or confidence, and acknowledging their sins against the God of love. And I solemnly believe, this doctrine has kept more away from God, and driven them into infidelity, than any other doctrine that was ever promulgated. I am solemnly convinced that it has done more to destroy men than all other errors put together.**" The Harvest Herald, Sermon Two, page 1.

Roger E. Dickson: "This would only lead to the fact that God is also fiendish, that is, He takes delight in the punishment of the wicked. A billion earth years from now He would be this cosmic sadist who continually went to some far corner of existence to make sure the lost were still tormented for their forty or fifty years of ignorance a billion earth years in the past. In another billion years He will check again, and then, again and again. Is this the type of god we proclaim to the world? Is this the god of love, mercy, and justice that we read about in the Bible? This is not God, but a god some have created after heir own vengeful nature" Life, Death and Beyond, page 163, Star Bible Publications, Inc. church of Christ.

Clark Pinnock, "Everlasting torture is intolerable from a moral point of view because it pictures God acting like a bloodthirsty monster who maintains an everlasting Auschwitz for his enemies whom he does not even allow to die. How can one love a God like that? I suppose one might be afraid of him, but could we love and respect him? Would we want to strive to be like him in this mercilessness?" Four Views On Hell, pages 149, 1992. Our intuition completely rejects the idea that anyone, human or divine, who endlessly inflicted pain on another, could be called "good."

**God is not a God of terror; not a cruel and evil being this doctrine makes Him to be. Do you think He will say to those who teach He is unjust, "Well done, good and faithful servant...enter you into the joy of your Lord" (Matthew 15:21)?**

If the reason anyone converts is because of a fear of Hell, his or her conversion is just superficial, not real, not because he or she had a love for God, just afraid of being tormented in Hell. A conversion because of the fear of Hell makes a hypocrite, not a Christians. The harm that has been done by the heresy of eternal torment is beyond belief.

#### **DILEMMAS OF THEIR OWN MAKING**

The doctrine of Hell puts those who teach it in dilemmas from which they have no way out.

(1) Dilemma number one: According to most who believe in Hell only a few will escape it, but many that believe in Hell say all who die before the age accountably will

escape Hell and will go to Heaven. By their own teaching, the Abortionist maybe sending more to Heaven and saving more from Hell than preaching is. Yet, many preachers that teach "Hell" with all its horrors bitterly oppose abortions, which by their own teaching, is saving more from "Hell" than they are. Why? According to their own teaching, in the US alone by abortion millions have been sent to Heaven, but the soul in most of them would have ended up being in eternal torment if they had lived. If I believed their teaching about Hell, I would be all for a sure way to save the souls that are in millions of people from an eternity of torment and put these souls safely in Heaven.

(2) Dilemma number two: Many pagans count girl babies of little or no use, and kill many of them. For centuries, millions of girl babies in China have been killed at birth. Today, because of the law in China of one child per family, many girl babies are being killed at birth by parents who want a boy. According to the teaching of those who believe in Hell there are millions of souls that were in Chinese girls in Heaven that would have been tormented in Hell if the girls that were in had lived, but not many souls that were in Chinese boys are in Heaven.

(3) Dilemma number three: According to them, the souls that were in the children killed in the Old Testament in Gehenna would be blessed for by the children not having a few years of life with pain and problems, these souls will forever live with God in Heaven.

There are many more dilemmas like these. The souls in how many children have been sent to Heaven by wars? How many souls were send to Heaven when the two A-bombs were dropped in world war two; do we need more wars and bombs to keep more souls out or Hell and to send more to Heaven? How many souls will be in Heaven because the children they were in had no food or some sickness? By their teaching, the soul of a child that is killed or dies soon after birth is blessed over those that live, for most of them that do not die as a child the soul that is in them will live forever in torment, and all those souls that are in a child that dies when they are a child will live forever in Heaven. According to their own teaching (if they were right), Heaven will have more souls that were in the persons that were killed as a child than by all the preaching.

Annihilation is God giving people freedom to choose not to accept Christ and the life He died to give them. Their not-accepting Christ and life means they have chosen to accept death. God gives them their choice, and lets them pay the wages of their sin, death, for they have chosen not to let Christ pay it for them. He is a just God, not a cruel sadistic God who will torment forever. Some say, "God is a God of justice and sin must be paid for, or God would not be just." Yes, but being sadistic is not justice in anyone's book, and the very fact that He is just would not let Him cruelly and sadistically torment anyone forever without end. The wages of our sins were paid by the death of Christ; those who have not been baptized into His death will pay for their own sins in the second death, not by having scalding lead poured down his or her throat for all eternity. God made all out of nothing and has the right to send any back to nothing. Sending those back to nothing that choose to not give Him the worship He is entitled to is His right, and there is nothing cruel about it; they have the life He has given to them, and have chosen to live it for themselves.

**MAKES GOD HAVE A DOUBLE STANDARD**  
**One for Him and another for us**

What would be wrong for us to do, for us torment all that do not believe, is made to be right and good for God to do “for His good pleasure” on a scale that is infinitely greater than would be possible for all men combined to do.

**Many have tried to lessen the cruelty in a number of ways.** (1) Perhaps the most common one is to make Hell be only in the mind of the lost.

Billy Graham said, "I have often wondered if Hell is a terrible burning within our hearts for God, to fellowship with God, a fire that we can never quench."

This does not help any and maybe makes it crueler. Mental pain is as bad and sometimes worse than physical pain. God tormenting most of mankind by making them live in mental pain for eternity would not make Him any less cruel. (2) Some have tried to justify this cruelty by saying the punishment must fit the crime. They are saying that if a person commits a crime against a person he or she does not know, it is not as bad as the same crime would be if committed against his or her mother, and the same crime committed against God is infinitely worse, but no one could know this without a revelation from God; where in God's word does He say the same trespasses become infinitely worse when it is against God? Jesus teaches that what ever we do or do not do for mankind we do or do not do it for God (Matthew 25:40, 45), and He makes no distinction as to who the sin was against. **For centuries many of the best thinkers in the orthodox churches have tried to find a way to justify Hell.** I think the best they have done is to say the same crime/sin committed against an infinite God demands an infinite punishment, and God would not be just if He did not torment all sinners forever; they have tried to make it look as if He has no way out and must torment in Hell. What new revelation do they have that makes God be wrong when He said, "*The wages of sin is death*"?

**First:** they are speaking where the Bible does not say anything, and they are making God be bound by their theology; therefore, they give God no choice, making God be bound to forever torment the souls that are in most of mankind all to justify their "Hell."

**Second:** God's law in the Old Testament had the same punishment if the sin were against man or against Himself. To lie was the same if the lie were to a person or to God. His law was an eye for an eye no matter whom the sin was against. Their theology makes it be one eye if the lie were told to a person, but if the same lie were told to God it would be an endless number of eyes.

**Third:** If any sin against an infinite God demands an infinite punishment of eternal torment in Hell, all have sinned. If the payment for our sin against an infinite God is eternal torment, Christ did not pay it for us. If the payment is death, Christ did pay it for us.

**Fourth:** God made us and if He had chosen not to give anyone eternal life, to let us pass out of exists, to return to not existing, He would still be a good and merciful God for giving us the life we have. But, God has given us much more if we will only believe and obey Him. He has given His only Son that we may be given life, not death. He has saved us from the wages of sin; the death that we deserve and given us life.

**Fifth:** Who could love and worship a God that according to traditional doctrine would have made our father, mother, wife or husband, our children, and many we know and love just so He could torment them, and give them no change to not be tormented.

Throughout the Old Testament, God destroyed His enemies, Sodom and Gomorrah, the flood, drowning in the Red Sea, etc. He did not torment them forever. The Bible does not teach it is the character or nature of God to torment the lost.



Not only is Hell an addition to the Bible but also Hell is many times crueller than anything the pagans ever even thought of. Because for most it is something that is far away, and not something they can see now, I do not think they can see how cruel they are being to most, or how cruel they are making God be. Because it is not something that is not real to them, they are able to tell themselves "it is justice." If the Hell they teach was real, and they could look over into it and see God tormenting the souls that are in most of mankind in the terrible way they now teach that He will be doing, they would be terrified of such an evil being as they say their God is. **How can anyone not see this?**

**Believing in Hell and the doctrine of an immortal soul that cannot die and must forever be tormented is as heartless as any person can be, and is loving, and is worshipping the most cruel, sadistic, and fiendish of all Gods. If being created in the image of God means their souls cannot die, but must forever be tormented, then being in the image of God is a curse for the souls in most of mankind;** it would have been better for them to be as animals are. God made all things that are, if Hell does exist, it could only have been God that thought it up and made it.

**Do those who teach the doctrine of Hell really believe in Hell?** The plain inference is that they do not believe in it. They see some of their family, their friends, those they work with, or that lives next door that they say are going to Hell at death, but do little or nothing about it. If they really believe in Hell when they see unsaved people they know and love dying all around them, why do they do so little to save them? They seem to care more about what is on television than they do about the eternal torment of those souls in those they say they love, and countless millions of others. How many are there that call them self Christian, but have never warned even one person about this horrible place they believe most souls are going to, that work with some daily for years but never say anything to them about the eternal torment that they say they believe the souls that are in their loved ones will be in?

**The Saints In Heaven Are Deprived Of Qualities God Has Given To Us, Sympathy, Pity, And Love For Others.**

"The smoke of their torment shall ascend up in the sight of the blessed forever and serve as a most clear glass always before their eyes to give them a constant, bright, and most affecting view... **this display of the divine character and glory will be in favor of the redeemed, and most entertaining, and give the highest pleasure to those who love God, and raise their happiness to ineffable heights. Should this eternal punishment and this fire be extinguished, it would in a great measure obscure the light of Heaven and put an end to a great part of the happiness and glory of the blessed.**" Samuel Hopkins, "The works of Samuel Hopkins, D.D." page 458.

What kind of sick man could get the highest pleasure from seeing a cruel God doing his cruel work on billions of soul, and even on the souls of many he knows and loves? He makes the saints in Heaven be deprived of qualities God has given to us, sympathy, pity, love for others, caring for others; he makes souls to be cruel monsters that delight in the pain of others, and loves to hear the groans of those they now love, and the groans of the countless millions of souls that were in the lost. He makes the saints in Heaven be taking satisfaction from seeing a cruel God inflict eternal pain without end on those who they loved on earth, and makes them be more cruel and blood thirsty then those in Rome who took satisfaction in seeing lions eating Christians.

**Saints On Earth Become Like The God they Worship:** (See "The Crusades, bloody Mary" in this chapter).

“I am reminded of this talk show, which showed a group of religious ‘Christians’ screaming at people in a department store parking lot. Waving their bibles, they were shouting lines like ‘You’re all going to hell!’ (Of course what they really meant by this was ‘You’re all gonna be tortured forever and ever!’) Needless to say, they looked like hideous fiends, and to think that such people actually believe they’re obediently doing God’s will. *What deception.* I can’t help but be a mite suspect of the character of those who *unswervingly* defend the eternal torture doctrine...I personally believe that these people who staunchly support eternal torture – these folks who almost seem to relish the idea of human beings consciously roasting in agony for all eternity and who become ridiculously irate when a fellow Christian rejects such a ghastly view (even though based upon a thorough biblical analysis) – I believe that such people have given reign to their flesh in this one area. Their very character must be questioned; it has somehow become warped and perverted. I say this because they would zealously do everything in their power to oppose supporters of everlasting destruction. Some go as far as to teach that adherents of literal destruction aren’t even saved, that they aren’t fellow brothers and sisters in the Lord. Such people have such a sinister, repulsive, hostile air to them that I wouldn’t doubt that, if this was the Inquisition era of medieval infamy, they would not hesitate to put to death or torture adherents of everlasting destruction” From chapter eight of a web page: [www.hell-know.net](http://www.hell-know.net).

Jonathan Edwards: “The smoke of their burning flesh shall be as a sweet smelling savor in the nostrils of the Almighty.” “Sinners in the Hands of an Angry God.”

What you believe about your God shows what kind of God you worship. What do you think about a person that gets angry and hits a person over and over and over? Do you worship an and angry and vindictive God, and the smoke of burning flesh shall forever be as a sweet smelling savor in the nostrils of your God?

Summary

**The real issue in the doctrine of Hell is:**

**(1) The nature of God.**

**(2) And the nature of those that believe it.**

**Is He a God of love and mercy, or is He a cruel, sadistic, and fiendish God to most of mankind, and made them just so He could torment them, and He gives them no chance to not be tormented, and will not let them die? Those who believe in such a God must defend everlasting torment, and the God who made most of mankind knowing that He would torment them forever; according to the Calvin and Jonathan Edwards versions of Hell, this God will delight in it, and according to creeds, Augustine, Spurgeon and many others, those in Heaven would find delight in seeing those in Hell being roasted in fire. Such a God and Heaven cannot be defended. A God with such vindictiveness is a totally contradiction to the God who would have all men come to repentance. God is not an eternal prison keeper who loves to torments all that are in His prison. Most that believes all persons have an immortal soul dwelling in them also believes in an eternal Hell, and in eternal punishment that has no purpose, a punishment that is not proportionate to the sin, and in a god with a nature that the basest of men would not defend; eternal torment in Hell requires a god that is so dreadful that it make many reject him and his bible. **When I gave up the evil God of Hell, and believed in the true God, it brought a peace and joy I never believed possible. I now worship a God who is worthy of being loved and worshiped.****

**THE FATE OF THOSE WHO ARE NOT IN CHRIST**

**(1) UTTERLY DESTROYED** (Acts 3:23).

**(2) DEATH** (Romans 6:23; 6:21; 7:5; 4:17; 8:6; 1 Corinthians 3:22).

- (3) **MUST DIE** (Romans 8:13; John 8:24; 6:50). This is not the first death, which comes to all, to both those who are saved and those who are lost (Hebrews 9:27), but is the **SECOND DEATH** (eternal nothingness) (Revelation 21:8). All will die once, but the lost will die twice.
- (4) *"And when sin is accomplished, it brings forth **DEATH**"* (James 1:15).
- (5) *"Condemned them to **EXTINCTION**"* Revised Standard Version (2 Peter 2:6). To have their very existence made to be no longer existing.
- (6) *They "are **WORTHY OF DEATH**"* (Romans 1:32).
- (7) **PASSES AWAY** (1 John 2:17).
- (8) Their **END is DEATH** (Romans 6:21-22).
- (9) Their wages for sin **"IS DEATH"** (Romans 6:23).
- (10) They **"MUST DIE"** (Romans 8:13).
- (11) *"Their **END is DESTRUCTION**"* (Philippians 3:19).
- (12) *"Whose **END is TO BE BURNED**"* (Hebrews 6:8).
- (13) *"Everlasting **DESTRUCTION**"* (2 Thessalonians 1:9).
- (14) *"Sudden **DESTRUCTION**"* (1 Thessalonians 5:2-3).
- (15) *"Swift **DESTRUCTION**"* (2 Peter 2:1).
- (16) *"Will reap **DESTRUCTION**"* (Galatians 6:8).
- (17) *"**DESTRUCTION** of ungodly man"* (2 Peter 3:7).
- (18) Are on the broad way leading to **DESTRUCTION** (Matthew 7:13-14; Philippians 3:19; 1:28; 2 Peter 3:7).
- (19) God will **DESTROY** (1 Corinthians 3:17; 2 Peter 2:12).
- (20) Will be **"DESTROYED"** like Sodom (Luke 17:29).
- (21) **BRING TO NOTHING** (2 Thessalonians 2:8).
- (22) Will be **TURNED TO ASHES** like Sodom and Gomorrah (Peter 2:6).
- (23) Will **"BE BURNED UP"** (2 Peter 3:10).
- (24) Will **"PERISH"** (John 3:16).
- (25) Will be **"SLAIN"** (Luke 19:14).
- (26) Will be **"THROWN AWAY"** (Matthew 13:18).
- (27) They **"SHALL NOT SEE LIFE"** (John 3:36; 5:40; 1 John 3:15).
- (28) **DO NOT HAVE THE "LIFE"** Christ gives to them that obey Him (John 3:36; 5:21; 5:24; 5:29; 5:40; 6:27; Matthew 19:29; 1 John 5:12).
- (29) Will **LOSE LIFE** (Matthew 10:39).
- (30) Will have **NO ACCESS TO THE TREE OF LIFE** (Revelation 2:7; 22:2; 22:14).
- (31) Will be **BLOTTED OUT OF THE BOOK OF LIFE** (Revelation 3:5).
- (32) Shall **PASS AWAY** in *"the Day of Judgment and **DESTRUCTION OF UNGODLY MEN,**"* the *"heavens shall pass away...shall be dissolved...burned up"* (2 Peter 3:7-13).
- (33) *Will be **"DEVOUR"*** (American Standard Version) ***"CONSUME"*** (New American Standard Version) (Hebrews 10:27; 12:29).
- (34) **Fate of the wicked in the parable**-always destroyed, death, not tormented.
- **HEWN DOWN AND CAST INTO THE FIRE** *"Every tree therefore that brings not forth good fruit is hewn down, and cast into the fire"* (John the Baptist to the Sadducees and Pharisees, Matthew 3:10; Christ in the Sermon on the Mount, Matthew 7:19). A tree cut down and burned is total destruction of the tree, not endless torment of the tree.

- **THEY WILL BURN UP like the useless chaff of wheat** (Matthew 3:12, Luke 3:17).
- **BURNED like weeds, tares, and bad fish** (Matthew 13:30-50).
- **Like harmful plants will be rooted up** (Matthew 15:13).
- **Cut asunder like the unfaithful servant** (Matthew 24:45-51).
- **Cut down like useless fig tree** (Luke 13:6-9).
- **SLAIN (killed) like enemies** (Luke 19:27).
- **Cast out and KILLED like the unfaithful husbandman** (Luke 20:9-17).
- **Are BURNED UP like withered branches** (John 15:6).

If the above language does not denote the utter and complete destruction of the wicked, what language could God have used that would? None. Those who try to explain away the above would try to explain away any language that could be used.

(35) **Fate of the wicked in the Old Testament**, the fate of people and nations in this lifetime.

- *"Behold the day comes, it burns as a furnace (see 2 Peter 3:10-12) and all the proud and all that work wickedness shall be stubble; and the day that comes shall burn them up, says the Lord of hosts, that it shall leave them neither root nor branch"* (Malachi 4:1-3). Probably said of the nation of Israel. Burn up a plant and leave it neither root nor branch, and nothing will remain of it. Nothing will remain of the nation.
- The wicked *"shall soon be cut down like the grass"* (Psalm 37:2).
- *"Shall be cut off...shall not be"* (Psalm 37:9-10).
- *"Will be as nothing"* (Isaiah 41:11).
- *"Become as if they has never existed"* (Obadiah 16).
- *"Shall perish...in smoke shall they consume away"* (Psalm 37:20).
- *"They shall be destroyed"* (Psalm 37:38). *"Altogether destroyed"* New Revised Standard Version.
- Shall *"melt away"* (Psalm 112:10; 68:2).
- *"But the way of the wicked will perish"* (Psalm 1:6).
- *"But all the wicked, He will destroy"* (Psalm 145:20).
- *"Whoever has sinned against Me, I will blot him out of My book"* (Exodus 32:33).
- *"The wicked is reserved to the day of destruction"* (Job 21:30).
- *"They are like the chaff which the wind drives away"* (Psalm 1:4).
- **Souls shall die** (Genesis 3:3; Ezekiel 18:4; 13:19).

(36) Add to this the fact that Hell is not in the Bible, not the name, or the concept; nothing is said about God tormenting anyone after the judgment; nothing is said about the wicked after the second death, and you have a clear picture of the fate of the wicked. **God could not have said in human language any clearer or stronger what the fate of the wicked will be. If you think it could be said any more clearly, try it. You cannot do it. Between the statements of the inspired writers of the Bible above, and today's uninspired teaching of men, there is an enormous discrepancy and contradiction that cannot be explained away.**

Our choice is **life** or **death** (see Deuteronomy 30:19-20). To **live** or **die** (Ezekiel 18:20), an eternal life in Hell forever being tormented by God is not one of our choices.

*“But even if we are an angel from heaven should preach to you a gospel contrary to what we preached to you, let that one be accursed! As we have said before, so now I repeat, if anyone preaches to you a gospel contrary to what you received, let that one be accursed”* (Galatians 1:7-8). Is there another time Paul said something so serious that he repeated it? If *“the wages of sin is death”* and someone preaches to you *“the wages of sin is eternal life in torment”* that one should be accursed of preaching a gospel contrary to that which Paul preached.

### **AFTER THE RESURRECTION THE FATE OF THOSE WHO ARE IN CHRIST**

- (1) **Eternal life** (Romans 6:23).
- (2) ***“Shall inherit eternal life”*** (Matthew 19:29).
- (3) After the judgment they ***“shall go away into eternal life”*** (Matthew 25:46).
- (4) **Will *“have eternal life”*** (John 3:5).
- (5) **Christ will raise them up on the last day** (John 6:40).
- (6) **Will be immortal after the resurrection** (1 Corinthians 15:51-56).
- (7) **Will have incorruption** (1 Corinthians 15:42).
- (8) **Will have glory** (1 Corinthians 15:43).
- (9) **Will be like Christ** *“We shall be like him; for we shall see him even as he is”* (1 John 3:2).
- (10) Are ***“heirs according to the hope of eternal life”*** (Titus 3:7).
- (11) **Will have a spiritual body** (1 Corinthians 15:44).
- (12) ***“And as we have borne the image of the earthly*** (The earthly flesh and blood body of Adam was made to live on this earth but it *“cannot inherit the kingdom of God”* 1 Corinthians 15:50), ***we shall also bear the image of the heavenly”*** (Shall be like the spiritual body of Christ for life in Heaven) (1 Corinthians 15:47-56).
- (13) ***“Will never perish”*** (John 10:28).
- (14) **Forever with the Lord** (1 Thessalonians 4:17).
- (15) **MANY MANSIONS IN MY FATHER'S HOUSE: *“In my Father's house*** (Who is in Heaven Matthew 5:16; 5:45; 5:48; 6:1; 6:9; 7:21; 10:32-33) ***are many mansions...I go to prepare a place for you.”*** (Where did Christ go to prepare a place for us? In the mansions in His Father's house in Heaven. *“For it was not David who ascended into heaven, but himself says: ‘the Lord said to my Lord, sit at my right hand, until I make your enemies a footstool for your feet.’”* Acts 2:34-35) ***“And if I go and prepare a place for you,*** (A place in my Father's house in Heaven) ***I come again, and will receive you unto myself; that where I am there you may also be*** (With me in the place I go to prepare for you in My Father's house in Heaven (John 14:1-3). ***But now I go unto him*** (unto My Father who is in Heaven) ***that sent me”*** (*“The word-Christ who was with the Father in the beginning and has always been a heavenly being with God became flesh, and dwelt among us”* John 1:14) (John 16:5). He is no longer flesh, but has now gone back to Heaven to prepare a place for the saved and will come back for them. *“He who overcomes, I will grant to him to sit down with Me on My throne, as I also overcame and sat down with My Father on His throne”* (Revelation 3:21). Christ is now on His Father's throne in Heaven where He went to prepare a place for us; you cannot prepare a place in a place that is not a place, Heaven is a real place with a real place prepared for all the faithful.

(16) **FLESH AND BLOOD CANNOT INHERIT THE KINGDOM OF GOD:** *"And as we have borne the image of the earthy (flesh and blood), we shall also bear the image of the heavenly. Now this I say, brethren that **flesh and blood cannot inherit the kingdom of god**; (Our bodies in the image of Adam made for this earth are not suitable for Heaven) **neither do corruption inherit incorruption** (Neither can our corruptible bodies in the image of Adam inherit in the heavenly realm). *Behold, I tell you a mystery: We all shall not sleep, (Shall not die) but **we shall all be changed**, (All the saved that are asleep when Christ comes, and **all** the saved that are alive) in a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump: for the trumpet shall sound, and **the dead shall be raised incorruptible**, (Raised in the heavenly image of Christ, not in the corruptible image of Adam which they had when they died). **For this corruptible must put on incorruption**, (This earthly body in the image of Adam must put on incorruption, a spiritual body in the image of Christ. Adam never had a spiritual body before or after he sinned), and **this mortal must put on immortality** (This mortal body which is the body we now have must be changed to an immortal spiritual body which will not be the body of this earth that we now have). *But, when this corruptible shall have put on incorruption, and this mortal shall have put on immortality, then shall come to pass the saying that is written, Death is swallowed up in victory"* (1 Corinthians 15:50-54). In this passage Paul is telling the Corinthians what their bodies will be after the resurrection.**

- It cannot be "*flesh and blood*" for flesh and blood cannot inherit the kingdom of God (1 Corinthians 15:50).
- It cannot be a body of "*corruption*" in the image of Adam for a body of corruption cannot inherit incorruption (1 Corinthians 15:50-54).
- It cannot be the mortal body that we now have for this mortal body must put on immortality (1 Corinthians 15:53-54).

(17) *"We that are alive, that are left unto the coming of the Lord, shall in no wise precede them that are fallen asleep. For the Lord himself shall descend from heaven, with a shout, with the voice of the archangel, and with the trump of God; and the dead in Christ shall rise first; then we that are alive, that are left, shall together with them be caught up in the clouds (To meet Him in the air and will have a body not of this earth) to meet the Lord in the air: and so shall ever be with the Lord"* (1 Thessalonians 4:16-17).

(18) *"Beloved, now we are children of God, and it has not appeared as yet what we shall be. (We know what the image of Adam is for we now have it. His image was flesh and blood both before and after he sinned, and we know that we now have his image, a body of flesh and blood, but we do not now know what the spiritual body in the image of Christ will be like.) **We know that, when He appears, we shall be like Him because we shall see Him just as He is"** (1 John 3:2).*

(19) **WILL BE LIKE ANGELS:** *"The sons of this age marry and are given in marriage, but those who are considered worthy to attain to that age (The age to come. Not all will be worthy to attain to it) and the resurrection from the dead, neither marry, nor are given in marriage; for **neither can they die any more, for they are like angels, and are sons of God, being sons of the resurrection"** (Luke 20:34-36). Like the angels, the saved will have a body that will be suitable for Heaven. Not an earthly being and will no longer have a body in the image of Adam made for this earth, but will have a spiritual body in the image of Christ. **Angels have never had an earthly body in the image of Adam. When we are like angels we will not have an earthly body in the image of Adam.***

Adam was made of the earth and he had a flesh and blood body, and Eve was made from his body before their sin, they never had a spiritual body or a body like the angels. To have a body like Adam before he sinned would be to have a flesh and blood body and be male and female. It would be nothing like the Angels.

(20) *"Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who according to his great mercy begat us again unto a living hope by the resurrection of Jesus Christ from the dead, unto an inheritance incorruptible, and undefiled, and that fades not away, reserved in heaven for you, who by the power of God are guarded through faith unto a salvation ready to be revealed in the last time"* (1 Peter 1:4).

(21) **SEEK THE THINGS ABOVE:** *"If then you have been raised up with Christ, keep seeking the things above, where Christ is, seated at the right hand of God. Set your mind on the things above, not on the things that are on earth. For you have died and your life is hidden with Christ in God. **When Christ, who is our life, is revealed, then you also will be revealed with Him in glory"*** (Colossians 2:1-4).

(22) **WE NOW BEAR THE IMAGE OF THE EARTHLY (Adam) WE SHALL BEAR THE IMAGE OF THE HEAVENLY (Christ):** *"And just as we have borne the image of the earthy, we shall also bear the image of the heavenly"* (Not the flesh and blood image of Adam before or after he sinned, not an earthly body, not a body of dust) (1 Corinthians 15:48).

#### **WHEN**

When will we receive the crown of righteousness? 2 Timothy 4:8.

When is the Judgment? Revelation 20:12.

When will we see Christ? When will we be like Christ? 1 John 3:2.

When will death be destroyed? 1 Corinthians 15:54-56.

When will the saved put on immortality? 1 Corinthians 15:50-53.

- The when is at the resurrection, not at death.

#### **AN ETERNITY IN HEAVEN OR ON EARTH**

Some ask, "An eternity in Heaven doing what?" I ask them, "An eternity on earth doing what?" I have not seen anywhere that they say what they think we will be doing on earth for an eternity. Take whatever they think there will be to do on earth for eternity and multiply it by a 100, or 10,000, or even by 100,000 and you will not have all that we will be doing in Heaven for an eternity. All the best of this earth will be gone. There will be no marriage; therefore, no family life (Matthew 22:30), no sea (Revelation 21:1); therefore, nothing that has to do with the sea, no boating, no fishing, no sunset over the water, etc. Multiply the beauty of earth by 100,000 or more and you still will not have the beauty of Heaven.

#### **LIFE ON THIS EARTH—versus— LIFE IN HEAVEN**

1. Life on this earth: a natural body— versus— after the resurrection: a spiritual body (1 Corinthians 15:42-58).
2. Life on this earth: a mortal being— versus— after the resurrection: an immortal being.
3. Life on this earth: image of Adam— versus— after the resurrection: image of Christ.

There are three major views of the fate of the lost after death. There may be many variations on each, not to over simplify, but I think all the variations will be on one of the three.

1. God made most of mankind to be tormented forever.
2. God will save all mankind no matter how evil they are.
3. The wages of sin is death for those not in Christ.

- a) The eternal home for those in Christ will be on earth.
- b) The eternal home for those in Christ will be in Heaven.

When Christ came to earth He became “*flesh and blood*” in the image of Adam, **if Christ is to come back to and forever be a king on this earth was true He would have to forever be “*flesh and blood*” in the image of Adam.**

**A SUMMARY OF WHERE THE DEAD ARE.** Four views on what happens at death, each one is in sharp conflict with the other three, and makes the other three not possible. Yet, the same preachers put the dead in three places simultaneously.

1. The spirit of all returns to God – misused to prove all have an immortal soul.
2. The dead are alive in sheol.
3. The soul that was in the saved will go directly to Heaven at death, and the soul that was in the lost will go directly to Hell at death.
4. All the dead are asleep unto the resurrection.

### **GOD HAS SPOKE**

#### **In The Clearest Way That Is Possible With Human Language**

*"For the living know that they shall die: but the dead know not anything, neither have they any more a reward; for the memory of them is forgotten...for there is no work, nor device, nor knowledge, nor wisdom, in Sheol, where you go" (Ecclesiastes 9:5-10). "His breath goes forth, he returns to the earth: in that very day his thoughts perish" (Psalm 146:4). "So man lies down and rises not: till the heavens be no more, they shall not awake, nor be roused out of their sleep" (Job 14:12).* If you read God's word and you still believe a person now has an immortal soul dwelling in them; and that soul is not subject to death, there is no human language God could use to tell you otherwise. You have believed men and Satan, and will not hear God.

There is nothing hard to understand about the nature of a person, or the fate of the wicked. It takes much help from theology to not understand the clear teaching of the Bible. Much help to make many believe Satan's lie over God's word. Much help for anyone to not be able to see the simple truth when he or she reads the Bible.

**Could God have given His revelation about the fate of mankind after death in a way that all could understand it? The answer is yes; God could and did choose words, parables, symbols, and metaphors that clearly teach the death of, not the eternal torment of the lost. The unsaved die, perish, are destroyed, and are lost. The obedient are saved from death, and given life and immortality at the judgment. God could not have said it any clearer. If you think He could have, try to say it any clearer. The words and expressions are used that put the truth beyond all possibility of question. Eternal life with torment would not be death.**

**Be honest with yourself, with God, and go to His word with honesty, love, and reverence.** Can pagan teachings, which are promoted in the name of Christ, result in knowledge of the truth that can save?

**Do you want to die? When the Bible says, "The wages of sin is death," it literally means what it says, "The wages of sin is death" not eternal life in torment.** Do you want to face God's wrath at the judgment and be found not fit to live? Do you want to know that the second death will be an eternal end of you? If not, then: Hear and believe (Romans 1:16; Hebrews 11:6). Repent (Luke 13:5). Die to sin, and through baptism be buried and raised to walk in newness of life with Christ (Romans 6:1-23; Mark 16:16; Acts 2:38 John 3:5). *"For if we have become united with him in the likeness of his death*



(through baptism), *we shall be also in the likeness of his resurrection*" (Romans 6:5). *"God gave unto us eternal life, and this life is in his Son. He that has the Son has the life; he that has not the Son of God has not the life"* (1 John 5:11-12). Live faithfully unto death, and receive the crown of life and immortality at the resurrection (Revelation 2:10; 1 Corinthians 15:52-55; John 5:21). *"But they that are accounted worthy to attain to that world (age), and the resurrection from the dead...neither can they die any more: for they...are sons of God"* (Luke 20:35). *"It was necessary that the word of God should first be spoken to you. Seeing you thrust it from you **and judge yourselves unworthy of eternal life, lo, we turn to the Gentiles**"* (Acts 13:45-48). **The question is not where will you spend your eternity, but will you have an eternity.**

*"For our citizenship is in heaven, from which also we wait for a Savior, the Lord Jesus Christ; **who WILL transform the body of our humble state into conformity with the body of His glory**"* (Philippians 3:20-21). *"To him that overcomes, to him will I give to eat of the tree of life, which is in the Paradise of God"* (Revelation 2:7). **The resurrection of the dead totally destroys the doctrine that a person now has an immortal soul that has been dwelling in them from their birth. If anyone had a soul in them and that soul is alive and in Heaven, that soul could not be resurrected from the dead, that soul would have no need of the resurrection.**

#### **A SUMMARY OF SOME OF THE EVILS OF THE DOCTRINE OF ETERNAL TORMENT**

- If the only part of a person that will be in Heaven or Hell is a soul and it cannot die, then the wages of sin cannot be death; the wages of sin is changed to eternal life in torment for that soul.
- Unconditional immortality makes God more cruel and sadistic than any heathen god. It teaches God made man knowing most would not and could not be saved, knowing He was going to give most to Satan to do with as he wished, or knowing that He himself was going to forever torment them.
- Makes existence be a curse. Most will live a few years as a frail being with many pains, etc. then die and the soul that was in them will forever be in more torment than anyone in this lifetime has ever had. The immortal soul doctrine dooms the souls that are in more than nine-tenths of the human race to endless torment.
- Unconditional immortality inflicts a useless, fiendish suffering that will benefit no one, not God who is doing the tormenting, not the soul that He is tormenting, not souls in Heaven who will be seeing the souls that were in their loved one being tormented by God, no one will be benefited by endless misery.
- Unconditional immortality leads to unbelief. More atheists and hypocrites have been made by the teaching of the horrors of Hell than any other teaching. It has turned many millions away from such an unjust God.
- Unconditional immortality is heathen in its origin. It was brought into the church by the so called "church fathers" from Pagan philosophers as Socrates.
- The fruits of unconditional immortality. John Calvin burned Servetus to death over a slow fire, then he wrote a book, "A Faithful Account Of The Errors Of Servetus, In Which It Is Proved That Heretics Ought To Be Restrained By The Sword;" in Calvin's argument with the Anabaptists he uses such words as ignorant babbles, evil, nefarious herd, dregs, insanity, etc. Bloody Mary and many

others killed millions just because they did not believe this bloody teaching of the unconditional immortality of souls.

### **A BRIEF SUMMARY OF SOME OF THE MAIN POINTS OF THIS BOOK**

All four times that soul (nehphesh) is used in Genesis one it is used referring to animals not to a person Strong's Hebrew word #5315—"a breathing creature, i.e. animal." Animals were souls, living beings, before any man existed.

In ten of the first thirteen times soul (nehphesh) is used it is used referring to animals.

In Genesis 9:4-16 the same word is used for both man and animals seven times in the same passage.

Up to Genesis 27:4 for hundreds of years nehphesh is translated *soul*:

- Only four times out of twenty-two in the King James Version.
- Only one time out of twenty-two in the New King James Version.
- None in The New International Version and most others translations.

**The "soul" and "eating of blood."** Is the immortal "*soul*" (nehphesh) in the blood?

**Animals are "souls"** nehphesh—living creature. Animals **are** souls—a living being, not animals **have** souls—an immaterial, invisible, no substance, deathless something.

**If a soul can die it cannot be immortal.** Can whatever is intended by the Hebrew word "nehphesh" die? In over 320, over one third of the about 870 times that soul (nehphesh) is used:

- The soul is already dead.
- The soul can die, or can be killed.
- The soul can be sought to be killed.
- The soul can be affected.
- The soul can be smote.
- The soul can be cut off.
- The soul can be murdered.
- The soul can be delivered from death.
- The soul can be buried.
- The soul (person-nehphesh) can be hungry.
- Have an appetite, be thirsty, and eat meat.

In most of these passages the translators of the King James and other translations have hidden from the readers that the very thing they believe to be immortal and cannot die does die by translating "nehphesh" into "life," "person" and many other words.

Nehphesh (soul) is translated:

1. **Life** about 122 times.
2. **Person** about 26 times.
3. **Mind** about 15 times.
4. **Heart** about 15 times.
5. **Personal pronouns** 44 + times (yourselves, themselves, her, me, he, his, himself).
6. **All others**, about 200 times (man, creature, living being, own, any, living thing, lives, the dead, dead body, kills, slays, slay him, mortally, discontented, ghost, breath, will, appetite, hearty desire, desire, pleasure, lust, dead, fish).

**All 870 times have one thing in common, they are all associated with the activity of a living being, including dying of both of person(s) and animal(s), and it never implies anything about life after the death of the living being, they are all speaking of living beings that will die, not of an immortal deathless something in a living being.**

**Bible words must be changed to mean the exact reverse of their real meaning.** God must be made to say one thing when He intended the exact opposite of what He said.

- **Death** must be changed to life—an endless life of being tormented by God.
- **Destruction** must be changed to indestructible—destruction is made to mean all souls will be kept alive in torment.
- **End** must be changed to endless.
- **Kill** must be changed to never able to be killed—never able to end life.
- **Sleep** must be changed to always being awake in Heaven of Hell.
- **Consumed** must be changed to never able to be consumed.
- **Perish** must be changed to imperishable—always perishing for all eternity but never perished.
- **Burned up** must be changed to always burning, but never burned up.
- **Destroy** must be changed to indestructible.

The soul that was in a person going to Heaven at the moment of death makes the judgment of the soul that was in that person be at the death of the person, not at the second coming of Christ, and makes the resurrection impossible. Who do you believe, Christ or the Platonic philosophy of the survival of the soul?

When unconditional immortality says the soul is the real person and can never die, that the soul of Christ, which was the real Christ, was alive before the resurrection on the third day, that only the body of flesh dies, it makes the real Christ to have never died, only a body of flesh died; therefore, the real Christ never died for us, and we are still in our sins. An immortal undying soul makes death, the wages of sin, and the resurrection impossible. Who do you believe, God or Satan?

*"But now has Christ been raised from the dead, the first fruits of them that are asleep. For since by man came death, by man came also the resurrection of the dead. For as in Adam all die, so also in Christ shall all be made alive. But, each in his own order: Christ the first fruits; then they that are Christ's at his coming."* **Could Paul have been any more specific? ONLY THROUGH THE RESURRECTION AT THE SECOND COMING OF CHRIST WILL ANYONE HAVE LIFE AFTER DEATH.**

## **CHAPTER ELEVEN**

### **HISTORICAL PROOF**

#### **OF THE CHANGING OF THE TEACHING OF THE BIBLE**

The heathenizing of the church in the medieval dark age: The Bible teaching were changed by bringing into the church the doctrines of Purgatory, the sale of indulgences, an immortal soul, Hell, going to Heaven or Hell at death without the judgment, worship of Mary and saints, Nether World, Holy Water, forbidding eating of meat on Friday, candle-burning, and many other teachings.

#### **CHURCH FATHERS**

The early so-called church fathers, Clement of Rome (said to be a companion of Paul), Ignatius (killed 107), Theophilus (died 181), Justin Martyr (killed 166), Tatian, Irenaeus, and others of the second century writers believed in conditional immortality. It was not unto the end the third century that the doctrine of an immortal soul gained a foothold in the church. The immortal soul doctrine is not in the writings of the first centuries. Tertullian near the end of the third century is the first to say anything about it,

and then he made it clear that his opinion was that of Plato, and it was not the opinion of Christ

J. A. BEETH summed it up very well. **"The phrase, the soul immortal, so frequent and conspicuous in the writings of Plato, we have not found in pre-Christian literature outside the influence of Greek philosophy; nor have we found it in Christian literature until the latter part of the second century. We have noticed that all the earliest Christian writers who use this phrase were familiar with the teaching of Plato; that one of these, Tertullian, expressly refers both the phrase and doctrine to him; and that the early Christian writers never support this doctrine by appeals to the Bible, but only by arguments similar to those of Plato...We have failed to find any trace of this doctrine in the Bible...It is altogether alien, both in phrase and thought, to the teaching of Christ and His apostles"** Immortality Of The Soul, pages 53, 54

Tertullian is truthful about where his belief came from and said he based it on Plato, not the Bible. He said, "For some things are known even by nature: the immortality of the soul, for instance, is held by many...I may use, therefore, the opinion of a Plato, when he declares, 'Every soul is immortal'" Ante-Nicene Fathers, Volume 3, about 220 A. D., page 1916.

JUSTIN MARTYR: Killed about A. D. 166. The Greek doctrine of an immortal soul was believed by some in his time and opposed by him and others of the Church Fathers. He said, **"For if you have fallen in with some who are called Christians, but who do not admit this...who say there is no resurrection of the dead, and that their souls, when they die, are taken to heaven; do not imagine that they are Christians."** The First Apology Of Justin, Edinburgh Edition, page 480. He is saying those who believe the dead are alive any place before the resurrection do not believe in the resurrection, and because they do not believe in the resurrection they are not Christians even if they think they are.

IRENAEUS MARTYR: Died about A. D. 202, a pupil of Polycarp, Martyr A. D. 147 said, "Some who are reckoned among the orthodox to beyond the prearranged plan for the exaltation of the just, and are ignorant of the methods by which they are disciplined beforehand for incorruption; they entertain heretical opinions. **For the heretics...affirm that immediately upon their death they shall pass above to heavens.** Those persons, therefore, who reject **a resurrection affecting the whole man**, and do their best to remove it from the Christian scheme, know nothing as to the plan of resurrection" Ante-Nicene Fathers, Erdmann Publishing, Volume one, page 560. "It is the Father of all who **impart continuance forever and ever to those who are saved. For life does not arise from us, nor from our own nature;** but it is bestowed according to the grace of God. **And therefore he who shall preserve the life bestowed on him, and give thanks to Him who imparted it, shall receive also length of days forever and ever, But he who shall reject it, and prove himself ungrateful to his Maker, inasmuch as he has been created and has not recognized Him who bestowed the gift upon him, deprives himself of continuance forever and ever.** And for this reason the Lord declared to those who showed themselves ungrateful towards Him: 'If you have not been faithful in that which is little, who will give you that which is great?'—indicating that those who in this brief temporal life have shown themselves ungrateful to Him who bestowed it, **shall justly not receive from him length of days forever and ever.**" Edinburgh Edition, Volume 1, page 252. "Continuance forever and ever" should have been translated "continuance ages and ages."

ORIGEN Died A. D. 235: Mosheim said, "The foundation of all his faults was, that he fully believed nothing to be more true and certain than what the philosophy he received from Ammonius taught him respecting God, the world, souls, demons, etc. and therefore he in a measure recast and remolded the doctrines of Christ after the pattern of that philosophy" Historical Commentaries, Volume 2, page 159.

The early non-inspired writers used Bible statements, which are used by both sides. Two examples:

1. An example: When an early writer quoted Matthew 10:28, "God is able to destroy...soul (psukee)," it is used today by the unconditional immoralists to prove the church fathers believed God will not destroy the soul (psukee-life), and by the conditional immoralists to prove the church fathers did believe God can and will destroy the soul (psukee-life). Both sides assume that the early non-inspired writers understood the word "soul" (psukee-life) and other words just as they do. Therefore, both sides have many of the same quotations from the early writers. The first and

second century writers used Greek, and the word they used was "psukee" – life, not the English word "soul"

1st. Unconditional immoralists translate "psukee" (life) into "soul" and then apply today's English meaning, an undying something that is in a person to "psukee."

2nd. Conditional immoralists read the same writers and say the early writers used "psukee" (life) as the Hebrew word "nehphesh" is used in Genesis, a "living creature."

2. Another example: When Matthew 5:22 is quoted by the church father, they wrote in Greek and used "Gehenna" just as Christ did. Some English translations of the church fathers change Gehenna into Hell. They change one proper noun, the name of a particular place (Gehenna) into another proper noun, the name of another particular place (Hell) just as the King James Version did. Whether the early writer used "Gehenna" or whether Gehenna is changed into "Hell" makes them say what the translator wanted them to say; by changing the Greek word "Gehenna" into the English word "Hell, what was said is changed from being one place, Gehenna, to being Hell, a completely different place; both the place and the location of the place are changed.

**The view of the church fathers on death** according to Henry Constable in "The Duration And Nature Of Future Punishment," 1871.

- Barnabas, Died A. D. 90. Believed the penalty of sin is **eternal death**.
- Clemens Romanus, Died A. D. 100. Believed the penalty of sin is **eternal death**.
- Hermas, Died A. D. 104. Believed the penalty of sin is **eternal death**.
- Ignatius, Martyr, Died A. D. 107. Believed the penalty of sin is **eternal death**.
- Polycarp, Martyr, Died A. D. 147. Believed the penalty of sin is **eternal death**.
- Justin Martyr, Died A. D. 164. Believed the penalty of sin is **eternal death**.
- Theophilus of Antioch, Died A. D. 183. Believed the penalty of sin is **eternal death**.
- Athenagoras, Died A. D. 190. Believed "**you shall not surely die.**"
- Tatian, Died A.D. 200. Believed "**you shall not surely die.**"
- Irenaeus Martyr, Died A. D. 202. Believed the penalty of sin is **eternal death**.
- Clemens Alexandrinus, Died A. D. 212. Believed the penalty of sin is **eternal death**.
- Tertullian, Died A. D. 235. Believed "**you shall not surely die.**"
- Hippolytus, Died A. D. 235. Believed "**you shall not surely die.**"
- Origen, Died A. D. 235. Believed **universal restoration**.
- Amobios, Died A. D. 303. Believed the penalty of sin is **eternal death**.
- Augustine, Died A. D. 430. Believed "**you shall not surely die.**" The Encyclopedia Britannica says of Augustine, "He fused the religion of the New Testament with the Platonic tradition of Greek philosophy."

From the above, it is clear that it was not until near the end of the second century that "the wages of sin is eternal life with torment" was first believed, and then at first by only a few. By teaching the resurrection, both the Bible and most of the early Church Fathers denied emphatically the unconditional immortality of the soul.

JOHN H. OGWYN: "The story of the Christian church between Pentecost of 31 a. d. and the council of Nicea in 325 a. d., almost 300 years later, is an amazing story. **It is the story of how yesterday's orthodoxy became today's heresy and how old heresies came to be considered orthodox Christian doctrine. It is the story of how church tradition and the teaching of the bishops came to supersede the word of God as a source of doctrine. It is a story that is stranger than fiction, yet is historically verifiable.**" "God's Church Through The Ages."

HENRY CONSTABLE: "Educated in Platonism, they (church fathers) did not like to renounce it, and flattered themselves that they might, with great advantage to the cause of Christianity, bring at least a portion of their old learning into its service. Some brought less, some more, according as they were more or less thoroughly acquainted with Christianity. But on one point they were substantially agreed. All of them, with Tertullian, adopted in the sense of Plato **Plato's sentiment—'Every soul is immortal.' On this point Plato took rank, not among prophets and apostles, but above all prophets and apostles.** A doctrine

which neither Old Testament nor New taught directly or indirectly, nay, which was contrary to a great part of the teaching of both, these Fathers brought in with them into the Church, and thus gave to the old Sage of the Academy a greater authority and a wider influence by far than he had ever attained or ever dreamed of attaining. It was in effect Plato teaching in the Church, under the supposed authority of Christ and his Apostles, doctrine subversive of, and contrary to, the doctrine, which they had one and all maintained. This dogma of Plato was made the rigid rule for the interpretation of Scripture. No Scripture, no matter what its language, could be interpreted in a sense inconsistent with Plato's theory. Christ, and Paul, and John, all were forced to Platonise. The deduction of reason, half doubted by Plato himself, was by these Platonising Fathers palmed off on men's minds as the teaching of revelation" Duration And Nature Of future Punishment, 1871.

W. ENFIELD: "Very soon after the rise of Christianity, many persons, who had been educated in the schools of the philosophers, becoming converts to the Christian faith, the doctrines of the Grecian sects, and especially Platonism, were interwoven with the simple truths of pure religion. As the Eclectic philosophy spread, Heathen and Christian doctrines were still more intimately blended, till, at last, both were almost entirely lost in the thick clouds of ignorance and barbarism which covered the earth." "The History Of Philosophy."

"The doctrine of hell evolved long after the core doctrines of the historic Christian faith were established. The views of the early Church fathers about hell were far from unanimous. It took the Christian community hundreds of years to come up with a consensus on the issue. The majority view— that hell is a place of eternal fiery torment— emerged only after a long debate within the Church. By the Middle Ages, the concept of a fiery underworld had become a dominant element in people's minds" [www.inplainsite.org](http://www.inplainsite.org)

The doctrine of Hell has been strongly opposed from the time it was first brought into the church by the church fathers, but in the last fifty years the opposition is rapidly growing in the Protestant churches and particularly in the church of Christ. As a result of the rapid growth in opposition to the God slandering doctrine of Hell two books by those who believe in Hell have been written. "Hell of Trial: The Case for Eternal Punishment" by Robert A. Peterson, and "Hell Under Fire" which is ten essays by ten orthodox Protestant authors all defending Hell that is now under attack by many. The names they give to their books shows the doctrine of Hell is being strongly opposed and rejected by many.

To fully document the apostasy that took place is beyond the scope of this book, but I have given enough to show those who have never read the history of the early church that there was a great apostasy with many changes in the beliefs and doctrines. The falling away Paul foretold did happen. *"Let no one in any way deceive you, for it will not come unless the apostasy comes first, and the man of lawlessness is revealed, the son of destruction, who opposes and exalts himself above every so-called god or object of worship, so that he takes his seat in the temple of God, displaying himself as being God. Do you not remember that while I was still with you, I was telling you these things? And you know what restrains him now, so that in his time he may be revealed. For the mystery of lawlessness is already at work, only he who now restrains will do so until he is taken out of the way. And then, that lawless one will be revealed whom the Lord will slay with the breath of His mouth and bring to an end by the appearance of His coming; that is, the one whose coming is in accord with the activity of Satan, with all power and signs and false wonders, and with all the deception of wickedness for those who perish, because they did not receive the love of the truth so as to be saved. And for this reason God will send upon them a deluding influence so that they might believe what is false, in order that they all may be judged who did not believe the truth, but took pleasure in wickedness"* (2 Thessalonians 2:3-12; See 1 Timothy 4:1-3). This apostasy led to the church of the Dark

Age with its Pope who sits in the place of God and is worshiped as God. Paul said the falling away would come. History says it did come. The Catholic Church says there was no falling away. The Protestant Reformation says there was an apostasy, but they reformed the Catholic Church with many churches that teach many conductivity things.

As Homer Hailey said, "Attitudes were no longer as they were in former years, and the pattern was altered. The pristine simplicity was gradually marred and covered, until little of the original simple plan of God could be recognized."

The second coming of Christ and the resurrection has been made to have little or no value by the doctrine of all the souls of the dead going to Heaven at death, or after spending some time in Purgatory. The heart of the beliefs and hopes of the early church, the coming of Christ and the resurrection from the dead, was put into the background. The Church was not faithful one day and an apostate church the next day. The falling away took centuries. There were many changes, and every change had many who fought it. But, the falling away did come. The teaching of Christ on the resurrection of the dead was replaced by the teaching of Plato (the Heathenizing of the church with the pagan teaching of an immortal soul). One by one, at first only a few in a congregation, but eventually the entire congregation were teaching the doctrines of man that destroyed the teaching of Christ.

(1) TERTULLIAN: Often known as the father of the Latin Church. "How indeed, shall the soul mount up to heaven, where Christ is already sitting at the Father's right hand, when as yet the archangel's trumpet has not been heard by the command of God. When as yet those whom the coming of the Lord is to find on the earth, have not been caught up into the air to meet Him at His coming, in company with the dead in Christ, who shall be the first to arise? To no one is heaven opened" Treatise on the Soul, Chapter 55. The Catholic Church would now call anyone who teaches this a heretic (See 1 Thessalonians 4:13).

(2) MARTIN LUTHER: "Solomon judged that the dead are asleep, and feel nothing at all. For the dead lie there accomplishing nether days nor years, but then they are awaked, they shall seem to have slept scarce one minute." "An exposition of "Ecclesiastes or the Preacher" 1573. In Luther's Defense, proposition 27. "Now, if one would say that Abraham's soul lives with God but his body is dead, this distinction is rubbish. I will attack it. One must say, 'The whole Abraham, the whole man shall live.' The other way you tear off a part of Abraham and say, 'It lives.' This is the way the philosophers speak: 'Afterward the soul departed from its domicile,' etc. That would be a silly soul if it were in heaven and desired its body" Luther's Works, Volume 54, page 447. Luther called the theory of the immortality of the soul the "monstrous fables that forms part of the Roman dunghill of decretals." E. Petavel, The Problem of Immortality, page 255.

(3) PAUL ALTHAUS: "The hope of the early church centered on the resurrection of the Last Day. It is this which first calls the dead into eternal life (1 Cor. 15; Phil. 3:21). This resurrection happens to the man and not only to the body. Paul speaks of the resurrection not 'of the body' but 'of the dead.' This understanding of the resurrection implicitly understands death as also affecting the whole man... Thus the original Biblical concepts have been replaced by ideas from Hellenistic Gnostic dualism. The New Testament idea of the resurrection, which affects the whole man, has had to give way to the immortality of the soul. The Last Day also loses its significance, for souls have received all that is decisively important long before this. Eschatological tension is no longer strongly directed to the day of Jesus' Coming. *The difference between this and the hope of the New Testament is very great*" "The Theology Of Martin Luther" pages 413-414, 1966.

(4) JOHN WESLEY: "It is indeed generally supposed that the souls of good men as soon as dislodged from the body, go directly to heaven, but this opinion has not the least foundation in the oracles of God" From Wesley's sermon on Luke 16:23.

(5) WILLIAM TYNDALE translated the first English New Testament: "In putting them (sleeping souls) in heaven, hell or purgatory, you destroy the arguments wherewith Christ and Paul proves the resurrection...if the souls be in heaven, tell me why they be not in as good a case as the angels be? And then what cause is

there of a resurrection...The true faith put forth the resurrection, which we be warned to look for every hour. **The heathen philosophers, denying that, did put that the souls did ever live. And the pope join the spiritual doctrine of Christ and the fleshy doctrine of philosophers together: things so contrary that they cannot agree...**And because the fleshy-minded pope consented unto heathen doctrine, therefore, he corrupted the Scripture to establish it." bk. 4, chapter 4, pages 108-109, in 1530, and also in Burns, "Christian Moralism," page 99. Tyndale (like Luther) said it was heathen philosophers and the Pope, not the Bible that taught, "souls did ever live."

(6) JOHN DARBY: "We would express our conviction, then the idea of the immortality of the soul has no source in the gospel; that it comes, on the contrary, from the Platonists, and that it was just when the coming of Christ was denied in the church, or at least began to be lost sight of, that the doctrine of the immortality of the soul came in to replace that of the resurrection. This was about the time of Origen." "The Hopes of the Church of God," only in the early editions, in later editions what he said was changed by other persons.

Greek philosophy of an immortal soul was first bought into the church by the so-called church fathers that were believers in the Greek philosophy, and were only partly converted. They know more about the teaching of Plato than they did of Christ. It did not become commonly accepted unto after Tertullian in the third century. It was fought bitterly by Martin Luther, William Tyndale, and many others as being a part of the false Catholic doctrine. It was eventually accepted by most Protestant Churches, but only after a long fight. Most today know little or nothing of all this, and think the doctrine of an immortal soul was held by almost all, even back in the Old Testament.

NOTE: The teachings of many founders of the Protestant Reformation are an embarrassment to the Protestants Churches today, which bear their name and or claim them as their founders. The teaching of the churches they founded now makes them be heretics. Their own churches would now call anyone teaching the same as Luther and Wesley heretics.

Calvin might have been the leading influence in turning the Protestant Reformation back to Catholicism. Dr Joseph Priestley said, "Had it not been for the authority of Calvin, who wrote expressly against soul sleep, **the doctrine of an intermediate conscious state would, in all probability, have been as effectually exploded as the doctrine of purgatory itself**" Works, Volume 5, page 229, 1818.

(7) JAMIESON, FAUSSET AND BROWN: "**Nowhere is the immortality of the soul, distinct from the body, taught:** A notion which many erroneously have derived from heathen philosophers. Scripture does not look for the anomalous state brought about by death, as the consummation to be earnestly looked for (2 Cor. 5:4), but the resurrection." Notes on 1 Corinthians 15:53.

(8) STRONG: "**A breathing creature, i.e. animal...**" word number 5315, "Strong's Exhaustive Concordance Of The Bible." A breathing creature is an earthly being, not an immortal no subject something, but who knows what the something is.

(9) W. E. VINE: "A Noun **soul; self; life; person; heart...**it occurs over 780 times in Old Testament...**the noun refers to the essence of life, the act of breathing, taking breath...**in its primary sense **the** noun appears in its first occurrence in Gen 1:20; 'the moving creature that has life,' and in its second occurrence in Gen 2:7; 'living soul... **however, in over 400 later occurrences it is translated 'soul.' while this serves to make sense in most passages, it is an unfortunate mistranslation of the term.** The real difficulty of the term is seen in the inability of almost all English translations to find a consistent equivalent or even a small group of high-frequency equivalents for the term. The KJV alone uses over 28 different English terms for this one Hebrew word. **THE PROBLEM WITH THE ENGLISH TERM 'SOUL' IS THAT NO ACTUAL EQUIVALENT OF THE TERM OR THE IDEA BEHIND IT IS REPRESENTED IN THE HEBREW LANGUAGE...**in narrative or historical passages of the Old Testament, **nepes can be translated as 'life' or 'self'** as in Leviticus 17:11; 'for the life of the flesh is in the blood... **needless to say, the reading 'soul' is meaningless in such a text...**the versions vary widely in the reading of nepes, with the more contemporary versions casting widely for meaning," page 237 Old Testament, "Vine's Complete Expository Dictionary Of



Old And New Testament Words." It did not change its meaning in the second part of the Old Testament, but the translators of the early English Bibles had to put in their beliefs, and later translators, those that are called "the major translations" have only partly gotten away from this mistakes, but a few of the latest translations have almost made it; they have reduced the number of times soul is used from over 400 down to a very few times.

(10) THAYER: "1. Breath...a. the breath of life...b. life...2. The soul...a. the seat of the feelings, desires, affections, aversions (our soul, heart, etc.)." "A Greek-English Lexicon Of The New Testament."

(11) ROBERT YOUNG, author of Young's Literal Translation of the Bible: "Animal soul...Nehphesh" page 917 "It (nehphesh—does not denote the immortal part of man, but his animal life." "Young's Analytical Concordance To The Bible."

(12) FUNK AND WAGNALL ENCYCLOPEDIA: "The Christian doctrine of the immortal soul has been strongly influenced by pagans such as Plato and Aristotle."

(13) ADAM CLARKE: "The doctrine of the resurrection appears to have been thought of much more consequence among the primitive Christians than it is now! How is this? The apostles were continually insisting on it, and exciting the followers of God to diligence, obedience, and cheerfulness through it. And their successors in the present day seldom mention it! So apostles preached, and so primitive Christians believed; so we preach, and so our hearers believe. **There is not a doctrine in the gospel on which more stress is laid; and there is not a doctrine in the present system of preaching which is treated with more neglect**" Commentary on I Corinthians 15.

(14) WILLIAM ENFIELD: "Very soon after the rise of Christianity, many persons, who had been educated in the schools of the philosophers, becoming converts to the Christian faith, the doctrines of the Grecian sects, and especially Platonism, were interwoven with the simple truths of pure religion. As the Eclectic philosophy spread, Heathen and Christian doctrines were still more intimately blended, till, at last, both were almost entirely lost in the thick clouds of ignorance and barbarism which covered the earth" History of Philosophy.

(15) HOMER HAILEY: "Time passed and innovations came into the Church. When untaught individuals became nominal Christians, changes were made. Attitudes were no longer as they were in former years, and the pattern was altered. The pristine simplicity was gradually marred and covered, until little of the original simple plan of God could be recognized. Ambitions began to manifest themselves when pagan philosophies became a substitute for the word of God. Over time, darkness descended upon the face of the earth and the light of truth was covered by ignorance and superstition" From my class note in 1957 at Florida College, (church of Christ).

(16) JERRY CROSS: "When Jesus was on earth he didn't speak of immortality, but rather of eternal life. The Greeks taught that the soul had a natural and innate quality to enable it to pass through death and resist corruption. But, Jesus taught that our 'immortality' is anchored in a life-relationship with God. Jesus was a teacher of 'eternal life,' but Plato of the 'immortality of the soul.' Today these expressions are often confusingly used as synonyms. Yet, they spring from two different sources, one from Greek philosophy, and the other from New Testament Christianity... It is very easy to read the term 'soul' or 'spirit' in the English Bible and impart modern western philosophical beliefs into the terms. With Plato and (much later) Descartes, Western thinking became very much dualistic in its view of man. A person is composed, according to this view, of material, extended, substance (body) and immaterial, non-extended, substance (mind). The soul is the imperishable element that is housed in a bodily prison. Therefore, when western man hears the term 'soul,' he thinks of that element of himself that is confined within his body that is destined to live forever. The presentation of 'soul' in the Hebrew Old Testament is quite different however...the Old Testament presents man as an 'animated body' which is a 'complex of parts, drawing life and activity from a breath-soul, which has no existence apart from the body'" Magnolia Bible College 1984 Lectures, page 48 and 49, (church of Christ).

(17) SAMUEL DAWSON: "You may be surprised to learn that most, if not all, of our popular concepts of Hell can be found in the writings of Roman Catholic writers...None of our concepts of Hell can be found in the teaching of Jesus Christ! You know how indignant we get at the mention of purgatory—we know that's not in the Bible. You may also find out that our popular concepts of Hell came from the same place that

purgatory did-Roman Catholicism" "Jesus' Teaching On Hell," page 13. A free copy of this book at: [www.gospelthemes.com](http://www.gospelthemes.com), no longer on the web. (church of Christ).

(18) CURTIS DICKINSON: "There is not one scripture to support the idea that man is an immortal soul living for the moment in a temple of clay, and that when the body dies the man goes on living...It might come as a surprise to some to know that the term immortal is never used in scripture in connection with soul or man's spirit" "What The Bible Teaches About Immortality And Future Punishment," page 8 and 9, (church of Christ).

(19) JOHN SCOTT: "Genesis 2:7 is the classic statement of the uniting of flesh and spirit. Here, we have the creature of flesh and bone created from the dust and then brought into a living existence by the Lord blowing into man's nostrils the breath of life. The phrase 'became a living soul' is the same Hebrew phrase used in verse 19 referring to 'every living creature,' that is, to the beasts and birds as other forms of life. In this sense of the word then, man is not distinguished from the animal world as far as life is concerned by the use of these special terms ...The nehpesh may even be said to die (Judges 16:30), but **nehphesh is never used of the spirit of the dead; in fact, nowhere is the suggestion made that the soul survives the man whose life it was in the Old Testament**" Harding Graduate School Lectures, 1971, pages 130-131, Gospel Advocate Company, (church of Christ).

(20) ROGER DICKSON: "A general meaning would be that the soul has reference to any animate being of life that has sense perception ... thus, the soul would be the life principle of an individual" "Life, Death and Beyond," Biblical Research Library, page 45, (church of Christ).

(21) ELIAS SMITH: Often referred to as "Elder" Elias Smith. "This year, in June, my attention was called to think of the real state of the wicked after the last judgment. Before this time, I had taken for truth the old pagan doctrine of 'eternal misery' for the wicked. In June, 1804, being in Mr. Holmes' bookstore, in Boston, I asked him if he had any new publications. He handed me Evan's Sketch. On opening the book my eyes first fixed on the word, 'destructionists.' I read one page, and concluded, people who held the wicked would be destroyed, were in strange error, as no such thing ever before entered my mind. I bought the book. Often after that the destruction of the wicked would pass through my mind, though I supposed eternal misery was recorded in the Bible. In April 1805, I concluded one day to take my Bible and concordance, and find eternal misery, and not have my mind any longer troubled about destruction. I examined the words misery, miserable, and miserably; and found there was not one place in the Bible where the word was used to describe the state of man beyond death. Next I looked for the word torment, and found that was limited, and that there was no torment mentioned beyond the Day of Judgment. I then looked at the words destroy, destruction, death, second death, perish, consumed, perdition, burnt up, end, etc. I examined the similitudes used to describe the end of the wicked, such as chaff and stubble burnt up; dry trees cast into the fire, and tares burnt up; the fat of lambs consumed, whirlwinds, a dream, and noise. All these things proved to me that at the last judgment, the wicked would be punished with everlasting destruction, which would be their end. My mind was settled upon the subject; but concluded to keep my discovery to myself; as the people were almost distracted with having so many new things; such as that God was one and not three, and that all rules but the Bible was useless, and that salvation was free for all. My first preaching and writing disturbed the clergy and the wicked; the next disturbed the Baptists, and I was about certain, if this were known, it would disturb my brethren with whom I was connected. I kept it back as long as duty would suffer me, and was constrained at last to make it known, or preach no more. It made some stir, but people bore it as well as could be expected. Soon after preaching it, I wrote and published five sermons upon the subject, which has never been answered to this day." The Life, Conversion, Preaching, Travel, and Sufferings of Elias Smith, 1886, page 347, (church of Christ).

(22) AL MAXEY: "The Maxey-Thrasher Debate" A debate on the eternal destiny of the wicked between two Gospel preachers, church of Christ. "Then the Lord God formed man of dust from the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became a living SOUL/being' (Genesis 2:7). Some traditionalists virtually equate this last phrase (living soul) with 'immortal soul.' But, that is NOT what the passage says. God put breath within this body and the body became a living being. The exact same words are used of animals in the Scriptures. Further, it doesn't say man was GIVEN a soul. It says man BECAME a soul. Big difference!" Free on the web at: <http://www.zianet.com/maxey/MxThrshr.htm> (church of Christ)

(23) ROBERT DOZIER: "Dozier-Johnson Debate," The eternal destiny of the wicked by a Gospel preacher, church of Christ. "But Gehenna was all about destroying that which was dumped there. There were not cries of never ending conscious pain coming out of the bodies cast there. No conscious torment, just destruction of trash, carcasses of animals, and some dead human bodies. It was all about death and destruction. That is what those who heard Jesus speak of Gehenna would think of. Jesus spoke of the wicked and lost as being cast into Gehenna AFTER God killed them (Luke 12:5)." Free on the web at: <http://groups.yahoo.com/group/Religiousdebates/message/1408> (church of Christ).

(24) MOSES E. LARD: "*For the wages of sin is death*" it always pays. Whether the sinner stipulates for his wages or not, he is sure to receive it. What the wages of sin are, the apostle here tells us: it is eternal death. How astounding the fact that so many should serve for such a reward!" Commentary on Romans from "The Restoration Library" page 218, 1875, Gospel Light Publishing Company, and also his book "Do The Holy Scriptures Teach The Endlessness Of Future Punishment?" I have been unable to find a copy of his book but found this about it by Steven Clark Goad in "church of Christ Christian Podcast." He said in a recent conversation he had with Jimmy Allen of Harding University, Jimmy Allen said that he was rethinking and restudying the traditional understanding of Hell. That Jimmy Allen of Harding University shared with him more that confidentiality he would not be allow to repeat, but Jimmy Allen at Harding University sent him a copy of a paper by Moses E. Lard, 1879, "Do the Holy Scriptures Teach the Endlessness of Future Punishment?" Steven Clark Goad said this booklet by Moses E. Lord is a magnificent word study of the Greek word *aion* draws many of the conclusions he had outlined at: <http://www.godsmessagetheweb.net/2010/07/25/thoughts-on-punishment-of-the-wicked/> This booklet by Lard points out that his understanding is not new or something a few harebrained fanatics have recently thought up to stir controversy, (church of Christ).

(25) F. LaGARD SMITH: Teacher at David Lipscomb University, "If, as we are told at funerals, our loved ones are already in heaven with Jesus, what is the purpose of Christ's Coming and the Resurrection?" *After Life, A Glimpse Of Eternity Beyond Death's Door*, (church of Christ).

(26) ROBERTSON L. WHITESIDE: "If you serve sin, you need not doubt as to what your wages are to be, nor as to whether you will be paid in full. The final reward for your service to sin is eternal death" *A New Commentary On Paul's Letter To The Saints At Rome*, page 142, 1945, (church of Christ).

(27) B. W. JOHNSON: "*For the wages of sin*. Sin is a master of his servants and pays wages. The wages is *death*, one of the saddest, but profoundest truths of the world. But the *gift of God*. God gives to those who turn from sin, life eternal" *The People's New Testament With Notes*, Gospel Light Publishing Company, (church of Christ).

(28) E. M. ZERR: "It denotes, therefore, that a life devoted to the service of sin will earn or merit the wages of death, not physical death, for all have to go through that, but the second death, designated in Revelation 21:8." *Bible Commentary, Volume 5*, page 360, copyrighted 1952 by E. M Zerr, (church of Christ).

(29) LEROY GARRETT: "**Nowhere in Scripture will you find the idea that God bestows upon the wicked everlasting (unending) life or immortality so that he can then torment them forever in hell fire. The wicked die forever for two reasons: they do not have the gift of immortality, and they have to receive the wages earned for their life of sin, which is death.**" *Restoration Review*, November 2990, "Is Hell Fire Endless?" (Church of Christ)

(30) STEVEN CLARK GOAD: "Our present traditional view of hell, borrowed from Catholicism and paganism, is no more biblical than their doctrine of limbo," "Thoughts on Punishment of the Wicked" church of Christ Christian Ekklesia Podcast <http://www.godsmessagetheweb.net/2010/07/25/thoughts-on-punishment-of-the-wicked/>(church of Christ)

(31) JEREMY K. MORITZ: "I grew up in the church. For many years, I believed in the traditional view of Heaven and Hell—that souls are taken from the body immediately following death and are placed in either Heaven or Hell where they will spend eternity in bliss or unending torture. This is what most of the Christian church right now believes. For the last six or seven years, however, I have found countless scriptures that have changed my thinking considerably in this area. It seems to me that nearly the entire Bible teaches that eternal life is only experienced in Heaven, that Hell is a place of complete destruction and annihilation."

page 1 "HELL: Eternal Torment or Complete Annihilation?" "I cannot think of a more devastating slander that could be associated with someone's name than the one that Christians have attributed to God. Just think of the worst, cruelest, most wretched human beings in earth's history: Attila the Hun, Benito Mussolini, Genghis Khan, Joseph Stalin, Saddam Hussein, and others. More than likely, Adolf Hitler was the first name to come to mind. But even the ruthless Hitler had not the heart to do the kind of things that are being accredited to the name of God. Nothing that his victims experienced can even come close to the pains that must be present in the common Christian perception of Hell." (church of Christ)

At: <http://www.jeremyandchristine.com/articles/eternal.php>

(32) ASHLEY S. JOHNSON: "Does the doctrine of endless punishment harmonize with the fundamental principles underlying God's government that the hopelessly wicked, the incorrigibly wicked, shall be blotted out? Trace his dealings with the nations through the centuries. On this principle he destroyed the antediluvians (Gen. 5:1-7; 7:1-24). Also Sodom and Gomorrah (Gen., 18:20,21). Also Korah and his rebels (Num., 16:31-33). Also he made provision for the utter destruction of idolaters (Deut., 12:13-18). Also the Egyptians (Ex., 14:1-31). Also Babylon (Isa., 13:19-22). Moses predicted the destruction of the incorrigible (Deut., 18:18, 19). So did Peter (Acts, 3:22,23). John had a vision of the day (Rev., 3:13-21). Why should this be God's method of getting rid of the wicked all through history if he is to suddenly change it at the Judgment Day, and consign all his sinful creatures to torment and punish that all alike and that without end? I cannot answer. Can you?" Founder and president of the Johnson Bible College, "The Resurrection And The Future Life," page 432-433, 1913, Knoxville Lithographing Company, (church of Christ).

(33) DILLARD THURMAN, Brown Trail Church of Christ: "The hope and aspiration of many has been shifted from His coming again to receive His own, to an immediate immortality and heavenly bliss immediately at death! Jesus DID NOT promise that!" Gospel Minutes, Volume 34, Number 5, February 1, 1985, (church of Christ).

(34) E. D. SLOUGH: "Punishment lasts so long as its results last, and where death has been administered for the satisfaction of crime, **the punishment continues till life is restored, and if never restored, it is an everlasting punishment.** Lost of property, loss of liberty, loss of life, may all be meted out to the transgressors under the label of punishment. And death as the capital punishment, legalized on the statutes of all civilized nations of the world, is the highest punishment man can inflict—or so recognized,—being the deprivation of life, the first source of all pleasures and enjoyments, and recognized as being forfeited for certain crimes." "The Indictment Of Eternal Torment—The Self-negation Of A Monstrous Doctrine," page 196-197, F. L. Rowe, Publisher, 1914, (evangelist, church of Christ). On line at: [www.robertwr.com/EternalTorment.htm](http://www.robertwr.com/EternalTorment.htm)

(35) KENNETH D. FORTIER: "Everyone who gets thrown into this lake of fire will suffer death—the second death! Remember, they have already died physically, and were also spiritually dead, and are now resurrected to face judgment as Jesus told us in Matthew 25:46. And that judgment's sentence of those not found written in the book of life it to be thrown in the Lake of Fire where they will be burned up completely and suffer the consequence which is death. And death is the opposite of life! In this we see very plainly that the wicked or unredeemed will not be raised to life to suffer end-lessly in the Lake of Fire; for to do so they would have to have immortality!" "Church Doctrine's: Right Or Wrong? (You Decide)," page 97, 2007, iUniverse, Inc., (church of Christ).

(36) OREN ORAHOOD and many other in the restoration movement and after (church of Christ).

LIFE IS THE MOST IMPORTANT POSSESSION WE HAVE. WITHOUT IT THERE IS NOTHING. ONLY BY THE RESURRECTION AT THE SECOND COMING OF CHRIST WILL ANYONE HAVE LIFE AFTER DEATH. The resurrection, which is made impossible by the doctrine of an immortal soul from birth, is an absolute necessity to any life after death.

**YOU ARE THE ONE WHO WILL CHOOSE WHAT IT WILL BE FOR YOU, LIFE or DEATH?** Either an endless life that is much better than the best that life can be on this earth, OR an endless nothing.

---

From the introduction to "The Indictment Of Eternal Torment—The Self-negation Of A Monstrous Doctrine," E. D. Slough, F. L. Rowe, Publisher, pages 9-18, 1914, evangelist, church of Christ. On line at: [www.robertwr.com/EternalTorment.htm](http://www.robertwr.com/EternalTorment.htm)

During the dark ages, when superstition and tyranny reigned over the better judgments of men, dominating every civil right of liberty, and subduing every aspiration to advance intellectually, the gospel light was in chaotic blackness, handicapped by an intolerant mob of ungodly and profane rulers, whose highest ambition was to reduce humanity to a condition of absolute serfdom and ignorance, that they might eternally fleece them of their gold and their blood, that they themselves might revel in beastly sensuality and luxury. So that age is a historical reality, the blackest, the most inhuman, the most vile, and intolerant that ever disgraced the ledger of events. And a memorial to all coming ages of the fruits of ungodliness.

Under such a series of profligacy, licentiousness, idolatry, ignorance, and superstition, nothing could result but the very condition that did result. And the very horror of it all, it all occurred under the garb of religion. In that sacred name, which has been a thousand times desecrated, dungeons have been prepared, fires have been kindled for martyrs, and every device genius could contrive was made the tool of usurpation and diabolical power to suppress the liberty of thought, that the mind of men might be effectually bound in the fetters of espionage to serve the god of greed, and the Lucifer's called priests and rulers. And even a mind with a tendency to reason for itself was persecuted and intimidated from every source by the instruments of brute degenerates, and has accomplished just what these men anticipated—**A plane where the few do the thinking for the many.**

Eventually, this resulted in a revolution, costing the blood of countless hosts of men and women and children, and because of the confusion of main, it broke up into numerous factions and parties, each confined and circumscribed by the same principles which had dominated their rights under the galling yoke that had just thrown off. And with them also, a departure from set rules and fixed principles, was another denunciation, and so sensitive to those creeds were those parties that they would shrink back from one of their member who would have the audacity or courage to question their truths as they would from a leper or an infectious disease. Sheltered thus under religious zeal, the hearts of men become congealed and settled into a condition of mimics, rejecting all ideas not in harmony with that of their own teacher.

An inquisition of chains and torches is not less preferable than the perpetual subjection to doctrines, which palsy the mind; and against which men dare not lift a voice lest they be decried as heretics, and a menace to the cause of Christ. This age of the world, prolific with the religious "isms" of men, eager to separate themselves in the livery of sect, and follow a favorite crowd under which they were reared, **is the true menace to the cause and progress of truth.**

Thus far I have spoken in a general way. But there is a particular way to which I wish to call your attention. For so long as men close their eyes to possible light, they cannot see. Out of this mass of Egyptian darkness light is slowly evolving. I can see the breaking of the dawn, and the reflected rays of light shooting over the hills! But with this twentieth century civilization, we (the Church of Christ) dare not say we have reached the summit of knowledge, the pinnacle of perfection. To do so would be an expression of egotism, for all who have scanned the word of God will be constrained to say with Paul, "Oh, the depths of the riches both of wisdom and knowledge of God, how unsearchable his judgments and his ways past finding out."

Men of renown and scholarship have for ages sought for proof on the pages of nature's book, for the immortality of the souls of all men. My aim will be to show they have all alike failed. Truth is modest in the presence of great men. Speculation is the field of their exploration. No wonder these profound thinkers are baffled to astonishment as they wrestle with the deep things of God, building as they do great structures upon the passing phantoms of the brain. The popular feeling that somehow by irrevocable fate, or unchangeable law, once in being always in being. The delusion which tells of an inborn principle in man both immortal and indestructible, that as we depart here instantaneously awake in a new world with new power and realizations, and upon which fabrication has been built eternal torment, purgatory, and a host of other doctrines, have been sounded out from our pulpits, periodicals, funeral sermons and fireside talks. It has permeated every village and hamlet; it is world wide in its scope, and its defense.

We charge our neighbors with crooked reasoning. They can justly retort, thou are the man. For we are no

less bound up with early training than those whom we criticize. We dare not raise the voice against the tenets of faith more than they, without expecting in return a volley denunciation and contempt. Picturing the future of the unsaved with all the horror that words can employ, an eternity of woe and misery, and everlasting existence of torture. **And the very illustrations used to prove it are a positive denial of it.** And yet I presume not one of them has noticed it, because they use the same proofs over and over.

Often have my friends exhorted me to be cautious in the agitation of convictions contrary to the established teaching of the Christ; that it would be in opposition to all the scholarship of the world. That I would be practically alone, and bring the scorn of the religious world upon me. Yet those same friends would give a world painting of eternal torment that would make Hopkins turn over in his grave and give a sigh of relief. Henceforth let the logically remove the serious objections against their peculiar tent, with the word of God, rather than by scholastic writers. Thought it be an error, they would not call a long nurtured theory in question in fear of combating scholarship. Verily, scholarship will not tear down its own building. Shall we muzzle out inherited right of free thinking and free speaking and bow to the mandates of theological speculations? Shall we decide that investigation of disputed points of the Bible ought to be suppressed to honor the scholarship back of them? There is no delusion in the name of religion preached among men that has no scholarship back of it. Then why oppose error at all? Though I should get no hearing, I prefer to be alone in the truth, than with the multitude in error. But I am not alone. Thousands are in sympathy with these arguments, many of them representing the highest channels of learning. But, on the other hand, thousand of great learned men have lived in error all their lives, and never able to come to the knowledge of the truth. While many of the weak and lowly have found the truth and laid hold of it. If all ages of the world many thing have been withheld from the wise and prudent, and revealed unto babes. Learning too often leads to speculation, rather than an earnest search for the truth. For that reason truth in the hands of an intellectual dwarf has often been a source of much annoyance to the mighty.

Some place great weight on the number of people believing in this theory. No weaker argument could be brought forth. Numbers prove nothing to be true. They only prove popularity. Not a dogma taught in the world without finding its friends. Many of the most absurd tenets are advocated my millions. Mahometanism with 176,834,000, Confucianism with 256,000,000, Hindooism with 190,000,000, Buddhism with 147,900,000, Polytheism with 117,681,000, Catholicism with 230,800,000—what a strong argument this would be if there was any proof in numbers. What a weak argument Protestantism with 90,000,000, could bring against it, and the Church of Christ but in insignificant number even of those. These statistics are taken from the New National Encyclopedia, Vol. 1, p. 2175.

An argument founded on the basic principles of a proposition, principles, which are self-evident, the ultimate conclusion, if we reasons soundly, will be the truth.

“If we would act like sincere searchers for truth, we should survey every argument with a careful and unbiased mind, whether it agree with our former opinion or no. We should give every reasoning its full force, and weigh it in our sedatest judgment...The best way to try the arguments brought against our own opinions is to sit down and endeavor to give a solid answer one by one to every arguments brought by the author to support his doctrine. And in this attempt, if we find there are some arguments, which we are not able to answer fully to our own minds, we should then begin to bethink ourselves, whether we have not hitherto been in a mistake, and whether the defender of the contrary sentiments may not be in the right. Such a method as this will forbid us to pronounce at once against those doctrines, and those writers, which are contrary to out sentiments. And we shall endeavor to find solid arguments to refute their position before we establish ourselves in a contrary position...In the composure of men remember, it is not their reason but your own that is given you to guide you when you come to the years of discretion. Never apple yourselves to read any author with a determination beforehand either for him or against him, or with a settled resolution to believe or to disbelieve, to conform or oppose whatsoever he saith. But always with a design to lay your mind open to truth and to embrace it wherever you find it, as well as to reject falsehood, though it appear under ever so fair a disguise.”—Watts on the Mind, pp 248-51-74.

I care not for the contempt this will bring forth I ask only that this be subjected to the most vigorous test by an honest heart. If you are right you will see my error; if I am right you will see your own error, so after all some good may be accomplished. The ling drawn deep, broad and distinct, and on every page we will know just where we stand. The Bible cannot agree with “Tom and Dick” if “Tom and Dick” do not agree with one

another. But “Tom and Dick’s” faith should not have any intrinsic weight on the subject. We protest against their policies. **They have confused the public mind by grinding out of their theological burrs, new meanings into common words.** They have thrown false colors over the scriptures. They have inherited in a large measure their faith, and in this way religious heredity has muzzled the powers of their reason. **So why let Tom and Dick forever close our eyes and seal our mouths, dictating to us a religious teaching? On its very face it is an obvious farce and an extravagant burlesque on the great architect of the universe.**

The issue before us in this work is that unfounded theory of “natural immortality, or the deathless nature of the soul,” which if ever established must include the dog and the bear. Let that dogma be confirmed and the whole structure of eternal torment must stand forever unscathed. Fundamental to the entire doctrine is this theory. If it stand, the conclusion is inevitable. **If it falls, the whole fabric built upon it crushes into atoms.**

Reader, if you will kindly indulge me the time, I will build a wall against that error, towards which the powers of scholasticism will blow their mighty blasts in vain. And the theory of eternal torment, growing of necessity out of the notion that the spirit of man is indestructible, will be shown to be the grossest error that ever cast a shadow over the fair universe of God. An error that has been pounded and “propounded” into the hearts of men and women, both in and out of the church, from the days of Socrates, 500 years before Christ, down to the twentieth century. You dare not deny that Socrates and Plato, his pupil, are the originators and perpetrators of this doctrine. And it is further seen by men as apparently confirmed by the parables and metaphors of revelation.

Some one may ask what does it matter if we do believe it? **It matters much.** Let me point you to some of its mischief. **What caused Universalism to rise up and deny the future retribution?** That very doctrine of natural immortality. How did it cause it? This way—they believed the spirit of man indestructible. They saw a furnace of fire in scripture opening its jaws to receive countless hosts. They know the fire could only torture such a spirit. They saw no release from it: they saw in the distant eternity the writhing millions of humanity no nearer the end of their suffering than when they entered. They thought “**horror!**” Such would make God a tyrant, more terrible than a thousand inquisitions of the dark ages. They cried “absurdity.” They cried right, too. So they devised a crude escape. They figured it all away, and agreed to take all men into heaven irrespective of moral qualification. All punishment became to them reformatory, and, ultimately, the last man would depart for glory.

**From whence came the soul-benumbing ingredients of Calvin’s Eternal Election** of much of the human race to everlasting misery in a lake of fire, regardless of moral attire, choice or conduct? Came it not from the gangrenes of putrescent mental sore? Came it not from a scattering mind, incapacitated to gather, associate and concentrate evidence? With him, the deathless nature of the soul was a profound reality—it was unquestionable—to doubt was to exhibit weakness. He saw God revealed in scripture with powers sweeping all infinity. He saw some intimations of an election, a pre-election, a foreknowledge, and following this lead he unconsciously forced to the grossest absurdity the mind of man can entertain. Lay your premises in error, and draw your conclusions in harmony, and you have a falsehood masquerading in your brain in the guise of the angel of truth.

**What caused induced the rise of “spiritualism?”** That dark, deceitful pretense of talking with the dead. Any one may talk to the dead, but the dead answers not. These people also were repulsed by the doctrine of endless misery, and immediately rejected the Bible, but held tenaciously to the eternal perpetuity of the spirit of man, and invented a diabolical fare for its chart of unseen activity. Notwithstanding the Divine denunciations against it as the work of devilish agencies.

Upon what is “Purgatory” and Saint Worship” founded? Are not its entire fortifications resting upon that one delicate thread? These delusive and pernicious evils of Catholicism, destined to drag man and women, boys and girls down to an irredeemable fate, under the “spell” that a failure here means but a little longer term of purification in the fires of Purgatory.

Again, from that theory, legions of infidels and atheist have been created: besides, thousands more have wandered off into every form and bypath of delusion. Denying the conclusions and consequences to which the theory leads, man have given wings to scores of false notions withdrawing from it entirely, or making

some sour of apology for God as did Thompson in the "Theism," "that it belongs to the necessities of existence and cannot therefore be otherwise."

## BIBLIOGRAPHY

Early in the Reformation there were many who did not believe, "*You shall not surely die,*" but the Church of England opposed them. A few of the many books by well known ministers, teachers, professors, Doctors, mostly orthodox Protestants or church of Christ ministers teaching that mankind does not have a part that is immortal from birth. That life after death is dependent of the resurrection, not on an immortal soul.

1. Tertullian, "Treatise on the Soul" Chapter 55
2. Martin Luther, E. Petavel, "The Problem of Immortality" page 255
3. John Wesley, "Wesley's sermon on Luke 16:23"
4. William Tundale, "Christian Moralism" page 99
5. Ashley S. Johnson, "The Resurrection And The Future Life" 1913, church of Christ
6. Elias Smith, (Often referred to as "Elder" Elias Smith) "The Life, Conversion, Preaching, Travel and Sufferings of Elias Smith, 1886, church of Christ
7. Homer Hailey, "God's Judgments and Punishments," President of Bible at Florida College, 2003, church of Christ
8. Homer Hailey, "Revelation, An Introduction and Commentary," Baker Book House, Hailey was dean of Bible at Florida College, church of Christ
9. Homer Hailey, "Revelations" Baker Book House, 1979, church of Christ
10. Homer Hailey, "Now Mine Eye Seeth Thee, A Commentary On Job" Religious Supply, Inc. 1994, church of Christ
11. F. LaGard Smith, "After Life, A Glimpse of Eternity Beyond Death's Door," 2003, Lipscomb University, church of Christ
12. Jerry Cross, "Magnolia Bible College 1984 Lectures" page 48 and 49, church of Christ
13. Ashley S. Johnson, "Ages of ages, or ages upon ages," Founder and president of the Johnson Bible College, church of Christ
14. Ashley S. Johnson, "The Resurrection And The Future Life," 1913, Founder and president of the Johnson Bible College, Knoxville Lithographing Company, church of Christ
15. E. D. Slough, "Indictment Of Eternal Torment—The Self-negation of a Monstrous Doctrine," 1914, church of Christ
16. Jimmy Allen, "Fire In My Bones," and "What is Hell Like?" Professor Emeritus of Bible – Harding University, 2004, church of Christ
17. J. W. McGarvey, President of Sacred History in the College of the Bible, Standard Bible Commentary, 1916, Standard Publishing Company, church of Christ
18. J. W. McGarvey, President of Sacred History in the College of the Bible, McGarvey's Sermons, Standard Publishing Company, church of Christ
19. Jeremy K. Moritz, "HELL: Eternal Torment or complete Annihilation?" church of Christ
20. Steven Clark Goad, "Thoughts on Punishment of the Wicked," church of Christ Christian Ekklesia Podcast, church of Christ
21. "Only in Christ" (2002) Star Bible Publications, church of Christ
22. William Robert West, "A Resurrection To Immortality," church of Christ
  - First edition, Author House Publishing, 2004
  - Second edition, Xulon Press, 2006
  - Third edition, Infivity Publishing, 2008
  - Fourth edition, WestBow Press, a division of Thomas Nelson, 2011
23. William Robert West, "The Rapture And Israel," CreateSpace Press, 2011, church of Christ
24. Moses E. Lord, "Do The Holy Scriptures Teach The Endlessness Of Future Punishment?" church of Christ
25. Moses E. Lord, Commentary On Romans from "The Restoration Library," Gospel Light Publishing Company, church of Christ
26. Al Maxey, "The Maxey-Thrasher Debate," church of Christ
27. Robert Dozier, "Dozier-Johnson Debate," church of Christ
28. Curtis Dickinson, "What The Bible Teaches About Immortality And Future Punishment," Much more at: [http://www.kenfortier.com/joomla/index.php?option=com\\_content&task=view&id=38&Itemid=43](http://www.kenfortier.com/joomla/index.php?option=com_content&task=view&id=38&Itemid=43) -- church of Christ
29. Edward Fudge, "The Fire That Consumes" 1982, church of Christ
30. Roger E. Dickson, "Life, Death, and Beyond," Star Bible Publications, Inc. 1998, church of Christ
31. Roger E. Dickson, "Eschatology A Sturdy Of God's Judgments," Biblical Research Library, Star Bible Publications, Inc., 1997, church of Christ
32. John Scott, "Harding Graduate School Lectures" 1971, church of Christ
33. Samuel G. Dawson, "Jesus' Teaching on Hell" 1996, church of Christ
34. Alexander Campbell, "Popular Lectures And Addresses," Harbinger Book Club, church of Christ
35. Alexander Campbell, "The Christian System," page 3, Gospel Advocate, 1970, church of Christ
36. Alexander Campbell, "Five discourses On Hell" <http://www.cimmay.us/campbell.html>, 1848, church of Christ
37. Alexander Campbell, "Campbell Skinner Debate On Everlasting Punishment," College Press, 1840, church of Christ
38. Alexander Campbell, Preface to "The Living Oracles," Gospel Advocate Company, 1826, church of Christ
39. Micah Redding: "There Is No Hell (parts 1-6) at: <http://micahredding.com/blog/2008/09/15/there-no-hell-part-1>, church of Christ
40. T. Pierce Brown, "Soul and Spirit" Gospel Advocate, June 14, 1979, church of Christ
41. Mike Willis, "Commentary On Paul's First Epistle To The Corinthians," 1979, Guardian of Truth Foundation, church of Christ
42. Cecil Willis, "But What About the Thief on the Cross?" Guardian of Truth Foundation, church of Christ
43. John T. Willis, "The Living Word Commentary On the Old Testament – Genesis, Sweet Publishing Company, 1979, Church of Christ.
44. Guy N. Woods, "What Is The Soul Of Man," Gospel Advocate, 1985, November 21, church of Christ
45. B. W. Johnson, "Christ and the Future Life' 1891, church of Christ
46. B. W. Johnson, "People's New Testament With Notes," church of Christ
47. Carl Holladay, "The Fist Letter of Paul to The Corinthians," 1979, Abilene Christian University Press, church of Christ
48. McCord, Guardian of Truth, "Lexicons Can Be Wrong," 1996, church of Christ
49. Samuel Csonka, "Guardian of Truth," now "Truth Magazine," "The Doctrine of Annihilation" page 16, January 5, 1995, church of Christ
50. Marc W. Gibson and Harry Osborne, Truth Magazine, "The Serpent That Was Not There," page 458, August 7, 1003, church of Christ
51. Dillard Thurman, Gospel Minutes, Volume 34, Number 5, February 1, 1985, West Freeway Church of Christ



52. Dr. Bert Thompson "Reason and Revelation" May 2000, church of Christ
53. Dr. Bert Thompson, Ph. D. "The Origin, Nature, and Destiny of the Soul," Apologetics Press, Inc. 2001, church of Christ.
54. George Lemasters, "Florida College Annual Lectures," 1975, church of Christ
55. Ron Halbrook, "Florida College Annual Lectures," 1986, church of Christ
56. Ron Halbrook, "Sodom and Gomorrah..." Guardian of Truth, October 3, 1991, church of Christ
57. Robert C. Welch, "Florida College Annual Lectures," 1975, church of Christ
58. Florida College Annual Lectures, 1994, "Overcoming With The Lamb," church of Christ
59. Robert Turner, Florida College Annual Lectures, 1986, church of Christ
60. Thomas Andrews, Florida College Annual Lectures, 1997, church of Christ
61. C. Hamilton, Truth Commentaries-1 Peter" Guardian of Truth, church of Christ
62. Al Maxey, Reflections, Issue 46, June 6, 2003, church of Christ
63. James Burton Coffman, "Commentary On Luke," 1975, Firm Foundation Publishing House, Abilene Christian University, church of Christ
64. A. M. Ogden, "The Avenging of the Apostles and Prophets," Ogden Publications, 1985, church of Christ
65. James H. Jacobsen, "Voice Of The Seventh Angel" New Jerusalem Publications, 1999, church of Christ
66. Jim McGuiggan, "The Book Of Revelation" 1976, Star Bible Publications, church of Christ
67. Ralph F. Brashears, "The Revelation Of The Christian Age," Vantage Press, 1989, church of Christ
68. John F. Floyd, "I, John to the Seven Churches," 1994, Star Bible Publications, church of Christ
69. Gregory L. Swango, "The 3 Worlds of Eternity," Star Bible Publications, 2001, church of Christ
70. Ferrell Jenkins, "The Old Testament In The Book Of Revelation," 1972. Florida College Bookstore, church of Christ
71. Newton W. Allphin, "Visions Unveiled or The Revelation Explained, 1945, Star Bible Publications, church of Christ
72. J. W. Roberts, "The Revelation to John," 1974, Abilene Christian University Press, church of Christ
73. Frank Walton, Florida College Lectures 1994, church of Christ
74. H. Leo Boles, The Gospel According To Matthew, Gospel Advocate, 1954, church of Christ
75. Almon L. Williams, Florida College Annual Lectures, 1986, Church of Christ
76. Leroy Garrett, "Is Hell Fire Endless?" Restoration Review, November 1990, church of Christ
77. Cecil Hook, "Free As Sons" and "Free In Christ," church of Christ
78. John Scott, "Harding Graduate School Lectures," 1971, Gospel Advocate Company, church of Christ
79. Hugo McCord, "McCord's New Testament Translation of the Everlasting Gospel" 1988, Freed-Hardeman College Press, church of Christ
80. E. M. Zerr, Bible Commentary, Cogdill Foundation Publications, 1994, church of Christ
81. Steven Clark Goad, "Thoughts on Punishment of the Wicked," church of Christ
82. Thomas P. Connelly, "Debate On The State Of The Dead," Christian Church
83. Dr T. W. Brents, Gospel Sermons, 1918, Gospel Advocate Publishing Co, church of Christ
84. Johnie Edwards, "What Death Says," June 7, 2001, Truth Magazine, church of Christ
85. B. Reeves, Guardian of Truth, 1996, church of Christ
86. Foy E. Wallace, Jr, "God's Prophetic Word," church of Christ
87. Foy E. Wallace "The Book Of Revelation," Wallace Publications, 1966, church of Christ
88. N. W. Allphin, "Visions Unveiled, or The Revelation Explained," 1985, Star Bible Publications, church of Christ
89. Dr T. W. Brents, Gospel Sermons, 1918, Gospel Advocate Publishing Co., church of Christ
90. Walter Scott, "The Gospel Restored," Old Paths Book Club, 1836, church of Christ
91. James D. Bales, "The Hub Of The Bible Or Acts Two Analyzed," Lambert Book House, 1960, church of Christ
92. Guy N. Woods, "What Is The Soul Of Man," Gospel Advocate, 1985, Number 21, church of Christ
93. Dyrel Collins, "Immortality: Only In Christ," 2002, Star Bible Publications, church of Christ
94. Dyrel Collins, "Conditional Immortality," 2002, Star Bible Publications, church of Christ
95. Kenneth D. Fortier, "Church Doctrine's: Right Or Wrong?" 2007, iUniverse Publishing, www.kenfortier.com, church of Christ
96. Kenneth D. Fortier, "What The New Testament Says About Death," "Three Types Of Death," "The Word *Hell*" "The Soul and Immortality," "The Origin Of Hell," "Immortal Soul Concepts," "The Rich Man And Lazarus," "Reasons Conditional Immortality is Scriptural," all at www.kenfortier.com -- church of Christ
97. Ken Fortier, "A Preliminary Study of the Greek Word Thousand and Thousands," <http://www.kenfortier.com/>, church of Christ
98. Steve Jones, "Natural immortality: Is It Christian Doctrine?" at www.kenfortier.com -- church of Christ
99. A. W. Fowler, "Jesus' Promise To The Dying Thief," at www.kenfortier.com -- church of Christ
100. Jesse B Ferguson, "Spirit Communion," 1854, church of Christ
101. Stephen Wiggins, Firm Foundation, 2006, church of Christ
102. Joe R. Everett, "Watering Down Hell," Cedar Park church of Christ
103. J. F. Watson, "After Death Part 1: Hell," Uniontown church of Christ
104. Robertson L. Whiteside, A New Commentary On Paul's Letter To The Saints At Rome, page 142, 1945, church of Christ
105. R. L. Whiteside, "Kingdom Of Promise and Prophecy," 1956, church of Christ
106. A. M Morris, "The Prophecies Unveiled," Old Paths Book Club, 1914, church of Christ
107. "The Doctrine Of Last Things," 1986 Florida College Annual Lectures, Cogdill Foundation Pub, church of Christ
108. "Reemphasizing Bible Basics In Current Controversies," 1990 Florida College Annual Lectures, church of Christ
109. "Christ and Culture At Corinth," 1996 Florida College Annual Lectures, church of Christ
110. "The Bible Doctrine of Sin," 1997 Florida College Annual Lectures, church of Christ
111. George S. Lemasters, "Heaven and Hell," 1975 Florida College Annual Lectures, church of Christ
112. Chris Reeves, "Eschatology, A Study of Last Things," Memorial Blvd church of Christ
113. C. S Henry, D. D., "The Endless Future Of The Race," D. Appleton And Company, 1879, Abilene Christina College Library
114. George T. Carpenter, church of Christ, John Hughes, Universalist Church, "Debate On The Destiny Of The Wicked," 1875, Central Book Concern Publishers, 1875
115. C. R. Nichol, "The Nichol - Bradley Debate," Published by Mrs. C. R. Nichol, 1907, church of Christ
116. L. S. White, "Russell—White Debate," F. L. Rowe, Publisher, 1908, church of Christ
117. Thomas B. Warren, Ph. D., "Immortality," National Christian Press, Inc., church of Christ
118. Robert L. Kramer, "Is The Soul Of Man Immortal?" Present Truth, Volume 10, Number 2, church of Christ

119. Philip Edgcumbe Hughes, "Between Death and Resurrection, Present Truth, Volume 10, Number 2, church of Christ
120. Robert R. Taylor, Jr., "The Bible Doctrine Of Final Things," Taylor Publications, 1993, church of Christ
121. Mack Lyon, "Life, Death, and Beyond," Publishing Designs, Inc., 1994, church of Christ
122. Leon Crouch, Th. D., "An Introduction To Eschatology," Star Bible Publications, church of Christ
123. Moses Stuart, "Future Punishment," Old Paths Book Club, 1954, church of Christ
124. Stanley E. Sayers, "The Nature Of Things To Come," Firm Foundation Publishing House, 1972, church of Christ
125. John A. Welch, "The Unquenchable Fire And The Never Sorrowing City," Faith and Facts Press, 1981, church of Christ
126. Gregory L. Swango, "The 3 Worlds Of Eternity," Star Bible Publications, 2001, church of Christ
127. George C. Stewart, "Our Reigning Kind And Returning Lord," Star Bible Publications, 1998, church of Christ
128. Charies Burke, "Our Immortality Of Life," church of Christ
129. Matt Dabbs, "Do Animals Have a Soul?" Northside church of Christ, St Petersburg Florida
130. Grover Stevens, "Is There a Burning Hell?" church of Christ
131. Don K Preston, "A Study of the Resurrection," church of Christ
132. David Brown, D.D., "Christ's Second Coming," Old Paths Book Club, 1953, church of Christ
133. James D. Bales, Professor of Christian Doctrine Harding College, "The Hub of the Bible," Lambert Bok House, 1960, church of Christ
134. Roy H. Lanier, Sr., "The Timeless Trinity," 1974, church of Christ
135. C. R. Nichol, "Nichol—Hensler Debate, Nichol Pub. Co., church of Christ
136. Batsell Barrett Bzxtter. Ph. D., David Lipscomb College, "If I Be Lifted Up," Gospel Advocate Company, 1956, church of Christ
137. James Burton Coffman, "Old Testament Commentaries, Job," Abilene Christian University Press, 1993, church of Christ
138. "The Spiritual Sword" Volume 36, January 2005, Number 2, "Eternal Punishment," Cetwell church of Christ
139. Perry B Cotham, "After Death...What Then?" 1970, church of Christ
140. James M. Tolle, "Christian Destiny" Tolle Publications 1970, church of Christ
141. James M. Tolle, "The Second Coming of Christ" Alexander Street church of Christ
142. V. E. Howard, "Resurrection And The Judgment" Central Printers and Publishers, 1975, church of Christ
143. V. E. Howard, "Where Are The Dead?" Central Printers and Publishers, church of Christ
144. R. W. Grimsley, "The State Of The Dead And The Resurrection" Quality Printing Co. Inc., church of Christ
145. Gregory L. Sharp: "The Justice of God and Hell," Truth Magazine, 1991, page 582, church of Christ
146. Fred P. Thompson, "What The Bible Says About Heaven And Hell," College Press, 1983, Christian Church
147. Charles R. Gresham, "What The Bible Says About Resurrection," College Press, 1983, Christian Church
148. Kenny Boles, "What The Bible Says About The Afterlife, The Life To Come," College Press, 2010, Christian Church
149. Russell Boatman, "What the Bible Says: The End Time" 1980, Christian Church
150. Russell Boatman, "Beyond Death: What The Bible Says About The Hereafter," 1980, Christian Church
151. Don DeWelt, "The Nature of Man, Who Am I?" The End Time, College Press, 1983, Christian Church
152. Robert Young, "Analvtical Concordance To the Bible," Wm. B. Eerdmans Publishing Co., 1964
153. Robert Young, "Young's Literal Translation," Public Domain
154. George V. Wigram, "The Englishman's Greek Concordance," Baker Book House, 1844
155. Timothy J. Barnett, "Endless Hell Ended," 1979, <http://endlesshellended.com/>
156. Dr. Joseph Priestley, "Corruptions Christianity" in Works (1818), Volume 5
157. R. O. Overton, "Man's Mortality," 1643
158. John Milton, "Treatise of Christian Doctrine" Volume. 1
159. John Jackson, "A Dissertation on Matter and Spirit," 1735, "The Belief of a Future State" 1745, "A Clear Distinction Between True and False Religion" 1750
160. Dr. Joseph Priestley, "Disquisitions Relating to Matter and Spirit" in Works, Volume 3
161. Bishop Edmund Law, "The State of the Dead," 1765 (Appendix)
162. Archdeacon Blackburne, "A Short Historical View of the Controversy Concerning the Intermediate State" 1765
163. Samuel Bourn, "Christian Doctrine of Future Punishment" 1759
164. Dr. William Whiston, "The Eternity of Hell— Torments Considered" 1740
165. Prof. Henry Dodwell, "The Natural Mortality of Human Souls" 1708
166. Dr. William Thomson, "The Thought of Death" in the Bampton Lecture, 1862
167. Archbishop J. Tillotson, Works, 1717, Volume 1
168. Dr. William Coward, "A Survey of the Search After Souls," "Further Thoughts Concerning the Human Soul" 1703
169. Henry Layton, "A Search After Souls" 1706
170. Clark Pinnock, "Four Views On Hell" 1992
171. Dr. Edward White, "Life in Christ" 1846, "That Unknown Country," "Immortality, a Clerical Symposium," "The Unspeakable Gift" (1884)
172. Dr. John Thomas, "Final extinction of wicked; immortality a gift through Christ"
173. H. H. Dobney, "Notes of Lectures on Future Punishment" 1844
174. Archbishop R. Whately, "A View of the Scriptural Revelations Concerning a Future State"
175. Sidney Hatch, Th. M., "Daring to Differ: Adventures in Conditional Immortality" 1991
176. James Panton Ham, "Life and Death; or, The Theology of the Bible in Relation to Human Mortality" 1849
177. Charles F. Hudson, "Debt and Grace as Related to the Doctrine of a Future Life" 1857, "Christ Our Life, The Scriptural Argument for Immortality Through Christ Alone" 1860
178. Samuele Bacchiocchi, "Immortality or Resurrection?" 1997
179. Dean Frenerick W., "Farrar, Mercy and Judgment" 1881
180. Dr. Robert W. Dale, "Edward White, His Life and Work" 1902
181. J. W. Hanson D.D., "The Hell Bible"
182. Canon Henry Constable, "Hades: or the Intermediate State of Man Restitution of All Things" "The Duration and Nature of Future Punishment"
183. Bishop John J. S. Perowne, "Hulsean Lectures on Immortality" 1868
184. Sir George Stokes, "That Unknown Country (A Symposium)" 1889, "Immortality, a Clerical Symposium"
185. Dr. W. A. Brown, "The Christian Hope" 1912

186. Dr. R. F. Weymouth translated The New Testament in Modern Speech. Note on 1 Corinthians 15:18: "By 'perish' the Apostle here apparently means 'pass out of existence'"
187. Dr. William Temple, "Christian Faith and Life" 1931; Drew Lecture on Immortality, 1931, "Nature, Man and God" 1953
188. Dr. Aubrey R. Vine, "An Approach to Christology" 1948
189. Dr. Lyman Abbott, "That Unknown Country" 1889
190. Dr. Emmanuel Petavel-Ollieff, "The Struggle for Eternal Life" "The Extinction of Evil" 1889, "The Problem of Immortality"
191. H. Pettingell, "The Theological Trilemma (Endless Misery) Universal Salvation, or Conditional Immortality" 1878, "Platonism versus Christianity" 1881, "The Life Everlasting: What Is It? Whence Is It? Whose Is It?" 1882, "The Unspeakable Gift" 1884
192. Eric Lewis, "Life and Immortality" 1949. "Christ, the First Fruits" 1949
193. Dr. Basil F. C. Atkinson, In "The Pocket Commentary of the Bible" Part One: Book of Genesis, 1954 Comment on Genesis 2:7
194. DR. T. A. Kantonen, "The Christian Hope" 1954
195. DR. D. R. G. Owen, "Body and Soul," 1956
196. William Enfield, "History of Philosophy"
197. John Locke, "Reasonableness Of Christianity," 1695
198. John Millton, "State of the Dead"
199. Dr. Reinhold Niebuhr, "The Nature and Destiny of Man," 1955, Gifford Lectures at Edinburgh, 1939
200. Thomas Thayer, "Origin And History Of The Doctrine Of Endless Punishment"
201. W. T. Berger, The Wages Of Sin And Everlasting Punishment, 1886
202. Walter Balfour, "An Inquiry Into The Scriptural Import Of The Words, Sheol, Hades, Tartarus And Gehenna" 1854
203. Leroy Edwin Froom, "The Conditionalist Faith of Our Father: The Conflict of the Ages Over the Nature and Destiny of Man," Volume one
204. Philip Schaff, History Of the Christian Church, New Schaff-Herzog Encyclopedia of Religious Knowledge
205. Randy Klassen, "What Does The Bible Really Say About Hell?" Pandora Press, 2001
206. Horace L. Hastings, "Pauline Theology, Or The Christian Doctrine Of Future Punishment As Taught In The Epistles Of Paul," 1853
207. Horace L. Hastings, "After The Verdict," Himes Publications 1982
208. Horace L. Hastings, "The Last Judgment, New Testament Facts vs Modern Fiction," Himes Publications, 1982
209. Glen A. Adams and W. E. Fox, "The Judgment." 1981
210. Robert L. Whitelaw, "Death, Resurrection, Immortality, Judgment," Grace Abounding Ministries, Inc., 1988
211. Babu G Ranganathan, "Conservative Theologian No Longer Believes Eternal Torment," <http://www.ideamarketers.com>
212. Allen Webster, "Hell Disappeared And No One Noticed"
213. Wilbur M. Smith, "The Biblical Doctrine Of Heaven," Moody Press, 1974

=====

**DOWNLOAD AND SAVE THE FREE PDF BOOK "Unconditional Immortality Or Resurrection Of The Dead"** By William Robert West at <http://www.robertwr.com/resurrection.pdf>

**PRINTED COPY AT BOOKSTORES** ask for ISBN 978-4497-1503-8  
 ISBN 978-1-4497-1505-2 hardback

**PRINTED COPY FROM BOOKSTORES ON THE WEB: "A Resurrection To Immortality–The Resurrection, Our Only Hope Of Life After Death"** By William Robert West - Westbow Press Division Of Nelson Bibles:  
 ISBN 978-4497-1503-8 paper back: ISBN 978-1-4497-1505-2 hardback

ON LINE AT:

**Westbow Press–Nelson Bibles**

- <http://www.westbowpress.com/Bookstore/BookDetail.aspx?BookID=SKU-000462527>

Amazon.com

- [http://www.amazon.com/Resurrection-Immortality-Only-after-Death/dp/1449715036/ref=sr\\_1\\_fkmr1\\_1?ie=UTF8&qid=1304802782&sr=1-1-fkmr1](http://www.amazon.com/Resurrection-Immortality-Only-after-Death/dp/1449715036/ref=sr_1_fkmr1_1?ie=UTF8&qid=1304802782&sr=1-1-fkmr1)

Powell's Books

- <http://www.powells.com/biblio/61-9781449715038-1>

Books A Million

- <http://www.booksamillion.com/search?id=5043496772264&query=A+Resurrection+to+Immortality+The+resurrection%2C+our+only+hope+of+life+after+death&where=Books&search.x=14&search.y=14&search=Search>

The price in many bookstores in many countries

2. <http://www.gettextbooks.com/search/?isbn=9781449715038>

3. <http://www.bookfinder4u.com/IsbnSearch.aspx?isbn=9781449715038&mode=direct>

Digital text platform of an older edition at Kindle 2 digital

[http://www.amazon.com/Unconditional-Immortality-Resurrection-Dead/dp/B001AWNQI0/ref=sr\\_1\\_2?ie=UTF8&s=books&qid=1236294815&sr=1-2](http://www.amazon.com/Unconditional-Immortality-Resurrection-Dead/dp/B001AWNQI0/ref=sr_1_2?ie=UTF8&s=books&qid=1236294815&sr=1-2)

Barns and Noble NOOK books free—DIGITAL TEXT PLATFORM

<http://www.barnesandnoble.com/w/immortality-and-resurrection-william-west/1026907477?ean=2940026453160&itm=11&usri=william%2bwest>

-----  
**Or html: CHAPTER ONE:** The reinterpretation of the nature of man

- Soul in Genesis, Soul in the New Testament, Old Testament words, which are translated life, spirit, breath, or soul, are all used referring to both a person and animals, Soul in the Old Testament.
- Soul in the New Testament, Plato's immortal soul versus Christ's life and resurrection, Historical proof of reinterpretations of the Bible. The great confusion - Soul or Spirit or Both? <http://robertwr.com/>

**CHAPTER TWO:** Life or death? <http://robertwr.com/life.html>

**CHAPTER THREE:** The reinterpretations of the great doctrines of the Bible. <http://robertwr.com/immortal.html>

**CHAPTERS FOUR, FIVE, SIX, AND SEVEN:** <http://robertwr.com/hell.html>

1. CHAPTER FOUR: From where came hell? The given no chance Hell. Edward Fudge's Short Hell. The Changing Hell. The Vanishing Hell.
2. CHAPTER FIVE: Sheol, Hades, Tartarus, and the Nether World. The soul is the image of Adam.
3. CHAPTER SIX: The thirty-one passages where Hell is used in the King James Version.
4. CHAPTER SEVEN: A Strange and Unexplainable Silence.

**CHAPTERS EIGHT, NINE, TEN, AND ELIVEN:** <http://robertwr.com/heaven.html>

- CHAPTER EIGHT: The interpretation of figurative language, metaphors, and symbolical passage.
  - PART ONE: The intermediate bosom, the rich man, and Lazarus.
  - PART TWO: The symbolical pictures of Revelation versus a literal interpretation.
  - PART THREE: Forever and ever of the King James Version.
  - PART FOUR: Israel's destruction, her weeping, gnashing of teeth, outer darkness, A. D. 70
- CHAPTER NINE: Universalist: The "age lasting" Hell.
- CHAPTER TEN: Evil Pagan teachings that are attributed to God.
- CHAPTER ELEVEN: Historical proof of the changing of the teaching of the Bible

-----  
OTHER WEB SITES of William Robert West, church of Christ

"The Rapture and Israel" at: <https://wwwcreatespace.com/3457158>

<http://robertwr.com/rapture.html> The Premillennial thousand-year reign of Christ, the Rapture, and the Kingdom of Heaven.

- After the Judgment where will we spend eternity?
- When will the secret rapture come to pass? Will you miss it?
- Will there be cars without drivers after the rapture?
- What is the battle of Armageddon?
- Is Armageddon coming soon?
- Will Israel be restored? Will there be a worldwide conversion of Jews?
- Will the temple be rebuilt in Jerusalem?
- Will animal sacrifices be restored?

- What are the signs of the second coming of Christ?
- Who are the 144,000?
- Will there be one, two, or three resurrections?
- What is the "time of the Gentiles"?
- What is the "gap" theory?
- Who is the thirteenth tribe?

---

<http://www.robertwr.com/ReadMyE-MailandReviews.html>

<http://www.robertwr.com/twentyfourHells.html>

---

GOOD WEB PAGES BY MEMBERS OF THE CHURCH OF CHRIST

Articles by Ken Fortier and C. Dickinson

<http://kenfortier.com/site/articles>

A growing opposition to Hell in the church of Christ.

<http://www.robertwr.com/OppositionToHell.html>

---

"The Indictment Of Eternal Torment: The Self-Negation Of A Monstrous Doctrine," by E. D. Slough, a preacher in the church of Christ, F. L. Rowe Publisher, 1914.

I have put this book on the web at: <http://www.robertwr.com/EternalTorment.htm>

---

"The Maxey-Thrasher Debate" A debate on the eternal destiny of the wicked between two Gospel preachers.

<http://www.zianet.com/maxey/MxThrshr.htm>

---

A web page of a friend that is not a member of the church of Christ

<http://www.jewishnotgreek.com/>

---

---

---

ABOUT THE AUTHOR

He was born 11/25/33 in Ga. but has lived most of his adult life in Fl.

Was in the Navy for four years from 1952 to 1956 on two different aircraft carriers (helms-man). He became a Christian in 1953 while he was in the Navy.

Went to Florida Christian College (now Florida College) three years from 1956 to 1959.

He now live in Florida, have been married to the same person for over fifty years.

He have no children but do have two dogs that love to walk and if they do not get two or three walks a day they think they are being neglected, but they help keep him healthily and give him lots of love.

The things he likes to do most is read, write, work in his yard, and fish. He spends more time updating his web pages at <http://www.robertwr.com/resurrection.pdf> and <http://www.robertwr.com/rapture.html> then any other thing for it is the best way he have found to teach other about the Bible.

He is a devoted Christian for about 60 years, who put God first in his life and believes God's word, the Bible is His revelation to all people and it supplies us completely with all we need to live and worship as God wants us to.

In this work he points out some of the many ways the beliefs of some have set aside God's word, and they are "teaching the doctrines and precepts of man" Matthew 15:9.